# DICTIONARY

OF

# NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY

PASTON——PERCY

# DICTIONARY

OF

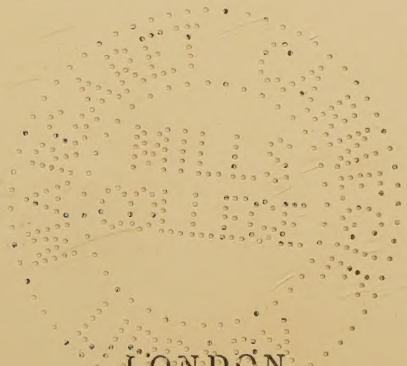
# NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY

EDITED BY

SIDNEY LEE

VOL. XLIV.

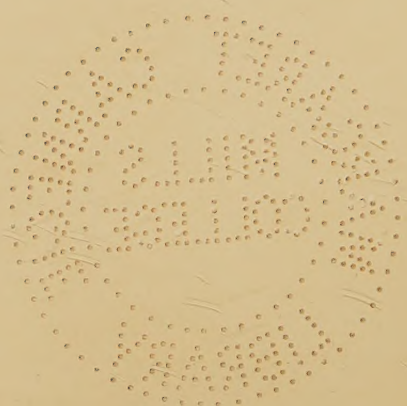
PASTON——PERCY



Mills College Library
WITHDRAWN

LONDON
SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 WATERLOO PLACE
1895

[*All rights reserved*]



R
920.042
D55A
V.44

31402

# LIST OF WRITERS

IN THE FORTY-FOURTH VOLUME.

G. A. A. . . G. A. Aitken.
W. A. J. A. . W. A. J. Archbold.
W. A. . . . . Walter Armstrong.
R. B–L. . . . Richard Bagwell.
G. F. R. B. . G. F. Russell Barker.
M. B. . . . . Miss Bateson.
R. B. . . . . The Rev. Ronald Bayne.
T. B. . . . . Thomas Bayne.
C. R. B. . . C. R. Beazley.
L. B. . . . . Laurence Binyon.
W. G. B–K. . W. G. Black.
H. E. D. B. The Rev. H. E. D. Blakiston.
G. C. B. . . G. C. Boase.
T. G. B. . . The Rev. Professor Bonney, F.R.S.
G. S. B. . . G. S. Boulger.
W. B–T. . . Major Broadfoot.
J. P. B. . . . J. P. Brodhurst.
A. R. B. . . The Rev. A. R. Buckland.
A. C. . . . . Arthur Cates.
H. M. C. . . The late H. Manners Chichester.
R. C. C. . . Richard Copley Christie.
J. W. C–K. . J. Willis Clark.
A. M. C. . . Miss A. M. Clerke.
A. M. C–E. . Miss A. M. Cooke.
T. C. . . . . Thompson Cooper, F.S.A.
W. P. C. . . W. P. Courtney.
L. C. . . . . Lionel Cust, F.S.A.
H. D. . . . . H. Davey.
G. T. D. . . G. Thorn Drury.
E. G. D. . . E. Gordon Duff.
R. D. . . . . Robert Dunlop.
C. H. F. . . C. H. Firth.
J. G. F. . . J. G. Fotheringham.
T. F. . . . . The Rev. Thomas Fowler, President of Corpus Christi College, Oxford.
W. H. F. . . The Very Rev. W. H. Fremantle, Dean of Ripon.
R. G. . . . . Richard Garnett, LL.D., C.B.
J. T. G. . . J. T. Gilbert, LL.D., F.S.A.
G. G. . . . . Gordon Goodwin.
A. G. . . . . The Rev. Alexander Gordon.
E. G. . . . . Edmund Gosse.
R. E. G. . . R. E. Graves.
J. C. H. . . J. Cuthbert Hadden.
J. W. H. . . Professor J. W. Hales.
J. A. H. . . J. A. Hamilton.
T. H. . . . . The Rev. Thomas Hamilton, D.D.
C. A. H. . . C. Alexander Harris.
P. J. H. . . P. J. Hartog.
T. F. H. . . T. F. Henderson.
W. A. S. H. W. A. S. Hewins.

# List of Writers.

W. H. . . . . The Rev. William Hunt.
C. L. K. . . C. L. Kingsford.
J. K. . . . . Joseph Knight, F.S.A.
J. K. L. . . Professor J. K. Laughton.
E. L. . . . . Miss Elizabeth Lee.
S. L. . . . . Sidney Lee.
R. H. L. . . Robin H. Legge.
W. L. . . . . Walter Lewin.
E. M. L. . . Colonel E. M. Lloyd, R.E.
J. E. L. . . John Edward Lloyd.
J. H. L. . . The Rev. J. H. Lupton, B.D.
J. R. M. . . J. R. Macdonald.
W. D. M. . . The Rev. W. D. Macray.
E. C. M. . . E. C. Marchant.
D. S. M. . . Professor Margoliouth.
E. H. M. . . E. H. Marshall.
L. M. M. . . Miss Middleton.
A. H. M. . . A. H. Millar.
C. M. . . . . Cosmo Monkhouse.
N. M. . . . . Norman Moore, M.D.
W. R. M. . . W. R. Morfill.
G. P. M–y. . G. P. Moriarty.
A. N. . . . . Albert Nicholson.
E. T. N. . . E. T. Nicolle.
G. Le G. N. G. Le Grys Norgate.
F. M. O'D. . F. M. O'Donoghue.
T. O. . . . . The Rev. Thomas Olden.
J. H. O. . . The Rev. Canon Overton.
H. P. . . . . Henry Paton.
G. V. P. . . The Hon. George Peel.
A. F. P. . . A. F. Pollard.
S. L.-P. . . . Stanley Lane-Poole.
B. P. . . . . Miss Porter.
D'A. P. . . . D'Arcy Power, F.R.C.S.
R. B. P. . . R. B. Prosser.
W. E. R. . . W. E. Rhodes.
J. M. R. . . J. M. Rigg.
F. S. . . . . The Rev. Francis Sanders.
T. S. . . . . Thomas Seccombe.
W. A. S. . . W. A. Shaw.
C. F. S. . . Miss C. Fell Smith.
G. G. S. . . G. Gregory Smith.
B. H. S. . . B. H. Soulsby.
L. S. . . . . Leslie Stephen.
G. S–h. . . . George Stronach.
C. W. S. . . C. W. Sutton.
J. T–t. . . . James Tait.
H. R. T. . . H. R. Tedder, F.S.A.
T. F. T. . . Professor T. F. Tout.
E. V. . . . . The late Rev. Canon Venables.
R. H. V. . . Colonel R. H. Vetch, R.E., C.B.
A. W. W. . . Principal Ward, LL.D.
F. W–n. . . Foster Watson.
W. W. W. . Surgeon-Captain Webb.
B. B. W. . . B. B. Woodward.
W. W. . . Warwick Wroth, F.S.A.

# DICTIONARY

OF

# NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY



**PASTON, CLEMENT** (1515?–1597), sea-captain, second son of Sir William Paston (1479?–1554) [q. v.], is said by Lloyd (*State Worthies*) to have served the king of France in the time of Henry VII, but the inscription on his monument, which gives the date of his death, says: 'Twice forty years he lived and somewhat more,' fixing the date of his birth about 1515. He is first mentioned in 1544 as 'one of the pensioners' and a fitting man to command a king's ship. In 1545 he commanded the Pelican of Danzig, of three hundred tons, in the fleet under Lord Lisle. In 1546, still, presumably, in the Pelican, he captured a French galley having on board the Baron St. Blanchard, who appears to have been coming to England on some informal embassy from the king of France. The galley was probably the Mermaid, which was added to the English navy; but of the circumstances of the capture no record can be found. It was afterwards debated whether the galley was 'good prize,' and whether St. Blanchard ought to pay ransom, for which Paston demanded five thousand crowns, with two thousand more for maintenance. At the request of Henry, on giving his bond for the money, the baron was released, and he returned to France with his servants, 'two horses, and twelve mastiff dogs.' Afterwards he pleaded that he was under compulsion at the time, and that the bond was worthless, nor does it appear that the money was paid. Paston, however, kept the plunder of the galley, of which a gold cup, with two snakes forming the handles, was in 1829 still in the possession of the family. Lloyd's statement that Paston captured the admiral of France and received thirty thousand crowns for his ransom is as incorrect as that 'he was the first that made the English navy terrible.' At the battle of Pinkie in 1547, Paston was wounded and left for dead. It is said that he was the captor of Sir Thomas Wyatt in 1554, which is contrary to evidence (Froude, *Hist. of Engl.* cabinet edit. v. 354), and that he commanded the fleet at Havre in 1562, which is fiction. In 1570 he was a magistrate of Norfolk, and a commissioner for the trial and execution of traitors (*State Papers*, Dom. Elizabeth, lxxiii. 28), and in 1587, though a deputy-lieutenant of the county, he was suspected of being lukewarm in the interests of religion (Strype, *Annals*, III. ii. 460). In 1588 he was sheriff of Norfolk. He died on 18 Feb. 1597, and was buried in the church of Oxnead, where a 'stately marble tomb' testifies that

> . . . princes he served four,
> In peace and war, as fortune did command,
> Sometimes by sea and sometimes on the shore.

He married Alice, widow of Edward Lambert. Her maiden name was Packington. He appears to have had no children, and left the bulk of his property to his wife, with remainder to his nephew, Sir William Paston [see under Paston, Sir William, 1479?–1554].

[Blomefield and Parkins's Hist. of Norfolk, vi. 487; Chambers's Hist. of Norfolk, p. 211, 959; the account in Lloyd's State Worthies is untrustworthy; State Papers of Henry VIII (1830, &c.), i. 811, 866, 894, xi. 329; Acts of the Privy Council (Dasent), 1542–7 pp. 514, 566, 1547–50 p. 447; State Papers of Henry VIII (in the Public Record Office), vols. xvi–xix. As these papers have not yet been calendared, many

of them being nearly obliterated by damp, and the writing very bad, it remains possible that an exhaustive search through them might lead to the discovery of some details concerning the capture of St. Blanchard, which is equally unknown to French and naval histories.] J. K. L.

PASTON, EDWARD, D.D. (1641–1714), president of Douay College, born in Norfolk in 1640, was the son of William Paston, esq., of Appleton in that county. He was sent to the English College at Douay when only ten years of age, arriving there on 24 Sept. 1651; and he was ordained priest at Bruges on 10 April 1666. Afterwards he was appointed professor of divinity at Douay. On 5 Feb. 1680–1 he was created D.D. On 11 June 1682 he set out for England, with the intention of remaining here as a missioner; but he returned to Douay in May 1683, and was employed in teaching divinity, as before. On the accession of James II he revisited this country, and lived privately in London till June 1688, when he was chosen president of Douay College in the place of Dr. James Smith, who had been raised to the episcopal dignity. He arrived at Douay on 22 July, governed the college with success for about twenty-six years, and died on 21 July 1714.

[Dodd's Church Hist. iii. 479; Husenbeth's Colleges and Convents on the Continent, p. 4; Panzani's Memoirs, p. 402.] T. C.

PASTON, JOHN (1421-1466), letter-writer and country gentleman, the eldest son of William Paston [q. v.] the judge, born in 1421, was brought up to the law in the Inner Temple, and by 1440 was married by his parents to a Norfolk heiress. We may infer that he had been at Cambridge from his residing for a time in Peterhouse, even after his marriage (*Paston Letters*, i. 42). After his father's death in 1444 he divided his time between his Norfolk estates and his London chambers in the Temple. The great additions which the judge had made to the Paston lands were viewed with jealousy, and John Paston incurred the further hostility of Sir Thomas Tuddenham and other officers of the duchy of Lancaster in Norfolk, of which he held some of his land in Paston. He was perhaps already seeking to round off his patrimony there, and secure the manorial rights at the expense of the duchy (*ib.* iii. 420). Tuddenham and his friends, who had the ear of William de la Pole, duke of Suffolk [q. v.], the minister in power, prompted Robert Hungerford, lord Moleyns [q. v.], to claim and take possession (1448) of the manor of Gresham, near Cromer, which Judge Paston had purchased from the descendants of Thomas Chaucer [q. v.] Paston's title was legally unassailable, but the times were such that he thought it useless to go to law, re-entered on the manor after vainly trying diplomacy, was driven out by an armed force, and only recovered possession when the fall of Suffolk brought in a 'changed world.' But the new 'world' was so unstable that he failed to get a judgment against Moleyns for the damage he had sustained, and the indictments which he and others brought against Tuddenham and his supporters likewise fell to the ground. His friends had advised him to get elected as knight of the shire; but his patron, the Duke of Norfolk, forbade him to prosecute his candidature. Shortly after this he came into close relations with Sir John Fastolf [q. v.], which had important effects upon his fortunes and those of his family. His wife was a cousin of Fastolf, the connection being probably through the Berneys of Reedham, and in 1453 we find him exercising a general oversight of the building of the great castle at Caistor, near Yarmouth, where Sir John had decided to spend his declining years. After he had taken up his residence there in the summer of the next year, Paston transacted much legal business in London for his kinsman, who frequently thanked him for the zeal he showed in his 'chargeable matters.' Fastolf was childless, and had set his heart on disappointing the Duke of Norfolk and other great lords who turned covetous eyes on Caistor by founding in it a college for 'seven priests and seven poor folk.' But such a prohibitive sum was demanded for the mortmain license that he died (5 Nov. 1459) before any arrangement had been arrived at. There was nothing, therefore, inherently improbable in the will, dated two days before his death, propounded by Paston, which gave the latter all his Norfolk and Suffolk estates on condition that he secured the foundation of the college, and paid four thousand marks into the general estate. Ten executors were named, but the actual administration was confined to Paston and Fastolf's Norfolk man of business, Thomas Howes. How far the objections which were presently raised by two of the executors were prompted by the Duke of Norfolk, who seized Caistor Castle before June 1461, and other claimants to the estates, it would be hard to decide; but there was certainly a *prima facie* case against the will, which was obviously nuncupative at best, bore signs of hasty drafting, and cancelled a will made only five months before, leaving the foundation of the college and the administration of the estate to the whole

body of executors. Howes, too, after Paston's death, declared the later will a fabrication. But his testimony is not free from suspicion, and was contradicted by others. The facts before us hardly justify Sir James Ramsay (ii. 345) in assuming without question that Paston was guilty of 'forgery and breach of trust.' The reopening of the civil war in the autumn of 1459 may very well have convinced Fastolf that unless he gave some one a strong personal interest in the foundation of his college his intentions were very likely to be defeated (*Paston Letters*, i. 491). For the rest of his life Paston's whole energies were devoted to retaining his hold upon the Fastolf estates against the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk and the recalcitrant executors. Once his enemies laid a plot to carry him off into the north, and three times he was imprisoned in the Fleet, on the second occasion (1464) just after he had obtained Edward IV's license for the foundation of Fastolf's college. The suit against the will began in the spiritual court of Canterbury in 1464, and was still going on at his death. He was compelled to bring evidence to prove that he was not of servile blood. But the Fastolf succession had made Paston a man of greater importance than before; he sat in the last parliament of Henry VI and the first of Edward IV as knight of the shire for Norfolk, and had some influence with Edward, in whose household he seems for a time to have resided. He managed to retain possession of Caistor and most of the disputed estates down to his death, which took place at London on 21 or 22 May 1466 (*ib.* ii. 290). He was buried in Bromholm Priory.

Paston was somewhat hard, self-seeking, and unsympathetic. He grudged his younger brothers the provision which their father made for them, and his dealings with his own eldest son leave something to be desired. His letters reveal the cool, calculating, business temperament, which we have chiefly to thank for the preservation of the unique family correspondence, in which he is the central, though not the most interesting, figure (for the history of the 'Paston Correspondence' see under Fenn, Sir John, where the reprint of Fenn's collection, edited by Ramsay in 1841 for Charles Knight, is not mentioned).

By his wife, Margaret Mauteby (*d.* 1484), daughter and heiress of John Mauteby of Mauteby, near Caistor, Paston had five sons and two daughters. The sons were: John the elder (1442–1479), who is separately noticed; John the younger (*d.* 1503), who was the father of Sir William Paston (1479?–1554) [q. v.]; Edmund, living in 1484; Walter, who took the degree of B.A. at Oxford in June 1479, and died a few weeks later; and William, who was at Eton in 1479, and was afterwards attached to the household of John de Vere, earl of Oxford [q. v.], until, some time after 1495, he became 'crased in his mind.' Paston's daughters were Margery, who married in 1469 Richard Calle; and Anne, who married in 1477 William Yelverton, grandson of William Yelverton [q. v.], the judge.

[Paston Letters, ed. Gairdner; Norfolk Archæology, vol. iv. (1855); Ramsay's Lancaster and York.] J. T–t.

**PASTON**, Sir JOHN (1442–1479), courtier and letter-writer, born in 1442, eldest son of John Paston (1421–1466) [q. v.], and his wife, Margaret Mauteby, may have been educated at Cambridge, like his father, who did not, however, intend him for his own profession of the law (*Paston Letters*, i. 433). On the accession of Edward IV he was sent to court to push the family fortunes and make interest in support of their retention of the disputed Fastolf estates. His want of success in this direction and the demands he made upon the not too well filled family exchequer gave great dissatisfaction to his father, who before long despised him as 'a drane among bees' without 'politic demeaning or occupation' (*ib.* iii. 481–2). Their relations were not perceptibly improved by the knighthood bestowed upon the younger Paston on his coming of age in 1463 (*ib.* ii. 135). At any rate, Sir John was withdrawn from court, and kept hanging about at home in Norfolk. But he soon grew weary of this life, and stole away from Caistor apparently to join the king on his northern expedition in May 1464 (*ib.* i. 438, ii. 141, 160, 257). His father was highly incensed, and for a time forbade him his house. But his mother interceded for him, and in the spring of 1465 he was back in Norfolk, and entrusted with the defence of Caistor Castle; in July he got 'great worship' by his resistance to the attempt of the men of John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk [q. v.], to enter upon the manor of Hellesdon (*ib.* ii. 177, 187, 205). His favour at court seems to have stood him in good stead after his father's death in May 1466, for within two months he obtained a royal recognition of the right of the family to the estates of Sir John Fastolf [q. v.] Once his own master, Paston basked in the sunshine of the court, and seldom appeared in Norfolk. Henceforth he lived chiefly in London at his 'place in Fleet Street,' and afterwards 'at the George by Pauls Wharf.' Among his friends the most congenial was Anthony Wydville, lord Scales, afterwards

Earl Rivers, the king's brother-in-law, to a cousin of whom Paston was for many years engaged. He had the honour of tilting on the same side as the king and Scales in a tournament at Eltham in April 1467, and we have to thank him for the preservation of the account of the more famous tourney between Scales and the Bastard of Burgundy in the following summer (Bentley, *Excerpta Historica*, p. 176). A year later the king sent him to the Low Countries in the train of his sister Margaret, on her marriage to Charles the Bold (*Paston Letters*, ii. 305, 316).

Paston was also a friend of George Neville [q. v.], archbishop of York, to whom he lent a large sum of money, and this service was remembered when the Nevilles drove King Edward out of England. The Duke of Norfolk was forced to relinquish Caistor Castle, which he had besieged and taken from the Pastons during the anarchy of 1469, and Paston was promised the constableship of Norwich Castle. But the battle of Barnet, in which he fought on the losing side, ruined these hopes; Norfolk recovered Caistor, and kept it until his death. Nevertheless, by the influence of Scales and other well-wishers, Paston was soon pardoned and again in favour. There is some reason to believe that he sat in the parliament of 1472–3, and his friend Lord Hastings, who was lieutenant of Calais, secured him pretty constant employment there for the next four or five years. From Calais early in 1473 he visited Bruges, where he had himself measured for a complete panoply by the armourer of the Bastard, and two years later he seems to have been present at the famous siege of Neuss by Charles the Bold (*ib.* iii. 96, 123).

Paston had succeeded to an inheritance, the best part of which continued to be disputed by the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk in the face of a royal decision in his favour. He was hardly the man to pilot the family interests without loss through such troubled waters. Easy-going and lacking in judgment, he left the struggle, which included a formal siege of Caistor, to his mother and brother, and involved himself in money difficulties, ending in alienations and mortgages, which almost drove his mother to despair. She reproached him with his neglect of his father's tomb in Bromholm Priory, which was still unfinished at his death. After much haggling, indeed, he succeeded in effecting a compromise with Bishop Waynflete and other executors of Fastolf, by which he saved some of the estates, including Caistor, at the expense of the rest. But even this remained a dead letter until the way was unexpectedly cleared by the sudden death in 1476 of John Mowbray, fourth duke of Norfolk, leaving no male issue. In the final arrangements Waynflete stipulated that the college which Fastolf had ordered to be established at Caistor should be transferred to his own new foundation at Oxford. The Duke of Suffolk persisted in his claims, and was still giving the family trouble in the last year of Paston's life. Towards the close of 1474 he had had a severe attack of fever and ague, which seems to have permanently injured him, and its effects were aggravated by stormy passages to Calais and foreign diet. Going up to London ill at ease in the autumn of 1479, a year of great mortality, which had already carried off his grandmother and his young brother Walter, who had just taken his degree at Oxford, he was much put out at finding his chamber and 'stuff' not so clean as he liked, and in little more than a fortnight he died (15 Nov.; *ib.* iii. 254, 261). In compliance with his will, made 31 Oct. 1477, he was buried in the chapel of Our Lady at the White Friars in London (*ib.* pp. 207, 262).

Paston was unmarried, though one of his friends described him as the best chooser of a gentlewoman he ever knew. He was plighted for many years to Anne Haute, a niece of the first Earl Rivers, and a cousin of Edward IV's queen. But from 1471 both parties were seeking release from the contract, which was not abrogated until the end of 1477 at the earliest. In the next year there was some talk of his marrying another kinswoman of the queen. By his mistress, Constance Reynforth, he left a natural daughter (*ib.* iii. 221, 287). He was succeeded in the estates by his younger brother, who, strangely enough, bore the same christian name. Robert Paston, first earl of Yarmouth (1631–1683) [q. v.], was a descendant of the second Sir John.

Paston's faulty but not unamiable character has a certain charm. He was a child of the new time, with its curious mixture of coarseness and refinement. His letters and those of his friends, with their touches of sprightly if somewhat broad humour, light up the grave and decorous pages of the Paston 'Correspondence.' Disliking the business details forced upon him by his position, he is happier when matchmaking for his brother, or stealing a lady's muskball on his behalf, sending his mother salad oil or treacle of Genoa with appropriate comments, or rallying the Duchess of Norfolk not over delicately on her interesting condition. His taste for literature seems to have been real and catholic, ranging from the 'Ars Amoris' to treatises on wisdom, not excluding theology; on the death of his mother's chaplain he wrote to secure his library. He employed

a transcriber, one piece of whose handiwork, a 'great book' containing treatises on knighthood and war, Hoccleve's 'De Regimine Principum,' an account of the tournament between Lord Scales and the Bastard and other items, is still preserved in the British Museum (Lansdowne MS. 285). This occurs in the interesting inventory of books (among them Caxton's 'Game of Chess'), belonging either to him or his namesake and successor, included in the Paston 'Correspondence' (iii. 300). We are disposed to regard it as a list drawn up by the elder brother, a few days before his death. Mr. Gairdner refers it to the younger brother.

[The Paston Letters (ed. Gairdner) are the sole authority; they include some documents not originally included in the Paston Collection. In a few cases the dates assigned by Mr. Gairdner seem open to dispute; No. 325, placed under 1459, belongs more probably to 1464, and No. 539 to 1465, rather than 1466.] J. T-T.

PASTON, ROBERT, first EARL OF YARMOUTH (1631–1683), was born at Oxnead, the seat of the Paston family in Norfolk, on 29 May 1631. He was eldest son of Sir William Paston, an antiquary, who had been high sheriff of Norfolk in 1636, was created a baronet 8 June 1642, and died 22 Feb. 1662–3 [see under PASTON, SIR WILLIAM, 1479?–1554]. His mother, Katherine, daughter of Robert Bertie, first earl of Lindsey [q. v.], died in 1636. He was educated at Westminster, and at Trinity College, Cambridge, and is said to have fought in the civil wars. His family suffered during the Commonwealth (cf. *Cal. Comm. for the Advance of Money*, i. 487), and he travelled abroad. When Charles II was restored, Paston was knighted on 29 May 1660. He sat in the House of Commons as member for Castle Rising from 1661 to 1673, and then gave place to Samuel Pepys. In 1661 he was made deputy-lieutenant for Norfolk, and captain in the Earl of Suffolk's regiment of militia horse.

On 22 Feb. 1662–3 Paston succeeded his father as second baronet; he became a fellow of the Royal Society on 20 May of the same year, and on 25 Jan. 1666–7 he was appointed gentleman of the privy chamber. On 19 Aug. 1673 he was created Baron Paston of Paston in Norfolk, and Viscount Yarmouth of Great Yarmouth, and took his seat on 20 Oct. of the same year. He was also appointed high steward of Great Yarmouth 23 Dec. 1674; and he became lord-lieutenant of Norfolk 6 March, and vice-admiral of Norfolk 9 May 1676. In the same year he entertained Charles II at Oxnead, and on 9 Aug. he was wounded while in his coach by some ruffians who shot at him.

Yarmouth was evidently a friend of the king. He had obtained a lease of the subsidies of wood, glass, earthen and stone ware, oranges, citrons, lemons, and pomegranates in 1666, and on 24 Jan. 1677–8 he secured the joint surveyorship of the green wax. In 1679 he became colonel of the 3rd Norfolk militia. On 30 July 1679 he was advanced to the earldom of Yarmouth. He took some part in debates in the lords, and signed numerous protests. Yarmouth died 8 March 1682–3, and was buried at Oxnead. His portrait was painted by Kneller after 1675.

Yarmouth married Rebecca, daughter of Sir Jasper Clayton, by whom he left issue. His eldest son, WILLIAM PASTON, second EARL OF YARMOUTH (1652–1732), succeeded to the title, became a fellow of the Royal Society, and was treasurer of the household from 1686 to 1689. He was a supporter of James II, and married Charlotte Jemima Mary, natural daughter of Charles II; and, after her death, Elizabeth, widow of Sir Robert Wiseman and daughter of Lord North [see under NORTH, DUDLEY, fourth BARON NORTH]; but his sons, who were by his first wife, died before him, and the title, on his death on 25 Dec. 1732, became extinct. His estate was found to be so encumbered with debt that it had to be sold, and Oxnead was bought by George, afterwards Lord Anson [q. v.], the admiral, who pulled down the old mansion.

[Doyle's Official Baronage, iii. 736; Burke's Extinct and Dormant Peerage, p. 420; Pepys's Diary, ed. Lord Braybrooke, vol. i. p. xviii, vol. v. pp. 288, 289, 291; Wheatley's Samuel Pepys and the World he lived in, pp. 47–8; Evelyn's Diary, ed. Wheatley, ii. 83, 88, 184; Blomefield's Norfolk, iv. 491; Macaulay's Hist. of Engl. i. 489; Rogers's Protests of the Lords; Cal. of State Papers, Dom. 1663–4 p. 389, 1665–6 pp. 104, &c., 1667 p. 473; Turner's Hist. Sketch of Caistor Castle.] W. A. J. A.

PASTON, WILLIAM (1378–1444), judge, was born in 1378 at Paston on the coast of Norfolk, four miles from North Walsham, and close to the small Cluniac priory of Bromholm (*Norfolk Archæology*, vol. iv.; *Paston Letters*, i. 30). He was son of Clement Paston, who died on 17 June 1419, and Beatrix de Somerton (*ib.* i. 52, iii. 448). Twenty years after William Paston's death an attempt was made to defeat his son's claim to the Fastolf estates on the plea that his grandmother, and apparently his grandfather too, had been of servile blood. Clement Paston was alleged to have been merely a good plain husbandman who cultivated his own little holding of a hundred acres or so, much of which he held on base tenure of

the duchy of Lancaster, and drove his own corn to market (*ib.* vol. i. p. xxi, vol. ii. p. 227). The family, it was said, held no manorial rights until William Paston purchased some. These assertions might seem to be supported by Clement Paston's modest will, and we certainly find the judge's son endeavouring to obtain the grant of a court leet in Paston from the duchy (*ib.* iii. 421, 447). But the Pastons proved to the satisfaction of Edward IV and his council that they were 'gentlemen descended lineally of worshipfull blood sithen the Conquest hither.' The pedigree and other evidences on which they relied were preserved at Oxnead Hall until the family became extinct, and still exist in a copy made by Francis Sandford [q. v.] for Robert Paston, viscount (afterwards first earl of) Yarmouth [q. v.], in 1674, and printed by Mr. Worship in the fourth volume of the 'Norfolk Archæology.' The first steps in the family tree, beginning with Wolstan, who came over from Normandy in 1069, are more than doubtful, and some curious errors occur elsewhere; but there seems no good reason to doubt that the Pastons belonged to the small gentry of Norfolk, and had secured by marriage manors in parishes contiguous to Paston. But Judge Paston was clearly the real founder of the family fortunes. If the unfriendly statement already quoted may be trusted, his father had to borrow money to keep him at school, and he was partly supported, during his law studies in London, by a maternal uncle. He made great progress in these studies, and one of the first acts of Richard Courtenay [q. v.] when he became bishop of Norwich in 1413 was to make Paston steward of all his courts and leets (Blomefield, *Hist. of Norfolk*, vi. 479). According to Blomefield, the citizens of Norwich called him in as arbitrator in a dispute about the election of mayor in 1414, an honour repeated in 1442 (*ib.* iii. 126, 148). In 1421 the bench enrolled him in the select body of serjeants-at-law, and his services in that capacity were soon retained for the crown (Dugdale, *Origines Juridiciales*, p. 46). On 15 Oct. 1429 Paston was raised to the bench as one of the justices of the common pleas, and continued to perform the duties of this office until a few months before his death (*Ordinances of the Privy Council*, iv. 4). A salary of over seventy pounds was assigned to him, and, as a mark of special favour, he received two robes more than the ordinary allowance of the judges (*Paston Letters*, vol. i. p. xxiii). He was a member of the king's council for the duchy of Lancaster, and acted as a trier of petitions in the parliaments of 1439 and 1442 (*Rot. Parl.* v. 4, 36). His conduct on the bench in days when judicial impartiality was hard to preserve was such as to secure him the honourable title of the 'Good Judge,' and a place among Fuller's 'Worthies of England.' But it did not entirely escape challenge. While a serjeant-at-law he had been in great request among the Norfolk gentry as trustee and executor, and his services as counsel had been retained by towns and religious bodies as well as by private persons. In the parliament of November 1433 one William Dalling, an official of the duchy of Lancaster in Norfolk, accused the judge of being still 'withholden' at fees in every matter in Norfolk. The exact sums which he took yearly from certain parties named were specified. If he still took fees from old clients, it would be sufficient to cast a doubt upon his impartiality in cases where their interests were concerned. The petition, however, was rejected, and his reputation does not seem to have suffered. His duties as an advocate in lawless and litigious Norfolk had, before he became a judge, involved him in some awkward situations, of which we get a glimpse in the earlier letters of the Paston collection. In 1426 he prays 'the Holy Trinite, delyvere me of my iij. adversaries, of this cursed bysshop for Bromholm, Aslak for Sprouston, and Julian Herberd for Thornham. I have nought trespassed ageyn noon of these iij., God knowing, and yet I am foule and noysyngly vexed with hem, to my gret unease, and al for my lordes and frendes matieres, and nought for myn owyn' (*Paston Letters*, i. 26). As counsel for the priory of Bromholm, in whose fortunes he had a personal and family as well as a professional interest, Paston had resisted the claim of Walter Aslak to the advowson of Sprouston, and prosecuted a certain John Wortes 'that namythe hymself Paston, and affirmeth hym untrewely to be my cousin,' for apostasy from the priory. In August 1424 Aslak placarded Norwich with bills, threatening to murder Paston, and by his interest in high places brought him into ill-odour with John Mowbray, second duke of Norfolk, whose steward Paston had been since 1415. Wortes went to Rome, where he was made bishop of Cork, and got his adversary mulcted in a fine of 205*l.*, and ultimately excommunicated. We are not told how either matter ended.

In January 1444 Paston was too ill to ride the home circuit, and made his will. He died on 13 Aug., late at night, which no doubt accounts for the date of his death being sometimes given as the 14th (*ib.* i. 50, 54, ii. 289, iii. 448–60). Sandford quotes a statement of William Worcester that he died at

London, which may be doubted. He was buried in the chapel of Our Lady in Norwich Cathedral, of which he had been a benefactor, and his son endowed a priest to pray for his soul in the said chapel for ninety years (Blomefield, vi. 480). Blomefield states that he built the north aisle of Therfield Church, Hertfordshire, and probably that of Great Cressingham Church, Norfolk, in both of which effigies of himself and his wife formerly existed.

Paston married Agnes, daughter and heiress of Sir Edmund Berry of Harlingbury or Horwelbury Hall in Hertfordshire, who bore him five sons and one daughter. The sons were: John (1421–1466), who is separately noticed; Edmund (1425?–1449?), William (1436?–1496?), Clement (*b.* 1442; *d.* before 1487), and Harry, who must have predeceased his father (*Paston Letters*, i. 77). The daughter was Elizabeth, who married (1), before 1459, Robert Poynings (*d.* 1461), by whom she was mother of Lord-deputy Sir Edward Poynings [q. v.], and (2), before 1472, Sir George Browne of Betchworth, Surrey. She made her will on 18 May 1487 (*ib.* iii. 462).

Paston's wife had brought him estates in Hertfordshire and Suffolk, and he himself had made extensive purchases of lands in Paston and other parts of Norfolk, including the manor of Gresham, bought of Thomas Chaucer [q. v.] These estates he divided by his will between his widow and his sons, with elaborate precautions against disputes, which did not prove entirely successful. He also left a very considerable amount of ready money and plate, although over four hundred pounds of his salary was not paid until fourteen years after his death (Foss, iv. 352; *Enrolled Customs Accounts*, 37 Henry VI). His widow died in 1479.

[Foss, in his Lives of the Judges (iv. 350–2), gives a short biography of Paston, to which something has been added from Blomefield and Parkin's History of Norfolk (8vo ed., 1805) and Mr. Gairdner's edition of the Paston Letters. The fullest materials for the Paston genealogy are contained in Sandford's transcript of the family pedigree and evidences printed in 1855 by Mr. Worship in vol. iv. of the Norfolk Archæology from the original manuscript at Clumber. Some additional information may be gleaned from Dugdale's Monasticon Anglicanum (ed. Caley, Ellis, and Bandinel), iii. 63 sqq., v. 59 sq.] J. T–r.

**PASTON, Sir WILLIAM** (1479?–1554), lawyer and courtier, born about 1479, was son of Sir John Paston the younger of Paston in Norfolk, by Margery, daughter of Sir Thomas Brews of Sturton Hall in Sall, Norfolk. The father was a soldier, and had been brought up in the family of the Duke of Norfolk, with whom his family had much dispute; but, like his elder brother, also called Sir John Paston, who is separately noticed, and from whom he must be carefully distinguished, he took the Lancastrian side in the war of the Roses. With his brother he fought at Barnet in 1471, and had to secure a pardon to meet the new turn of affairs. He served in the army of 1475, and, on his elder brother's death in 1479, he succeeded to the estates. He was high sheriff of Norfolk in 1485, and evidently was much trusted by the new king, who gave him a reward of 160*l.* in the same year. He behaved well in the rebellion of Lambert Simnel, was knighted at the battle of Stoke in 1487, was made a knight of the king's body, and took part in the reception of Catherine of Arragon in 1501. He died in 1503.

William Paston was educated at Cambridge, and a letter from him to his father, written about 1495, has been printed among the 'Paston Letters.' It shows that at the time he had been forced to leave the university on account of the ravages of the sweating sickness. He was bred to the law, the borough of Yarmouth acknowledging his services on one occasion by giving him a present; but he is chiefly known as a courtier. In 1511 he was a commissioner of array for Norfolk. In 1513 he secured a grant of part of the Pole estates. On 7 July 1517 he attended on the king at a banquet at Greenwich. The same year he was sheriff of Norfolk. It seems uncertain when he was knighted, but probably he was dubbed early in Henry VIII's reign. He was certainly a knight in 1520. He was present at the reception of the emperor, Charles V, and the Field of the Cloth of Gold in 1520, and in 1522 seems to have been employed as a treasurer for the army on the Scottish border. He was often in the commission of the peace for Norfolk, and secured various grants. In 1523 he was again serving on the northern border, and his family connection with the Lovell family secured him the executorship to Sir Thomas Lovell [q. v.], who died in 1524. He was a commissioner to collect the subsidy of 1524; the same year, on 1 Sept., he was one of those who rode to Blackheath to meet the papal ambassador bearing the golden rose to Henry. He seems to have been high-handed as a landlord, and had disputes with the men of Yarmouth about his estate of Caistor. In 1528 he was sheriff of Norfolk and Suffolk. He went on the expedition of 1532, took some part, as an augmentation commissioner for Norfolk, in the suppression of the monasteries, was present at the reception of Anne of Cleves in 1539, and died

in September 1554. He was buried at Paston on 26 Sept., and his will (P.P.C. More 15) was proved on 4 Dec. of the same year. He married Bridget, daughter of Sir Henry Heydon of Baconsthorpe, Norfolk. By her he left two sons, of whom the second, Clement, is separately noticed.

The eldest son, Erasmus Paston, died in his father's lifetime, in 1540, and was buried at Paston on 6 Nov. of that year. He had married Mary, daughter of Sir Thomas Wyndham of Felbrigg, Norfolk; she lived until 1596, and by her he had a son, Sir William Paston (1528–1610), who was knighted on 22 Aug. 1578, and is famous as the founder of North Walsham grammar school. He succeeded to the property of his grandfather in 1540, and of his uncle Clement in 1597. In the latter year he removed to the new house which Sir Clement Paston had built at Oxnead; and Caistor, which the Paston family had had such difficulty to keep in the fifteenth century, was suffered to fall into ruin. He died on 20 Oct. 1610, and was buried in the church at North Walsham. A portrait is at North Walsham, and another, said to be by Zucchero, was at Empingham Rectory, Rutland. He settled 40*l.* per annum on the school, with 10*l.* for a weekly lecturer; he was also a benefactor to Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge. He had married, on 5 May 1551, Frances, daughter of Sir Thomas Clere of Stokesby, Norfolk, and by her he left, with other issue, Christopher, his heir, who became insane in 1611, and who was great-grandfather of Robert Paston, first earl of Yarmouth [q. v.]

[For Sir John Paston the introduction to the third volume of Gairdner's Paston Letters supplies full information; see also Dawson Turner's Hist. Sketch of Caistor; Letters, &c., Richard III and Henry VII, ed. Gairdner (Rolls Ser.) i. 410; Campbell's Materials for the Hist. of Henry VII (Rolls Ser.) i. 158, &c. (the William Paston referred to in this authority is Sir John Paston's uncle, not his son), ii. 135, &c. For the others, Letters and Papers of Henry VIII; Chron. of Calais (Camd. Soc.), pp. 22, 42, 174; Ordinances of the Privy Council, ed. Nicolas, vii. 49; Sharp's Royal Descent, &c., pp. 11–13; Blomefield's Norfolk, iv. 491.] W. A. J. A.

PASTORINI, BENEDICT (BENEDETTO) (*fl.* 1775–1810), draughtsman and engraver, a native of Italy, came to England, where he obtained employment as a decorator of ceilings in the style then in vogue. He also studied stipple engraving under Francesco Bartolozzi [q. v.], and executed some very successful plates in this manner, mostly subjects after Angelica Kauffmann, Zucchi, Rigaud, and others, but including a full-length portrait of Mrs. Billington after Sir Joshua Reynolds. Pastorini published in 1775 a very scarce set of ten engravings, entitled 'A New Book of Designs for Girandoles and Glass Frames in the Present Taste.' He exhibited two drawings for ceilings at the Royal Academy in 1775 and 1776. He also engraved some caricatures in aquatint. When the Society of Engravers was formed in 1803 to protect engravers and their widows and orphans, Pastorini was one of the first governors, the qualification being the contribution of a plate worth seventy-five guineas. It was this society which led to the foundation of the Artists' Benevolent Fund in 1810, and as Pastorini's name does not appear among the governors then, it is probable that his death had taken place before the latter date. Two members of his family, F. E. and J. Pastorini, practised as miniature-painters, and exhibited miniatures at the Royal Academy from 1812 to 1834. The latter died in Newman Street, London, on 3 Aug. 1839, aged 66.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Pye's Patronage of British Art; Tuer's Bartolozzi and his Works; Royal Academy Catalogues, with manuscript notes by J. H. Anderdon.] L. C.

PASTORIUS, FRANCIS DANIEL (1651–1719?), New England settler, born in Sommerhausen, Frankenland, Germany, on 26 Sept. 1651, was son of Melchior Adam Pastorius, judge of Windsheim. In 1668 he entered the university of Altorf, afterwards studied law at Strasburg, Basle, and Jena, and at Ratisbon obtained a practical knowledge of international polity. On 23 Nov. 1676 he received the degree of doctor of law at Nuremberg. In 1679 he was a law lecturer at Frankfort, where he became deeply interested in the teachings of the pastor Spener, the founder of Pietism. In 1680 and 1681 he accompanied Johannes Bonaventura von Rodeck, on Spener's recommendation, in his travels through France, England, Ireland, and Italy, returning to Frankfort in 1682. Having joined the sect of the pietists, he devised, with some of his co-religionists, a plan for emigrating to Pennsylvania. They purchased twenty-five thousand acres, but abandoned the intention of colonising the land themselves. Pastorius, who acted as their agent, had made the acquaintance of William Penn in England, and became a convert to the quaker doctrines. He was commissioned by his associates, who in 1683 organised themselves as the Frankfort Land Company, and by some merchants of Crefeld, who had acquired fifteen thousand acres, to

conduct a colony of German and Dutch Mennonites and quakers to Pennsylvania. He arrived on 20 June 1683, settled upon the company's tract between the Schuylkill and the Delaware rivers, and on 24 Oct. began to lay out Germantown. Soon after his arrival he united himself with the Society of Quakers, and became one of its most able and devoted members, as well as the recognised head and law-giver of the settlement. In 1687 he was elected a member of the assembly. In 1688 he drew up a memorial against slave-holding, which was adopted by the Germantown quakers and sent up to the monthly meeting, and thence to the yearly meeting at Philadelphia. It is noteworthy as the first protest made by a religious body against negro slavery, and is the subject of John Greenleaf Whittier's poem, 'The Pennsylvania Pilgrim.' The original document was discovered in 1844 by Nathan Kite, and was published in the 'Friend' (vol. xviii. No. 16). Pastorius was elected the first bailiff of the town in 1691, and served the office again in 1692, afterwards acting frequently as clerk. For many years he carried on a school in Germantown, which he temporarily removed to Philadelphia between 1698 and 1700, and wrote deeds and letters required by the more uneducated of his countrymen. He died in Germantown between 26 Dec. 1719 and 13 Jan. 1720, the dates respectively of the making and proving of his will. On 26 Nov. 1686 he married Anneke, daughter of Dr. Johann Klostérman of Mühlheim, by whom he had two sons, John Samuel (*b.* 1690) and Henry (*b.* 1692). He was on intimate terms with William Penn, Thomas Lloyd, Chief-justice Logan, Thomas Story, and other leading men in the province belonging to his own religious society, as well as with Kelpius, the learned mystic of the Wissahickon, with the pastor of the Swedes church, and the leaders of the Mennonites.

His 'Lives of the Saints,' &c., written in German and dedicated to Professor Schurmberg, his old teacher, was published in 1690. He also published a pamphlet, consisting in part of letters to his father, and containing a description of Pennsylvania and its government, and advice to emigrants, entitled, 'Umständige geographische Beschreibung der zu allerletzt erfundenen Provintz Pennsylvaniæ,' 8vo, Frankfort and Leipzig, 1700, a further portion of which was included in the quaker Gabriel Thomas's 'Continuatio der Beschreibung der Landschafft Pennsylvaniæ,' 8vo, Frankfort and Leipzig, 1702. Some of his poetry, which is chiefly devoted to the pleasures of gardening, the description of flowers, and the care of bees, appeared in 1710, under the title of 'Deliciæ hortenses: eine Sammlung deutscher epigrammatischer Gedichte.'

Others of his works are: 1. 'De Rasura Documentorum,' Nuremberg, 1676, 4to, being his inaugural dissertation for his degree. 2. A primer, printed in Pennsylvania previously to 1697. 3. 'Treatise on four Subjects of Ecclesiastical History, viz., the Lives of the Saints, the Statutes of the Pontiffs, the Decisions of the Councils of the Church, the Bishops and Patriarchs of Constantinople,' written in German and printed in Germany, and dedicated by Pastorius to his old schoolmaster at Windsheim, Tobias Schumberg, 1690.

Pastorius left forty-three volumes of manuscripts. Few of these compilations have escaped destruction; the most curious of all, however, the huge folio entitled Francis Daniel Pastorius, his Hive, Beestock, Melliotrophium Alucar or Rusca Apium,' was in 1872 in the possession of Washington Pastorius of Germantown. It is a medley of knowledge and fancy, history, philosophy, and poetry, written in seven languages. His Latin prologue to the Germantown book of records (1688) has been translated by Whittier as an ode beginning 'Hail to Posterity,' which is prefixed to the 'Pennsylvania Pilgrim.'

[Penn Monthly for 1871 and for January and February 1872; Whittier's Writings (London, 1888–9), i. 316–45, 434–5; Der deutsche Pionier (Cincinnati) for 1871; Allgemeine deutsche Biographie, xxv. 219; Appleton's Cyclop. of Amer. Biogr.] G. G.

PATCH, RICHARD (1770?–1806), criminal, born about 1770 at Heavitree, near Exeter, Devonshire, was the eldest son of a small farmer who for some daring acts of smuggling was imprisoned in Exeter gaol, where he afterwards became turnkey. Richard Patch was apprenticed to a butcher, and was liberally supplied with money by his father. On his father's death he inherited a small freehold estate of about 50*l.* a year, which he farmed, renting at the same time a small farm in the neighbourhood of Heavitree. In this occupation he was engaged for some years; but he was compelled to mortgage his estate, and in the spring of 1803 journeyed to London to avoid, according to his own account, an action for the non-payment of tithes. He was taken into the service of Isaac Blight, a ship-breaker living in the parish of St. Mary, Rotherhithe. In the summer of 1803 Blight, in order to protect himself against his creditors, appears to have executed an instrument con-

veying his property to Patch. In Aug. 1805 it was arranged that Patch should become a real, instead of a nominal, partner in Blight's business to the extent of one-third. For this share Patch paid Blight 250*l.*, procured from the sale of his estate in Devonshire, and promised him, by 23 Sept. 1805, 1,000*l.*, a sum that Patch knew he had no means of obtaining. On the evening of the 23rd Patch was alone with Blight in the front parlour of the latter's house, and about 8 P.M., just after Patch had been seen to leave the room, Blight was discovered by a servant lying wounded by a pistol-shot. Blight expired the next day, and Patch was tried for his murder on 5 April 1806, at the Sessions House in Horsemonger Lane, before Lord-chief-baron Macdonald. The prisoner, who appeared dressed 'in a handsome suit of black,' behaved with the utmost coolness, and read a written defence. He was found guilty on clear circumstantial evidence, skilfully marshalled by the prosecution. Patch was deeply affected when visited in prison by his brother and by the sister of his deceased wife, but does not appear to have confessed the murder. He was executed on 8 April 1806 at nine o'clock, on a platform on the front of the gaol, Horsemonger Lane. A man and his wife were at the same time hanged for coining.

The case excited great interest, and numerous accounts of the trial were published, among which were shorthand reports by J. & W. B. Gurney, and by Blanchard & Ramsey (London, 1806, 8vo). A view and plan of Blight's house appeared in the 'Lady's Magazine' for 1806, pp. 211–16. Fairburn's edition of the trial and an account published in vol. iv. of Kirby's 'Wonderful and Eccentric Museum' (pp. 43–97) contain portraits of Patch, who is described (*Gent. Mag.* 1806, p. 375, paged '383') as a man of heavy build, 'very round-shouldered, with a short thick neck and florid complexion.'

[Gurney's Trial of Richard Patch, and other accounts of the Life and Trial of Patch, enumerated in Brit. Mus. Cat. under 'Patch, Richard.']

W. W.

**PATCH, THOMAS** (*d.* 1782), painter and engraver, after studying art in London, went as a young man to Italy, making his way thither, chiefly on foot, in company with Richard Dalton the artist. He arrived at Rome some time before 1750, and became a student at the academy there. He was patronised by the Earl of Charlemont and other amateurs, for whom he painted or copied pictures. His eccentric behaviour, however, drew on him the displeasure of the church authorities, and he had to leave Rome hurriedly towards the end of 1755. He then removed to Florence, where he resided until his death. When in Rome he became acquainted, and appears to have travelled in company, with Sir Joshua Reynolds [q. v.], who introduced a portrait of Patch into the caricature of 'The School of Athens,' drawn by Reynolds in 1751. At Florence Patch became well known among the English residents, and was a great friend of Sir Horace Mann [q. v.], who frequently recommended Patch and his works to Horace Walpole and other friends in England or on their travels. Patch was one of the first artists to discern the supreme merits of Masaccio's frescos in the Church of the Carmini at Florence. He made careful drawings of these, which are the more valuable as the original paintings were shortly afterwards seriously damaged by fire. Though Patch had no previous experience of engraving, he etched these drawings on copper, and published them in twenty-six plates in 1770 as 'The Life of the Celebrated Painter, Masaccio,' with a dedication to Sir Horace Mann. In 1772 he published a series of twenty-four etchings from the works of Fra Bartolommeo, dedicated to Horace Walpole; and another series from the pictures by Giotto in the Church of the Carmini, dedicated to Bernardo Manetti. In 1774 he published a set of engravings by himself and F. Gregory from Lorenzo Ghiberti's Gates of the Baptistery of San Giovanni at Florence. All these works have merit, and entitle Patch to a foremost place among the students of early Florentine art. Patch also executed a number of caricatures of English travellers and residents in Florence, including two of himself. A small 'caricature' painting of the bibliophile Duke of Roxburghe, by Patch, is in the National Portrait Gallery. He painted conversation pieces and landscapes. Two views of the Arno by him are at Hampton Court; and he engraved a similar view himself. He also engraved portraits of Nicolas Poussin, Sir J. Hawkwood, A. P. Bellori (after C. Maratti), some landscapes after Gaspar Poussin, &c. Patch was seized with apoplexy in Sir Horace Mann's house at Florence, and died on 30 April 1782. There are a few drawings by him in the print-room at the British Museum. His brother, James Patch, was a surgeon in Norfolk Street, London.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Doran's Mann and Manners in Florence; Hist. MSS. Comm. 12th Rep. App. x.]

L. C.

**PATE** or **PATES, RICHARD** (*d.* 1565), bishop of Worcester, son of John Pate by Elinor, sister of John Longland [q. v.], bishop

of Lincoln, was born in Oxfordshire, probably at Henley-on-Thames, and was admitted on 1 June 1522 a scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, whence he graduated B.A. on 15 Dec. 1523, according to Wood (*Fasti*, ed. Bliss, i. 63). This degree having been completed by determination, he went to Paris, and there graduated M.A. On 4 June 1523 he was collated by his uncle to the prebend of Centum Solidorum in the church of Lincoln, and he resigned it for that of Cropredy in 1525. He appears to have resided for some time at Bruges, as John Ludovicus Vivès, writing from that city on 8 July 1524 to Bishop Longland, the king's confessor, says: 'Richard Pate, your sister's son, and Antony Barcher, your dependant, are wonderfully studious' (Brewer, *Letters and Papers of Henry VIII*, vol. iv. pt. i. p. 203). In 1526 he was made archdeacon of Worcester. On 11 March 1526–7 he had the stall of Sanctæ Crucis, alias Spaldwick, in the church of Lincoln, and on 22 June 1528 the stall of Sutton cum Buckingham in the same church. On this latter date he was also made archdeacon of Lincoln upon the death of William Smith, doctor of decrees. His uncle, the bishop, wrote to Wolsey on 15 July 1528: 'There is a house in the close at Lincoln, belonging to the late archdeacon, which I should be glad of for a residence for my nephew, Richard Pate, archdeacon of Lincoln, whom I should like to settle there' (*ib.* vol. iv. pt. ii. p. 1973).

In November 1533 Pate was appointed to be the king's ambassador resident in the court of the emperor, Charles V. During his absence the bishop of Lincoln was not unmindful of his nephew's interests, and in a letter dated 27 Sept. 1535 he desired Cromwell's favour for the archdeacon of Lincoln, 'whose great charges at this time are beyond what his income can bear,' and shortly afterwards he sought leave for the archdeacon to license his officers to visit his archdeaconry, 'or he will lack money to serve the king where he is, for this is the chief time of his profits.' In April 1536 Pate was at Rome with the emperor, who complained of the course adopted by the king of England, and energetically defended his own action on behalf of his aunt, Catherine of Arragon. Subsequently he accompanied the emperor to the Low Countries. Soon afterwards he was recalled to England, and Sir Thomas Wyatt succeeded him as ambassador in the emperor's court in March 1536–7. In June 1536 he had supplicated for the degree of B.D. at Oxford.

On 8 July 1541 Pope Paul III 'provided' Pate to the bishopric of Worcester, which had been vacated by the death of Cardinal Jerome Ghinucci, who had been deprived of the temporalities of the see in 1535 on account of his being a foreigner. Bishop Stubbs assigns the appointment and consecration of Pate to 1554, when he received the temporalities from Queen Mary (*Registrum Sacrum Anglicanum*, p. 81). It is to be noted that Nicholas Heath [q. v.], who was placed in this see by Henry VIII in 1543, although rehabilitated by Cardinal Pole, and made archbishop of York, was not recognised by the pope as bishop of Worcester. In his 'provision' to York, Heath is styled 'clericus Eboracensis' (Brady, *Episcopal Succession in England*, i. 51, 52). Pate attended the council of Trent as bishop of Worcester, his first appearance there being in the session which opened on 21 April 1547. He was also present at the sittings of the council in September 1549 and in 1551. He remained in banishment during the reign of Edward VI. In 1542 he had been attainted of high treason, whereupon his archdeaconry was bestowed on George Heneage, and his prebend of Eastharptre in the church of Wells on Dr. John Heryng.

On the accession of Queen Mary he returned to this country. His attainder was reversed, and on 5 March 1554-5 he obtained possession of the temporalities of the see of Worcester (Rymer, *Fœdera*, xv. 415). Queen Elizabeth deprived him of the temporalities in June 1559, and cast him into prison. He was in the Tower of London on 12 Feb. 1561–2, when he made his will, which has been printed by Brady. On regaining his liberty he withdrew to Louvain, where he died on 5 Oct. 1565. Mass is still said for him every year at the English College, Rome, on the anniversary of his death.

One of the figures in Holbein's celebrated picture of 'The Ambassadors,' now in the National Gallery, is believed to represent Pate (*Times*, 8 Dec. 1891).

[Baker's Northamptonshire, i. 697; Bedford's Blazon of Episcopacy, p. 108; Chambers's Biographical Illustrations of Worcestershire, p. 62; Dodd's Church Hist. i. 488; Foster's Alumni Oxonienses, 1500–1714, iii. 1126; Fowler's History of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, pp. 86, 88, 382; Godwin, De Præsulibus, ed. Richardson, p. 470; Humfredus, Vita Juelli, 1573, p. 179; Kennett MSS. xlvi. 298; Le Neve's Fasti; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. vi. 203, 2nd ser. v. 378; Oxford University Register, i. 131; Thomas's Survey of the Cathedral of Worcester, 1736, pt. ii. pp. 209–10; Willis's Survey of Cathedrals, ii. 646; Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses, ii. 794, and Fasti Oxonienses, i. 19, 62, 63, 85, ed. Bliss.]

T. C.

PATE, RICHARD (1516–1588), founder of the Cheltenham grammar school, commonly described as of Minsterworth, Gloucestershire, was born on 24 Sept. 1516. At the age of sixteen he was admitted 'disciple' (= scholar) on the Gloucestershire foundation of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, but never became fellow. He was a commissioner to Henry VIII and Edward VI for taking a survey of all the suppressed religious foundations in Gloucester, Bristol, and neighbouring places, and himself purchased of Edward VI several of the lands belonging to these monasteries in Gloucestershire and elsewhere. He was also for many years recorder of Gloucester. In 1586 he founded the grammar school and almshouses ('hospital') at Cheltenham which still bear his name, and by an indenture dated 6 Oct. of that year he covenants with Corpus Christi College that, in return for undertaking the charge of his property and administering the benefaction, they shall, as stipulated in the statutes of the founder, receive one-fourth part of the gross revenue. This property, which was situated in Cheltenham and Gloucester, brought in at that time a gross sum of about 54*l.* a year. It now, in some years, produces a net income of over 2,000*l.* Pate died on 28 Oct. 1588, in his seventy-third year, and was buried in the south transept of Gloucester Cathedral, where his monument was renewed by Corpus Christi College in 1688. He is dressed in the habit of a lawyer, and is represented together with his wife and children. There is also a fine portrait of him, apparently contemporary, though by an unknown artist, in the Corpus common room. This Richard Pate must not be confounded with Richard Pate or Pates [q. v.], bishop of Worcester.

[Fowler's History of Corpus Christi College, pp. 34–5; Rudder's Hist. of Gloucestershire, p. 118; Griffith's Hist. of Cheltenham, pp. 53–4.]

T. F.

PATE, WILLIAM (1666–1746), 'the learned woollen-draper,' son of William Pate, was born in 1666. He was a direct lineal descendant from John Pate (*b.* 1557) of Brin in Essex, the great-uncle of Sir John Pate, bart. (1585–1652), of Sysonby, Leicestershire. He is erroneously stated by Nichols, who is followed by Scott, to have been educated at Trinity Hall, Cambridge, and to have been granted the degree of LL.D. It appears, however, that he travelled in Italy, whence Arbuthnot mentions that he 'brought back all Chaussane's music.' Charles King, writing to Wanley in 1693, alludes to Pate as a young man newly set up, yet 'probably master of the best study of books and the best scholar of his age I know.' About the same period John Arbuthnot, previous to matriculating at Oxford, lived with Pate, who inherited from his father a prosperous business and a house opposite the Royal Exchange. In October 1694 the learned woollen-draper gave his boarder a letter of introduction to Dr. Charlett, master of University, in which he spoke highly of his young friend's honesty, discretion, and merit (Letter in Tanner MSS. at the Bodleian Library, xxv. 228). It was probably through the instrumentality of Arbuthnot that Pate became such a familiar figure in the literary society of his epoch; he was doubtless taken up the more warmly because to men like Steele and Swift the combination of literary taste with the practice of trade was something of a novel sensation. Steele wrote about the learned tradesman in the 'Guardian' (No. 141): 'A passage which happened to me some years ago confirmed several maxims of frugality in my mind. A woollen-draper of my acquaintance, remarkable for his learning and good nature, pulled out his pocket-book, wherein he showed me at the one end several well-chosen mottos, and several patterns of cloth at the other. I, like a well-bred man, praised both sort of goods, whereupon he tore out the mottos and generously gave them to me, but with great prudence put the patterns in his pocket again.' Swift, who, while staying in London during 1708–9, wrote of Pate as a 'bel esprit and woollen-draper,' renewed his acquaintance in the autumn of 1710. He dined with Pate at Lee Grove, Kent, on 17 Sept., and again on the 24th. On 6 Oct. he and Sir Andrew Fountaine shared Pate's hospitality at a chop-house in the city, and the trio subsequently 'sauntered in booksellers' and china shops' until it was time to go to the tavern, the party not breaking up until ten o'clock. About this time Pate started the 'Lacedemonian Mercury,' under Tom Brown, to oppose Dunton's 'Athenian Mercury;' but he was outmanœuvred by his rivals, and the venture failed. He retained, however, the loyalty of Brown, who in 1710 dedicated to his 'honest friend, Mr. Pate,' his 'Memoirs of the Present State of the Court and Councils of Spain.' By Swift the accomplished draper was introduced to Pope, who, writing to John Hughes in 1714, enclosed a 'proposal for his Homer' to Pate, as a likely person to promote the subscription.

Pate, who was a sheriff of the city in 1734, died at Lee on 9 Dec. 1746, and was buried in the old churchyard. He dictated the following apophthegm, to be inscribed in gold letters upon his tomb: 'Epicharmion illud

teneto nervos atque artus esse scientiæ: Non temere credere.' Pate had many friends at Oxford, and he presented a portrait of Sir Kenelm Digby to the Bodleian Library in 1692. An autograph note to Sir Hans Sloane about a pattern of black cloth is preserved at the British Museum (Addit. MS. 4055, f. 29).

[Nichols's Life of Bowyer and Lit. Anecdotes, i. 98; Burke's Extinct Baronetage, p. 403; Drake's Hundred of Blackheath, pp. 225 and *n.* 231; Lysons's Environs, iv. 505, 659; Archæolog. Cantiana, xiv. 193; Swift's Journal to Stella, passim; Forster's Life of Swift, pp. 251, 279, 280, 284; Aitken's Life of Arbuthnot, pp. 7, 18, 24; Pope's Works, ed. Elwin and Courthope, vol. x.; Dunton's Life and Errors; Macray's Annals of the Bodleian Library, p. 196; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. iv. 346.] T. S.

**PATER, WALTER HORATIO** (1839–1894), critic and humanist, was born at Shadwell in the east of London on 4 Aug. 1839. He was the second son of Dr. Richard Glode Pater and Maria Hill, his wife. The family is of Dutch extraction, the critic's ancestors having, it is believed, come over from the Low Countries with William of Orange. It is said that the French painter Jean-Baptiste Pater was of the same stock. The English Paters had settled at Olney in Buckinghamshire, where they lived all through the eighteenth century. Reserved and shy, preserving many of their Dutch habits, they are described in family tradition as mingling little with their neighbours, and as keeping through several generations this curious custom, that, while the sons were always brought up as Roman catholics, the daughters were no less invariably trained in the Anglican faith. The father of Walter Pater quitted the Roman church before his marriage, without, however, adopting any other form of faith, and his two sons were the first Paters who were not brought up as catholics.

The grandfather of the critic removed to New York, and there Richard Glode Pater was born. He settled as a physician at Shadwell, and here were born to him two sons—the elder, William Thomson Pater (1835–1888), a medical practitioner—and two daughters, who survive. Richard Glode Pater died so early that his second son scarcely remembered him in later life. The family, at his decease, removed to a retired house in Chase Side, Enfield, which has since been pulled down. Here they continued to reside for fourteen or fifteen years. Walter Pater received the first elements of education in a local school at Enfield, but proceeded at the age of fourteen to King's School, Canterbury. Of the feelings and experiences of this change of life he has given a vivid picture in the 'imaginary portrait' called 'Emerald Uthwart.' Pater was happy at King's School, in spite of his complete indifference to outdoor games. In his first years at public school he was idle and backward, nor was it till he reached the sixth form that his faculties seemed really to awaken. From the first, however, and long before he went to Canterbury, Walter had been considered the 'clever' one of the family; not specially precocious, he was always meditative and serious—marked from the very cradle for the intellectual life. From the time when he first began to think of a future condition, his design was to be a clergyman, and this had received a great impetus, while he was yet a little boy, from his having seen, during a visit to Hursley, Keble, who walked and talked much with him, and encouraged him in his religious aspirations.

Shortly before he left school, when he was entering his twentieth year, Pater read 'Modern Painters,' and came very abruptly under the influence of Ruskin. The world of art was thus for the first time opened to him. But there is no truth in the fable, widely circulated at the time of his death, to the effect that the finished and beautiful essay on 'Winckelmann' was written and even printed while the author was a schoolboy at Canterbury. It was not until many years later that Pater became aware of the existence of the German critic, and his essay was composed and published long after he was a fellow of Brasenose. He is not known to have made any attempt to write, either as a schoolboy or as an undergraduate, his earliest essays being as mature in style as the author was mature in years. Pater did not begin to practise the art of authorship until he had mastered all its secrets.

On 11 June 1858 Pater entered Queen's College, Oxford, as a commoner, with an exhibition from Canterbury, and four years later, in the Michaelmas term of 1862, he graduated B.A. with a second class in classics. He was the pupil of Mr. W. W. Capes, then bursar and tutor of Queen's, and he was coached by Jowett, who was struck by his abilities, and who said to him, 'I think you have a mind that will come to great eminence.' Some years afterwards there was an estrangement of sympathy between Jowett and Pater, but this was removed in the last year of the life of each, and the master of Balliol was among those who congratulated Pater most cordially on his 'Plato and Platonism.' In 1862 Pater took rooms in the High Street, Oxford, and read with private

pupils. It was not until after he graduated that Pater emerged from his shell at Queen's and came to know some of the more interesting men in other colleges. In the beginning of 1863 he and Professor Bywater were elected members of the Old Mortality, an essay society which flourished at Oxford between 1858 and 1865. The principal resident members at that time were Thomas Hill Green [q. v.], Alfred Robinson, Henry Nettleship [q. v.], Professor Bryce, the present master of Balliol (Edward Caird), and Mr. Boyle of Trinity, with whom Pater had been reading. Pater's first essay was philosophical; one who was present describes it as a 'hymn of praise to the absolute.' Through the Old Mortality, Pater became acquainted with other non-resident or future fellows, such as John Nichol, Mr. Swinburne, and Sir Courtenay Ilbert. In 1864 he was elected a fellow of Brasenose College, and went into residence there, proceeding M.A. in 1865. It was as a non-clerical fellow that he took his place in the society.

On relinquishing his early project of entering the church of England, Pater had thought of becoming a unitarian minister. But this notion also he had abandoned by 1864. His interests were at the time, however, mainly philosophical. He had come from school with a tendency to value all things German. The teaching of Jowett and of T. H. Green served to strengthen this habit. Mr. Capes warned him against its excess, but his endeavour to attract his pupil to the lucidity and gaiety of French literature met at first with little success. In the year following his election to his fellowship, he paid, in company with Mr. C. L. Shadwell, fellow of Oriel College, his first visit to Italy, and at Ravenna, Pisa, and Florence formed those impressions of the art of the Renaissance which powerfully coloured his future work as an artist. With the accession of humanistic ideas, he gradually lost all belief in the christian religion.

In 1866 Pater's first essay in composition, a fragment on Coleridge, was published in the 'Westminster Review.' His studies in philosophy naturally brought him to Goethe, and it was only natural that one so delicately sensitive to the external symbol as Pater was, should be prepared by the companionship of Goethe for the influence of a man who was Goethe's master in this one direction. The publication of Otto Jahn's 'Life of Winckelmann' in 1866 made a profound impression on Pater. His famous essay on Winckelmann was the result of this new enthusiasm. It was published in the 'Westminster Review' for January 1867. From this time forth he began to contribute essays to the larger periodicals, and particularly to the 'Fortnightly Review.' In 1868, inventing a name which has since sunk into disrepute, he composed an essay on 'Æsthetic Poetry,' in which the early work of Mr. William Morris received prompt and judicious analysis. Then followed the series which possess a potent and peculiar charm, the characteristic 'Notes on Lionardo da Vinci,' in November 1869; the 'Fragment on Sandro Botticelli,' in August 1870; the 'Pico della Mirandula' in October, and the 'Michelangelo' in November 1871. In 1873 most of these and others were published together in the memorable volume originally entitled 'Studies in the History of the Renaissance.'

In 1869 he had become associated with the group of painters and poets known as the pre-Raphaelites, and particularly with Mr. Swinburne, but he remained domiciled in Oxford. He took a house at No. 2 Bradmore Road, and his sisters came to live with him. Once settled here, Pater became a familiar figure in academic society; but, although he had a large circle of pleasant acquaintances, his intimate friends were always few. His career was exceedingly quiet and even monotonous. He was occupied through term-time in tutorial work, and his long vacations were almost always spent abroad, in Germany or France, in the company of his sisters. He would walk as much as possible, and sometimes more violently than suited his health. He loved the north of France extremely, and knew it well; nor was it any sensible drawback to his pleasure that he spoke no language but his own, and even in French could scarcely make his wants understood. Once, in 1882, he spent the winter in Rome.

Always engaged in literary labour, his procedure was nevertheless so slow and so complicated that twelve years elapsed between the publication of his first book and his second. In February 1885 his romance of 'Marius the Epicurean' was published in two volumes. This is, without doubt, Pater's most valuable legacy to literature. It is written to illustrate the highest ideal of the æsthetic life, and to prove that beauty may be made the object of the soul in a career as pure, as concentrated, and as austere as any that asceticism inspires. 'Marius' is an apology for the highest epicureanism, and at the same time it is a texture which the author has embroidered with exquisite flowers of imagination, learning, and passion. Modern humanism has produced no more admirable product than this noble dream of a pursuit through life of the spirit of heavenly beauty.

In 1887 Pater published a volume of 'Imaginary Portraits,' four short romances, two of them on French topics—'A Prince of Court Painters,' an anecdote of Watteau, and 'Denys l'Auxerrois,' a fantastic vision of Renaissance manners—one on a Dutch subject, 'Sebastian van Storck,' and one on a German, 'Duke Carl of Rosenmold.' These are studies in philosophic fiction, executed with great delicacy. In 1889 he collected some of his miscellaneous critical studies into a volume called 'Appreciations, with an Essay on Style.' In 1893 he published his highly finished college lectures on 'Plato and Platonism.' In the early summer of 1894 'The Child in the House,' an 'imaginary portrait,' written in 1878, was issued from the Oxford press of Mr. Daniel. In January 1895 a posthumous volume of 'Greek Studies' appeared, prepared for the press by Mr. Shadwell.

Pater's household was moved to 12 Earl's Terrace, Kensington, in 1886, and in 1893 back to Oxford, where he again took a house, 64 St. Giles's. But all the while his real home was in his rooms at Brasenose, where he divided his time between his college duties and his books. His death was almost without warning. He was taken ill in his house at Oxford with rheumatic fever in June 1894, and died suddenly, when he was believed to be convalescent, on Monday, 30 July 1894. He was buried in the cemetery of St. Giles at Oxford.

The qualities of Pater's style were highly original, and were in harmony with his sequestered and somewhat mysterious character. His books are singularly independent of influences from without; they closely resemble one another, and have little relation to the rest of contemporary literature. He exhausted himself in the research after absolute perfection of expression, noting with extreme refinement fine shades of feeling and delicate distinctions of thought and sentiment. His fault was to overburden his sentences, to annex to them too many parenthetical clauses and adjectival glosses. He was the most studied of the English prose-writers of his time, and his long-drawn style was lacking in simplicity and freshness. He wrote with labour, incessantly revising his expression and adding to it, wearying himself in the pursuit of a vain perfection. He possessed all the qualities of a humanist.

In temperament Pater was stationary rather than recluse, not shrinking from his fellows, but unwilling to move to meet them. He was fond of travel, yet hated the society of strangers. His disposition was highly affectionate, but not effusive, and his tendencies were contemplative and indolent. For a long time before his death he had silently grown to be a leading personage in the intellectual life of Oxford, though taking no part in any of its reforms or factions. He had a singular delight in surrounding himself with beautiful objects, but without any of the instinct of a collector; their beauty and nothing else delighted him, and the perfect copy of an ancient coin gave him as much pleasure as the original. He disliked noise and extravagance of all kinds; his manners were of the utmost simplicity; and his sense of fun as playful as that of a child.

The volumes published by Pater have been enumerated above. Of works brought out in periodical form, and not as yet republished, the most important are: 1. 'Gaston de la Tour,' a romance, a portion of which appeared in 'Macmillan's Magazine,' from June to October 1888, and was then discontinued. It was never completed, but a considerable number of chapters still exist in manuscript. 2. 'Emerald Uthwart,' a short romance published in the 'New Review' for 1892. 3. 'Some Churches in France,' a series of studies commenced in 'The Nineteenth Century' for 1894. 4. 'Apollo in Picardy,' a short romance published in 'Harper's Magazine' for 1893. 5. 'Pascal,' a study published in the 'Contemporary Review' for February 1895. Pater was also an occasional contributor to the 'Guardian.'

[Personal knowledge and family information. See 'Walter Pater: a Portrait,' in the Contemporary Review for December 1894, by the present writer.] E. G.

PATERNUS, Saint (*fl.* 550). [See Padarn.]

PATERSON. [See also Patterson.]

PATERSON, ALEXANDER (1766–1831), Scottish catholic prelate, born at Pathhead in the Enzie, Banffshire, in March 1766, entered the seminary at Scalan at the age of twelve, and was sent in the following year to the Scottish College at Douay, where he remained until 1793, when the institution was dissolved in consequence of the French revolution. On his return he was stationed successively at Tombae in Glenlivet (1793–1812) and Paisley (1812–16), and on 15 Aug. 1816 he was consecrated bishop of Cybistra *in partibus*, and appointed coadjutor to Bishop Alexander Cameron [q. v.] In 1821 he went to Paris, and succeeded in recovering all the property of the Scottish colleges in France that had not been sold under the revolutionary governments. On the resignation of Bishop Cameron in 1825, Paterson suc-

ceeded him as vicar-apostolic of the Lowland district. In 1826 he repaired to Rome in order to procure the appointment of a third bishop for the Scottish mission. In this he also succeeded, for in February 1827 Leo XII decreed the division of Scotland into three districts or vicariates, viz. the eastern, western, and northern, and Paterson became the first vicar-apostolic of the newly created eastern district. Soon after his return he united the two seminaries of Aquhorties and Lismore into one college, established at Blairs, Kincardineshire, on a property made over to him for that purpose by John Menzies (1756–1843) [q. v.] of Pitfodels.

The last three years of Paterson's life he spent chiefly at Edinburgh. He died at Dundee on 30 Oct. 1831, and was buried in his chapel at Edinburgh. His successor in the vicariate was Andrew Carruthers [q. v.]

[Brady's Episcopal Succession, iii. 463, 468; Catholic Directory, 1894, p. 61; Catholic Mag. and Review (Birmingham) 1831–2, i. 714, 784; Gent. Mag. 1831, ii. 476; London and Dublin Orthodox Journal, 1837, iv. 121; Orthodox Journal, iv. 316; Stothert's Catholic Mission in Scotland, p. 460, with portrait.] T. C.

PATERSON, CHARLES WILLIAM (1756–1841), admiral, son of James Paterson, a captain in the 69th regiment, was born at Berwick in 1756. In 1765 his name was put on the books of the Shannon at Portsmouth, and in 1768 on those of the St. Antonio. His actual entry into the navy was probably in 1769, when he joined the Phœnix going out to the Guinea coast, with the broad pennant of his maternal uncle, Commodore George Anthony Tonyn. He afterwards served on the home and Newfoundland stations; in 1776 was in the Eagle, Lord Howe's flagship, on the coast of North America, and in 1777 was promoted by Howe to be lieutenant of the Stromboli, from which he was moved the next year to the Brune. In June 1779 he joined the Ardent, a 64-gun ship, which, on 17 Aug., was captured off Plymouth by the combined Franco-Spanish fleet. In April 1780 he was appointed to the Alcide of 74 guns, which joined Rodney in the West Indies in May; went to New York with him during the summer; returned to the West Indies in November, and in the following January was present at the reduction of St. Eustatius and the other Dutch islands [see Rodney, George Brydges, Lord]. In February 1781 Paterson joined the Sandwich, Rodney's flagship; went home with the admiral in the Gibraltar, and returned to the West Indies with him in the Formidable. On arriving on the station in the end of February, he was appointed acting-captain of the St. Eustatius, armed ship, and on 8 April was promoted to command the Blast, in which he returned to England on the conclusion of the peace.

In 1793 Paterson was appointed to the Gorgon, in which he went out to the Mediterranean, where, on 20 Jan. 1794, he was posted to the Ariadne. On the reduction of Corsica he was moved into the Melpomene, and returned to England in 1795. In 1797 hs was inspecting captain of the quota men in Kircudbright and Wigtonshire, and in 1798 superintended the fitting of the Admiral de Vries, till she was turned over to the transport board. In 1800 he commanded the Montagu in the Channel, and in 1801–2 the San Fiorenzo. In 1810 he had charge of the French prisoners of war in Rochester Castle, and in 1811–12 commanded the Puissant guardship at Spithead. He was promoted to be rear-admiral on 12 Aug. 1812, vice-admiral 12 Aug. 1819, and admiral 10 Jan. 1837, but had no further service, and died on 10 March 1841. He married, in 1801, Jane Ellen, daughter of his first cousin, David Yeats, formerly registrar of East Florida.

[Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. i. 515; Service Book in the Public Record Office.] J. K. L.

PATERSON, DANIEL (1739–1825), author of 'The Road Book,' born in 1739, was gazetted an ensign in the 30th foot on 13 Dec. 1765, promoted to be a lieutenant on 8 May 1772, was advanced to a captaincy in the 36th foot on 11 July 1783, became a major in the army on 1 March 1794, and a lieutenant-colonel on 1 Jan. 1798. For many years he was an assistant to the quartermaster-general of his majesty's forces at the Horse Guards, London. On 31 Dec. 1812 he was made lieutenant-governor of Quebec, and held the appointment to his death. In 1771 he published 'A New and Accurate Description of all the Direct and Principal Cross Roads in Great Britain, containing: i. An Alphabetical List of all the Cities, Boroughs, Market and Sea-port Towns in England and Wales; ii. The Direct Roads from London to all the Cities, Towns, and Remarkable Villages in England and Wales; iii. The Cross Roads of England and Wales; iv. The Principal Direct and Cross Roads of Scotland; v. The Circuits of the Judges.' The work, which is dedicated 'To Lieutenant Colonel George Morrison, Quarter Master General of His Majesty's Forces,' soon became very well known in the army, as by its use all the distances of military marches

were calculated and charged in the public accounts. The second edition was called 'Paterson's British Itinerary: being a new and accurate Delineation and Description of the Roads of Great Britain,' 1776, 2 vols.; the third edition bore the original title.

Paterson latterly lived so retired a life that, when Edward Mogg brought out a 'remodelled, augmented, and improved' sixteenth edition of Paterson's 'Roads' in 1822, he in the preface spoke of the 'death of the late proprietor.' The eighteenth and last edition came out in 1829. Paterson died at the residence of his friend, Colonel Dare, on Clewer Green, near Windsor, in April 1825, and was buried at Clewer on 21 April.

Besides the works already mentioned, he wrote: 1. 'A Travelling Dictionary, or Alphabetical Tables of the Distances of all the Cities, Boroughs, Market Towns, and Seaports in Great Britain from each other,' 1772, 2 vols.; 5th edit. 1787. 2. 'Topographical Description of the Island of Grenada,' 1780. 3. 'A New and Accurate Description of all the Direct and Principal Cross Roads in Scotland,' 5th edit. 1781.

[Biogr. Dict. of Living Authors, 1816, p. 264; Royal Military Calendar, 1820, iv. 311; Gent. Mag. 1825, i. 568; Army List, May 1825, p. 84; information from the rector of Clewer.]

G. C. B.

**PATERSON,** Mrs. EMMA ANNE (1848–1886), organiser of trade unions among women, born in London on 5 April 1848, was daughter of Henry Smith (*d.* 1864), head master of the schools of St. George's parish, Hanover Square. At a very youthful age she interested herself in the amelioration of the political and industrial condition of women, and in 1867 became assistant secretary of the Workmen's Club and Institute Union. She thus gained opportunities of studying the trade organisations of working men. In February 1872 she transferred her services to the Women's Suffrage Association, of which she was appointed secretary. This post she resigned in 1873, when she married Thomas Paterson (1835–1882), a cabinet-maker and wood-carver of Scottish origin, who devoted his leisure to the study of economic and philosophical questions. He was successively honorary secretary and vice-chairman of the Working Men's Club and Institute Union, and organised the Workmen's International Exhibition at the Agricultural Hall in 1870. Mr. and Mrs. Paterson spent a prolonged honeymoon in America. On her return to London in 1874 she founded the Women's Protective and Provident League, with the object of helping working women to form trade unions. The scheme was suggested to her by the Female Umbrella Makers' Union of New York. Of the Women's League Mrs. Paterson was honorary secretary and organiser until her death. Its members were largely men and women of the upper middle class who interested themselves in social reform, and were ready not only to give working women instruction in trade-unionist principles, but to pay the preliminary expenses of organising unions among women engaged in trade. A similar body was established at the same time at Bristol at Mrs. Paterson's suggestion, and was called the National Union of Working Women. The first women's union founded by the league in London was the bookbinders' in 1874. Unions of upholstresses, shirt-makers, tailoresses, and dressmakers quickly followed. In 1875 Mrs. Paterson was a delegate to the Trade Union Congress at Glasgow as a representative of the bookbinders' and upholstresses' societies. No woman had been admitted to the congress before. She attended each succeeding congress (except that of 1882) until her death, and by her tact partially overcame the prejudices of the working-men delegates against female agitators. In the league's behalf she repeatedly addressed public meetings in London, Oxford, and other cities in the provinces, and edited the 'Women's Union Journal,' a monthly record of the league's proceedings, which was started in February 1876. Meanwhile, in 1876, Mrs. Paterson had founded the Women's Printing Society at Westminster. To the management of that concern, which became a pronounced success, she devoted all her spare energies and personally mastered the printer's craft. Her husband died on 15 Oct. 1882. In 1886 she published, with a memoir, a posthumous work by him, 'A New Method of Mental Science, with applications to Political Economy.' The views advanced were original and full of promise. In spite of increasing ill-health, Mrs. Paterson never relaxed her self-denying and sagacious labours until her death at her lodgings in Westminster on 1 Dec. 1886; she was buried in Paddington cemetery.

The Women's League was rechristened the Women's Trade Union League in 1891. Thirty trade societies are now (1895) affiliated to it. A fund, raised in Mrs. Paterson's memory, was employed in securing offices for the association in the buildings of the Workmen's Club and Institute Union in Clerkenwell Road, which were completed in 1893.

[Women's Union Journal, December 1886; Times, 6 Dec. 1886; private information; Women's Work by Misses Bulley and Whitley with preface by Lady Dilke, 1894, pp. 67, 76.]

C

PATERSON, JAMES (1805–1876), antiquary and miscellaneous writer, was the son of James Paterson, farmer at Struthers, Ayrshire, where he was born on 18 May 1805. Although his father was compelled by pecuniary difficulties to give up his farm and experienced various vicissitudes, the son received a fairly good education. Ultimately he was apprenticed to a printer at the office of the Kilmarnock 'Mirror,' and in his thirteenth year began to contribute to Thomson's 'Miscellany.' Subsequently he was transferred to the 'Courier' office in Ayr, and on completing his apprenticeship he went to Glasgow, where he joined the 'Scots Times.' In 1826 he returned to Kilmarnock, and, having taken a shop as stationer and printer, he, in partnership with other gentlemen, started the Kilmarnock 'Chronicle,' the first number appearing on 4 May 1831, in the midst of the reform agitation, and the paper expiring in May 1832. In 1835 he left Kilmarnock for Dublin, where for some time he acted as Dublin correspondent of the Glasgow 'Liberator.' Thence he went to Edinburgh, and ultimately found employment at a small salary in writing the letterpress for Kay's 'Edinburgh Portraits,' 1837-9, the majority of the biographies being contributed by him. Failing to find further employment in Edinburgh, he accepted in 1839 the editorship of the Ayr 'Observer.' In 1840 he published 'Contemporaries of Burns and the more recent Poets of Ayrshire,' and in 1847 a 'History of the County of Ayr.' Disappointed with his prospects on the Ayr 'Observer,' he again returned to Edinburgh, where he supported himself chiefly by miscellaneous writing. In 1871 he published 'Autobiographical Reminiscences.' Shortly after this he was attacked by paralysis, and he died on 6 May 1876. His works are not characterised by much literary merit, and are popular rather than scholarly.

Paterson's publications, other than those mentioned, were: 1. 'The Obit of the Church of St. John the Baptist at Ayr,' with a translation and historical sketch, 1848. 2. 'The Poems of the Sempills of Beltrees,' with notes, 1849. 3. 'The Poems of William Hamilton of Bangour,' with a life of the poet, 1850. 4. 'Memoir of James Fillans, Sculptor,' 1854. 5. 'Origin of the Scots and of the Scottish Language,' 1855; 2nd ed. 1858. 6. 'History of the Regality of Musselburgh,' 1857. 7. 'Wallace and his Times,' 1858, and several subsequent editions. 8. 'The Life and Poems of William Dunbar,' 1860. 9. A. Crawfurd's 'The Huntly Casket and other Poems,' 1861. 10. 'James the Fifth, or the Gudeman of Ballengich, his Poetry and Adventures,' 1861. 11. 'The History of the Counties of Ayr and Wigton,' 1863. 12. 'A Contribution to Historical Genealogy: The Breadalbane Succession Case—how it arose and how it stands,' 1863. He had also some share in the production of P. H. M'Kirlie's 'History of the Lands and their Owners in Galloway,' 1870, about which he had a dispute with the author.

[Autobiogr. Reminiscences, 1871; Irving's Eminent Scotsmen; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. F. H.

PATERSON, JOHN (1632–1708), the last archbishop of Glasgow, born in 1632, was eldest son of John Paterson, bishop of Ross. The father, born about 1604, graduated at Aberdeen in 1624, and was appointed to the church of Foveran, Aberdeenshire, in 1632. He refused to sign the covenant of 1639, and fled south to the king. In July of the following year, however, he recanted in a sermon before the general assembly, and was restored to his church at Foveran. He was a member of the commission of the assembly in 1644, 1645, 1648, and 1649, and in 1661 he was named a commissioner for the visitation of the university of Aberdeen. In 1649 he had left Foveran to become minister of Ellon in Aberdeenshire. He was among the benefactors contributing to the erection of a new building at King's College, Aberdeen, in 1658 (*Fasti Aberdonenses*, Spalding Club, 1854, p. 541). In 1659 he was translated to the ministry of Aberdeen (the third charge). In 1662 he was promoted to the bishopric of Ross, being consecrated on 7 May. He died in January 1679, leaving, besides the archbishop of Glasgow, George, of Seafield, commissary; Sir William of Granton, bart., clerk to the privy council; Thomas; Robert, principal of Marischal College, Aberdeen; and a daughter Isabella, who married Kenneth Mackenzie of Suddie (Gordon, *Scots Affairs*, Spalding, *Memorials*, and *Diary of the Lairds of Brodie*, all published by the Spalding Club; Guthrie, *Memoirs*; Scott, *Fasti Eccl. Scot.* iii. 454, 602, 607).

The son John, who may possibly have made some preliminary studies at King's College, Aberdeen, was admitted as a student of theology at St. Andrews on 13 March 1655, and he is entered as regent in St. Leonard's College under date of 3 Feb. 1658, indicating that he had taught the junior class in the preceding year (information from Mr. J. M. Anderson, keeper of the records at St. Andrews). He probably continued to teach there until called to succeed his father (not without some opposition, *Synod Records of Aberdeen*, Spalding Club, 1846, p. 260) at Ellon on 6 Nov. 1659, to which charge he was admitted before 15 July 1660. On 24 Oct. 1662 he was elected

by the town council of Edinburgh as minister of the Tron Church, and was admitted 4 Jan. following. From that charge he was promoted to the deanery of the High Kirk on 12 July 1672, and was admitted a burgess and guild-brother of the city on 13 Nov. 1673. He strongly opposed the proposal of the more moderate party in the Scottish church in 1674 to hold a national synod. Through the influence of his patron, the Duke of Lauderdale, he was appointed on 20 Oct. 1674 to the see of Galloway, but was not consecrated until May 1675 at Edinburgh (Lawson, *Hist. of Scottish Episcopal Church*, p. 34; Grub, *Eccl. Hist. of Scotl.* iii. 249). For a few years father and son were thus occupants of Scottish sees at the same time. On 27 Sept. 1678 he was appointed a privy councillor. He was translated to Edinburgh on 29 March 1679. In the previous January he had obtained license from the king to reside in Edinburgh, on the ground that he had not a competent manse or dwelling-house in Galloway (Stephens, *Life of Sharpe*, p. 568). A pension of 100*l.* per annum was granted him on 9 July 1680. He is found assisting on 15 March 1684–5 at Lambeth at Sancroft's consecration of Baptist Levinz [q. v.], the bishop of Sodor and Man. On 20 July 1685 an order was made for an annual payment to him by the city of Edinburgh of twelve hundred marks until the city should build him a house and chapel. He went to London in February 1686, returning at the end of March to give the king assurances that the bishops would support his proposed toleration, although it was reported by the Duke of Hamilton in the following year that he was not in favour of such an entire repeal of the penal laws as the king desired (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 11th Rep. App. vi. p. 175). He was rewarded by being nominated to the see of Glasgow on 21 Jan. 1687, upon the illegal deprivation of Archbishop Alexander Cairncross [q. v.] On 29 Jan. 1688 he preached a thanksgiving sermon at Edinburgh for the queen's being with child, in which he mentioned that she often spent six hours at a time on her knees in prayer. At the Revolution he, with the majority of the bishops, adhered to James II. At the meeting of the estates in April 1689, when nine bishops were present, of whom seven were against declaring the throne vacant, 'the Bishop of Glasgow made a long discourse of passive obedience' (*ib.* 12th Rep. App. vii. p. 237). He remained in Edinburgh, living in privacy, after the Revolution, but is said in W. Nelson Clarke's preface to a 'Collection of Letters,' &c. (Edinburgh, 1848, p. xxxi), to have been arrested in 1692 on suspicion of holding correspondence with the exiled court, and to have been imprisoned in Edinburgh Castle. The authority for this statement is not given; and a further statement that he remained in prison until 1701 is incorrect, as, at some date previous to 1695, he was banished from Scotland to England, and was restrained to London. Among the papers of the Earl of Rosslyn at Dysart House (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 1871, 2nd Rep. p. 192) there is a journal kept by Paterson in London in 1695–6, in which he records interviews with statesmen while seeking permission from William III to return to Scotland. Leave was at that time refused, and he was also forbidden to reside in any of the northern counties of England. He was, however, shortly afterwards permitted to return to Edinburgh, and probably regained complete liberty upon the accession of Queen Anne in 1702. In that year he wrote a letter from Edinburgh to Bishop Compton of London on the subject of toleration for the episcopal clergy. He exerted himself in the following years, together with the other Scottish bishops, in endeavouring to obtain grants from the government for relief of poor clergymen, as well as some allowance for themselves out of the revenues of their sees. It was the queen's intention that such grants should be made, but it was not carried into real effect, except with regard to Bishop Alexander Ross [q. v.] of Edinburgh and Paterson himself. On 7 Dec. 1704 Paterson and Bishop Rose, with others, accredited Dr. Robert Scot, dean of Glasgow, as an agent to make collections in England. Their letters, with a list of contributions, were printed in 1864 in the 'Antiquarian Communications of the Cambridge Antiquarian Society' (ii. 226–231). At the beginning of 1705 he went to London to personally approach the queen on the subject. He was favourably received, and obtained a promise of 1,600*l.* annually, out of which George Lockhart [q. v.] of Carnwath charges him with securing 400*l.* for himself, although he was then worth 20,000*l.*, or, as the archbishop of Canterbury reported (according to Paterson's own statement), 30,000*l.* But Paterson declared that he never had a third of the latter sum. On 25 Jan. 1705, in consequence of the number of surviving bishops being reduced to five, he, with Bishops Rose and Douglas of Dunblane, consecrated, in a private chapel in his own house at Edinburgh, Bishops Fullarton and Sage. He died in his house on 9 Dec. 1708, and was buried on the 23rd in the Chapel Royal of Holyrood, at the east end of the north side, at the foot of Bishop Wishart's monument.

His character has been represented by enemies in the blackest colours. He deposed

a namesake, Ninian Paterson, in 1682, from his ministry at Dunfermline for accusing him of adultery. William Row, in his continuation of Robert Blair's 'Life' (published by the Wodrow Society in 1848, p. 542), calls him 'one of the most notorious liars of his time, and a vicious, base, loose liver;' and Kirkton (*Hist. of the Church of Scotland*, 1817, p. 182) records some gross stories against him. George Ridpath (*fl.* 1704) [q. v.] dedicates to him in the most scurrilously abusive terms his 'Answer,' published in 1693, to the 'Scottish Presbyterian Eloquence,' and accuses him of scandalous offences. And these charges are found also in Scottish pasquils of the time. He was certainly actively engaged in all the intolerant measures of the government, and opposed, until the accession of James II, the granting of any indulgences. But many of the charges brought against him were clearly libellous, and Dr. Alexander Monro (*d.* 1715?) [q.v.], in his reply to Ridpath's pamphlet, says that 'the world is not so besotted as to think that the archbishop needs particular answers.' The accusations, however, are so definite that it must be feared they were not altogether groundless. Lockhart of Carnwath describes Paterson as proud, haughty, and avaricious.

Nothing is known of any published writings by him, except that Kirkton mentions (p. 185) a pamphlet which 'he wrote to fix Dr. Oats his popish plot upon the presbyterians, and so to divert the inquiry from the papists.' This has not been traced. An anonymous pamphlet, published in 1703, contains a vindication of a sermon by him on passive obedience. He was supposed to be about to write, in 1683, the life of Charles I, being encouraged to do so by Charles II (Lauder of Fountainhall, *Diary*, p. 425). Of his correspondence much remains, in print and manuscript. Some is to be found among the episcopal records formerly kept at Glenalmond, and now in the Theological College at Edinburgh. From these some remarks by him on a copy which he made in 1680 of proposed instructions approved by the king in 1670 with relation to ecclesiastical affairs are printed, with the instructions, in Stephens's 'Life of Archbishop Sharpe' (pp. 430–8). In the same volume (pp. 480–2) are a letter from him to Sharpe, of 6 May 1675 (before his consecration), and a 'Representation of the Evils of a further Indulgence,' dated 10 Feb. 1676 (pp. 499–504). Five letters written to Sancroft in 1681–5, one dated 20 Dec. 1688, excusing his compliance with King James's toleration, and enclosing a declaration made in 1686 in favour of a relaxation of the penal laws, and another on the prospects of the church in 1689, are printed from the Tanner MSS. in the Bodleian Library in Dr. W. Nelson Clarke's 'Collection of Letters relating to the Church in Scotland,' Edinburgh, 1848. A letter to Lauderdale, 4 June 1674, against a national synod, and another, of 17 June 1680, about debates in the council, are in Mr. O. Airy's 'Lauderdale Papers' (Camd. Soc. 1885, iii. 46, 199). His attestation, dated 5 Jan. 1703, of a copy made by him of Burnet's 'Arguments for Divorce' is printed in John Macky's 'Memoirs,' 1733. A letter to the Duke of Hamilton, 13 Feb. 1703, sending a copy of Sir J. Turner's observations on Bishop Guthrie's 'sillie Memoirs,' is calendared by the 'Historical MSS. Commission,' 11th Rep. vi. 199. Several letters now at Edinburgh, assigned to him in the Second Report of the Commission (p. 203), are really from his predecessor at Glasgow, Alexander Burnet; and one to Lauderdale, among the Malet Papers now in the British Museum, entered in the Fifth Report, page 314, is not from him, but from James Hamilton, bishop of Galloway. Correspondence with Bishop Compton of London in 1698–1707, which reveals disputes with his co-bishops, and relates to relief from Queen Anne, is in Rawlinson MS. C. 985 in the Bodleian Library.

The name of his wife and the date of marriage do not appear to be known. She had died before 1696, in which year he records in his diary an offer of marriage from Lady Warner. He speaks in several letters of his numerous family.

[In addition to authorities quoted above, Dr. H. Scott's Fasti Eccl. Scoticanæ, pt. vi. passim; Lauder of Fountainhall's Diary (Bannatyne Club), pp. 204, 268, 361, 656, 708, 850; information kindly furnished by the Bishops of Glasgow and Edinburgh, Mr. G. F. Warner, and others.]

W. D. M.

**PATERSON, JOHN** (1776–1855), missionary, third child of George Paterson of Duntocher in the parish of Old Kilpatrick, near Glasgow, was born at Duntocher on 26 Feb. 1776, and became a student at the university of Glasgow in 1798. He was attracted by the religious revival which sprang out of the preaching of James Alexander Haldane [q. v.], and applied for admission into a class formed by the congregationalists to train young men for the ministry. He was sent to Dundee, and spent the greater part of 1800 there, under the care of the Rev. W. Innes. Removing to Glasgow, he on 5 July 1803 became the minister of a church which he had formed at Cambuslang, but he relinquished it on 17 June 1804, with the intention of going out as a missionary to India.

Accordingly, on 27 Aug., accompanied by his friend, Ebenezer Henderson [q. v.], he sailed for Denmark, with the intention of going thence to India; but finding it impossible to carry out this intention, he remained in Northern Europe, and became a zealous and useful missionary there. Gradually his connection with the churches in Edinburgh was dissolved, and he was left to his own resources. He remained in Denmark until after the bombardment of Copenhagen in 1807, when he removed and settled in Stockholm. Here during the next five years he continued his labours among the natives of the northern kingdoms. The British and Foreign Bible Society afforded him aid in carrying out his plans (though he was at no time the society's salaried agent). In 1812 he removed to St. Petersburg, and on 1 Nov. 1817 he received the degree of doctor of theology from the university of Abo in Finland. In 1822 he withdrew from the British and Foreign Bible Society, and Prince Galitzin and other friends in St. Petersburg requested him to conduct the affairs of the Russian Bible Society. The Emperor Alexander granted him an annual salary of six thousand roubles. On the death of the emperor the party in power raised objections to the circulation of the scriptures. Ultimately, in 1825, the Emperor Nicholas issued ukases suspending the operations of the Bible Society, and placing the society under the control of the Greek church. Thereupon Paterson left Russia; but the emperor treated him with great kindness, and continued to him his pension for life. During his residence in Northern Europe he was connected with the work of translating and printing portions of the scriptures into Finnish, Georgian, Icelandic, Lapponese, Lettish, Moldavian, Russ, Samogitian, and Swedish.

On returning home he settled in Edinburgh, and served for many years as secretary for Scotland of the London Missionary Society, also acting as chairman of the committee of the Congregational Union. In 1850 he removed to Dundee, where he occasionally preached. He died at Kincaldrum, Forfarshire, on 6 July 1855. He married, first, at Stockholm, on 31 Aug. 1809, Katrine Margarate Hollinder, who died 7 March 1813, leaving two children, one of whom, Dr. George, born 18 March 1811, became congregational minister at Tiverton. Paterson married, secondly, on 19 April 1817, Jane, daughter of Admiral Samuel Greig, of the Russian navy; she was born in Russia on 26 Oct. 1783, and, from her knowledge of Russ and Russian dialects, was of much help to her husband in his work at St. Petersburg. She died on 19 Jan. 1820, leaving a daughter, who became the wife of Edward Baxter of Kincaldrum.

Paterson was the author of: 1. 'A Letter to H. H. Norris, containing Animadversions on his Respectful Letter to the Earl of Liverpool on the Subject of the Bible Society,' 1823. 2. 'The Book for every Land: Reminiscences of Labour and Adventure in the Work of Bible Circulation in the North of Europe and in Russia.' Edited, with a 'Prefatory Memoir,' by W. L. Alexander, 1858. The 'Memoir' is on pp. xi–xxxv.

[Norrie's Dundee Celebrities, 1873, pp. 162–4; Swan's Memoir of Mrs. Paterson, 1824.]

G. C. B.

PATERSON, NATHANIEL, D.D. (1787–1871), author, was born in the parish of Kells, Kirkcudbrightshire, in 1787, and was the eldest son of Walter Paterson, stone-engraver, and grandson of Robert Paterson [q. v.], 'Old Mortality.' His mother was Mary Locke. He was educated at Balmaclellan, where the only prize he is known to have gained was one for cock-fighting, then a recognised school sport. In 1804, when sixteen years of age, he matriculated at Edinburgh University, and studied for the ministry of the church of Scotland. In 1821 he became minister of Galashiels, where he wrote 'The Manse Garden' (Glasgow, 1836), a work which passed through many editions. He enjoyed the friendship of Sir Walter Scott, but after a time explained to Scott that the invitations to Abbotsford being usually for Saturday, his preparation for Sunday services was interfered with. Sir Walter took no offence, but thenceforth invited him on some earlier day of the week. On 8 Feb. 1825 he married Margaret, daughter of Robert Laidlaw, Scott's friend, and George Thomson, the Dominie Sampson of 'Guy Mannering,' was one of his most constant visitors. In 1833 he was translated to the charge of St. Andrew's parish church, Glasgow. When, in 1843, the disruption took place in the church of Scotland, Paterson followed Dr. Chalmers; and in the autumn of that year he formed one of a deputation to the north of England to explain the principles of the free church and plead its cause. In 1844 he visited the southern counties. At the same time the many members of his congregation who with him joined the free church formed the congregation known as Free St. Andrew's, Glasgow, of which he remained minister till his death. In 1850 he was chosen moderator of the free church assembly, the highest honour which that church can bestow. His appear-

ance in his later years was highly picturesque. His hair fell on his shoulders in wavy curls white as snow. He died at Glasgow on 25 April 1871. All his life occupied actively with ministry, Dr. Paterson had also a keen interest in angling and mechanics. He was a man of great geniality and courtesy, and did much for the progress of the free church in the west of Scotland. He published several sermons and tracts. His portrait, by John J. Napier, was exhibited in the 'Old Glasgow' exhibition held in Glasgow in 1894.

[Letters to his Family by Nath. Paterson, D.D., with Memoir by the Rev. Alex. Anderson, 1874; Hew Scott's Fasti Eccl. Scoticanæ, ii. 551, iii. 25; private knowledge.] W. G. B–k.

PATERSON, ROBERT (1715–1801), 'Old Mortality,' son of Walter Paterson, farmer, and Margaret Scott, was born at Haggisha in the parish of Hawick in 1715. He married Elizabeth Gray, who had been at one time cook to Sir Thomas Kirkpatrick of Closeburn, Dumfriesshire. Kirkpatrick procured for Paterson from the Duke of Queensberry a lease of a freestone quarry at Gatelawbrigg in the parish of Morton. The highlanders returning from England on their way to Glasgow in 1745–6 plundered Paterson's house, and carried him off as a prisoner owing to the violent opinions he had expressed against 'the bloody and wicked house of Stuart,' and 'the abominable heresies of the church of Rome.' Paterson became a member of the sect of hillmen or Cameronians [see Cameron, Richard], and contributed in a practical way to the perpetuation of their views by carrying gravestones from his quarry to erect over the martyrs' graves. Ultimately his religious zeal appears to have become a mania. From 1758 he neglected entirely to return to his wife and five children at Gatelawbrigg. At last Mrs. Paterson sent his eldest son, Walter, then only twelve years old, in search of his father, who was ultimately found working at some Cameronian monuments in the old kirkyard of Kirkchrist, on the west side of the Dee, opposite Kirkcudbright. Paterson refused to return home, and continued his wandering life until his death at Bankhill, near Lockerbie, on 14 Feb. 1801.

Dr. Laing was of opinion that Paterson died at Bankend, not Bankhill, and that he was interred in the churchyard of Caerlaverock, where Messrs. A. & C. Black erected a tombstone to his memory in 1869. His wife supported her family by keeping a small school.

The self-imposed task of repairing monuments was thus Paterson's sole occupation for over forty years. Mounted on a white pony, he traversed the whole lowlands of Scotland, receiving a hearty welcome at every Cameronian hearth, but maintaining a melancholy demeanour befitting his labours. 'To talk of the exploits of the covenanters was the delight, as to repair their monuments was the business, of his life' (Scott, *Old Mortality*). 'Old Mortality' had three sons: Robert, Walter, and John. The eldest son, Robert, long lived in Balmaclellan, in the Glenkens of Galloway. Walter, who was a stone-carver, like his father, died there on 9 May 1812, and was the father of the Rev. Nathaniel Paterson [q. v.] John went to America in 1776, and settled in Baltimore. He is sometimes said to have been the father of Elizabeth Paterson of Baltimore who married Jerome Bonaparte, afterwards king of Westphalia. The story, however, is quite erroneous, Madame Bonaparte's father having been William Paterson from Tanat, co. Donegal. The theme of Scott's novel of 'Old Mortality' was suggested by Paterson's career.

[Introd. to Old Mortality; Letters to his Family by Nath. Paterson, D.D., 1874.] W. G. B–k.

PATERSON, SAMUEL (1728–1802), bookseller and auctioneer, was born 17 March 1728. His father, a woollendraper in the parish of St. Paul, Covent Garden, London, died in 1740, and young Paterson went to France. About 1748 he opened a shop opposite Durham Yard, in the Strand, and imported foreign books; at that time Paul Vaillant was the only other dealer in foreign literature in London. Paterson published a few books, among them Mrs. Charlotte Lennox's first work, 'Poems on several Occasions,' in 1747. He continued the business without great success until about 1753, when he commenced as auctioneer at Essex House, formerly the residence of Sir Orlando Bridgman, in Essex Street, Strand. He subsequently had a room in King Street, Covent Garden, afterwards occupied by Messrs. King, Collins, & Chapman. His stock in trade was sold off in 1768 and 1769. 'He was the earliest auctioneer who sold books singly in lots; the first bidding for which was sixpence, the advance threepence each bidding until five shillings were offered, when it ran to sixpence' (Smith, *Nollekens and his Times*, 1829, ii. 279).

Besides the catalogues of his own sales, he acted as cataloguer for other auctioneers. He was one of the first in England to produce good classified catalogues, with careful descriptions of the contents. Among the many excellent sale-catalogues due to him are those of the libraries of Sir Julius Cæsar

(1757), Sylvanus Morgan (1759), Robert Nelson (1760), James Parsons (1769), James West, P.R.S. (1773), William Fletewode (1774), E. Rowe Mores (1779), Topham Beauclerk (1781), George Costard (1782), Thomas Crofts (1783), Maffeo Pinelli (1789), John Strange (1801), H. Fagel of the Hague (1802).

In 1776 he visited the continent and brought back a large collection of books described in 'Bibliotheca Universalis Selecta, methodically digested with an index,' 1786. For some years he was librarian at Bowood to Lord Shelburne, first marquis of Lansdowne. In November 1794 he writes of the 'extreme agitation' he had 'been in for a considerable time in abstracting and indexing my lord's private papers' (Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* viii. 483).

He had an impediment in his speech, but this did not prevent him from delivering a series of lectures on Shakespeare's plays, which were attended by Steevens, Malone, and Barry. He was an honest man and an excellent bibliographer, but constantly failed in business, as he always preferred reading to selling books. 'Perhaps we never had a bookseller who knew so much of the contents of books generally, and he was particularly well acquainted with our English poets' (*Gent. Mag.* 1802, ii. 1075). Johnson wrote of him as 'a man for whom I have long had a kindness' (Boswell, *Life*, ed. Hill, iii. 90), and was godfather to Paterson's son Samuel, whom he befriended on several occasions (*ib.* iv. 269). His original works were not remarkable.

Paterson died in Norton Street, 29 Nov. 1802, in his seventy-fifth year. He married a Miss Hamilton about 1745; she died on 25 Nov. 1790. His eldest son, Charles, a lieutenant of marines, died at Chatham on 14 Dec. 1779, in his twentieth year. His second son was John, and the third, Samuel Paterson the younger, who was assisted by Johnson, was an artist, and exhibited a portrait at the Royal Academy in 1789 (Graves, *Dictionary*, 1884, p. 179). One of his daughters, Margaret, married James Pearson [q. v.], the glass-stainer.

Paterson wrote: 1. 'Another Traveller! or Cursory Remarks and Tritical Observations made upon a Journey through part of the Netherlands in 1766, by Coryat Junior,' London, 1767–9, 4 parts in 2 vols. sm. 8vo; 'second edition corrected,' London, 1769, 12mo (sentimental travels in the manner of Sterne, of very poor quality). 2. 'Bibliotheca Anglica Curiosa: a Catalogue of several thousand printed Books and Tracts (chiefly English) collected with a view to a History of English Literature,' London, 1771, 8vo. 3. 'Joineriana, or the Book of Scraps,' London, 1772, 2 vols. sm. 8vo (miscellaneous essays, anonymous). 4. 'The Templar,' London, 1773 (a periodical of which only fourteen numbers were published, the last in December 1773; designed as a protest against the advertising of ecclesiastical offices and places of trust under government). 5. 'Speculations on Law and Lawyers, applicable to the Manifest Hardships, Uncertainties, and Abusive Practice of the Common Law,' London, 1788, 8vo (on the dangers of personal arrest for debt previous to any verification).

[Obituary Notices in Gent. Mag. 1802, pt. ii. 1074, and European Mag. 1802, pt. ii. 427; see also Chalmers's Gen. Biogr. Dict. xxiv. 185–189; Dibdin's Bibliomania, 1842, p. 441; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. vols. ii. iii. iv. v. vi. vii. viii. ix.; Notes and Queries, 4th ser. i. 23; Timperley's Encylopædia, 1842, p. 812.] H. R. T.

PATERSON, THOMAS (1780–1856), lieutenant-general, was the son of Robert Paterson of Plewlands, Ayrshire. He entered the royal artillery as second lieutenant 1 Dec. 1795. After serving in Canada and the West Indies from 1796 to 1804, and becoming second captain 19 July 1804, he took part in the expedition to Copenhagen under Lord Cathcart in 1807. He was attached to Baird's division, and after the army had landed it fell to him to keep the Danish gunboats in check with his 9-pounders, while batteries were being thrown up for the bombardment. He became captain 1 Feb. 1808, and in the following year he served in the Walcheren expedition. He was given a brevet majority 4 June 1814, and became lieutenant-colonel in the regiment 6 Nov. 1827, and colonel 10 Jan. 1837. In 1836 he was made superintendent of the Royal Military Repository at Woolwich. He was promoted major-general 9 Nov. 1846, and lieutenant-general 30 June 1854, having become a colonel-commandant of the royal artillery 15 Aug. 1850. He died at Woolwich on 13 June 1856.

[Royal Military Calendar; Irving's Book of Scotsmen; Kane's List of Artillery Officers.] E. M. L.

PATERSON, WILLIAM (1658–1719), founder of the Bank of England, son of John Paterson of Skipmyre, in the old parish of Trailflatt now merged in that of Tinwald, Dumfriesshire, by his wife Elizabeth (Bethia), was born there in April 1658. The farmhouse where he was born was pulled down in 1864. The story that 'he came from Scotland in his younger years, with a pack on his back,' and 'having travell'd this country

for some years,' became first a missionary and then a buccaneer in the West Indies, is not supported by evidence of any value (*A Defence of the Scots abdicating Darien*, 1700, pp. 2, 3; cf. *Caledonia, or the Pedlar turn'd Merchant*; LAING, *Fugitive Pieces of Scottish Poetry*, 2nd ser.) He was 'bred in England from his infancy' (*Clerk of Penicuik's Memoirs*, p. 61), and lived for some time at Bristol with a kinswoman of his mother, from whom he is said to have received a legacy. Until the revolution of 1688 he 'had experience abroad and at home in matters of general trade and revenues' (Paterson's 'Memorial to George I,' dated 8 March 1714–15 quoted by BANNISTER), going for several years 'in person' to the West Indies, where his reputation was so great that at the time of the Darien expedition it was said that 'wherever he should be settled, thither the people would throng from all the plantations to join him.' He also formed connections with New England. He became a member of the Merchant Taylors' Company by redemption on 16 Nov. 1681, and was admitted to the livery on 21 Oct. 1689. In 1688 he took part with those who were planning the revolution, being 'much in the coffee-houses of Amsterdam' at this time (BANNISTER).

By 1691 he had acquired great influence in the city and a considerable fortune. In July and August of that year, he, with Michael Godfrey and other merchants, proposed to the government the foundation of the Bank of England, pointing out at the same time the necessity of restoring the currency. Of the whole scheme Paterson was 'chief projector.' But, in spite of repeated applications to the government, nothing was done for three years. In January 1692 Paterson was the principal witness before the parliamentary committee appointed to receive proposals for raising supplies. He conducted the negotiations between the government and the merchants who signed the proposals, and stated that 'himself and some others might come up to advance 500,000*l.*' (*Journals of the House of Commons*, x. 631, 632). On the foundation of the bank in 1694 he became a director, with a qualification of 2,000*l.* But the bank realised his wishes 'but lamely . . . and far from the extensive nature and other publick advantages concerted in the proposition' (*An Enquiry . . . By the Wednesday's Club in Friday Street*, 1717, p. 68). In 1695, on a difference with his colleagues, when he was outvoted, he sold out and voluntarily withdrew from the directorate. On 12 Feb. of that year he made proposals for the consolidation of the City of London orphan fund which were not accepted. He had 4,000*l.* invested in the fund, which was 'of very great moment to him' (*A State of Mr. Paterson's Claim upon the Equivalent*). He also took part in the Hampstead Water Company, a scheme for supplying north London with water from reservoirs south of the Hampstead and Highgate hills, and in December 1693 the city granted him a license to lay pipes for supplying water to the inhabitants of Southwark (SHARPE, *London and the Kingdom*, ii. 582). At this time he had a house in the parish of St. Giles-in-the-fields.

Meanwhile Paterson had matured his scheme, first formed in 1684, for the foundation of a colony in Darien. Originally intending to start a company differing in its constitution from any of the existing English trading companies, he had made overtures to the elector of Brandenburg and the cities of Embden and Bremen. In 1695 he went to Scotland, where Andrew Fletcher [q. v.] of Saltoun introduced him to members of the administration, and his scheme was eagerly taken up. Paterson himself framed the first draft of the act establishing the Scottish Africa and India Company (26 June 1695). He raised 300,000*l.*, the maximum fixed for any one subscription in England, and 400,000*l.* in Scotland, besides obtaining subscriptions from abroad; he himself subscribed 3,000*l.* But pressure by Spain, France, and Holland compelled the English government to publicly withdraw their support; the English subscriptions had to be abandoned, and an impeachment on a technical point of infringement of the act of 1695 was commenced, but afterwards dropped, against Paterson and twenty-two members of the company. Paterson had engaged in the company's service on the promise (6 Nov. 1695) of receiving 12,000*l.* in ready money and three per cent. of the profits for twenty-one years, or an additional 12,000*l.* He now gave up his business in London, which was 'considerable,' and 'growing upon him daily,' and devoted himself entirely to the company's interests, on the promise of 30,000*l.* But a resolution of the directors (6 Oct. 1696), which granted him only one fourth of the stipulated sum, does not appear to have been confirmed by the general council of the company. Paterson was one of four directors sent abroad in 1696 to settle the Hamburg subscriptions. In the following year he and two others were commissioned to purchase stores for the expedition with a sum of 25,000*l.* The agent employed by him to conduct the financial operation made off with the money, and, though part of it was recovered and Paterson himself paid 6,000*l.* out of his own resources, a sum of more than 8,000*l.* was lost. Paterson thereupon offered

to leave the company altogether, or to go out in the service of the directors, appropriating a large portion of his salary for their benefit. But his offer was not accepted. He accompanied the expedition in 1698; but as the management was entrusted to seven councillors, who quarrelled amongst themselves, he had little influence on the conduct of affairs. He was seriously ill in Darien, and on the voyage to New York after the colony was abandoned. 'Trouble of mind' deprived him temporarily of his reason. He returned to Edinburgh on 5 Dec. 1699, and drew up a report, dated the 19th, to the directors of the company, who appointed a committee to confer with him. Far from abandoning his design, he tried repeatedly to revive it in a form which would enlist the support of England.

On his arrival in London Paterson was kindly received by William III (April 1701), with whom he had frequent private conferences on public credit and state affairs, and at whose request he put his proposals into writing. Paterson suggested (1) the provision of interest for the existing national debts; (2) the regulation of the treasury and the exchequer, so as to leave no room for fraud; (3) strict inquiry from time to time into the conduct of all concerned in the revenue; (4) a commission of inquiry into the state and the management of the national debt; (5) a West India expedition, on the ground that 'to secure the Spanish monarchy from France . . . it was more practicable to make Spain and the other dominions in Europe follow the fate of the West Indies, than to make the West Indies, if once in the power of France, follow the fate of Spain;' (6) union with Scotland, than which, he convinced William, 'nothing could tend more . . . to render this island great and considerable' (Paterson's letter to Godolphin, 12 Dec. 1709; *An Enquiry . . . By the Wednesday's Club in Friday Street*, 1717, p. 84). After the death of William III he renewed his proposals, with the addition of others, to Godolphin, at the request of that minister. From this time until his death Paterson was frequently consulted by ministers, and employed by them to devise means of raising public supplies. From 1701 he urged upon the government the financial measures which became the basis of 'Walpole's Sinking Fund' and the great scheme of 1717 for the consolidation and conversion of the national debt. In 1703 he proposed, if indeed he did not actually establish, a public library of commerce and finance, for 'to this necessary and it's hoped now rising study of trade there is requisite not only as complete a collection as possible of all books, pamphlets, and schemes relating to trade . . . ancient or modern, but likewise of the best histories, voyages, and accounts of the states, laws, and customs of countries, that from them it may be more clearly . . . understood how . . . wars, conquests . . . plenty, want, good or bad management, or influence of government . . . have more immediately affected the rise and decline of the industry of a people' ('A Catalogue of Books . . . collected by William Paterson, Esq.,' *Harl. MS.* 4684, Brit. Mus.) In 1705 he engaged in a controversy with John Law (1671–1729) [q.v.], and prevented the adoption of an inconvertible paper currency in Scotland.

Paterson not only published an able pamphlet in favour of the union of England and Scotland, but he had a 'great share' in framing the articles of the treaty relating to trade and finance. He was also employed, with Bower and Gregory, in the calculation of the equivalent, for which he received 200*l.* He went to Scotland in 1706, and remained there until the end of the negotiations, waiting upon ministers, explaining the treaty, and smoothing away difficulties. One of the last acts of the Scottish parliament (25 March 1707) was to recommend him to Queen Anne 'for his good service' (Defoe, *History of the Union*, p. 525). Though the people of Dumfries had suffered much from the failure of the Darien scheme, and had been violently opposed to the union, they returned Paterson, with William Johnstoun, to the first united parliament. But the house decided that it was a double return, and Paterson was unseated (Luttrell, *Brief Relation*, vi. 378). In the accounts of the Scottish Africa Company's debt to be provided for out of the equivalent, Paterson's claims had been omitted. He repeatedly urged his claims, without success. In 1713 the commons reported in his favour, and passed a bill, which was thrown out by the lords, appropriating to him the sum of 18,000*l.* He did not receive the money until 1715, when a bill, supported by the king, was passed without opposition. From 1703 until his death he resided in Queen Square, Westminster, where he was one of the higher ratepayers. He appears to have been in reduced circumstances until he received the Darien indemnity, and is said to have taught mathematics and navigation. He was paid, however, small sums for services in the management of the South Sea Company, and he retained an interest in the Hampstead Water Company. He died in January 1719. His will was proved at Doctors' Commons on 22 Jan. 1719 (O.S.)

Paterson married, first, Elizabeth Turner, widow of Thomas Bridge, minister of the gospel in Boston, New England (she died before his return to England); secondly, Hannah Kemp, widow of Samuel South, by whom he had one son. His second wife and child died in Darien. By his will, signed at Westminster on 1 July 1718, and certified on 3 July at the Ship Tavern, Without Temple Bar, he left legacies to his step-children, the children of his sister Janet Mounsey, and to his sister Elizabeth, who married John Paterson the younger of Kinharvey. The legacies to his Scottish relatives were never paid, as the 'just debts' he was forced to contract in connection with his various schemes absorbed all his estate.

Paterson published anonymously: 1. 'Conferences on the Public Debts. By the Wednesday's Club in Friday Street,' London, 1695, 4to. 2. 'A Letter to a Member of the late Parliament, concerning the Debts of the Nation,' London, 1701. 3. 'Proposals and Reasons for constituting a Council of Trade,' Edinburgh, 1701, 12mo. 4. 'England's great Concern, in the perpetual settlement of a Commission of Accounts. . . . With a discovery of some notable frauds committed in collecting the supplies,' London, 1702, 4to. 5. 'The Occasion of Scotland's Decay in Trade, with a proper expedient for recovery thereof, and the increasing our Wealth,' 1705. 6. 'An Essay, concerning Inland and Foreign, Publick and Private Trade; together with some overtures how a company or national trade may be constituted in Scotland, with the advantages which will result therefrom,' 1705. The last two pamphlets were written in reply to 'Two Overtures humbly offered to . . . John, Duke of Argyle [by John Law].' 7. 'An Enquiry into the Reasonableness and Consequences of an Union with Scotland. . . . By Lewis Medway. With observations thereupon, as communicated to Lawrence Phillips, Esq., near York,' London, 1706, 8vo. 8. 'An Enquiry into the State of the Union of Great Britain and the Past and Present State of the Trade and Public Revenues thereof,' London, 1717, 8vo. Written, it is said, at Walpole's request. Bannister also printed and published Paterson's memorial to William III (1 Jan. 1701), and his proposal for settling on the isthmus of Darien, releasing the natives from the tyranny of Spain, and throwing open the trade of South America to all nations, 1701 (*Addit. MS.* 12437, Brit. Mus.), with the title, 'Central America, London, 8vo, 1857; reprinted, with some of Paterson's other works, in Bannister's 'Life and Writings of Paterson,' 1859.

The only known portrait of Paterson is the pen-and-ink wash-drawing in the British Museum (*ib.* 10403, f. i *b*), executed in 1708, the date of the transcription of 'Two Treatises relating to the Union . . . by William Paterson, Esq.,' to which it is prefixed.

[Notes kindly supplied by Archibald Constable, esq.; authorities quoted, and Bannister's Life and Writings of Paterson; Carstares' State Papers, pp. 584, 635, 645, 655; Burnet's History of his own Time; Clerk of Penicuik's Memoirs (Scottish Hist. Soc.), xviii. 61; Darien Papers (Bannatyne Club); Hist. MSS. Comm. 11th Rep. App. v. p. 304; Boyer's Political State, 1711, p. 470; Dalrymple's Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland, vol. ii. pt. iii. pp. 89–123; Laing's History of Scotland, iv. 249 sqq.; Sinclair's Statistical Account of Scotland; Scott's Tales of a Grandfather (ed. Cadell, 1846), chap. lix.; Chambers's Domestic Annals of Scotland, iii. 121, 124, 131; Chambers's Biogr. Dict. ed. Thomson, iii. 231–7; Macpherson's Annals of Commerce, ii. 657 sqq.; Macaulay's Hist. of England, 1862, 8vo, vii. 123, viii. 196 sqq.; Pagan's Birthplace and Parentage of William Paterson; Burton's Scot Abroad, ii. 278 sqq.; McDowall's Hist. of Dumfries, pp. 532–6; McKerlie's Lands and their Owners in Galloway, iii. 72, 280; McCulloch's Literature of Political Economy, p. 159; Lawson's History of Banking, pp. 67, 396–9; Francis's Hist. of the Bank of England, i. 44, 60, 71; Martin's Stories of Banks and Bankers, pp. 12–19; Rogers's First Nine Years of the Bank of England, pp. 2, 22, 148. Paterson is the hero of Eliot Warburton's novel Darien, or the Merchant Prince, an historical romance, London, 1852; and to Paterson is dedicated Paul Coq's treatise La Monnaie de Banque ou l'espèce et le portefeuille, Paris, 1863, to which is prefixed a memoir, in which full justice is done to Paterson's supreme business talents.] W. A. S. H.

**PATERSON, WILLIAM** (1755–1810), traveller and lieutenant-governor of New South Wales, was born on 17 Aug. 1755. He entered the army at an early age, but not before he had developed a strong liking for natural history, especially botany. The interest and patronage of Lady Strathmore enabled him to gratify these tastes, and before entering upon active service he had made a series of exploring expeditions in the Hottentot country. He left England early in 1777, arrived at Capetown in May, and on 16 Oct., in company with Captain Gordon, made his first expedition, returning to Cape Town on 13 Jan. 1778. His second expedition lasted from May to 20 Nov. 1778. His third was into the district which he called Caffraria, and claimed as hitherto unknown, and it lasted from 23 Dec. 1778 to 23 March 1779. His fourth journey occupied him from 18 June to 21 Dec. the same year. He made several fresh contributions to science, and is

credited with having brought to England the first giraffe-skin ever seen there. The French traveller Le Vaillant several times refers to his researches in high terms.

Soon after his return to England Paterson was gazetted to the 98th regiment (7 Oct. 1781), and was sent to India, where he was at the siege of Caroor in 1783. In 1785 the 98th regiment was disbanded, and on 24 Sept. 1787 he became a lieutenant in the 73rd foot. In June 1789 he was one of the lieutenants chosen to recruit and command a company of the New South Wales corps, which was formed in that year for the purpose of protecting the new convict settlement at Botany Bay. On 5 June 1789 he was appointed a captain in the corps. It seems probable that he was introduced to this enterprise by Sir Joseph Banks, to whom he dedicated his book on Caffraria. Banks took a keen personal interest in all that concerned the infant colony.

Paterson had married, and did not go out with the first draft of the corps, but with Philip Gidley King [q. v.], afterwards governor, on the Gorgon, his wife accompanying him. They arrived in New South Wales in October 1791. After a few days' stay in Sydney, Paterson was ordered to Norfolk Island, and was apparently stationed there at intervals till the end of 1793. The chief event in this period of Paterson's career was his exploration of the Hawkesbury river early in 1793; he ascended the rapids in small boats, where the governor had failed, and discovered and named the Grose river. He also found several new plants. The expedition lasted ten days. On 15 Feb. 1794 he was senior member of the court held at Sydney to inquire into the conduct of the mutinous detachment of the New South Wales corps at Norfolk Island. On 20 Feb. his name appears as taking up six acres of land at Sydney. On 8 Dec. 1794, on the departure of Grose, the major commandant of the corps, who had been acting as lieutenant-governor of the colony since the departure of Governor Arthur Phillips [q. v.], Paterson succeeded to the command of the corps and administration of the government. In February 1795 he sent Grimes, the colonial surveyor, to explore Port Stephens. His rule ended on 16 Sept. 1795. It is clear that he was alive to the requirements of the rising settlement, and Governor John Hunter (1738–1821) [q. v.], soon after his arrival, in referring to Paterson's application for leave, speaks of him as 'a very valuable officer.' Paterson, who doubtless bore much of the trouble which was given in 1796 by the New South Wales corps, did not actually depart till much later. He was in England during 1798, and was admitted a member of the Royal Society on 17 May. He also joined the Royal Asiatic Society. In 1799 he returned to the colony in the Walker, and in connection with certain transactions as to the victualling on board that ship was censured by the secretary of state. He was now commandant of the corps, having received the step of major on 1 Sept. 1795, and that of lieutenant-colonel on 18 Jan. 1798; he was at once involved in quarrels, and one of his earliest acts as colonel was to send his major, Johnston, to England under arrest; in September 1801 he resisted an effort of some of the officers to insult Governor King; fought a duel with John McArthur [q. v.], and was so dangerously wounded that for a time all persons concerned were under arrest, in expectation of Paterson's death. Yet in 1802, when King withstood the action of the corps on the drink question, Paterson went with the malcontents, and was humiliated by the success of King's opposition. He seems at this time to have endeavoured to keep in with both the opposing civil and military factions, and to have had the confidence of neither. In the serious insurrection of 1804, however, he and his corps stood by the governor and saved the colony.

On 7 June 1804 Paterson was sent by King to Port Dalrymple in Tasmania as lieutenant-governor, and instructed to form a post of occupancy at such point as he thought suitable. He occupied Port Dalrymple in November, and experienced many anxieties as to food supply, native unfriendliness, and convict insubordination. He was also drawn into disputes with David Collins at Hobart as to superiority of title and jurisdiction. The notorious Margarot was in August 1805 sent to complete his sentence under Paterson's special supervision.

Paterson, who was made colonel by brevet on 25 April 1808, was still at Port Dalrymple when Major Johnston reported to him the deposition of Governor William Bligh [q. v.] In January 1809 he went to Sydney, and administered the government till the king's pleasure was known. He had approved the proceedings taken against Bligh by the officers of the New South Wales corps, and declined to entertain Bligh's appeals that he should restore him. Bligh had plotted to place Paterson under arrest on his arrival, and Paterson wrote indignantly to Lord Castlereagh of Bligh's conduct. On 4 Feb. 1809 he and Bligh signed the convention by which the latter consented to go home 'with the utmost despatch,' but Bligh had not gone further than Tasmania by March, and continued to give trouble. Paterson was re-

lieved on 31 Dec. 1809 by the arrival of the new governor, Lachlan Macquarie [q. v.] His corps—now become the 102nd regiment—was ordered home, and he left the colony in May 1810, amid the enthusiastic farewells of the colonists. He died on the passage home, on board her majesty's ship Dromedary, on 21 June 1810.

Paterson was apparently more at home in exploration and study of science than as an administrator or even a soldier. 'The weak Colonel Paterson,' writes Rusden on one occasion, 'thought more of botanical collections than of extending the cords of British sovereignty.' He seems to have been of an amiable and undecided character, often giving offence to two opposing parties by his anxiety to please both. He was the most lavish of the early administrators in his grants to private persons of the land of the colony.

Paterson river and mountain in New South Wales and Paterson creek in Tasmania are named after him, and it is said that a Paterson's Bay in the Cape Colony was for a time found on the maps.

Paterson published 'A Narrative of Four Journeys into the Country of the Hottentots and Caffraria in the years 1777-8-9,' London, 1789, 4to. A second edition and a French translation appeared in 1790. His botanical collections are in the Natural History Museum at South Kensington.

[War Office records and Army Lists, 1781–1810; Registers of Royal Soc.; Poggendorff's Handwörterbuch; Gent. Mag. 1810, vol. lxxx. pt. ii. p. 356; Rusden's Hist. of Australia, vol. i., see index to vol. iii. sub voce; Hist. of New South Wales from the Records, vol. ii.]

C. A. H.

**PATESHULL, HUGH DE** (*d.* 1241), bishop of Coventry and Lichfield, son, and apparently heir, of Simon de Pateshull (*d.* 1217?) [q. v.], judge, was a clerk of the exchequer, and received the seal of the court, holding the office called somewhat later the chancellorship of the exchequer. He appears to have belonged to the baronial party in the reign of John, and, his father being then dead, received restitution of his lands in 2 Hen. III. He received several benefices, holding in Northamptonshire the churches of Church Stowe, Ettingdon, and Cottingham (Bridges), and was a prebendary of St. Paul's, London. On 1 June 1234 he was, against his will, made treasurer of the kingdom in place of Peter de Rievaulx [q. v.], receiving a grant of a hundred marks as stipend. He bore a high character for honourable dealing, and discharged the duties of his office faithfully. The see of Lichfield having fallen vacant in 1238, and a double election having been made by the canons of Lichfield, who chose William of Manchester, and the monks of Coventry, who chose Nicholas of Farnham [q. v.], and both the elect having declined the see, the king ordered a new election, and Hugh was chosen unanimously about Christmas 1239. He took a moving farewell of the barons of the exchequer, telling them that he left the exchequer because God had called him to the cure of souls; they all wept, and he kissed each of them (Paris, *Chronica Majora*, iv. 2). He was consecrated at Newark, near Guildford, on 1 July 1240. He opposed the monks of Coventry, who formed one of his two chapters, probably with reference to the episcopal right of visitation (comp. *ib.* p. 171 with *Annales Monastici*, iii. 143, 152). In 1241 he went a pilgrimage to the shrines of St. Edmund and other saints, and on its termination attended a council of bishops held at Oxford. On his return thence he died at Potterspury, Northamptonshire, on 8 Dec., and was buried before the altar of St. Stephen in his cathedral at Lichfield, in which he had founded the prebend of Colwich, endowing it with the impropriation and advowson of Colwich in Staffordshire.

[Foss's Judges, ii. 437; Matt. Paris's Chron. Maj. iii. 296, 542, iv. 2, 31, 171, 175 (Rolls Ser.); Ann. de Dunstap. ap. Ann. Monast. iii. 149, 152, 157; Rot. Litt. Claus. i. 340 (Record Publ.); Madox's Hist. of Exchequer, ii. 35, 255; Bridges's Northamptonshire, i. 90, 566, ii. 299; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 547, 591, ii. 414, ed. Hardy.] W. H.

**PATESHULL, MARTIN DE** (*d.* 1229), judge and dean of London, was probably a native either of Pattishall, Northamptonshire (Fuller), or Patshull, Staffordshire (Foss). Whether he was related to Simon de Pateshull [q. v.] or Walter de Pateshull [q. v.] is not known. He appears as one of the clerks of King John in 1209 (*Rotuli Chartarum*, p. 108), and in June 1215 received a safe-conduct to go to the king at Windsor (*Rotuli Literarum Patentium*, p. 142). In 1217 he sat as a justice at Westminster, and was a justice itinerant for Yorkshire and Northumberland, after which date he was constantly employed as a judge, his name appearing first in the commissions for seven shires in 1224 (Dugdale). When in that year the justices itinerant were attacked at Dunstable by order of Falkes de Breauté [q. v.], and Henry de Braybroc [q. v.] was seized, Pateshull, who was acting with Braybroc, escaped (Wendover, iv. 94), and afterwards negotiated between Falkes and the king (*Annals of Dunstable*, sub an.) Grants of forty marks were made to him for the expenses of an iter in October 1221, and of fifteen and twenty-one marks for like ex-

penses in July 1222, and he also had license from the king to keep fifty hogs in Windsor forest (*Rotuli Literarum Clausarum*, i. 471, 504, 515). He held certain benefices in the archdeaconry of Northumberland (*ib.* ii. 203), the chapel of Berrow and, perhaps, its mother-church of Overbury, Worcestershire (*Annals of Worcester*, an. 1224); was a prebendary of London, and in 1227 archdeacon of Norfolk. In 1228 he was chosen dean of St. Paul's. He was struck with paralysis in 1229 (*Annals of Dunstable*, sub an.), and died on 14 Nov. of that year. He was famed for his prudence and skill in law (Matt. Westmon. p. 126). He was an indefatigable worker. A judge who was ordered to go as itinerant with him in Yorkshire begged to be excused, on the ground that Pateshull was strong and so sedulous and practised in labour as to exhaust the strength of all his fellows, and especially that of the writer and of William de Ralegh [q. v.] (*Royal Letters, Henry III*, i. 342).

[Foss's Judges, ii. 438; Dugdale's Chron. Ser. pp. 7, 8; Fuller's Worthies, ii. 166, ed. Nichols; Wendover, iv. 94 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Ann. Monast. i. 73, iii. 66, 87, iv. 416, 421, Royal Letters Hen. III, i. 328, 342 (both Rolls Ser.); Rot. Chart., p. 108, Rot. Litt. Pat. p. 142, Rot. Litt. Claus. i. 471, 504, 515, ii. 203 (all Record publ.); Madox's Hist. of Exchcq. ii. 43, 257; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 371, 482, ed. Hardy.] W. H.

**PATESHULL, PETER** (*fl.* 1387), theological writer, was a friar of the Augustinian house in London and took the degree of doctor of theology at Oxford. When Pope Urban offered chaplaincies for sale, which exempted monks from their orders, Peter bought one from Walter of Diss. Much influenced by Wiclif's 'De Realibus Universalibus,' he began to preach against his order. One of his sermons, in the church of St. Christopher, London, was interrupted by twelve friars of his house, and a riot ensued, which was quelled by the sheriffs and one of the friars. His followers recommended him to put his charges in writing. He did so, and nailed them to the door of St. Paul's Cathedral. He charged the friars with treachery to the king and country, and with gross immorality. Sir William Neville [q. v.], Sir Thomas Latimer, Sir Lewis Clifford, and others gave him encouragement. Thomas Walsingham (ad an. 1387) says he recanted on his deathbed. Leland says he attacked the sacraments of the church, the avarice, pride, and tyranny of the pope, and that his works were severely repressed by the papacy. Bale gives a list of Pateshull's writings, orthodox and unorthodox, the latter of which were burnt; but none are known to be extant.

[Walsingham's Historia Anglicana, ed. Riley, ii. 157; Capgrave's Chronicle of England, p. 244; Tanner's Bibliotheca Britannica; Bale's Scriptorum Illustrium Catalogus, p. 509; Leland, De Scriptoribus, c. 437; Pits, De Illustribus Angliæ Scriptoribus.] M. B.

**PATESHULL** or **PATTISHALL, SIMON DE** (*d.* 1217?), judge, probably a native of Pattishall, Northamptonshire, where his family, and possibly he, held the manor under the prior of Dunstable, received charge of the castle of Northampton by the terms of the award between John and the chancellor William of Longchamp [q. v.] in 1191, and appears as one of the king's justices in 1193. In 1195 he was sheriff of Northamptonshire, Essex, and Hertfordshire, and continued sheriff of Northamptonshire until 1204. During the reign of John he seems to have been chief justice of the common pleas division of the king's court, commissions being issued to him by name, 'with others his companions.' Matthew Paris speaks of him as chief justiciar of the whole kingdom (*Chronica Majora*, iii. 296), but this seems a mistake. He was one of the justices for the Jews, and in 1199 received from the king two houses in Northampton which had belonged to Benedict the Jew. John also gave him the manor of Rothersthorpe, near Northampton, and certain wood land. He probably held the manor of Bletsoe in Bedfordshire, having perhaps acquired it by marriage. A fine of a hundred marks incurred by him and another justice for having granted certain litigants a term without royal license was remitted in 1207. He appears to have been sent to Ireland by the king in 1210. He fell under the king's displeasure in 1215, John apparently suspecting him of complicity in the baronial revolt, and his lands were seized; but the abbot of Woburn defended him and made his peace with the king, who in December restored his lands (*Patent Rolls*, p. 94). He acted as judge in March 1216, and, as his son Hugh received restitution of his lands in 2 Hen. III, it is probable that Simon died in, or about, 1217. He had a son, Hugh de Pateshull [q. v.], bishop of Lichfield, and probably another Sir Simon de Pateshull [q. v.] Simon bore a high character for wisdom and honourable dealing.

[Foss's Judges, ii. 100; Dugdale's Orig. Jurid., Chron. Ser. p. 5; Rot. Litt. Claus. i. 61, 113, 114, 200, 244, ed. Hardy (Record Publ.); Rot. Litt. Pat. p. 94, ed. Hardy (Record Publ.); Rot. Chart. pp 52, 131, 184, ed. Hardy (Record Publ.); Madox's History of the Exchequer, i. 235, ii. 315, 317; Matt. Paris's Chronica Majora, iii. 296, 542 (Rolls Ser.); Rog. Hov. iii. 136 (Rolls Ser.)] W. H.

PATESHULL or PATTISHALL, Sir SIMON de (*d.* 1274), judge and knight, was either a younger son or a grandson of Simon de Pateshull (*d.* 1217 ?) [q. v.], judge, and seems to have succeeded to the estates of Bishop Hugh de Pateshull [q. v.], his brother or perhaps uncle, who died in 1241; for little more than a year after the bishop's death he was engaged in a suit against the priory of Dunstable, with reference to the lease of Grimscote, in Cold Higham, Northamptonshire (*Annales Monastici*, iii. 161). He appears in 1257 as one of the king's justices, and as justice for the Jews (*Fœdera*, i. 262). He held the manor of Bletsoe, by service of one knight's fee, and is called therefrom the lord of Bletsoe (*Miracula Symonis de Montfort* ap. Rishanger, p. 106). In 1258 Ida, widow of William de Beauchamp of Bedford, invaded and did much damage to his manor of Crawley, Buckinghamshire. From 1260 to 1262 he was sheriff of Northamptonshire. He joined the baronial party, and was with Simon de Montfort the younger in Northampton when it was besieged by the king in 1264 (*Annales Monastici*, iii. 229), and was in Kenilworth with other baronial leaders when it was besieged in 1265 (*ib.* p. 241). About Ascension day 1273 he was very sick, and, expecting his death, demanded and received the rites of the church; he became speechless, but, a relic from the body of Earl Simon de Montfort having been applied to him, he recovered and went to Evesham to offer there (*Miracula*, u.s.) He died at Easter 1274. He was succeeded by his son, Sir John de Pateshull, who paid a relief of forty-six shillings and sixpence for his land at Grimscote to the priory of Dunstable, and died in 1290. John's son Simon, called the younger, married Isabella, daughter and heiress of Sir John de Steyngreve (*Cal. Genealogicum*, pp. 504, 526; Dugdale, *Baronage*, ii. 144; the editor of *Annales Monastici*, ii. 401 *n.* makes Isabella the mother of Simon, and widow of John), and inherited his father-in-law's lands in Bedfordshire and Yorkshire in 1294. He died in 1295 before receiving knighthood, leaving a son,

John de Pateshull (1291 ?–1349), who was about four years old at his father's death, and was in the king's wardship. He married Mabel, sister, and eventually coheiress, of Otho, lord Grandison; was summoned to a council of magnates in 1335 (*Fœdera*, ii. 916), and received a summons to the parliament of 1342, but no later parliamentary summons, and his name occurs among the knights summoned to military service in 1345 (*ib.* iii. 52). He died in 1349, and was succeeded by his son William, who was born about 1322, did not receive a summons to parliament, and died without issue in 1360, leaving his four sisters, Sybill, wife of Sir Roger de Beauchamp; Alice, wife of Thomas Wake; Mabel, wife of Walter de Fauconberg, who inherited Pattishall; and Katherine, wife of Sir Robert de Tudenham, his coheirs, among whose descendants the barony is in abeyance.

[Ann. de Dunstap. ap. Ann. Monast. iii. 161, 215, 241, 319, 365, 401 (Rolls Ser.); Roberts's Cal. Geneal. pp. 504, 526 (Record Publ.); Rymer's Fœdera, i. 262, ii. 856, 916, 1013 (Record ed.); Rishanger's Chron. de Bellis, p. 106 (Camden Soc.); Blayds's Visit. of Bedfordshire, p. 52 (Harl. Soc.); Dugdale's Baronage, ii. 143; Courthope's Peerage, p. 373, ed. Nicolas; Bridges's Northamptonshire, i. 5, 260, 267.] W. H.

PATESHULL, WALTER de (*d.* 1232), judge, appears to have resided in Bedfordshire, and is described by Fuller as of Accestane. In 1218 he was a justice itinerant for Bedfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and other shires. Being in 1224 sheriff of Bedfordshire and Buckinghamshire, an office that he held for four years, he, in conjunction with Henry de Braybroc [q. v.], was ordered by the king to cause the castle of Bedford, the stronghold of Falkes de Breauté [q. v.], to be demolished. He died shortly before 20 Aug. 1232 (*Excerpta e Rotulis Finium*, i. 225). Whether he was any relation to Simon de Pateshull [q. v.] or Martin de Pateshull [q. v.] is not known.

[Foss's Judges, ii. 440; Dugdale's Chron. Ser. p. 7; Rot. Litt. Claus. i. 581, 632, Excerpta e Rot. Fin. i. 225 (both Record publ.)] W. H.

PATEY, CHARLES GEORGE EDWARD (1813–1881), admiral, son of Commander Charles Patey, one of five brothers who served in the navy during the Napoleonic wars, and whose sons and grandsons have followed in their footsteps, was born in 1813, and entered the navy in 1824. He was promoted to the rank of lieutenant on 6 Dec. 1836, and after serving in the Caledonia and Princess Charlotte, flagships in the Mediterranean, was in 1840 first lieutenant of the Castor frigate, in which he took part in the operations on the coast of Syria, and in the bombardment of Acre. On the following day, 4 Nov. 1840, he was promoted to the rank of commander. He commanded the Resistance troopship, from March 1842, until advanced to post-rank on 18 May 1846. In 1851 he was appointed to organise the great rush of emigration from Liverpool to Australia, and was presented by the shipowners of Liverpool with a piece of plate in acknowledgment of his services.

In December 1852 he commissioned the Amphion; but in the following year a severe injury, for which he received a pension, compelled him to resign the command; nor had he any further service afloat. In 1857 he was appointed superintendent of the packet service. On 9 Feb. 1864 he became a rear-admiral on the retired list, and was advanced in due course to be vice-admiral on 14 July 1871, and admiral on 1 Aug. 1877. In 1866 he was appointed administrator at Lagos, whence he was removed, after a few months, to the Gambia. In 1869 he became governor of St. Helena, and on the abolition of the office retired with a compensation grant in 1873. On 8 May 1874 he received the C.M.G. He died at Newton St. Loe, near Bath, on 25 March 1881, leaving one son in the civil service.

[O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict.; Navy Lists; Times, 29 March 1881.] J. K. L.

PATEY, JANET MONACH (1842–1894), contralto singer, was born on 1 May 1842 in Holborn, London, where her father, a Scotsman named Whytock, was in business. She received her first instruction in singing from John Wass, and in 1860 made her first public appearance at Birmingham at a concert under the auspices of James Stimpson. She sang under the name of Ellen Andrews, and with much success, but was so overcome by nervousness that she lost her voice completely for six months afterwards. While under Wass's guidance she became a member of Leslie's choir. At one of his concerts she filled a vacancy caused by Mme. Sainton-Dolby's absence, and thus found an opportunity for distinguishing herself. The promise she exhibited was so marked that steps were taken immediately for furthering her musical education, and she became a pupil successively of Ciro Pinsuti and Mme. Sims Reeves. In 1865 she made her first concert tour, travelling through the provinces with Mme. Lemmens-Sherrington and others. In the following year she married John George Patey, an operatic and oratorio singer of considerable reputation, and sang as principal contralto at the Worcester festival with a conspicuous success, which was repeated at Birmingham in 1867, and at Norwich in 1869. Next year she stepped unopposed into the position of principal English contralto, left vacant by the retirement of Mme. Sainton-Dolby. In 1871 she visited America with a number of distinguished vocalists, and on her return appeared with unfailing regularity at all the provincial festivals, and at the principal metropolitan and other concerts, with ever-increasing success.

In 1875 she went to Paris, on the invitation of Lamoureux, the French musician, to take part in four performances on a grand scale of 'The Messiah' in French. There she received every mark of popular favour, and was engaged to sing at a conservatoire concert in the same year, when her performance of 'O rest in the Lord' was so impressive as to lead the authorities to engage her for a second concert. A medal, struck in commemoration of the event, was presented to the vocalist. In Paris Mme. Patey was favourably compared by the critics to the distinguished singer, Mme. Alboni, and among Italian musicians she was generally known as the English Alboni.

In 1890 Mme. Patey made a prolonged and triumphant tour in Australia, New Zealand, China, and Japan, and other countries. On her return to England she contemplated retirement from public life. At the end of 1893 she began a farewell tour through the English provinces. During its course she appeared at Sheffield on 28 Feb. 1894; but the excitement of the enthusiastic reception accorded her brought on an attack of apoplexy, and she died in the concert-room. She was buried at Brompton cemetery on 3 March.

Mme. Patey's voice was a pure, sonorous and rich contralto, beautiful at its best in quality, and sufficiently extensive in compass to enable her to sing innumerable oratorio parts and ballads, in both of which she was for twenty-five years unrivalled.

[Mme. Patey's death called forth warm eulogies from the press, the Times, besides a memorial notice (1 March 1894), devoting a leading article (2 March) to the immediate cause of her death; and the other daily and weekly papers published memoirs. See also the American Art Journal, 17 March; Musical Courier, New York; Birmingham Weekly Post; private information.] R. H. L.

PATIENT or PATIENCE, THOMAS (*d.* 1666), divine, after apparently holding some benefice as a young man in the English church (pref. to his *Doctrine of Baptism*), 'went out with other godly ministers to New England' between 1630 and 1635. Soon after his migration he began to entertain doubts on the point of baptism, and 'resorted to many meetings [of the independents] to have good satisfaction of their doctrine and practice before joining with them in communion' (*ib.*) He heard one man preach fifteen sermons on the subject, and at the time 'knew not a single soul who opposed infant baptism.' But after 'searching many authors night and day,' he at length experienced a mystical revelation of light which lasted for three days, and felt that a

'true repentance was wrought in' him. A warrant was out at the time to bring him before the general court of New England, and shortly after, when the first New England law was passed against baptists (13 Nov. 1644), he returned to England. He was at once chosen as colleague or assistant to William Kiffin or Kiffen [q. v.], pastor of the baptist church in Devonshire Square, London. He signed the 'Confession of Faith of those churches, which are commonly (though falsly) called anabaptists; London, printed in the yeare of our Lord, 1644.' This was published mainly in answer to the 'Dippers Dipt,' &c., London, 1645, of Daniel Featley [q. v.] The preface to the second edition (1646) also bears Patient's signature, but before the third was published (1651) he had left London. Patient and Kiffen were unwarrantably accused by Thomas Edwards (*Gangræna*, i. 84) of laying hands on and anointing with oil one Palmer, a woman in Smithfield.

Patient signed the 'Epistle Dedicatory' to Daniel King's 'A Way to Sion,' London, 1649, and he also subscribed an epistle entitled 'Heart Bleedings for Professors' Abominations' (London, 1650), from the baptist churches in London, directed specially against ranters and quakers.

On 8 March 1649 Patient was chosen by parliament as one of the 'six able ministers' who were to be sent 'to dispense the gospel in the city of Dublin,' with a salary each of 200*l.* a year, to be paid from the revenues of Ireland (*Commons' Journals*, vi. 379). Patient accordingly accompanied the army to Ireland in June or July 1649, and was attached to General Ireton's headquarters. On 15 April 1650 he writes from Kilkenny, shortly after its capitulation (28 March), of the kindness received from Cromwell, and of the success of his ministrations with Ireton's wife and Colonel Henry Cromwell [q. v.], daughter and son of the Protector (Milton, *State Papers*, pp. 6, 7). The following year he was with the army at Waterford, and soon afterwards settled in Dublin, where he became pastor of a baptist congregation, and chaplain to General John Jones (*d.* 1660) [q. v.], who had married Cromwell's sister (cf. Jones, *Letters*, Hist. Soc. of Lancashire and Cheshire, 1860–1, p. 216). He was appointed by Jones, the deputy-governor, to preach before him and the council in the protestant cathedral of Christ Church, Dublin, every Sunday (Noble, *House of Cromwell*, ii. 215). Crosby says he also founded the well-known baptist church at Clough Keating; but of this there appears no proof.

A letter from Dublin on 5 April 1654 (Thurloe, *State Papers*, ii. 213) speaks of an anabaptist congregation, 'of which Mr. Patience is pastor, from whose church those of profitable employment doe decline daily;' but Patient heads the list of 117 names appended to an 'Address from the Baptised Christians in Dublin' professing loyalty and attachment to the Protector, probably on the occasion of his refusing the title of king in 1657 (Brook, *Lives of the Puritans*, iii. 425). On 8 July 1659 Patient was described as 'chaplain to the general officers' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1659–60, p. 13). He returned to England about 1660, and not long after went to Bristol as assistant to Henry Hynam (*d.* 19 April 1679), minister of the first baptist church in the Pithay or Friars, now in King Street (Fuller, *Rise and Progress of Dissent in Bristol*, p. 215). During the mayoralty of Sir John Knight [q. v.] at Bristol dissenters were sharply persecuted, and on 4 Oct. 1663 Patient, with Thomas Ewins and Edward Terrill [q. v.], was sent to prison for preaching. Patient remained prisoner at least three months, and at the next sessions was probably remanded for refusing to pay the fines imposed.

In 1666 Patient returned to his former sphere in London, being set apart on 28 June 1666 as co-pastor with William Kiffen at Devonshire Square Church. Hanserd Knollys and Kiffen performed the office of laying on of hands. The plague was raging all round the meeting-house, and within a month, on 29 July 1666, Patient fell a victim to its ravages. His death, and burial on the succeeding day, are recorded with much solemnity in the church book of 1665. His will (P.C.C. 132 Mico) was proved, on 2 Aug. 1667, by his widow, Sarah Patient, who was the sole legatee.

Patient wrote 'The Doctrine of Baptism and the Distinction of the Covenants' (an attack on infant baptism), London, 1654. This was answered in 'Caleb's Inheritance in Canaan. By E. W. [Edward Warren], a Member of the Army in Ireland,' London, 1655.

[Brook's Lives of the Puritans, iii. 425, 426; Wilson's Hist. of Dissenting Churches, i. 431–3; Crosby's Hist. of Baptists, iii. 42, 43; Ivimey's Life of Kiffen, pp. 33, 35, 38, 93, and his Hist. of the English Baptists, ii. 326, 327, 328, 541, 577; Records of Broad Mead, Bristol, 1846, pp. 74, 75; Minute Book of Devonshire Square Church, per Rev. G. P. McKay, pastor; information from the Rev. E. B. Underhill; Confessions of Faith and other Documents, 1854, pp. 17, 23, 310, 311–14, 326, 341 (two publications of the Hanserd Knollys Soc.); Fuller's Rise and Progress of Dissent in Bristol, pp. 38, 217, 218; Noble's House of Cromwell, ii. 215; Nickolls's Original Letters and Papers of State from the

Collections of John Milton, 1743, pp. 6, 7; Pike's Ancient Meeting-Houses, pp. 34, 35; Wood's Condensed Hist. of the General Baptists, 1847, p. 113; The Doctrine of Baptism, at Dr. Williams's Library, Gordon Square.] C. F. S.

PATIN, WILLIAM (*fl.* 1548–1580), historian. [See PATTEN.]

PATMORE, PETER GEORGE (1786–1855), author, son of Peter Patmore, a dealer in plate and jewellery, was born in his father's house on Ludgate Hill in 1786. His mother was a daughter of the German painter Baeckermann, several of whose portraits are preserved in Hampton Court Palace. Patmore declined at an early age to accede to his father's wish that he should follow his own business. He adopted literature as a profession, became the intimate friend of William Hazlitt and Charles Lamb, and an active journalist and writer in London. In literary circles he was best known in connection with the 'New Monthly Magazine,' of which he was editor from Theodore Hook's death in 1841 until the periodical was acquired by W. Harrison Ainsworth in 1853. Patmore was also a frequent contributor to the 'Liberal,' the 'Westminster,' and 'Retrospective' reviews, and to 'Blackwood' and the 'London' and 'Monthly' magazines in their early and best days. Several of Lamb's most characteristic letters were addressed to him, as were also the curious epistles subsequently collected by Hazlitt under the title of the 'Liber Amoris.' Patmore's two best-known works were: 1. 'Imitations of Celebrated Authors, or imaginary Rejected Articles,' London, 1826, 8vo; a fourth edition appeared in 1844, with the title slightly modified and humorous preface omitted. The authors imitated were: Elia, Cobbett, Byron, White, Horace and James Smith, William Hazlitt, Jeffrey, and Leigh Hunt. 2. 'My Friends and Acquaintances, being memorials, mind-portraits, and personal recollections of deceased celebrities of the nineteenth century, with selections from their unpublished letters,' London, 3 vols. 8vo, 1854. These gossiping volumes were filled with personal notabilia concerning Lamb, Campbell, Lady Blessington, R. Plumer Ward, H. and J. Smith, Hazlitt, Laman Blanchard, R. B. and Thomas Sheridan; and the critics of 1854 (especially in the 'Athenæum' and 'North British Review,' May 1855) rebuked the author severely for their triviality and inconsequence; while the fact that the praise so freely accorded to R. Plumer Ward was absolutely withheld from Campbell elicited a storm of comment in a correspondence which ran in the 'Athenæum' for several months. Of the remainder of Patmore's works (several of which were issued anonymously and are difficult to trace) the more important were: 3. 'Sir Thomas Laurence's Cabinet of Gems, with Biographical and Descriptive Memorials,' 1837, fol. 4. 'Chatsworth, or the Romance of a Week,' 1844, 8vo. 5. 'Marriage in Mayfair,' a comedy, 1854, 8vo. He also wrote 'The Mirror of the Months,' 1826, 8vo, and 'Finden's Gallery of Beauty, or the Court of Queen Victoria,' 1844, 8vo. Patmore died near Hampstead on 19 Dec. 1855, aged 69. He married Miss Eliza Robertson, and left, with other issue, Mr. Coventry Patmore, author of 'The Angel in the House.'

[Gent. Mag. 1856, i. 206; Allibone's Dict. of English Literature; Lamb's Correspondence, ed. Ainger; Hazlitt's Liber Amoris, ed. Le Gallienne; Times, 23 Nov. 1892; Brit. Mus. Cat.; private information.] T. S.

PATON, ANDREW ARCHIBALD (1811–1874), author and diplomatist, son of Andrew Paton, saddler and government contractor, and Anne Gilchrist, his wife, was born at 75 Broughton Street, Edinburgh, on 19 March 1811 (Edinburgh Parish Registers). At the age of twenty-five he landed at Naples, and walked thence, with staff and knapsack, to Vienna. Thereafter travelling up and down among the Eastern European states, and also in Syria and Egypt, he acquired an accurate and extensive insight into the manners, customs, and political life of the East, which, with descriptions of the countries themselves, he communicated to the public in an interesting series of books. In 1839–1840 he acted as private secretary to Colonel (afterwards Sir) George Hodges in Egypt, and was afterwards attached to the political department of the British staff in Syria under Colonel Hugh Henry Rose (afterwards Baron Strathnairn) [q. v.], and was allowed the rank of deputy assistant-quartermaster-general. In 1843 he was appointed acting consul-general in Servia, and in 1846 was unofficially employed by Sir Robert Gordon, then ambassador at Vienna, to examine and report upon the ports belonging to Austria in the Adriatic. In 1858 he became vice-consul at Missolonghi in Greece, but in the following year was transferred to Lubeck, and was on 12 May 1862 appointed consul at Ragusa and at Bocca di Cattaro. He died on 5 April 1874. He married Eliza Calvert, and had issue.

His works were: 1. 'The Modern Syrians, by an Oriental Student,' 8vo, London, 1844. 2. 'Servia, or a Residence in Belgrade, &c., in 1843–4,' 8vo, 1845; 2nd edition, 1855. 3. 'Highlands and Islands of the Adriatic,'

2 vols. 8vo, 1849. 4. 'The Mamelukes: a Romance of Life in Grand Cairo,' 3 vols. 8vo, 1851. It was republished in 1861 under the title 'Melusina: a New Arabian Nights' Entertainment.' 5. 'The Goth and the Hun, or Transylvania, Debreezin, Pesth, and Vienna in 1850,' 8vo, 1851. 6. 'The Bulgarian, the Turk, and the German,' 8vo, 1855. 7. 'Researches on the Danube and the Adriatic,' which is an adaptation of information given in some of the previous works, 2 vols. 12mo, 1862. 8. 'History of the Egyptian Revolution, from the Period of the Mamelukes to the Death of Mahommed Ali,' 2 vols. 8vo, 1863. 9. 'Sketches of the Ugly Side of Human Nature,' 1867. 10. 'Henry Beyle, otherwise De Stendhal,' 8vo, 1874.

[Prefaces to some of the above works; Allibone's Dict. of English Literature; Foreign Office List, January 1874 p. 153, January 1875 p. 268.] H. P.

PATON, DAVID (*fl.* 1650–1700), painter, executed portraits and medallions in the latter half of the seventeenth century. A portrait of General Thomas Dalyell or Dalziel [q. v.] at Binns, Linlithgowshire, is ascribed to him. Three groups, each containing five small medallion portraits (chiefly of members of the Hamilton family), which are at Hamilton Palace, Lanarkshire, bear his name and the date 1693.

[Cat. of Loan Exhibition of Works of the Old Masters and Scottish National Portraits, 1883, 1884; Bryan's Dict. of Painters, ii. 261.] H. P.

PATON, GEORGE (1721–1807), Scottish bibliographer and antiquary, born in 1721, was the son of John Paton, a bookseller in Old Parliament Square, Edinburgh, his mother being a granddaughter of George Mossman, printer to Queen Anne. After receiving a good education he became assistant to his father, and ultimately a partner with him in the business; but about 1760 both were compelled to retire on account of having been engaged in a cautionary obligation which they were unable to meet. The son shortly afterwards obtained a clerkship in the custom-house, at first at a salary of only 30*l.*, which was ultimately raised to 70*l.*, but it was subsequently, in accordance with a new ordinance of government, reduced to 55*l.*

Notwithstanding his meagre income Paton succeeded by frugal living in acquiring an extensive antiquarian library and a valuable collection of antiquities. He is said to have been in the habit of going to his duties in the custom-house without tasting anything, and to have breakfasted between four and five in the afternoon on a cup of coffee and a slice of bread and butter. In the evening he usually adjourned, with others of similar literary tastes, to John Dowie's tavern, to take his bottle of ale and 'buffed herring,' or 'roasted skate and onions.' As soon as the clock of St. Giles struck eleven he rose and retired to his house in Lady Stair's Close. Among others who used to meet him in the tavern was Constable the publisher, who states that he derived from him and David Herd 'a great deal of information on the subject of books in general, and the literature of Scotland in particular' (*Archibald Constable and his Correspondents*, i. 21). Both his library and his antiquarian and topographical knowledge were placed freely at the service both of English and Scottish antiquaries. Gough, in the preface to his second edition of 'British Topography,' refers to the valuable assistance he had obtained 'by the indefatigable attention of his very ingenious and communicative friend, Mr. George Paton of the custom-house, Edinburgh.' Among others who more or less were indebted to his communications were Lord Hailes, Bishop Percy, Ritson, Pennant, George Chalmers, and David Herd. Two volumes selected from the 'Paton Correspondence,' preserved in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, have been printed for private circulation—the one consisting of 'Letters from Joseph Ritson, Esq., to George Paton,' 1829; and the other of 'Letters from Thomas Percy, John Callendar of Craigforth, David Herd, and others to George Paton,' 1830. Two large volumes of Paton's letters to Gough are also in the Advocates' Library, and have not been published. The only independent contribution of Paton to literature is the index to Lindsay of Pitscottie's 'History of Scotland,' published in 1788. Although an indefatigable collector of books and antiquities, Paton saved 200*l.*, but lost it after the age of seventy by the failure of the bank of Betham, Gardner, & Co. In 1800 Constable endeavoured to secure the influence of the Duke of Roxburghe on his behalf, but without success (*ib.* i. 397–9). He died on 5 March 1807, at the age of eighty-seven. His books were sold the same year, the proceeds amounting to 1,358*l.*, and his manuscripts, prints, coins, and antiquities were dispersed in 1811.

There is a portrait of Paton in Kay's 'Edinburgh Portraits.' A small portrait, a private plate, was executed in 1785, and a drawing of him in chalk is preserved by the Antiquarian Society of Edinburgh. Two portraits, by John Brown, are in the National Portrait Gallery, Edinburgh.

[Kay's Edinburgh Portraits; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. x. 249, 509; Gent. Mag., 1807 ii. 977, 1809 i. 348, 1812 i. 440; Archibald Constable and his Correspondents.] T. F. H.

PATON, JAMES (*d.* 1596), bishop of Dunkeld, descended from the family of Ballilisk, Kinross-shire, was ordained minister of the parish of Muckart, Kinross-shire, in 1567. He purchased from the family of Douglas the small farm of Muchartmill, which the Earl of Argyll is said to have persuaded him to convey to him in return for the appointment to the bishopric of Dunkeld, Paton also promising to give to the earl a certain share of the tithes (KEITH, *Scottish Bishops*, ed. Russel, p. 204). Paton succeeded Robert Crichton, who had joined the queen's party. It was Crichton, and not Paton, who, after the capture of the castle of Edinburgh in 1573, was confined for some time in prison. Paton's letter of appointment to the bishopric was dated 16 Feb. 1572, and the letter of his consecration 25 July 1572. On 27 April 1573 he took an election oath to King James as the only true and lawful sovereign (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* ii. 223–4). At a meeting of the general assembly on 26 Aug. he was delated for receiving the name and not exercising the office of a bishop within the bounds; for not proceeding against papists, and chiefly the Earl of Atholl and divers others within his bounds; for a simoniacal paction between him and the Earl of Argyll touching the bishopric, and for voting in parliament against the Act of Divorcement (CALDERWOOD, *History*, iii. 288). He confessed his oversight in not executing sentence of excommunication against Atholl and his wife, and was commanded to confess his fault publicly in the cathedral of Dunkeld on a Lord's day, in time of service (*ib.* p. 303). He first sat as a member of the privy council 8 March 1574–5. At a session of the assembly in August 1574 he promised to pronounce sentence of excommunication against John, earl of Atholl, within forty days; nevertheless, at the meeting of the assembly in August 1575, the complaints against him were renewed, and a committee was appointed to reason with him (*ib.* pp. 347–8). Finally, in April 1576, the assembly decreed that, having been found guilty of simony, he should be deprived of his office, against which decision Paton appealed to the lords of parliament (*ib.* p. 360). Decrees were further passed against him in 1580 (*ib.* p. 465) and 1582 (*ib.* p. 681), but he continued to defy them. On 9 Feb. 1580–1 the privy council decreed that 'as he had no function or charge in the Reformed Kirk of this realm,' and was thus less worthy to enjoy the patrimony of the bishopric, he should be required to provide out of it for the relief of his predecessor (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iii. 356–8). He was succeeded in the bishopric by Peter Rollock [q. v.] He died 20 July 1596, and was buried at Muckart, where there is a tombstone to him with the following inscription: 'Jacobus Paton de Middle Ballilisk quondam episcopus de Dunkeld, qui obiit 20 Julii 1596.' He had a son Archibald, to whom the king made a gift, 20 May 1574, of the altarage of St. Peter in Dunkeld for seven years, to enable him to study grammar in the school of Dunkeld.

[Keith's Scottish Bishops; Scot's Fasti Eccles. Scot. ii. 776, 837; Melville's Diary (Bannatyne Club and Wodrow Society); Calderwood's and Spotiswood's Histories; Reg. Privy Council Scotl. vols. ii. iii.] T. F. H.

PATON, JAMES (*d.* 1684), covenanter, was born at Meadowbank in the parish of Fenwick, Ayrshire, where his father had a farm. Until near manhood he was employed in agricultural pursuits. According to one account he went as a volunteer to Germany, and served with such distinction in the wars of Gustavus Adolphus that he was raised to the rank of captain. According to another, he was present with the Scots army at Marston Moor. With the rank of captain, he fought with great gallantry against Montrose at Kilsyth, 15 Aug. 1645, and escaped uninjured during the flight. After the defeat of Montrose at Philiphaugh on 13 Sept. he returned home to Fenwick. He took part with the people of Fenwick in opposing General Middleton in 1648. With other Scottish covenanters he, however, supported the king against Cromwell in 1650, and, accompanying him in 1651 into England, fought for him at the battle of Worcester on 3 Sept. After the Restoration he fought, in command of a party of covenanting cavalry, on 28 Sept. 1666, at Rullion Green, where he had a personal encounter with Sir Thomas Dalyell [q. v.] He was also at the battle of Bothwell Bridge 22 June 1679. He was excepted out of the indemnities passed after both battles, but succeeded in lurking safely in various hiding places, until in 1684 he was taken in the house of a covenanter, Robert Howie. Dalyell on meeting him is said to have stated that he was both glad and sorry for him. The fact that he had fought for the king at Worcester atoned in Dalyell's eyes for much that was unjustifiable in his subsequent behaviour. He severely rebuked an insult that was offered him, and is supposed to have exerted special influence to procure his pardon. Lauder of Fountainhall mentions that Paton 'carried himself very discreetly before

the justices' (*Historical Notices*, p. 535). He was sentenced to be hanged at the Grassmarket on 23 April, but was reprieved till 9 May. He was then willing to have taken the test, but a quorum of the privy council could not be obtained to reprieve him.

[Howie's Scots Worthies; Wodrow's Sufferings of the Church of Scotland; Lauder of Fountainhall's Historical Notices in the Bannatyne Club.] T. F. H.

**PATON, JOHN STAFFORD** (1821–1889), general in the Indian army, son of Captain John Forbes Paton, Bengal engineers, born in 1821, was educated at the East India Company's military seminary at Addiscombe, and in 1837 obtained a Bengal infantry cadetship. On 3 Oct. 1840 he was appointed lieutenant in the 14th Bengal native infantry, with which he served at the battle of Maharajpore in 1843, and in the Sikh war of 1845–6, being present at the battles of Ferozeshah and Sobraon (medal and two clasps), and in the expedition to Kat-Kangra under Brigadier Alexander Jack [q. v.] As a deputy assistant quartermaster-general he served in the Punjab campaign of 1848–9, and was present in the affair at Ramnuggur, the passage of the Chenab, and the battles at Sadoolapore and Chillianwallah, where he was severely wounded (medal and clasps). In 1850 he served with the expedition under Sir Charles James Napier against the Afridees, and was present at the forcing of the Kohat Pass, near Peshawur (medal). He became captain in his regiment on 8 Feb. 1851, and received a brevet majority the day after for services in the Punjab in 1848–9. As brevet lieutenant-colonel and assistant quartermaster-general he served with the force sent to suppress the Gogaira insurrection in 1857, where he commanded the field detachment from Lahore, which was three times engaged with the enemy. While Paton was thus employed, his regiment—the 14th native infantry—mutinied at Jhelum. He was appointed brevet colonel and deputy quartermaster-general in the Punjab in November 1857. He joined the Bengal staff corps on its formation, and became a major-general on 29 Oct. 1866. He was quartermaster-general in Bengal in 1863–8, and was in temporary charge of a division of the Bengal army in 1870.

Paton, who during his active career had been thirty times mentioned in despatches and orders, was made a C.B. in 1873. He became a general on the retired list on 1 Oct. 1877. He married, in 1852, Wilhelmina Jane, daughter of the late Colonel Sir James Tennant, K.C.B., H.E.I.C.S. He died at his residence, 86 Oxford Terrace, London, W., on 28 Nov. 1889.

Paton must not be confused with Colonel John Paton, a Bengal officer of earlier date, whose 'Tables of Routes and Stages in the Presidency of Fort William' (3rd edition, Calcutta, 1821, fol.) went through several editions.

[Indian Registers and Army Lists, under dates; Broad Arrow, 7 Dec. 1889, p. 687; Colonel Vibart's Addiscombe, 1894, p. 679.] H. M. C.

**PATON, MARY ANN**, afterwards Mrs. Woods (1802–1864), vocalist, the eldest daughter of George Paton, a writing-master at Edinburgh and an amateur player on the violin, was born in Edinburgh in October 1802. Her mother, a Miss Crawford of Cameron Bank, was a beautiful woman and a lover of music, and her grandmother, Ann Nicoll, had enjoyed the distinction of playing the violin before the Duke of Cumberland when on his way to Culloden. Mary Ann Paton and her sisters received a good musical training, but the statement that Mary Ann composed songs for publication at the age of five may be doubted. At eight, however, she appeared at public concerts as a singer, performer on the harp and pianoforte (Viotti's concerto in G), and recited Collins's 'Ode to the Passions' and 'Alexander's Feast.' The family settled in London in 1811, and Miss Paton was heard there at the Nobility and some private concerts; but it was soon decided that her health rendered a temporary retirement from public life desirable. After an interval of six years, during which Samuel Webbe, jun., gave her lessons on the harp and pianoforte, she began her career as a vocalist. In 1820 she appeared at Bath, and in 1821 at Huntingdon.

In 1822 she joined the Haymarket company, and on 3 Aug. essayed the character and music of Susanna in the 'Marriage of Figaro.' This rather exacting part she performed to the satisfaction of critics, and she afterwards filled the rôles of the Countess in the same opera, of Rosina in the 'Barber of Seville,' of Lydia in 'Morning, Noon, and Night,' and of Polly in the 'Beggar's Opera.' Miss Paton afterwards distinguished herself at Covent Garden as Mandane in 'Artaxerxes,' Rosetta in 'Love in a Village,' Adriana in the 'Comedy of Errors,' and Clara in the 'Duenna.' The critics of the day warned her against exaggerated ornamentation, but her success was undoubted. A thoughtful article written in 1823 says: 'She was gifted with extraordinary powers, not only as relates to the physical organ, but with an enthusiasm, an intellectual vigour of no common

kind.... Not yet twenty-one, yet her technical attainments, we are disposed to think, are nearly as great as those of any other vocalist in this country, with the slight reservations and allowances we shall make as we proceed. She is beautiful in her person and features . . . above the middle height, slender, and delicately formed; her dark hair and eyes give animation and contrast to a clear complexion, and sensibility illuminates every change of sentiment that she has to express. . . . Her compass is A to D or E, eighteen or nineteen notes.' At that time her voice was not evenly produced. Her execution was facile, 'no difficulties appal or embarrass her. Even in Rossini's most rapid passages she multiplies the notes in a way few mature singers would attempt.' A plate is given to show her embellishments in Rossini's 'Tu che accendi.' 'Her manner, exuberantly florid, is the fault of her age, and in some sort, of her attainment. . . . She imitates Catalani. . .'

Miss Paton's father had insisted on her breaking off an engagement with a young medical man named Blood, who went upon the stage for a short time under the name of Davis. Afterwards she became on 7 May 1824 the wife of Lord William Pitt Lennox [q. v.], but from him she freed herself by divorce in the Scottish courts in 1831. In the same year she married Joseph Woods, a tenor singer.

Her reputation as a dramatic singer was greatly enhanced when, in 1824, she took the part of Agatha in 'Der Freischütz.' A still greater triumph was her impersonation of Rezia in 'Oberon,' of which Weber conducted the sixteen rehearsals, besides the performance on 12 April 1826, two months before his death. 'She was created for the part;' 'her enthusiasm for the music was great,' he wrote; 'she sang exquisitely even at the first rehearsal.' The 'Harmonicon' declared that Miss Paton never sang with more ability and effect. From that time Miss Paton was considered at the head of her profession. She was not excelled by any contemporary in her mastery of the art of singing.

In 1831 she was engaged at the King's Theatre, where she sang in 'La Cenerentola' and other Italian operas. Returning to Drury Lane, she took the part in 1832 of Alice in 'Robert le Diable.' She then went to reside at Woolley Moor, Yorkshire, with her husband. In 1840 they visited America for the first time. After their return Mrs. Woods retired to a convent for a year, but she reappeared at the Princess's Theatre and at concerts, in which her husband was also engaged. They finally settled at Bulcliffe Hall, near Chapelthorpe, and it was there that Mrs. Woods died, on 21 July 1864, aged 62. She left a son, born in 1838.

Her sisters were singers. Isabella made her début at Miss Paton's benefit at Covent Garden, 1824, as Letitia Hardy. Eliza sang at the Haymarket in 1833.

[Dict. of Musicians, 1827, ii. 271; Georgian Era, iv. 309; Grove's Dict. ii. 672, iv. 745; Parke's Memoirs, ii. 203; Oxberry's Dramatic Biography, v. 19; Harmonicon, 1823, passim; Quarterly Musical Mag. v. 191; Weber's Life; Busby's Anecdotes, i. 46; Musical Recollections of the last Half Century, i. 68, 133; Aus Moscheles Leben, i. 120, 211; Clayton's Queens of Song, vol. ii.] L. M. M.

**PATON**, RICHARD (1716?–1791), marine painter, was born in London about 1716. He is said to have been of humble birth, and to have been found as a poor boy on Tower Hill by Admiral Sir Charles Knowles [q. v.], who took him to sea. For many years he held an appointment in the excise office, and at the time of his decease was one of the general accountants. How he acquired his art training is unknown. The earliest record of him as an artist is in 1762, when he exhibited with the Society of Artists two pictures, 'The Action of Admiral Boscawen off Cape Lagos,' engraved by William Woollett, and 'The Taking of the Foudroyant, in the Mediterranean, by the Monmouth,' which was etched by himself. These were followed from 1763 to 1770 by nineteen other works; but in 1771, after a very angry correspondence, he resigned his membership. About 1774 he painted four pictures representing the victory of the Russian fleet under Count Orloff over the Turkish fleet at Cheshme Bay in 1770, and soon afterwards five views of the royal dockyards, now at Hampton Court, in all of which the figures were painted by John Hamilton Mortimer, A.R.A. [q. v.] In 1776 he exhibited at the Royal Academy views of Rochester and of Deptford dockyard, and between that year and 1780 thirteen other pictures of naval engagements and marine subjects.

Three of his pictures are in Greenwich Hospital: 'The Battle off Cape Barfleur between the French and Combined English and Dutch Fleets, 19 May 1692;' 'The Defeat of the Spanish Fleet near Cape St. Vincent by Admiral Rodney, 16 Jan. 1780;' and 'The Action off Sicily between the English and Spanish Fleets, 11 Aug. 1718.' In the Guildhall, London, are four pictures by him of the defence and relief of Gibraltar, and another of the lord mayor proceeding by water to Westminster, in which the figures are by

Francis Wheatley, R.A. His works possess some merit, and were formerly very popular, as they represented most of the great sea-fights of his time. Some of them were etched by himself, and others were engraved by Woollett, Fittler, Canot, Lerpinière, and James Mason.

Paton died in Wardour Street, Soho, London, after a long and painful illness, on 7 March 1791, aged 74. Edwards states that he was a man of respectable character, but rather assuming in his manners.

[Edwards's Anecdotes of Painters, 1808, p. 165; Bryan's Dictionary of Painters and Engravers, ed. Graves and Armstrong, 1886–9, ii. 261; Redgrave's Dictionary of Artists of the English School, 1878; Exhibition Catalogues of the Incorporated Society of Artists, 1762–1770; Royal Academy Exhibition Catalogues, 1776–1780.] R. E. G.

**PATON, WALLER HUGH** (1828–1895), Scottish landscape-painter, son of Joseph Neil Paton and Catherine MacDiarmid, was born in Wooers-Alley, Dunfermline, on 27 July 1828. In early years he assisted his father, who was a damask-designer in that town, but in 1848 he became interested in landscape-painting, and received lessons in water-colour from John Houston, R.S.A. In that year he exhibited his first picture, 'The Antique Room, Wooers-Alley, by Firelight,' which was hung in the Glasgow exhibition. Three years later his 'Glen Massen' was accepted by the Royal Scottish Academy, of which corporation he was elected an associate in 1857, and a member in 1865. He contributed to the academy's exhibitions every year from 1851 till his death. In 1858 he joined his brother, now Sir Noël, in preparing illustrations for Aytoun's 'Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers,' published in 1863. From 1859 onwards he resided in Edinburgh, but in 1860 he stayed some time in London, making water-colour facsimiles of Turner's works at South Kensington, and in 1861 and 1868 he was on the continent with his brother and Mr. (now Sir) Donald Mackenzie Wallace. He first exhibited at the Royal Academy, London, in 1862, and in that year he received a commission from her majesty to make a drawing of Holyrood Palace. He was a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland (1869), an honorary member of the Liverpool Society of Water-colour Painters (1872), and a member of the Royal Scottish Society of Water-colour Painters (1878). During the last ten years of his life he was in bad health, and on 8 March 1895 he succumbed to an attack of pleurisy, at his house, 14 George Square, Edinburgh. He was buried in the Grange cemetery there.

In 1862 he married Margaret, eldest daughter of A. J. Kinloch of Park and Maryculter, Aberdeenshire, and had by her four sons and three daughters.

Paton was the first Scottish artist who painted a picture throughout in the open air. It was his custom to make water-colour sketches of his pictures; these are preserved in four albums, in which he inserted notes. He found most of his subjects in the hill scenery of Perthshire, Aberdeenshire, and, in especial, Arran. The rich purple of the northern sunset was his prevailing colour effect; and he was pre-Raphaelite in his careful reproduction of natural detail, first seen most emphatically in 'The Raven's Hollow, or Slochd-a-Chrommain.' His diploma picture, 'Lamlash Bay,' hangs in the National Gallery, Edinburgh. It has been often copied.

[Scotsman and Glasgow Herald, 9 March 1895; Catalogues and Reports of the Royal Scottish Academy and other exhibiting societies referred to above; information kindly supplied by Paton's brother, Sir Noël Paton, R.S.A.] G. G. S.

**PATRICK** (373–463), saint and bishop, born in 373, originally named Sucat (Welsh, *Hygad*, warlike), was son of Calpornius, a Scot, who was a deacon, and the son of Potitus, a priest. To this pedigree the Armagh copy of the 'Confession' and the 'Hymn of Fiacc' add that the father of Potitus was Odissus, a deacon. The father, Calpornius, was a man of wealth and a decurion or magistrate of Ailclyde, now Dumbarton, then a British fortress garrisoned by Roman troops. He had a country house on the western coast, and there the boy Sucat was staying in 389, when he was captured in a raid of the Picts and Scots. The Roman troops, who had occupied the territory from 369, had been withdrawn in 387. Sucat was carried off to the north of Ireland, and sold to Miliuc, chieftain of North Dalaradia in the county of Antrim. There he endured many hardships, tending cattle on the mountains and in the woods in the inclement winters of that region. When at home he had been careless in religious matters, but now a spiritual change passed over him, and he became earnest in prayer. After six years of bondage he had a dream, in which he was told that he should return to Scotland, his native country; and another, informing him that his ship was ready at a port about two hundred miles away. Leaving his master, he made his way to the port, found a ship getting under way, and was, with some reluctance, taken on board. The cargo was partly composed of the valuable Irish wolf-dogs which were a monopoly among the Irish princes, and were in great demand in the east, and, as the

servant of Miliuc, Sucat had learned the way of managing them. After a voyage of three days the vessel reached its destination in the Loire, then the depôt for the trade of the British Isles (Ridgeway). Thence the party set out by the trade route across the forest or 'desert,' as he calls it, to Narbo or Marseilles, where trade with the east was carried on. Arrived at the end of their journey, Patrick's engagement was at an end, and he was free to devote himself to the missionary life on which his heart was set.

On parting with his shipmates he was in the neighbourhood of Arles, and within reach of Auxerre and Tours, and could thus take advantage of the schools of Gaul to remedy the deficiencies of his education. He does not mention with whom he studied. According to the 'Tripartite Life,' he went first to Bishop Germanus at Auxerre, and then to Martin at Tours. This is also the account in the 'Fifth' life in Colgan, as well as in Jocelyn. But it involves a gross anachronism, for Martin died many years before Germanus became bishop of Auxerre. Dr. Todd is evidently right in regarding Germanus's name as an interpolation. Martin of Tours without doubt was the master under whom Patrick studied. He is frequently mentioned in Irish literature; his gospel is said to have been preserved at Derry, and his life, by Sulpicius Severus, accompanies that of Patrick in the 'Book of Armagh;' of Germanus little or nothing was known in Ireland. The time Patrick spent with St. Martin is stated by Colgan and the 'Third' and 'Fifth' lives in his collection as four years, which corresponds with his own account in the 'Confession,' that his stay abroad was only 'a few years.'

When Patrick returned to his parents in Britain, his mind was full of the project of preaching to the Irish. In a dream a man named Victoricus appeared to him and handed him a letter, inscribed 'The voice of the people of Ireland;' he seemed to hear voices from the west of Ireland, saying, 'Come, holy youth, and henceforth walk among us.' His parents and elders urgently advised him not to venture among the heathen Irish. Much affected by their entreaties, a further trial awaited him. He had told a friend, in confidence, of a fault committed at the age of fifteen, and this was made an objection to his consecration as bishop, apparently before a British synod. He was thirty years old when the charge was revived against him, and had thus just arrived at the age for consecration.

Here his personal narrative in the 'Confession' fails us. Of the extant 'lives,' the 'Tripartite,' which is in Irish, is the most complete, and, with some additions and corrections from the 'life' by Muirchu in the 'Book of Armagh,' supplies the most trustworthy information accessible. We thus learn that he went abroad to be consecrated a bishop by Amatorex or Amator, who, according to Probus and the scholiast on Fiacc's hymn, was bishop of Auxerre, who died in 418. On his consecration, he assumed the name of Patrick or Patricius. Returning to Britain, he stayed there for an uncertain period. At its close he set out for Ireland, accompanied by a missionary party. The date is matter of controversy. Dr. Whitley Stokes calculates that he came 'about 397;' but as he was born in 373, was thirty years of age before his mission commenced, and did not come directly to Ireland after his consecration, we shall be safer in adopting 405, the date given by Nennius. The erroneous postponement of the event to 432 has led to much confusion.

Landing at the mouth of the Vartry river in the county of Wicklow, and meeting with a hostile reception, he re-embarked, and, sailing along the east coast, touched at Inispatrick, from which he passed on to Strangford Lough, where he landed. Dichu, the local chieftain, granted him a building known as the 'Sabhall' or barn. Here he continued 'a long time, sowing belief until he brought all the Ulstermen by the net of the Gospel to the harbour of life.' Among these was Mochaei [q. v.], whom he eventually ordained, giving him a book of the Gospel, a 'menistir,' and a crozier, named the Eitech. The menistir, from the Latin ministerium, was, according to Dr. Lanigan, a case containing 'a copy of the Gospels and the vessels for the sacred ministry.' On similar occasions he sometimes gave 'the seven books of the law,' i.e. the 'Heptateuch,' or 'the four books of the Gospel.' A journey to Tara and a conflict with the king and his Druids—a story abounding in 'fables partly prodigious and partly ridiculous' (Lanigan)—are said to have taken place at the first Easter after Patrick's arrival in Ireland; but a calculation (Todd) shows that thus seven months only would be allowed for the conversion of all Ulster, which must have been the work of years. The visit to Tara could not have taken place until after 428.

Patrick insisted on a strict discipline among his followers. Bishop Mel, one of his party, was left at Ardagh in the county of Longford, and was accompanied by a consort-sister, who resided with him. Unfavourable rumours of the relations between them reaching Patrick's ears, he came to make inquiry,

when the lady presented herself carrying burning embers in her chasuble, as an evidence of her innocence. Nevertheless Patrick is credited with having formulated a canon at a synod which he is said to have held with his disciples Auxilius and Isserninus about 450, to the effect that 'men and women should be apart, so that the name of the Lord may not be blasphemed.' At Magh Sleacht, on the borders of Cavan, was the idol Cenn Cruaich (British Pennocrucium?), covered with gold and silver, with twelve lesser idols around it, covered with brass. It had fallen aslant, and the smaller figures had sunk into the ground up to their heads, an evidence of the decline of idolatry. Having founded a church here, he passed over the Shannon into Roscommon. There he purchased some land, which he paid for with a mass of gold, from which the place became known as Tir brotha, 'the land of the ingot.' One of the causes which contributed to the success of his mission was that he paid his way, as he mentions more than once in his 'Confession.' He evidently came well provided with funds, and the 'Tripartite,' exaggerating this, tells us that one of his prayers before he entered on his mission was that the Lord would grant him 'as much gold and silver as the nine companions could carry, to be given to the Gael [Irish] for believing'! He was particular in returning gifts laid on the altar, he tells us, his object being to make it clear that he was completely disinterested. In the county of Roscommon he had an interview with two of the king's daughters, who, finding him and his party engaged in prayer by the side of a well in the early morning, asked them many questions about the God of the Christians. Ultimately they were instructed and baptised and received the Eucharist. They are said to have tasted of death, i.e. a death unto sin. The writer of the 'Tripartite,' however, took the words literally, and describes their immediate death and burial.

In Magh Selga were three pillar-stones, probably objects of heathen worship, which Patrick appropriated to Christian use, by inscribing them with the words Jesus, Soter, and Salvator, in memory of the three languages on the cross.

Passing on to Mayo, 'he left two salmon alive in the well of Aghagower, and they will abide there for ever.' Such sacred fish were popularly believed to be not uncommon in Ireland. Thence he ascended Croagh Patrick in the county of Mayo, the scene of the legend of his banishing the reptiles related by Jocelyn. The latter terms it 'St. Patrick's Purgatory,' because any one who underwent the penance there was 'purged' from all his sins, and would not 'enter hell.' The name was at a later date given to a cave on the island in Lough Derg, which was known throughout Europe, and quite superseded the original place of penance. The practice of well-worship which he found prevalent he endeavoured to discourage, though he failed to suppress it.

In Tirawley Patrick had an interview with the twelve sons of Awley respecting the division of their inheritance on their father's death. This is placed by Tirechan in the second year of his mission, which, according to the popular and erroneous date, would be 434; but in this and other matters that writer cannot be relied on. The 'Annals of the Four Masters' place Awley's death at 449. In Sligo Brón and MacRime, two bishops, apparently ordained by his followers, who were permitted to confer orders, came to him, and he wrote an 'Alphabet' for them, probably an elementary treatise. On one occasion, while he was in retirement, 'his household were conferring orders and sowing faith,' and displeased him by consecrating an unsuitable person. Cetiacus and Sachellus at another time ordained 'bishops, priests, and deacons' without consulting Patrick, and were censured by him. One of Patrick's followers, Bishop MacCarthenn, held the office of 'champion,' part of his duty being to carry the saint on his back over difficult places. MacCarthenn was afterwards placed at Clogher as bishop, and Patrick gave him the 'domnach airgid,' which Jocelyn terms a chrismatory. This curious relic is now in the Museum of Science and Art in Dublin. The conditions laid down by him for the episcopate in the case of Fiacc, bishop of Sletty, are that the candidate must be 'of good appearance, well born, a man with one wife unto whom hath been born only one child.' On Fiacc's consecration he bestowed on him a crozier, a menistir, and a 'polaire,' or writing tablet.

Patrick's religious observances are thus described: 'All the Psalms and Hymns and the Apocalypse, and all Spiritual Canticles of the Scripture, he chanted every day,' and from vespers on the eve of Sunday until the third hour on Monday he would not travel.

The change which Christianity produced in the demeanour of the fierce Irish chieftains gave rise to the quaint story of Eoghan, son of Niall, whose appearance he improved at his request, after his conversion, by changing his features and making him taller.

It has been asserted that he spent seven years in Munster, but Dr. Lanigan could find no evidence of it; while Professor

Zimmer believes he only paid a flying visit thither. Local tradition attributes the christianising of the southern coast to others, and particularly to Ailbe, Ciaran (*fl.* 500–560) [q. v.], Declan [q. v.], and Ibhar [q. v.]

It seems to have been at an early period that Patrick founded his first mission settlement near Armagh. Feeling the want of a centre for his work, he applied to Daire, the chieftain of the place, for a site on the hill. Daire refused this, but gave him a small fort on the low ground, where Patrick erected some circular or beehive houses. This was known as the Fort of Macha, and here he and his companions had their headquarters 'for a long time.' Ultimately Daire granted him Ardmacha, the hill or height of Macha, now Armagh, on which he built his church, which has since been the seat of the primacy. According to Bishop Reeves, 'a long train of political and religious events' probably intervened between these two grants. Sechnall or Secundinus, one of his chief assistants, who resided chiefly at the Fort of Macha, composed a panegyric on him, which is still extant. It is an alphabetical poem in Latin, descriptive of his character and teaching, and, like the 'Confession' and 'Letter to Coroticus,' quite free from legendary matter.

It was probably in Down or Antrim that the massacre of his Christian converts by Ceretic or Coroticus, king of Ailclyde, took place. In his letter to Coroticus he expresses deep indignation at the cruel outrage, and recounts the denunciations of scripture against the enemies of God.

There is a strange conflict of opinion as to the year of Patrick's death. The popular date is 493, but its only foundation is the assumption that, having come in 432, he laboured sixty years; but 432 not being admissible, the date of 493 must be abandoned. Tirechan and Giraldus Cambrensis give 458, the Bollandists 460, and Lanigan 465. The date accepted by Mr. Stokes is 463, and is doubtless correct. The difference of opinion as to his place of burial is equally great. The places named are Saul, Downpatrick, Armagh, and Glastonbury, while several authorities say he was like Moses, as no one knew where he was buried. We may take the evidence of St. Bernard on this point as decisive. He was the friend and biographer of Malachy, archbishop of Armagh, and must have had the best information. His account is that the remains of St. Patrick were at Armagh in his time, i.e. the twelfth century; and there is evidence that they were there long before that date. His grave was termed by Latin writers Lipsana Patricii, i.e. the tomb of Patrick, and by the Irish Ferta, 'the tomb,' a name afterwards given to the Fort of Macha, in which it was situated. Pilgrimages were made to it, and the psalms to be recited on such occasions are mentioned in the 'Book of Armagh.' The sacred objects associated with him were also preserved there; they were his bell, his crosier, called the 'Bachall Isa,' or staff of Jesus, and a copy of the New Testament believed to be his. The bell is in the Museum of Science and Art in Dublin; the crosier was burnt at the Reformation; the 'Book of Armagh' is in Trinity College.

Patrick's extant works are the 'Epistles,' consisting of the 'Confession' and the letter to Coroticus, and an Irish hymn, all of which are considered genuine. The canons of a synod attributed to him, Auxilius and Isserninus, have been published; but they are admittedly interpolated, and in their present shape cannot be earlier than the eighth century. Two single canons are also attributed to him—one relating to unity, the other to appeals to Rome; the latter corresponds with a longer one in the 'Book of Armagh,' and is attributed to the eighth century by Mr. Haddan; a more exact calculation proves its date to be between 664 and 790 (*History of the Church of Ireland*). A tradition names him as one of nine appointed to revise the pagan laws of Ireland, the result of their labours being the 'Senchus Mor;' but the form in which that collection now exists belongs to a later age.

The systematic misstatements in the early 'lives' respecting the date of his mission were clearly introduced in order to give greater importance to Patrick's position. When the Irish came in contact with Augustine of Canterbury and his clergy, in the beginning of the seventh century, they seem to have felt that the learning and culture of those men who came from the capital of the world with the prestige of a papal mission threw into the shade their humble and unlearned saint. Hence a spirit of national pride led a party in the Irish church to ascribe to him a learning he never claimed, and a Roman mission of which he knew nothing. Further, the Roman clergy were urgent in pressing their observance of Easter on the Irish church, and to this end it was important that Patrick should be supposed to have come from Rome. The special mission of Adamnan to Ireland in 697 on the Easter question gave a further impulse to this movement (Zimmer). Patrick's stay in Gaul and his studies there were exaggerated and his travels extended to the islands of the Tyrrhene Sea and Italy.

The new importance attributed to him demanded a higher position for his see, and this is one of the objects with which the 'Book of

Armagh' was compiled, as Dr. Petrie has shown, in 807. When the false theory of Patrick's Roman mission was fully developed, it was necessary to assign it to a later date than the authentic facts of Patrick's career warranted. For Prosper's 'Chronicle' authoritatively stated that Pope Celestine sent Palladius, whose mission failed, as 'first bishop' ('primus episcopus') in 431 to the Irish, who at the time were believers in Christ ('ad Scotos in Christum credentes'). Patrick's Roman champions consequently averred that Pope Celestine also sent him, and, if that were so, since Celestine died in 432, that year must have been the date of Patrick's acceptance of his credentials. But the early biographers of Patrick perceived the further difficulty that if Prosper's account of Palladius were to be adopted, it followed that Ireland was a Christian country when Palladius arrived in 431, and that the conversion of Ireland could not therefore, on this evidence, be attributed to him, and still less to Patrick. To evade this inference another device was resorted to. Prosper's words were misquoted by Muirchu in the 'Book of Armagh,' who affirms that Palladius came 'to convert the island' ('ad insulam convertendam'), and he having failed in the attempt, the work remained for Patrick. No one has hitherto noticed this perversion of Prosper's words.

In order to meet another difficulty arising from the wilful postponement of his mission some thirty years, occupation had to be found for him during that period. According to one account he was engaged in study, in contradiction to his own words; another says he was wandering in the islands of the Tyrrhene Sea—a strange occupation for a missionary passionately eager for the conversion of Ireland. In a like spirit the necessity of adding an additional tutor was acknowledged, for St. Martin flourished too early to act as Patrick's tutor at so late a period as 430 or thereabouts, and therefore Germanus was interpolated (Todd); but, unfortunately for the credit of the writer, he is placed before, instead of after, Martin. Again, if the commencement of his mission was to be postponed from 405 to 432, Amator, who died in 418, was too early as his consecrator, and therefore Celestine is joined with Amator, despite the date of the latter's death.

Subsequently the 'Confession,' the 'Epistle to Coroticus,' and the early life by Muirchu, were all tampered with, chiefly by way of liberal excision, in order to bring them into conformity with the elaborated version of the life of the apostle, according to which his varied foreign experiences deferred his arrival in Ireland till he was sixty years old. A comparison of the Armagh copy of the 'Confession' with the four others preserved in France and England shows it to have been mutilated in a most thoroughgoing fashion for this purpose. Such were the methods adopted by the party who favoured the new tradition to destroy the evidence against it. Similarly, in the first draft of the 'Chronicle' of Marianus Scotus (1072), Patrick was not said to have followed Palladius, but Marianus afterwards interpolated words to show that Patrick began his mission as Palladius's successor. The contrast between these misstatements and the genuine records led, at one time, to the belief that two persons were confused together—one the simple missionary of the 'Confession,' the other the great thaumaturge of whom so many marvels were told. Thus two Patricks came into existence, and two burial-places had to be invented, whence sprang the inconsistencies that characterise the traditional accounts of his tomb. The two Patricks appear for the first time in the 'Hymn of Fiacc,' where they are said to have died at the same time (Windisch). In this we see the idea in its rudimentary stage. A little later they are distinguished as Patrick Senior, or the elder Patrick, and Patrick the Apostle. Separate days were soon assigned to them; but the apostle, with his ever-growing tale of miracles, became the popular favourite, while Patrick Senior gradually faded from view, and in the later literature is never heard of.

Notwithstanding the insurmountable difficulties which the apocryphal story of Patrick involves, it was successfully palmed off on the Irish people by an active party in Ireland. This was rendered possible by the Danish tyranny and the exodus of learned men, for there was no one to criticise it until the revival of learning in the twelfth century, and then it was too firmly established to be overthrown. Patrick is usually termed apostle of Ireland; but as his labours did not extend to the entire country, it would perhaps be more correct to style him, with the 'Annals of Ulster' and the poet Ninnine, 'Chief Apostle of Ireland.' His day is 17 March. But he was never canonised at Rome, and his acceptance as a saint is the outcome of popular tradition.

[The Epistles of St. Patrick and other documents in the Tripartite Life of St. Patrick (Rolls Ser.): St. Patrick, Apostle of Ireland, by J. H. Todd, D.D.; Vita S. Patricii ex Libro Armachano, ed. R. P. Edmundus Hogan, S. J., Brussels, 1882; on the Patrician Documents, by Sir Samuel Ferguson (Trans. Royal Irish Acad. vol. xxvii. No. 6); Colgan's Trias Thaumaturga,

p. 30, *n.* 18; Jocelyn's Vita Patricii; Boll. Act. Sanct. at March 17; Epistles and Hymn of St. Patrick, translated by Rev. T. Olden, 3rd edit.; The Church of Ireland (series of National Churches) by the same, chap. ii. App. A; On the Burial Place of St. Patrick, by the same; Proceedings of Royal Irish Academy, 3rd ser. vol. ii. No. 4; On the Consortia of the First Order of Irish Saints, by the same; Proceedings of Royal Irish Academy, 3rd ser. vol. iii. No. 3; Lanigan's Eccl. Hist. vol. i.; Zimmer's Keltische Studien, ii. 183; Professor Ridgway's Greek Trade-Routes to Britain (Folk-Lore Journal, No. 1); Irische Texte von Ernest Windisch (Leipzig, 1880), p. 22 *n.*; Ussher's Works, vol. vi.; Martyrology of Donegal, p. 153; Skene's Celtic Scotland, vol. i.; Memoir of Adamnan; Reeves's Columba, pp. xl–lxviii; Nennius's Historia Britonum; Todd Lectures, vol. iii. by Rev. B. McCarthy, D.D. (Royal Irish Academy, 1892), p. 19; Petrie's History and Antiquities of Tara Hill (Trans. Royal Irish Academy), vol. xviii.] T. O.

**PATRICK** (*d.* 1084), bishop of Dublin, also known as Gillapattraicc, was an ostman of good family, who became a priest. In 1074 the clergy and people of Dublin chose him to fill the see of that city, vacant by the death of Donatus. He received consecration at St. Paul's Church, London, from Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, to whom he made a vow of spiritual obedience. It was part of William I's Irish policy to bring the Irish church under the control of the archbishop of Canterbury. For many years after Patrick's time the bishops of Dublin were consecrated by archbishops of Canterbury. Lanfranc mentioned Patrick with commendation as his fellow bishop in letters addressed to Godred and Tirdelvac, whom he styled kings of Ireland. Patrick was drowned in October 1084, on a voyage to England. In a letter from Dublin to Lanfranc, Patrick, after his decease, was referred to as a good and pious pastor.

[Ware's Ireland, ed. Harris, pp. 306–8; Sylloge veterum epistolarum, 1632; Lanfranci Opera, 1648; Wharton's Anglia Sacra, 1691; Annals of Ireland, 1851; Lanigan's Ecclesiastical History, 1822, iii. 434–5, 457–8; Baronius, Annales (1745), xvii. 606–7; Wilkins's Concilia, i. 361; Freeman's Norman Conquest, iv. 528–9; Annals of the Four Masters, ii. 981; Dalton's Archbishops of Dublin, 1838; Gilbert's Chartularies of St. Mary's Abbey (Rolls Ser.), 1884.] J. T. G.

**PATRICK, JOHN** (1632–1695), protestant controversialist, baptised on 14 April 1632 at Gainsborough, Lincolnshire, was second son of Henry Patrick and Mary Naylor, and was grandson of Simon Patrick (*d.* 1613) [q. v.] He was educated at the school of Houghton Regis, and admitted to Peterhouse, Cambridge, on 7 Aug. 1661. He subsequently became a scholar on the foundation of Dr. Barnard Hall, and graduated B.A. 1665 and M.A. 1671. In September 1665 he was ill of the plague (Simon Patrick, *Autobiography*, p. 53). For a time he served the cure of Battersea on behalf of his brother, Simon Patrick (1626–1707) [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Ely (*ib.* p. 66). On the death of Shircross, preacher of the Charterhouse, Patrick obtained the post, through his brother's influence, on 8 Dec. 1671 (*ib.* p. 66; Smythe, *Hist. of the Charterhouse*, p. 240). This office Patrick held, with other dignities, till his death. From 1 July 1685 till January 1695–6 he was prebendary of the first stall of Peterborough Cathedral. On 29 July 1690 he was installed precentor of Chichester. On 19 Jan. 1688–9 he seems to have preached before the Prince of Orange on the union of the protestant churches; the prince ordered the sermon to be printed (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. v. 93, vii. 233).

Patrick died on 19 Dec. 1695, and was buried in the Charterhouse chapel. By his will he left to his brother Simon 'a noble library, which cost him above 1,000*l.*, and all that he was worth, except some legacies to some particular friends' (Simon Patrick, *Autobiogr.* p. 174).

John, like his brother, by whose reputation he has been unduly dwarfed, was among the foremost champions of the protestant against the catholic cause in the days of James II. His works, almost all anonymous, are noteworthy. They are: 1. 'Reflexions upon the Devotions of the Roman Church, with the Prayers, Hymns, and Lessons themselves taken out of their authentick Book. In three parts,' London, 1674 (anon.); reprinted, London, 1687 (parts ii. and iii. do not appear to be extant). 2. 'A Century of Select Psalms and Portions of the Psalms of David, especially those of Praise, turned into metre and fitted to the church tunes in parish churches, for the use of the Charterhouse, London,' London, 1679, 8vo; later editions, 1684, 12mo; 1688, 12mo; 1691, 12mo; 1692, 16mo; 1694, 12mo; 1698, 12mo; 1701, 12mo; 1710, 12mo; 1724, 12mo; 1742, 12mo. These psalms were in high repute among many dissenting congregations (Wilson, *Dissenting Churches*, iv. 35). 3. 'Transubstantiation no Doctrine of the Primitive Fathers, being a defence of the Public Letter herein against "The Papist Misrepresented and Represented," part ii. cap. iii.' (anon.), London, 1687 [see under Goter, John]. 4. 'A Full View of the Doctrines and Prac-

tices of the Ancient Church relating to the Eucharist wholly different from those of the present Roman Church, and inconsistent with the Belief of Transubstantiation' (anon.), London, 1688. In a preface the author acknowledges the authorship of No. 3 supra. Reprinted in (Gibson's) 'Preservative against Popery,' 1738, fol. (vol. ii. tit. vii. pp. 176–252), and in John Cummings's edition of the 'Preservative,' London, 1848 (ix. 89–299). The argument of Patrick's treatise has been recently reissued in 'The Witness of the Roman Missal against the Roman and Ritualistic Doctrine of the Mass,' by Joseph Foxley, M.A., London, 1878. 5. 'The Virgin Mary misrepresented by the Roman Church in the traditions of that Church concerning her Life and Glory, and in the Devotions paid to her as the Mother of God; part i. wherein two of her feasts, her Conception and Nativity, are considered,' London, 1688; reprinted in the 'Preservative against Popery,' 1738.

Patrick contributed to 'Plutarch's Morals translated from the Greek by several hands,' 1684–94 (cf. for Patrick's work i. 109 sq., ii. 112 sq., iii. 19 sq.) He also issued an abridgment of Chillingworth's 'Religion of Protestants a Safe Way to Salvation' (anon.), London, 1687, with some additional discourses of Chillingworth, printed from manuscripts in the hands of Archbishop Tenison. Patrick is said to have undertaken the work at the instigation of Tillotson, Burnet, and Stillingfleet; it was reprinted in 1845.

[Graduati Cantabrigienses; Hist. MSS. Comm. 12th Rep. v. 99, vi. 233, 7th Rep. p. 500; Ackermann's Hist. of Colleges of Winchester, Eton, Westminster, and the Charterhouse, part iv. p. 28; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. vi. 297, 1st ser. iii. 214; Le Neve's Fasti; Stark's History of Gainsborough; Gurnhill's Lyffe and Death Book of Gainsborough; McClintock and Strong's Cyclop. of Bibl. and Eccl. Lit.; information kindly supplied by James Porter, master of Peterhouse, and by the Rev. R. E. Warner, rector of Gainsborough.] W. A. S.

PATRICK, RICHARD (1769–1815), classical scholar and divine, was son of Richard Patrick of Kingston-upon-Hull, Yorkshire, where he was born in 1769. He was educated in the public school there, and entered Magdalene College, Cambridge, on 26 Oct. 1786 as a sizar. He graduated B.A. in 1791, and M.A. in 1808, and in the following year was vicar of Sculcoates, Hull. He also acted as chaplain to Anne, widow of George, first marquis Townshend. He died at his vicarage in February 1815, aged forty-five. Patrick published at least one sermon (Hull, 1809), and contributed to 'The Classical Journal' 'Remarks on Sir George Staunton's Penal Code of China' (1810, ii. 381); 'The Chinese World' (1811, iii. 16); 'Notes on part of the poem of Festus Avienus,' 'an account of a voyage to Cornwall, Ireland, and Albion, performed by Himilco, the celebrated Carthagenian admiral' (iii. 141 sqq.); 'A Chart of Ten Numerals' (iv. 105 sq.), followed by a descriptive essay. The latter was reprinted separately as 'A Chart of Ten Numerals in Two Hundred Tongues, with a Descriptive Essay,' London, 1812. It is an attempt, on a basis of comparative philology, at classifying the races of the earth. To E. H. Barker's edition of Cicero's 'De Senectute' and 'De Amicitia' of 1811 Patrick contributed 'an appendix, in which will be found remarks on the origin of the Latin conjunctions and prepositions; also some curious matter on the affinity of different languages, oriental and northern, to the Latin, including two essays on the origin and the extinction of the Latin tongue.'

[Information kindly sent by A. G. Peskett, master of Magdalene College, Cambr.; Classical Journal, vols. ii.–iv.; Luard's Grad. Cantabr.; Biographical Dictionary of Living Authors, 1816.] W. A. S.

PATRICK, SAMUEL (1684–1748), scholar, born in 1684, was for some years usher (i.e. second master) at the Charterhouse. Late in life he was granted, it is said, the degree of LL.D. from St. Andrews University and took holy orders, but received no preferment. He died at Kentish Town on 20 March 1748.

Patrick appears to have been a sort of Dominie Sampson, deeply read in the classics and ignorant and oblivious of most other matters. He established some reputation as a scholar by his 'Terence's Comedies translated into English prose as near as the propriety of the two languages will admit,' London, 1745, 2 vols. 8vo, and his edition of Ainsworth's 'Latin Dictionary,' London, 1746, 4to. He also edited 'M. B. Hederici Lexicon Manuale Græcum,' London, 1727, 4to; 'C. Cellarii Geographia Antiqua,' 6th edit. London, 1731, 8vo, and collaborated with George Thompson in the preparation of his 'Apparatus ad Linguam Græcam ordine novo digestus,' London, 1732. Recensions of the 'Clavis Homerica,' London, 1771, and the 'Colloquia' of Erasmus, London, 1773, also purport to be by him.

[Nichols's Lit. Anecd.; Scots Mag. 1748, p. 153; London Mag. 1748, p. 141; Gent. Mag. 1748, p. 139; Pope's Works, ed. Elwin and Courthope, x. 307.] J. M. R.

**PATRICK, SIMON** (*d.* 1613), translator, matriculated as a pensioner at Peterhouse, Cambridge, on 21 May 1561, and was a member at Elizabeth's visitation in August 1564. His grandson, Simon Patrick (1626–1707) [q.v.], bishop of Ely, describes him in his autobiography as 'a gentleman of good quality,' in possession of 'an estate of between four and five hundred pounds a year,' who, being 'a person of religion and learning,' travelled 'in his younger days,' and 'translated two books in the beginning of the last century out of the french tongue, of which he was a perfect master.' His estate was at Caistor, Lincolnshire, where, in 1587, he lost his first wife, Mary, and in 1601 his second wife, Dorothea; his third survived him. He was the father of fifteen children, of whom Henry was the father of the bishop and of John Patrick [q.v.] His will, in the prerogative court of Canterbury, is dated 12 Sept. 1613.

Patrick published: 1. 'The Estate of the Church, with the discourse of times, from the Apostles untill this present: Also of the lives of all the Emperours, Popes of Rome, and Turkes: As also of the kings of France, England, Scotland, Spaine, Portugall, Denmarke, &c. With all the memorable accidents of their times. Translated out of French,' London, 1602, 4to. The dedication to Sir William Wray of Glentworth, Lincolnshire, is dated 1564. The book is a translation of Jean Crespin's 'État de l'Eglise dès le temps des apôtres jusqu'à 1560,' &c. 2. 'A discourse upon the meanes of wel governing and maintaining in good peace, a kingdome, or other principalitie. Divided into three parts, namely, The Counsell, the Religion, and the Policie, which a Prince ought to hold and follow. Against Nicholas Machiavell the Florentine. Translated into English by Simon Patericke,' London, 1602 and 1603, fol. This is dedicated, August 1577, to 'the most famous yong gentlemen, Francis Hastings and Edward Bacon.' It is entered in the 'Stationers' Register' to Adam Islip, 9 Nov. 1602. It is a translation of Innocent Gentillet's 'Discours sur les moyens de bien gouverner,' &c., originally published in Latin in 1571, and translated into French in 1576.

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 496; Bishop Patrick's Works, ed. Taylor, vol. i. p. cxxix, vol. ix. p. 107; Biographie Universelle, 1856 xvi. 196, 1852 ix. 478.] R. B.

**PATRICK, SIMON** (1626–1707), bishop of Ely, born at Gainsborough, Lincolnshire, on 8 Sept. 1626, was eldest son of Henry Patrick, a thriving mercer, by his wife, Mary Naylor (see pedigree in *Proc. Lincolnshire Architect. Soc.* 1866, p. 274). John Patrick [q.v.] was his brother. He was educated at the Gainsborough grammar school under Merryweather, 'an excellent Latinist' (Patrick, *Autobiography*), and was intended for business, probably his father's. But from his boyhood he determined to be a scholar; and, apparently with little or no money to help him, made his way to Cambridge, entering Queens' College. He found a kind friend in the master, Dr. Herbert Palmer [q.v.], 'who,' he tells us in his 'Autobiography,' 'sent for me to transcribe some things he intended for the press, and soon after made me the college scribe, which brought me in a great deal of money, many leases being to be renewed. It was not long before I had one of the best scholarships in the college bestowed upon me.' His tutor was a John Wells, who 'showed extraordinary affection' for him. But the man who influenced him most was John Smith (1618–1652) [q.v.], the Cambridge platonist, then a young fellow of Queens'. After graduating B.A. in 1647–8 Patrick received presbyterian orders; but, having read the works of Hammond and Thorndike, he became convinced that episcopal ordination was necessary. He proceeded M.A. in 1651, and in 1654 he sought out the ejected bishop of Norwich, Dr. Joseph Hall [q.v.], who privately ordained him in his parlour at Higham. In 1655 he became domestic chaplain to Sir Walter St. John at Battersea, and in 1658 (when he took the degree of B.D.) was appointed vicar of Battersea through the influence of Sir Walter. In 1661 he was elected master of Queens' College by the majority of fellows, but a royal mandate in favour of Anthony Sparrow [q.v.] overrode Patrick's election. In 1662 he was presented by William, earl of Bedford, to the rectory of St. Paul's, Covent Garden, and there Patrick remained for nearly thirty years. He was an excellent parish priest, and greatly endeared himself to his parishioners by remaining at his post all through the great plague of London in 1665. He had services in his church four times every day, and the offerings were so large that he was embarrassed as to how to dispose of the money; he warned the churchwardens that the offertories were not intended to relieve the rates. His success brought him offers of preferment. In 1666 he took the degree of D.D., and by the advice of Dr. Willis was incorporated of Christ Church, Oxford (July). In 1669 the bishop of Lincoln (Dr. Fuller) offered him the archdeaconry of Huntingdon, which he declined, 'not thinking himself worthy of it.' In 1671 he was made a royal

chaplain 'whether he would or no;' and in 1672 Charles II gave him a prebend at Westminster. In 1679 he accepted the deanery of Peterborough, holding it with his living; but when later in the same year Lord-chancellor Finch offered him the rectory of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, then reputed to be the best living in England, he declined it on the plea that 'his parish had been so extraordinary kind to him that he could not with decency remove from there to another; he recommended Dr. Tenison,' who was appointed. In 1686 James II selected him and Dr. Jane to hold a conference with two Roman catholic priests, Fathers Gifford and Godwin, for the benefit of Lord-treasurer Rochester, whom the king desired to convert to his own faith. In 1687 he founded, in conjunction with his neighbour, Dr. Tenison, excellent schools in London, with the object of keeping the rising generation true to the English church. In the same year he was among the most prominent of those who resisted the king's efforts to procure the reading of the declaration of indulgence in church. On the revolution of 1688 he took the oath of allegiance to the new sovereigns, though he respected the conscientious scruples of those who declined to take it. Bishop Burnet recommended him to King William as 'a man of an eminently shining life, who would be a great ornament to the episcopal order.' On 13 Oct. 1689 he was consecrated bishop of Chichester, and was made at the same time a member of the ecclesiastical commission which was appointed to revise the prayer-book; but the recommendations of the commission were happily rejected by convocation. On 22 April 1691 he was translated to Ely. In both dioceses, but especially at Ely, where he remained for sixteen years, he made his mark. He was one of the chief instruments in that revival of church life which marked the late years of the seventeenth century. He took a warm interest in the two great societies for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge and the Propagation of the Gospel, both of which were founded during his episcopate. Of the former he was one of the five original founders, and of the latter he was so effective a supporter that it is supposed to have been in compliment to him that all bishops of Ely are ex-officio members. He died on 31 May 1707, and was buried on 7 June in Ely Cathedral.

Bishop Patrick was a voluminous writer in polemical theology, scriptural exegesis, and edificatory literature. One of his most interesting works was 'The Parable of the Pilgrim,' which was published in 1664. The insertion of the date 1663 in the original letter to the friend to whom it was written shows that it was completed by that year. It is constructed on similar lines to Bunyan's 'Pilgrim's Progress,' but the dates show that Patrick was no borrower from Bunyan. Although Patrick's work never attained the popularity of the 'Pilgrim's Progress,' it passed through several editions. Thomas Scott, in his edition of the 'Pilgrim's Progress, commends Patrick's allegory. 'The Parable of the Pilgrim,' with an account of Patrick, by the Rev. T. Chamberlayne, was republished in 'The Englishman's Library' in 1839.

In polemical theology Patrick's chief efforts were produced in defence of the church of England against the Roman catholics. 'Search the Scriptures, a Treatise shewing that all Christians ought to read the Holy Books' (1685, 1693), was his first work in this direction. 'A Full View of the Doctrines and Practices of the Ancient Church relating to the Eucharist' and the 'Texts examined which Papists cite out of the Bible to prove the Supremacy of St. Peter and the Pope over the whole Church' both appeared in 1688. They are reprinted in Bishop Gibson's 'Preservative against Popery,' 1738. Patrick had already been engaged in controversy with adversaries from the opposite quarter. In 1669 he published 'A Friendly Debate between a Conformist and a Non-conformist,' in which he defended the Five Mile Act. He followed this up by a 'Continuation,' a 'Further Continuation,' and an appendix to the third part, which contained replies to adverse criticism of the 'Friendly Debate.'

An industrious and sensible commentator on the Old Testament, Patrick issued a long series of volumes of paraphrases. 'The Book of Job paraphrased' appeared in 1679; 'The Books of Psalms paraphrased' in 1680 (2nd edit. 1691); 'The Proverbs of Solomon,' 1683, 8vo; 'The Book of Ecclesiastes and the Song of Solomon,' London, 1685, 8vo. Subsequently Patrick's complete paraphrase and commentary on all the books of the Bible from Genesis to Solomon's Song (inclusive) were published, in 10 vols. 4to, between 1695 and 1710. They were included in the popular 'Critical Commentary on the Old and New Testaments and Apocrypha,' which combined with Patrick's work that of Lowth, Whitby, Arnold, and Lowman, London, 1809, 4to; later editions appeared in 1822, 1841, 1849, 1850, 1853, 1857.

Patrick's chief works, besides those already described, were: 1. 'A Funeral Sermon preached at the Burial of John Smith,' 1652,

4to (bound up with the 'Select Discourses' of that preacher). 2. 'Aqua Genitalis: a Discourse on Baptism,' 1659, 12mo; 1667, 8vo; and 1670, 4to; an amplification of a sermon preached at All Hallows' Church, Lombard Street, on the occasion of the baptism of the infant son 'of a minister in Lombard Street' [see VAUGHAN]. 3. 'Mensa Mystica,' London, 1660, 1673, 4to, a treatise on the Eucharist; like the preceding, written in a more florid style than Patrick afterwards adopted when parochial experience had taught him the value of simplicity. 4. 'The Heart's Ease, or a Remedy against Trouble, written for Lady St. John,' 1660, 1671, 1665, 1699, 1839, and 1849. 5. 'A Brief Account of the New Sect of Latitudinarians, together with some Reflections upon the New Philosophy, by S. P. of Cambridge, in answer to a Friend at Oxford,' 1662 (anon.); assigned to Patrick on both internal and external evidence. 6. 'A Book for Beginners, or a Help to Young Communicants,' 1662, which reached a seventeenth edition in 1713. 7. 'An Exposition of the Ten Commandments and the Lord's Prayer,' 1665, 1668, 1672. 8. 'The Christian Sacrifice,' 1671, which reached a fifth edition 'corrected' in 1679, 1684, 1687, 1841 (ed. the Rev. W. B. Hawkins). 9. 'The Devout Christian instructed how to pray,' 1672; a book of family prayers, with private prayers for all emergencies. 10. 'Advice to a Friend,' 1673; one of the most beautiful of all Patrick's writings, and worthy of being bound up, as it was in Pickering's 'Christian Classics' in 1847, with Jeremy Taylor's 'Contemplations of the State of Man in this Life and that which is to come.' 11. 'The Witnesses of Christianity, or the Certainty of our Faith and Hope' (2 pts.), 1675–7, 1703. 12. 'The Glorious Epiphany,' 1675, 8vo. 13. 'A Treatise of Repentance and Fasting, especially of the Lent Fast,' 1686, Oxford, 1840. 14. 'A Discourse concerning Prayer,' 1686, 1705, 1838, and 1849. 15. 'The Work of the Ministry represented to the Clergy of Ely,' 1698, a new edition by W. B. Hawkins in 1841. 16. 'The Dignity of the Christian Priesthood,' 1704. He also translated Grotius's 'Truth of the Christian Religion,' 1680, and issued in 1681 a corrected version of Simon Gunton's 'History of the Church of Peterborough.'

Besides these works, which were published in his lifetime, there appeared in 1719, twelve years after his death, a volume of attractive 'Poems upon Divine and Moral Subjects, Original and Translations, by Bishop Patrick and other Eminent Hands.' His verse translation of Aquinas 'Upon the Morning we are to receive the Holy Communion,' and his English version of the 'Alleluia! Dulce Carmen' are especially noticeable. In 1863 was published by Harvey Goodwin, for the first time, the 'Appearing of Jesus Christ.' Patrick's 'Autobiography' was first published from his own manuscript at Oxford in 1839.

'Fifteen Sermons upon Contentment and Resignation' appeared, 'with an exact [but not exhaustive] catalogue of his works,' in 1719. His chief works were collected (with the autobiography, but excluding the commentary and 'The Appearing of Jesus Christ') in nine volumes by the Rev. Alexander Taylor in 1858.

Kneller painted a portrait which was engraved both by Vandergucht and R. White. A portrait by an unknown artist is at Lambeth.

[Bishop Patrick's Works, passim, especially his Autobiography; Hunt's Religious Thought in England; Overton's Life in the English Church; Burnet's History of his own Time; Chamberlayne's Memoir of Bishop Patrick in his edition of the Parable of the Pilgrim; private information from Canon Warner, formerly vicar of Gainsborough.] J. H. O.

**PATRINGTON**, STEPHEN (*d.* 1417), bishop of Chichester, was a native of Yorkshire, and was educated at Oxford, where he entered the Carmelite order. The letter which the Oxford friars addressed to John of Gaunt on 18 Feb. 1382 against the followers of Wiclif was sent by Patrington's hands. Patrington was one of the leading opponents of the lollards at Oxford, and, as a bachelor of divinity, signed the decrees of 'the earthquake council' held at London in May 1382. He was one of those whom the chancellor, Robert Rigge [q.v.], was forbidden to molest on account of their activity against the lollards. On 14 Jan. 1389 Patrington, who was now doctor of divinity, had license to read and preach at Lincoln Cathedral in the absence of the chancellor. About this time he appears to have removed from Oxford to London, where he acquired a great reputation as a preacher. In 1399 he was chosen twenty-second provincial of the Carmelites in England at an assembly held at Sutton (*Harl. MS.* 3838, f. 90). According to Lezana, however (ap. VILLIERS DE ST. ETIENNE), he was declared provincial of Lombardy in a general chapter held at Bologna in 1405, and named provincial of England in another chapter in 1411. Patrington enjoyed the favour of Henry IV, and also of Henry V, who shortly after his accession made him his confessor, and on 24 Nov. 1413 granted him an annuity of 69*l.* 10*s.* 6*d.*

In 1414 Patrington was employed as a commissary at Oxford against the lollards. On 1 Feb. 1415 he was provided to the bishopric of St. David's. On 6 April he received a grant of the temporalities of that see during the vacancy (*Fœdera*, ix. 217). On 9 June he was consecrated by Archbishop Chichele at Maidstone, and on 16 June the temporalities were formally restored. Patrington is said to have afterwards gone to the council of Constance. In 1416 he was offered the bishopric of Chichester, but was at first reluctant to leave St. David's because it was poor. However, on 27 Aug. 1416 he received the custody of the temporalities of Chichester (*ib.* ix. 384). On 8 Nov. 1417 he had letters of protection, as he was going abroad with the king (*ib.* ix. 509). On 15 Dec. 1417 he was papally provided to Chichester. But he must have died very shortly after, or even before this, for his will, dated 16 Nov. 1417, was proved on 29 Dec., and application was made for leave to elect a successor at Chichester on 3 Jan. 1418 (*ib.* ix. 537). Bale and Weever, however, give the date of his death as 22 Sept. 1417. He is said to have been buried in the choir of the Whitefriars Church at London. Weever quotes his epitaph, beginning:

Hic frater Stephanus de Patrington requiescit;
Nomine reque fuit norma, corona, pater.

Walsingham describes him as a man learned in the Trivium and Quadrivium (*Hist. Angl.* ii. 300). Thomas Netter [q. v.] owed his early advancement to Patrington.

Patrington is credited with the usual lectures on the sentences, determinations, and quæstiones, besides sermons and a commentary on the Epistle to Titus. He is also said to have written against the lollards, and especially against Nicholas of Hereford [see NICHOLAS]. Other writings ascribed to him are: 1. 'De Sacerdotali functione.' 2. 'Contra statutum parliamenti,' in opposition to the law against the admission of any one under twenty-one years of age to the mendicant orders. 3. 'In Fabulas Æsopi.' 4. Commentarii in Theodulum,' i.e. a gloss on the pastoral poem 'Ecloga' of Theodulus Italus. Dr. Shirley has suggested that Patrington may have been the original author of the narrative which formed the basis of the 'Fasciculi Zizaniorum' [see under NETTER, THOMAS]. With this possible exception, none of his writings appear to have survived.

[Bale's Heliades in Harl. MS. 3838, ff. 33*b*, 90, 193-4; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 581; Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Angl. i. 244, 296; Weever's Funerall Monuments, pp. 437–8; Villiers de St. Etienne's Bibl. Carmel. ii. 764–6; Godwin, De Præsulibus Angliæ, pp. 509, 582, ed. Richardson; Rymer's Fœdera, orig. ed.; Fasciculi Zizaniorum, pp. 289, 295, 316, and Preface, p. lxvii.] C. L. K.

PATTEN, GEORGE (1801–1865), portrait and historical painter, born on 29 June 1801, was son of William Patten, a miniature-painter, whose works were exhibited at the Royal Academy between 1791 and 1844, and who died on 22 Aug. 1843. He received his early training in art from his father, and in 1816 became a student in the Royal Academy, where he first exhibited a miniature of his father in 1819. In 1828 he took the unusual course of again entering the schools of the academy, in order that he might make himself proficient in oil-painting, the practice of which he adopted in 1830, in preference to that of miniature-painting. In 1837 he went to Italy, visiting Rome, Venice, and Parma; and on his return to England he was elected an associate of the Royal Academy. Early in 1840 he went to Germany to paint a portrait of Prince Albert, which was exhibited at the Royal Academy, and engraved by Charles Eden Wagstaff. He was afterwards appointed portrait-painter in ordinary to the Prince Consort, and obtained a considerable amount of patronage in the painting of presentation portraits, many of which appeared in the exhibitions of the Royal Academy. Among these were portraits of Richard Cobden, Lord Francis Egerton (afterwards Earl of Ellesmere), Dr. Hugh M'Neile, the Hon. and Rev. Baptist W. Noel, and Paganini the violinist, exhibited in 1833, and remarkable as having been the only portrait ever painted of the famous musician. He exhibited his own portrait in 1858. He painted also a number of mythological and fancy, and a few scriptural, subjects, among which were 'A Nymph and Child,' exhibited at the Royal Academy in 1831; 'A Bacchante' in 1833; 'Maternal Affection' and 'Cymon and Iphigenia' in 1834; 'Bacchus and Ino' in 1836; 'The Passions,' suggested by the well-known ode by Collins, in 1838; 'Hymen burning the Arrows of Cupid' and 'Eve' in 1842; 'Dante's Descent with Virgil to the Inferno' in 1843; 'The Madness of Hercules' in 1844; 'The Mouse's Petition' in 1845; 'Pandora' in 1846; 'Cupid taught by the Graces' and 'Flora and Zephyrus' in 1848; 'The Destruction of Idolatry in England' in 1849; 'Susannah and the Elders' and 'Bacchus discovering the use of the Grape' in 1850; 'Love defending Beauty from the Assaults of Time' in 1851; 'Apollo and Clytie' in 1857; 'The Bower of Bliss' in 1858; 'The Prophet Isaiah' in 1860; and 'The Youthful Apollo preparing to en-

gage in a musical contest with Paris,' the last of his exhibited works, in 1864. Several of these appeared also at the British Institution, together with 'Returning Home,' in 1833; 'A Bacchante' in 1834; 'Venus caressing her favourite Dove' in 1836; a 'Wood-Nymph' in 1838; 'The Graces' in 1840; and 'Bacchus consoling Ariadne for the Loss of Theseus' in 1841. They were painted with a good deal of spirit, but his later works did not fulfil his earlier promise.

During the latter part of his life Patten resided at Goodrich Cross, Ross, Herefordshire, but before his death he returned to Winchmore Hill, Middlesex, and died suddenly at Hill House, his residence there, on 11 March 1865, aged sixty-three.

[Art Journal, 1865, p. 139; Sandby's Hist. of the Royal Academy of Arts, 1862, ii. 211; Royal Academy Exhibition Catalogues, 1819–1864; British Institution Exhibition Catalogues (Living Artists), 1832–43.] R. E. G.

**PATTEN, JOHN WILSON-, Baron Winmarleigh** (1802–1892). [See Wilson-Patten.]

**PATTEN, ROBERT** (*fl.* 1715), historian of the Jacobite rebellion of 1715, was at one time curate at Penrith, Cumberland, but when the rising of 1715 took place was in a similar capacity at Allendale in Northumberland. He led thence a party of keelmen to join the insurgents, and in crossing Rothbury Common met a number of Scotsmen on their way home to enlist for 'King James,' i.e. the Old Pretender [see James Francis Edward Stuart]. He persuaded them to accompany him. On his arrival at Wooler he was warmly welcomed by General Thomas Forster [q. v.] and James Ratcliffe, third earl of Derwentwater [q. v.], and was forthwith appointed the general's own chaplain. Marching with the expedition to Kelso, where the main body of the Jacobites joined them, he preached to the whole army a sermon, specially intended to inspirit them for their enterprise, from Deut. xxi. 17: 'The right of the first-born is his.'

Besides officiating as chaplain to the Jacobite forces, he took an active part in military service. When the expedition reached Penrith, he was, on account of his local knowledge, engaged in an attempt to intercept William Nicolson [q. v.], bishop of Carlisle, at his residence, Rose Castle. He also acted at times as a spy. At Preston in Lancashire, where on 13 Nov. 1715 the insurgents were defeated, Patten had his horse shot under him. He was there made prisoner, and carried under a close guard to London. In the leisure of his confinement he made up his mind to turn king's evidence, and his offer was accepted (cf. Doran, *Jacobite London*, i. 118). It was in gratitude for his preservation that in the interests of King George he wrote his history. It was published in two editions in the same year (1717), the second being enlarged. It is entitled 'A History of the late Rebellion, with Original Papers and the Characters of the principal Noblemen and Gentlemen concerned in it; by the Rev. Mr. Robert Patten, formerly Chaplain to Mr. Forster.' Two subsequent editions, the third and fourth, were published in 1745. Patten figures as 'Creeping Bob' in Sir Walter Besant's 'Dorothy Forster,' an historical novel of the Northumbrian share in the rising.

[Patten's History as above; Lancashire Memorials, Chetham Soc.] H. P.

**PATTEN, THOMAS** (1714–1790), divine, the son of Thomas Patten, a grocer in Manchester, was born on 5 Oct. 1714, and educated at the Manchester grammar school, afterwards at Brasenose and Corpus Christi Colleges, Oxford. He graduated B.A. in 1733, M.A. on 17 Feb. 1736–7, B.D. in 1744, and D.D. in 1754; was for a time fellow and tutor of Corpus, and afterwards rector of Childrey, Berkshire. He was a friend of Dr. Johnson and of Thomas Wilson of Clitheroe, and was probably the means of the latter dedicating his 'Archæological Dictionary' to Johnson. He was esteemed as 'a sound and excellent churchman,' a poet and scholar, and an exemplary parish priest. He was married at Rostherne, Cheshire, on 25 April 1765, to Elizabeth, daughter of Peter Brooke of Mere, high sheriff of Cheshire, and died at Childrey on 20 Feb. 1790.

He published: 1. 'The Christian Apology: a Sermon preached before the University of Oxford,' 1755. To this a reply was published by the Rev. Ralph Heathcote [q. v.] 2. 'The Sufficiency of the External Evidence farther supported against the Reply of the Rev. Mr. Heathcote,' 1756. 3. 'The Opposition between the Gospel of Jesus Christ and what is called the Religion of Nature: a Sermon,' Oxford, 1759. 4. 'King David vindicated from a late Misrepresentation of his Character,' 1762 [see Porteus, Beilby]. 5. 'A Letter to Lord North concerning Subscription to the XXXIX Articles,' 1773.

[Raines's Vicars of Rochdale (Chetham Soc.), i. 168; Byrom's Remains (Chetham Soc.), ii. 503; Wilson's Miscell. Correspondence (Chetham Soc.), p. 127; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, iv. 162; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Fowler's Corpus Christi College (Oxf. Hist. Soc.), p. 282; Foster's Lancashire Pedigrees; Finlayson's Brooke Genealogy, 1869, p. 18; Brit. Mus. Cat.] C. W. S.

PATTEN or PATTYN, WILLIAM (*d.* 1486), bishop of Winchester. [See WAYNFLETE.]

PATTEN, WILLIAM (*fl.* 1548–1580), historian and teller of the exchequer, was eldest son and third child of Richard Patten (*d.* 1536), a clothworker of London. The father was a son of Richard Patten of Boslow, Derbyshire, and a nephew of William Patten, *alias* Waynflete, bishop of Winchester. William's mother, Grace, daughter of John Baskerville, died before her husband (GREGSON, *Portfolio of Fragments*, pp. 190–4, and *Chetham Soc. Publ.* lxxxviii. 229). Patten apparently accompanied the expedition into Scotland in 1548, and the Earl of Warwick, lieutenant of the host, made him 'one of the judges of the Marshelsey.' William Cecil (afterwards Lord Burghley) [q.v.] went with him, and both, according to Patten, took notes day by day. Patten prepared an account of the expedition for publication, and obtained some aid from Cecil's diary. The work appeared as 'The Expedicion into Scotland of the most woorthely fortunate Prince Edward, Duke of Somerset, uncle unto our most noble Sovereign Lord ye kinges maiestie, Edward the VI, goovernour of hys hyghnes persone, and protectour of hys graces realmes, dominions, and subjects: made in the first yere of his maiesties most prosperous reign, and set out by way of diarie by W. Patten, Londoner. Imprinted in London the last day of June, in the 2nd year of the reign of Edward VI.' It was reprinted in Dalzell's 'Fragments of Scottish History,' Edinburgh, 1798, and in Arber's 'English Garner,' iii. 51–155, 1880. Patten's narrative was largely quoted by Holinshed, and was followed in Sir John Hayward's 'Life and Reign of Edward VI' (see *Lit. Remains of Edward VI*, Roxburghe Club, pp. 215 seq.; STRYPE, *Eccl. Mem.* II. ii. 180).

In 1550 'William Patten, Esq.' was granted by Thomas Penny, prebendary of St. Paul's, the lease of the manor of Stoke Newington, and in 1565 the lease was renewed for ninety-nine years, to commence from Michaelmas, 1576, at 19*l.* per annum. This property Patten assigned about 1571 to John Dudley (see WILLIAM ROBINSON, *Stoke Newington*, p. 28; and ELLIS, *Campagna of London*, p. 109). While lord of the manor of Stoke Newington Patten repaired the parish church, which was in a ruinous state (1563) (*ib.* p. 199). Patten subsequently became one of the tellers of the receipt of the queen's exchequer at Westminster, receiver-general of her revenues in the county of York, custumer of London outward, and a justice of peace for Middlesex (*State Papers*, Dom. Eliz. xi. 101, 3 June 1563). On 19 Nov. 1580 (*ib.* cxliv. 32) he wrote to inform Walsingham as to the farming of the royal mines. No later mention of him is known (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 4th Rep. p. 215; *Hatfield Calendar*, ii. 108).

By his wife Anne, a daughter of one of the heiresses of Richard Johnson of Boston, Lincolnshire, Patten had seven children. An engraving of Patten, by J. Mills, is in Robinson's 'Stoke Newington,' p. 28.

A contemporary named Patten was apparently rector of Newington, on William Patten's presentation (see *State Papers*, Dom. Eliz. Addenda, xi. 46), and was doubtless William's nephew. He wrote anonymously 'The Calendars of Scripture, whearin the Hebru, Chaldean, Arabian, Phenician, Syrian, Persian, Greek, and Latin names of nations, contreys, men, weemen, idols, cities, hils, rivers, and of other places in the holly byble mentioned by order of letters, is set and turned into oour English toung,' 1575. Tanner wrongly ascribes this work to the elder Patten. It was compiled from works by Francis Ximenes and John Arquery of Bordeaux (cf. printer's preface, dated 19 April 1575).

[Authorities quoted; Strype's Annals, II. i. 744, Eccl. Mem. II. ii. 280; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib.; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, i. 525; West's Catalogue, p. 203; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anonym. and Pseudon. Lit. i. 301; information from the Rev. Prebendary Shelford, rector of Stoke Newington.] W. A. S.

PATTENSON, MATTHEW (*fl.* 1623), catholic controversialist, was a medical practitioner in the reign of James I, and was appointed physician in ordinary to Charles I. He wrote 'The Image of Bothe Churches, Hiervsalem and Babel, Vnitie and Confusion, Obedienc [sic] and Sedition. By P. D. M.,' Tournay (Adrian Quinque), 1623, 8vo, pp. 461; London, 1653, 12mo, pp. 643. Dedicated to Charles, prince of Wales. Gee, in his 'Foot out of the Snare,' 1624, mentions the work as by 'M. Pateson, now in London, a bitter and seditious book.' The authorship is also ascribed to Pattenson in the preface to Foulis's 'History of the Romish Treasons and Usurpations,' 1671; and by Wood, who states that the contents of the work were 'mostly collected from the answers of Anti-Cotton, and John Brierley, Priest' (*Athenæ Oxon.* ed. Bliss, iv. 139). Charles Butler highly commends the work, remarking that 'in a short compass it comprises much useful information, and many excellent observations, arranged methodi-

cally, in a style always perspicuous, and generally elegant' (*Hist. Memoirs of the English Catholics*, 3rd edit. iv. 453).

[Dodd's Church Hist. ii. 427; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. iii. 407, 469, 3rd ser. ix. 38.] T. C.

PATTERSON. [See also PATERSON.]

PATTERSON, JOHN BROWN (1804–1835), divine, born at Alnwick, Northumberland, on 29 Jan. 1804, was son of Robert Patterson of Croft House, Alnwick, who died while John was a child. His education devolved therefore upon his mother, a daughter of John Brown of Haddington (1722–1787) [q. v.], editor of the 'Self-Interpreting Bible.' Mrs. Patterson was with her children in Edinburgh from 1810 to 1814, and her son attended a classical academy there. From 1815 to 1818 they lived in Haddington, Patterson making rapid progress in scholarship. Then they returned to Edinburgh, and for a year he was at the high school, under James Pillans [q. v.], achieving singular distinction.

From 1820 to 1824 Patterson studied in the arts classes of Edinburgh University, excelling both in the class-rooms and the debating society, and displaying an unusual facility in composing Greek and Latin hexameters, and creditable English verse. Completing at Edinburgh his course for the ministry of the church of Scotland, he secured in 1827 the prize of one hundred guineas offered by the commissioners for visiting the universities and colleges of Scotland for an essay 'On the National Character of the Athenians and the Causes of those Peculiarities by which it was distinguished.' This essay, which is marked by learning and considerable literary merit, was published in 1828.

In the spring of that year Patterson became tutor to Lord Cranstoun, whom he accompanied to Oxford. His diary and letters of this time exhibit an earnestness and wisdom remarkable in so young a man. At the Christmas recess of 1828–9 he was licensed to preach by the presbytery of Kirkcudbright; in 1829 he was presented to the vacant parish of Falkirk, and he was ordained to his charge by the presbytery of Linlithgow on 26 Feb. 1830. Here he proved himself an able, faithful, and zealous pastor. He died of overwork at his mother's house in Edinburgh on 29 June 1835, and was buried in the vestibule of Falkirk parish church. He was survived by his widow—a daughter of George Atkin of Morpeth, Northumberland—and an infant son.

Contributions which Patterson made to periodicals while he was between the ages of sixteen and twenty-four displayed true literary instinct and vigour of intellect. In 1824–5 he provided classical translations for Williams's 'Views in Greece;' he contributed the memoir of Dr. John Brown to a Glasgow edition of the 'Self-Interpreting Bible;' he edited 'Beauties of Jeremy Taylor,' with introductory essay, in 1835, and he furnished notes to the 'Self-Interpreting Bible' of 1836. His main literary achievement is the university prize essay on the Athenians, which was reissued, with a memoir, in 1860. Patterson's discourses, with prefatory biography, were published in two volumes in 1837. A volume of 'Lectures on St. John xiv.–xvi.' appeared in 1840, 2nd edit. 1859.

[Memoirs as in text; information from Patterson's son, Mr. R. J. B. Patterson, Langside, Glasgow.] T. B.

PATTERSON, ROBERT (1802–1872), naturalist, eldest son of Robert Patterson, a Belfast merchant, by Catharine, daughter of David Jonathan Clarke, K.C., of Dublin and Portarlington, and widow of a Mr. Keine of Dublin, was born in Belfast on 18 April 1802. He received his education there chiefly at the academy and at the Royal Academical Institution. In 1818 he was apprenticed to his father's business. His leisure he devoted to the study of natural history, and especially to the investigation of the fauna and flora of the country around Belfast. In 1821 he joined seven other gentlemen in founding the 'Natural History Society of Belfast,' which, under the name of 'The Belfast Natural History and Philosophical Society,' still pursues a vigorous career. In connection with this society Patterson delivered numerous lectures, some of which were published. He was its president for many years, and took a foremost part in the erection of its museum in 1830–1. His connection with it for half a century was commemorated in 1871 by the presentation to him of an illuminated address in recognition of his labours 'in popularising the general study of natural history and in advancing it to its rightful place as a recognised branch of school education.'

His first work, 'Letters on the Insects mentioned by Shakespere,' the substance of which had been given in a series of lectures before the Belfast Natural History Society, appeared in 1838. In 1846 he published his 'Zoology for Schools, first part,' which was followed in 1848 by the second part, and later on by two small volumes, 'First Steps to Zoology: part i. Invertebrate Animals; part ii. Vertebrate Animals.' In 1853 appeared his large coloured 'Zoological Dia-

grams.' All these works had a very wide circulation, and gave a valuable stimulus to the study of zoology in schools. Patterson was also a frequent contributor to several scientific journals. In the 'Zoologist' he in 1843 published a dissertation on 'The Reptiles mentioned by Shakespere.' He wrote also for the 'Magazine of Natural History,' and contributed papers to the Royal Irish Academy, several of which are preserved in its 'Transactions.'

Patterson was one of the earliest and most zealous members of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, and in 1839 was appointed one of the secretaries of the section of natural history, an office which he held till 1844. When the association met in Belfast in 1852, he acted as local treasurer. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society and of several other learned bodies.

In Belfast, where he enjoyed universal respect, Patterson meanwhile took an active part in the working of various local institutions. He was one of the founders of the 'Ulster Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals,' and a specially zealous promoter of the interests of the 'Belfast Society for Promoting Knowledge,' of the Royal Botanic Gardens, and of his old school, the Royal Academical Institution. For twelve years, 1858–70, he was one of the Belfast harbour commissioners. In 1865 he retired from business. He died on 14 Feb. 1872 at his residence, College Square, Belfast. He was buried in the city cemetery, where a handsome granite monument marks his grave. In the first presbyterian (unitarian) church, of which he was an attached member, there is also a mural tablet erected to his memory by his sons.

Patterson married, in 1833, Mary Elizabeth, youngest daughter of William Hugh Ferrar, stipendiary magistrate of Belfast. By her he had eleven children, six daughters and five sons. The latter all engaged in commerce in Belfast. An excellent work by one of them, Mr. Robert Lloyd Patterson, on 'The Birds, Fishes, and Cetacea of Belfast Lough,' is well known. Another, Mr. W. H. Patterson, M.R.I.A., compiled a 'Glossary of the Provincialisms of the Counties of Antrim and Down,' which was published by the English Dialect Society.

[Information supplied by Mr. Richard Patterson, J.P., and Mr. R. L. Patterson, J.P., sons of the subject of this notice; obituary notice in the Northern Whig of 15 Feb. 1872; personal knowledge.] T. H.

**PATTERSON, ROBERT HOGARTH** (1821–1886), journalist and miscellaneous writer, was born in Edinburgh in December 1821, and educated for a civil engineer at the high school of that city. When quite young he entered the printing-office of his cousin, John Ballantyne, as a press corrector. In 1852 he left the printing business to become editor of the 'Edinburgh Advertiser.' In 1858 he removed to London as editor—afterwards proprietor—of the 'Press,' and in 1865 he was appointed editor of the 'Globe' newspaper; but he resigned the post in 1869 to join the board of referees appointed by parliament to investigate and report upon the best means of purification of coal-gas in London. Chemistry had always been one of his favourite studies, and his scientific knowledge enabled him to take a leading part in the proceedings of the referees, which resulted in the discovery of the process still in use for the elimination of sulphur and ammonia impurities from gas.

In 1872 he proceeded to Glasgow as editor of the 'Glasgow News,' but his health broke down and he returned to London in 1874, where he resumed his literary work, contributing articles on politics, finance, science, and history to various magazines. In early life he contributed articles to 'Chambers's Edinburgh Journal,' and latterly he wrote for the 'Quarterly,' 'Blackwood,' 'Bentley,' and the 'Dublin University Magazine.'

He had gained a reputation as a financial expert, and was consulted by both the Bank of England and the Bank of France on financial and currency questions, and was elected a fellow, and afterwards a member of council, of the Statistical Society. He died at Hammersmith on 13 Dec. 1886. He had married, in 1848, Georgina, daughter of Captain Thomson of Perth.

Patterson was the author of: 1. 'The New Revolution; or the Napoleonic Policy in Europe,' Edinburgh and London, 1860 (a work which attracted considerable attention, owing to the singular fulfilment, soon after publication, of several of its predictions). 2. 'Essays in History and Art,' Edinburgh, 1862 (reprinted from 'Blackwood's Magazine'). 3. 'The Economy of Capital; or Gold and Trade,' Edinburgh, 1865. 4. 'The Science of Finance,' Edinburgh, 1868. 5. 'Railway Finance,' Edinburgh, 1868. 6. 'The State, the Poor, and the Country, including Suggestions on the Irish Question,' Edinburgh, 1870. 7. 'Gas and Lighting' (British Manufacturing Industries Series), London, 1876. 8. 'The New Golden Age and the Influence of the Precious Metals upon the World,' 2 vols., Edinburgh, 1882. He was also the author of the following pamphlets: 'Indian Politics: two essays on Self-Government in India and the Indian Land Question,' 2 pts.

1864, 8vo; 'Municipal Finance; the Gas and Water Supply of London,' 1867, 8vo; 'Gas Purification in London, including a Complete Solution of the Sulphur Question,' Edinburgh, 1873, 2nd edit. 1874; 'Robespierre: a Lyrical Drama,' 1877, 8vo; and 'Light Theories: Suggestions for a New System of Cosmical Science.'

[Irving's Eminent Scotsmen; obituary notices in the Times and the Athenæum, December 1886; information supplied by the family.] G. S–H.

**PATTERSON, WILLIAM** (1755–1810), traveller. [See PATERSON.]

**PATTESON, SIR JOHN** (1790–1861), judge, second son of the Rev. Henry Patteson of Drinkstone, Suffolk, by his wife, Sophia, daughter of Richard Ayton Lee, a London banker, was born at Coney Weston, Suffolk, on 11 Feb. 1790. He was at first educated at a school kept by his father's curate, a Mr. Merest, but afterwards went to Eton. His name first appears in the school lists in 1802, and in 1808 he was elected on the foundation. Dr. Sumner, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, was his tutor. At Eton he proved himself not merely a good scholar, but the best swimmer and one of the best scullers and cricketers in the school. In 1809 he went to Cambridge with a scholarship at King's, which, under the then existing privileges of king's scholars, entitled him to graduate without examination. He accordingly graduated B.A. in 1813, and M.A. in 1816. His university career was, however, distinguished. When the Davies university scholarship for classics was established, he was, in 1810, the first to win it, and in 1812 he was elected a fellow of his college. He hesitated for a short time between holy orders, law, and medicine; but in 1813 he came to London and entered at the Middle Temple. In 1815 he went on the midland circuit as marshal to Mr. Justice Chambre, read in the chambers of Godfrey Sykes, an eminent pleader, and of Joseph Littledale [q. v.], afterwards a judge. In 1821 he began practice on his own account as a special pleader, and was called to the bar in the same year. He joined the northern circuit, and there, even against competitors such as Alderson and Parke, came to the front by dint of his skill in pleading. He was soon engaged in assisting Littledale in his work as counsel to the treasury. His progress was rapid. His best argument is said to have been in Rennell v. the Bishop of Lincoln (reported in 7 Barnewell and Cresswell, p. 113). He was one of the legal commissioners on the reform of the Welsh judicature, whose report led to the act of 1830, by which three additional judges were appointed—one in the king's bench, one in the common pleas, and one in the exchequer; and, though he had never been a king's counsel, Lord Lyndhurst, in November, appointed him to the new judgeship in the court of king's bench, and he was knighted. For upwards of twenty years he was one of the strongest, most practical, and most learned judges in that court. He had a vast memory and erudition, a lucid mind, gifts of clear expression and an unfailing courtesy. 'Take him altogether,' says Sir Joseph Arnould, he was 'one of the very best and ablest judges that ever sat in Westminster Hall' (*Life of Lord Denman*, i. 419). Deafness at length compelled him to tender his resignation at the end of January 1852. On 2 Feb. 1852 he was sworn of the privy council, and for some years was able to serve as a member of its judicial committee. He also acted as a commissioner to examine into the state of the city of London in 1853, was frequently chosen arbitrator in government questions—such as disputes between the crown and duchy of Cornwall, and between the Post Office and the Great Western Railway—and his award terminated a long-standing rating dispute between the university and the town of Cambridge. Failing health at last put an end to all judicial work, and he died on 28 June 1861 at Feniton Court, Honiton, Devonshire, a seat which he had purchased in 1841.

Patteson was twice married: first, on 23 Feb. 1818, to his cousin Elizabeth, daughter of George Lee of Dickleburgh, Norfolk, by whom he had one daughter; and after her death on 3 April 1820, he married, on 22 April 1824, Frances Duke, daughter of Captain James Coleridge of Ottery St. Mary, Devonshire, and sister of Sir John Taylor Coleridge [q. v.], who died on 27 Nov. 1842. One of his sons by her was John Coleridge Patteson [q. v.], bishop of Melanesia.

Patteson edited, in 1824, Serjeant Williams's 'Notes on Saunders's Reports,' and the comments which he added are of very high authority.

[Law Magazine, xii. 197; Law Times, xxxvi. 434, 446; Yonge's Life of J. C. Patteson; Foss's Judges of England.] J. A. H.

**PATTESON, JOHN COLERIDGE** (1827–1871), first missionary bishop in Melanesia, was elder son of Sir John Patteson [q. v.] the judge, by his second wife, Frances Duke Coleridge. He was brought up at Feniton Court, where his family resided, so as to be near the home of his mother's relatives at Ottery St. Mary. After three years at the grammar school at Ottery,

Patteson was placed in 1838 at Eton, under his uncle, the Rev. E. Coleridge, son-in-law of Dr. Keate, the former headmaster. At Eton, where Patteson remained till 1845, he was not in the first rank as a scholar, but he had great facility in writing Latin verses, and was 'sent up' twenty-five times. He was captain of the cricket eleven, a good speaker in the debating society, and showed much strength of character. From 1845 to 1848 he was a commoner of Balliol College, Oxford, under Dr. Richard Jenkyns [q. v.] He was not interested in academic studies, and only obtained a second class; but he was brought into contact with Benjamin Jowett, afterwards master of Balliol, Professor Max Müller, John Campbell Shairp [q. v.], Edwin Palmer, afterwards archdeacon of Oxford, James Riddell [q. v.], the Rev. John James Hornby, afterwards provost of Eton, and Mr. Charles Savile Roundell, who became his lifelong friends. After taking his degree in October 1849 he travelled in Switzerland and Italy, learned German at Dresden, and devoted himself to Hebrew and Arabic. His mind and character largely developed; his intellectual and artistic tastes, which had hitherto been languid, were stimulated into activity, and his remarkable gift for languages declared itself. Returning to Oxford in 1852, he became fellow of Merton, spent the year 1852–3 in the college, where the settlement of a scheme of reform, consequent on the report of the university commission, was greatly aided by his wisdom and liberal temper. He was ordained in September 1853 to the curacy of Alphington, a part of Ottery St. Mary, of which he was practically in sole charge. His influence was beginning to be strongly felt, when the visit of George Augustus Selwyn [q. v.], bishop of New Zealand, in the summer of 1854, determined his choice of a missionary career. He left England with the bishop in March 1855, and landed at Auckland in May.

On Ascension day 1856 Patteson's first voyage to Melanesia began. The scheme of the mission, which had already been begun by Bishop Selwyn, was to take boys, with their parents' consent, from the islands, to instruct them during the summer at the mission school in New Zealand, and to bring them back the next year to their homes. The school was at first at St. John's, some six miles from Auckland; then at Kohimarima, on an inlet of the harbour; and later at Norfolk Island. This island had the advantage of a warmer climate, of proximity to the Melanesian islands, and of being the home of the Pitcairners, who, as descended from the mutineers of the Bounty and their Tahitian wives, had special qualifications for mission-work. Patteson devoted himself to the Melanesian boys, teaching them at once the rudiments of knowledge, of civilisation, and of religion, which they imparted to their families and friends on their return. He refused to regard the natives as an inferior race, and he treated his classes as though they were formed of Eton boys. His Melanesian pupils appreciated his attitude, and his remarkable linguistic powers greatly aided him. He had studied the Maori language on his voyage out, and, although in Melanesia hardly any two islands have the same language, his special talent and the quickness of the boys overcame the difficulty. He selected the language of the island of Mota as most typical in point of idiom, and employed it in the school.

In 1861 he was consecrated bishop, and took the sole direction of the mission, fixing his residence at Mota. The mission was supported partly from his own funds—he retained his fellowship at Merton to the end, and he made over to the mission the money left him by his father in 1861—partly by the Eton Melanesian Society, and partly by an association formed in Australia, which he visited from time to time. The members of the mission received no salaries, their wants being provided for by the mission funds. His influence grew rapidly. He was joined in 1863 by Mr. Codrington, fellow of Wadham College, Oxford; workers from St. Augustine's, Canterbury, and from among the Pitcairners, placed themselves under him; and some of his own pupils became missionaries. The first of these who was ordained was George Sarawia, who had been for some time in charge of the mission at Mota. Patteson worked incessantly from 5.30 A.M. to 10 P.M., teaching, organising, and conducting divine worship. One moment would find him building a house, another navigating his ship, or swimming or cooking, or teaching his scholars to tend sheep or pigs, or cutting out garments for either sex, or arranging a marriage and preparing for its celebration, or leading the cheer for the bride and bridegroom. He deprecated all haste in making conversions. At the same time his labours as a linguist were not neglected. He soon spoke readily no less than twenty-three languages. By degrees the swarm of Melanesian dialects broke up into groups and families, and proved to be varying forms of one language. He used the most patient endeavours to fix the meaning of words, and came to the conviction that the simplicity of structure in the languages was compensated by strict rules, which enabled them to express all modifica-

tions of time and place—a conviction which he held also as to Hebrew, to the study of which he often reverted. He made and printed general vocabularies in three of the languages, and lists of interrogatives, prepositions, and conjunctions in eleven; and translated into the Mota tongue, which he regarded as most typical, the third and fourth gospels and other parts of scripture. He stopped, however, deliberately short in the scientific part of the work, mainly because his time was absorbed by the mission. He turned resolutely to the use of the languages for the purpose of teaching. 'These languages,' he said, 'are very poor in words belonging to civilised, literary, and religious life, but exceedingly rich in all that pertains to the needs and habits of men circumstanced as they are. I draw this inference: Don't be in a hurry to translate, and don't attempt to use words as (assumed) equivalents of abstract ideas. Don't devise modes of expression unknown to the language as at present in use. They can't understand, and therefore don't use words to express definitions.' Under Patteson's rule the character of the natives was completely transformed. Their savagery disappeared, there was no more war; and, after twenty years, out of a population of eight hundred in the chief island, Mota, all but forty were baptised. To this result Patteson's pupil, George Sarawia, the first Melanesian clergyman, largely contributed.

His interest in all that was going on at home was vividly maintained. He wrote regularly to his father while he lived, and to his sisters; he read largely; he kept up communication with many of his old friends; he corresponded with Professor Max Müller as to the Melanesian languages. He embraced enthusiastically Bishop Selwyn's plan of church government, under which every office-holder signed a pledge that he would resign his office when called upon to do so by the church synod or a court appointed by it; and believed that by this instrument the ecclesiastical body could, not only in the colonies, but in England itself, act beneficially in independence of the national organisation. In theological matters his sympathies were enlarged by his experience. Though sympathising with Pusey and Keble, and owing much to the latter, he criticised their tendencies and distinctly dissented from their views on the Lord's Supper.

His life was often in danger, for though the natives respected him they were changeable and suspicious and without restraint. At Santa Cruz in 1864 he was attacked as he left the shore, and though he escaped, two of his companions, Edwin Nobbs and Fisher Young, were struck by the poisoned arrows, and died of tetanus. But these dangers were greatly increased by the abuses of the labour traffic in the Pacific. The planters in Fiji and Queensland required native labourers, and many of the islanders were willing to go to the plantations for a few years; but unscrupulous traders lured away the islanders under false pretences, practically enslaved them, and at times used the bishop's name to attract victims. The bishop had never condemned the traffic, believing that it might be carried on honestly and with benefit to all parties; but he desired that it should be subjected, as it was after his death, to regulation by the British government. He found that many of the islands were depopulated by this new slave trade, and he had joined in bringing some notorious offenders to justice.

He visited the island of Nukapu on 16 Sept. 1871, not knowing that an outrage had been committed on its inhabitants by some Englishmen a few months before. He had once before been there, and he landed alone and unarmed. His friends, who were waiting for him in the ship's boat at the reef outside the island, found themselves attacked by a flight of arrows, which wounded two of them; and soon after a canoe floated out from the shore, in which was the dead body of the bishop, with a frond of palm tied in five knots. This was known to imply that he had been killed in revenge for five of the inhabitants. One of his companions, the Rev. Joseph Atkin, died of tetanus a few days afterwards. The members of the mission prayed that there should be no retaliation; but, unhappily, Captain Markham of the Rosario having gone to Nukapu to make inquiries, the natives, believing that he had come to avenge the bishop, fired on him, and drew upon themselves the penalty of this act. The death of the bishop, however, roused the Christian conscience in England. Its mention in the queen's speech at the opening of parliament led to the regulation of the labour traffic; the mission was extended, and gained a new ground of appeal to the hearts of the Melanesians; and his successor, Bishop John Selwyn, was able to show the men of Nukapu that they had, through a fatal error, slain their best friend. A cross erected by him on the spot where Patteson fell attests the martyrdom of the missionary bishop and the reconciling power of his death.

[Life by Miss Charlotte M. Yonge, 2 vols. 1873, new edit. 1878; Life by Miss Frances Awdry under the title 'The Story of a Fellow Soldier,' 1875; Men of the Reign; Heaton's

Australian Dates and Men of the Time; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; personal reminiscences.] W. H. F.

PATTI, CARLOTTA (1835–1889), vocalist, born at Florence on 30 Oct. 1835, was the daughter of a singer named Salvator Patti, a native of Catania (*d.* 1869), and of his wife, Catherine Chiesa, a Roman, whose first husband was Signor Barilli. Eight years senior to her more famous sister, Mme. Adelina Patti (*b.* 1843), Carlotta, after being grounded in the rudiments of music by her mother, began its serious study by learning the pianoforte under Heinrich Herz (1806–1888). But finding herself the possessor of a voice of more than ordinary capacity, she renounced the pianoforte in order to devote herself entirely to singing.

After the removal of her family to the United States she made her first appearance in 1861 as a concert singer at the Academy of Music in New York, with pronounced success; and in the following year she joined, with her brother Carlo (1842–1873), a violinist, Max Strakosch's concert party, then touring in North America. Coming next to England, Carlotta made her début in this country on 16 April 1863 at a concert at Covent Garden Theatre, when she attracted considerable attention; and on 9 May she created almost a furore at the Crystal Palace. After taking part in some fifty concerts, as well as singing before the court, Carlotta Patti spent a large part of the next six years in various continental tours, singing at Vienna in 1865, and again in 1867 at the Carl Theatre. During one of these tours a wealthy Wallachian noble amateur once sent a coach-and-four with four men to meet the diva; and when she complimented him on the good taste of his equipage, he replied, 'If it please you, madame, pray keep it, coach and men, in remembrance of the occasion.' The offer was declined.

In 1869 Mlle. Patti returned to America, and became the leading attraction of Strakosch's company, gaining especial praise for her singing of the part of the Queen of the Night in 'Die Zauberflöte.' In the spring of 1870 she was in South America, where, at Buenos Ayres, she made almost her only appearance on the stage, singing in Rossini's 'Barber' and in 'Don Pasquale.' A concert given later in the same country for the benefit of the sufferers in the Franco-Prussian war realised a profit of sixty thousand francs. In 1872 she was singing with Mario in the United States, but from time to time she reappeared in Europe, and sang at the London Philharmonic and other concerts.

On 3 Sept. 1879 Mlle. Patti married M. Ernest de Munck, solo violoncellist to the Grand Duke of Saxe-Weimar; and from that date to her death, which took place from cancer, at her house in the Rue Pierre-Charron at Paris, on 27 June 1889, she retired from public life, though much of her time was devoted to teaching.

Mlle. Patti possessed a voice of quite abnormal compass, which is said to have extended to G in altissimo, but, though of great brilliancy, it was deficient in sympathy. Her style and execution were excellent and finished, and it was almost entirely due to lameness, the result of an accident, that she never attempted to take a more prominent place among operatic singers.

[The Times and other daily papers, 29 June 1889; the Musical World from 1869 to 1889, which closely followed in its reports from America and the Continent the performances of Mlle. Patti; Hanslick's Aus dem Concertsaal, Vienna, 1870, pp. 356, 441; Grove's Dict. of Music; information kindly supplied by M. E. de Munck.] R. H. L.

PATTINSON, HUGH LEE (1796–1858), metallurgical chemist, born on 25 Dec. 1796, at Alston, Cumberland, was the son of Thomas Pattinson, a retail trader of that town, and his wife Margaret Lee. Both his parents were members of the Society of Friends. Hugh was educated at small private schools, but from an early age assisted his father, who died on 19 May 1812. He succeeded in acquiring a knowledge of electricity, and when only seventeen constructed some electrical apparatus; he also studied chemistry, especially in connection with metallurgy.

About 1821 he became clerk and assistant to Anthony Clapham, a soap-boiler in Newcastle. In 1825 he obtained the post of assay-master to the lords of the manor at Alston (the Greenwich Hospital Commissioners), and returned to his native place. In January 1829 Pattinson first discovered an easy and economic method of separating the silver from lead-ore, but owing to want of funds was not then able to complete his researches. In 1831 he was appointed manager to the lead works of Mr. Wentworth Beaumont; here, after further experiments, he perfected his process for desilverising lead, and finally patented it in 1833. The following year he resigned his post of manager, and, in partnership with John Lee and George Burnett, established chemical works at Felling and (afterwards) at Washington, near Gateshead.

Pattinson's process for the desilverisation of lead was a most valuable discovery, and permitted of the successful working of previously neglected lead-mines. Before this

invention it had always been thought that cupellation, the method of directly extracting silver from lead, could not be profitably conducted in the case of lead containing less than eight ounces of silver in the ton; but by his process silver can profitably be extracted from lead when present only in the proportion of two or three ounces to the ton of lead. Pattinson's process has led to the invention of the German verb 'pattinsoniren,' and French substantive 'pattinsonage' (for a full description of the process, with diagrams, see Percy's 'Metallurgy,' Lead, pp. 121–44). Almost equally important were two others of his discoveries: (1) a simple method for obtaining white lead by a process (patented 1841) which gave rise to the formation of the then new compound, oxychloride of lead; and (2) a new process (patented 1841) for manufacturing 'magnesia alba.' Pattinson also first announced the discovery, from observations which had been made at a neighbouring colliery in 1840, that steam issuing from an orifice becomes electrical, a phenomenon subsequently turned to account by Mr. (afterwards Lord) Armstrong in his hydro-electrical machine.

Pattinson had joined in 1822 the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle. He was vice-president of the chemical section of the British Association in 1838, a fellow of the Geological Society and of the Royal Astronomical Society, and was elected a fellow of the Royal Society in June 1852.

Pattinson visited America in 1839–40 to investigate a proffered mining speculation, which, however, turned out worthless, and he, with his party, had to decamp by night to escape the threatened violence of the disappointed proprietors. In 1858 he retired from business, and, in order to master astronomy, devoted himself to the study of mathematics and physics. The 7½-inch equatorial telescope which he erected at his residence, Scot's House, near Gateshead, was used by Piazzi Smyth. Pattinson died at Scot's House on 11 Nov. 1858.

He was the author of eight papers on lead-mining and electrical phenomena that appeared in the 'Philosophical Magazine,' the 'Transactions of the Northumberland Natural History Society,' and in the 'Reports of the British Association.'

On 25 Dec. 1815 he married Phœbe, daughter of John Walton of 'The Nest,' Alston, having two days before been baptised into the church of England at the Angel Inn, when he took the additional christian name of Lee in honour of his mother.

[Percy's Metallurgy, 'Lead,' pp. 121–44; Lonsdale's Worthies of Cumberland, 1873, pp. 273–320, with portrait; information kindly supplied by his daughter, Mrs. Newall; English Cyclopædia; Roy. Soc. Cat.] B. B. W.

**PATTISON**, DOROTHY WYNDLOW, known as SISTER DORA (1832–1878), philanthropist, was tenth and youngest daughter of Mark James Pattison, rector of Hauckswell, near Richmond, Yorkshire, who died on 30 Dec. 1865. Mark Pattison [q. v.] was her brother. Born at Hauckswell on 16 Jan. 1832, she resided with her parents till her twenty-ninth year, when, with philanthropic aims, she became village schoolmistress in the parish of Little Woolston, near Bletchley, Buckinghamshire. There she remained for three years, till 1864. In the autumn of 1864 she became, in opposition to her father's wish, a member of the sisterhood of the Good Samaritan at Coatham, near Redcar, Yorkshire, and adopted the name of Sister Dora. In accordance with the rules of the order, she became a cook in the kitchen. In the early part of 1865 she was sent to Walsall to help in nursing at a small cottage hospital which had been established by the sisterhood there. In December 1865 the mother superior at Coatham cruelly refused her permission to attend her father's deathbed. She now set to work to become a good surgical nurse, and she was soon exceptionally skilled in the treatment of wounds and fractures. The patients were chiefly men and boys disabled by coal-pit accidents, or wounded by machinery in workshops. In 1867 a new hospital was built, of which she had sole charge. Her power of work was very great; her naturally exuberant spirits never deserted her, and a deep sense of religion completely controlled her conduct. Her courage was as notable as her enthusiasm. She did not scruple to attend the most virulent cases of smallpox, and regularly attended the post-mortem examinations. In this way she acquired an accurate knowledge of anatomy, and could perform minor operations with dexterity. For a time she studied at the Birmingham Ophthalmic Hospital. She also trained lady nurses at Walsall. Grateful for her many services to them, the men of the South Staffordshire railway line in 1871 presented her with a carriage and a pony. During 1874 Sister Dora left the community of the Good Samaritan, and in February 1877 she resigned her connection with the cottage hospital of the sisterhood in order to take charge of the Municipal Epidemic Hospital in Walsall. The cases were chiefly smallpox. Full as her hands were, she found time to take part in missions to the unfortunate, and was never weary of trying to improve the con-

duct of her poor neighbours. In the winter of 1876 she was attacked with cancer, but continued at the hospital until it was temporarily closed on 21 June 1878. On her deathbed Monsignor Capel visited her and vainly attempted to persuade her to be baptised into the church of Rome. She died at Walsall on 24 Dec. 1878, and was buried on 28 Dec.

In remembrance of, and in gratitude for, her self-sacrifice, her portrait was placed in the board-room of the hospital, a fund was raised for sending patients to convalescent hospitals (an object which she had commenced collecting for), a memorial window was placed in the parish church, and her statue, by Williamson, was unveiled at Walsall on 11 Oct. 1886.

[Margaret Lonsdale's Sister Dora, 1880 (with portrait), People's Edition, 1887 (with portrait and view of monument); Ridsdale's Sister Dora, 1880; Sister Dora and her Statue, Walsall, 1886 (with portrait and views of tombstone and monument); Memoirs of Mark Pattison, 1885, p. 3, &c.] G. C. B.

PATTISON, GRANVILLE SHARP (1791–1851), anatomist, born in 1791, youngest son of John Pattison of Kelvin Grove, Glasgow, was admitted a member of the faculty of physicians and surgeons of Glasgow in 1813. He acted in 1818 as assistant to Allan Burns, the lecturer on anatomy, physiology, and surgery at the Andersonian Institute in that city, but he only held the office for a year, and was succeeded by Dr. William Mackenzie [q. v.] He proceeded to Philadelphia in 1818, and there lectured privately on anatomy. In 1820 he was appointed to the chair of anatomy, physiology, and surgery in the university of Maryland in Baltimore, a post he filled for five years and resigned on the ground of ill-health. During this period he edited the second edition of Burns's 'Observations on the Surgical Anatomy of the Head and Neck,' which was published in 1823. Pattison returned to England in July 1827. He was appointed, and for a short time occupied the important position of, professor of anatomy at the university of London (now University College), acting at the same time as surgeon to the University Dispensary, which preceded the foundation of the North London Hospital. These posts he was compelled to relinquish in 1831, and in the same year he became professor of anatomy in the Jeafferson Medical College, Philadelphia, where he received the degree of doctor of medicine. He was appointed professor of anatomy in the university of New York on the reorganisation of its medical department in 1840, a post he retained till his death on 12 Nov. 1851. He was author of 'Experimental Observations on the Operation of Lithotomy,' Philadelphia, 1820; and of much controversial material of ephemeral interest. He edited in 1820 the 'American Recorder,' and the 'Register and Library of Medical and Chirurgical Science,' Washington, 1833–6; and was co-editor of the 'American Medical Library and Intelligencer,' Philadelphia, 1836. He translated Masse's 'Anatomical Atlas.' He left a widow, but no children.

[New York Journal of Medicine, 1852, new ser. viii. 143; Lancet, London, 1830–1, ii. 693, 721, 753, 785; Gent. Mag. 1852, i. 196; additional information kindly contributed by Professor H. E. Clarke of Glasgow.] D'A. P.

PATTISON, MARK (1813–1884), rector of Lincoln College, Oxford, and author, was son of Mark James Pattison (*d.* 1865), for many years rector of Hauskswell, Yorkshire, by Jane, daughter of Francis Winn of Richmond, Yorkshire, banker. Born on 10 Oct. 1813 at Hornby in the North Riding, where his father was then curate in charge, Mark was the eldest of twelve children, ten of them daughters, the youngest being well known as Sister Dora [see PATTISON, DOROTHY]. His father, a strict evangelical, but a fair scholar, gave him, first at Hornby and afterwards at Hauskswell, all his education before he proceeded to the university, and grounded him well in Latin, Greek, and mathematics. Literature and learning were his delight from an early age. But in his youth he was by no means a bookworm, and up to middle age he was a good rider, an enthusiastic fisherman, and an eager student of natural history. Brought up in a retired village, among a large family of sisters, and mixing very little with other boys, he became morbidly shy, sensitive, and self-conscious. On 5 April 1832 he matriculated from Oriel College, Oxford, and found himself in a world which was wholly different from what he had expected, and where he was surpassed in everything and on every occasion by those whom he felt to be in all real respects his inferiors. His undergraduate course at Oriel was at an unfortunate time. Edward Hawkins (1789–1882) [q. v.] had succeeded Edward Copleston [q. v.] as provost, and had got rid of Newman, Hurrell Froude, and Robert Wilberforce, the tutors to whom the reputation of the college was largely owing, and had replaced them by less able but more subservient men. The college lectures taught Pattison nothing (cf. MOZLEY, *Reminiscences*, i. 237). In his second year he was 'put into

Aristotle's Rhetoric; but such a lecture!—the tutor incapable of explaining any difficulty, and barely able to translate the Greek, even with the aid of a crib' (Pattison, *Memoirs*, p. 130). He missed the first class, which had been the object of his and his father's ambition. In the class list of Easter term 1836 his name appeared in the second class in classical honours. In fact, though wholly devoted to study, his reading had been at once too discursive and too thorough. Instead of confining his attention to the rigidly orthodox and narrow list of books usually taken up, he 'frittered away time over outlying books—Lysias, Cicero de Legibus, Terence, and other feather-weights which counted for nothing in the schools, but with which I had the whim to load my list' (*Memoirs*, p. 150). Nor had he confined his reading to classics. During his undergraduate course he had been a diligent student of English literature, had spent much time upon the Pope-Addison-Swift circle, and had laid the foundation of his interest in eighteenth-century speculation.

Pattison graduated B.A. in 1836 and M.A. in 1840. In the meantime he had abandoned the narrow evangelical views in which he had been brought up, and had fallen under the influence of Newman. For some time in 1838–9 he lived with other young men in Newman's house in St. Aldate's, and aided in the translation of Thomas Aquinas's 'Catena Aurea on the Gospels.' 'St. Matthew' was Pattison's work.

In April 1838 he stood for a fellowship at Oriel, in June at University, in November at Balliol, but each time without success. He was in despair. His 'darling hope of leading a life of study as a fellow seemed completely blocked.' At last, in November 1839, he was elected to a fellowship at Lincoln. 'No moment in all my life has ever been so sweet as that Friday morning, 8 Nov.,' when his election was announced (*Memoirs*, p. 183). At Lincoln he at first found himself even less at home than at Oriel. It was a rigidly anti-Puseyite college, characterised indeed by no evangelical fervour, but of the type known some years later as 'low and slow.' In all respects the college was at a low ebb. Pattison became more and more devoted to Newman, and was for some years 'a pronounced Puseyite, daily reciting the hours of the Roman breviary, and once getting so low by fostering a morbid state of conscience as to go to confession to Dr. Pusey' (*ib.* p. 189). In 1841 he was ordained deacon, and in 1843 priest. He obtained the Denyer theological prize in 1841, and again in 1842, the subjects being respectively 'The Sufficiency of Holy Scriptures for the Salvation of Man' and 'Original or Birth Sin and the Necessity of New Birth unto Life.' In 1842 his translation of Aquinas on St. Matthew was printed. This was followed by two lives of English saints (Stephen Langton and St. Edmund) in the series edited by Newman, neither of them of great merit, but at least free from the trivialities and childish miracles which appear so frequently in the volumes.

In 1842 he wrote his first purely literary article on 'Earliest English Poetry,' for which he spent months of study. It appeared in the 'British Critic.'

His appointment to a college tutorship in 1843 gave him a serious object in life, 'beyond holding up one of the banners of the Puseyite party.' It was necessary to devote his mind to Aristotle, logic, and the classics generally, which he had for some time neglected. The preparation for his lectures took up most of his time, and a series of literary articles in the 'Christian Remembrancer' ('Miss Bremer's Novels,' 1844; 'Gregory of Tours,' 'Wordsworth's Diary in France,' 1845; 'Church Poetry,' 'The Oxford Bede,' 'Thiers's Consulate and Empire,' 'The Sugar Duties,' 1846; 'Hugh Miller's First Impressions of England,' 1847; 'Mill's Political Economy,' 1848; 'Lord Holland's Foreign Reminiscences,' 1851) occupied the remainder, and thus carried him out of the narrow ecclesiastical range of thought and practice in which he had for some years lived. Hence the secession of Newman to the church of Rome in 1845 was less of a shock to him than to many of his associates. Yet he thinks he 'might have dropped off to Rome in some moment of mental and physical depression, or under the pressure of some arguing convert,' in 1847 (*ib.* p. 221). But he had become devoted to his work as a college tutor, and was growing conscious of the possession of that magnetic influence which first affected his pupils, afterwards the college generally, and latterly so many outsiders with whom he came in contact. His appointment as examiner in the school of *literæ humaniores* in the spring of 1848 seems to have been the turning-point of his life.

His success as an examiner surprised him, and proved both to himself and to the university that his powers and his learning were not only equal to, but greater than, those of men of much higher reputation. Tractarianism gradually left him, and he became less and less influenced by theological opinion, for which in his latter years he had little regard except as it affected practical life or

was considered as a branch of learning. To liberal opinions in politics he had always inclined, and these became more firmly fixed, but he was never an ardent politician.

His term of office as examiner gave an impetus to his study of Aristotle, and he soon acquired a reputation as the most successful college tutor and the ablest lecturer on the 'Ethics' in Oxford. For the three years (1848–1851) he was, moreover, absolute ruler of his college, which during that time was one of the best managed in the university. They were the happiest years of his life. He was an ideal teacher, grudging no amount of time or labour to his pupils, teaching them how to think, and drawing out and developing their mental faculties. He excited the warmest affection on their part, and their success in the schools, if not always commensurate with their or his wishes, was considerable. For several years he invited two or three undergraduates to join him for some weeks in the long vacation at the lakes, in Scotland, or elsewhere, and he assisted them in their studies without fee.

Dr. Radford, the rector of Lincoln, died in October 1851. The fellows taking actual part in the election of his successor were nine in number—two others were abroad. Of these nine, three resident fellows who represented the intellectual element of the college warmly supported Pattison; a fourth —non-resident—signified his intention to do the same, and this, with his own vote, gave him a majority. But he was not popular in the common-room, where his habit of retiring at eight o'clock, and spending the rest of the evening in tutorial work or private study, was resented by those who were accustomed to devote the whole evening to port wine and whist. A discreditable intrigue induced the non-resident fellow at the last moment to support an obscure candidate whose single merit was that he would keep out Pattison, and probably, if successful, would reduce the college to the happy condition of mental torpor out of which it had of late been raised. But though this defection prevented Pattison's election, it did not result in that of the rival candidate; and in the end, as a choice of evils, the Rev. James Thompson, B.D., an equally unknown man, without any special qualification for the headship of a learned society, was elected, mainly through the votes of Pattison and his friends (*Memoirs*, pp. 272–88; *Letter to the Rev. J. Thompson, by J. L. Kettle*, London, 1851; *Letter to the Rev. J. Thompson, by Rev. T. E. Espin*, Oxford, 1851; *Letter to Rev. T. E. Espin, from J. L. Kettle*, London, 1851). To Pattison the blow was crushing. It seemed to him the downfall of all his hopes and ambitions, no doubt partly personal, but chiefly for the prosperity and success of the college in which his whole heart and pride had been for some years invested. But in the account of his feelings, which he wrote thirty years afterwards, he does himself injustice. He did not fall into the state of mental and moral degradation which he there graphically describes, and the language which he uses of his state is greatly exaggerated. The routine of tuition may have become as weary as he represents it, but, while his great depression was obvious to all who came in contact with him at this time, his lectures—on Aristotle and on Thucydides—were as able, as suggestive, and as stimulating as ever, and, except for the interruption of a serious illness, the result, no doubt, of the shock which he had sustained, his interest in his pupils and his efforts to aid them in their studies and to promote their success in the schools were as great as ever. An ill-natured but unsuccessful attempt to deprive him of his fellowship for not proceeding to the degree of B.D. within the statutable period added to his vexation (he took the degree in 1851). In his 'Diary' in August 1853 he writes: 'My life seems to have come to an end, my strength gone, my energies paralysed, and all my hopes dispersed' (*Memoirs*, p. 298). But, in fact, matters had already begun to mend. In the spring of 1853 he had been nominated a second time examiner in *literæ humaniores*. He again took to fishing, and to this pursuit, and to frequent excursions in the north of England and Scotland, he attributed the restoration of his mental equilibrium and his old energy. 'Slowly the old original ideal of life, which had been thrust aside by the force of circumstance, but never obliterated, began to resume its place. As tone and energy returned, the idea of devoting myself to literature strengthened and developed' (*ib.* p. 308).

It was the 'Ephemerides' of Isaac Casaubon, printed at the Clarendon Press in 1851, that specially drew him out of his depression and launched him on the field of inquiry that was to be his main occupation for the remaining thirty years of his life. He wrote (in 1852) an article on Casaubon which alone proves how he exaggerated in his 'Memoirs' the mental prostration of the period; it appeared in the 'Quarterly Review' in 1853. Its success made him contemplate a history of learning from the Renaissance downwards; but he soon found this scheme was too extensive, and he contracted his views to the history of classical learning. Of this plan

he executed only fragments. He was specially attracted by Scaliger as the greatest scholar of modern times. In 1855 he was already contemplating writing Scaliger's life, and had made much preparation for it, when the appearance of Bernays's 'Joseph Justus Scaliger' induced him for a time to lay aside the design. But his enthusiastic admiration for 'the most richly stored intellect that ever spent itself in acquiring knowledge' increased. He saw in Scaliger the central figure of his age, and imposed it upon himself 'as a solemn duty to rescue his memory from the load of falsehood and infamy under which the unscrupulous jesuit faction had contrived to bury it.' In some respects Pattison singularly resembled his hero. The same thoroughness, the same hatred of half learning and of shams of every kind, the same love of learning for its own sake, the same reverence for truth, and, it must be added, the same caustic tongue, characterised both. He was constantly amassing materials for Scaliger's life, and after Bernays's death he formally resumed his project, and had made good progress with the work at the time of his own death. To those who, like Dr. Johnson, love most the biographical part of literature, the loss of Pattison's life of Scaliger is simply irreparable. All that we have of this work, to which he devoted thirty years of his life, is an article in the 'Quarterly' and three fragments printed after his death with his collected essays.

But his troubles were not yet at an end. It was never easy for him to work with those with whom he was altogether out of sympathy. Differences arose between him and the new rector, and at the end of 1855 he threw up his tutorship. But though this caused him much vexation at the time, the result was perhaps beneficial, as it enabled him to devote himself entirely to study and to literature. His reputation as a philosophical tutor was so great that when it was known that he was willing for a term or two to take private pupils, the best men in the university desired to read with him. He now began to make long tours in Germany, occasionally spending weeks together at one of the universities, and attending the lectures of a philosophical or theological professor. In 1858 he was for three months the Berlin correspondent of the 'Times,' and in 1859 was appointed one of the assistant commissioners to report upon continental education. The results of his inquiries appeared in a blue-book in 1861 ('Education Commission; Report of the Assistant Commissioners on the State of Popular Education in Continental Europe.' Vol. iv. (pp. 161–267) contains Pattison's report on the state of elementary education in Germany).

Always earnest in promoting university reform, he contributed to 'Oxford Essays' (1855) an article on 'Oxford Studies,' now rather of historical and literary than of practical interest, partly owing to the changes since effected, partly because the maturer view of its author is contained in his 'Suggestions on Academical Organisation' (1868), and in the essay which he contributed to the volume 'On the Endowment of Research' (1876). In these three writings he puts forward his views on university reform. He desired to see the university no longer a mere continuation-school for boys of a larger growth, diligently crammed with a view to passing examinations, but a place of real education, aiming at 'a breadth of cultivation, a scientific formation of mind, a concert of the intellectual faculties;' and, further, an institution organised to promote learning and research, so as to carry out 'the principle that the end and aim of the highest education must be the devotion of the mind to some one branch of science.' In 1860 he contributed to 'Essays and Reviews' 'Tendencies of Religious Thought in England, 1688–1750.' Learned, temperate, and impartial, the vehement and bitter haters of the book and its contributors could find little fault with his article, except the fact that it had appeared in company with the others.

On the death of Dr. Thompson in 1861, Pattison obtained the prize he had contended for ten years earlier, and was elected rector of Lincoln. In 1870 he accepted for the third time the office of public examiner, then an unusual post for the 'head of a house' to fill. He was also a delegate of the press and of the Bodleian Library, but in 1878 he declined the vice-chancellorship. Although for a time after his election the rector lectured on the 'Ethics,' he took a less active part in the administration of the college than might have been expected. The habits of ten years had disinclined him for administrative detail. He showed a keen interest in those undergraduates who possessed a love of study or a desire to succeed in the schools, but he did not much concern himself with the college generally or with the undergraduates.

In the meantime his literary activity was great. His articles in the 'Quarterly' on 'Huet' (1855), 'Montaigne' (1856), 'Joseph Scaliger' (1860), 'The Stephenses' (1865); in the 'National Review' on 'Bishop Warburton' and 'Learning in the Church of England' (1863); in the 'North British' on 'F. A. Wolf' (1865), were marked by that thorough knowledge, that maturity of judgment, and

that grasp of the subject-matter which are among the characteristics of his writings. For some time he wrote the article 'Religion and Philosophy' in the literary chronicle of the 'Westminster Review;' and though he ceased to do so at the end of 1855, he continued to furnish occasional notices of theological and historical books to that 'Review,' to which he also contributed the following more serious articles: 'The Present State of Theology in Germany' and 'Buckle's Civilisation in England,' 1857; 'Calvin at Geneva' and 'The Calas Tragedy,' 1858; 'Early Intercourse of England and Germany,' 1861; 'Popular Education in Prussia,' 1862; 'Mackay's Tübingen School,' 1863. To the 'Saturday Review' he was a frequent contributor for some years after its commencement in 1855, and continued to write occasionally down to 1877, his severe but not unfair review of W. E. Jelf's edition of 'Aristotle's Ethics,' 8 March 1856, bringing down upon him a foolishly irate letter from Jelf [see JELF, WILLIAM EDWARD]. He also wrote in the 'British Quarterly' ('Pope and his Editors, 1872), the 'North American' ('The Thing that might be,' 1881), 'Fraser's Magazine' ('The Birmingham Congress,' 1857; 'Antecedents of the Reformation,' 1859; 'Philanthropic Societies in the Reign of Queen Anne,' 1860), 'Macmillan' ('A Chapter of University History' and 'Milton,' 1875), the 'Contemporary' ('The Religion of Positivism,' 1876), 'Fortnightly' ('The Age of Reason,' 'Note on Evolution and Positivism,' and 'Books and Critics,' 1877; 'Industrial Shortcomings,' 1880; 'Etienne Dolet,' 1881), 'New Quarterly Magazine' ('Middle-class Education,' 1879), and the 'Academy,' where his reviews of Newman's 'Grammar of Assent' and Mozley's 'Reminiscences' have not only a literary, but a personal interest. He was an occasional contributor to the 'Times' ('Hatin's Histoire de la Presse,' 19 Nov. 1860; 'Courthope's Pope,' 27 Jan. 1882; 'Muretus,' 23 Aug. 1882), to 'Mind' ('Philosophy in Oxford,' 1876), to the 'Journal of Education,' and to the short-lived 'Reader,' and so late as May 1883 wrote a review of Mr. Henry Craik's 'Life of Swift' for the 'Guardian' newspaper. (His diaries refer to other reviews and magazine articles which it has not been found possible to identify with certainty.)

At the same time Pattison edited with notes, for the Clarendon Press, in 1869 Pope's 'Essay on Man' (2nd edit. 1872), and in 1872 Pope's 'Satires and Epistles' (2nd edit. 1874). In the ninth edition of the 'Encyclopædia Britannica' are to be found seven biographical notices by Pattison on Bentley, Casaubon, Erasmus, Grotius, Lipsius, More, and Macaulay, 'all terse, luminous, and finished' (J. MORLEY in *Macmillan's Magazine*, vol. li.) In 1879 he wrote a life of Milton for the 'English Men of Letters' series (reprinted, with considerable alterations, 1880, 1883, 1885, and 1887), and in 1883 he published an edition of Milton's 'Sonnets.' In 1875 his most important work appeared—the life of 'Isaac Casaubon' (2nd edit. 1892, with index). Though he only devoted himself to Casaubon upon finding his intention to write the life of Scaliger anticipated by Bernays, he threw himself *con amore* into the work, and the result is that he has given to the world the best biography in our language of a scholar, as he in common with Casaubon and Scaliger understood the word.

But Pattison was by no means a recluse. For some years after his marriage in 1861 his house was a centre of all that was best in Oxford society. Under a singularly stiff and freezing manner to strangers and to those whom he disliked, he concealed a most kindly nature, full of geniality and sympathy, and a great love of congenial, and especially of female, society. But it was in his intercourse with his pupils, and generally with those younger than himself, that he was seen to most advantage. His conversation was marked by a delicate irony. His words were few and deliberate, but pregnant with meaning, and above all stimulating, and their effect was heightened by perhaps too frequent and, especially to undergraduates, somewhat embarrassing flashes of silence. His aim was always to draw out by the Socratic method what was best in the mind of the person he conversed with, and he seemed to be seeking information and suggestions for his own use. To the last he was open to new personal impressions, was most grateful for information on subjects which were of interest to him, and was always full of generous admiration for good work, or even for work which, if not really good, was painstaking or marked by promise.

The Social Science Association found in him one of its earliest supporters; and he was for some years, to the surprise and even amusement of some of his friends, a regular attendant at the conferences, a sympathetic listener to the papers, and a diligent frequenter of the soirées. At the meeting at Birmingham in 1868 he read a paper on university reform, and at Liverpool in 1876 he was president of the section of education. In 1862 he was elected a member of the Athenæum Club by the committee under the special rule admitting distinguished persons. For many years he was a member of the com-

mittee of the London Library, and regularly attended its meetings. But he was singularly inefficient on a board or committee, where his want of self-reliance was painfully apparent, and where his disinclination to express a positive opinion or to vote often caused great embarrassment, and sometimes inconvenience, to his colleagues, who would on many subjects have attached the utmost importance to any definite statement of his views. His occasional addresses, on such varied subjects as 'Locke' at the Royal Institution, 'What is a College?' before the Ascham Society, 'Coal Scuttles' at the School of Art at Oxford (November 1876), 'The Art of Teaching' at Bloomsbury, 'Modern Books and Critics' at Birmingham, drew large audiences. Several of them afterwards appeared as magazine articles. He occasionally took clerical duty for a few weeks in the summer in some country village, but it cannot be said that his ministrations were well adapted to country congregations.

Pattison's health, which had been for some time feeble, completely broke down in November 1883. But he rallied, and was able to visit London in the spring, and to be present—his last public appearance—at a meeting of the Hellenic Society. In June he was removed to Harrogate, where he died on 30 July 1884. He was buried, as he desired, in the neighbouring churchyard of Harlow Hill.

In 1861 Pattison married Emilia Frances, daughter of Captain Strong, H.E.I.C.S., a lady much younger than himself, who has achieved distinction as a writer on art. There was no issue of the marriage. Mrs. Pattison survived her husband, and, on 3 Oct. 1885, married the Right Hon. Sir Charles W. Dilke, bart., M.P.

In the last few months of 1883 Pattison dictated his 'Memoirs,' which, however, only come down to 1860. They are largely based upon diaries which he deposited in the Bodleian Library. His later diaries are in the possession of his representatives. The 'Memoirs' were published by Mrs. Pattison in 1885. The book is one of deep and painful interest, the only one in existence that can be compared with Rousseau's 'Confessions' in the fidelity with which it lays bare the inmost secrets of the heart, but in which, unlike the 'Confessions,' the author does himself much less than justice. He gives a far less favourable impression of himself than any impartial outside observer would have done, and draws a portrait not so much of what he really was at the time of which he writes, as of what he seemed to himself through the morbid recollections of the past and the often not less morbid entries in his diary. For his true portrait we must look into his 'Essays' and his 'Life of Casaubon.' His own personality is evident in whatever he writes. He was essentially a man of learning, using the word in the sense in which he has defined it: 'Learning is a peculiar compound of memory, imagination, scientific habit, accurate observation, all concentrated through a prolonged period on the analysis of the remains of literature. The result of this sustained mental endeavour is not a book, but a man. It cannot be embodied in print; it consists of the living word.' He was consequently intolerant, not of ignorance, but of pretended learning, and showed his contempt sometimes too obviously. In his 'Memoirs' he is no less unfair to those whom he disliked than to himself, and all through his (later) writings there is a tendency to unduly depreciate both the learning and the actions of those who supported the cause of the catholic church. He sees the hand of the jesuits everywhere, and finds an evident difficulty in doing justice to the opponents of intellectual progress.

Though not in the technical sense of the word a bibliophile, Pattison collected not only the largest private library of his time at Oxford, but one that was extraordinarily complete for the history of learning and philosophy of the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries. It numbered about fourteen thousand volumes, and was sold by auction at Sotheby's sale-room in London in July and August 1885.

A volume of his college and university sermons was published in 1885. In 1889 a selection of his essays appeared at the Clarendon Press, in two volumes, under the editorship of Pattison's friend, Henry Nettleship [q. v.]

[Memoirs by Mark Pattison, 1885; Times, 31 July 1884; Athenæum, 2 Aug. 1884; Saturday Review, 2 Aug. 1884; Academy, 9 Aug. 1884; Macmillan, vol. l.; Morley's Miscellanies (from Macmillan, vol. li.); Althaus's Recollections of Mark Pattison (from Temple Bar, January 1885); Tollemache's Recollections of Pattison (from Journal of Education, 1 June 1885); Pattison's manuscript Diaries and Correspondence; personal knowledge.] R. C. C.

**PATTISON, WILLIAM** (1706-1727), poet, was born in 1706 at Peasemarsh, near Rye, Sussex, where his father, William Pattison, held a small farm from the Earl of Thanet. By Lord Thanet he was, in 1721, placed at the free school at Appleby, under Dr. Thomas Nevinson of Queen's College, Oxford. He showed considerable promise, and Thomas Noble, a neighbouring clergyman and schoolmaster of Kirkby Stephen,

read several classical authors with him. With a view to paying off some debts which he had contracted with booksellers, he dedicated with satisfactory results an 'Ode on Christmas Day' to Sir Christopher Musgrave of Edenhall, Cumberland. Pattison was equally lucky in disposing of an ode to John Tufton, nephew of the Earl of Thanet. On 6 July 1724 he was admitted as a sizar at Sidney-Sussex College, Cambridge; but he did not find the life congenial, and in the summer of 1726 he cut his name out of the college books, in order, apparently, to avert its being erased, and commenced author in London. Although his prospects were not exhilarating, his first letters from London displayed a most sanguine temper (Letters prefixed to *Poetical Works*, 1728). He associated with Eusden, Harte, Concanen, and other wits of the town, and dated his letters from Button's. He collected his poems for publication, and Pope subscribed to the volume, though he excused himself from a personal introduction. But the appearance of the book was delayed, and Pattison, incapable of husbanding his small resources, was soon reduced to miserable poverty.

In a poem entitled 'Effigies Authoris,' addressed to Lord Burlington, the unfortunate poet described himself as passing the nights on a bench in St. James's Park. In his distress he put forth proposals for the immediate issue of his poems, and while he was transcribing them for the press Curll the bookseller gave him shelter in his house. According to Pope, Curll starved him to death (*An Author to be Lett by Iscariot Hackney*, i.e. Pope and Richard Savage, 1729, p. 3), but it is more correct to say that he saved him from starving. Pattison died of smallpox in Curll's house on 11 July 1727, and was buried in the churchyard of St. Clement Danes. He had not completed his twenty-first year.

In the year following the poet's premature death Curll issued 'The Poetical Works of Mr. William Pattison, late of Sidney-Sussex College,' London, 8vo; dedicated to the Earl of Peterborough, and with a distinguished list of subscribers. It contained a satirical piece called 'College Life,' an ambitious imitation of Pope, entitled 'Abelard to Eloisa,' a number of miscellaneous poems, frequently of an erotic tendency, and odes to various persons. Another volume appeared in the same year, entitled 'Cupid's Metamorphosis, or Love in all Shapes, being the second and last volume of the Poetical Works of Mr. William Pattison,' London, 8vo, with a portrait engraved by Foudrinière after J. Saunders. This comprises 'Select Epistles from Ovid,' 'Laura, or the Mistress,' and 'Epigrams.' A portrait was also engraved for Caulfield's 'Memoirs' (1819, ii. 142).

In his choice of subjects Pattison was influenced by Dr. Croxall, the author of the 'Fair Circassian,' but he also imitated Waller, Pope, and Gay, and his versification is generally good. His poems, however, are distinguished by little save precocity, the tone of which is not attractive. There is not much to sanction the comparison with Chatterton which has been made. Selections from Pattison's poems are printed in Pratt's 'Cabinet of Poetry' (1808, iii. 271), in Sanford's 'British Poets' (Philadelphia, 1819, xiii. 415), and in Park and Anderson's 'British Poets;' but they have not found favour with more recent anthologists.

[Life prefixed to Poetical Works, 1728; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict. xxiv. 204; Lower's Sussex Worthies; Elwin and Courthope's Pope, vi. 133 and *n.*; Disraeli's Miscellanies of Literature, 1840, p. 91; Noble's Continuation of Granger, iii. 303; An Author to be Lett, 1729; Admission Book, Sidney-Sussex College; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

T. S.

**PATTON, GEORGE, Lord Glenalmond** (1803–1869), Scottish judge, third son of James Patton of the Cairnies, sheriff-clerk of Perthshire, was born at the Cairnies in 1803. He received the rudiments of his education at Perth, and proceeded thence to Oxford, where he does not seem to have matriculated. Returning to Scotland, he began his legal studies at Edinburgh University, and was admitted advocate in 1828. He made some figure at the bar as a pleader. But he was an ardent tory in politics, and it was not until Lord Derby's second government came into power in 1859 that Patton, after very many delays and disappointments, received official recognition. He then became solicitor-general for Scotland for a few weeks. In the spring of 1866 he entered the House of Commons as conservative member for Bridgewater, and a few weeks later, when Lord Derby's third administration was formed, he was made lord advocate. The appointment necessitated a new election at Bridgewater, and Patton was defeated by Mr. Vanderbyl. Reports were abroad that gross bribery had been practised at both these elections, and a commission was appointed to inquire into these charges. The dread of compromising disclosures preyed on Patton's mind, but he was relieved of the necessity of taking any part in the inquiry by becoming, in 1867, lord justice clerk. John Inglis (1810–1891) [q. v.] had resigned the post to take that of lord president. The choice of his successor lay with the lord advocate, and Patton conferred

the office on himself. He assumed the title of Lord Glenalmond.

In August 1869 he succeeded to the estate and mansion at Glenalmond on the death of his elder brother, Thomas Patton, W.S. By some journalistic blunder the death of Thomas had been announced as the 'demise of the lord justice clerk,' and the error prejudicially affected Lord Glenalmond's mind. On Thursday, 16 Sept. 1869, he presided at the Ayr circuit, and on the following day he returned with Mrs. Patton to Edinburgh, proceeding thence to Glenalmond. On the morning of Monday, 20 Sept., he committed suicide. The body was interred in the family burying-ground of Monzie. He left a widow, but no family. Though possessed of considerable legal talents, he had no favourable opportunity for displaying administrative ability. In the management of his own small estate of the Cairnies he made many valuable experiments in arboriculture, and had projected elaborate trials of various conifers at Glenalmond.

[Marshall's Historic Scenes in Perthshire, p. 299; Hunter's Woods, Forests, and Estates of Perthshire, pp. 356 et seq.; North British Daily Mail, 23 Sept. 1869; Dundee Advertiser, 25 Sept. 1869.] A. H. M.

PATTON, PHILIP (1739–1815), admiral, eldest son of Philip Patton, collector of the customs at Kirkcaldy in Fife, by Agnes Loch, his wife, was born at Anstruther on 27 Oct. 1739 (parish register of Kirkcaldy). After a couple of years in merchant ships, during which he made a voyage to the Mediterranean and another to the Baltic, he was entered early in 1755 on board the Torbay, under the immediate patronage of vice-admiral Edward Boscawen [q. v.] He followed Boscawen to the Invincible, Royal George, and Namur; he was present at the reduction of Louisbourg in 1758 and the defeat of De la Clue in 1759. Continuing in the Namur with Captain Matthew Buckle [q. v.], he was also present in the battle of Quiberon Bay. He passed his examination on 10 Sept. 1760, and, still in the Namur carrying the flag of Sir George Pocock [q. v.], went out to the West Indies in 1762; he took part in the reduction of Havana and was promoted to be lieutenant of the Grenada bomb, in which he returned to England in the summer of 1763. From 1764 to 1767 he was in the Emerald frigate in the North Sea, and again from 1769 to 1772, during which time he is said, in a voyage to the Mediterranean, by his prompt decision on a dark stormy night, to have saved the ship from charging the rock of Gibraltar. In 1776 he was appointed to the Prince George with Captain Charles Middleton, afterwards Lord Barham [q. v.], whom he followed to the Royal Oak, on board which Rear-admiral Hyde Parker (1714–1782) [q. v.] hoisted his flag. Patton, who was first lieutenant, was to be superseded by a follower of Parker; but the king happening to come to Portsmouth, and to review the fleet before the change was made, Patton was promoted to the command of the Ætna bomb. In her he was ordered to the coast of Guinea, but, being detained at Spithead, was appointed acting-captain of the Prince George, whose captain, Sir John Lindsay [q. v.], was required on shore as a witness on the Keppel court-martial. The Prince George was then sent to sea in a squadron under the command of Lord Shuldham, much to the discontent of the ship's company, which broke out into open mutiny on 19 Jan. 1779, in consequence of the hammocks being ordered up from the middle and lower decks for the sake of ventilation. The difficulty was overcome by Patton's firmness, and, after one of the ringleaders had been severely punished, the men returned to their duty and obedience.

Two months later, when the Prince George was back at Spithead, Patton was posted (22 March 1779) to the Namur, the flagship of Rear-admiral Robert Digby, with whom he moved into the Prince George, and had an important share in the defeat of Langara on 16 Jan. 1780. On their return to England Patton was appointed to the Milford frigate, and afterwards to the Belle Poule, which, on her way to Leith in company with the Berwick, captured a very troublesome privateer, the Calonne, commanded by the notorious Luke Ryan. Patton then joined the squadron under Parker, and was with it in the action on the Doggerbank on 5 Aug. 1781. He was employed after this in convoy duty till the peace, when the Belle Poule was paid off.

In May 1794 he was appointed one of the commissioners of the transport board, where, it is said, he was found so useful that the Earl of Chatham, then first lord of the admiralty, endeavoured to persuade him to continue in the office instead of taking his flag, and threatened that if he insisted on having his flag he should not be employed. Patton, however, did insist, and was included in the promotion of 1 June 1795. During the enforced retirement which followed he took up his residence at Fareham, and shortly afterwards sent to the admiralty a paper on the grievances of seamen, on the necessary reforms, and on the great danger of delay. On 1 Jan. 1801 he was made a vice-admiral, and in 1803 was appointed second in command

in the Downs under Lord Keith. At this time he made the acquaintance of Mr. Pitt, then residing at Walmer, which possibly led, on Pitt's return to office, to his appointment as one of the lords of the admiralty, which he continued to hold under his old captain, Charles Middleton (now Lord Barham). On the change of ministry in 1806, Patton—who had been promoted to the rank of admiral on 9 Nov. 1805—retired to his house at Fareham, where he principally resided during the remainder of his life. He employed himself in reading and writing, though he published nothing except 'The Natural Defence of an Insular Empire' (1810, 4to). This essay was severely and unjustly scourged, presumably by Sir John Barrow, in the 'Quarterly Review' (November 1810), principally because it had protested against the government of the navy by civilian first lords, a point warmly defended by Barrow in his 'Life of Lord Howe' in almost the words of the 'Quarterly Review.' Patton died at Fareham, Hampshire, on 31 Dec. 1815. He had married in 1783, and left a large family, mostly daughters. His portrait, in the possession of the family, was lent to the Naval exhibition of 1891.

Patton's younger brother, CHARLES PATTON (1741–1837), after service in merchant ships, entered the navy as midshipman on board the Ripon in May 1758. He was present at the capture of Guadeloupe in 1759 and the blockade of Brest in 1761, subsequently commanded the Rattlesnake, was advanced to post rank on 30 May 1795, and served as agent for transports at Portsmouth for many years. He died at Fareham on 16 Jan. 1837, aged 96. He wrote 'An Attempt to establish the Basis of Freedom on simple and unerring Principles in a series of Letters' (Edinburgh, 1793, 8vo), a series of deductions from a brief historical inquiry suggested by Burke's famous essay; and, secondly, 'The Effects of Property upon Society and Government Investigated' (1797, 8vo), a plea for the basis of representation upon property. This was prefixed to an elaborate work by another brother,

ROBERT PATTON, born about 1747, who also became a naval captain. Robert Patton's work was entitled 'An Historical Review of the Monarchy and Republic of Rome upon the Principles derived from the Effects of Property and Government,' and was dedicated to Admiral Philip Patton. In 1803, and with special reference to the government of India, Robert published 'Principles of Asiatic Monarchies politically and historically investigated' (*Monthly Rev.* 1803, p. 285; *Gent. Mag.* 1837, i. 321; *Brit. Mus. Cat.*)

[Ralfe's Nav. Biogr. iii. 387; Passing Certificate and Official Letters in the Public Record Office.]

J. K. L.

**PATTRICK** or **PATRICK**, GEORGE (1746–1800), divine, fourth son of Thomas Patrick of Marks Tey in Essex, was born in August 1746. His grandfather and father were farmers at Marks Tey, and had occupied the same land for more than a century. He was admitted to St. Paul's School on 4 Feb. 1756, and about 1762 entered an attorney's office in Colchester. In February 1769, after spending two years in London, he commenced to practise at Dedham in Essex, where a taste for fashionable company and expensive entertainments soon dissipated a moderate fortune. Falling under religious influences, he abandoned the law and was ordained to the curacy of St. Michael, Mile End, Colchester, on 23 Dec. 1770, and was admitted a fellow-commoner of Sidney-Sussex College on 29 Dec. On 22 Sept. 1771 he was ordained priest, and on 21 Aug. 1772 was presented to the living of Aveley in Essex through the interest of Thomas Barrett-Lennard, seventeenth baron Dacre. In March 1773 he took the curacy of Wennington, also in Essex, which he held with his living. In December 1775 he was made chaplain to Lord Dacre, and in 1777 he graduated LL.B. at Cambridge. At Aveley Patrick performed his clerical duties irregularly. He was frequently employed by Lord Dacre, to the neglect of his parochial work, in the examination of old deeds or in the manufacture of genealogy. In the winter of 1782 he sought the spiritual advice of Dr. Richard Conyers, and removed to Deptford, to be near his director. From June 1783 to June 1784 he was travelling in France and Italy for his health. On 10 Oct. 1787 he finally left Aveley, and was chosen chaplain of Morden College, Blackheath, by the influence of Charles Trevor Roper, eighteenth baron Dacre, who had succeeded his uncle in the peerage in 1786, and retained Patrick's services as chaplain. Disputes with the pensioners led to his dismissal on 22 June 1790. On 17 April 1791 he became curate of Carshalton in Surrey. On 12 Jan. 1792 he was elected to the lectureship of Woolwich, but the incumbent refused him the pulpit, and he never preached there. In the summer of 1793 he removed to London. On 19 March 1796 he was elected lecturer of St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, but, owing to the objection of the incumbent, only preached for the first time on 4 Dec. 1796; the sermon was published. Towards the close of 1797 he was chosen Sunday-evening lecturer at St. Bride's, Fleet

Street. He also had a share in a lectureship at St. Margaret's, Lothbury.

Patrick died at Madeley in Shropshire on 14 Sept. 1800, and was buried there on the 17th (parish register). He married, on 8 Sept. 1789, Mary Ferriday of Madeley (parish register). His son, Charles Thomas Pattrick, born at Blackheath in 1790, graduated B.A. in 1812 and M.A. in 1815 from St. Edmund Hall, Oxford.

As a preacher Patrick was popular, and drew large congregations. He had a strong voice and clear enunciation. His 'Sermons, with a Help to Prayer,' were published in London in 1801.

[Memoirs of his life prefixed to his sermons (an abridged version was published in a volume of the Religious Tract Society's Christian Biography); Gardiner's Admission Registers of St. Paul's School, p. 107; Graduati Cantabr.; Ellis's Hist. and Antiq. of St. Leonard, Shoreditch, pp. 47–9; Evangelical Magazine, 1802, p. 108; admission registers of Sidney-Sussex College, per the master.] B. P.

**PATYS, RICHARD** (*d.* 1565), bishop of Worcester. [See PATE.]

**PAUL** or **POL** (*d.* 573), saint, also called AURELIAN, bishop of Léon in Brittany, was the son of Perphius, Porfius, or Porfus, who in a late legend is called Aurelianus—namely, of Orleans—but this name probably did not belong to his family, and was first applied to the saint when his relics were moved to Orleans. He is said to have been born at Pen-hoen in Cornwall or Wales, and to have been a pupil of St. Illtyd [q. v.], with Samson (*fl.* 550) [q. v.] and Gildas [q. v.]; but legend has perhaps confused him with Paulinus (*fl.* 500?) [q. v.], founder of a school at Whitland, who is mentioned in the Welsh 'life' of St. Illtyd. Several stories of Paul's student life under Illtyd are identical with those which the Welsh hagiographers narrate of Samson. Leaving Illtyd, Paul retired to a desert place with a few companions, and taught a chieftain Marcus, called also Quonomonus, who had been despoiled by the Anglo-Saxons. Fearing to be made a bishop, Paul went to an island off the coast of Brittany, probably Saintes, whence he passed to the mainland. He visited Withur, an Armorican chief, and led the life of a missionary. Withur, pretending that he needed a safe messenger, charged him with a letter directed to Judwal, another Armorican chief, then at the court of Childebert, son of Clovis I, and this letter contained a request that Paul should be made a bishop. In ignorance of its contents he presented it, and, when his reluctance had been overcome, he accepted the episcopate of the tribe of the Osismii, with Léon as his see. He was consecrated in the king's court, probably in 512 (HADDAN and STUBBS, ii. 74). He continued to make converts and to build monasteries in Brittany, where many places still bear the prefix Lampaul.

After twenty-four years he retired to an island to lead a hermit's life, but a fatality pursued his successors in his old see of Léon, and he returned to its care. At an advanced age he again retired, and died in the island of Batz on 12 March 573. His relics were removed in the tenth century to Fleury, near Orleans. Like other Celtic saints, he is said to have had a miraculous bell, preserved at Léon in 876, according to Plaine.

[The earliest life of Paul is by Wormonoc of Landevenech, written about 884, printed in Bolland's Analecta, i. 208, from a Paris manuscript by Plaine, and in the Revue Celtique, v. 413, from a Fleury manuscript by Cuissard. His life, by a tenth-century monk of Fleury, probably Vitalis (Mém. Soc. Arch. de l'Orléanais, ii. 277), is given in Johannes à Bosco's Bibliotheca Floriac. pp. 418 sqq. See also Haddan and Stubbs's Councils and Documents, ii. 74, 87; Le Long's Vies des Saints, pp. 191 sqq.; Levot's Biogr. Bretonne, vol. ii. s.v.; Bollandists' Acta SS. 2 March, p. 108.] M. B.

**PAUL** (*d.* 1093), abbot of St. Albans, a Norman by birth, was a kinsman, and according to tradition a son, of Lanfranc [q. v.], afterwards archbishop of Canterbury (*Gesta Abbatum*, i. 51; HOOK, *Archbishops of Canterbury*, ii. 80). It is possible that he was the scholar who was with Lanfranc when he fell among thieves as he was going from Avranches towards Rouen before he became a monk (*Chronicon Beccense*, p. 195). Paul probably took the monastic vows at Bec, and was certainly a member of the convent of St. Stephen at Caen, over which Lanfranc was made abbot in 1066. The abbacy of St. Albans was vacant in 1077, and Lanfranc, then archbishop, who had been granted the patronage of the house (EADMER, *Historia Nov.* i. 12, 18; GERVASE CANT. ii. 373), appointed Paul, whom he is said to have loved as a son (*Gesta Abbatum*, u.s.) Paul entered on his office on 28 June. He rebuilt the monastery and its church, rearing the vast edifice that, in spite of the mischief wrought by modern so-called restoration, still excites the admiration of all beholders (*Norman Conquest*, iv. 400). In this work he largely used stones and bricks obtained from the ruins of Roman Verulam, together with timber that had been collected and stored by his predecessors. In the work Paul was liberally aided

by Lanfranc, who is said to have contributed a thousand marks towards the expense of the building. He placed bells in the great tower, one of which was given by a wealthy Englishman named Lyulf, who sold some of his flocks to buy it, and the other by Lyulf's wife (*Gesta Abbatum*, i. 60). The monastic reform that was urged forward by Lanfranc was thoroughly carried out by Paul at St. Albans, which under his rule became a pattern of religious order and discipline to all the Benedictine houses in England. Under him, too, the monastery became a place of learning; he rebuilt the 'Scriptorium,' assigned to it a separate endowment, so that the scribes employed in it had their own daily allowances, and caused many books to be copied by well-skilled hands. He gave a large number of relics, vestments, ornaments, and other precious things to the convent, and among them twenty-eight fine volumes, besides psalters and other service books. Certain lands that had been lost to the monastery were regained through his exertions, and its possessions were further increased by the gifts of benefactors who admired the vigour of his rule and the reformation that he effected in his house (*ib.* p. 55). On some of these new possessions—at Wallingford in Berkshire, Tynemouth in Northumberland, Belvoir in Lincolnshire, Hertford, and Binham in Norfolk—he, by the advice of Lanfranc, founded cells or dependent priories, inhabited by monks from St. Albans, and ruled by priors sent from the mother-house. On the other hand, certain of the abbey's lands were lost in his time, some through his carelessness, and others in consequence of leases that he granted without having sufficiently provided against frauds and legal subtleties. He also secretly, and to the great damage of his church, enriched with its property his Norman kinsmen, no doubt relations of his mother, who were unworthy, lazy, and ignorant, some being unable to write. Like Lanfranc, he despised the English monks, and destroyed the tombs of his English predecessors, many of them men of royal race and venerable memory, declaring that they were ignorant and uncultivated. Probably owing to his contempt for the English, he neglected to translate the bones of Offa [q. v.], king of Mercia, the founder of his house, into his new church. Nevertheless, while recording these injuries that Paul caused to St. Albans, Matthew Paris declares that the good that he did to the abbey outweighed the evil. In 1089, probably on the death of Lanfranc, Paul sent the rules that the archbishop had drawn up for the English Benedictines to Anselm, and received his approval of them. When Anselm was appointed archbishop in 1093, Paul supplied him with money, and Anselm is said to have shown his gratitude by contributing to the rebuilding of the abbey. In that year Paul went to take possession of the church of Tynemouth. It had been granted to the abbey by Robert de Mowbray [q. v.], earl of Northumberland, at his request, and sorely against the will of the monks of Durham, who claimed it, and with whom the earl had a quarrel. When Paul reached York, Turgot, the prior of Durham, sent a deputation of monks and clerks, who, in the presence of Thomas, archbishop of York, solemnly forbade Paul to take possession of the church, to which he had already sent a body of his monks. He answered indignantly, and took no heed of the friar's message. While he was at Tynemouth he fell sick, and as he was returning died at Settringham in the East Riding of Yorkshire, on 11 Nov. The monks of Durham regarded his death as a judgment on him for violating the rights of their church (Sym. Dunelm.) He was a typical specimen of the better sort of the Norman abbots of his time, devoted to the monastic life, a lover of literature, a strict disciplinarian, and an able and magnificent ruler, yet with some of the faults of his race, for he was proud, scornful, and apparently addicted to forwarding the interests of his kinsfolk by all means in his power, however unfair to others.

[Gesta Abb. Mon. S. Albani, i. 51–65 (Rolls Ser.); Chron. Beccense ap. Opp. Lanfranci, i. 195, ed. Giles; Anselmi Epp. i. 71, Eadmer's Hist. Nov. i. 12, 18, both ed. Migne, i. col. 1141, ii. cols. 355, 369; Gervase of Cant. ii. 373, Will. of Malmesbury's Gesta Pontiff. pp. 72, 317, Matthew Paris's Hist. Angl. i. 41 (all Rolls Ser.); Wendover, ii. 39 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Sym. Dunelm. i. 124, 125, ii. 221, 261, 346 (Rolls Ser.); Freeman's Norman Conquest, iv. 399, 400, and William Rufus, i. 424, ii. 18, 606; Hook's Archbishops of Canterbury, ii. 80; Newcome's Abbey of St. Alban, pp. 45–50.] W. H.

**PAUL**, Earl of Orkney (*d.* 1099), succeeded to the earldom while Orkney was under the suzerainty of Norway, conjointly with his younger brother, Erlend, on the death of their father, Earl Torfinn, in 1064. He was closely related to the reigning families both of Scotland and Norway, his mother, Ingibiörg, daughter of Earl Finn Arnasson, being cousin-german to Thora, wife of Harald Sigurdson (Hardradi), king of Norway, and mother of King Olaf the Quiet; while his paternal grandmother was a daughter of Malcolm II of Scotland. His mother, on his father Torfinn's death, mar-

ried Malcolm, called Canmore [q. v.], and was by him mother of King Duncan II [q. v.], who was thus Paul's half-brother. Paul and Erlend are said to have been tall, handsome men, and to have resembled their mother. Paul, with his brother's consent, took the entire management of the earldom, which, at the time of their father's death, included not only the Orkneys and the Hebrides, but also eleven earldoms on the mainland of Scotland and a large territory in Ireland, 'from the Tuscar rocks,' says the Scald Arnor, 'right on to Dublin.' When King Harald Hardradi of Norway had decided, at the instigation of the Saxon Earl Tostig, to oppose King Harold and invade England, he passed the previous winter (1065–6) in the Orkneys with his fleet, in preparing his forces, to which the Orkney earls added all those at their disposal, and prepared to accompany him. The saga-writer relates of the expedition that on leaving Orkney a landing was first made at Cleveland, when Scarborough was taken. The attacking forces next landed at Holderness, where they gained a victory. On Wednesday, 20 Sept., they fought at York against the Earls Waltheof and Morcar [q. v.] On Sunday the town of Stamford Bridge surrendered. Hardradi went on shore to arrange for its government. But while he was on shore he was met by Harold, king of England, at the head of a numerous army. In the battle that followed Harald Hardradi fell. After his death Eystein Orri, his brother-in-law, and the two earls, Paul and Erlend, arrived from the ship and made a stout resistance. Eystein Orri fell, and almost the whole army of the Northmen with him. Earl Paul, having made his submission and given hostages to the English king, was allowed to return to the Orkneys with the young Olaf, Hardradi's son, and what remained of their disordered forces in twenty ships.

Earl Paul sought subsequently to establish the Christian religion in his earldom. He sent to Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, a clerk (Ralph), whom he wished to be consecrated as bishop. Lanfranc, in a letter still extant, ordered Wulfstan, bishop of Worcester, and Peter, bishop of Chester, to go to York and assist the archbishop there in the consecration [see RALPH, *fl.* 1135].

Paul married a daughter of Hakon Ivarson, and had a son and three daughters. He lived in harmony with his brother Erlend until their respective families grew up, when differences arose. Hakon, Paul's ambitious son, exacted more than his due, which Erlend, his uncle, and Erlend's sons, Magnus (St. Magnus) and Erling—especially the latter—resented. Hakon was induced to leave the islands, and, going to Norway, induced King Magnus Barelegs to undertake an expedition (1098) to subdue the Orkneys and the Hebrides. Hakon sailed with the expedition. The king, on his arrival in Orkney, sent Earls Paul and Erlend prisoners to Norway; and, having placed his young son Sigurd over the islands, continued with Hakon his raid to the Hebrides and the Irish Sea. Earl Paul died at Bergen during the following year (1099). Hakon remained with King Magnus, and became a celebrated warrior. On the death of King Magnus (1103), his son, the young Sigurd, left the Orkneys to succeed his father on the throne of Norway. Hakon succeeded to the Orkney earldom, which he held for a time conjointly with his first cousin Magnus (St. Magnus); but, growing again jealous of him, he killed Magnus in 1115. To Hakon succeeded his sons Harald and Paul the Silent.

PAUL THE SILENT, EARL OF ORKNEY (*fl.* 1130), ruled over the islands with his half-brother Harald. On the death of Harald, Paul ruled for a time alone. He was somewhat taciturn, spoke little at the Thing-meetings, and gave others a large share of the government. He was modest, gentle to the people, and liberal with his money among his friends. He was not warlike. He had, however, to defend his possessions against the rival claims of Kali Kolson, nephew to Earl Magnus the Saint, Erlend's son. Kali assumed the name of Rognvald (St. Rognvald), and received from King Sigurd of Norway a grant of that part of the islands which had belonged to his uncle. Paul refused to recognise his claims, and Rognvald prepared to invade the Orkneys. Assistance was promised Rognvald from the Hebrides and the north of Scotland, in the interest of Maddad, earl of Athole, who was married to Margaret, sister of Earl Paul the Silent, and who wished to secure the earldom for his young son Harald. Rognvald's first descent on the islands failed. His forces were dispersed and his ships captured by Paul. Previous to a second attempt Rognvald made a vow, says the saga-writer, that if he succeeded he would build and endow a church at Kirkwall in the Orkneys, where the relics of his uncle Magnus the Saint might be preserved, and whither the bishop's see might be transferred. His second attempt was successful, and he performed his vow. The church he built, the cathedral of St. Magnus, yet remains intact, one of the finest minsters in the north of Europe. The islands were divided between Paul and Rognvald; but about the same

time (1136) Maddad, earl of Athole, instructed Swein Asleifson, a well-known Orkney Viking, to sail to the islands and capture Paul and bring him prisoner to Athole. This was done, and Paul never returned to the Orkneys. His fate was doubtful. Two years later Harald, the earl of Athole's son, although a child of five years old, was joined in the government of the islands with Earl Rognvald.

[The Orkneyinga Saga, Rolls edit.; Saga of King Harald Hardradi; Wyntoun's Chronicle, ed. Turnbull; Skene's Introduction and Notes to Fordun's Scotichronicon; Robertson's Scotland under her Early Kings.] J. G. F.

PAUL ANGLICUS (*fl.* 1404), canonist, was one of the earliest writers to treat of the errors of the Roman catholic church. His 'Aureum Speculum Papæ, ejus Curiæ, Prælatorum et aliorum spiritualium,' written in 1404, is divided into three parts, and is in the form of a dialogue between Peter and Paul. The interlocutors represent two imaginary persons, who are made to reason in plain language, to quote scripture and the canons of the church, and to appeal to natural law and justice. The first and second parts affirm the existence of the gravest errors and abuses within the church: the sale of benefices, indulgences, and other privileges, which is condemned as simony. In the third part the writer resumes, and reasserts that the church of Rome is fundamentally wrong: 'fore erroneam in statu damnationis laborantem, cum omnibus qui exorbitantes gratias a jure communi et beneficia ecclesiastica sunt adepti.' He further affirms it to be impossible to exempt the cardinals from the charge of simony, and questions the power of the pope. The writer states that he wrote the book in the fifteenth year of the pontificate of Boniface IX, i.e. 1404.

The 'Aureum Speculum' was well known in Germany prior to the Reformation. John Huss referred to it. Manuscript copies of it, without the author's name, were at that time to be found in many continental libraries; a manuscript now in the University Library at Basle seems to present the text followed in the earlier printed editions. It was first published at Basle in 1555, in the 'Antilogia Papæ, hoc est de corrupto ecclesiæ statu,' by Wolfgang Wisseburg, theologian, a work which has been reproduced in the 'Appendix ad Fasciculum Rerum Expetendarum et Fugiendarum,' edited by Edward Brown, 2 vols. fol. London, 1690 (pp. 584–607). Wisseburg says, in his preface, that he was ignorant of the name of the author, but, after commending the work to the reader, adds: 'Mirandum sane esset tam liberam fuisse linguam in tam captivo seculo.' Edward Brown, in his preface to the later reprint, states further: 'Aureum Speculum est a Paulo quodam conterraneo nostro.' A short summary of it is to be found in the 'Catalogus Testium Veritatis qui ante nostram ætatem Pontifici Romano ejusque erroribus reclamaverunt,' by Mathew Flacius, Strasburg, 1562, and in later editions of the same work, Lyons, 1597; Geneva, 1608. It is also noticed in 'Lectionum Memorabilium et Reconditarum Centenarii XVI,' by John Wolf (Wolfius), Lavingæ, 1600. It is given complete, with the author's name, in Goldast's 'Monarchiæ Romani Imperii, sive Tractatus de Jurisdictione Imperiali,' Frankfort, 1621, t. iii. pp. 1527–58, under the title, 'Pauli Decretorum Doctoris Angli, Aureum Speculum Papæ, ejus curiæ, prælatorum et aliorum spiritualium super plenitudine potestatis Papalis, scriptum ante ducentos annos.'

[Fabricius's Bibl. Eccles. v. 197; Oudin's Script. Eccles. iii. 2236; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 582, Append. ad Hist. Lit. de Script. Eccles. a Cave per Wharton, p. 78; Sacra Bibl. Illustr. Arcana Relecta à Theoph. Spizelio, Augsburg, 1668.] J. G. F.

PAUL OF ST. MAGDALEN (1599–1643), Franciscan. [See HEATH, HENRY.]

PAUL, SIR GEORGE ONESIPHORUS (1746–1820), philanthropist, born in 1746 at Woodchester, Gloucestershire, was son of SIR ONESIPHORUS PAUL (1706–1774), who was engaged largely in the manufacture of fine woollen cloths at Woodchester. The father introduced many improvements into the trade, and on 19 March 1748 took out a patent 'for preparing cloths intended to be dyed scarlet, to more effectually ground the colours and preserve their beauty, and for other purposes.' At Woodchester the first napping-mill established in that part of the country was set up by him. In August 1750 he entertained Frederick, prince of Wales, and his suite. In 1760 Paul was sheriff of Gloucestershire, and was knighted on presenting an address from the country to George III on his accession. On 3 Sept. 1762 he was created a baronet. He died on 21 Sept. 1774 at Hill House, Rodborough, Gloucestershire, and was buried in Woodchester churchyard. Paul was thrice married. By his first wife, Jane, daughter of Francis Blackburne of St. Nicholas, Yorkshire, he was father of the philanthropist.

The son matriculated at St. John's College,

Oxford, on 8 Dec. 1763, and was created M.A. of Oxford on 12 Dec. 1766. He took the additional christian name of George in February 1780. He passed several years in travelling on the continent, living in 1767–8 at the courts of Brunswick and Vienna, and afterwards visiting Hungary, Poland, and Italy, and returning through France. In 1780, the year of his return, he was high sheriff of Gloucestershire; and it was then probably that the state of the county gaol and houses of correction began to attract his attention.

At the spring assizes held at Gloucester in 1783 Paul, as foreman of the grand jury, addressed the jurors on the subject of the prevalence of gaol fever, and suggested means of treating it, and of preventing it in the future (*Thoughts on the Alarming Progress of the Gaol Fever*, 1784, 8vo). At a meeting summoned by the high sheriff on 6 Oct., at the grand jury's request, he carried a motion that 'a new gaol and certain new houses of correction' should be built; and a committee, with Paul as chairman, was appointed to carry out the work (*Considerations on the Defects of Prisons*, 1784, 8vo, and 2nd edit. with a postscript).

Paul obtained a special act of parliament, and he himself designed a county gaol at Gloucester, with a penitentiary annexed. The building was opened in 1791. It had a chapel, a dispensary, two infirmaries, and a foul-ward in the upper story; workrooms were provided for debtors, and those who were unable to obtain work from outside were given it on application to a manufacturer, and were allowed to retain two-thirds of what they earned (Neild, *State of the Prisons*). At the same time five new bridewells were erected in various parts of Gloucester. In the preface to Paul's 'Address to the Magistrates of Gloucestershire at the Michaelmas Quarter Sessions, 1789,' with regard to the appointment of officers and the adoption of regulations for the government of the new prisons, he says that the proposed regulations had been 'hastily drawn up for Mr. Howard's perusal previous to his very sudden departure on his forlorn tour to the east.' Paul, though intimately acquainted with Howard's writings, does not seem to have known him personally.

He was interested in the Stroud society for providing gratuitous medical advice and medicine for the neighbouring poor, of which he became president in 1783. He was active in putting down 'slingeing,' or the embezzlement of, and fraudulent dealing in, cloth material. On 14 Aug. 1788 George III, Queen Charlotte, and their three eldest daughters, when on their way to Cheltenham, breakfasted at Hill House with Paul, and visited Obadiah Paul's cloth manufactory at Woodchester Mill. Paul was one of the party who accompanied Sir Walter Scott to the Hebrides in 1810. Scott called him, in a letter to Joanna Baillie (19 July 1810), 'the great philanthropist;' and in one to J. B. Morritt of Rokeby, Scott writes of

> Sir George Paul, for prison-house renowned,
> A wandering knight on high adventure bound.

Paul died on 16 Dec. 1820. On his death the baronetcy expired, but was revived on 3 Sept. 1821 in the person of his cousin, John Dean Paul, eldest son of Dr. Paul of Salisbury, and father of Sir John Dean Paul [q. v.] Besides the pamphlets mentioned above and some insignificant brochures, Paul published: 'Proceedings in the Construction and Regulation of the Prisons and Houses of Correction of the County of Gloucester,' 1810, 8vo.

[Burke's Extinct Baronetage; Foster's Baronetage and Alumni Oxon.; Fisher's Notes and Recollections of Stroud, pp. 122, 126, 178, 180, 182; Neild's State of the Prisons, lv. 244–9; Dict. of Architecture, 1858, vol. vi.; Reuss's Register of Authors, 1804, p. 176; Watt's Bibl. Brit. ii. 737; Fosbroke's Gloucestershire, i. 365; Gent. Mag. 1804, ii. 993; Lockhart's Life of Scott, 1845, pp. 197-9; Paul's Works; Rudder's New Hist. of Gloucestershire, 1779, pp. 841–3; Ann. Reg. 1774, p. 197; Woodcroft's Alphabetical Lists of Patentees.] G. Le G. N.

PAUL, HAMILTON (1773–1854), poet, was born on 10 April 1773 in the parish of Dailly, Ayrshire. He attended the parish school, and afterwards went to Glasgow University, where he had as class-companion Thomas Campbell the poet, with whom he successfully competed for a prize poem. The two poets corresponded long after they had left Glasgow. Leaving the university, Paul became tutor in an Argyllshire family; but his literary bent induced him to become a partner in a printing establishment at Ayr, and for three years he edited the 'Ayr Advertiser.' Licensed to preach by the presbytery on 16 July 1800, he became assistant at Coylton that year, and occupied several similar positions until 1813, when he was presented with the united livings of Broughton, Kilbucho, and Glenholm in Peeblesshire. He died, unmarried, on 28 Feb. 1854, at Broughton.

When at the university Paul had a reputation for improvising witty verses, some of which had a wide college popularity. His first volume of verse, published in 1800, was

entitled 'Paul's First and Second Epistles to the Dearly Beloved the Female Disciples or Female Students of Natural Philosophy in Anderson's Institution, Glasgow.' In 1805 he published a rhymed pamphlet in favour of vaccination ('Vaccination, or Beauty Preserved'); and in 1819 he edited the works of Robert Burns, contributing a memoir and ode in memory of the poet. The volume was commended by Professor Wilson. The first of the Burns clubs started at the beginning of the century found in him an enthusiastic supporter; and to a poetical appeal from his pen is due the preservation of the Auld Brig o' Doon, famous in 'Tam o' Shanter.' But his many effusions were scattered among the newspapers and magazines of his day, and have never been collected. He wrote the account of his parish in the 'New Statistical Account of Scotland' (vol. iii.) Among his friends his reputation as a humourist and story-teller was greater than as a poet. Even in the pulpit he could not be grave, and it is said that his sermons, though learned and able, were preached from texts humorously selected, and were spoiled by jests.

[Scott's Fasti Ecclesiæ, i. 213; Wilson's Poets and Poetry of Scotland, i. 498.] J. R. M.

PAUL, ISABELLA HOWARD (1833?–1879), actress and vocalist, was born at Dartford, Kent, and made her first appearance on the London stage as Isabella Featherstone in March 1853, playing at the Strand, under the management of F. W. Allcroft, Captain Macheath in the 'Beggar's Opera.' Possessing great vivacity and spirit, distinct vocal gifts, and considerable stage talent, she made an immediate mark, and was engaged at Drury Lane and subsequently at the Haymarket, where she played Macheath on 24 April 1854. The same year, with Mr. Howard Paul, whom she married in 1857, she played in the country Paul's 'Locked Out.' In 1858 she took part with him in 'Patchwork,' described as 'a clatter of fun, frolic, song, and impersonation.' On 3 July of the same year she was Sir Launcelot de Lake (sic) in the 'Lancashire Witches, or the Knight and the Giants,' a burlesque included in an entertainment with which George Webster opened the Lyceum. In entertainments given by herself and her husband in town and country in 1860 and successive years, Mrs. Paul's share consisted largely of imitations of Mr. Henry Russell, Mr. Sims Reeves, and other known vocalists, in which she was very successful. On 2 Sept. 1867 she was at the Strand playing Mrs. Dove in her husband's 'Ripples on the Lake.' On 29 Aug. 1872 she played at Covent Garden Mistigris in Boucicault's 'Babil and Bijou,' with music by M. Hervé and Frederick Clay. Her most ambitious effort was her appearance at Drury Lane in February 1869 as Lady Macbeth to the Macbeth of Phelps and Charles Dillon on alternate nights. Anticipating subsequent actresses, she softened Lady Macbeth, subjugating to conjugal love the sterner traits ordinarily assigned the character. With this performance, which was not wanting in intensity, she doubled that of Hecate. She was also seen in Paris in comic opera. At the Olympic she appeared in the 'Grand Duchess,' and she took round the country a company of her own, playing a species of drawing-room entertainment. In November 1877, as Lady Sangazure in the 'Sorcerer' of Mr. Gilbert and Mr. (now Sir Arthur) Sullivan, she appeared at the Opera Comique. This proved to be her last London engagement. While performing at Sheffield in the 'Crisis' in 1879 she was taken suddenly ill; she was brought home to London, and on 6 May 1879 died at her residence, 17 The Avenue, Bedford Park, Turnham Green. She was buried at Brompton cemetery. Mrs. Howard Paul was a woman of ability, whose talents were often frittered away in parts and occupations unworthy of them.

[Personal recollections; Era Newspaper, 15 May 1879; Pascoe's Dramatic List; Scott and Howard's Memoirs of E. L. Blanchard; Era Almanack, various years; Sunday Times, various years.] J. K.

PAUL, JOHN (1707–1787), legal author, son of Josiah Paul of Tetbury, Gloucestershire, by Hester, daughter of Giles Pike of the same place, was born at Highgrove, Tetbury, in 1707. He married Sarah Wight, of Wotton-under-Edge, succeeded to the estate of Highgrove on the death of his father (2 Oct. 1744), and died without issue on 2 Sept. 1787.

Paul was author of the following legal manuals of a popular type, published at London: 1. 'Every Landlord or Tenant his own Lawyer; or the whole Law respecting Landlords, Tenants, and Lodgers,' 1775; 2nd edit., revised by G. Wilson, 1776; 7th edit. 1791, 8vo; 9th edit., revised by J. I. Maxwell, 1806, 8vo. 2. 'The Parish Officer's Compleat Guide; containing the duty of the Churchwarden, Overseer, Constable, and Surveyor of the Highways,' 1776; 6th edit., 1793, 8vo. 3. 'A System of the Laws of Bankruptcy,' 1776, 8vo. 4. 'The Law of Tythes,' 1781, 8vo; 2nd edit., revised by J. I. Maxwell, 1807, 8vo. 5. 'The Compleat Constable,' 1785, 8vo.

[Lee's Tetbury, 1857, p. 221; European Mag. 1787, p. 247; Marvin's Legal Bibliography; Brit. Mus. Cat.] J. M. R.

PAUL, JOHN, D.D. (1777–1848), Irish divine, was born in 1777 at Tobernaveen, near Antrim, where his father, John Paul, was a large farmer. Having determined to become a minister of the reformed presbyterian body, to which his father belonged, he entered the university of Glasgow in 1796, and was licensed to preach at Garvagh on 16 Nov. 1803. He became minister at Loughmourne, near Carrickfergus, co. Antrim, on 11 Sept. 1805, and held the office till his death, mainly residing in Carrickfergus, where he conducted a classical school.

In the Arian controversy which raged in the north of Ireland in the earlier part of this century Paul came prominently into notice. In 1819 he published 'Creeds and Confessions Defended in a Series of Letters addressed to the anonymous Author of "The Battle of the Two Dialogues"' (8vo, Belfast, printed by Joseph Smyth). The motto on the title-page runs: 'Paul, thou art permitted to speak for thyself.' In 1826 he struck another strong blow in the controversy with 'A Refutation of Arianism and Defence of Calvinism' (8vo, Belfast, printed by A. Mackay). This was a reply to the 'Sermons on the Study of the Bible and on the Doctrines of Christianity,' Belfast, 1824, of the Rev. Dr. William Bruce (1757–1841) [q. v.] A speech delivered by Henry Montgomery [q. v.] in 1827, at the annual meeting of the synod of Ulster in Strabane, called forth a third work from Paul in 1828, viz. 'A Review of a Speech by the Rev. Dr. Montgomery of Belfast, and the Doctrines of Unitarians proved to be unfavourable to the Right of Private Judgment, to Liberality, and Charity, to the Investigation of Truth and the practise of Virtue' (8vo, Belfast, printed by A. Mackay, jun.) These three publications attained a very large circulation. Their keen and incisive logic and vigorous style constituted them powerful factors in the discussions which evoked them.

Paul became involved in another controversy with a brother minister of the reformed presbyterian body, the Rev. Thomas Houston, D.D., of Knockbracken, near Belfast, the point in dispute being the province of 'the civil magistrate.' He published several pamphlets on the question, the chief being 'A Review of the Rev. Thomas Houston's "Christian Magistrate," and a Defence of the Principles of Civil and Religious Liberty' (8vo, Belfast, 1833). Eventually the controversy reached the synod of the reformed presbyterian church, and divided it into two bodies—one, the 'Reformed Presbyterian Synod of Ireland,' adhering to the views of Houston; and the other, the 'Eastern Reformed Presbyterian Synod of Ireland,' holding by those of Paul. But, though a keen polemic, he was kind and amiable, and was universally respected. He died at Carrickfergus on 16 March 1848.

His three works on the Arian controversy were republished in one volume in 1855 under the editorship of Stewart Bates, D.D., of Glasgow, who prefixed a memoir and introduction to them.

Paul married, in 1807, Miss Rachel Smith of Ballyearl, co. Antrim, by whom he had several children, one of whom became the wife of the Rev. Dr. Bates, Glasgow, mentioned above.

[Memoir by Bates prefixed to Paul's works; Reid's Hist. of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland, vol. iii.; information kindly supplied by the Rev. Dr. Chancellor, Belfast, and Mrs. Merrylees, Dullaton, Glasgow (Paul's granddaughter).] T. H.

PAUL, SIR JOHN DEAN (1802–1868), banker, born on 27 Oct. 1802, the eldest son of Sir John Dean Paul, bart., a London banker, by his first wife, Frances Eleanor, youngest daughter of John Simpson of Bradley Hall, Durham, was admitted to Westminster School on 24 April 1811, but left in the same year, and subsequently went to Eton. He became a partner in the firm of Snow, Paul, & Paul, bankers and navy agents, of No. 217 Strand, in 1828, and on the death of his father on 16 Jan. 1852 he succeeded to the baronetcy. On 11 June 1855 the firm, which then consisted of William Strahan, Paul, and Robert Makin Bates, suspended payment. During the bankruptcy proceedings which immediately ensued a list of securities to the amount of 113,625*l.*, belonging to their clients, but which had been fraudulently sold or deposited by the bankrupts, was voluntarily handed into the court signed by the three members of the firm. Criminal proceedings were thereupon taken against them, and on 26 Oct. 1855 the three partners were indicted at the Old Bailey before Baron Alderson for having illegally converted to their own use certain Danish bonds of the value of 5,000*l.* entrusted to them as bankers for safe custody by Dr. John Griffith, canon of Rochester. Paul was defended by Serjeant Byles, who admitted that the bonds were disposed of by his client, but argued that Paul's intention to replace them was shown by the subsequent purchase of other bonds to a similar amount, though they, too, were afterwards

sold in a similar manner. He also endeavoured to maintain that Paul, having made a full disclosure in the bankruptcy court, was no longer liable to a criminal prosecution. Sir Frederick Thesiger contended on behalf of Strahan that the sale of the bonds was made solely by Paul, who alone received the proceeds, and that there was no proof that Strahan was privy to the transaction; while Edwin James declared that his client Bates was totally ignorant of the whole affair. On the following morning all three partners were found guilty, and severally sentenced to transportation for fourteen years. The debts proved against the firm amounted in round numbers to three-quarters of a million, and the dividend eventually realised came to 3*s*. 2*d*. in the pound. The business was taken over by the London and Westminster Bank, and a branch office was established by them on the premises formerly occupied by the bankrupt firm. Paul, who was reputed to be a man of the highest religious principles, died at St. Albans, Hertfordshire, on 7 Sept. 1868, aged 65. He married, first, on 10 Oct. 1826, Georgiana, third daughter of Charles George Beauclerk of St. Leonard's Lodge, Sussex, by whom he had an only son, Aubrey John Dean Paul, who succeeded him in the baronetcy. She died on 25 Dec. 1847. Paul married, secondly, on 17 Jan. 1849, Susan, daughter of John Ewens of Brighton, who died on 3 June 1854. He married, thirdly, on 17 Oct. 1861, Jane Constance, daughter of Thomas Brigden of Holmesdale House, Surrey. He had no issue by his second or third wife. His widow died on 21 Dec. 1877.

Paul illustrated 'The Country Doctor's Horse: a Tale in Verse,' written by his father, and privately printed in 1847 (London, obl. fol.) He was the author of: 1. 'Harmonies of Scripture, and Short Lessons for Young Christians,' London, 1846, 16mo. 2. 'Bible Illustrations; or the Harmony of the Old and New Testament . . . To which is added a Paraphrase of the Book of Esther. The above works are from MSS. purchased at the sale of Sir John Dean Paul,' London, 1855, 12mo. 3. 'A B C of Foxhunting, consisting of twenty-six coloured illustrations by the late Sir John Dean Paul, bart.' London, [1871], 4to.

[Price's Handbook of London Bankers, 1876, pp. 128–30; Criminal Court Proceedings, 1854–1855, xlii. 695–709; Cox's Reports of Cases in Criminal Law, 1858, vii. 85–8; Irving's Annals of our own Time, 1869, pp. 295–6, 302–3; Annual Register, 1855, Chron. pp. 98–104, 359–75; Times, 12 and 15 Sept. 1868; Mr. Serjeant Ballantine's Experiences of a Barrister's Life, 1890, p. 198; Burke's Peerage, 1892, p. 1085; Foster's Baronetage, 1881, p. 487; Stapylton's Eton School Lists, 1864, p. 91; Barker and Stenning's Westminster School Register, 1892, p. 179; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. x. 247, 312–13; Brit. Mus. Cat.] G. F. R. B.

PAUL, LEWIS (*d*. 1759), inventor of spinning machinery, was the son of one Dr. Paul, who died when Lewis was very young. The boy was left under the guardianship of Lord Shaftesbury, and his brother, the Hon. Maurice Ashley Cooper. In February 1728 he married Sarah Meade (formerly Bull), the widow and executrix of Robert Meade, solicitor, of Aylesbury, who had been solicitor to Philip, duke of Wharton. His wife died in September 1729. About this time he invented a machine for pinking shrouds, from which he derived considerable profit. Dr. Johnson's friend, Mrs. Desmoulins, was in early life a pupil of Paul in learning the art of pinking.

In 1738 he took out a patent (No. 562) for 'a machine or engine for spinning of wool and cotton in a manner entirely new.' He is described as 'of Birmingham, gentleman,' and he seems to have lived in Birmingham for many years. The invention comprised in this patent was of the greatest importance, and is in use in every cotton-mill in the world. It is known as 'roller-spinning,' and consists of two pairs of rollers of small diameter, one pair revolving at a slightly greater velocity than the other. 'Slivers' of cotton or wool are passed through these rollers, and are stretched or 'drawn' in a regular manner, the second pair of rollers pulling the sliver forward faster than the first pair delivers it.

Paul set up a mill at Birmingham, and he obtained the assistance of John Wyatt, a skilful mechanic, and apparently a man of some means, as he was in a position to lend money to Paul. A claim has been set up on Wyatt's behalf to be regarded as the actual inventor of spinning by rollers, and the matter has given rise to much discussion [see Wyatt, John, 1700–1766]. The enterprise was largely helped by Thomas Warren, a well-known Birmingham printer; Edward Cave, of the 'Gentleman's Magazine;' Dr. Robert James, of fever-powder celebrity; Mrs. Desmoulins, and others. Dr. Johnson took much interest in the scheme. A mill was also started at Northampton, but this and the Birmingham concern were both failures; and the invention did not become a commercial success until it was taken up by Arkwright many years afterwards. To the Birmingham free library Wyatt's descendants presented a hank

of yarn spun by Paul's machine, worked 'by asses walking round its axis, in a large warehouse in the Upper Priory at Birmingham, about the year 1741.'

Paul patented in 1748 (No. 636) a machine for carding cotton, wool, and other fibres, which contains the first suggestion of a circular or continuous carding engine, and of a comb for stripping off the carding. His claim to this invention is not disputed by the friends of John Wyatt (see BAINES, *Cotton Manufacture*, p. 172). It was tried both in Birmingham and Northampton, and when the establishment at the last-named town was broken up, the carding-machine was bought by a hat manufacturer at Leominster, and was introduced into Lancashire about 1760 (Kennedy in *Mem. Lit. and Phil. Soc. Manchester*, v. 326, 2nd ser.)

In June 1758 Paul took out a third patent (No. 724) for a spinning-machine, which is described in great detail in the specification and with the aid of drawings. It appears from the patent that he was then living at 'Kensington Gravel Pits.' This machine is evidently the one referred to in Dyer's poem of the 'Fleece,' published in 1757, and the description corresponds so closely to the drawings in the specification that Dyer must have seen the machine at work. The discrepancy in the dates may be explained by the supposition that Paul had completed his machine before taking out a patent.

He endeavoured to get the machine introduced into the Foundling Hospital, and the letter which he addressed to the president, the Duke of Bedford, was drafted by Dr. Johnson. It is without date, and is printed in Brownlow's 'History of the Foundling Hospital' (p. 64).

A letter from Dr. Johnson to Paul, containing a suggestion for obtaining money from Cave, is preserved in the Patent Office Library, London. Others are in the possession of Mr. Samuel Timmins of Birmingham. There are two deeds between Paul and Cave, dated 1740, in the British Museum (*Add. Ch.* 5972–3).

Paul died in April 1759 at Brook Green, Kensington, and was buried at Paddington, 30 April. He left a will dated 1 May 1758, the probate of which is in the British Museum (*Add. Ch.* 5974).

[About 1850 Robert Cole, a well-known collector of autographs, purchased a quantity of papers that had been removed from a lawyer's office in Gray's Inn. Among them were several hundred letters addressed to Paul, including thirteen letters from Dr. Johnson, about twenty from Edward Cave, between thirty and forty from Dr. Robert James, besides a number of legal documents bearing upon the history of Paul's inventions. Mr. Cole made use of these materials in the preparation of a memoir of Paul, which he read at the meeting of the British Association at Leeds in 1858. It is published in full in the appendix to G. J. French's Life of Samuel Crompton, 1859, and it forms the sole source of information respecting Paul's career. At Mr. Cole's death nearly the whole of the papers were purchased by the Birmingham Free Library, but before they had been thoroughly examined and catalogued they were unfortunately destoyed in the fire which took place in 1879. A rough list of the papers was published in the Birmingham Weekly Post, 29 Sept. 1877. A number of Cave's letters to Paul were printed in the same newspaper for 22 and 29 Aug. 1891, and some of Thomas Warren's letters appeared in the numbers for 29 Dec. 1891, and following weeks. These letters were purchased by private owners, and so escaped the fire. See also Baines's History of the Cotton Manufacture, pp. 119–141, 172; Cole's Memoir in French's Life of Crompton, p. 249; articles in Centralblatt für die Textil-Industrie (Berlin), 22 and 29 Nov. and 6 Dec. 1892.] R. B. P.

PAUL, ROBERT BATEMAN (1798–1877), miscellaneous writer, eldest son of the Rev. Richard Paull, rector of Mawgan in Pydar, Cornwall (*d.* 7 Dec. 1805), by Frances, daughter of the Rev. Robert Bateman, rector of Mawgan and St. Columb-Major, Cornwall, was born at St. Columb-Major on 21 March 1798. He was educated at Truro grammar school and at Exeter College, Oxford, where he matriculated on 10 Oct. 1815. In 1817 he obtained an Eliot exhibition from his school, and on 30 June 1817 he was elected a fellow of his college. He took a second class in classics in 1819, and graduated B.A. 1 July 1820, M.A. 16 Feb. 1822. After having been ordained in the English church, and holding to January 1824 the curacy of Probus in his native county, he returned to Oxford. In 1825 he was appointed bursar and tutor of his college, and during 1826–7 he served as public examiner in classics, but he vacated his fellowship on 11 Jan. 1827 by his marriage to Rosa Mira, daughter of the Rev. Richard Twopenny, rector of Little Casterton, near Stamford. From 30 June 1825 to 1 Aug. 1829 he held the college living of Long Wittenham, Berkshire, and from 1829 to 1835 he was vicar of Llantwit-Major with Llyswarney in Glamorganshire. Paul remained without preferment for some time, but in 1845 he was licensed to the incumbency of St. John, Kentish Town, London. This benefice he retained until 1848, and from that year to 1851 he held the vicarage of St. Augustine, Bristol. Early in 1851 he

emigrated to New Zealand, where he settled near Lyttelton, acting for a time as commissary of the bishop, and from 1855 to 1860 as archdeacon of Waimea or Nelson. Shortly after 1860 he returned to England, and in February 1864 was appointed to the rectory of St. Mary, Stamford, which he resigned on account of old age in 1872. In 1867 he became a prebendary of Lincoln, and in the next year he obtained the confratership of Browne's Hospital at Stamford, which he held until his death. He died at Barnhill, Stamford, on 6 June 1877, and was buried on 9 June in Little Casterton churchyard. His widow died at 35 Norland Square, London, on 4 Oct. 1882. They had issue four daughters.

Paul wrote many works. He published 'An Analysis of Aristotle's Ethics' in 1829, and of the 'Rhetoric' in 1830. A second edition of the 'Ethics' came out in 1837, and it was reissued, 'revised and corrected, with general questions added,' by J. B. Worcester, in 1879. He compiled a 'History of Germany,' 'on the plan of Mrs. Markham's histories for the use of young persons,' in 1847, and from 1847 to 1851 he published numerous editions of the plays of Sophocles, with notes from German editors, and many translations of German handbooks on ancient and mediæval geography, Greek and Roman antiquities, and kindred subjects. His books on New Zealand—entitled (1) 'Some Account of the Canterbury Settlement,' 1854; (2) 'Letters from Canterbury,' 1857; (3) 'New Zealand as it was, and as it is,' 1861—contain accurate and valuable information on the history and progress of the colony. In early life Paul published 'A Journal of a Tour to Moscow in the Summer of 1836,' and when an old man he wrote, under the pseudonym of 'the late James Hamley Tregenna,' a novel in two volumes called 'The Autobiography of a Cornish Rector,' 1872, which embodied many incidents in local history and many curious details of folklore, the recollections of youthful days passed in North Cornwall.

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Boase's Exeter Coll. ed. 1894, p. 168; Jewers's St. Columb-Major Registers, pp. 127, 173; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. i. 431–3, iii. 1303; Boase's Collectanea Cornub. pp. 662, 1394–5; Lincoln, Rutland, and Stamford Mercury, 8 June 1877; Stamford and Rutland Guardian, 8 and 15 June 1877.] W. P. C.

PAUL, WILLIAM DE (*d.* 1349), bishop of Meath, is said to have been a native of Kent by Villiers de Saint-Etienne, but of Yorkshire by Cogan (*Diocese of Meath*, i. 76). He entered the Carmelite order, and studied at Oxford, where he graduated D.D., and subsequently at Paris. In 1309, at a congregation of the order held at Genoa, he was elected provincial of the Carmelites in England and Scotland, and in 1327 was provided by John XXII to the see of Meath, and consecrated at Avignon, his temporalities being restored to him on 24 July. He held the see for twenty-two years, and died in July 1349.

By Bale, Pits, Fabricius, Leland, and Ware, Paul is confused with William Pagula [q. v.]; he is also stated to have written several theological and other works, none of which are known to be extant, and most of which have also been attributed to Pagula (see VILLIERS DE SAINT-ETIENNE, *Bibl. Carm.* i. 605–6, for a list of them, and discussion as to their supposed authorship).

[Authorities quoted; Cal. Patent Rolls, 1317–1330, p. 139; Pits, p. 363; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hibern.; Ware's Irish Bishops and Writers, ed. Harris; Cotton's Fasti, iii. 113; Paradisus Carmelitici Decoris a Alegre de Casanate, p. 270; Lezana's Annales Carmel. iv. ad annos 1280, 1309, 1313; Possevin's Apparatus Sacer; Cogan's Diocese of Meath, i. 76.] A. F. P.

PAUL, WILLIAM (1599–1665), bishop of Oxford, baptised at St. Leonard's, Eastcheap, 14 Oct. 1599, was a younger son (one of sixteen children) of William Paul, a butcher and citizen, of Eastcheap, London, and his wife Joane, daughter of John Harrison, beadle of the Butchers' Company (CHESTER, *Westminster Abbey Reg.*; FOSTER, *Alumni*). He went to Oxford in 1614, and matriculated 15 Nov. 1616 from All Souls'. He became a fellow of All Souls' 'about all Saints time 1618,' graduated B.A. 9 June 1618, M.A. 1 June 1621, B.D. 13 March 1628–9, and D.D. 10 March 1631–2. Barlow declared that he answered the divinity act the most satisfactorily of any person he had heard (*State Papers*, Dom. Car. I, ccxx. 35).

After taking holy orders he was a frequent preacher in Oxford (WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 828), and was rector of a mediety of Patshall, Staffordshire, from 7 Feb. 1625–6 till 1628 (*Lansd. MS.* 986, f. 44). In 1632 or 1633 he became rector of Baldwin-Brightwell, Oxfordshire, and 'about that time' was also made chaplain to Charles I, and canon-residentiary of Chichester, holding the prebend of Seaford. After the outbreak of the war the lords resolved (5 Oct. 1642) that he should be allowed to attend the king as chaplain in ordinary (*Lords' Journal*, v. 386; *Commons' Journals*, ii. 795; *State Papers*, Dom. Car. I, ccccxcvii. 97).

On the triumph of the parliament's cause he lost his prebend of Chichester as a delinquent (WALKER, *Sufferings of the Clergy*, ii. 12), but he was 'discharged by the committee for sequestrations' (*Cal. of Comm. for Compounding*, v. 27 *a*; see also vol. G. ccxvii. 54). According to Lloyd, he was a shrewd man of business, and lent money to advantage, 'to the most considerable' among the independents (cf. *Cal. of Clarendon Papers*, ii. 171). At the Restoration he again became royal chaplain, and recovered his Seaford prebend and his Oxford livings. He became vicar of Amport, Hampshire, in 1662. He was presented to the deanery of Lichfield 26 Jan. 1660–1, and took part in the election of Hacket as bishop of Coventry and Lichfield (*State Papers*, Dom. Car. II, Case A.8). On 16 June 1663 a congé d'élire was despatched for his election to the bishopric of Oxford. He was confirmed 13 Dec., consecrated at Lambeth on the 20th, and enthroned 7 Jan. 1663–4. Three days previous to his election a warrant of commendam was issued, granting him liberty to hold the rectories of Baldwin-Brightwell and Chinnor (Entry Book, 12, p. 41, 11 Nov. 1663). Sheldon and the king expected that Paul would devote his wealth to rebuilding the bishop's palace at Cuddesden, and he 'bought and laid in at Cuddesden a considerable quantity of timber; but before anything could be done he died' at Chinnor (24 Aug. 1665). He was buried at Baldwin-Brightwell, where a monument, with a long inscription, was erected (*Lansd. MS.* 986, f. 44). His will, dated 14 Nov. 1664, was proved 21 Feb. 1665–6.

Paul married, in 1632, by license of the dean of Westminster, Mary, daughter of Sir Henry Glenham, knt., and sister of the Viscountess of Dorchester. The marriage led to a suit between Paul and the viscountess, 'as to her promise in consideration of the marriage to pay 600*l.* to be deposited in the hands of trustees for him and her.' The difference was referred to the archbishop of Canterbury and the lord keeper, and they found the viscountess willing 'to pay 250*l.*' (28 Feb. 1633–4; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. ii. 46). Paul's first wife died in 1633, and was buried at Baldwin-Brightwell. On 22 Jan. 1634–5 he married, at St. Giles-in-the-fields, Alice, second daughter of Thomas Cutler of Ipswich. She died soon after, 19 Nov. 1635, and was buried in Westminster Abbey on 20 Nov. Almost immediately after Paul married a third wife, Rachel, daughter of Sir Christopher Clitherow, knt., by whom he had a numerous family. Her portrait was engraved by D. Loggan. Paul's eldest son, William, of Bray in Berkshire, was knighted at Windsor 6 July 1671 (LE NEVE, *Knights*, Harl. Soc., viii. 249). The male line died out in the second generation. The female is now represented by the Baroness Le Despenser, whose ancestor, Sir William Stapleton, bart., married the heiress of Paul's only surviving grandson (CHESTER, *Westminster Abbey Reg.*)

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. and Fasti; Le Neve's Fasti; Lloyd's Memoires, p. 611; Foster's Alumni; Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, ii. 12; Foster's London Marriage Licenses; Chester's Westminster Abbey Reg. p. 131; Hist. MSS. Comm. Reports and State Papers, Dom. ubi supra; Lansd. MS. 986, f. 44; Lords' and Commons' Journals; Harl Soc. Publ. xiii. 249; Simms's Bibliotheca Staffordiensis; information from the Rev. Hilgrove Coxe, rector of Brightwell.]

W. A. S.

PAUL, WILLIAM (1678–1716), Jacobite, born in 1678, was the eldest son of John Paul, who possessed the small estate of Little Ashby, near Lutterworth, Leicestershire, his mother being a daughter of Mr. Barfoot of Streatfields, Warwickshire. He received his early education at a school kept by Thomas Sargreave, rector of Leire, Leicestershire, and at Rugby, which he entered in 1696 (*Register of Rugby School*). In 1698 he went to St. John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1701, and M.A. in 1705. Shortly after leaving the university he became curate at Carlton Curlieu, near Harborough, Leicestershire, acting at the same time as chaplain to Sir Geoffrey Palmer [q. v.] He went thence to Tamworth, Staffordshire, where he was also usher in the free school; and subsequently became curate at Nuneaton, Warwickshire. From Nuneaton he was promoted to the vicarage of Orton-on-the-Hill, Leicestershire, being installed on 5 May 1709, after taking the oaths to Queen Anne and abjuring the Pretender. On the outbreak of the rebellion in 1715 he set out with others to join the Jacobite forces in Lancashire. On the way north he was seized by Major Bradshaw, but was again set at liberty by Colonel Noel, a justice of the peace. He succeeded in joining the rebels at Lancaster, and at Preston induced Robert Patten [q.v.] to permit him to read the prayers. This permission, Patten affirms, he granted him unwillingly, because he was in lay dress; and he read prayers three times for the Pretender as king. He left Preston just before it was invested, and, although taken by General Wills, was discharged. After the rout of the rebels he went south to his own county, and thence to London, where he appeared in coloured clothes, laced hat, full-bottomed wig,

and a sword by his side. While in St. James's Park he was accidentally met by Thomas Bird, a justice of the peace for his county, who knew him, and took him prisoner 12 Dec. 1715. He was carried to the Duke of Devonshire's, and thence to Lord Townshend's. After examination he was committed to a messenger's house, and fourteen days afterwards he was sent to Newgate. He was brought to the exchequer bar at Westminster 31 May 1716, when he pleaded not guilty; but when brought again to the bar 15 June he withdrew his former plea, and acknowledged his guilt. After sentence of death was passed he expressed the deepest penitence for his conduct, and wrote letters to the king, the lord chief justice, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, soliciting mercy, in which he asserted that he now detested and abhorred the rebellion from the bottom of his soul. Finding, however, that these professions were ineffectual to save his life, he again entirely changed his attitude. On the scaffold he appeared in the canonical habit of the church of England; declared that he was a true son of the church, not as it was now—schismatical—and that he died in the real nonjuring one, free from rebellion and schism. He, moreover, asked pardon of all he had scandalised by pleading guilty, and of his God and king for having violated his loyalty 'by taking most abominable oaths in defence of usurpation' against his 'lawful sovereign King James the third.' He was hanged, drawn, and quartered at Tyburn on 13 July. A portrait of Paul has been engraved in an oval along with John Hall, who was executed on the same gallows. The engraver is supposed to have been Vertue.

[A True Copy of the Papers delivered to the Sheriffs of London by William Paul, a Clergyman, and John Hall, Esq., 1716; The Devil's Martyrs, or Plain Dealing, in answer to the Jacobite Speeches of those two Perjured Rebels, William Paul, a Clergyman, and John Hall, a Justice of the Peace, by John Dunton, 1716; Remarks on the Speeches of Wm. Paul, Clerk, and John Hall, of Otterburn, Esq., 1716; The Thanks of an Honest Clergyman for Mr. Paul's Speech at Tyburn, 1716; Patten's Hist. of the Rebellion; Granger's Biographical History of England.] T. F. H.

**PAULDEN, THOMAS** (1626–1710?), royalist, son of William Paulden of Wakefield, by his wife Susannah, daughter of Edward Binns of Horbury, Yorkshire, was born in Wakefield in January 1625–6 (baptised on 25 Jan., parish register). He entered the army, and served the king during the civil war with unflinching devotion. He was probably the Captain Paulden who was taken prisoner at Naseby on 14 June 1645 (Rushworth, pt. iv. vol. i. p. 48). In 1647 he was attending meetings of loyal gentlemen at South Kirkby and the neighbourhood, and privately enlisted disbanded troops, both horse and foot. He and his brothers William (1618–1648) and Timothy (1622–1648) seem to have been the sole confidants of the royalist colonel John Morris [q. v.], to whom Overton, the parliamentary governor of Pontefract Castle, had promised to betray the castle. The removal of Overton to Hull in November 1647 rendered the plan impracticable. The royalists—the Pauldens among them—made an unsuccessful attempt at a surprise on 18 May 1648. In the successful capture of the castle by Morris on 3 June Thomas Paulden took no part, but he and his brothers were active during the siege that followed, commanding sallies, acting on councils of war, and settling points of dissension among the garrison. In October 1648 Colonel Thomas Rainsborough [q. v.] arrived from London to reinforce the besieging party, and was quartered at Doncaster, twelve miles from Pontefract. William Paulden then devised a scheme for seizing the person of Rainsborough. On 27 Oct., at midnight, he and twenty-two picked men left for Doncaster, which they reached at 7.30 on the morning of the 28th. After disarming the guard, four men, under pretence of bearing despatches from Cromwell, entered Rainsborough's room and claimed him as their prisoner. Rainsborough, being unarmed, offered no resistance. But, when downstairs, he 'saw himself, his lieutenant, and his sentinel at his door prisoners to three men and one that held their horses, without any party to second them;' he cried for arms, and a scuffle ensued, in which Rainsborough was killed. Paulden's party returned to Pontefract Castle unhurt the same evening, 29 Oct. The occurrence was reported in London as a deliberate murder (*A Full and Exact Relation*, 30 Oct.; *Bloody Newes from the Army*, 31 Oct. E. 470 [4 and 5]).

On the arrival of Cromwell early in November the garrison at Pontefract was closely shut up in the castle. Part of the building was blown up, and sickness prevailed among the men. But they held out till the end of February 1649, when a message from Prince Charles (whom they had at once proclaimed on his father's execution) excused them from further resistance. On 3 March overtures were made to the besiegers under Lambert. Six commissioners, of whom Thomas Paulden was one, unsuccessfully endeavoured to treat in behalf of the besieged garrison. On 10 March negotiations were renewed, when Paulden raised

objections to the demand that six of the garrison (unnamed) should be 'delivered to mercy.' But on 17 March a surrender was concluded without his aid. Of the three brothers, Thomas was the only one living when the castle surrendered on 24 March 1649. William died of fever during the siege in October 1648, and Timothy, who had left the castle in July 1648 and 'marched presently for the north,' was killed at Wigan in August 1648 while a major of horse under the Earl of Derby. Their father, William Paulden of Wakefield, compounded for delinquency in adhering to the forces against parliament in July 1649.

Thomas Paulden went abroad and joined Charles II in his exile. He paid several secret visits to England, and was once betrayed and brought before Cromwell. He denied his name, but was sent to the Gatehouse, from which he escaped by throwing salt and pepper into the keeper's eyes. In 1652 and 1654 he received payments on the king's account, and in May 1657 was supplying Hyde with intelligence as to the strength of the forces under Sir William Lockhart [q. v.] (*Cal. Clarendon State Papers*, ii. 168, 385, iii. 300, 307). At the Restoration he returned to England, and was assisted in his poverty by the Duke of Buckingham. In January 1665–6 he wrote a quaint letter to Christopher Hatton, thanking him for kindness done to him. In April 1668 the king requested the treasury commissioners to recommend him to the office of commissioner of excise 'on the first vacancy.' In February 1692 he was in great money difficulties, and wrote to Lord Hatton, begging to be taken into his household as a servant, in order to be saved from a debtor's prison. He probably died before 1710. Thoresby, in his 'Diary' under date 18 July 1710 (ii. 62), mentions a visit he paid at York to 'the two aged virgins, Mrs. Pauldens, about 80 years old,' who spoke to him of four memorable brothers of theirs. The registers at Wakefield record the baptisms of Sarah on 18 Feb. 1627–8, and of Maria on 5 Sept. 1632, daughters of William Paulden; and of a son George, on 19 Dec. 1629.

Paulden published 'Pontefract Castle: an Account how it was taken, and how General Rainsborough was surprised in his quarters at Doncaster,' The Savoy, 1702; London, 1719 (for the benefit of his widow); Oxford, 1747; and in Somers's 'Tracts,' 1812, vii. 3–9.

[Thoresby's Ducatus Leodiensis, p. 36; Surtees Soc. Miscellany, xxxvii. 85–115; Fox's Hist. of Pontefract, pp. 231–56; Paulden's Pontefract Castle, passim; Archæologia, xlvi. 45–8, 54–63; Holmes's Hist. of Pontefract (Sieges of Pontefract Castle), ii. 154–63, 216–27, 239, 292–324; Addit. MSS. 21417 ff. 36, 40, 59, 61, 65–70 (Baynes Corresp.), 29551 f. 155, 29565, ff. 136–7 (Hatton Corresp.); Cal. of State Papers, Dom. Ser. 1667–8, p. 327; Proceedings of the Committee for Compounding, p. 2111; Hist. MSS. Comm. 12th Rep. App. v. p. 12; Cal. of Clarendon State Papers, i. 461.] B. P.

PAULE, Sir GEORGE (1563?–1637), registrar of the court of high commission and biographer of Whitgift, was, according to his petition to the king in 1631, born about 1563, and perhaps belonged to the family of Paule of Westhartburne or Goosepoole, Durham (Surtees, *Durham*, iii. 220). By his twenty-first year he was servant to Archbishop Whitgift at Lambeth (Strype, *Whitgift*, i. 418). On 10 March 1586 he was granted the lease for twenty-one years of the parsonage of Graveney, Kent, bearing a rent of 7*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, being part of the lands of the see of Canterbury. This unexpired lease was renewed on 26 June 1590 for a like term (*State Papers*, Dom. Eliz. 1590, p. 158). On 21 Nov. 1588 Anthony Calton, registrar of the bishopric of Ely, assigned his interest in his office to Paule, but Paule disposed of it to Sir John Lambe in 1600 (*ib.*). In Elizabeth's parliament of 1597 he sat for Downton, Wiltshire (*Return of Members*, i. 435). By 1599 Paule, although still described as the archbishop's 'servant,' had succeeded to the post of comptroller of Whitgift's household (Strype, *Whitgift*, i. 507). In Elizabeth's last parliament Paule sat as member for Hindon, Wiltshire. On 16 May 1603 he received, along with John Plumer, grant of the office of registrar and clerk of the acts (*State Papers*, Dom. James I, Proct. book, p. 3). He was with Whitgift during his last illness, and 'gave this testimony that he died like a lamb' (Strype, *Whitgift*, i. 507). On 5 July 1607 he was knighted by James at Whitehall (Metcalfe, *Book of Knights*, p. 158). In 1612 he published, with a dedication to Archbishop Abbot, his 'Life of Whitgift;' and it is clear that he retained the favour of Whitgift's successor. He also attracted the notice of Buckingham, through whom he obtained legal work for the crown. On 30 March 1621 he received a grant, along with Sir Robert Heath, solicitor-general, of the survivorship of the office of chief clerk for enrolling pleas in the king's bench. He held the office, he said later, under or for the Duke of Buckingham (*State Papers*, Dom. James I, xcvii. 123, xcviii. 15). In July 1621 he quarrelled with the lord treasurer, Lionel Cranfield, earl of Middlesex, and begged leave of Buckingham to prefer his

petition against him in parliament, asserting that the latter 'would be found more corrupt than the late lord chancellor,' i.e. Bacon (*ib.* cxxii. 20, 12 July 1621).

In the following year he declared, in a letter to Buckingham from Lambeth, against the levy of a benevolence without parliamentary sanction, and suggested in place of it a tax of 1*d.* or 2*d.* in the shilling on necessary commodities (*ib.* cxxviii., 25 March 1622). In 1623, 1624, and 1628 he was included, as a friend of Buckingham, with others in the commission for the examination of the duke's estates and revenue. Before 1625 Paule received the post of principal registrar to the high commissioners for causes ecclesiastical, and to his majesty's judges delegates (see *State Papers* under date 16 Jan. and 1 Feb. 1625, clxxxii. 1). He was returned for Bridgnorth for the parliament of 1625. Later in the same year he wrote from Twickenham to inform Secretary Conway in a calm constitutional tone of the opposition in Middlesex and Surrey to the raising of money on privy seals (*State Papers*, Dom. Car. I, viii. 34, 24 Oct. 1625). He was returned for the succeeding parliament of 1627–8 as member for Bridgnorth, along with Sir Richard Sheldon or Shilton [q. v.], solicitor-general. In 1629 he resigned his post of chief clerk in the king's bench (*ib.* Dom. dclii. 27). In 1631 he successfully petitioned the king (17 March) for 'a dispensation to exempt him from shrievalty and other services, in consideration of his infirmities, being sixty-eight years of age' (*ib.* Dom. Car. I, clxxxvi. 104, 17 March 1631).

Paule died shortly before 16 April 1635. After much dispute, John Oldbury became registrar to the high commission court, in succession to Paule, on condition of paying to Paule's son George, the king's ward, and to Dame Rachel Paule, the widow, 40*l.* per annum (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 6th Rep. p. 79 *b*). Subsequently one Francis Paule obtained the office, and much litigation between him and Dame Rachel followed until 1645.

Paule wrote: 'The Life of the most reverend and religious Prelate, John Whitgift, Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, written by Sir George Paule, Knt., Comptroller of his Grace's Household,' London, 1612, 4to. Republished 1699, London, 'to which is added a treatise intituled Conspiracy for pretended Reformation,' by Richard Cosin [q. v.], 1591. The 'Life' only was reprinted in C. Wordsworth's 'Ecclesiastical Biography,' 1878, iv. 311–401.

[State Papers, Dom. ubi supra; Hist. MSS. Comm. 4th Rep. pp. 33, 47, 6th Rep. pp. 79, 87; Brydges's Restituta, i. 110, 193; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. ix. 46; Strype's Whitgift, ubi supra; Whitgift's Works (Parker Soc.), vols. iii. vi. xi.; Metcalfe's Book of Knights, p. 158; Return of Members of Parliament.] W. A. S.

## PAULET. [See also POWLET.]

PAULET or POULET, SIR AMIAS or AMYAS (*d.* 1538), soldier, was son of Sir William Paulet of Hinton St. George, Somerset, by Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of John Deneland of Hinton St. George. Connected with his family were the Paulets of Nunney Castle, Somerset. The common ancestor, Sir John Paulet of Paulet, lived in the time of Edward III. John Paulet (*d.* 1470 ?) of Nunney had, by Eleanor, daughter and coheiress of Robert Roos of Gedney and Irton, Lincolnshire, a son, SIR JOHN PAULET (*fl.* 1500), who was a commander at the battle of Blackheath in 1497 (cf. *Rot Parl.* vi. 541), and was made a knight of the Bath at the marriage of Prince Arthur on 14 Nov. 1501. He married Alice, daughter of Sir William Paulet of Hinton St. George, and by her had, among other children, William, marquis of Winchester, who is separately noticed (COLLINS, *Peerage*, ed. Brydges, ii. 369; METCALFE, *Knights*, p. 35).

Amyas Paulet was brought up a Lancastrian. He was attainted after Buckingham's rebellion in 1483, and duly restored in 1485 (*Rot. Parl.* vi. 246, 273); on 5 Nov. 1485 he was appointed sheriff for Somerset and Dorset, and he was frequently in the commission of the peace. He was a very active and officious country gentleman, and there is doubtless truth in the tradition that when Wolsey came to take possession of the benefice of Lymington in Hampshire, Paulet clapped him in the stocks (CAVENDISH, *Wolsey*, ed. Singer, i. 6). He was knighted on 16 June 1487, after the battle of Stoke. When Perkin Warbeck's rebellion had failed, he was employed in collecting the fines of those implicated. He was one of the west-country gentlemen who had to meet Catherine of Arragon at Crewkerne on 17 Oct. 1501, when she was on her way to London.

In Henry VIII's time he began a military career, and commanded twenty-five men in the expedition to the north of France in 1513. But he seems to have been called to the bar, for in 1521 he was treasurer of the Middle Temple. Wolsey, now chancellor, in revenge for the indignity which Paulet had once put upon him, ordered Paulet not to quit London without leave; and so he had to live in the Middle Temple for five or six years. To propitiate Wolsey, when the gateway was restored, he placed the cardinal's badges prominently over

the door. He was free in 1524, as in that year he was a commissioner to collect the subsidy in Somerset. He greatly improved the family mansion at Hinton St. George, and must have been rich, though he is said to have been in debt both to Henry VII and to Henry VIII. It is for this reason, perhaps, that on 30 April 1509 he appears as one who was excepted from the general pardon; he was pardoned, however, on 28 Aug. Paulet died in 1538. His will is printed in 'Testamenta Vetusta.' He married, first, Margaret, daughter of Sir John Paulet of Nunney Castle, Somerset, and sister of Sir John Paulet, mentioned above (by her he left no issue); secondly, Laura, daughter of William Kellaway of Roeborne, Hampshire. By her he left Sir Hugh [q. v.] and other children.

[Letters and Papers, Henry VIII; Metcalfe's Knights, p. 16; Collinson's Somerset, ii. 167; Ordinances of the Privy Council, ed. Nicolas, vii. 115, 145; Nicolas's Testamenta Vetusta, p. 681; Letters, &c., of Richard III and Henry VII (Rolls Ser), i. 406, 407, ii. 76, 337; Campbell's Materials for Hist. of Henry VII (Rolls Ser.), i. 583.]

W. A. J. A.

**PAULET or POULET, Sir AMIAS** (1536 ?–1588), keeper of Mary Queen of Scots, born about 1536, was son of Sir Hugh Paulet [q. v.], by his first wife. He was made his father's lieutenant in the government of Jersey on 25 April 1559, and remained in residence in Jersey for some twelve years. A convinced puritan through life, he distinguished his rule of the island by repressing the practice of the catholic religion, and offered ostentatious protection to Huguenot refugees from France. With Sir Philip Carteret, the native leader among the islanders, he was in repeated conflict. On his father's death in 1571 he succeeded to the full post of governor; but he soon left Jersey and delegated his powers to his brother George, who became bailiff in 1583, and subsequently to his son Anthony. His representatives ruled the island with greater rigour than he had practised, and their tyranny occasionally drew from him a gentle reproof. But although he watched with attention the course of events in Jersey until his death, other duties compelled him to exercise a merely nominal control (cf. Morris, pp. 121, 133).

Paulet was knighted in 1576, and in September of the same year left London for Paris to fill the important office of ambassador at the French court. He regarded the movements of the Huguenots with keen sympathy, and corresponded with his government copiously, if not enthusiastically, on the proposal to marry the Duc d'Alençon to Queen Elizabeth. His Parisian career was uneventful, and in November 1579 he was recalled. The Earl of Leicester had no liking for his stern demeanour, but he had completely gained the confidence of Sir Francis Walsingham. On Walsingham's recommendation he was nominated in January 1585 to the responsible office of keeper of Mary Queen of Scots, and was made a privy councillor. Mary was Queen Elizabeth's prisoner at Tutbury. Sir Ralph Sadler had been her latest warder, and Lord St. John of Bletsoe had been, in the first instance, invited to relieve Sadler. It was only after Lord St. John's refusal of the post that Paulet's name had been suggested. Paulet's instructions, dated 4 March, are not extant, but it is known that he was directed to treat his prisoner with far greater severity than Sadler had employed. Her correspondence was to be more carefully inspected; her opportunities of almsgiving were to undergo limitation; she was to be kept in greater seclusion, and less regard was to be paid to her claims to maintain in her household the etiquette of a court. Queen Mary protested against the selection of Paulet; she feared his puritanic fervour, and urged that while in Paris he had shown marked hostility to her agents there [see Morgan Thomas, 1543–1606 ?]. Elizabeth retorted in an autograph letter that he had done his duty.

On 17 April Paulet arrived at Tutbury, and was installed in office. His attitude to his prisoner was from the first courteous but firm, and her frequent complaints left him unmoved. He took the most minute precautions to make her custody secure, and he told Walsingham (5 July 1585) that whenever an attempt at rescue seemed likely to prove successful, he was prepared to kill Mary rather than yield her alive (Morris, p. 49). His anxieties were intensified by Elizabeth's parsimony. He had to provide, as a rule, for nearly one hundred and twenty-seven persons—Mary's attendants numbered fifty-one, and his own retinue, including thirty soldiers, consisted of seventy-six men. Frequently kept without adequate supplies, Paulet advanced large sums of money from his own purse, and the government showed no haste in repaying him. At the end of 1585 Mary desired a change of residence, and Paulet was ordered to remove the establishment on 2 Dec. to Chartley, a house belonging to the Earl of Essex. The cost of living proved much higher than at Tutbury, and the difficulty of meeting the expenses was greater. In March 1586 Morgan, Mary's agent in Paris, wrote urging her

to employ all her powers of enchantment on Paulet; he suggested that she might promise, in the event of her regaining her liberty and influence, to obtain for Paulet a great increase in his power over Jersey, if not independent sovereignty. But Paulet declined to neglect his duty through 'hope of gain, fear of loss, or any private respect whatever.' With the aid of Walsingham and his spies he kept himself accurately informed as to his prisoner's and her agents' plots and machinations, and he aided in arrangements by which the government was able to inspect, without her knowledge, all her private correspondence [see GIFFORD, GILBERT]. In August he arranged to send her papers to London, and, so as not to excite her suspicions, he removed her for a fortnight to Sir Walter Aston's house at Tixall, on pretence of enabling her to take part in a stag hunt. In her absence from Chartley her coffers were searched, and their contents, including not only letters but many of her jewels, were seized. Early in September, in accordance with orders from London, Paulet took, moreover, possession of his prisoner's money, and on the 25th of that month he removed her to Fotheringay to stand her trial. He acted as a commissioner. After her condemnation in October he treated her with far less ceremony than before, and urged, in letters to Walsingham and Burghley, with a pertinacity that became at times almost grotesque, the need of executing her without delay. In November Sir Drue Drury was associated with him in the office of keeper. On 1 Feb. Secretary Davison sent by letter to Paulet plain hints that he might safely murder Mary privately, and thus relieve Queen Elizabeth of the distasteful task of signing her death-warrant. Paulet at once replied that he could not perform 'an act which God and the law forbiddeth.'

Mary's execution at Fotheringay on 8 Feb. 1586–7 brought Paulet's duties to an end. Elizabeth, who had frequently corresponded with him on familiar terms while he was in charge of Mary, expressed full satisfaction with his performance of his difficult task. On the St. George's eve following (22 April) he was appointed chancellor of the order of the Garter, and held the office for a year. On 14 Jan. 1587–8 he was lodging in Fleet Street, and was corresponding with the lord-admiral Nottingham respecting the 'right of tenths in Jersey [of which he was still governor] belonging to the government.' In February and March he was one of four commissioners sent to the Low Countries to discuss Elizabeth's relations with the States-General. On 24 April following he was living at Twickenham. On 4 Jan. 1587–8 he attended the privy council, and signed orders directing catholic recusants to be dealt with stringently. He died in London on 26 Sept. 1588, and was buried in the church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields. When that church was rebuilt, his remains were removed, together with the monument, to the parish church of Hinton St. George.

A manuscript volume containing Sir Amias's letters while he was ambassador in France is in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. It was edited in 1866 for the Roxburghe Club by Octavius Ogle. The earliest letter is dated from Tours, 26 May 1577, the last from Paris, 10 Jan. 1577–8. A second volume of Paulet's letters from France, dating between 12 Jan. 1577–8 and 29 Aug. 1578, was recently purchased for the same library, together with portions of a third letter-book containing copies of letters written by Paulet when he was keeper of Mary Stuart. The last series of letters was printed by Father John Morris in the 'Letter-Book of Sir Amias Poulet,' 1874. A further collection of letters—more than one hundred in number, but not supplying the whole of the correspondence—addressed by Paulet to Sir Francis Walsingham during his attendance on the Scottish queen, are at the Public Record Office, and have been calendared in Thorpe's 'Scottish State Papers.'

By his wife Margaret (*b.* 1536), daughter and heir of Anthony Hervey (*d.* 1564), a catholic gentleman, of Columb John's in Devonshire (MORRIS, p. 20), Paulet had three sons and three daughters. Hugh (*b.* 1558), the eldest son, died young, but left behind him a memorial of his study of French in a French romance, entitled 'L'histoire de la duchesse de Savoye traduitte d'anglois en françoys' (Harl. MS. 1215). The second son, Sir Anthony (1562–1600), was his father's heir, and, having acted as his father's lieutenant in the government of Jersey, became full governor on Sir Amias's death. His rule was extremely severe, and his uncle, George Paulet, the bailiff of Jersey, encouraged him in his autocratic policy. He was guardian of Philip de Carteret [q. v.], seigneur of St. Ouen, who was a minor, and did what he could to depress the fortunes of the Carteret family. In 1589 he imprisoned the three jurats of Jersey for disputing his authority. In 1590 commissioners were sent from London to inquire into the grievances of the islanders against Sir Anthony and his uncle George. Both officers were fully exonerated from blame. Sir Anthony, who was also captain of the guard to Queen Elizabeth, died on 22 July 1600, and was buried in the

church of Hinton St. George. He married, in 1583, Catherine, only daughter of Sir Henry Norris, baron Norris of Rycote [q. v.] She died on 24 March 1601–2, and was buried with her husband. Their son was John Poulett [q. v.], first baron Poulett. Sir Amias's third son, George (*b.* 1565), by marriage with a distant cousin, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Paulet, became the owner of Gothurst in Somerset. Of Sir Amias's daughters, Joan married Robert Heyden of Bowood, Devonshire; Sarah married Sir Francis Vincent of Stoke D'Abernon, Surrey; and Elizabeth died unmarried.

[Collins's Peerage, 1779, iv. 200 sq. s.v. Poulett; Letter-book of Sir Amias Poulet, ed. Morris, 1874; Froude's Hist. of England; Collinson's Hist. of Somerset, ii. 167; Copy-book of Poulet's Letters (ed. Ogle, Roxburghe Club), 1866; Falle's Account of Jersey; Le Quesne's Constitutional History of Jersey.] S. L.

PAULET or POWLETT, CHARLES, first DUKE OF BOLTON (1625?–1699), eldest son of John, fifth marquis of Winchester [q. v.], by his first wife, was born about 1625. He was elected for Winchester in the Convention parliament of 1660, and represented Hampshire from 1661 to 1675. He was lord lieutenant of the same county from 1667 to 1676, and he succeeded his father as Marquis of Winchester on 5 March 1675, and was created a privy councillor in 1679. He did not occupy a prominent place in parliament, but at the crisis of Charles II's reign he sided rather strongly with the whigs. One of his dominant motives appears to have been a violent antipathy to Halifax, and when Peterborough, during the debate on the exclusion bill, said that it was a case in which every man in England was obliged to draw sword, and laid his hand upon his own, Bolton got as near as he could to Halifax, 'being resolved to make sure of him in case any violence had been offered' (BURNET). Similarly, in 1689, again aiming at Halifax, he moved in the House of Lords for a committee to examine who had the chief hand in the severities and executions at the end of Charles II's reign. Bolton was greatly perturbed at the turn affairs took upon the accession of James II, and was much puzzled as to the line of policy that he should adopt. As a way out of his perplexity, he seems to have counterfeited a disordered mind. This, he subsequently avowed, he considered the best means of security against the dangers of the time; but certain of those who knew him best considered that a measure of real insanity was at the bottom of his diplomacy. In the summer of 1687 Bolton travelled about England with four coaches and a retinue of one hundred horsemen, sleeping during the day, and giving extravagant entertainments at night. In 1688 he was one of the lords who protested against the corporation act. He corresponded with William of Orange, and upon his landing took an active side in promoting his interest. On 2 Jan. 1689 he was one of the noblemen who presented the nonconformist deputation to William at St. James's (BOYER, *William III*, p. 169), and on 9 April in the same year he was created Duke of Bolton (*ib.* p. 209). He was also restored to his place in the privy council and to the lord-lieutenancy of Hampshire.

He did not take a very active part in the intrigues of William's court, though Marlborough is said to have owed his disgrace in 1692 to Bolton's disclosure to the king of a conversation he had had with him. He was profoundly jealous of Marlborough's influence, and communicated this feeling to his son, the second duke. Burnet, who had come into close contact with him, and had no obvious grounds for hostility, thus sums up Bolton's character: 'He was a man of a strange mixture; he had the spleen to a high degree, and affected an extravagant behaviour; for many weeks he would take a conceit not to speak one word, and at other times he would not open his mouth till such an hour of the day, when he thought the air was pure; he changed the day into night, and often hunted by torchlight, and took all sorts of liberties to himself, many of which were very disagreeable to those about him. In the end of King Charles's time and during King James's reign he affected an appearance of folly, which afterwards he compared to Junius Brutus's behaviour under the Tarquins. With all this he was a very knowing and a very crafty politic man, and was an artful flatterer, when that was necessary to compass his ends, in which he was generally successful; he was a man of profuse expenses, and of a most ravenous avarice to support that; and though he was much hated, yet he carried matters before him with such authority and success, that he was in all respects the great riddle of the age' (BURNET, iv. 403).

Bolton died at Amport, Hampshire, on 27 Feb. 1699, and was buried at Wensley, Yorkshire. He was twice married: first to Christian, eldest daughter of John, baron Frescheville of Staveley (she died in childbed on 22 May 1653); and, secondly, to Mary, widow of Henry Carey, styled Lord Leppington, first of the three illegitimate daughters of Emmanuel Scrope, earl of Sunderland

[q. v.], by Martha Jeanes, 'daughter of a poor taylor living in Turfield Heath, Buckinghamshire' (*Collect. Topogr. et Geneal.* i. 223); she died at Moulins in France, on 1 Nov. 1680, leaving two sons—Charles, the second duke [q. v.], and Lord William Paulet—and three daughters. The body of the second duchess was removed to Wensley and buried there.

[Brydges's Peerage of England; Peerage of England, 1710; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage; Doyle's Baronage of England; Collectanea Topographica et Genealogica, i. 223; Macintosh's Hist. of the Revolution, p. 199; Macpherson's Original Papers, passim; Boyer's Life of William III, passim; Luttrell's Brief Historical Relation of State Affairs; Reresby's Diary, p. 247; Hatton Corresp. (Camden Soc.), ii. 147, 235; Burnet's Hist. of his own Time.] T. S.

**PAULET or POWLETT, CHARLES,** second DUKE OF BOLTON (1661–1722), second and eldest surviving son of Charles, first duke [q. v.], by his second wife, Mary, widow of Henry Carey, lord Leppington, was born in 1661. He entered parliament in 1681 as member for Hampshire, and represented that county until his father's death in 1699. A few months prior to the Revolution, being then styled Lord Wiltshire, he went over to Holland, and returned with the Prince of Orange; he was one of the advanced guard who entered Exeter with William in November 1688 (*Dartmouth MSS.* f. 192; WHITTLE, *Exact Diary of the late Expedition of the Prince of Orange*). He held the office of lord chamberlain to the queen from 1689 to 1694 (BOYER, *William III*, p. 200), and was bearer of the orb at the coronation on 11 April 1689. He was sworn a privy councillor on 3 June 1690, and in the following year he made the campaign of Flanders, taking part in the engagement of 9 Sept. in that year (*ib.* p. 323). He was one of the lords justices of Ireland from 1697 to 1699. He entertained William on more than one occasion at Winton, and seems to have stood high in his favour. His consequent dislike for the Princess Anne was intensified by jealousy of the Duke of Marlborough, and he is said, with probable truth, to have been engaged upon an intrigue with the Duke of Newcastle for passing over Anne in the interests of the Princess Sophia (Dartmouth's note on BURNET, iv. 540). He was, however, soon reconciled to the new order of things upon William's death. He was made warden of the New Forest on 1 July 1702, and shortly afterwards was appointed lord lieutenant of the counties of Dorset and Southampton. In April 1705 he waited on the queen at Cambridge, and was made doctor of laws by the university, and in the following September he entertained Anne and the young Duke of Gloucester with great pomp at Winton (LUTTRELL, v. 589). In 1706 he was appointed a commissioner to treat of the union between England and Scotland, and he was also on the special committee of twenty-two selected by the commissioners in May 1706 (BOYER, p. 234). In 1708 he was appointed governor of the Isle of Wight. Early in 1710 he was much annoyed by the bestowal of the vacant Garter on the Duke of Argyll; but Marlborough, with whom he had gradually become reconciled, was able to conciliate him, and retain his support for the war party. In June of this year he took what was generally considered to be the unwise step of moving the House of Lords to examine if their privileges were not invaded by the action of the queen in sending a message to the commons, solely to enable her to raise 500,000*l.* upon the civil list. In April 1714 Bolton again signalised himself in the lords by seconding the motion putting a price upon the Pretender's head (*ib.* p. 684; *Wentworth Papers*, p. 365); a few weeks afterwards he signed the protest against the Schism Act (BOYER, p. 706; ROGERS, *Protests of the Lords*, i. 221). After the proclamation of George I in 1714 Bolton was named one of the lords justices, and he was installed K.G. on 8 Dec. 1714. From this date until his death he 'muddled and intrigued' about the court, where he was usually in high favour. He was created lord chamberlain on 8 July 1715, and on 16 April 1717 he was made lord lieutenant of Ireland. He was at Dublin for the opening of the Irish parliament on 1 July 1719, and is said to have made an excellent speech (OLDMIXON, *Hist. of England*, p. 683); he was, however, satirised by Eustace Budgell in his 'Letter to the Lord . . .' in 1719. He died on 21 Jan. 1722 (*Hist. Reg.* Chron. Diary, p. 9), and was buried on 1 Feb. at Basing, Hampshire.

Swift, in a note on Macky's character, remarked of Bolton that he did not make a figure 'at court or anywhere else. A great booby.' It must be questioned, however, whether Swift knew much of him, as in the 'Journal to Stella' (Letter xxxiii.) he seems to confuse him with his brother, Lord William. Pope mentioned Bolton to Spence as one of those that had the 'nobleman look.' Lady Cowper, in her 'Diary,' describes him more specifically as generally to be seen with his tongue lolling out of his mouth (p. 154). His general inaptitude for serious business appears to be one of the objects of Dr. Joseph Browne's satire in his 'Country Parsons Advice to the Lord Keeper,' 1706.

Bolton was three times married: first, on 7 July 1679, to Margaret (*d.* 1682), only daughter of George, lord Coventry, by whom he left no issue; secondly, to Frances (*d.* 1696), daughter of Sir William Ramsden, bart., by whom he had two sons, Charles [q. v.] and Harry, successively dukes of Bolton, and two daughters; thirdly, in 1697, at Dublin, to Henrietta Crofts, youngest natural daughter of James Scot, duke of Monmouth, by Eleanor, younger daughter of Sir Robert Needham of Lambeth, and sister of Jane Myddelton [q. v.], the famous beauty (see *Post Boy*, 23 Jan. 1722). By his third wife, who became a lady of the bedchamber to the Princess of Wales in 1714, and survived until 27 Feb. 1730, he had a son, Lord Nassau Paulet, who represented successively the county of Southampton and the borough of Lymington in parliament (1714–1734). He was on 9 Oct. 1723 appointed auditor-general of Ireland, and on 27 May 1725 created a K.B. He died on 24 Aug. 1741, leaving one son and two daughters.

Dr. Radcliffe, the celebrated physician, was popularly supposed to have been 'desperately in love' with the third wife of the second duke, and 'he declared, said the gossips, that he would make her son his heir, upon which the Duke of Bolton is not at all alarmed, but gives the old amorist an opportunity to make his court' (*Wentworth Papers*, p. 97). The portrait of the third duchess by Kneller was engraved by Smith in 1703.

[Brydges's Peerage; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage; Luttrell's Brief Historical Relation, passim; Boyer's Reign of Queen Anne, 1735, passim; Lady Cowper's Diary; Wentworth Papers; White Kennett's Wisdom of Looking Backwards, p. 362; Swift's Works, ed. Scott; Duke of Marlborough's Letters and Despatches, v. 26; Spence's Anecdotes, p. 285; Pope's Works, ed. Elwin and Courthope, vii. 184; Bromley's Catalogue of British Portraits] T. S.

**PAULET or POWLETT, CHARLES,** third DUKE OF BOLTON (1685–1754), eldest son of Charles, second duke [q. v.], by his second wife, Frances, daughter of Sir William Ramsden, was born on 3 Sept. 1685. He was educated at a private school in Yorkshire, and appears to have been a turbulent youth. In 1700 his master, Dr. Robert Uvedale, wrote to his father to inform him that young Lord Winchester refused to be governed, absented himself from school, and by no persuasion would be prevailed upon to follow his studies, 'but takes what liberty hee thinks fitt upon all occasions' (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 11th Rep. App. vii. 151). He subsequently travelled in company with the young Earl of Shaftesbury, returning to England in August 1704 (LUTTRELL, v. 460), and afterwards serving as a volunteer in Portugal. He sat in parliament successively for Lymington (1705–8), Hampshire (1708–10), and Carmarthen (1715–17). He was appointed a lord of the bedchamber to the Prince of Wales in 1714, and on 3 April 1717 he was summoned by writ to the House of Lords, under the title of Lord Basing. The writ was thus framed in error for Lord St. John of Basing, one of the Duke of Bolton's titles, and the error was held by the lords to constitute a new creation. The Paulet family thus obtained a barony in fee, but the title became extinct on the death of the third duke without legitimate issue in 1751. In April 1717 Lord Basing was constituted colonel of the royal regiment of horse-guards. On his father's death in 1722 he succeeded to the dukedom. In the same year (10 Oct.) he was elected a knight of the Garter, and was created warden of the New Forest and lord lieutenant of Hampshire. In 1725 he was appointed constable of the Tower of London, and was one of the lords justices during the king's visit to Hanover. He was an early and persistent opponent of Sir Robert Walpole, and was disappointed at not getting more lucrative appointments on the death of George I. In spite of his opposition, he retained those that he had until 1733, an anomaly explained by Hervey as due to the fact of Bolton being 'such a fool.' In June 1733 Walpole made a resolve to divest him of all his places; his regiment was given to Argyll, the lord-lieutenancy of Hampshire to Lord Lymington, and the governorship of the Isle of Wight to the Duke of Montagu. Some acrimonious questions were asked in the House of Commons, but no very keen regret was probably felt if Hervey's comments upon him may be taken to represent the views of a majority. 'The duke,' he says, 'was a dissatisfied man, for being as proud as if he had been of any consequence, besides what his employments made him, as vain as if he had some merit, and as necessitous as if he had no estate, so he was troublesome at court, hated in the country, and scandalous in his regiment.' The last epithet may be taken in some measure to apply to his private life, the duke being a notorious buck and gallant about town, until in the summer of 1728 he was fascinated by the charms of Lavinia Fenton [q. v.], the theatrical singer, who had taken the town by storm as Polly Peachum. The duke's subjugation is said to have been effected during her delivery of the song 'Oh! ponder well, be not severe.' Swift wrote on 8 July 1728 that the duke had settled

upon her 400*l.* 'during pleasure,' and 200*l.* for the remainder of her life. The duke had been married since 1713 to Annie, daughter of John Vaughan, third earl of Carbery, by his second wife, Anne, daughter of George Saville, marquis of Halifax. At the date of Miss Fenton's first triumph over the duke the duchess was still alive; her friend, Lady Mary Wortley Montagu, described her as 'crammed with virtue and good qualities . . . 'despised by her husband, and laughed at by the public.' Polly, on the other hand, 'bred in an alehouse and produced on the stage, found the way to be esteemed. So useful is early experience!' From the commencement of this liaison Bolton spent a large portion of his time travelling on the continent with Miss Fenton, by whom he had three sons. In 1751 Warton accompanied the duke and his mistress abroad, that he might be ready to marry them the moment the breath was out of the body of the duchess. But the latter lingered, and Warton had, much to his regret, to leave the pair, and resign the hope of preferment promised to the divine who should officiate at the ceremony. The duchess finally died on 20 Sept. 1751, and on 21 Oct. the duke married Lavinia at Aix in Provence. Several minor places were restored to Bolton in 1740; in 1742 he was made lord lieutenant of the county of Southampton, and in November 1745, having been promoted lieutenant-general, he raised a regiment of foot for service in the rebellion. He was not, however, called upon to take the field. He died at Tunbridge Wells on 26 Aug. 1754, and was buried at Basing. He was succeeded in the dukedom by his brother Harry, the father of Harry, sixth duke of Bolton [q. v.] The duchess died at Westcomb Park, Kent, 24 Jan. 1760, and was buried at Greenwich.

The duke, who was painted by Hogarth shortly after his second marriage, is described by Walpole as a fair, white-wigged, old-fashioned gallant.

[Doyle's Official Baronage, i. 202; Brydges's Peerage of England; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage; Hervey's Memoirs of Reign of George II, ii. 215, 250; Swift's Works, ed. Scott; Luttrell's Brief Hist. Relation, v. 460, 481; Horace Walpole's Correspondence, ed. Cunningham, passim; Lady Mary Wortley Montagu's Works; Macpherson's Original Papers, ii. 642; Cooke's Memoir of Macklin, 1804, p. 45; Elwin and Courthope's Pope, v. 421; Life of Lavinia Fenton, 1728.] T. S.

**PAULET**, Sir GEORGE (*d.* 1608), governor of Derry, was the second son of John, second marquis of Winchester, by his wife, Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Robert, second lord Willoughby de Broke. William Paulet, third marquis of Winchester [q. v.], was his eldest brother. His contemporaries call George a gentleman of Hampshire. The king's letters of 20 and 23 July 1606, directing his appointment to the governorship of Derry, say he was 'of good sufficiency and service in the wars,' though he had certainly not become an efficient soldier. He began at Derry by buying land from the constable, Sir Henry Docwra [q. v.], who had built a town there more than thirty years after the destruction of Randolph's settlement. Docwra incurred the hostility of Charles Blount, lord Mountjoy, earl of Devonshire [q. v.], the lord-lieutenant, by taking the part of Sir Donnell Ballagh O'Cahan [q. v.], Sir Cahir O'Dogherty [q. v.], and Sir Niall Garv O'Donnell [q. v.], whom he thought ill-treated. James I saw Ireland with Devonshire's eyes, who himself desired to rule Ulster through Tyrone and Tyrconnel, and without much regard to the services or pretensions of minor chiefs. Devonshire died 3 April 1606; but he had previously approved the sale of Docwra's property to Paulet, whom he knew well, 'there being no longer use for a man of war in that place' (Docwra, p. 282). Docwra accordingly sold him his house, ten quarters of land which he had bought, and his company of foot, for much less than the house alone had cost him to build. The vice-provostship of Derry was thrown in without extra charge. The English government wished Docwra to resign his patent as constable of Lough Foyle, so that Paulet should be appointed in his stead; but this does not seem to have been actually done.

The new governor was established at Derry in the early winter of 1606, and on 20 Feb. following Chichester, the new lord deputy, told Salisbury that he was unfit for the place, and that there had been many dissensions since his arrival. He was soon at daggers drawn with Dr. George Montgomery, the newly made bishop of Derry; for he claimed not only the see-lands, the site of the ancient cathedral and the episcopal palace as part of the property bought from Docwra, but even the parish church presented by the latter to the townsmen, to the building of which they had all contributed. Nor did he get on better with the Irish chiefs. Tyrone and Tyrconnel fled from Ireland early in September 1607, and it was perhaps natural to suspect complicity on the part of O'Cahan, who ruled the greater part of what is now Londonderry county, and of O'Dogherty, the chief of Inishowen in co. Donegal. It had been Docwra's wise policy to make these magnates depend

on the government, and to free them from the oppression of the now fugitive earls; but Paulet knew nothing of the country and would not listen to advice. O'Dogherty took the opportunity of putting some armed men on Tory island, but this seems to have been done with the consent of the few inhabitants. Sir Richard Hansard, who commanded at Lifford, says that Sir Cahir O'Dogherty left Burt Castle, on Lough Swilly, at the end of October to superintend the felling of timber for building; that this gave rise to a report that he was in rebellion; and that he then began to arm about seventy followers, refusing all recruits from outside his own district. Paulet made an unsuccessful attempt to seize Burt in the chief's absence, and reported all to Chichester. O'Dogherty remonstrated in a temperate letter, and subscribed himself 'Your loving friend.' Paulet falsely denied, and in very strong language, that he had ever intended to surprise Burt, and accused Sir Cahir of treason. O'Dogherty went to Dublin early in December and made his excuses to Chichester, who accepted them, but without much confidence. On 18 April the privy council ordered him to be fully restored to such of his ancestral lands as were still withheld, but this order did not reach the Irish government until he was actually in rebellion.

It has been usually said that O'Dogherty's fatal plunge into open rebellion was caused by Paulet's insults. The 'Four Masters' add, and the statement has been often repeated, that he struck the Irish chieftain; but this is not mentioned in the 'State Papers,' nor by Docwra. O'Dogherty himself said nothing about it to Captain Harte when he was making excuses for his seizure of Culmore, and the Irish authorities are divided. Revenge may have been O'Dogherty's main object, but Paulet's carelessness invited attack. Chichester warned him repeatedly to post regular sentries and keep good watch; but he neglected to do so, though he had from the first maintained that his Irish neighbours could not be trusted. His own men hated him for his ill-temper, and despised him for his incompetence. On the night of Monday, 18 April 1608, O'Dogherty, at the head of fewer than a hundred men, seized the outpost at Culmore by a treacherous stratagem, and surprised Derry itself an hour before daybreak. Paulet was killed, and the infant city was sacked and burned. Sir Josias Bodley [q. v.], who, however, was not present, reported that Paulet fell fighting valiantly; but the English government spoke of his cowardice, and said that he must have perished by the executioner had he escaped the sword. Devonshire's opinion that a man of war was not needed at Derry had at least been falsified. Paulet had been fully warned by Hansard, who held his own against the rebels at Lifford.

The peerages say Paulet died unmarried; but it appears from the 'State Papers' that his wife was with him at Derry, and the contemporary tract 'Newes from Ireland concerning the late treacherous Action' (London, 1608) says he had children there also. Lady Paulet suffered only a short imprisonment with the O'Dogherties; but her husband's death left her in great poverty, which was partly relieved out of the Tyrone forfeitures. She was alive in 1617.

[Cal. of Irish State Papers, 1606–17; Annals of Ireland, by the Four Masters, ed. O'Donovan; Sir Henry Docwra's Narration of the Services done by the Army employed to Lough Foyle, 1614, ed. O'Donovan (Celtic Soc. Miscellany, 1849); Gerald Geoghegan's notice of the early settlement of Londonderry in Kilkenny Archæological Society's Journal, new ser. vols. iv. v.; O'Sullivan-Beare's Hist. Catholicæ Iberniæ Compendium, tom. iv. lib. i. cap. 5; Newes from Ireland concerning the late treacherous Action, London, 1608; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, vol. ii.; Meehan's Fate and Fortunes of Tyrone and Tyrconnell; Gardiner's History of England, i. 420, 421, 426; see art. O'Dogherty, Sir Cahir.]

R. B–L.

**PAULET or POWLETT, HARRY,** sixth Duke of Bolton (1719–1794), admiral, second son of Harry Paulet, fourth duke of Bolton, and nephew of Charles Paulet, third duke of Bolton [q. v.], was born in 1719, and in August 1733 entered the navy as a scholar in the academy in Portsmouth Dockyard. On 9 March 1739 he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and on 15 July 1740 to be captain of the Port Mahon attached to the fleet off Cadiz, under Rear-admiral Nicholas Haddock [q. v.] By Haddock he was moved in July 1741 to the Oxford of 50 guns, which he was still commanding on 11 Feb. 1743-4 in the action off Toulon. In the subsequent courts-martial his evidence was strongly against Richard Lestock [q. v.]; he swore positively that Lestock had reefed topsails on the morning of the battle, and that he, following the vice-admiral's motions, had done so also. But while Powlett swore that the Oxford reefed topsails because the Neptune did, Stepney, the flag-captain, swore that the Neptune did nothing of the sort, and the Neptune's captains of the tops agreed with him.

In March 1745 Powlett was appointed to the Sandwich, guardship at Spithead, and a

few months later to the Ruby. In November 1746 he was appointed to the Exeter, in which he went out to the East Indies, and continued there under the admirals Thomas Griffin [q. v.] and Edward Boscawen [q. v.] On his return to England in April 1750 he brought charges of misconduct against Griffin, who was tried by court-martial and dismissed the service. Two years later Griffin brought several charges of misconduct against Powlett, who was ordered to be tried by a court-martial which assembled on 1 Sept. 1752. Many of the charges were extremely serious, including misappropriation of stores, not engaging the enemy and abject cowardice when engaged, as well as gross breaches of discipline, which ought to have been tried at once, on the spot. After five years Griffin could produce no witnesses in support of his accusations; the court at once acquitted Powlett, but no further action was taken against the malicious slanderer.

In January 1753 Powlett was appointed to the Somerset, guardship at Chatham; on 26 Aug. 1754, by the succession of his father to the dukedom, he became, by courtesy, Lord Harry Powlett; and on 4 Feb. 1755 he was appointed to the Barfleur of 90 guns, attached to the grand fleet under Sir Edward Hawke, which sailed in July for a cruise to the westward. On 22 Aug. Powlett was ordered to chase a sail that was seen to the south-east; during the night he lost sight of the fleet, and for the next two days cruised independently, going on the 25th to Hawke's rendezvous, intending to await Hawke's return. But the carpenter reported that the stern-post was loose, and was dangerous. Powlett ordered the first lieutenant and master to examine the defect, and, acting on their report, he returned to Spithead, where, on 20–22 Oct., he was tried by court-martial for separating from the fleet and for returning into port. For separating from the fleet he was admonished, but on the charge of returning into port he was acquitted. It was afterwards shown by the dockyard officials that the carpenter's report was grossly exaggerated. The admiralty accordingly cashiered the carpenter as incompetent; but public opinion, based on sentiment rather than on evidence, held that the blame rested with Powlett, and that he was the actual author or suggester of the carpenter's report. Powlett was thenceforth known as 'Captain Sternpost.' He had no further service: it was said that the king agreed with the popular notion.

On 4 June 1756 he was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral of the white, and on 14 Feb. 1759 to be vice-admiral of the white. It was reported that Boscawen wished him to accompany him to the Mediterranean, as second in command, but that the king would not sanction the appointment. From 1762 to 1765 he represented Winchester in parliament; on 5 July 1765, by the death of his elder brother, he succeeded as sixth Duke of Bolton. He became admiral of the blue on 18 Oct. 1770, and admiral of the white on 31 March 1775; but had no further interest in naval affairs, beyond signing and, indeed, organising the memorial to the king, protesting against the court-martial on Keppel in December 1778. He was governor of the Isle of Wight from 1766 to 1780; and on 6 April 1782 was again appointed governor of the Isle of Wight and lord lieutenant of Hampshire. He died at his seat of Hackwood in Hampshire, on 25 Dec. 1794. He was twice married; but dying without legitimate male issue, the title became extinct. The name has often been written Paulet. The spelling Powlett is from his own signature.

[Charnock's Biogr. Nav. v. 5; Doyle's Baronage; Minutes of Courts-Martial, Commission and Warrant Books and other documents in the Public Record Office. The version of the stern-post incident in Johnstone's Chrysal is a tissue of misstatements.] J. K. L.

**PAULET, HARRY** (*d.* 1804), master-mariner, is said to have been the master of a small vessel trading to North America; to have been captured by the enemy in 1758, and taken to Quebec; and, being known as a good pilot for the St. Lawrence, to have been sent a prisoner to Europe. The ship in which he sailed put into Vigo, and Paulet, being allowed access to the cabin, laid hold of a packet of despatches, carelessly left within his reach, and dropped overboard. There were two English men-of-war in the river, and Paulet, with the packet of despatches in his mouth, swam to one of these and was taken on board. The despatches proved to be of great value, and Paulet was sent with a copy of them to Lisbon, and thence in a sloop of war to England. In London he was examined by the authorities, and, on the information which he gave and that which was contained in the despatches, the expedition of 1759 was organised, Paulet being rewarded with 'the pay of a lieutenant for life.' This annuity of 90*l.* a year enabled him, it is said, to purchase a vessel, in which he ran cargoes of brandy from the French coast. On one voyage he fell in with the French fleet which had escaped out of Brest 'while Hawke lay concealed behind the rocks of Ushant.' Paulet, risking his brandy for the love of his country, ran to find the English fleet, and demanded

to speak with the admiral. He was ordered on board the flagship, and, having told his story, was assured by Hawke that if it was true, he would make his fortune; if false, he would hang him at the yard-arm. The fleet then got under way, and Paulet, at his special request, was permitted to stay on board. In the battle which followed he behaved with the utmost gallantry, and was sent home 'rewarded in such a manner as enabled him to live happily the remainder of his life.'

Such is Paulet's own story, which he very probably brought himself, in his old age, to believe. But wherever it can be tested it is false, and no part of it can be accepted as true. If, in the end of 1758, the admiralty had had a first-rate pilot for the St. Lawrence at their disposal, that pilot would have been sent to the St. Lawrence with Saunders; and, if he had been examined either by the admiralty or the secretary of state, there would be some record of the examination; but there is no such record. We may be quite sure that if he had been granted the pay of a lieutenant for life, the amount would be charged somewhere; but it does not appear. Again, when Conflans came out of Brest on 14 Nov. 1759, the English fleet was not 'concealed behind the rocks of Ushant;' nor was it ever at anchor there. Hawke learned of the escape of Conflans from the master of a victualler, which, on its way from the squadron in Quiberon Bay, saw the French fleet making for Belle Isle. It is barely possible that Paulet was the victualler and gave the information. In some way or other he certainly made money, and in his old age was generous to the poor of his neighbourhood. He is said to have been an admirable narrator of his own adventures or of Hawke's battle. He died in Lambeth in 1804.

[Gent. Mag. 1804, ii. 691.] J. K. L.

**PAULET or POULET, Sir HUGH** (*d.* 1572?), military commander and governor of Jersey, born after 1500, was the eldest son of Sir Amias Paulet (*d.* 1538) [q. v.] of Hinton St. George, Somerset, by his second wife. A younger brother, John, born about 1509, apparently graduated B.A. at Oxford in 1530, became in 1554 the last Roman catholic dean of Jersey, and died in 1565 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.*) In 1532 Hugh was in the commission of the peace for Somerset (*Cal. State Papers*, Henry VIII, vol. v., No. 1694, entry ii.); and he was served heir and sole executor to his father in 1538, receiving a grant of the manor of Sampford-Peverel, Devonshire. He was supervisor of the rents of the surrendered abbey of Glastonbury in 1539, had a grant of Upcroft and Combe near Crewkerne, Somerset, in 1541, and was sheriff of that county (with Dorset) in 1536, 1542, and 1547 (Collinson, ii. 166). On 18 Oct. 1537 he was knighted (Metcalfe, *Knights*; cf. *Lit. Remains of Edward VI*, pp. lxxxi, 210). He was invited to Prince Edward's baptism (Strype, *Eccl. Mem.* ii. 5) two days later. In 1544 he was treasurer of the English army at the siege of Boulogne, and distinguished himself at the capture of the Brey on 1 Sept. in the presence of Henry VIII. He seems to have remained at Boulogne until 1547 (*Cal. State Papers*, 1545–7). On the accession of Edward VI he was, as a known supporter of the protestant cause, one of those charged by Henry VIII's executors, on 11 Feb. 1547, with the 'good order of the sheres near unto them in the west' (Nichols, *op. cit.*) In 1549 he was knight-marshal of the army raised by Lord Russell to put down the rising against the Reformation changes in the west of England. He led the pursuit against the rebels, and defeated them finally at King's Weston, near Bristol (Holinshed, *Chron.* iii. 1096). In 1550 he was a commissioner to inquire into the liturgy in the island of Jersey, and to put down obits, dispose of church bells, &c. (Le Quesne, p. 148); and was shortly afterwards appointed captain of Jersey and governor of Mont Orgueil Castle, in the place of Edward Seymour, duke of Somerset. He was acting in October 1550 (*Cal. State Papers*, 1547–53), but his patent bears date 3 May 1551 (Rymer, *Fœdera*, xv. 261). This office he retained till his death (Falle says for twenty-four years); but from 25 April 1559, in which year he was made vice-president (under Lord Williams) of the Welsh marches (Strype, *Reform.* i. 23), he performed his functions through a lieutenant, his son Amias (1536?–1588) [q. v.] Le Quesne (pp. 165, 184–6, 195) speaks strongly of the abuse of power by the Paulet family, but appears to refer less to Sir Hugh than to his grandson.

In 1562, when the French protestants surrendered Havre to Elizabeth, she commissioned Paulet, being a man of 'wisdom and long experience,' to act as adviser to Ambrose Dudley, earl of Warwick [q. v.], who was to take command of the garrison and to fill the place of high-marshal (Forbes, ii. 170). Paulet arrived in the Aide with Count Montgomerie and 5,000*l.* on 17 Dec. On 1 April 1563 he conferred unsuccessfully with the rheingrave, was sent to England in June, and returned on 14 July with eight hundred men from Wiltshire and Gloucestershire. On the 23rd he met the constable

Montmorency, and on 28 July articles for the surrender of Havre were agreed upon. On the 29th the English evacuated Havre, bringing the pestilence with them to London. In November Paulet was one of the commissioners to settle the debts incurred in the expedition (authorities below).

Sir Hugh was knight of the shire for Somerset in the parliament which met on 8 May 1572 (Willis, *Not. Parl.* p. 94), and probably died in the following December. A tomb in the north aisle of the church at Hinton St. George, with the effigies of a lady and man in armour, and the inscription 'Hic jacet Hugo Poulet miles qui obiit 6 die Decembris anno Dom. . . .' probably commemorates Sir Hugh and his first wife. He always signs Poulet—not Paulet, Poulett, or Pawlett, the spelling affected by various contemporaries and descendants at Hinton St. George.

He married, about 1528, first, Philippa, daughter and heiress of Sir Lewis Pollard [q.v.] of King's Nympton, Devonshire, justice of the common pleas, by whom he had two daughters—Anne (*Visit. of Somerset*, 1531, ed. Weaver) and Jane (married to Christopher Copleston of Copleston, Devonshire)—and three sons: Sir Amias, Nicholas of Minty, Gloucestershire, and George, bailiff of Jersey from 1583 to 1611 (Le Quesne). Before December 1560 he married, secondly, Elizabeth, daughter of Walter Blount of Blount's Hall, Staffordshire, the rich widow of Sir Thomas Pope [q.v.], founder of Trinity College, Oxford. She died without issue in 1593, and was buried in Trinity Chapel. With her, Sir Hugh visited the college in 1560, 1565, and 1567, assisted the fellows in a suit against Lord Rich in 1561, and gave 20*l.* towards a new garden-wall in 1566.

[Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, vi. 3–5; Collinson's Somerset, ii. 166–7; authorities cited above, esp. Stowe, pp. 653–6, and Holinshed, iii. 1026, and 1198–1204; Cal. State Papers, as above, and also Henry VIII, vols. x. and xi. and Foreign Papers, 1562–3; the most important of the Havre letters are printed in Dr. P. Forbes's Full View of Public Transactions in the Reign of Elizabeth, vol. ii. with facsimiles of signatures; Falle's Jersey, ed. 1694; Le Quesne's Constitutional History of Jersey; Barlow's Peerage, i. 416; Letter-book and Copy-book of Sir A. Poulet; Hayne's Burghley Papers, p. 407; Accounts of Trinity College, Oxford. The most connected account is that given by T. Warton (Sir T. Pope, pp. 189–98), but it is very inaccurate.] H. E. D. B.

**PAULET, JOHN,** fifth Marquis of Winchester (1598–1675), born in 1598, was third but eldest surviving son of William, fourth marquis of Winchester (*d.* 1629), by Lucy (*d.* 1614), second daughter of Sir Thomas Cecil, afterwards second Lord Burghley and Earl of Exeter. From 1598 until 1624 he was styled Lord Paulet. He kept terms at Exeter College, Oxford, but did not matriculate (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1500–1714, iii. 1188), and on 7 Dec. 1620 was elected M.P. for St. Ives, Cornwall. He was summoned to the House of Lords as Baron St. John on 10 Feb. 1624, became captain of Netley Castle in 1626, and succeeded to the marquisate on 4 Feb. 1629, becoming also keeper of Pamber Forest, Hampshire. In order to pay off the debts incurred by his father's lavish hospitality, he passed many years in comparative seclusion. But on 18 Feb. 1639 he wrote to Secretary Windebank that he would be quite ready to attend the king on his Scottish expedition 'with alacrity of heart and in the best equipage his fortunes would permit' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1638–9, p. 478). Winchester being a Roman catholic, Basing House, Hampshire, his chief seat, on every pane of which he had written with a diamond 'Aimez Loyauté,' became at the outbreak of the civil war the great resort of the queen's friends in south-west England. It occurred to the king's military advisers that the house might be fortified and garrisoned to much advantage, as it commanded the main road from the western counties to London. The journal of the siege of Basing House forms one of the most remarkable features of the civil war. It commenced in August 1643, when the whole force with which Winchester had to defend it, in addition to his own inexperienced people, amounted only to one hundred musketeers sent to him from Oxford on 31 July under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Peake. He subsequently received an additional force of 150 men under Colonel Rawdon. In this state of comparative weakness, Basing resisted for more than three months the continued attack of the combined parliamentary troops of Hampshire and Sussex, commanded by five colonels of reputation. The catholics at Oxford successfully conveyed provisions to Basing under Colonel Gage. An attempt by Lord Edward Paulet, Winchester's youngest brother, then serving under him in the house, to betray Basing to the enemy was frustrated, and he was turned out of the garrison. On 11 July 1644 Colonel Morley summoned Winchester to surrender. Upon his refusal the besiegers tried to batter down the water-house. On 13 July a shot passed through Winchester's clothes, and on the 22nd he was struck by a ball. A second summons to surrender was

sent by Colonel Norton on 2 Sept., but was at once rejected. About 11 Sept. the garrison was relieved by Colonel Gage, who, being met by Lieutenant-colonel Johnson by the Grange, routed Morley's and Norton's men, and entered the house. He left with Winchester one hundred of Colonel Hawkins's white-coated men, and, after taking Basingstoke, sent provisions to Basing. Meanwhile Winchester, with the white-coats and others under Major Cuffaud and Captain Hull, drove the besiegers out of Basing. On 14 Nov. Gage again arrived at Basing, and on the 17th the siege was raised. Norton was succeeded by a stronger force under the command of Colonel Harvey, which had no better fortune. At length Sir William Waller advanced against it at the head of seven thousand horse and foot. Still Winchester contrived to hold out. But after the battle of Naseby, Cromwell marched from Winchester upon Basing, and, after a most obstinate conflict, took it by storm on 16 Oct. 1645. Winchester was brought in a prisoner, with his house flaming around him. He 'broke out and said "that if the king had no more ground in England but Basing House, he would adventure it as he did, and so maintain it to the uttermost," comforting himself in this matter "that Basing House was called Loyalty"' (Green, *Hist. of Engl. People*, iii. 243). Thenceforward he was called the 'great loyalist.' What remained of Basing, which Hugh Peters after its fall told the House of Commons 'would have become an emperor to dwell in,' the parliamentarians levelled to the ground, after pillaging it of money, jewels, plate, and household stuff to the value, it is said, of 200,000*l.*

Winchester was committed to the Tower on a charge of high treason on 18 Oct. 1645, and his estates were ordered to be sequestered (*Commons' Journals*, iii. 280, iv. 313). An order was made for allowing him 5*l.* a week out of his property on 15 Jan. 1646 (*ib.* iv. 407). Lady Winchester, who had escaped from Basing two days before its fall, was sent to join her husband in the Tower on 31 Jan., and a weekly sum of 10*l.*, afterwards increased to 15*l.*, was ordered to be paid her for the support of herself and her children, with the stipulation that the latter were to be educated as protestants (*ib.* iv. 425, 725, v. 3, 521). An ordinance for the sale of Winchester's land was passed on 30 Oct. (*ib.* iv. 710), and by the act of 16 July 1651 a portion was sold by the trustees for the sale of forfeited estates. On 7 Sept. 1647 Winchester was allowed to drink the waters at Epsom, and stayed there by permission of parliament for nearly six months (*ib.* v. 294, 422). The House of Lords on 30 June 1648 urged the commons to release him on bail in consideration of his bad health (*ib.* v. 617). In the propositions sent to the king at the Isle of Wight on 13 Oct. it was expressly stipulated that Winchester's name be excepted from pardon (*Lords' Journals*, x. 548). Ultimately the commons resolved on 14 March 1649 not to proceed against him for high treason; but they ordered him to be detained in prison and excepted from any composition for his estate (*Commons' Journals*, vi. 165). In January 1656 he was a prisoner in execution in the upper bench for debts amounting to 2,000*l.*, and he petitioned Cromwell for relief (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1656, pp. 105, 351). The sale of his lands was discontinued by order of parliament on 15 March 1660 (*Commons' Journals*, vii. 879), and after the Restoration Winchester received them back. It was proposed on 3 Aug. 1660 to recompense him for his losses to the amount of 19,000*l.* and damages, subsequently reduced to 10,000*l.*, and this was agreed to on 2 July 1661, but in the event he was allowed to go unrecompensed. A bill for confirming an award for settling differences between him and his eldest son, Charles, in regard to the estates, was passed in 1663 (*ib.* vol. viii.; *Lords' Journals*, xi. 472).

Winchester retired to his estate at Englefield, Berkshire, which he had acquired by his second marriage, and passed the remainder of his life in privacy, dividing his time between agriculture and literature. He greatly enlarged the house, the front of which, says Granger (*Biogr. Hist. of Engl.* 2nd edit. ii. 122), bore a beautiful resemblance to a church organ, but 'is now [1775] no more.'

Winchester died at Englefield on 5 March 1675, premier marquis of England, and was buried in the church there. On the monument raised by his wife to his memory are engraved some lines by Dryden (*Works*, ed. Scott, 1821, xi. 154). He was married three times: first, to Jane (*d.* 1631), eldest daughter of Thomas, first viscount Savage, by whom he had issue Charles, his successor, created first duke of Bolton in 1689, who is separately noticed. Milton wrote an epitaph in 1631 on Jane, lady Winchester; and James Howell, who taught her Spanish, has commemorated her beauty and goodness. Winchester's second wife was Lady Honora de Burgh (1611–1662), daughter of Richard, first earl of St. Albans and Clanricarde, who brought him four sons—of whom two only, John and Francis, lived to manhood—and three daughters. By his third wife, Isabella

Howard, second daughter of William, first viscount Stafford, he had no children.

Clarendon has celebrated Winchester's goodness, piety, and unselfish loyalty in eloquent and just language. Three works, translated from the French by Winchester, are extant: 1. 'Devout Entertainment of a Christian Soule,' by Jacques Hugues Quarré, 12mo, Paris, 1648, done during his imprisonment in the Tower. 2. 'The Gallery of Heroick Women,' by Pierre Le Moyne, a jesuit, folio, London, 1652, in praise of which James Howell wrote some lines (cf. his *Epistolæ Ho-elianæ*, bk. iv. letter 49). 3. 'The Holy History' of Nicholas Talon, 4to, London, 1653. To these works Winchester prefixed prefaces, written in simple, unaffected English, and remarkable for their tone of gentle piety. In 1663 Sir Balthazar Gerbier [q.v.], in dedicating to him a treatise called 'Counsel and advice to all Builders,' takes occasion to commend Englefield (or, as he calls it, 'Henfelde') House, of which a description will be found in Neale's 'Seats,' 1828, 2nd ser. vol. iv.

Winchester's portrait has been engraved in small oval by Hollar. There is also a miniature of him by Peter Oliver, which has been engraved by Cooper, and an equestrian portrait by Adams (Evans, *Cat. of Engraved Portraits*, i. 383, ii. 422).

[Doyle's Official Baronage, iii. 706; Collins's Peerage, 1812, ii. 376–80; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, iii. 1005; Clarendon's Hist. ed Macray; A Description of the Siege of Basing Castle, 1645; Woodward's Hampshire, iii. 247–255; Will registered in P. C. C. 29, Dycer; Dict. of Architecture, vi. 63; Granger's Biogr. Hist. of Engl. 2nd edit. iii. 114; Nichols's Progresses of James I, i. 252; Cal. of Committee for Advance of Money, pp. 369, 963; Lodge's Portraits, ed. Bohn; Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors, ed. Park, iii. 146–50; Lysons's Magna Britannia, 'Berkshire,' i. 275; Addit. MS. 28672, ff. 207, 210.] G. G.

PAULET, LAVINIA, Duchess of Bolton (1708–1760). [See Fenton.]

PAULET, PAWLET, or POULET, WILLIAM, first Marquis of Winchester (1485?–1572), was eldest son of Sir John Paulet of Basing, near Basingstoke in Hampshire, the head of a younger branch of an ancient Somerset family seated in the fourteenth century at Pawlet or Paulet and Road, close to Bridgwater (Collinson, ii. 166, iii. 74). William's great-grandfather acquired the Hampshire estates by his marriage with Constance, granddaughter and coheiress of Thomas Poynings, baron St. John of Basing (*d.* 1428). Hinton St. George, near Crewkerne, became from the middle of the fifteenth century the chief residence of the elder branch, to which belong Sir Amias Paulet [q.v.] and the present Earl Poulett.

Paulet's father held a command against the Cornish rebels in 1497, and died after 1519 (Cayley, p. 10; cf. Baigent, p. 19; Dugdale, ii. 376). His monument remains in Basing church. He married his cousin Alice (or Elizabeth?), daughter of Sir William Paulet, the first holder of Hinton St. George (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 5th ser. viii. 135). William, their eldest son, was born, according to Doyle (*Official Baronage*), in 1485; Brooke, followed by Dugdale, says 1483; while Camden (p. 229) asserts that he was ninety-seven at his death, which would place his birth in 1474 or 1475.

Paulet was sheriff of Hampshire in 1512, 1519, 1523, and again in 1527 (*Letters and Papers*). Knighted before the end of 1525, he was appointed master of the king's wards in November of the next year with Thomas Englefield (*ib.* iv. 2000, 2673). He appears in the privy council in the same year (*ib.* iv. 3096). In the Reformation parliament of 1529–36 he sat as knight of the shire for Hampshire. Created 'surveyor of the king's widows and governor of all idiots and naturals in the king's hands' in 1531, he became comptroller of the royal household in May 1532, and a few months later joint-master of the royal woods with Thomas Cromwell (*ib.* v. 80, 1069, 1549). Now or later he held the offices of high steward of St. Swithin's Priory, Winchester, steward of Shene Priory, Dorset, and keeper (1536) of Pamber Forest, near Basingstoke (*ib.* x. 392). In the summer of 1533 Paulet went to France as a member of the embassy which the Duke of Norfolk took over to join Francis I in a proposed interview with the pope, and kept Cromwell informed of its progress. But Clement's fulmination against the divorce pronounced by Cranmer caused their recall (*ib.* vi. 391, 661, 830; *Chron. of Calais*, p. 44). On his return he was charged with the unpleasant task of notifying the king's orders to his discarded wife and daughter. He was one of the judges of Fisher and More in the summer of 1535, and of Anne Boleyn's supposed accomplices in May 1536.

When the pilgrimage of grace broke out in the autumn, Paulet took joint charge of the musters of the royal forces, and himself raised two hundred men. The rebels complaining of the exclusion of noblemen from the king's council, Henry reminded them of the presence of Paulet and others (*Letters and Papers*, xi. 957, xii. pt. i. 1013). In carrying out his royal master's commands he was not, it would appear, unnecessarily harsh. Anne Boleyn ex-

cepted him from her complaints against the council; 'the controller,' she admitted, 'was a very gentleman' (*ib.* x. 797). His services did not go unrewarded. The king visited his 'poor house' at Basing in October 1535 (*ib.* ix. 639). The site and other possessions of Netley Abbey, near Southampton, were granted to him in August 1536 (*ib.* xi. 385). He acted as treasurer of the household from October 1537 to March 1539, when the old St. John peerage was recreated in his favour, but without the designation 'of Basing' (COURTHOPE). The new peer became the first master of Henry VIII's court of wards and liveries in 1540, knight of the Garter in 1543 (April), and, two years later, governor of Portsmouth. Appointed lord chamberlain of the household in May 1543, he was great master (i.e. lord steward) of the same from 1545 to 1550 (MACHYN, p. xiv). A year before the king's death he became lord president of the council, and was nominated in Henry's will one of the eighteen executors who were to act as a council of regency during his son's minority.

Under Somerset, St. John was for a few months in 1547 keeper of the great seal. He joined in overthrowing the protector, and, five days after parliament had deposed Somerset, was created (19 Jan. 1550) earl of Wiltshire, in which county he had estates (FROUDE, iv. 498). The white staff laid down by Somerset was given to the new earl, who contrived to remain lord treasurer until his death, twenty-two years later. Warwick succeeded to his old offices of great master of the household and lord president of the council (MACHYN, pp. xiv–xv). Though Wiltshire was not, like Northampton and Herbert, prominently identified with Warwick, he received a further advance in the peerage on the final fall of Somerset. On 11 Oct. 1551, the same day that Warwick became duke of Northumberland, he was created marquis of Winchester (*Journal of Edward VI*, p. 47: *Cal. State Papers*, ed. Lemon, p. 35; Dugdale, followed by Courthope and Doyle, gives 12 Oct.) Six weeks later he acted as lord steward at the trial of Somerset.

Careful as Winchester was to trim his sails to the prevailing wind, the protestants did not trust him. Knox, unless he exaggerates, boldly denounced him in his last sermon before Edward VI as the 'crafty fox Shebna unto good King Ezekias sometime comptroller and then treasurer' (STRYPE, *Memorials*, iv. 71). Northumberland and Winchester, Knox tells us, ruled all the court, the former by stout courage and proudness of stomach, the latter by counsel and wit. Though the reformers considered him a papist, Winchester did not scruple to take out a license for himself, his wife, and twelve friends to eat flesh in Lent and on fast days (*Fœdera*, xv. 329). Knox did him an injustice when he accused him of having been a prime party to Northumberland's attempt to change the order of the succession. He was, on the contrary, strongly opposed to it; and even after he had bent, like others, before the imperious will of the duke, and signed the letters patent of 21 June 1553, he did not cease to urge in the council the superior claim of the original act of succession (FROUDE, v. 162, 168).

After the death of the young king and the proclamation of Queen Jane, Winchester delivered the crown jewels to the latter on 12 July. According to the Venetian Badoaro, he made her very indignant by informing her of Northumberland's intention to have her husband crowned as well (*ib.* v. 190). But Winchester and several other lords were only waiting until they could safely turn against the duke. The day after he left London to bring in Mary (15 July) they made a vain attempt to get away from the Tower, where they were watched by the garrison Northumberland had placed there; Winchester made an excuse to go to his house, but was sent for and brought back at midnight. On the 19th, however, after the arrival of news of Northumberland's ill-success, the lords contrived to get away to Baynard's Castle, and, after a brief deliberation, proclaimed Queen Mary. She confirmed him in all his offices, to which in March 1556 that of lord privy seal was added, and thoroughly appreciated his care and vigilance in the management of her exchequer. He gave a general support to Gardiner in the House of Lords, and did not refuse to convey Elizabeth to the Tower. It was Sussex, however, and not he, who generously took the risk of giving her time to make a last appeal to her sister (*ib.* vi. 379). So firmly was Winchester convinced of the impolicy of her Spanish marriage, that even after it was approved he was heard to swear that he would set upon Philip when he landed (FROUDE, v. 312). But he was rapidly brought to acquiesce in its accomplishment, and entertained Philip and Mary at Basing on the day after their wedding.

On Mary's death Winchester rode through London with the proclamation of her successor, and, in spite of his advanced age, obtained confirmation in the onerous office of treasurer, and acted as speaker of the House of Lords in the parliaments of 1559 and 1566, showing no signs of diminished vigour. He voted in the small minority against any alteration of the church services, but did not carry his opposition further;

and Heath, archbishop of York, and Thirlby, bishop of Ely, were deprived at his house in Austin Friars (*ib.* vi. 194; MACHYN, p. 203). For some years he was on excellent terms with Cecil, to whom he wrote, after an English reverse before Leith in May 1560, that 'worldly things would sometimes fall out contrary, but if quietly taken could be quietly amended' (FROUDE, vi. 370). Three months later, when the queen visited him at Basing, he sent the secretary warning against certain 'back counsels' about the queen (*ib.* vi. 413). Elizabeth was so pleased with the good cheer he made her that she playfully lamented his great age, 'for, by my troth,' said she, 'if my lord treasurer were but a young man, I could find it in my heart to have him for a husband before any man in England' (STRYPE, *Annals*, i. 367). Two years later, when she was believed to be dying, Winchester persuaded the council to agree to submit the rival claims to the succession to the crown lawyers and judges, and to stand by their decision (FROUDE, vi. 589). He was opposed to all extremes. In 1561, when there was danger of a Spanish alliance to cover a union between the queen and Dudley, he supported the counter-proposal of alliance with the French Calvinists, but seven years later he deprecated any such championship of protestantism abroad as might lead to a breach with Spain, and recommended that the Duke of Alva should be allowed to procure clothes and food for his soldiers in England, 'that he might be ready for her grace when he might do her any service' (*ib.* vi. 461, viii. 445). He disliked the turn Cecil was endeavouring to give to English policy, and he was in sympathy with, if he was not a party to, the intrigues of 1569 against the secretary (CAMDEN, p. 151).

Winchester was still in harness when he died, a very old man, at Basing House on 10 March 1572. His tomb remains on the south side of the chancel of Basing church. Winchester was twice married, and lived to see 103 of his own descendants (*ib.*) His first wife was Elizabeth (*d.* 25 Dec. 1558), daughter of Sir William Capel, lord mayor of London in 1503, by whom he had four sons—(1) John, second marquis of Winchester; (2) Thomas; (3) Chediok, governor of Southampton under Mary and Elizabeth; (4) Giles—and four daughters: Elizabeth, Margaret, Margerie, and Eleanor, the last of whom married Sir Richard Pecksall, master of the buckhounds, and died on 26 Sept. 1558 (MACHYN, p. 367; DUGDALE, ii. 377). By his second wife, Winifrid, daughter of Sir John Bruges, alderman of London, and widow of Sir Richard Sackville, chancellor of the exchequer, he left no issue. She died in 1586.

Sir Robert Naunton [q. v.], in his reminiscences of Elizabethan statesmen (he was nine years old at Winchester's death), reports that in his old age he was quite frank with his intimates on the secret of the success with which he had weathered the revolutions of four reigns. 'Questioned how he had stood up for thirty years together amidst the changes and ruins of so many chancellors and great personages, "Why," quoth the marquis, "ortus sum e salice non ex quercu." And truly it seems the old man had taught them all, especially William, earl of Pembroke' (*Fragmenta Regalia*, p. 95).

Winchester rebuilt Basing House, which he obtained license to fortify in 1531, on so princely a scale that, according to Camden, his posterity were forced to pull down a part of it. An engraving of the mansion after the famous siege is given in Baigent (p. 428). The marquis was one of those who sent out the expedition of Chancellor and Willoughby to northern seas in 1553, and became a member of the Muscovy Company incorporated under Mary (*Calendar of State Papers*, ed. Lemon, p. 65; STRYPE, *Memorials*, v. 520). A portrait by a painter unknown is engraved in Doyle's 'Official Baronage,' and another, which represents him with the treasurer's white staff, in Walpole's edition of Naunton (p. 103), from a painting also, it would seem, unassigned, in King's College, Cambridge. Two portraits are mentioned in the catalogue of the Tudor exhibition (Nos. 323, 348), in both of which he grasps the white staff. If the latter, which is in the Duke of Northumberland's collection, is correctly described, its ascription to Holbein must be erroneous, as he did not become treasurer until 1550, and the artist died in 1543.

[Cal. of Letters and Papers of the Reign of Henry VIII, ed. Brewer and Gairdner; Cal. of Dom. State Papers, 1547–80, ed. R. Lemon; Rymer's Fœdera, original edition; Strype's Memorials and Annals, Clarendon Press edition; Camden's Annales Rerum Anglicarum regnante Elizabetha, ed. 1615; Naunton's Fragmenta Regalia, ed., with Hentzner's Travels, by Horace Walpole in 1797; Machyn's Diary, the Chronicle of Calais, and Wriothesley's Chronicle, published by the Camden Soc.; Froude's Hist. of England; Collinson's Hist. of Somerset; Baigent and Millard's Hist. of Basingstoke; Cayley's Architectural Memoir of Old Basing Church, including Armorials and Monuments of the Paulet Family, by S. J. Salter (Basingstoke, 1891); Brooke's Catalogue of Nobility, 1619; Dugdale's Baronage; Courthope's Historic Peerage, and Doyle's Official Baronage.] J. T–T.

PAULET, WILLIAM, third MARQUIS OF WINCHESTER (1535?–1598), son of John Paulet, second marquis, and grandson of William Paulet, first marquis [q. v.], was born before 1536 and knighted before 1559. He served as high sheriff for Hampshire in 1560, as joint commissioner of musters and joint lord-lieutenant for Dorset in 1569–70. Doyle says he became member of parliament for Dorset in 1571; but no parliament was elected or sat in that year, and Paulet's name does not appear in the official returns of the lower house in any other parliament. In 1572 he was summoned to the house of lords as Baron St. John, and on 4 Nov. 1576 he succeeded his father as third Marquis of Winchester. He was not satisfied with his father's will, and complained of the disposal of the family property due to the influence of his grandfather's widow, Winifrid (*d.* 1586). In 1580 he became lord-lieutenant of Dorset, and in October 1586 was one of the commissioners appointed to try Mary Queen of Scots; he was lord steward for her funeral on 1 Aug. 1587. In 1596 he was lord-lieutenant for Hampshire, and in 1597 first commissioner for ecclesiastical causes in the diocese of Winchester. He died on 24 Nov. 1598, having married, before 1560, Agnes, daughter of William, first lord Howard of Effingham [q. v.]; with her his relations were not entirely harmonious, and on one occasion it was only by the intercession of the queen that a reconciliation was effected (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. Ser. 1547–80, p. 534, &c.) He was succeeded by his eldest son William, fourth marquis, whose son John, fifth marquis, is separately noticed.

Paulet's claim to remembrance rests on a curious little work, entitled 'The Lord Marques Idlenes: conteining manifold matter of acceptable devise, as sage sentences, prudent precepts, &c.,' London, Arnold Hatfield, 1586, 4to; prefixed to it is a dedication to the queen and a remarkable acrostic of six Latin verses, which, says Collier, 'must have cost the writer immense ingenuity in the composition;' the first letters of the six lines form the word 'regina,' the last letters 'nostra' and the initials of the words in the last line 'Angliæ.' Copies of this edition are in the Bridgewater collection and in the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries, and Collier had heard of a fourth, but they are extremely rare. A second edition appeared in 1587, a copy of which is in the British Museum Library.

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1547–98, passim; Cotton MS. Julius C. iii.; Peerages by Doyle, Brydges, and Collins; Collier's Bibliogr. Acc. of Early Engl. Lit. vol. i. p. xix, vol. ii. p. 132; Bodleian Cat.] A. F. P.

PAULET, LORD WILLIAM (1804–1893), field-marshal, fourth son of Charles Ingoldsby Paulet, thirteenth marquis of Winchester, and his wife Anne, second daughter of John Andrews of Shotney Hall, Northumberland, was born 7 July 1804. After being educated at Eton, where his name appears in the fifth form in the school lists of 1820, he was appointed ensign in the 85th light infantry on 1 Feb. 1821. On 23 Aug. 1822 he was made lieutenant in the 7th fusiliers, purchased an unattached company 12 Feb. 1825, and exchanged to the 21st fusiliers. On 10 Sept. 1830 he became major 68th light infantry, and lieutenant-colonel 21 April 1843, serving with the regiment at Gibraltar, in the West Indies, North America, and at home until 31 Dec. 1848, when he exchanged to half-pay unattached. Becoming brevet colonel 20 June 1854, he went to the Crimea as assistant adjutant-general of the cavalry division, under Lord Lucan, and was present at the Alma, Balaklava (where he was with Lord Lucan throughout the day, and had his hat carried off by a shot), Inkerman, and before Sevastopol. On 23 Nov. 1854 Lord Raglan appointed him to command 'on the Bosphorus, at Gallipoli, and the Dardanelles,' where the overcrowded hospitals, in which Miss Nightingale and her band of nurses had begun their labours three weeks before, were much in need of an experienced officer in chief command. This post was held by him until after the fall of Sevastopol, when he succeeded to the command of the light division in the Crimea, which he retained until the evacuation (C.B. medal and clasps, officer of the Legion of Honour, third class of the Medjidie, and Sardinian and Turkish medals).

Paulet was one of the first officers appointed to a command at Aldershot, where he commanded the 1st brigade from 1856 to 1860, becoming a major-general meanwhile on 13 June 1858. He commanded the south-western district, with headquarters at Portsmouth, from 1860 to 1865. He was made K.C.B. in 1865, and a lieutenant-general 8 Dec. 1867; was adjutant-general of the forces from 1865 to 1870, was made G.C.B. in 1870, general 7 Oct. 1874, and field-marshal 10 July 1886. After a short period as colonel 87th fusiliers, Paulet was appointed, on 9 April 1864, colonel of his old regiment, the 68th (now 1st Durham light infantry), in the welfare and interests of which he never ceased to exert his active influence. He died 10 May 1893.

[Foster's Peerage, under 'Winchester;' Hart's Army Lists; Kinglake's Invasion of the Crimea (cabinet edit.); Times, 10 May 1893; Broad Arrow, 13 May 1893, p. 590.] H. M. C.

**PAULINUS** (*fl.* 500?), British ecclesiastic, is first mentioned in the 'Life of St. David,' by Rhygyfarch (*d.* 1099), as that saint's early teacher. He is described as a bishop, a 'scriba,' and a pupil of Germanus, living as an anchorite upon an island. He was cured of blindness by St. David, and at the synod of Brefi was the person who suggested the summoning thither of his distinguished pupil (*Cambro-British Saints*, 1853, pp. 122–3, 137). The life of Teilo in the 'Liber Landavensis,' written probably about 1130, sends Teilo also to 'Paulinus' for instruction and makes David one of his fellow-pupils. Pughe (*Cambrian Biography*) and others identify Paulinus with the Pawl Hên of Manaw in the north, who was the father of the Anglesey saints Peulan, Gwyngenau, and Gwenfaen (*Myvyrian Archaiology*, 2nd edit., pp. 426, 429); they also locate him at Ty Gwyn ar Daf or Whitland, Carmarthenshire, on the authority of notices in the Glamorgan copies of the 'Genealogies of the Saints' (*Iolo MSS.* 112, 114, 139). With much more probability he is identified with the Paulinus of an early inscribed stone found at Pantypolion in the parish of Caio, Carmarthenshire, and now kept at Dolau Cothi in the same neighbourhood. The inscription read in the time of Bishop Gibson —'Servatur fidæi patrieq semper amator hic paulinus iacit cultor pientisimus æqvi' (Westwood, *Lapidarium Walliæ*, 1876–9, p. 79). Paulinus is the patron saint of Llangors, Brecknockshire, and of Capel Peulin (or Capel Ystradffin), a chapel of Llandingad, Carmarthenshire; the latter is possibly meant by the 'Capella Sancti Paulini' of an agreement as to tithes drawn up in 1339 between the abbey of Strata Florida and the clergy of the diocese of St. David's (Williams, *Strata Florida*, 1889, p. li). According to Rees (*Welsh Saints*, p. 188), Paulinus was commemorated under the title 'Polin Esgob' on 22 Nov.

[Authorities cited.] J. E. L.

**PAULINUS** (*d.* 644), archbishop or bishop of York, was a Roman (*Carmen de Pontificibus Ecclesiæ Eboracensis*, ll. 135–6), and, it is said, a monk of the monastery of St. Andrew at Rome (*Acta SS. Bolland.* Oct. v. 104). He was sent by Pope Gregory the Great, together with Mellitus [q. v.], Justus [q. v.], and others, to join Augustine [q. v.] in England in 601. They carried commendatory letters to the bishops of the cities in Gaul through which they would pass on their way, and to the kings and queens of the Franks, and brought with them a pall for Augustine, answers to questions that he had laid before the pope, and directions concerning the establishment of sees in England, in which York was named as the future head of the northern province. Paulinus (though he may have been sent on a mission to East Anglia some time before 616) appears to have generally remained in Kent until 625. In that year Edwin or Eadwine [q. v.], king of the Northumbrians, who was then a pagan, obtained from Eadbald [q. v.], king of Kent, permission to marry his sister Ethelburga or Æthelburh [q. v.]; he promised to do nothing against his bride's religion, and to grant freedom of worship to her and to any attendants, priests, or ministers that she might bring with her, and declared that he would not refuse to embrace Christianity if, on examination, it should appear to his counsellors to be more pleasing to God than his own religion. It was determined to send Paulinus with Æthelburh and her attendants, that he might by daily exhortation and celebration of the sacraments strengthen them in the faith and keep them from the contamination of heathenism, and he was therefore ordained bishop by Archbishop Justus on 21 July. At the Northumbrian court he both ministered to those who had come with him and strove to convert others. For some time the pagans resisted his exhortations. Eadwine's escape from an attempt to assassinate him on 17 April 626, and the danger of his queen in childbirth, inclined him to listen to the words of Paulinus, and he promised the bishop that if he obtained victory over his enemies, and his queen was spared, he would accept Christianity, and as an assurance he allowed the bishop to baptise his newly born daughter, Eanflæd [q. v.], and eleven members of his household with her, on Whit-Sunday, 8 June (*Historia Ecclesiastica*, ii. c. 9), or more probably on the eve of that festival (Bright). Nevertheless the king delayed his conversion, until Paulinus one day placed his hand upon his head and asked him if he remembered that sign. The question referred to an incident in the earlier life of Eadwine [see under Edwin], when, during his residence at Rædwald's court, a man like Paulinus appeared to him at a moment of imminent danger, promised him deliverance, kingship, and power, and received from him in return a promise of obedience to be claimed by the sign that Paulinus at length gave the king. This incident is explained by some as a dream (Lingard, c. 2); others suppose that the

stranger who appeared to Eadwine was some Christian of Rædwald's court known to Paulinus (Churton, *Early English Church*, p. 56), and others that he was Paulinus in person (Raine, p. 38); if the last view is accepted, the appearance of Paulinus at the East-Anglian court, which must be dated before 616, would imply that he was then on a mission to that kingdom, undertaken possibly to reclaim Rædwald, who had fallen from the faith (Haddan and Stubbs, iii. 75). Eadwine recognised the sign, declared his willingness to adopt Christianity, and his witan having pronounced in favour of the change at a meeting held at Goodmanham, about twenty miles from York, he and his nobles openly professed their acceptance of the teaching of Paulinus, and sanctioned the destruction of the idolatrous temples and altars. A wooden church was hastily raised at York and dedicated to St. Peter, and there Paulinus instructed the king as a catechumen, and, on Easter day, 12 April 627, baptised him and many other noble persons, among whom were two of the king's sons. Welsh writers represent Eadwine and his people as having been baptised by a British priest named Rhun or Rum, son of Urbgen, or Urien (Nennius, p. 54; *Annales Cambr.* an. 182, i.e. A.D. 626) [see under Edwin], and it has consequently been supposed that Paulinus was a Briton by birth, who had resided in Rome, and had been sent thence by Gregory to assist in the conversion of the English (Hodgson Hinde, *History of Northumberland*, i. 77; Raine, p. 36). This is, however, mere supposition, and is untenable (Haddan and Stubbs, iii. 75).

In accordance with a grant of Eadwine, Paulinus carried out the ordinance of Pope Gregory by establishing his episcopal see at York. At his bidding, the foundations were laid of a stone church, which was built in the form of a square, with the little wooden church preserved in the middle of it; the walls were not raised to their full height in his time. He laboured unceasingly in preaching and baptising the people, moving about from one part of Eadwine's dominions to another, and everywhere meeting with signal success. On one occasion he visited Adgefrin or Yeavering, in the present Northumberland, then a royal residence, and remained there with the king and queen for thirty-six days, from morning till evening instructing and baptising the people, who flocked to him in great numbers, and were, after preparation, baptised in the river Glen, a tributary of the Till. Another visit to Bernicia is commemorated by the name of Pallinsburn or Pallingsburn in the same county. Deira, where he used to reside with the king, was the chief scene of his labours, and he was wont to baptise his converts in the Swale above Catterick Bridge, in the North Riding of Yorkshire. He is also believed to have preached at Dewsbury in the West Riding, and at Easingwold in the North Riding. At Dewsbury there was, in Camden's time, a cross with the inscription 'Hic Paulinus prædicavit et celebravit' (*Britannia*, col. 709); a successor to this cross was destroyed in 1812 (Whitaker). His custom was to preach in the open air and near some river, brook, or lake, that served for baptisms, and his work was simply one of foundation. Throughout the whole of Bernicia there was not, in his time, a single church, altar, or cross, and as regards Deira, the notice of the wooden basilica with a stone altar, that he raised at Campodonum—probably Tanfield, near Ripon—implies that the building was exceptional (Bright). South of the Humber, he preached in Lindsey; and Blæcca, the ealdorman of Lincoln, having, with all his house, received the gospel, built a church of stone in that city. There, in 628, Archbishop Justus having died the previous year, Paulinus, who was then the only Roman bishop in England, consecrated Honorius [q. v.] to the see of Canterbury. The corrupted name of St. Paul's Church at Lincoln preserves the memory of Paulinus, and of the church of Blæcca. He baptised many persons in the Trent in the presence of Eadwine and a multitude of people near a town called Tiovulfingchester—probably Southwell in Nottinghamshire—where tradition makes him the founder of the collegiate church (*Monasticon*, vi. 1312). He is also said to have preached at Whalley in Lancashire, then in Cumbria. In these labours he was assisted by his deacon James, whose diligence and faithfulness did much for the spread of the gospel.

On the overthrow of Eadwine in 633, Paulinus, seeing no safety except in flight, left his work in the north and sailed with the widowed queen Æthelburh and the king's children to Kent. His flight is commended by Canon Raine, and, for reasons which he fully states, is condemned by Canon Bright in his 'Early English Church History.' Bede, while not pronouncing any judgment on the matter, seems to have held that Paulinus had no choice, and that he owed attendance to the queen whom he had brought with him to Northumbria (see *Historia Ecclesiastica*, ii. c. 20). If this was Bede's opinion, it should, in spite of Canon Bright's weighty reasons on the other side, be taken as absolving

Paulinus from blame. The fugitives were escorted by Bass, one of the most valiant of the king's thegns. Along with other of Eadwine's precious vessels, Paulinus carried with him a large gold cross and the gold chalice that he used at the service of the altar; these were in Bede's time preserved at Canterbury. His deacon James remained in Northumbria, dwelling for the most part at a village that was called by his name near Catterick, and was the means of converting many from heathenism. He lived until Bede's time, and, being skilled in sacred song, taught the Roman or Canterbury mode of chanting to the Christians of the north, when peace had been restored to the church, and the number of believers had increased. Paulinus and his company were joyfully received by Eadbald, and the see of Rochester having been vacant since the death of Romanus in 627, he accepted it at the request of Eadbald and Honorius. It was probably while he was there, and certainly while he was in Kent, that he received the pall which Pope Honorius sent to him in 634 in answer to a request that Eadwine had made before his death. As he had then ceased to occupy the see of York, it is open to question whether he should be reckoned an archbishop (Canon Bright denies him the title, but it is accorded to him in the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* and elsewhere. No other occupant of the see of York received a pall until Egbert or Ecgberht (*d.* 766) [q. v.]). He died at Rochester on 10 Oct. 644 (*Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, sub an., Peterborough version; Florence, sub an.), and was buried in the secretarium of his church there (*Anglia Sacra*, i. 154). In person he was tall, with a slightly stooping figure; he had black hair, a thin face, and an aquiline nose, and was of venerable and awe-inspiring aspect (*Historia Ecclesiastica*, ii. 16). His name was inserted in the calendar, his day being that of his deposition. His memory was specially revered at Rochester, and, on the cathedral church being rebuilt, his body was translated by Archbishop Lanfranc, who laid his relics in a silver shrine, and gave a silver cross to stand above the feretory (*Registrum Roffense*, p. 120). A Glastonbury tradition represents Paulinus as residing some time there, and as covering the ancient church of the house with lead (Will. Malm. *De Antiquitatibus Glastoniæ*, p. 300). Some of his bones and teeth were among the relics in York minster (*Fabric Rolls*, p. 151), and his name was inserted in 'Liber Vitæ' of Durham (p. 7).

[Bede's Hist. Eccl. ii. cc. 9, 12–14, 16–20 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Anglo-Saxon Chron. ann. 601, 625, 633, 644; Alcuin's Carmen de SS. Ebor. ll. 135–6 ap. Historians of York, i. 353 (Rolls Ser.); Will. of Malmesbury's Gesta Pontiff. pp. 134, 211 (Rolls Ser.), and De Antiq. Eccl. Glast. ap. Gale's Scriptt. iii. 300; Nennius, p. 54 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Ann. Cambr. an. 626, ap. Mon. Hist. Brit. p. 832; Haddan and Stubbs's Eccl. Documents, i. 124, iii. 33, 75, 82, 83; Anglia Sacra, i. 154; Acta SS. Bolland. Oct. v. 102 sqq.; Reg. Roffense, pp. 120. 124, ed. Thorpe; Fabric Rolls of York, p. 151, Liber Vitæ Dunelm. p. 7 (both Surtees Soc.); Camden's Britannia, col. 709 (ed. 1695); Whitaker's Whalley, p. 50, and Loidis and Elmete, pp. 299, 300; Hodgson Hinde's Hist. of Northumberland, i. 77; Dugdale's Monasticon, i. 152, vi. 1312; Bright's Chapters of Early English Church Hist. pp. 55, 111–23, 128–30; Raine's Fasti Ebor. pp. 35–46, and his art. 'Paulinus' (20) in Dict. Chr. Biogr. iv. 248; Churton's Early English Church, p. 56; Lingard's Hist. of England, i. 58 (ed. 1854).] W. H.

PAULL, JAMES (1770–1808), politician, born at Perth in 1770, was the son of a tailor and clothier, a parentage with which he was often twitted in after life. He was educated at the university of St. Andrews, and placed with a writer to the signet at Edinburgh, but soon tired of legal life. At the age of eighteen he went out as a writer to India, in the ship of Sir Home Popham, and about 1790 settled at Lucknow. Within two years from his arrival he earned sufficient money to repay the cost of his outfit and to provide an annuity for his mother, then a widow. In 1801 he quitted Lucknow and came to England for a time, but returned again to India in the following year. He had now established an extensive business, and occupied such a prominent position in commercial life at Lucknow that he was sent to Lord Wellesley as a delegate of the traders in that city. For a time viceroy and merchant were on good terms, but they soon parted in anger. Paull was a little man, of a 'fiery heart,' and in a duel in India with some one who taunted him with the meanness of his birth, he was so wounded as at the close of his life to lose the use of his right arm. In the latter part of 1804 he returned to England with the reputation of having amassed a large fortune. On his previous visit he had been graciously received by the Prince of Wales, and he considered himself one of the prince's political adherents, expecting in turn to receive the support of the Carlton House party in his attack on Lord Wellesley. He was elected for the borough of Newtown, Isle of Wight, on 5 June 1805, and before the month was out proceeded to move for papers relating to the dealings of Lord Wellesley with the nabob of Oudh. He had many friends,

among whom was Windham, who introduced him to Cobbett in June 1805. It was understood at that time that he was supported by the whigs and the prince; but when the ministry of 'All the Talents' was formed, it was impossible for the new government, which included Lord Grenville, to support him in his opposition to Wellesley, although Fox, Windham, and many of its leading members were in agreement with his views. The Prince of Wales thereupon urged him to desist from any further proceedings.

Paull declined to adopt this suggestion, and spent the session of 1806 in moving for additional papers and in formulating his charges against the viceroy. The friends of Lord Wellesley tried in July 1806 to force his hand, but, through the interposition of Sir Samuel Romilly, were prevented from carrying out their purpose. A dissolution of parliament intervened, and Paull, having been disappointed in his expectation of obtaining a seat for one of the prince's boroughs, stood for Westminster against Sheridan and Sir Samuel Hood (November). The contest was animated. Sir Francis Burdett had met him at Cobbett's, and had introduced him to Horne Tooke. Burdett had himself been asked to stand for Westminster, but declined in favour of Paull, supporting him with all his influence and subscribing 1,000*l.* towards the expenses of the contest. The poll lasted fifteen days, when Hood and Sheridan were elected. On one occasion, when the candidates were on the hustings, a stage was brought from Drury Lane, with four tailors seated at work, a live goose, and several cabbages. Gillray brought out several caricatures, including (1) a view of the hustings in Covent Garden; (2) 'the high-flying candidate, little Paull goose, mounting from a blanket' held by Hood and Sheridan; (3) 'the triumphal procession of little Paull, the tailor, upon his new goose.' The defeated candidate, who polled 4,481 votes, petitioned against the return, and the matter came before the House of Commons on 5 and 18 March 1807, when the allegations were voted 'false and scandalous.'

Paull stood again for Westminster at the election in May 1807 with even less success. Horne Tooke, who had said to him one day, 'You are a bold man, and I am certain you'll succeed, only, as Cobbett says, keep yourself cool,' was now estranged. Cobbett was still his friend, and highly praised him in his 'Political Register,' on 9 May 1807, for the temptations which he had withstood; but the time came when he remarked, 'Paull is too fond of the Bond Street set—has too great a desire to live amongst the great.' Burdett had been advertised by Paull as having agreed to take the chair at a dinner at the 'Crown and Anchor' at an early stage in these election proceedings, but he repudiated the alleged engagement, and a duel ensued at Coombe Wood, near Wimbledon, on 2 May 1807. On the second exchange of shots, insisted upon by Paull, as Burdett declined to apologise, both were badly wounded. Gillray produced a caricature of the duel, and some ridicule was expressed over the circumstance that, through the absence of a medical officer and the lack of proper arrangements for carriages, both combatants were brought back to London in the same vehicle. At the close of the election Burdett and Lord Cochrane were at the head of the poll with 5,134 and 3,708 votes respectively, while Paull obtained only 269.

Paull neglected his wounds, and passed, after his duel, 'three months of dreadful suffering, without any hope, and almost without the possibility of recovery.' His election expenses had exhausted his resources, and he was disappointed in his expectations of assistance from India. For some weeks he showed signs of mental derangement, but his ruin was hastened by the loss of over sixteen hundred guineas at a gaming-house in Pall Mall on the night of 14 April 1808. On the next day he deliberately committed suicide, by piercing his right arm, and, when that did not effect his purpose, by cutting his throat. He died at his house, Charles Street, Westminster, on 15 April 1808, and was buried at St. James's, Piccadilly, on 21 April.

In 1806 a 'Lover of Consistency,' no doubt Paull himself, published 'A Letter to the Right Hon. C. J. Fox,' on his conduct upon the charges against Lord Wellesley. The accusations brought against the Prince of Wales were repelled in 1806 in 'A Letter to the Earl of Moira.' After the duel with Burdett there appeared in the 'Times' a letter from Tooke, which was published separately; and he also issued a pamphlet, entitled 'A Warning to the Electors of Westminster from Mr. Horne Tooke,' alleging that Paull had thrust himself upon him; but the accusation was rashly made, and easily dispelled in 'A Refutation of the Calumnies of John Horne Tooke, by James Paull,' 1807. In 1808 there came out 'A Letter from Mr. Paull to Samuel Whitbread,' in which he attributed the loss of his election for Westminster to the influence of that politician. His letter to Lord Folkestone on the impeachment of the Marquis of Wellesley is in Cobbett's 'Political Register,' on 25 Oct. 1806 (pp. 648–56). The charges against that

viceroy were renewed in the House of Commons by Lord Folkestone on 9 March 1808, but were negatived by 182 votes to 31.

Paull was possessed of wonderful perseverance and ardour, and was an adept at mob oratory. He had acquired great knowledge of Indian affairs, but possessed little acquaintance with general matters. His zeal involved him in perpetual strife. A duel between him and a Westminster politician, called Elliot, was stopped by the authorities at the close of 1806. He was described by Jerdan as 'a dapper little fellow, touched with the smallpox, and dressed in blue coat and leather inexpressibles, the fashionable costume of the day' (*Autobiogr.* i. 95).

[Wilson's House of Commons, 1808, pp. 639–640; Gent. Mag. 1806 pt. ii. p. 1164, 1808 pt. i. pp. 373–4; Annual Reg. 1808, pp. 151–2; Georgian Era, i. 563; Stephens's Life of Horne Tooke, ii. 317–19, 367–8; Oldfield's Representative Hist. iv. 237; Redding's Fifty Years, i. 85–86; Major Cartwright's Life, pp. 343, 347; Romilly's Life, ii. 153–5; Smith's Cobbett, ii. 15–16, 25–30, 33; Cobbett's Political Reg. for 1806; Hansard for 1805, 1806, and 1807; Pearce's Lord Wellesley, ii. 428–44.]

W. P. C.

**PAULTON, ABRAHAM WALTER** (1812–1876), politician and journalist, was son of Walter Paulton of Bolton, Lancashire, where he was born in 1812. His family were Roman catholics, and he was sent to Stonyhurst College to be educated for the priesthood. His views underwent a change, and on leaving college at the age of sixteen or seventeen he was apprenticed to a surgeon named Rainforth at Bolton. His thirst for general information was strong, and he began to take a deep interest in the political topics of the day, especially in the corn laws, then beginning to excite attention. He availed himself of opportunities for addressing public meetings, and soon became a good speaker. In July 1838 he was in the Bolton Theatre when the appointed lecturer, on the corn laws, proved himself unequal to the task set before him. Paulton was induced to mount the stage, and succeeded in quieting the turbulent audience by undertaking to lecture on the same subject the following week. The promised lecture was delivered, and proved a brilliant success; and one of the consequences of this incident was the abandonment of the medical profession for politics. He was soon afterwards introduced to Cobden, and engaged himself as a lecturer for the Anti-Corn-Law League. He was called away from this work in April 1839 to edit the 'Anti-Corn-Law Circular' (changed to 'Anti-Bread-Tax Circular' in April 1841), the earliest organ of the league, and published in Manchester. This was succeeded in September 1843 by the 'League' newspaper, which had its headquarters in London, whither Paulton removed in order to undertake the editorship. The operations of the league were brought to a close in 1846 by the repeal of the corn laws, and in 1848 Paulton returned to Manchester, and, in conjunction with Henry Rawson, purchased the 'Manchester Times,' a newspaper representing the views of the more advanced section of the liberal party, with which afterwards was amalgamated the 'Manchester Examiner,' the style of the paper being thenceforth the 'Examiner and Times.' This was conducted by Paulton from 1848 to 1854. In the latter year he married the daughter of James Mellor of Liverpool, and from that time resided in London, or at his country house, Boughton Hall, Surrey. In his retirement he still took the same deep interest in public questions, and remained on terms of close intimacy with Cobden, John Bright, and other old associates. He was a man of great ability, deeply versed in political questions and the philosophy of politics, and in later years was keenly interested in the progress of physical inquiry. He was a conversationalist of the first order. His writings, consisting mainly of newspaper articles, have not been collected.

He died at Boughton Hall, Surrey, on 6 June 1876, leaving a son and a daughter, and was buried at Kensal Green cemetery.

[Manchester Examiner and Times, 12 June 1876; Prentice's Anti-Corn-Law League, 1853, i. 64 et seq.; Morley's Life of Cobden, 1881, i. 408, ii. 389, 395, 409, 411, 457, 458, 472; Ashworth's Recollections of Cobden, p. 35; Smith's Life of John Bright, 1881, i. 131, 133; Somerville's Free Trade and the League, 1853, ii. 482.] C. W. S.

**PAUPER, HERBERT** (*d.* 1217), bishop of Salisbury. [See POOR.]

**PAUPER, ROGER** (*fl.* 1135), judge. [See ROGER.]

**PAVELEY, SIR WALTER** (1319–1375), soldier, was son of Walter de Paveley by Maud, daughter and heiress of Stephen Burghersh, elder brother of Bartholomew Burghersh (*d.* 1355) [q. v.], and Henry Burghersh [q. v.], bishop of Lincoln. Several families of the name of Paveley occur as holding lands in Northamptonshire, Kent, Somerset, and Wiltshire, during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries (cf. HARDY, *Cal. Rot. Claus.*; MADOX, *Formulare Anglicanum*, p. 424; HOARE, *Hist. of Wiltshire*, Westbury, p. 3). The family to which Walter belonged seems to have been connected with

the two former counties (*Cal. Inquis. post mortem*, ii. 1, 347; Bridges, *Northamptonshire*, i. 286). During the reign of Edward II the heads both of the Wiltshire and Kentish families were called Walter. Walter de Paveley of Northamptonshire sided with Thomas of Lancaster, and was taken prisoner at Boroughbridge in 1322. He was M.P. for Kent in 1324 (*Parl. Writs*, iii. 1266). He had acquired lands in Kent through his marriage (cf. Hasted, *Hist. of Kent*, ii. 314), and died in 1327, when his son was seven years old. The younger Walter de Paveley is mentioned as defendant in an assize of novel disseizin in 1340 (*Year Book*, 13–14 Edward III, p. 304). On 8 July 1341 he was returned as heir of his uncle, Henry Burghersh. He served under his uncle Bartholomew in Brittany in 1342 and 1345, and was present with Sir Walter de Manny [q. v.] at Rennes in 1342 (Froissart, iv. 12). In 1343 he was serving in Gascony (*ib.* iv. 218), and took part in the campaign of 1346, when he was one of the prince's counsellors at Creçy (*ib.* v. 35–6). In 1347 he was with his cousin Bartholomew Burghersh at Calais, and in 1349 took part in the campaign in Gascony. In 1350 he was chosen one of the first knights-companions of the order of the Garter (Geoffrey le Baker, p. 109, ed. Thompson). In 1351 he served under Henry of Lancaster at sea. In 1355 he was in Gascony, and in 1358 in Brittany. His cousin Bartholomew Burghersh appointed him his executor in 1369, and left him a standing cup gilt and a suit of armour, together with some of his Kentish estates (Hasted, *Hist. of Kent*, i. 83, ii. 190). Paveley occurs in the wardrobe accounts down to 1375 as receiving the customary robe as a knight of the Garter. The Black Prince gave him a nouche adorned with pearls and diamonds in 1346, and a charger called Morel More when in Normandy in 1349 (*Archæologia*, xxxi. 149). Paveley died on 28 June 1375, and was buried in the church of the Blackfriars, London. By his wife, who belonged to the family of St. Philibert (cf. Bridges, *Northamptonshire*, i. 286), he had two sons: Edward, who died on 7 Dec. 1375, and Walter, who perished with Sir John Arundell (*d.* 1379) [q. v.] in December 1379 (Froissart, ed. Reynaud, ix. 211), and whose will, dated 21 Nov. 1379, was proved on 20 April 1380 (*Testamenta Vetusta*, p. 109). Neither of his sons left any children. Paveley's arms, 'azure a cross flory or,' appear in the thirteenth stall on the prince's side at Windsor (cf. *Parl. Writs*, ii. 198). Froissart refers to him as Sir William Penniel, and Stow (*Annales*, p. 390) calls him Sir William Panele; this is no doubt an error (cf. *Rolls of Parliament*, ii. 424, for a reference to Sir Walter de Panely in 1327).

[Froissart, ed. Kervyn de Lettenhove; Ashmole's Order of the Garter, p. 708; Beltz's Memorials of the Order of the Garter, pp. 6–9, 93–5; other authorities quoted.] C. L. K.

PAVER, WILLIAM (1802–1871), genealogist, born in 1802, was in 1867 acting as registrar of births and deaths at 4 Rougier Street, York (White, *Directory for North and East Ridings*, 1867, p. 425). He died at Rishworth Street, Wakefield, on 1 June 1871, aged 69 (register of deaths at Somerset House).

Paver's method of genealogical construction caused his pedigrees to be condemned as worthless by genealogists of repute. Consequently he never received any encouragement to publish his collections; but he sought to attract attention to them in a pamphlet called 'Pedigrees of Families of the City of York, from a Manuscript entitled "The Heraldic Visitations of Yorkshire consolidated,"' 8vo, York, 1842, and by a list of Yorkshire pedigrees in his possession, furnished to the 'New England Historical and Genealogical Register' for July 1857 (pp. 259–71). He also issued part i. of 'Original Genealogical Abstracts of the Wills of Individuals of Noble and Ancient Families now or formerly resident in the County of York, with Notes,' 4to, Sheffield, 1830, the contents of which were superseded by the four volumes of 'Testamenta Eboracensia,' printed by the Surtees Society.

In 1874 Paver's extensive collections relating to Yorkshire were acquired by the trustees of the British Museum, where they are catalogued as Additional MSS. 29644–703. His consolidation of the Yorkshire 'Visitations' of 1584, 1612, and 1665, containing about nine hundred pedigrees, occupies three folio volumes, and is indexed. But by far the most valuable portion of the Paver MSS. is the transcripts of marriage licenses, commencing in 1567, formerly preserved in the registry of York, as the originals have disappeared. These transcripts have been printed, with notes, by the Rev. C. B. Norcliffe in the 'Yorkshire Archæological and Topographical Journal,' beginning in vol. vii.; but it is to be regretted that Paver has not given the day of the month as well as the year. His son, Percy Woodroffe Paver, also an industrious antiquary, made 'Extracts from his Father's Yorkshire Collections,' 1852 (Addit. MS. 29692, f. 49); 'Extracts out of Torre's MSS. at York,' 1848 (Addit.

MS. 29689); and a useful general 'Index to York Collections' (Addit. MS. 29691).

[Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. ii. 387, 5th ser. i. 360, x. 248, 336; Cat. of Addit. MSS. Brit. Mus. (8vo, 1877), ii. 687–93, cf. Addit. MS. 24873, f. 29.] G. G.

**PAXTON, GEORGE** (1762–1837), Scottish secession divine, born 2 April 1762, at Dalgourie, a hamlet in the parish of Bolton, East Lothian, was eldest son of William Paxton, a joiner or house carpenter, and his wife, Jean Milne. Soon after George's birth his parents removed first to Melrose, and thence to Makerstoun, near Kelso and the Tweed. The picturesqueness of the place Paxton portrays in his poem 'The Villager.' The neighbouring laird, Sir Hay McDougal, colonel of the Scots Greys, became interested in the family, and young Paxton was educated under his eye at the parish school of Makerstoun. He subsequently went to Kelso, learning Latin and Greek, and, after a short experience as a carpenter, entered Edinburgh University, but left without a degree; went to Alloa in 1784 to study divinity under William Moncrieff, and 'became a firm seceder.'

On 17 March 1788 he was licensed to preach by the associate presbytery of Edinburgh, and his eloquence was at once recognised. He received calls from three churches almost simultaneously, viz., Greenlaw, Craigend, and the united congregations of Kilmaurs and Stewarton. By decision of the synod he accepted the call of the last-named congregations 12 Aug. 1789, and took up his abode at Stewarton.

After a few years the two congregations, at the advice of Paxton, separated, and Kilmaurs was assigned to him. Owing to a hepatic malady, he was soon forced to resign pastoral duty for seven years, and on his recovery the general associate synod elected him professor of divinity in 1807. He removed to Edinburgh, but disagreements with the majority of his co-religionists on the subject of the union between the synod and the burgher seceders led to his resignation of his professorship and his withdrawal from the associate synod in 1820 [see McCrie, Thomas, D.D.] He thereupon became pastor to a body of sympathisers who seceded with him, in a vacant chapel adjacent to the Grassmarket under Castle Hill. A new church was afterwards built in Infirmary Street, which his eloquence soon filled, and he and his congregation effected a union with the constitutional presbytery of seceders to which Dr. McCrie belonged, and thus formed the new connection styled the Associate Synod of Original Seceders. Paxton was chosen to the professorship of divinity in the united body, but still exercised his function as pastor. Before entering the new connection he had espoused the cause of national establishments in religion, and, when the question began to be heavily debated, continued to defend them. Some time after he was made honorary D.D. of St. Andrews University. He died on 9 April 1837, and was buried in the West Kirk burying-ground. In 1790 Paxton married Elizabeth Armstrong (*d.* 1800), a daughter of a manufacturer in Kelso. By her he had two sons and three daughters (cf. *Villager*, p. 301).

Paxton's only surviving son, George, practised medicine in India, and acquired considerable reputation. Paxton's second wife, Margaret Johnstone, daughter of a farmer in Berwick, survived him. A portrait of Paxton, in oils, belongs to the Rev. W. Macleod, the present minister of Paxton's church in Edinburgh.

Besides two sermons, Paxton wrote: 1. 'An Inquiry into the Obligation of Religious Covenants upon Posterity,' 1801, Edinburgh. 2. 'Letters to the Rev. W. Taylor on Healing the Divisions in our Church,' 1802. 3. 'The Villager, and other Poems,' Edinburgh, 1813. 4. 'Illustrations of the Holy Scriptures in Three Parts: (1) from the Geography of the East, (2) from the Natural History of the East, (3) from the Customs of Ancient and Modern Nations,' Edinburgh, 1819, 2 vols.; 3rd edit. Edinburgh, 4 vols. 1841–3. 5. 'The Sin and Danger of circulating the Apocrypha in connexion with the Holy Scriptures, with a brief statement of what is known concerning the Authors of the Apocryphal Books,' Edinburgh, 1828, 2nd edit.

[Brief Memoir by the Rev. John Mitchell, D.D., Glasgow, prefixed to vol. i. of the 1843 edition of the Bible Illustrations; Colburn's Biogr. Dict. of Living Authors, 1816; Reuss's Das gelehrte England; Autobiographical Memoranda in Paxton's Poems; information kindly furnished by the Rev. W. Macleod.] W. A. S.

**PAXTON, JAMES** (1786–1860), surgeon and medical writer, was born in London on 11 Jan. 1786. He was admitted M.R.C.S., London, 16 March 1810, and was created M.D. of St. Andrews 1845. For a time he acted as an army surgeon, but in 1816 took a practice at Long Buckley, Northamptonshire. Thence he removed to Oxford in 1821, where he had considerable success as a general practitioner. He was assistant-surgeon to the Oxfordshire militia. In 1843 he removed to a practice at Rugby. A small estate was bequeathed to him in 1858 at Ledwell, a hamlet of the parish

of Sandford St. Martin, seventeen miles from Oxford. There he died, at his residence, Ledwell House, after a very short illness, on 12 March 1860, and was buried in the churchyard at Sandford. He married Miss Anna Griffin, who died in 1864, and one of his two daughters married the Rev. Henry Highton, headmaster of Cheltenham College.

Paxton was a man of strong religious feelings, and was highly esteemed by his friends and patients. His writings had much success. Their titles are: 1. 'Specimen of an Introduction to the Study of Human Anatomy,' 1830. 2. 'An Introduction to the Study of Human Anatomy,' London, 1831, 8vo, 2 vols.; new edit. 1841. This book was republished in America, where it went through three editions. 3. 'The Medical Friend; or Advice for the Preservation of Health,' Oxford, 1843. 4. 'Living Streams, or Illustrations of the Natural History and various Diseases of the Blood,' London, 8vo, 1855. He contributed 'A Case of Scirrhous Pylorus and Mortification of the Stomach' to the 'Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal,' xv. 328, and edited Paley's 'Natural Theology,' with 'a series of plates and explanatory notes,' Oxford, 1826, 8vo, 2 vols.

[Marshall's Account of Sandford; Rugby Advertiser, March 1860; information from Librarian of Royal College of Surgeons; Lowndes's Bibl. Man.] E. H. M.

PAXTON, JOHN (*d.* 1780), painter, appears to have been of Scottish origin, and to have been a student in Foulis's art academy at Glasgow. He subsequently studied at Rome. He was one of the original members of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and signed their declaration roll in 1766. In that year he sent to their exhibition from Rome 'Samson in Distress.' In 1769 and 1770 he exhibited portraits at the Royal Academy, and in the latter year settled in Charlotte Street, Rathbone Place, where he had considerable practice as a portrait-painter. He continued to exhibit with the Society of Artists, of which he was director in 1775, sending chiefly portraits, but also scriptural, classical, and historical subjects. Subsequently he received some commissions to paint portraits in India, and went there about 1776. He died at Bombay in 1780. Paxton painted a portrait of Signorina Zamperini as 'Cechina.' A portrait by him of his fellow-pupil, James Tassie [q. v.], is in the Scottish National Portrait Gallery at Edinburgh. Paxton is alluded to in John Langhorne's 'Fables of Flora,' 1771.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Pye's Patronage of British Art; Catalogues of the Soc. of Artists, Royal Academy, &c.] L. C.

PAXTON, SIR JOSEPH (1801–1865), gardener and architect, born at Milton-Bryant, near Woburn, Bedfordshire, 3 Aug. 1801, was son of a small farmer of that place. He was educated at Woburn grammar school, and when fifteen was placed under his elder brother John, then gardener to Sir Gregory Page-Turner, at Battlesden Park, near Woburn. Two years later he was apprenticed to William Griffin, a skilful fruit-grower, gardener to Samuel Smith of Woodhall Park, Watton, Hertfordshire. In 1821 he returned as gardener to Battlesden, and there constructed a large lake. In 1823 he was for a brief period in the service of the Duke of Somerset at Wimbledon. But when, in the same year, the Horticultural Society leased the Chiswick gardens from the Duke of Devonshire, and engaged in reconstructing them, Paxton, to improve himself, obtained employment there in the arboretum. He became foreman in 1824, but in 1826 was on the point of starting for America in hopes of bettering his condition, as he was only earning eighteen shillings a week. His trim, manly, and intelligent bearing had, however, attracted the attention of the Duke of Devonshire, who was then president of the Horticultural Society; and he was appointed superintendent of the gardens at Chatsworth. In 1829 the woods were also placed under his care, and between 1832 and 1836 he superintended the erection of the stove, greenhouse, and orchid-houses, the formation of a magnificent arboretum—the cost of which was entirely defrayed from the sale of timber cleared off its site—and the making of many estate roads. In 1836 he began the erection of the great conservatory, three hundred feet in length, which was completed in 1840, and formed in some respects the model for the Great exhibition building of 1851. Having now been received into the duke's intimate friendship, he was invited to accompany him on a tour in the west of England; in 1838 they visited Switzerland, Italy, Greece, Turkey, Asia Minor, Malta, Spain, and Portugal; and in 1840 they went together to the duke's estate at Lismore. Between 1839 and 1841 Paxton remodelled the village of Edensor, near Chatsworth, and his last great constructive work there was the fountains, the largest of which is 267 feet in height. In 1849 he was successful in flowering the 'Victoria regia' water-lily for the first time in Europe. In 1850, after 233 other plans for the Industrial exhibition had been rejected, one prepared by Paxton in nine days was accepted.

He had only decided to compete at the last moment. On the successful completion of the building in the following year, he was knighted. Between 1853 and 1854 he superintended the re-erection of his Crystal Palace at Sydenham, becoming director of the gardens there, but he did not abandon the control of the Duke of Devonshire's Derbyshire estate. His organised corps of navvies at Sydenham led him to suggest to the government the formation of the army works corps during the Crimean war, and the organisation proved of considerable utility. In 1854 Paxton was elected member of parliament for Coventry in the liberal interest, and continued to represent that borough until his death. He was also largely engaged in railway management, being an excellent man of business, and designed many important buildings, including Baron Rothschild's mansion at Ferrières. Paxton died at his residence, Rockhills, Sydenham, on 8 June 1865. In 1827 he married Sarah Bown. He became a fellow of the Horticultural Society in 1826, and was afterwards vice-president; he was elected fellow of the Linnean Society in 1833, and received the Russian order of St. Vladimir in 1844. His name was commemorated by Lindley in the genus *Paxtonia* among orchids; but this name is not retained by botanists.

He edited: 1. With Joseph Harrison, 'The Horticultural Register and General Magazine,' 1832-6, 5 vols. 8vo. 2. 'The Magazine of Botany and Register of Flowering Plants,' 1834–48, 15 vols. 8vo. 3. 'Paxton's Magazine of Gardening and Botany,' 1849, 8vo. 4. With John Lindley, 'Paxton's Flower Garden,' 1850–3, 3 vols. 4to, of which seven numbers, containing 112 pp., were reissued by A. Murray in 1873–4, and a second edition, recast by T. Baines, was issued in 3 vols. 4to in 1882–4. 5. With the help of Lindley, 'A Botanical Pocket Dictionary,' 1840, 8vo, of which a second edition appeared in 1849, and a third, by S. Hereman, in 1868. Paxton was also one of the founders of the 'Gardeners' Chronicle' in 1841. His chief independent work was 'A Practical Treatise on the Cultivation of the Dahlia,' 1838, 8vo, which was translated into French, with an introduction by Jussieu; into German, with an introduction by Alexander von Humboldt; and into Swedish.

[J. Payne Collier in Notes and Queries, 1865, quoting a manuscript biography by the Duke of Devonshire; Gardeners' Chronicle, 1865, p. 554; Journal of Horticulture, 1865, viii. 446, with engraved portrait; Gent. Mag. 1865, ii. 247–249.] G. S. B.

**PAXTON, PETER** (*d.* 1711), medical writer and pamphleteer, was admitted to the degree of M.D. *per literas regias*, at Pembroke College, Cambridge, in 1687. His name does not appear in the admission-book of Pembroke College, and he may have come from Oxford for an *ad eundem* degree. In 1704 he lived in Beaufort Street, London. His last work, 'Specimen Physico-medicum,' is posthumous, and the bookseller speaks of the author as recently dead. Paxton wrote: 1. 'An Essay concerning the Body of Man, wherein its Changes or Diseases are consider'd and the Operations of Medicines observed,' London, 1701. This work, which traces all diseases to the fluids in the body, was reviewed in 'History of the Works of the Learned' for March 1701 (iii. 177–83). 2. 'The Grounds of Physick examined, and the Reasons of the Abuses prov'd to be different from what have been usually assign'd; in answer to a Letter from the ingenious Dr. G.,' London, 1703, 8vo; an attack on apothecaries. 3. 'A Discourse concerning the Nature, Advantage, and Improvement of Trade, with some Considerations why the charges of the Poor do and will increase,' London, 1704 (a sensible and remarkable exposition of *laissez faire*). 4. 'A Scheme for Union between England and Scotland, with Advantages to both Kingdoms,' London, 1705. 5. 'A Directory Physico-medical, composed for the Use and Benefit of all such as design to study and practise the Art of Physick, wherein proper Methods and Rules are prescrib'd for the better understanding of that Art, and Catalogues of such Authors exhibited as are necessary to be consulted by all young Students,' London, 1707. 6. 'Specimen Physico-medicum de corpore humano et ejus morbis: or an Essay concerning the Knowledge and Cure of most Diseases affecting Human Bodies, to which is annex'd a short Account of Salivation and the use of Mercury, with a copious Index,' London, 1711, posthumous; an expansion by Paxton himself of No. 1, and written in Latin, 'but I find,' says the printer to the reader, 'that he preferred to have it turned into English, and I have done so' (*History of the Works of the Learned*, xiii. 97).

[Paxton's Tracts in the Brit. Mus.; Luard's Grad. Cantabr.; information kindly supplied by the Rev. C. E. Searle, master of Pembroke.] W. A. S.

**PAXTON, STEPHEN** (1735–1787), violoncellist and composer, was born in 1735. He played principal parts at oratorio meetings, and his full and sweet tone on the violoncello, together with his judgment in accompanying, was praised by Burney. In 1780 Paxton was a professional member of

the Catch Club, and the following part-songs by him gained prizes: 'How sweet, how fresh this vernal day,' 1779; 'Round the hapless André's urn,' 1781; 'Ye Muses, inspire me,' a catch, 1783; 'Blest Power,' 1784; 'Come, oh come,' 1785. He wrote masses in D and in G, and motets for the Roman catholic church, to which he belonged; and composed also pieces for his instrument, and sold his music at 29 Titchfield Street, London. Paxton died at Brompton Row on 18 Aug. 1787, aged 52, leaving a widow, whom, in his will, he recommended to practise works of charity. Paxton himself was respected for 'his exemplary virtues and universal charity' (*Gent. Mag.* 1787, ii. 837). He was buried in Old St. Pancras churchyard.

Paxton published: 1. 'Six Solos for the Violoncello,' 1780. 2. 'Eight Duets for Violin and Violoncello.' 3. 'Six easy Solos for Violoncello or Bassoon.' 4. 'Four Duets for Violin and Violoncello, with two Solos.' 5. 'A Collection of Glees' (his own, nineteen altogether). 6. 'Twelve easy Lessons for a Violoncello and Bass.' Many of Paxton's glees are included in 'Ladies' Amusement,' 1791, vols. i. and ii.; and in Warren's 'Collection of Catches;' and the two masses were printed in Webbe's volume of 'Masses,' 1792; other sacred music of Paxton's has been arranged by Butler and Robinson.

To Paxton's brother, William Paxton (*fl.* 1780), another violoncello-player and composer of glees, has been ascribed the glee, 'Breathe soft, ye winds,' which appears in Stephen Paxton's collection. William Paxton gained prizes at the Catch Club for two canons, 'O Lord, in Thee,' 1779; and 'O Israel, trust in the Lord,' 1780.

[Grove's Dict. ii. 677, &c.; Burney's Hist. iv. 677; Roffe's Tomb-seeker, p. 35.] L. M. M.

**PAYE, HENRY** (*fl.* 1405–1415), sea captain, appears to have belonged to Poole. In 1403 he was sent to Calais to aid in settling some Flemish claims, and in August 1404 he was directed to prepare to meet a threatened French invasion. In 1405 he was associated with Lord Berkeley in command of a fleet levied for the defence of the Channel, with the special object of preventing the French from sending assistance to Owen Glendower. They succeeded in landing a strong body of men in Milford Haven, but there their fleet was attacked by the English under Berkeley and Paye, and fifteen of their ships burnt. A strong reinforcement which was being sent to the French in Wales was met at sea, and fourteen ships laden with military stores were captured. Paye afterwards ravaged the coast of France, and is said to have brought home 120 vessels laden with iron, salt, oil, and wine. The French soon obtained assistance from Spain, and a combined squadron of French and Spanish galleys came into the Channel. So far as can be made out from the confused geography, they sacked Looe, judged Falmouth too strong, were beaten off from Plymouth, and again from Portland. They then came to Poole, which the Spanish chronicler describes as belonging to a knight called Arripay—Harry Paye—who scours the seas as a corsair with many ships. This 'Arripay came often upon the coast of Castile, and carried away many ships; he scoured the channel of Flanders, so that no vessel could pass that way without being taken; he burnt Gijon and Finisterre, and carried off the famous and most holy crucifix from Santa Maria de Finisterre, and much more damage he did in Castile, taking many prisoners, and exacting ransoms; and though other armed ships came there from England, he it was who came oftenest.' In revenge for Paye's ravages in Castile, the Spaniards now resolved to land and burn Poole; but after a sharp fight, in which a brother of Paye was slain, they were driven back to their ships. They afterwards went to the Isle of Wight, and, meeting no good success there, returned to France. Paye's knighthood seems to have been conferred on him by the Spanish chronicler. On 19 July 1414 he was paid eight marks for going to Calais to report on the state of the garrison.

[Southey's Naval Hist. ii. 15, 16, 27 (quoting Crónica del Conde D. Nero Niño); Nicolas's Royal Navy, ii. 374–81, 463; Annales Henrici IV, pp. 386–8, 415; Walsingham's Hist. ii. 272–5, and his Ypodigma, pp. 416, 421; Capgrave's Chron. p. 292; Rymer's Fœdera, viii. 304; Nicolas's Privy Council, i 234; Wylie's Henry IV passim.] J. K. L.

**PAYE, RICHARD MORTON** (*d.* 1821), painter, is stated to have been born at Botley (?) in Kent. His name first appears in 1773, when he was living in London, and sent two portraits in oil and two models in wax to the Royal Academy. He continued to exhibit there not infrequently during the following years up to 1798, sending portraits, miniatures, and small figure subjects. He also exhibited at the Society of Artists in 1783. He had some skill as a modeller and chaser, which accounts for a certain sculpturesque feeling in his pictures. Paye especially excelled in painting children, both as single portraits and in groups. A number of these were engraved by John Young [q. v.], who did much to assist the painter,

V. Green, J. R. Smith, W. Ward, R. Pollard, and others, and are valuable, because truthful records of child-life in Paye's day. Paye was greatly helped in early life by the Rev. Joseph Holden Potts, vicar of Kensington and archdeacon of Middlesex, who purchased many of his works. Subsequently he was patronised by Dr. John Wolcot (Peter Pindar) [q. v.], who did much to promote Paye's success as a painter, until a breach took place between them. When left to his own resources Paye quickly sank into poverty and neglect, and was eventually crippled by illness, though he continued painting after losing the use of his right arm. He received assistance from the artists' benevolent fund, but died quite forgotten and neglected in December 1821. At the exhibition of A Century of British Art (Grosvenor Gallery, 1888–9) a picture was lent by Sir John Neeld, bart., representing a candle-light scene (a style in which Paye especially excelled), with a portrait of the artist engraving a portrait. A picture by Paye of an interior, with an old woman at work, was once sold as a fine Netherlandish work, and another picture, 'The Widow's Cruse,' was not only sold, but even exhibited in a well-known picture-dealer's shop as the work of Velasquez. A portrait of Paye, engraved from a drawing by himself, accompanies a memoir of him in Arnold's 'Library of the Fine Arts.' Paye appears to have had a son (C. W. Paye) and a daughter, who both painted miniatures, and were exhibitors at the Royal Academy from 1798 to 1808.

[Arnold's Library of the Fine Arts, iii. 95; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Catalogues of the Royal Academy, Society of Artists, &c.] L. C.

PAYNE. [See also PAIN and PAINE.]

PAYNE, GEORGE (1781–1848), congregational divine, born at Stow-on-the-Wold, Gloucestershire, on 17 Sept. 1781, was youngest son of Alexander Payne, a cooper, by his wife, Mary Dyer of Bampton. The father, who was a churchman, in early life turned baptist after hearing the sermons of Law Butterworth of Bingworth, and in 1783 became the baptist preacher to the church of Walgrave, Northamptonshire. Two years later (June 1785) he baptised his own wife, and received ordination on 6 July. Along with Fuller and Carey he was a founder of the Baptist Missionary Society. Alexander Payne died on 13 Feb. 1819, aged 77, and after a pastorate at Walgrave of thirty-three years. His wife died on 5 Jan. 1814, aged 71. There is a tablet to their memory in Walgrave church.

George went to school at Walgrave, and subsequently at the Northampton academy. He entered Hoxton academy to study for the congregationalist ministry in 1802, and on 13 April 1804 he was elected, with Joseph Fletcher, Glasgow scholar on the Dr. Williams trust. The two proceeded to Glasgow University together (*Memoirs of Thomas Wilson, Esq.*, pp. 275, 276, 279; *Memoirs of Joseph Fletcher*, p. 47). Payne graduated M.A. in the spring of 1807, and returned home, marrying, on 30 Oct. 1807, a daughter of Alexander Gibbs, a corn factor, and member of the Scottish church, Hoxton. For a year he acted as assistant minister to Edward Parsons of Leeds. On 28 Aug. 1808 he accepted an invitation to become George Lambert's permanent co-adjutor at Hull. Terminating his engagement at Hull on 14 June 1812, Payne was ordained at Edinburgh on the following 2 July, and entered on his pastorate of a congregation of seceders who had divided from James Alexander Haldane [q. v.] in March 1808 on the latter's renouncing infant baptism. This body met in Bernard's rooms, Thistle Street, Edinburgh. A new chapel was built for Payne in Albany Street, and opened 2 May 1817, and here he laboured till 1823. While in Edinburgh he contributed to congregationalist literature, and assisted in the foundation of the Edinburgh Itinerant Society and the Congregational Union of Scotland.

In April 1823 he left Scotland to become theological tutor of the Blackburn academy, the precursor of the present Lancashire Independent College. For the first two or three years of his residence in Blackburn Payne also acted as pastor to a congregational church which met in Mount Street (*Evang. Mag.* 1823). On 18 Nov. 1828 he received the degree of honorary LL.D. from the university of Glasgow on the occasion of the publication of his 'Elements of Mental and Moral Science.'

Payne left Blackburn to become theological tutor to the western academy on its removal from Axminster to Exeter 1 July 1829. In 1836 he was chosen chairman of the Congregational Union of England and Wales. In 1844 he preached the eleventh series of the congregational lectures initiated by the committee of the congregational library in Bloomfield Street, Finsbury. His course of eight lectures was published in the following year under the title 'On the Doctrine of Original Sin.'

In January 1846 the western college was removed from Exeter to a site between Devonport and Plymouth. In April 1848

he visited Scotland as the delegate from the Congregational Union of England and Wales. He died on 19 June 1848, after preaching at Mount Street Chapel, Devonport. He was buried on 27 June at Emma Place chapel, Stonehouse, in the grave of his wife, who had died on 25 Oct. 1847.

Payne's writings prove him to have had a genuine gift for metaphysical speculation. He wrote, apart from sermons and short tracts: 1. 'Remarks upon the Moral Influence of the Gospel upon Believers, and on the Scriptural Manner of ascertaining our State before God,' Edinburgh, 1820, 12mo. 2. 'Elements of Mental and Moral Science designed to exhibit the Original Susceptibilities of the Mind and the Rule by which the Rectitude of any of its States or Feelings should be judged,' London, 1828, 1842, 1845. 3. 'The Separation of Church and State calmly considered in reference to its probable Influence upon the Cause and Progress of Evangelical Truth in this Country,' Exeter, 1834, 8vo. 4. 'Lectures on Divine Sovereignty, Election, the Atonement, Justification, and Regeneration,' London, 1836, 1838, 1846. This work was answered by J. A. Haldane and others, to whom Payne replied in the last edition. 5. 'The Operation of the Voluntary Principle in America,' Exeter, 1836, 12mo. 6. 'The Church of Christ considered in reference to its Members, Objects, Duties, Officers, Government, and Discipline,' London, 1837, 12mo. 7. 'Facts and Statements in reference to Bible-printing Monopoly,' Exeter, 1841, 8vo. 8. 'Elements of Language and General Grammar,' London, 1843, 12mo; college and school edit. 8vo, 1845. 9. 'The question "Is it the duty of the Government to provide the means of Education for the people?" examined' (directed against Sir James Graham's Education Bill), London, 1843. 10. 'The Doctrine of Original Sin, or the Nature, State, and Character of Man unfolded,' London, 1845; forming the 11th series of the 'Congregational Lectures.' 11. (Posthumous) 'Lectures on Christian Theology,' edited by Evan Davies, London, 1850, 2 vols.; with a 'Memoir' by the Rev. John Pyer and 'Reminiscences' by the Rev. Ralph Wardlaw, D.D. Payne also assisted Greville Ewing in the selection of 'A Collection of Hymns from the Best Authors,' Glasgow, 1814; Edinburgh, 1863.

[Notice in Evangel. Mag. 1848: Pyer's Memoir and Wardlaw's Reminiscences, prefixed to the posthumous Lectures on Christian Theology; Memoirs of the Rev. Joseph Fletcher; Memoirs of Thomas Wilson, Esq.; Works in Brit. Mus.] W. A. S.

PAYNE, GEORGE (1803–1878), patron of the turf, was born on 3 April 1803. His father, George Payne of Sulby Hall, Northamptonshire, was shot in a duel on Wimbledon Common on 6 Sept. 1810 by one Clark (*Annual Register*, 1810, pp. 277–8); he left a widow, Mary Eleanor, daughter of R. W. Grey of Backworth House, Northumberland. George, the son, was educated at Eton from 1816 to 1822, and on 12 April 1823 matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, where he indulged his sporting tastes so freely that the college authorities, after much delay and long-suffering, requested him to leave the university. He came of age in 1824 and into the possession of the family seat, Sulby Hall, and the Northampton estates, with a rent-roll of 17,000*l.* a year. In addition, he took up the sum accumulated during his minority, amounting to about 300,000*l.* The income was, however, wholly incapable of keeping pace with his extravagance; Sulby passed from his hands, the money disappeared in a few years, together with two other large fortunes which he successively inherited from relatives. He served the office of sheriff of his native county in 1826, when he met the judges with unparalleled state. On a vacancy occurring in 1835, he was unanimously elected master of the Pytchley hounds; he gave way to Lord Chesterfield in 1838, but again served as the master from 1844 to 1848. His first tenure of office was marked by unwonted splendour. He owned racehorses, but he was notoriously unlucky on the turf with his own horses, though he was sometimes fortunate in backing those of his friends. His first partner on the turf was Edward Bouverie of Delapre Abbey, Northamptonshire. Bouverie's colours were all black, while those of his friend were all white. They amalgamated their colours, and so originated the famous 'magpie jacket.' Popular as these colours were, and often as they were seen on racecourses in England, they were never associated with any greater success than the winning of a good handicap. The best horse he owned was Musket, bequeathed to him by Lord Glasgow, who left him at the same time 25,000*l.* Musket never carried the magpie stripes, but always the white and crimson of his former owner. In connection with Charles C. F. Greville, he had horses trained for many years by the Dillys at Littleton, near Winchester; a few handicaps and a second to Crucifix for the Oaks with his filly Welfare in 1840 were all his successes of any consequence during these years. When Dilly retired from business, Payne sent his horses to George Dockeray at Epsom. After this trainer's death, Payne's horses went to Alec

Taylor at Manton, Wiltshire, and there they remained to the last. Nat Flatman was Payne's favourite jockey, and for some time he had the first call on his services. His betting was very reckless; he would sometimes back twenty horses in a race for a big handicap, and then miss the winner. He lost 33,000*l.* in 1824, when Mr. Gascoigne's Jerry won the St. Leger; but in the succeeding year he recovered great part of the money by backing Memnon. He owned horses from 1824 to 1878, yet his only victories of any importance were with a purchased filly, Clementina, which won the One Thousand Guineas in 1847, and with Glauca, which won the Cesarewitch.

He was an infatuated gambler, not only on the turf, but also at the card-table. He was one of the persons who, in the winter of 1836, accused Henry William, twenty-second Baron de Ros, of not playing fairly. At the trial, on 10 Feb. 1837, he was one of the witnesses, and had his character most unfairly aspersed by Sir John Campbell (afterwards the first Baron Campbell). Payne had serious thoughts of publicly horsewhipping Campbell, but the latter, through the medium of Colonel Anson, made an apology (*Times*, 11 Feb. 1837, pp. 2–4, 13 Feb. pp. 2–4).

Payne had hosts of friends and admirers, and no enemies. He died unmarried at 10 Queen Street, Mayfair, London, on 2 Sept. 1878, and was buried at Kensal Green cemetery on 6 Sept., the Prince of Wales and a large number of friends being present. His only brother, William Payne, died at Pitsford Hall, Northamptonshire, in 1858. His sister Elizabeth Martha married, in 1827, Sir Francis Holyoake Goodricke, bart., who died in 1865.

[Baily's Mag. 1860 i. 183–6 (with portrait), 1883 xlv. 148–53; New Sporting Mag. 1837, xiii. 364; Westminster Papers, 1878, x. 139 (with portrait); Nethercote's Pytchley Hunt, 1888, pp. 4, 99, 117–48 (with portrait); Thormanby's Famous Racing Men, 1882, pp. 113–20 (with portrait); Rice's British Turf, 1879, ii. 296–308 (with portrait); Cecil's Records of the Chase, 1877, pp. 135–6; Daily Telegraph, 3 Sept. 1878, p. 5; The Field, 7 Sept. 1878, p. 312; Times, 3, 5, and 7 Sept. 1878; Sporting Times, 8 May 1875, pp. 305, 308 (with portrait); Illustrated Sporting and Dramatic News, 1876, iv. 475, 496 (with portrait); Illustrated London News, 1844, v. 72 (with portrait); Graphic, 1878, xviii. 276 (with portrait); Racing, in Badminton Library (1886), pp. 75, 198, 204–5.] G. C. B.

PAYNE, HENRY NEVILLE (*fl.* 1672–1710), conspirator and author, is credited by Lord Macaulay with having been 'an intimate friend of the indiscreet and unfortunate Coleman' [see COLEMAN, EDWARD], and with having been committed to Newgate as an accomplice to the 'popish plot' (*History of England*, ed. 1883, ii. 217). Macaulay seems, however, to have confounded Payne with Edward Neville (1639–1709) [q.v.], a jesuit. Another statement of Macaulay, that 'Payne had been long known about town as a dabbler in poetry and politics,' has more evidence to support it. Downes ascribes to him three plays: the 'Fatal Jealousie,' a tragedy, acted at the Duke's theatre, licensed 22 Nov. 1672, and published in 1673; 'Morning Rambles, or the Town Humours,' a comedy, acted at the Duke's theatre in 1673, and published in 1673; and the 'Siege of Constantinople,' a tragedy, acted at the Duke's theatre in 1674, and published in 1675. The latter contains various indirect allusions to the politics of the period. In all probability he is also identical with the Henry Payne who wrote 'The Persecutor Exposed; in Reflections by Way of Reply to an Ill-bred Answer to the Duke of Buckingham's Paper,' 1685; and 'An Answer to a scandalous Pamphlet entitled a Letter to a Dissenter concerning his Majestie's late Declaration of Indulgence,' 1687. The latter called forth 'An Answer to Mr. Henry Payne's Letter concerning his Majesty's Indulgence writ to the Author of the Letter to a Dissenter by T. T.' 'Mr. Payne,' writes the author of this pamphlet, 'I cannot help asking you how much money you had from the writer of the Paper which you pretend to answer; for as you have the character of a man who deals with both hands, so this is writ in such a manner as to make one think you were inclined to it by the adverse party;' and he adds: 'Both in your books of Constitution and Policy, and even in your poems, you seem to have entered into such an intermixture with the Irish that the thread all over is linsey-wolsey.'

After the revolution Payne became, according to Bishop Burnet, 'the most active and, determined of all King James's agents,' and, although he had 'lost the reputation of an honest man entirely,' succeeded by his 'arts of management' in inducing those to employ him who were well aware of his indifferent character (*Own Time*, ed. 1838, p. 545). He was generally believed to have been the chief instigator of the Montgomery plot in 1690 [see MONTGOMERY, SIR JAMES, tenth Baronet of Skelmorlie]. Balcarres affirms that each was the dupe of the other: Payne promising Montgomery 'all his ambition, vanity, or avarice could pretend to,' and persuading him that he (Payne) was entrusted by King James to dispose 'of money, forces, and titles as he pleased;' while Montgomery

made Payne believe that 'he could win the whole nation with a speech' (*Memoirs*, p. 51). Payne came north to Scotland to manage the conspiracy there, and, on the discovery of the plot, was arrested. Burnet states that Robert Ferguson (*d.* 1714) [q. v.] the plotter informed against him (*Own Time*, p. 561); but there is no confirmation of this, and Balcarres mentions Montgomery as the informer (*Memoirs*, p. 66). As the use of torture was still permitted in Scotland, it was resolved to apply it on Payne, Sir William Lockhart having informed Lord Melville that if it were applied to Payne those that knew him were of opinion he would not abide it, 'for he is but a dastardly fellow' (*Melville Papers*, p. 529). An order for its application was therefore sent by the privy council on 4 Aug. 1690, and, as the order was not immediately acted on, a special order was sent by King William on 18 Nov. It was carried into effect on 10 and 11 Dec., the torture being first applied to his thumbs, and afterwards by means of 'the boot' to one of his legs; but Payne endured his excruciating sufferings with the utmost firmness, and they failed to elicit from him the slighest information. 'It was surprising to me and others,' wrote the Earl of Crawford to Melville, that he could 'endure the heavy penances he was in for two hours' (*ib.* p. 583). This was the last occasion on which torture was applied to a prisoner in Scotland.

Notwithstanding the representation of the privy council that, by the claim of right, delay in putting a prisoner to trial was contrary to law, it was not until 19 May 1693 that a warrant was given to the lord advocate to raise an indictment against Neville Payne for high treason before the parliament. In connection with the proposed trial there was printed for the informationof members of parliament 'Nevil Payn's Letter, and some other Letters that concern the Subject of the Letter, with Short Notes on them,' 1693; but parliament decided that the process be remitted 'to the commissioners of Justiciary, or otherwise that the process be continued until next meeting of parliament as his majesty shall think fit to order.' Burnet states that Payne 'sent word to several of the lords, in particular to Duke Hamilton, that as long as his life was his own, he would accuse none; but he was resolved he would not die, and he could discover enough to deserve his pardon.' 'This' adds Burnet, 'struck such terror into many of them whose sons or near relatives had been concerned with him that, he moving for a delay on pretence of some witnesses that were not then at hand, a time was given him beyond the continuance of the session; so he escaped, and the inquiry was shifted' (*Own Time*, p. 597). On the petition of his nephew, Francis Payne, he was for some time after his torture allowed the benefit of the open prison, and permitted to be attended by his own physicians and surgeons; but the order was overruled by the king on 23 Dec. 1690, and it was decided that he should be received into close confinement. While in imprisonment in Stirling Castle in 1699, he stated, in a letter to the privy council, that he had been preparing an experiment for river navigation, and to attend to this he was granted liberty for a range of half a mile from the castle during a portion of each day (Chambers, *Domestic Annals of Scotland*, 2nd edit. ii. 218). He was still in prison as late as 9 Dec. 1700, when the Duke of Queensberry informed Carstares that it was not in their power to detain him, and advised that he should be set at liberty.

[Burnet's Own Time; Balcarres's Memoirs and Leven and Melville Papers in the Bannatyne Club; Lord Macaulay's History of England; Chambers's Book of Days, ii. 371; Mark Napier's Memorials of Graham of Claverhouse, viscount Dundee.] T. F. H.

PAYNE, JOHN (*d.* 1506), bishop of Meath, was an Irishman by birth, and early entered the order of St. Dominic. Proceeding to Oxford, he became D.D., and professor of theology in the Dominican convent there. He was subsequently elected provincial of the Dominicans in England. On 17 March 1483–4 he was appointed to the bishopric of Meath by a bull of Sixtus IV, having been granted custody of the temporalities a year before; he was enthroned on 4 Aug. following. He formed a close friendship with Gerald Fitzgerald, eighth earl of Kildare [q. v.], and, like most of the inhabitants of the Pale, was a strenuous Yorkist. When Lambert Simnel landed in Ireland in 1487, Payne became one of the foremost of his adherents; he preached the sermon at Simnel's coronation in Christ Church, Dublin, on Whit-Sunday, 24 May 1487. But after the battle of Stoke he was among the first to make his peace with Henry VII. He accompanied Sir Richard Edgcumbe (*d.* 1489) [q. v.], whom Henry had sent over to 'settle Ireland' from Malahide to Dublin, and was also employed as an intermediary between him and Kildare. Henry VII had asked the pope to excommunicate Payne, but on 25 May 1488 the bishop received a general pardon for his share in the rebellion, and he appears to have sought to further ingratiate himself with the king by accusing his metropolitan, Octavian de Palatio, archbishop of Armagh, of complicity in the rebellion (*Let-*

*ters and Papers of Henry VII*, ed. Gairdner, i. 384, ii. 370). He was selected by Edgcumbe to proclaim the pope's absolution and the king's pardon to all who should return to their duty, and was subsequently commissioned by Kildare and the council to assure Henry VII of their allegiance, and to thank him for his pardon.

From this time Payne's relations with Kildare became strained. On one occasion, after a fray, the earl pursued the bishop into the chancel of a church and made him prisoner, only releasing him on a peremptory command from the king (*Book of Howth*, pp. 178–80). When Kildare was in England in 1496, Payne accused him vehemently to the king, and the earl is said to have retorted by making revelations about the bishop's character; but the story is not more credible than it is creditable to the bishop's morals. It was on this occasion that the bishop is reported to have said of Kildare to the king, 'You see, all Ireland cannot rule this man,' and the king to have replied, 'Then this man shall rule all Ireland.'

In 1489 Payne assisted at a provincial synod in St. Mary's Church, Ardee, and was arbitrator between the rival claims of Thomas Brady and Cormac to the bishopric of Kilmore. He seems to have remained loyal during Warbeck's attempt, but was obliged to give pledges for the observance of peace. In July 1495 he attended the provincial synod of Drogheda, and issued a pastoral which is printed in Brady's 'Episcopal Succession' (pp. 86–7) and Cogan's 'Diocese of Meath' (i. 376–7). After his return from England he was on 3 Oct. 1496 appointed master of the rolls in Ireland. He died on 6 May 1506, and was buried in the Dominican church of St. Saviour's, Dublin. Ware says he was noted for hospitality and almsgiving.

[Letters and Papers of Henry VII, ed. Gairdner, i. 95, 379, 384, ii. 305, 370; Book of Howth, pp. 179–80; Annals of the Four Masters, v. 1289; Cotton's Fasti, iii. 114; Lascelles's Liber Mun. Hibern. i. 99, ii. 10, &c.; Rymer's Fœdera, xii. 196, and Syllabus; De Burgo's Hib. Dominicana, ed. 1762–72, pp. 86, 195, 477; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ii. 696; Dodd's Church Hist. i. 181; Ware's Annals of Ireland and Bishops, i. 151–2; Echard's Scriptt. Ord. Prædicatorum, vol. i. p. xxvi; Brady's Episcopal Succession, i. 234; Lansdowne MS. 978, f. 74; Cotton MS. Titus B. xi., ff. 332–377; Bacon's Henry VII; Wright's Hist. of Ireland, i. 252, 256; Smyth's Law Officers of Ireland, p. 54; O'Flanagan's Lord Chancellors of Ireland, i. 139, 150; Gilbert's Viceroys, pp. 428–9, 436–437, 461; Richey's Lectures on Irish Hist. i. 217; Cogan's Diocese of Meath, i. 81, 376; Bagwell's Ireland under the Tudors, i. 104.] A. F. P.

PAYNE, JOHN (*d.* 1647?), engraver, was one of the earliest exponents of the art of line-engraving in England. He appears to have learnt it from Simon and William Pass [q. v.], and his manner very much resembles theirs. Two of his portraits—those of Robert Devereux, second earl of Essex, and Henry Vere, earl of Oxford—are printed in frames engraved by William Pass. Payne had considerable skill in engraving, and many of his portraits and title-pages have great merit. His chief work is the large engraving, done on two plates, of the great ship 'The Sovereign of the Seas,' built by Peter Pett [q. v.] at Deptford in 1637. Evelyn in his 'Scultura' extols this engraving, as well as Payne's portraits of Dr. Alabaster, Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, and others. Payne, though recommended to the king's favour, was idle, and died in indigent circumstances. This must have been about 1647, as Thomas Rawlins [q. v.] in his 'Calanthe,' published in 1648, has an epitaph on Payne, as 'lately deceased.' Among other portraits engraved by Payne were those of Bishop Joseph Hall, Bishop Lancelot Andrews, Sir Edward Coke, Hobson the Carrier, Sir James Ley, Christian of Brunswick, &c., and among the title-pages those to 'The Works of John Boys, D.D.,' 1629, and to Gerarde's 'Herball,' 1633.

[Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting (ed. Wornum); Vertue's Diaries (Brit. Mus. Addit. MS. 23070; Evelyn's Scultura; Strutt's Dict. of Engravers.] L. C.

PAYNE, JOHN (*d.* 1787), publisher, whose brother Henry was a bookseller in Pall Mall, established himself in Paternoster Row, at first by himself, but afterwards in partnership with Joseph Bouquet (Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* ix. 668). He became intimate with Dr. Johnson, and was elected a member of the Rambler Club in Ivy Lane, which was formed by Johnson in the winter of 1749 (*ib.* ix. 502, 779). When Johnson started the 'Rambler,' in March 1750, Payne agreed to give him two guineas for each paper as it appeared, and to admit him to a share of the profits arising from the sale of the collected work (Timperley, *Encyclopædia*, 2nd edit. p. 678). The bargain proved profitable.

Meanwhile Payne had been admitted to the service of the Bank of England on 7 March 1744. In 1769 he was a chief clerk, in 1773 deputy accountant-general, and in 1780 accountant-general, a post which he held until 1785 (*Royal Kalendars*).

But through life Payne retained an interest in the publishing business (cf. Nichols, iii. 223). In 1785 he arranged to print an Eng-

lish translation of Thomas à Kempis's 'Imitatio.' He wrote and published: 1. 'New Tables of Interest,' oblong 16mo, London, 1758, a useful compilation, for which Johnson wrote a preface. 2. 'A Letter occasioned by the Lord Bishop of Gloucester's [Warburton] "Doctrine of Grace,"' 8vo, London, 1763 (*ib.* v. 620). An anonymous 'Letter to a modern Defender of Christianity,' 12mo, London, 1771, attributed to a John Payne in Halkett and Laing's 'Dictionary,' p. 1373, may be by the accountant-general. His letters to Dr. Thomas Birch, extending from 1752 to 1754, are in Additional MS. 4316 in the British Museum. He died unmarried at Lympston, near Exeter, on 10 March 1787 (*Probate Act Book*, P. C. C. 1787; will registered in P. C. C. 142, Major; information from the Bank of England).

Payne has been confused with another JOHN PAYNE (*fl.* 1800), compiler, who also began his career as a publisher in Paternoster Row. After 1760 he entered into partnership with Joseph Johnson [q. v.], and continued with him until 1770, when nearly the whole of their property was consumed by fire (TIMPERLEY, pp. 836, 838*n.*) Payne then betook himself to Marsham Street, Westminster, and turned author. He is described as an 'indefatigable manufacturer' of books, issued in weekly numbers under the high-sounding names of 'George Augustus Hervey,' 'William Frederick Melmoth,' &c. (*Dict. of Living Authors*, 1816, p. 265). Under the former pseudonym he issued a creditable 'Naval, Commercial, and General History of Great Britain, from the earliest time to the rupture with Spain in 1779,' in 5 vols. 8vo (RIVERS, *Literary Memoirs of Living Authors*, ii. 117). His own avowed compilations, the first two of which were published by Johnson, are: 1. 'Universal Geography,' 2 vols. fol. London, 1791, with maps and copperplates, a work which occupied him eight years. 2. 'An Epitome of History,' 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1794–5 (a second edition of vol. i. appeared in 1795). 3. 'Geographical Extracts,' 8vo, London, 1796. 4. 'A concise History of Greece,' 8vo, London, 1800, of which the first volume only was issued (REUSS, *Reg. of Authors*, 1790–1803, ii. 177).

[Boswell's Life of Johnson, ed. Croker, 1848, pp. 58*n.*, 78, 79; authorities cited in the text.] G. G.

PAYNE, JOHN WILLETT (1752–1803), rear-admiral, youngest son of the lieutenant-governor of St. Christopher's, was born there in 1752. He received his early education at a private school at Greenwich, in 1767 entered the Royal Academy at Portsmouth, after two and a half years' study joined the Quebec frigate as an 'able seaman,' and went out to the West Indies. There he was moved into the Montagu, flagship of Rear-admiral Man, and continued in her two years and a half. He was then moved into the Falcon sloop; returned to England in 1773; joined the Rainbow with Commodore Thomas Collingwood, and, after some time on the coast of Guinea, again went to the West Indies, returning to England in the beginning of 1775. On 10 May he passed his examination; towards the end of the year was appointed to the Bristol; went out to the coast of North America, took part in the attack on Sullivan's Island, and proceeded to New York [see PARKER, SIR PETER, 1721–1871]. There he was moved by Howe into his flagship the Eagle, and on 9 March 1777 was promoted to be lieutenant of the Brune frigate, with Captain James Ferguson, a man equally distinguished for his gallantry, ability, and eccentricity. Between Ferguson and Payne there arose a warm friendship, which lasted till Ferguson's death in 1786. Early in 1778 Payne was moved into the Phœnix with Sir Hyde Parker (1739–1807) [q. v.], and was present with the squadron under Lord Howe in the defence of Sandy Hook and off Rhode Island in July. He returned to England in the Roebuck, and in April 1779 was appointed to the Romney, one of the Channel fleet under Sir Charles Hardy the younger [q. v.], and afterwards bearing the broad pennant of Commodore George Johnstone [q. v.] Payne was appointed by Johnstone commander of the Cormorant on 6 Nov. 1779, and on 8 July 1780 was posted to the Artois, a magnificent French frigate which was captured by the squadron.

In the following month a complaint was made by the Portuguese government that while lying in the Tagus the Artois had entered a considerable number of Portuguese subjects; that these men were forcibly detained, and that an attempt to release them had been resisted by Payne's orders. Payne showed that the complaint was unfounded, and was probably concocted in the desire to sow dissension between England and Portugal. The Portuguese government admitted the mistake, which they attributed to the interpreter. In August 1781 Payne was appointed to the Enterprise, a 28-gun frigate, which he commanded on the Jamaica station, cruising with marked success against the enemy's trade. In December 1782 he was moved by Admiral Pigot into the 50-gun ship Leander, and in her, near Guadeloupe, on the night of 18 Jan. 1783, fought a severe

action with a large ship carrying troops. In the evening this ship had showed Spanish colours; but her shot, many of which were afterwards found on board the Leander, were of thirty-six pounds and had the French mark, so that Payne and his officers were convinced that she was a French ship of 74 or 80 guns. At the time it was believed that she was the Couronne of 80 guns; later on she was said to be the Pluton of 74. French writers make no mention of the circumstance; and as the two ships separated, both having sustained heavy loss, but without any definite result, it was never known in England what she was. Very possibly she was really a Spaniard. In recognition of his gallant conduct on this occasion Payne was moved into the 80-gun ship Princess Amelia, which he took to England at the peace.

The restless energy which had won him distinction in war carried him, in time of peace, into reckless dissipation. He attracted the notice of the Prince of Wales, who constituted him his private secretary, comptroller of the household, and personal friend. There is no doubt that he was the associate of the prince in his vices and his supporter in his baser intrigues. In 1788, when the prince claimed the regency during the king's insanity, Payne, then member of parliament for Huntingdon, urged his right in persistent and unscrupulous language; and on one occasion his manner of speaking of the queen is said to have drawn from Jane, duchess of Gordon [q. v.], the retort: 'You little, insignificant, good-for-nothing, upstart, pert, chattering puppy, how dare you name your royal master's royal mother in that style!' Towards the end of 1705 he made a tour through France and Italy, in company with Lord Northington. At Rome he received great civilities from the Cardinal York [see Henry Benedict Maria Clement].

In May 1793 Payne was appointed to the Russell of 74 guns, one of the Channel fleet under Lord Howe; and in her had a distinguished part in the battle of 1 June 1794, for which he received the gold medal. In December he was ordered to hoist a broad pennant on board the Jupiter, in command of the squadron appointed to bring over the Princess Caroline. It sailed from the Nore on 2 March 1796; the princess embarked at Cuxhaven on the 28th, and arrived at Gravesend on 4 April. Payne was at this time in bad health, but towards the end of the summer he was appointed to the Impetueux, an 80-gun ship formerly called the Amérique, and captured from the French on 1 June 1794, mainly by the Russell. During the summer of 1797 he was again ordered to hoist a broad pennant in command of a detached squadron, as also in March 1798 for a cruise in the Bay of Biscay. The inclement season and exposure brought on severe illness, which compelled him to resign the command. On 14 Feb. 1799 he was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral, and in August he was appointed treasurer of Greenwich Hospital, where he died on 17 Nov. 1803. On the 25th he was buried at St. Margaret's, Westminster. His portrait, by Hoppner, has been engraved.

[The Memoir in the Naval Chronicle (iii. 1) was presumably written by Clarke, and certainly under Clarke's supervision; it touches but lightly on the faults of his civil career, which were many, and dwells on his distinguished services in the navy. See also Gent. Mag. 1803 ii. 1187; Molloy's Court Life Below Stairs, vol. iv.] J. K. L.

**PAYNE, JOSEPH** (1808–1876), first professor of education in England, was born of poor parents, on 2 March 1808, at Bury St. Edmunds. After receiving little besides an elementary education, he earned his own living as a boy by teaching and writing for the press, while continuing his studies in classics and English literature. In 1828 he was an assistant-master in a school in New Kent Road. Accidentally, he met with an account of Jacotot's system of teaching, made himself acquainted with the principles, and in 1830 wrote a pamphlet, 'A compendious Exposition of Professor Jacotot's celebrated System of Education.' Impressed by his account of Jacotot's system, Mrs. David Fletcher, a Camberwell lady, invited him to teach a small class, consisting of three children of her family and two others. His success was so marked that other parents wished to send their children, until the class became a school, known as the Denmark Hill Grammar School, with seventy or eighty boys. In 1831 Payne published a textbook, 'Universal Instruction. Epitome Historiæ Sacræ. Adapted by a literal translation to Jacotot's Method. With a synopsis of the plan to be pursued in applying that method to the acquisition of Latin.' Jacotot himself acknowledged the value of Payne's discipleship (*Works of Joseph Payne*, ii. 158). Throughout Payne's teaching life he taught in the spirit of Jacotot's methods, though circumstances rendered literal adherence sometimes impossible. A favourite maxim of his in teaching was 'Lessoning, not Lecturing.'

In 1837 Payne married the daughter of the Rev. John Dyer, secretary of the Baptist Missionary Society. Miss Dyer was herself the head of a large school, which she continued after marriage. She had spent some years in the house of Mark Wilks of Paris, and had an unusual knowledge of French

literature. She was a stimulating and capable teacher, of great energy of character. In 1845 the two schools in London, conducted respectively by himself and his wife, were given up, and Payne went to Leatherhead, where he established the Mansion House School for boys. This he continued with great success for nineteen years.

In 1865 Payne was examined by the Schools Enquiry Commission, and admitted the need of modifications in Jacotot's system of teaching languages, but thought 'the general principle *multum non multa* quite unquestionable.' In his school time-table the following were the percentage of forty-two working hours: classics 43 per cent., mathematics 30 per cent., French and German 14 per cent., history and geography 10 per cent., spelling 2 per cent., reading 1 per cent. He advocated before the commission the (permissive) registration of teachers.

In 1863 Payne retired from school-work and lived at 4 Kildare Gardens, Bayswater, London. He interested himself in linguistic studies, wrote a paper for the Philological Society on the 'Norman Element in the Spoken and Written English of the 12th, 13th, and 14th Centuries.' In 1873–4 he was chairman of the council of the Philological Society. In 1871 he was on the council of the Social Science Association, and in the same year, at the Leeds meeting, and in 1872, at Plymouth, read papers in the education section.

The most vigorous of all Payne's writings was an article on Eton, in the 'British Quarterly Review' (April 1868); this was not republished in the collected works. Payne's view was that the 'pretensions of Eton are utterly unfounded, and that her boasted education is a lamentable failure.' His lively attack provoked considerable attention.

From 1871 onwards Payne especially devoted himself to the higher education of women, the development of educational method, and the improvement of the status of the teacher by increasing his technical and professional qualifications. He energetically supported the Women's Education Union (from which sprang the Girls' Public Day School Company), and was chairman of the central committee of the union from its first organisation in 1871 until 1875. In 1866 he gave two lectures at the College of Preceptors on 'The Curriculum of Modern Education and the claims of Classics and Science to be represented in it considered.' In 1868 he read a paper on 'The Past, Present, and Future of the College of Preceptors,' in which he pleaded that the college should undertake the training of secondary teachers.

In 1872, after much discussion and in face of reactionary opposition, the College of Preceptors established the first professorship in education in England, and elected Payne to the post. He took great pains with the lectures, and during 1873 and 1874 140 students of both sexes attended the courses. In 1874 Payne urged the founding of a training college, with model and practising schools. He had some time previously urged the college to undertake the examination of teachers for diplomas in the science and art of teaching.

In 1874 Payne made a tour in North Germany, to visit some of the kindergartens, primary schools, and training colleges, and to investigate methods and theories as to the education of children between the ages of three and ten. In the spring of 1875 Payne wrote an account of his tour, but this was not published until after his death, which took place in April 1876. Mrs. Payne had died in 1875. Their son, Dr. Joseph Frank Payne, is a well-known physician.

There is a portrait of Payne in the common room of the College of Preceptors, painted from a photograph, and an engraving of the same photograph forms the frontispiece to vol. i. of Payne's 'Works.' A memorial prize was founded in the Maria Grey Training College, now at Brondesbury.

Payne wrote the following: 1. 'Universal Instruction. Epitome Historiæ Sacræ. A Latin reading book on Jacotot's System,' 1831, 12mo. 2. 'Select Poetry for Children,' 1st edit. 1839 (?) 12mo; (this school-book has run through a large number of editions). 3. 'Studies in English Poetry,' 1845, 8vo. 4. 'Studies in English Prose.' 1868, 8vo. 5. 'A Visit to German Schools. Notes of a Professional Tour to inspect some of the Kindergartens, Primary Schools, Public Girls' Schools, and Schools for Technical Instruction,' 1876, 8vo. Payne's lectures, pamphlets, and papers best worth preserving in a collected form were published in a single volume, with an introduction, by the Rev. Robert Hebert Quick [q. v.] This work reappeared in 1883 as the first volume of the works of Joseph Payne, edited by his son, Dr. J. F. Payne: Vol. i. 'Lectures on the Science and Art of Education.' Vol. ii., containing 'Lectures on the History of Education, with a Visit to German Schools,' was published in 1892, 8vo.

[Obituary notice in the Educational Times of 1 June 1876 by Payne's friend, Mr. C. P. Mason; Minutes of Evidence taken before the Commissioners, in vol. iv. of the Schools' Inquiry Commission Report, 1868; information kindly given by Dr. J. F. Payne, by Mrs. Offord of Dover, and by Miss Emily A. E. Shirreff.] F. W–n.

PAYNE, PETER (*d.* 1455), lollard and Taborite, was born at Hough-on-the-Hill, near Grantham, Lincolnshire, where a family of the name survived till the middle of the eighteenth century, when by the marriage of Ethelred, daughter and heiress of Thomas Payne, the property passed to Sir John Cust [q. v.] (BAKER, pp. 32–3). Thomas Gascoigne [q. v.] expressly states that Payne was the son of a Frenchman by an English wife (*Loci e Libro Veritatum*, pp. 5–6, 186–7). Payne must have been born about 1380, and was educated at Oxford, where he was a contemporary of Peter Partridge [q. v.], by whom he was first introduced to the doctrines of Wiclif; Partridge alleged that he in vain urged Payne to abandon heresies which, even if true, would be an obstacle to his advancement in preaching and teaching (PETRUS ZATECENSIS, p. 344). Payne had graduated as a master of arts before 5 Oct. 1406. Under this date a letter purporting to be issued by the congregation of the university was addressed to the Bohemian reformers, declaring that all England was on the side of Wiclif, except for some false mendicant friars. Gascoigne roundly asserts that Payne had stolen the seal of the university and affixed it to this document (*Loci e Libro Veritatum*, p. 20). The letter was quoted by John Huss, and in the convocation at St. Paul's in 1411 reference was made to the seal having been secretly affixed to some lying letters in support of heresy (WILKINS, *Concilia*, iii. 336); allusion was also made to the letter at the council of Constance (H. VON DER HARDT, *Conc. Constantiense*, iv. 326), and it was probably in reference to this incident that in 1426 the university took precautions to prevent an improper use of the seal. Mr. Maxwell Lyte (*Hist. of the University of Oxford*, p. 279) has suggested that the letter was passed by a snatch vote of congregation during the long vacation. In 1410 Payne became principal of St. Edmund Hall, and retained this position till 1414; he was also principal of the adjoining White Hall (WOOD, *Colleges and Halls*, ed. Gutch, p. 663). During his tenure of the office he was involved in a quarrel with the mendicant orders. According to Thomas Netter or Walden [q. v.], Payne was chosen by a certain noble (perhaps Sir John Oldcastle) to dispute with William Bewfu, a Carmelite, and so became involved in a controversy with Netter himself. Netter alleges that Payne, 'suffocatus vecordia,' withdrew from the controversy before they had come to close quarters (*Doctrinale Fidei Ecclesiæ*, i. 7–8, ed. Blanciotti). Payne himself refers to a quarrel which arose from his refusal to give bread to begging monks at his hall, and from his having said some things of them that they did not like (PETRUS ZATECENSIS, p. 344). But elsewhere he admitted that when at Oxford an attempt was made to make him swear not to teach Wiclifite doctrines, and alleged that, on an appeal to the king (Henry V), he obtained protection (JOHN OF RAGUSA, *De Reductione Bohemorum*, pp. 269–70). Payne would seem to have taught his doctrines at London and elsewhere in England, besides Oxford; Ralph Mungyn, who was tried for heresy in 1428, was his disciple (WILKINS, *Concilia*, iii. 498). Afterwards, apparently in 1416, he was diffamed for heresy, and, failing to appear when cited, was excommunicated; Payne pleaded that he had already left England at the time of the citation, but Partridge declared that he met him on the very day (PETRUS ZATECENSIS, p. 343). Partridge also alleged that Oldcastle had been led into a course of treason through Payne's influence, and there appears to have been some charge of treason against Payne himself; this Payne vehemently denied, though admitting that he left England to escape martyrdom (*ib.* pp. 334, 343–4). Payne may have known Jerome of Prague at Oxford, but he says he never saw Huss (JOHN OF RAGUSA, p. 276). He was, however, clearly on friendly terms with the Bohemian reformers, and on his flight from England took refuge at Prague, where he was received among the masters of the university on 13 Feb. 1417 (PALACKY, *Geschichte von Böhmen*, bk. vii. p. 184). According to Gascoigne (*Loci e Libro Veritatum*, p. 10), Payne took with him to Bohemia many of Wiclif's writings, and the statement is confirmed by other writers (cf. LOSERTH, *Wiclif and Huss*, English transl. p. 72).

In Bohemia Payne obtained the protection of Elizabeth, widow of King Wenceslaus, and soon acquired a prominent position. According to Dlugosz (*Historia Polonica*, i. 432), he was one of the Bohemian envoys sent to offer the crown to Wladyslaw of Poland in August 1420; but there is some doubt as to the accuracy of this statement (cf. PALACKY, vii. 154 *n.*) He may, however, as stated by Dlugosz (*Hist. Pol.* i. 436), have formed one of the embassy which for the second time unsuccessfully offered the crown to Wladyslaw on 2 Feb. 1421. In the previous autumn he had been instrumental in inducing the 'Old Town' of Prague to agree with the propositions of the Taborites relative to the fourth of the Prague articles, and in November 1421 he again appears as mediating between John the Priest and the nobles at

Prague (Palacky, vii. 185, 262). After this Payne is not mentioned for five years; but in the autumn of 1426 John Pribram began to attack the doctrines of Wiclif; and on 25 Dec. a disputation was held at Prague before Prince Korybut between Pribram and Payne, in which the latter maintained the doctrines of his countryman against the romanising teaching of the former. After the outbreak against Korybut, who was intriguing with the pope, articles were drawn up in May 1427 with the intention of preserving unity among the Hussites. The article setting forth the doctrine on transubstantiation was specially directed against Payne, who now dissociated himself from the Praguers, and joined the sect of the 'Orphans' (*ib.* vii. 427–8). In the following summer came the crusade of Henry Beaufort [q. v.], the cardinal and bishop of Winchester, against the Bohemian reformers. After his defeat at Tachau, Beaufort arranged for a conference between Bohemian and papal delegates. In the discussions which took place at Zebrak on 29 Dec., Payne and John Rokycana appeared as the Hussite theologians (*ib.* vii. 459). The year 1428 was filled with fighting, but in the spring of 1429 an endeavour was made to arrange peace. A number of Bohemian representatives, of whom Payne was one, came to Sigismund at Pressburg on 4 April. The conference lasted till 9 April, Sigismund urging the Bohemians to submit to the council, which was to met at Basle two years later. The Bohemian representatives pleaded that they had not full power to act, and the meeting broke up with an arrangement that a Landtag should be held at Prague on 23 May. In the Landtag Payne took no prominent part. But afterwards he held a fresh disputation with Pribram, which lasted for three weeks from 20 Sept., in the presence of an assembly of Bohemian and Moravian notables at Prague. Pribram charged Wiclif with heresy; Payne maintained the catholicity of all his opponent's citations; but the debate ended in a species of truce, the terms of which Pribram did not well observe, and he again charged Payne and the Taborite party with heresy (*ib.* vii. 485–7; Hoefler, *Geschichtsschreiber der Hussitischen*, ii. 594–596). In March 1431 a fresh conference of the sects with a view to the proposed council was arranged to take place at Cracow in the presence of Wladyslaw of Poland. Payne was present as a representative of his party; but the congress effected nothing, and the Bohemians went home very wroth before Easter (Dlugosz, i. 577–8).

The terms on which the Bohemians would appear at the council were still unsettled, though the time for its assembly had arrived. In May 1432 representatives of the Bohemians, including Payne, met at Eger, and began negotiations with the council. The discussion was renewed at Kuttenberg in September, and at length terms were agreed upon. In a letter from the Praguers on 5 Sept. 1432 Payne was named one of the Bohemian delegates to the council, and on 6 Dec. he set out with his colleagues for Basle, where they arrived on 4 Jan. 1433. On 6 Jan. the Bohemians held religious services, the 'Orphan' representatives, of whom Payne was one, preaching publicly in German (*Mon. Conc. Gen.* i. 64). Next day Procopius the Great, the principal Bohemian delegate, entertained his colleagues and some members of the council at dinner. Payne engaged in a hot dispute with John of Ragusa, who says 'the Englishman was like a slippery snake—the more closely he seemed to be tied down to a conclusion, the more adroitly would he glide away to some irrelevant matter' (*ib.* i. 260). On 13 Jan. Payne was one of the delegates who petitioned Cardinal Julian to grant the Bohemians a public reception in the cathedral. The request was refused, and three days later they had their first audience, when Payne, as one of the orators, delivered a brief allegorical address on the text (Psalm civ. 22) 'ortus est sol, et congregati sunt in cubilibus suis,' in which he compared the doctrines of Wiclif and Huss to the rays of the sun. In the subsequent meetings the Bohemian envoys spoke at length on various set themes; on 26 Jan. Payne began a discourse 'De civili dominio clericorum,' which lasted three days, and which he finally summed up in a short schedule, to be recorded in the acts of the council (Martene, viii. 215 E). The month of February was occupied with the replies of the catholic representatives. John of Ragusa spoke for eight days amid constant interruptions from Payne. On 4 Feb. Payne declared that certain opinions were falsely attributed to Wiclif by John of Ragusa. John Keninghale [q. v.] at once declared that he would produce extracts from Wiclif's works in refutation of Payne (John of Ragusa, p. 278). On 10 Feb. Payne started a controversy with John as to the institution of holy water by Alexander V (*ib.* p. 282; Petrus Zatecensis, p. 307). In the last week of February John de Palomar replied to Payne's speech 'de civili dominio.' After this the discussion was referred firstly to a committee of fifteen, and on 19 March to one of eight from each side. At length it was decided that the council should send

representatives to discuss the matter in the Landtag at Prague, the debates to continue at Basle until the arrangements for this purpose were complete. In these final discussions Payne took a prominent part; on 31 March and 1 April he spoke in reply to Henry of Kalteisen on the freedom of preaching; on 6 April he had a hot dispute with Partridge on the incidents of his English career, and on the following day endeavoured to make Keninghale produce his promised proofs of Wiclif's alleged heresies (*ib.* pp. 343-4). His interventions in the debate were received with much impatience by his opponents, and his unyielding temper probably contributed to the failure of the Bohemians to come to terms with the council. He had tried to prevent the reception of a friendly apology for the title of heretics, which John of Ragusa applied to the Bohemians on 7 Feb., and early in March the more moderate of the Hussites had considered whether an arrangement would not be practicable if Payne and other extremists were left out (*ib.* pp. 304–6, 321).

On 14 April the Bohemians left Basle with the delegates of the council, chief of whom were Gilles Charlier and John de Palomar. Prague was reached on 8 May, and after some negotiations, in which Payne took part, the Landtag met on 8 June. As the chief representative of the Orphans, Payne had a prominent part in the debates (*ib.* pp. 367, 372; Thomas Ebendorfer, pp. 707, 710). The Landtag broke up on 3 July without any decisive result, and a second Bohemian embassy was sent with the delegates of the council to Basle. On 22 Oct. they brought back with them certain articles which might form the basis of a concordat, and in a second Landtag which met on 16 Nov. the aristocratic party accepted the agreement known as the First Prague Compact. The Orphans and Taborites resisted, Payne being foremost in the opposition. On 18 Nov. he attempted to speak, but was shouted down; and in a speech on 28 Nov. he complained that 'the lords want to tie us up in a sack.' He is asserted to have declared that he had a knife which would cut whatever the delegates of the council sewed together (Carlerius, *De Legationibus*, pp. 450–68, 512, 515). The split between the two parties grew wider, and in the spring of 1434 resulted in open war. On 29 May the nobles were victorious in the battle of Lipau, where Procopius, the Taborite leader, was killed; it was falsely reported in England that Payne was also among the slain (*Chron. Giles. Henry VI*, p. 14); another account states that he was taken prisoner (Nicolas, *Chron. London*, p. 120). In the subsequent negotiations the party of the nobles continued to gain ground, and in the November Landtag the majority of the Orphans were won over by the moderate party under John Rokycana. Payne then joined the Taborites. Certain doctrinal points were nevertheless referred to him for arbitration, but in the interests of his friends he postponed his decision for two years (*Geschichtschreiber der Husitischen*, ii. 704–5; Palacky, viii. 181–2). As one of the Taborite representatives, Payne attended the conference before Sigismund at Brunn in June–July 1435 (Carlerius, *De Legationibus*, pp. 565–74). But from the subsequent proceedings that led up to Sigismund's reconciliation with the Bohemian nobles at Iglau in July 1436 he held aloof. After Sigismund came to Prague, Payne was compelled to give his decision on the points submitted to his arbitration. He pronounced in favour of Rokycana, though avowing that his own convictions were on the other side. The Taborites at once protested, and, after some discussion, the debatable points were on 16 Nov. submitted to four doctors, of whom Payne was one (*Geschichtsschreiber der Hussitischen*, ii. 728). As a result, the Taborites obtained permission to worship after their own fashion.

The remaining years of Payne's life were troublous. In 1433 it had been reported at Basle that the English wanted to prosecute him on behalf of their king, and still earlier Martin V had demanded a subsidy for his prosecution from the English church (Petrus Zatecensis, p. 317; Foxe, *Acts and Monuments*, iii. 538). On 13 Feb. 1437 a papal bull was received at Prague, requesting the emperor to send him to the council for trial on a charge of heresy (Johannes de Turonis, p. 852). At this time Payne had a pastorate at Saaz, whence on 15 April he came to Prague under a safe-conduct. A discussion between Payne and Pribram was held before Sigismund, who, when the former proved obstinate, ordered him to leave Bohemia as soon as his safe-conduct had expired. Payne withdrew from Prague; but his English clerk, John Penning, was arrested, and the people of Saaz agreed not to support him (*ib.* pp. 861–2). According to Matthias Colinus, Payne now took refuge with Peter Chelcicky, the Bohemian author (Palacky, ix. 48, 469). In February 1439 he was captured by John Burian, who imprisoned him in his castle of Gutenstein (*ib.* viii. 326). Burian, by order of the Emperor Albert, offered to deliver Payne to the representa-

tives of the English king at Nuremberg. Henry VI thanked Burian for his courtesy, and wrote to Eugenius IV proposing that, on account of the dangers of the road, Payne should be sent instead to the council at Florence (*Correspondence of T. Bekynton*, i. 187–9, Rolls Ser.) This was on 18 May 1440; but before the matter was arranged the Taborites procured Payne's liberty by paying a ransom of two hundred schock (twelve thousand) of groschen (PALACKY, ix. 48). Payne returned to Saaz (*ib.*), but no more is heard of him for three years. When the Taborites met the party of Rokycana in conference at Kuttenberg on 6 July 1443, Payne was one of the two presidents and directors of the assembly. During the subsequent debates the Taborites complained that Pribram had persistently attacked Payne in Bohemian, which language the latter did not well understand. Eventually the discussion was adjourned to the Landtag at Prague in January 1444, where Payne appears to have been again present (*ib.* ix. 97–9; *Geschichtsschreiber der Hussitischen*, ii. 749, 752). This conference proved the death-blow to the Taborite party, though the town of Tabor held out till 1452. In that year George Podiebrad, who was now king, with the support of Rokycana and his party, marched against Tabor, which surrendered to him on 1 Sept. Certain questions of conscience were submitted to a committee of six doctors, of whom Payne was one. The decision of the majority was to be binding; but the Taborite leaders, Niklas Biskupec and Wenzel Koranda, held out, and died in captivity. Payne possibly submitted, though Gascoigne seems to suggest that he died in prison (cf. WOOD, *Hist. and Antiq.* i. 586; LEWIS, *Life of Wiclif*, p. 229). His death took place at Prague in 1455.

Payne was a learned and ardent controversialist. Peter of Saaz notes the delight with which he obtained access to the 'Doctrinale Fidei Ecclesiæ' of Thomas Netter at Basle (*Mon. Conc. Gen.* i. 307). His incisive eloquence made him invaluable in debate, though he appears but little when there was need for action. His acute logic perhaps carried him to extremes of opinion, and his stubborn temper was an obstacle to conciliation. But, on the other hand, he possessed a fund of humour which enlivened the proceedings at Basle with constant sallies of wit (PETRUS ZATECENSIS, passim). He was somewhat of an intellectual adventurer, though he deserves credit for his strict adherence to Wiclif's principles, and he never completely joined any of the Hussite sects (PALACKY, ix. 454). He passed under a variety of names: Clerk in England as an Oxford master; Payne or English in Bohemia; and also as Freyng from his father's nationality, and Hogh or Hough from his own birthplace (GASCOIGNE, *Loci e Libro Veritatum*, p. 187; *Correspondence of T. Bekynton* i. 187). Bale wrongly distinguishes Payne and Clerk.

Payne had apparently published some writings before he left England, for in 1428 Ralph Mungyn was charged with having possessed and distributed them (WILKINS, *Concilia*, iii. 498). They, however, seem to have perished. Bale ascribes to him: 1. 'De temporali dominio clericorum;' inc. 'Haec sunt verba quæ hesterna.' 2. 'De predestinatione et arbitrio.' 3. 'Contra ceremoniarum abusiones.' 4. 'Pro utraque sacramenti specie.' 5. 'Concilium esse supra papam.' 6. 'Ad Antichristi synagogam.' 7. 'Contra mendicantes fraterculos.' Tanner adds: 'Contra plenam pontificis potestatem.' The following seem to be extant: 1. 'Defensio articulorum Wiclevi contra Johannem Pribram;' inc. 'Quia nuper in regno Bohemiæ.' There are two manuscripts at Vienna, and one at Prague (DENIS, *Cat. Cod. Bibl. Palatinæ Vindobonensis*, ii. 1521, 2193; PALACKY, ix. 454 *n.*) 2. 'Contra scriptum cujusdam juramentum tanquam licitum approbantis;' inc. 'In principio tractatus scribitur.' Manuscript at Vienna (DENIS, ii. 1752). 3. A tract inc. 'Omnipotentis Dei magnificentia,' MS. Vienna, 3935 ff. 309–40. 4. A tract inc. 'Quia ut concipio omnes propositiones,' MS. Budissin Gersdorf, No. 7, 8vo (PALACKY). 5. 'Provocatio Nic. Sloyczin ad disputandum.' 6. 'Petri Anglici Speculum aureum papæ seu Dialogus de potestate ecclesiæ' (COOPER, *Appendix A to Report on Fœdera*, pp. 228, 231). Palacky also gives the first words of two tracts against Pribram that seem to have perished. Some of the substance of his speeches at Basle may be found in the writers in the first volume of the 'Monumenta Conciliorum Generalium Sæculi XV.' All Payne's extant writings are concerned with the exposition of Wiclifite doctrine (cf. COCHLÆUS, p. 231). John de Torrequemada wrote a treatise, 'De efficacia aquæ benedictæ contra Petrum Anglicum hereticorum in Bohemia defensorem' (COOPER, p. 11).

[Our knowledge of Payne's English career is chiefly due to Gascoigne's Theological Dictionary, extracts from which were published by J. T. Rogers as Loci e Libro Veritatum; later English writers for the most part simply reproduce Gascoigne. For his Bohemian career

the original authorities are John of Ragusa, De Reductione Bohemorum; Petri Zatecensis (Peter of Saaz) Liber Diurnus; Ægidius Carlerius (Gilles Charlier), De Legationibus; Thomas Ebendorfer's Diarium; Johannis de Turonis Registrum; John de Segovia, Hist. Synodi Basilensis (these are contained in the Monumenta Conciliorum Generalium Sæculi XV, vols. i. ii. iii., published by the Kaiserliche Akademie der Wissenschaften, Vienna, 1857, 1873, 1892–4); Dlugosz's Historia Polonica, i. 432–6, 578–9; Hoefler's Geschichtsschreiber der Hussitischen, in the Fontes Rerum Austriacarum; Scriptores Rerum Bohemorum, vols. i. ii., Prague, 1783–1829; Æneas Sylvius, Historia Bohemiæ and Historia Universalis; Fordun's Scotichronicon, iv. 1299, sub anno 1432, where he is called Creyk; Zantfliet's Chron. ap. Martene and Durand, v. 431; Cochlæus, Historia Hussitarum. Some other original authorities are cited in the text. For the Council of Basle, see Martene and Durand's Veterum Scriptorum Amplissima Collectio, vol. viii., and Mansi's Concilia, vols. xxix. xxx. Palacky's Geschichte von Böhmen, bks. vii. viii. ix., contributes some information not otherwise readily accessible. See also Tomek's Dějepis Prahy (History of Prague), vol. iv. passim; Bale's Centuriæ, vi. 86, 97; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 582; Wood's Hist. and Antiq. Univ. Oxford, ed. Gutch, i. 543, 560, 585–6,; Creighton's History of the Papacy during the Reformation, esp. ii. 94–102; Robertson's History of the Christian Church, vols. vii. viii. Baker's Forgotten Great Englishman, 1894, is an imperfect and over-partial biography, for the most part based on Palacky's Geschichte von Böhmen.] C. L. K.

**PAYNE**, Sir PETER (1763–1843), third baronet *de jure*, of Blunham House, Bedfordshire, born in February 1763, was third son of Sir Gillies Payne, second baronet, of Tempsford, Bedfordshire. His grandfather Sir Charles (*d.* 1746) had inherited from his wife large property in St. Christopher's, West Indies, and had been created a baronet on 31 Oct. 1737.

Sir Gillies Payne (*d.* 1801) was high sheriff of Bedfordshire in 1771. He formed in his youth a connection with Maria Keeling, daughter of a farmer at Potton, Bedfordshire, but delayed marriage with her until the death of his mother in 1761. Peter was the first child born subsequently. Nevertheless on the death of his father in 1801 he allowed his elder brother, John, to succeed to the title; and, when John died two years later, acted as guardian to his young children. It was not until 1828 that Sir Peter, having vainly offered to submit his claims and those of his brother's heir to a court of arbitration, was induced to allow the matter to be raised incidentally in the chancery suit Glascott *v.* Bridges. In the course of the trial Sir John's widow made affidavit that she and her sister had burned the marriage-certificate of Sir Gillies; but evidence brought forward convinced the court of its existence, and Sir Peter was declared the eldest son born in wedlock. This decision was however reversed by the lord chancellor in January 1829, and an issue was directed to be tried as to the legitimacy of John and Peter Payne. The question never again came before the courts; but during his lifetime Sir Peter's claim to the baronetcy was acknowledged. He refused, however, to register himself as a baronet.

Peter was educated at Hackney and at Queens' College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1784 and M.A. in 1787. A handsome youth, though delicate, he took an active part in field sports, was a captain in the Bedfordshire militia, and was a deputy-lieutenant for the county for upwards of half a century. In politics he was a strong whig, and he exerted much political influence in the Midlands.

In 1810 he published two pamphlets, entitled respectively 'England the Cause of Europe's Subjugation, addressed to the British Parliament,' and 'The Character and Conduct of British Ministers in War and Negotiation illustrated by Facts.' In 1812 he attacked Pitt and attempted to convict Wilberforce of inconsistency in 'Mr. Pitt the grand Political Delinquent; with a Dedication to the Solemnisers of his Birthday, and an Address to Wm. Wilberforce, Esq., M.P.' In the same year he issued at Birmingham, under the pseudonym 'Philagathos,' 'Seven Short and Plain Letters to the Inhabitants of Birmingham on the Leading Points connected with the Orders in Council.'

Payne was intimate with Major John Cartwright [q. v.], for whom he acted as bail when Cartwright was charged with sedition in August 1819 (Cartwright, *Life of Major Cartwright*, ii. 169, 175–6). Among other friends were Sir Herbert Taylor and Dr. Parr. With the latter he had much familiar correspondence, which is now in the possession of his youngest daughter, Mrs. Elsdon Everard.

In 1819 he published at Birmingham a 'Letter to Lord Erskine in Defence of the Whigs.' On 5 May 1831 he was returned, with the Marquis of Tavistock, as a whig member for Bedfordshire, but retired at the dissolution in December 1832. He printed at Bedford in 1832 a pamphlet advocating repeal of the corn laws. He was also a strong opponent of the slave trade, and an advocate of higher education of women. In favour of the latter cause he wrote a pam-

phlet, which was printed at Birmingham and London in 1811, under the title 'Trial between the Governess of a Ladies' Boarding School and the Mother of a Pupil committed to her Charge.' He died at Blunham House, Bedfordshire, on 23 Jan. 1843.

Payne married, in August 1789, Elizabeth Sarah, only daughter of Samuel Steward, esq., of Stourton Castle, Staffordshire. She died on 12 April 1832, having had two sons and four daughters.

The eldest son, Sir Charles Gillies, called fourth baronet (1796–1870), graduated B.A. 1815 and M.A. 1818 from Merton College, Oxford, and joined the Middle Temple. He left a son, Sir Salusbury Gillies Payne (1829–1893), who, born in the West Indies, was educated at Rugby and Brasenose College, Oxford (B.A. in 1852), was called to the bar at the Middle Temple in 1857, and was chosen high sheriff of Bedfordshire in 1875, but did not serve. Sir Salusbury married Catherine, third daughter of Robert Chadwick of High Bank, Manchester. His son, Charles Robert Salusbury (*b.* 1859), retired lieutenant in the navy, claimed to succeed to the baronetcy in 1893. In 1863 the Rev. Coventry Payne, grandson of Sir John, the titular third baronet, raised the claims of the elder branch of the family in a pamphlet, which was replied to by Sir Charles Gillies Payne. Sir Bernard Burke, after giving particulars of the separate claims in the editions of his 'Peerage and Baronetage' between 1868 and 1878, thenceforth ignored the title. Foster's 'Baronetage' of 1882 relegates it to the Appendix 'Chaos.'

[Lodge's Genealogy of the Peerage and Baronetage and Peerage (1893); Walford's County Families; Stockdale's Peerage and Baronetage for 1831; Ann. Reg. 1843, Append. to Chron. p. 231; O'Byrne's Represent. Hist. of Great Britain and Ireland, p. 43; Alumni Oxon.; Grad. Cant.; Ret. Memb. Parl.; The Journal of Emily Shore (1891); information kindly supplied by Miss C. L. Johnstone, who has had access to numerous family papers.]

G. Le G. N.

**PAYNE, Sir RALPH, Lord Lavington** (1738?–1807), politician, was born at Basseterre, St. George parish in St. Christopher's, on 19 March 1737–8 or 1738–9. His father, Ralph Payne (*d.* 1763), chief justice and afterwards governor of St. Kitts, came of a family which had long been resident at St. Christopher's, whither it had migrated from Lavington in Wiltshire. His mother, whose ancestors came from Bridgwater in Somerset, was Alice, daughter and heiress of Francis Carlisle. After being educated in England, Payne returned to his native island, where he was at once elected a member of the House of Assembly, and at its first meeting unanimously called to the chair. In 1762 he was again in England, and he then made the tour of Europe. On 1 Sept. 1767 he married, at St. George's, Hanover Square, Françoise Lambertine, daughter of Henry, baron Kolbel of Saxony; he was then spoken of in society as 'a rich West Indian.' His wife had lived, before her marriage, with the Princess Joseph Poniatowski, and was one of the few charming women on terms of intimacy with Queen Charlotte. After his marriage Payne plunged into politics, and from 1768 to 1771 sat in parliament for the borough of Shaftesbury. In 1769 he made his maiden speech as the seconder of Blackstone's motion, that the complaint of Wilkes against Lord Mansfield was frivolous and trifling. He is said to have been connected with Mansfield, and to have been inspired by him with legal arguments, the speech being received 'with much applause, although the language was wonderfully verbose.' Later in the session he made another elaborate oration, on which occasion, according to Horace Walpole, after protesting on his honour that the speech was not premeditated, he inadvertently pulled it out of his pocket in writing. Payne had 'a good figure, and possessed himself well, having been accustomed to act plays in a private set;' but his language was turgid, and he became 'the jest of his companions and the surfeit of the House of Commons,' so that he soon became dissatisfied with his parliamentary prospects. On 18 Feb. 1771 he was created at St. James's Palace a knight of the Bath, and in the same year was appointed captain-general and governor-in-chief of the Leeward Islands, where he inherited a considerable estate from his parents. Thomas Hearne (1744–1817) [q. v.] spent some time with him there, and was employed by him in making drawings.

Payne's appointment was very popular, and his recall in 1775 was much against the wish of the inhabitants, who petitioned for his continuance in office, and, by a unanimous vote of the assembly, presented him with a sword set in diamonds. He entered once more on political life, sitting for Camelford in Cornwall from November 1776 to 1780, and for Plympton in Devonshire from 1780 to 1784.

From June 1777 until the suppression of the office in 1782 Payne was a clerk of the board of green cloth. He was one of Fox's political allies, and for many years his house in Grafton Street was known, through his love of hospitality and the personal attrac-

tions of his wife, as the favourite resort of the whig leaders. Erskine, when taken ill at one of Payne's banquets, replied to Lady Payne's anxious inquiries with the lines—

'Tis true I am ill, but I need not complain ;
For he never knew pleasure who never knew Payne.

It was rumoured in 1783 that Payne might be the secretary to Lord Northington, the new lord lieutenant of Ireland; but the post was given to Windham. In 1788 he made a lengthened tour on the continent, visiting Vienna, Zurich, and Lyons (Smyth, *Memoir of Sir R. M. Keith*, ii. 198-200). With the support of the Prince of Wales as Duke of Cornwall, he contested the borough of Fowey, in the whig interest, in 1790, when a double return was made, Payne and Lord Shuldham being credited with a majority of votes; but they were unseated by the House of Commons. At a by-election he was returned for Woodstock (21 Oct. 1795), and represented it until 1799.

But after his election disappointment in 1790 he wavered in his attachment to the whigs, and on 15 Aug. 1793 he gave a 'considerable dinner' at his house, at which Pitt was a guest. Windham was also invited, but did not go, and thought that Payne should have told him of the invitation to the premier (Windham, *Diary*, pp. 198, 288, 310). This change of politics was rendered necessary by the shrinking of his resources, and it soon bore fruit. He was created Baron Lavington of Lavington in the peerage of Ireland on 1 Oct. 1795, and a privy councillor on 30 Oct. 1799. In February 1799 he was reappointed as governor of the Leeward Islands, and the assembly voted him an allowance of 2,000*l.* a year, that he might the better support the dignity of the position. His Christmas balls and his routs were magnificent, and were distinguished by the observance of the strictest etiquette. He was attended by an army of servants, but he would not allow any of the black servitors about him to wear shoes or stockings, their legs being rubbed daily with butter so that they shone like jet ; and he would not, if he could avoid it, handle a letter or parcel from their fingers. To escape the indignity, he designed a golden instrument, like a tongs, with which he held any article which was given him by a black servant.

Lord Lavington died at Government House, Antigua, on 3 Aug. 1807, being then the senior member of the order of the Bath. He was interred on his mother's estate of Carlisle. The tomb was still visible in 1844, but the garden was overgrown with weeds, and the walls were falling into ruins. An elaborate monument of marble was erected to his memory by the legislature of Antigua, in St. John's Church in that island. As his widow was left all but destitute, a compassionate allowance of 300*l.* a year was voted to her by the assembly, for her life. Her married life appears to have been unhappy, and Sheridan once found her in tears, 'which she placed, with more adroitness than truth, to the account of her monkey, who had just died.' He thereupon exclaimed :

Alas! poor Ned,
My monkey's dead ;
I had rather by half
It had been Sir Ralph.

Payne's speeches are in the 'Debates' of Sir Henry Cavendish, i. 133, 368–70, 372, and many letters from him are among the Rosslyn MSS., two being printed in Lord Campbell's 'Lives of the Lord Chancellors,' vi. 161-2, 359.

[Burke's Extinct Peerage; Gent. Mag. 1763 p. 97, 1776 p. 94, 1807 pt. ii. pp. 889, 974 ; Jesse's Selwyn, ii. 166; Corresp. of George III and Lord North, i. 56, ii. 75; Oldfield's Parl. Hist. iii. 207 ; Courtney's Parl. Rep. of Cornwall, pp. 108–9, 351 ; Malmesbury's Diaries and Corresp. iv. 385 ; Campbell's Chancellors, vi. 229, 686 ; Wraxall's Memoirs, ed. Wheatley, iii. 410–11 ; Corresp. of Right Hon. J. Beresford, i. 239 ; Antigua and the Antiguans, i. 113-14, 131–7, 226–7, ii. 346–7 ; Walpole's George III, ed. Le Marchant, iii. 321–2, 359.] W. P. C.

**PAYNE**, ROBERT (*fl.* 1589), writer on agriculture, was born apparently in Nottinghamshire. He subsequently described himself of Poynes-End, co. Cork. He was presumably the author of 'Rob. Payn his Hillman's Table, which sheweth how to make Ponds to continue water in high and drie grounde, of what nature soeuer. Also the Vale-man's Table, shewing how to draine moores, and all other wette grounds, and to lay them drie for euer. Also how to measure any roufe ground, wood or water, that you cannot come into,' &c., 1583 (Ames, *Typogr. Antiq.* iii. 1662). In consequence of the exceptional inducements offered by government to Englishmen to settle in Munster after the suppression of the rebellion of Gerald Fitzgerald, fifteenth earl of Desmond [q. v.], Payne and twenty-five of his neighbours proposed to remove thither. But Englishmen were chary of risking their lives and fortunes in Ireland, and it was accordingly thought advisable to send Payne over to report on the situation. The result was : 'A Briefe Description of Ireland : Made in this Yeere 1589, by Robert Payne.

Vnto xxv. of his partners, for whom he is vndertaker there. Truely published verbatim, according to his letters, by Nich. Gorsan, one of the said partners, for that he would his countrymen should be partakers of the many good Notes therein conteined. With diuers Notes taken out of others, the Authoures letters written to the said partners, sithenes the first Impression, well worth the reading. At London, printed by Thomas Dawson, 1590.' The first edition, though mentioned by Ames (*Typogr. Antiq.* ii. 1127), is not known to be extant. The pamphlet was reprinted and edited for the Irish Archæological Society in 1841 by Dr. Aquilla Smith; but whatever its utility may have been to Payne's partners, it cannot be regarded as of any great value for historical purposes. Payne, on the whole, wrote favourably of the situation: there were good undertakers as well as bad; the natives were not so black as they were painted; justice was firmly administered; the prospect of a Spanish invasion was remote; the country was rich and fertile, and prices were low. But from the absence of Payne's name from the survey of 1622, it may probably be conjectured that he did not settle permanently in Munster.

[Payne's Brief Description of Ireland, ed. Aquilla Smith (Irish Archæol. Society); Ames's Typogr. Antiq.] R. D.

**PAYNE, ROGER** (1739–1797), bookbinder, was born at Windsor in 1739. It is said that after having learned the rudiments of his art from Pote, the Eton bookseller, he came to London about 1766, and worked for a short time for Thomas Osborne (*d.* 1767) [q. v.] in Gray's Inn. Soon afterwards—between 1766 and 1770—through the kindness of 'honest Tom Payne,' the bookseller at the Mews Gate, who was not related to him, he was enabled to set up in business for himself as a bookbinder, near Leicester Square [see PAYNE, THOMAS, 1719–1799]. He was then joined by his brother Thomas, who attended to the forwarding department, while Roger, who possessed artistic talent far superior to that of any of his fellow-craftsmen of the eighteenth century in England, devoted himself to the finishing and decoration of the volumes entrusted to his care. After a time, however, the brothers parted, and Roger, late in life, took as his fellow-worker Richard Wier, whose wife became known as a clever repairer and restorer of old books. The partners were alike addicted to immoderate indulgence in strong ale, which led to frequent quarrels and at last to separation. Roger's aspect betrayed his inordinate liking for 'barley broth.' 'His appearance,' says Dibdin, 'bespoke either squalid wretchedness or a foolish and fierce indifference to the received opinions of mankind. His hair was unkempt, his visage elongated, his attire wretched, and the interior of his workshop—where, like the Turk, he would "bear no brother near his throne"—harmonised but too justly with the general character and appearance of its owner. With the greatest possible display of humility in speech and in writing, he united quite the spirit of quixotic independence.'

Payne died in Duke's Court, St. Martin's Lane, London, on 20 Nov. 1797, and was buried in the churchyard of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, at the expense of his old friend Thomas Payne, 'to whom,' writes John Nichols, 'in a great measure the admirers of this ingenious man's performances may feel themselves indebted for the prolongation of his life, having for the last eight years provided him with a regular pecuniary assistance.' Thomas Payne had also a portrait taken of his namesake, at his work in his miserable den, which was etched and published by Sylvester Harding in 1800, and again engraved by William Angus for Dibdin's 'Bibliographical Decameron.'

Payne is considered by some to have originated a new style of bookbinding; but he was undoubtedly influenced by the beautiful work of Samuel Mearn and other binders of the end of the seventeenth century. His bindings united elegance with durability; and the ornaments, which are said to have been designed by himself, were chosen with excellent taste. His best work was executed either in russia leather or in straight-grained morocco, usually of a dark blue, bright red, or olive colour. The sheets of the books were often sewn with silk, and the backs lined with leather, to give them additional strength. As a rule the backs only were elaborately tooled, while the sides were left almost plain. The ornamental devices were chiefly circlets, crescents, stars, acorns, running vines, and leaves, placed at intervals in the spaces to be decorated, and studded between with golden dots. The end papers were usually purple or some other plain colour. Each volume was accompanied by a bill describing the work done, and the ornaments used, written in a most precise and quaint style. Many of these bills are still extant in the volumes which he bound.

Payne's chief patrons were Earl Spencer, the Duke of Devonshire, Colonel Stanley, and the Rev. Clayton Mordaunt Cracherode. The books which he bound for Lord Spencer are now in the John Rylands Library at

Manchester. Among them are many very beautiful bindings, as well as the large-paper copy of Potter's translation of 'Æschylus,' printed at Glasgow in 1795, in which are contained Flaxman's original drawings, bound in blue morocco. This is thought by some to be Roger Payne's masterpiece. The same collection includes also the Aldine edition of Homer's 'Iliad,' printed on vellum in 1504, on which he was at work at the time of his death. The Cracherode collection, now in the British Museum, likewise contains many excellent examples of his work, among which may especially be noted Cicero's 'De Oratore,' printed at Rome by Ulrich Han in 1468, bound in red morocco; the 'Historia' of Justinus, printed at Venice by Jenson in 1470, in blue morocco; Cicero's 'De Finibus,' Venice, 1471, in red morocco, with blind tooling on the outside; Cicero's 'Epistolæ ad Familiares,' printed by Jenson at Venice in 1475, in red morocco; the 'Erotemata' of Lascaris, Venice, 1495, in olive-brown morocco; the Cambridge edition of Euripides, 1694, in blue morocco; and the Aldine Virgil of 1505, in blue morocco, with a cameo inserted in each cover. The British Museum also possesses, in the Grenville collection, two good specimens: East's undated edition of the 'Storye of Kynge Arthur,' bound in red morocco; and the Genoa edition of Tasso's 'Gierusalemme Liberata,' 1590, in olive morocco. A copy of the first folio Shakespeare, 1623, bound in russia, is in the library of Mr. Christie-Miller at Britwell Court, Buckinghamshire.

[Gent. Mag. 1797, ii. 1070, notice by John Nichols; Dibdin's Bibliographical Decameron, 1817, ii. 506–18; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. vi. 131; Andrews's Roger Payne and his Art, New York, 1892; Miss Prideaux's Historical Sketch of Bookbinding, 1893; Portfolio, 1893, p. 101; Horne's Binding of Books, 1894, pp. 199–205.] R. E. G.

**PAYNE, THOMAS** (1719–1799), bookseller, son of Oliver and Martha Payne of Brackley, Northamptonshire, was baptised at Brackley 26 May 1719. His elder brother, Oliver Payne, established himself as a bookseller at Round Court in the Strand, London, which was opposite York Buildings, but has been effaced by the Charing Cross Hospital, and originated the practice of printing lists of the books for sale at his shop. Thomas Payne was at first his assistant, and afterwards his successor in the business. About 1745 he married Elizabeth Taylor, and succeeded her brother, who was also a bookseller, in his house and shop in Castle Street, next the Mewsgate, the entrance by St. Martin's Church to the King's Mews. In 1750 he rebuilt the premises and constructed the shop in the shape of the letter L. The convenience of the situation made it the favourite place of resort for the literati of the day, and it became known as the Literary Coffee-house. Among the frequenters of the sale-room were Cracherode, Gough, Porson, Burney, Thomas Grenville, George Stevens, Cyril Jackson, Lord Spencer, Malone, and Windham. Mathias refers to it in the first dialogue of the 'Pursuits of Literature' (ll. 190–4) with the question :

> Must I as a wit with learned air,
> Like Doctor Dewlap, to Tom Payne's repair,
> Meet Cyril Jackson, and mild Cracherode
> 'Mid literary gods, myself a god?

and in a note calls Payne 'one of the best and honestest men living. . . . I mention this Trypho Emeritus with great satisfaction.'

The first of his book-lists was issued on 29 Feb. 1740–1, and for thirty-five years, beginning with 1755, a new catalogue, usually of not less than two hundred pages, was issued each year, most of which are at the British Museum. A list of them is printed in Nichols's 'Literary Anecdotes' (iii. 655–60), and among the collections which passed through his hands were those of Francis Peck, Ralph Thoresby, Dr. Kennicott, Francis Grose, Cornwall the speaker, and the Bishops Beauclerk and Newton. One of his assistants was John Hatchard, the founder of the bookselling firm in Piccadilly.

Payne continued in business with increasing success until 1790, when he retired in favour of his son Thomas (1752–1831) [q. v.], who had been his partner for more than twenty years. He died on 2 Feb. 1799, and was buried on 9 Feb. at Finchley, near his wife, who had died many years previously, and brother. A poetical epitaph was written for him by Hayley (Nichols, *Lit. Anecdotes*, ix. 666). His children were two sons and two daughters, who were described in 1775 as 'pretty and motherless.' Sally married, on 6 Sept. 1785, Admiral James Burney [q. v.], and their daughter Sarah married John Payne, of the firm of Payne & Foss.

Payne was 'warm in his friendships and politics, a convivial, cheerful companion, and unalterable in the cut and colour of his coat,' and was universally known as 'honest Tom Payne.' All the copperplates in Gough's edition of Camden's 'Britannia' were engraved at his expense, and Gough gave him in return the whole of the printed copies, with the exception of about fifteen impressions, and left him a legacy of 500*l.* Roger Payne [q. v.], the bookbinder, was for

the last eight years of his life supported by Tom Payne, though they were not related. He was introduced into Beloe's 'Sexagenarian' (vol. i. ch. xxxii.) by name, and again into the second volume (ch. xlii.) as the honest bookseller. A print of a portrait of him is in Dibdin's 'Bibliographical Decameron' (iii. 435); a second portrait represents him at whist, with the cards in his hands (Courtney, *English Whist*, pp. 251–2).

[Baker's Northamptonshire, i. 586; Cunningham's London, ed. Wheatley, ii. 532; Lysons's Environs, Suppl. 1811, p. 143; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. vi. 131–2, 5th ser. vii. 112; Gent. Mag. 1799 pt. i. pp. 171–2, 236, 1831 pt. i. pp. 275–6; Dibdin's Bibl. Decameron, iii. 435–7; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. History, v. 428, 435; Early Diary of Frances Burney, vol. i. p. lxxiii, vol. ii. pp. 130–1; Austin Dobson's Eighteenth-Century Vignettes, 2nd ser. pp. 192–203.] W. P. C.

PAYNE, THOMAS, the younger (1752–1831), bookseller, eldest son of Thomas Payne (1719–1799) [q. v.], by his wife Elizabeth Taylor, was born on 10 Oct. 1752. He was educated at the classical school of M. Metayer in Charterhouse Square, London, and was trained in modern and dead languages for the further development of the family business. After he had been for more than twenty years a partner with his father, the latter retired in 1790 in favour of his son. In 1806 he transferred the business to more commodious premises in part of Schomberg House, on the south side of Pall Mall, which also became a literary centre. He took into partnership in 1813 his apprentice and connection, Henry Foss, when Charles Lamb playfully designated the new firm as 'Pain & Fuss.' In 1817 he was the master of the Stationers' Company, but a few years later his health began to decline, and he could no longer travel on the continent in quest of books. About 1825 he was succeeded in business by his nephew John Payne, who continued the establishment, in partnership with Foss, until 1850. Thomas Payne was seized by apoplexy on 8 March 1831, and died at Pall Mall on 15 March. He was buried in St. Martin's-in-the-Fields on 24 March.

Payne, at the time of his death, was the father of the London booksellers. He possessed a vast store of literary anecdote. Among the collections which he sold were the libraries of Dean Lloyd and Rev. Henry Homer, and that of M. de Lamoignon, keeper of the seals of France. An account of the sale of the Borromeo collection of novels and romances, which Payne and Foss had purchased, and the details of their acquisitions at the Larcher, MacCarthy, and subsequent sales are given in Dibdin's 'Bibliographical Decameron' (iii. 149, 161–80, cf. ii. 172).

John Payne, after the cessation of the business in 1850, withdrew to Rome. He and his wife, Sarah Burney, received much foreign company, and were especially friendly with Cardinal Antonelli.

[Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, viii. 504; Gent. Mag. 1831, pt. i. p. 276; Early Diary of Frances Burney, ii. 130–1.] W. P. C.

PAYNE, WILLIAM, D.D. (1650–1696), controversialist, was born at Hutton, Essex, in 1650. He was educated at the free school of Brentwood, Essex, and proceeded to Magdalene College, Cambridge, in May 1665. He obtained a fellowship there on 6 July 1671, and retained it till 1675, when he married Elisabeth, daughter of John Squire, vicar of St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, London. He was in the same year presented to the livings of Frinstead and Wormshill in Kent, and settled at the latter place. In June 1681 he received the rectory of Whitechapel, and speedily won a reputation among the London clergy as a preacher. On 29 June 1682 he was chosen to preach before the first annual feast instituted at Brentwood school. He took an active part in the agitation aroused by the 'popish plot,' in the course of which he wrote many anti-catholic tracts. Of these the best known are: 'A Discourse of the Adoration of the Host' (1685); 'A Discourse of the Communion in one Kind, in answer to a Treatise of the Bishop of Meaux' (1687); 'The Sixth Note of the Church examined, viz. Agreement in Doctrine with the Primitive Church' (1688); and 'The Texts examined which the Papists cite out of the Bible concerning the Celibacy of Priests and Vows of Continence' (1688). All these tracts went through several editions, and were collected in Edmund Gibson's 'Preservative against Popery' (1738).

After the accession of William and Mary to the throne in 1689, Payne, who in this year took the degree of D.D. at Cambridge, was appointed to the lectureship of the Poultry Church in the city of London, and received the post of chaplain-in-ordinary to their majesties. He strongly supported the comprehension scheme, brought forward in 1689 for facilitating the inclusion of protestant dissenters in the established church. The proposal was opposed, among others, by Thomas Long [q. v.], whose pamphlet on the subject, entitled 'Vox Cleri,' was answered by Payne in an 'Answer to Vox Cleri' (1690). Being subsequently

denounced by the nonjurors for his latitudinarian views, Payne in 1691 published a defence of his position, entitled 'An Answer to a printed Letter to Dr. William Payne, concerning Non-resistance and other Reasons for not taking the Oath.' In 1693 Dr. Payne was appointed, by a commission under the great seal, 'visitor-royal' over certain London churches, popularly called 'lawless churches,' because they were exempt from visitation by the bishop, and were subject solely to the king. The appointment, however, caused resentment at Doctors' Commons, and in 1694 he resigned it. During the last two years of his life Payne preached a series of sermons on behalf of Sherlock, who was engaged in defending the dogma of the Trinity against South. These sermons were published in 1696 under the title of 'The Mystery of the Christian Faith and oft-blessed Trinity vindicated.' Payne was engaged on a larger work on this subject when he died, on 20 Feb. 1696. Besides the tracts mentioned, Payne was author of: 1. 'Family Religion' (1691). 2. 'A Discourse of Repentance' (1693). 3. 'Discourses upon several Practical Subjects,' published in 1698 from his manuscript sermons by his friend and executor, Joseph Powell.

Payne's son, Squier Payne, fellow of Magdalene College, Cambridge (B.A. 1694, and M.A. 1698), was son-in-law and biographer of Richard Cumberland [q. v.], bishop of Peterborough, and being made archdeacon of Stow, in the diocese of Lincoln, in 1730, held that office till 1751.

[Preface to Payne's posthumous Discourses, 1698; archives of Magdalene College, Cambridge, communicated by A. G. Peskett; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. v. 271–6; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

G. P. M–v.

**PAYNE, WILLIAM** (*fl.* 1800), water-colour painter, who is supposed to have been a native of Devonshire, held an appointment in the engineers' department at Plymouth Dockyard, and resided at Plymouth Dock (now Devonport) till 1790, when he came to London, and took up his residence in Thornhaugh Street, Bedford Square. He was already known as a landscape-painter, having exhibited at the Incorporated Society of Artists in 1776, and at the Royal Academy since 1786. Some of his views of slate quarries at Plympton had been praised by his fellow-countryman, Sir Joshua Reynolds, the president of the Royal Academy, and others, drawn in 1788 and 1789, were engraved for Samuel Middiman's 'Select Views in Great Britain' (1784–92). He had hit upon certain methods which considerably increased the resources of water-colour art, especially in the rendering of sunlight and atmosphere. His 'style,' as it was called, was one which was not only new and effective, but could be learnt without much difficulty, and he soon became the most fashionable drawing-master in London. Among the innovations with which he is credited were 'splitting the brush to give forms of foliage, dragging the tints to give texture to his foregrounds, and taking out the forms of lights by wetting the surface and rubbing with bread and rag.' He also abandoned the use of outline with the pen, but the invention by which he is best known is a neutral tint composed of indigo, raw sienna, and lake. A compound pigment called Payne's grey is still sold by artists' colourmen. His methods were regarded as tricky by the old-fashioned practicians of the day, but there is no doubt that he did much to advance the technique of water-colour painting, and was one of the first 'draughtsmen' to abandon mere topography for a more poetical treatment of landscape scenery. In 1809 he was elected an associate of the Water-colour Society, but left it on the disruption of the original society in 1812. During the four years of his connection with the society he sent seventeen drawings to their exhibitions. By this time his art had degenerated into mannerism. He was surpassed by better artists, and forgotten before he died. The date of his death is unknown; it is supposed to have been about 1815, but, according to Algernon Graves's 'Dictionary of Artists,' he was still exhibiting in 1830.

Four books, 'Landscapes from Drawings by Payne,' engraved by Black, are advertised at the end of 'A Treatise on Ackerman's Water-colours,' &c., 1801. There are examples of Payne's drawings at South Kensington Museum, the British Museum, and the Whitworth Museum at Manchester.

[Redgrave's Dict.; Redgraves' Century of Painters; Redgrave's Descriptive Catalogue of Water-colours at South Kensington Museum; Bryan's Dict. (Graves and Armstrong); Roget's 'Old' Water-colour Society; Art Journal, March 1849; Graves's Dict.; Somerset House Gazette, i. 133, 162; Alston's Hints to Young Practitioners in the Study of Landscape Painting; Monkhouse's Earlier English Water-colour Painters; Notes and Queries, 6th ser. i. 522, ii. 227.]

C. M.

**PAYNE, WILLIAM HENRY SCHOFIELD** (1804–1878), actor and pantomimist, was born in the city of London in 1804, and was apprenticed to Isaac Cowen, a stockbroker; but in his eighteenth year he ran

away, and joined a travelling theatrical company in the Warwickshire circuit. He rose to play small parts at the Theatre Royal, Birmingham. Returning to London, he studied under Grimaldi and Bologna at Sadler's Wells Theatre, and then obtained an engagement at an east-end theatre, and in the following year (1825) migrated to the Pavilion Theatre. Here he remained some years, playing small parts, which he raised into importance by the admirable expression of his pantomimic action. At Christmas he represented the clown, with Miss Rountree (afterwards his first wife) as columbine. On 26 Dec. 1831 he made his first appearance at Covent Garden Theatre in the pantomime 'Hop o' my Thumb and his Brothers,' by Charles Farley [q. v.], in which he played Madoc Mawr, the Welsh ogre, Miss Poole being Little Jack, and Priscilla Horton (afterwards Mrs. German Reed) the Genius of the Harp. The next year he was still more successful in the pantomime produced on 26 Dec. and called 'Puss in Boots,' in which his character was Tasnar, chief of the Long Heads and No Bodies.

During his long career Payne played many parts, ranging from pantomime to tragedy. He was harlequin to Joe Grimaldi's clown at Sadler's Wells in 1827 ; he was Dandy Lover to young Joe Grimaldi's clown, and made a capital clown himself. He acted in tragedy with Charles Young, Charles Kemble, James Wallack, and Edmund Kean, and on Kean's last appearance (Covent Garden, 25 March 1833), when playing Othello, and unable to finish the part through illness, it was Payne, then acting Ludovico, who carried him off the stage. He prominently figured in grand ballet with Pauline Leroux, Cerito, Carlotta Grisi, the Elsslers, and other dancers of note, and played in state before George IV, William IV, Victoria, Napoleon III, and the Empress Eugénie.

In 1841 he was still at Covent Garden, and filled the rôle of Guy, earl of Warwick, in the pantomime produced at Christmas. On 31 March 1847 he opened at Vauxhall Gardens in a ballet with his wife and his sister, Miss Annie Payne. In 1848 he was engaged by John Knowles for the Theatre Royal, Manchester, and here he remained seven years, increasing the annual run of the pantomime from its usual twenty-four nights to one hundred, and making 'Robinson Crusoe' so attractive that it was represented 125 nights consecutively. On leaving Manchester he appeared with his sons at Sadler's Wells in the pantomime of the 'Forty Thieves' at Christmas 1854. Latterly the Payne family were regularly engaged for Covent Garden, where they became the chief actors and pantomimists in the openings, as well as the contrivers and performers of the harlequinades. They were also frequently seen at the Standard Theatre, the Crystal Palace, and other places. Through the whole of his career Payne's private virtues commanded the respect of the profession. He died at Calstock House, Dover, on 18 Dec. 1878. A writer in the 'Spectator' said: 'The last true mime has departed in the person of W. H. Payne.'

By his first wife Payne had four children: (1) Harriet Farrell, who married Aynsley Cook, and, with her husband, took leading rôles in operatic performances; (2) Annie, a dancer and actress, who married William Turner; (3) Harry, the well-known pantomimist and clown at Drury Lane; (4) Frederick, born January 1841, who came from Manchester to London with his father in 1854, and made his first appearance in a juvenile part in the pantomime of the 'Forty Thieves' at Sadler's Wells. When the Payne family became regularly engaged for the Covent Garden pantomimes, he acquired distinction as the harlequin and as a graceful and grotesque dancer. His 'hat dance' in the pantomime of 'Cinderella' in 1865 was singularly quaint and clever. In 1877, while engaged in the pantomime at the Alexandra Palace, his mind became affected, and from this affliction he never thoroughly recovered, and he died at 3 Alexandra Road, Finsbury Park, London, on 27 Feb. 1880, aged only thirty-nine (*Era*, 29 Feb. 1880, p. 6).

[Era, 22 Dec. 1878, p. 12; Spectator, 28 Dec. 1878, pp. 1633–4; Stirling's Old Drury Lane, 1881, ii. 204–5; Dramatic Peerage, 1891, pp. 185–6; Blanchard's Life, 1891, i. 57, 127, 214, 303, 318, ii. 444.] G. C. B.

PAYNE SMITH, ROBERT (1819–1895), dean of Canterbury, orientalist and theologian, was born at Chipping Campden in Gloucestershire on 7 Nov. 1819. His father, Robert Smith, who died in 1827, was a land agent, and was directly descended from Sir Thomas Smith, to whom the manor of Campden was granted by Queen Elizabeth. His mother, whose maiden name was Esther Argles Payne, was a native of Surrey. He was educated at Campden grammar school, whence he obtained in 1837 an exhibition at Pembroke College, Oxford, then under the headship of Dr. Jeune, to whose friendship Payne Smith owed much of his later promotion. At Oxford he studied the ordinary subjects of the classical schools, but devoted himself as well to the oriental languages, and gained the Sanskrit scholarship in 1840, and the Pusey

and Ellerton Hebrew scholarship in 1843. A post was then offered him at Benares, which, at his mother's wish, he declined; and in the same year he obtained a fellowship at Pembroke College, and was ordained. He at first devoted himself to pastoral work, and undertook successively the curacies of Crendon and Long Winchenden, and of Thame in Buckinghamshire; but in 1847 he accepted a classical mastership at the Edinburgh Academy, with which from 1848 he combined the incumbency of Trinity Chapel. In 1853 he left Edinburgh to become headmaster of the Kensington proprietary school. While in London he resumed his oriental studies, and worked at the Syriac manuscripts in the British Museum, being encouraged by Dr. Cureton; and, partly with the view of obtaining leisure for these studies, partly because the climate of Kensington did not suit his wife's health, he accepted in 1857 the post of sub-librarian at the Bodleian Library, a step involving great pecuniary loss. During his tenure of this post he published, in 1859, the commentary of Cyril of Alexandria on St. Luke in Syriac and English; in 1860 a translation of the third part of the 'Ecclesiastical History of Johannes Ephesius,' which had been edited in Syriac by Cureton, to whom the translator acknowledges his obligations for assistance in his studies; and, in 1865, a 'Catalogue of the Syriac MSS. in the Bodleian Library.' During the preparation of these works, all of which displayed very accurate scholarship, and were published at the Clarendon Press, Payne Smith had become aware of the imperfections of the Syriac dictionary of Castell and Michaelis, the only one at the time in the hands of students, and as early as 1859 he proposed to the delegates of the Clarendon Press a scheme for a new dictionary. The proposal was favourably received, and he set to work on his 'Thesaurus Syriacus,' the compilation and publication of which formed his chief literary occupation for the remaining thirty-six years of his life. At his death all but the last of the ten fasciculi into which the work was divided had appeared. The book bears on its title-page, besides the editor's name, that of S. M. Quatremère, G. H. Bernstein, G. W. Lorsbach, A. J. Arnoldi, C. M. Agrell, F. Field, and A. Rödiger. Several of these scholars had planned works similar to Payne Smith's, but had not lived to complete more than small portions of them; their manuscripts were put into Payne Smith's hands, and their materials were embodied in the work which so generously acknowledges its indebtedness to them. The first fasciculus began to be printed at the end of 1864, and was published in 1868. The number of copies was 350, but this was afterwards found to be insufficient, and, after fasc. 6, was raised to 750, fresh copies of the earlier fasciculi being produced by photography. Besides the collections mentioned, care was taken by the editor to utilise the numerous Syriac texts published in Europe (especially in Germany) during the second half of the century, and every other available source whence his dictionary could be enriched. Payne Smith's undertaking started a new era in the study of Syriac, and there seems little chance, owing to its exhaustive character, of its being superseded as a storehouse of the facts of that language.

Payne Smith was also a voluminous writer on controversial theology, in which he favoured the conservative and evangelical side. His course of sermons vindicating 'The Authenticity and Messianic Interpretation of the Prophecies of Isaiah' (1862) led to his appointment in 1865 to the regius professorship of divinity at Oxford, chiefly through the influence of the Earl of Shaftesbury and Dr. Jeune, then bishop of Peterborough. In 1869 he delivered the Bampton lectures, and took for his subject 'Prophecy a Preparation for Christ.'

As regius professor at Oxford he played a leading part in establishing the theological tripos (for which he was one of the first examiners in 1870), an institution which had far-reaching effects in rendering the study of theology more systematic than it had been in Oxford. It was also at his request that Henry Hall-Houghton [q. v.] founded in 1871 the Syriac prize that bears his name. With the view of providing special training in theology for clergymen of the evangelical school, he helped to found in 1877 Wycliffe Hall, of which he was chairman of council to the end of his life. He also interested himself in educational institutions at his native town of Chipping Campden and Canterbury, and helped to found the South-eastern College, Ramsgate. The intermediate church schools at Canterbury, with which he was closely associated, have been rechristened the Payne Smith schools.

In January 1870 he resigned his professorship at Oxford on accepting Mr. Gladstone's offer of the deanery of Canterbury. He sat on the Old Testament revision committee, which occupied a part of his time for fifteen years—from 1870 to 1885. As dean of Canterbury he won the affection of the various nonconformist bodies represented there, as well as of the different parties in the church; and the controversies in which he was at times engaged were conducted without

bitterness on his or his opponents' sides. He died at Canterbury on 31 March 1895. A memorial has been placed in the cathedral.

His publications from 1865 till his death in 1895 (apart from the 'Thesaurus Syriacus') were all of them in defence of the evangelical school. They include an 'Exposition of the Historical Portion of Daniel' (1886), a 'Commentary on Jeremiah' contributed to the 'Speaker's Commentary,' on 'Samuel' in the 'Pulpit Commentary,' on 'Genesis' in Bishop Ellicott's 'Commentary,' and his essay 'On the Powers and Duties of the Priesthood' contributed to a volume directed against Ritualism, called 'Principles at Stake.'

He married, in 1850, Catherine Freeman, by whom he had two sons and four daughters, one of whom was associated with him in editing the later fasciculi of the 'Thesaurus.'

[Payne Smith's Thesaurus Syriacus, i. præf.; private information.] D. S. M.

PAYNELL. [See also PAGANELL.]

PAYNELL, MAURICE DE, BARON OF LEEDS (1184?–1230). [See GAUNT OR GANT.]

PAYNELL, THOMAS (*fl.* 1528-1567), translator, was an Austin friar, educated at Merton Abbey, Surrey, where he became a canon. He then proceeded to the college of St. Mary the Virgin, Oxford, which was designed for the education of the canons of certain Augustinian houses, of which Merton was one (WOOD, *City of Oxford*, ed. Clark, ii. 228–9). He subsequently returned to Merton, and devoted himself to literary and medical studies. His first book, an edition of the 'Regimen Sanitatis Salerni,' appeared in 1528, and from that date Paynell's activity as a translator was incessant. In 1530 a Thomas Paynell was admitted member of Gray's Inn (FOSTER, *Register*, p. 8). On 13 April 1538 Merton Abbey surrendered to the crown, and its inmates received pensions. Paynell accepted 10*l.* per annum. On 16 Oct. in the same year Paynell was licensed to export from England five hundred woollen cloths, and in December he was despatched, with Christopher Mount [q. v.], on a mission to the protestant princes of Germany; he was present at the diet of Frankfort on 12 Feb. 1539 (*State Papers Henry VIII*, i. 604–6, 609, 614). Before 1541 he had become chaplain to Henry VIII, perhaps as a reward for diplomatic services. He seems to have escaped molestation on account of his religious opinions, and remained in favour with Edward VI, Mary, and Elizabeth, to all of whom he dedicated books. Among others to whom his dedications are addressed were Mary (1496–1533) [q. v.], queen-dowager of France, John de Vere, fifteenth earl of Oxford [q. v.], Anthony Browne, first viscount Montague [q. v.], the lord chamberlain, and William Blount, fourth lord Mountjoy [q. v.] He was also an intimate friend of Alexander Barclay [q. v.], the author of the 'Ship of Fools.' He is probably the Thomas Paynell who resigned the living of St. Dionys, Lime Street, London, on 13 Feb. 1549–50 (STRYPE, *Eccl. Mem.* II. ii. 261), and succeeded his friend Richard Benese [q. v.] at All Hallows, Honey Lane, which he resigned before 21 Feb. 1560–1. The latest mention of him appears in the 'Stationers' Register' in December or January 1567–8.

The translator's works are: 1. 'Regimen Sanitatis Salerni. This boke techyng al people to governe them in helthe is translated out of the Latyne tonge in to englyshe by T. Paynell,' T. Berthelet, London, 1528, 4to. The British Museum copy contains a few manuscript notes; the work consists of the 'Regimen' which was originally compiled by Joannes de Mediolano, and dedicated to Robert, duke of Normandy, who stayed at Salerno for the cure of a wound received in Palestine, and of a commentary by Arnaldus of Villa Nova, but only the commentary is in English; it is dedicated to John de Vere, fifteenth earl of Oxford. Other editions appeared in 1530, 1535, 1541, 1557, 1575, and 1634. The British Museum has copies of all these editions, and the Britwell Library of the earlier ones. 2. 'The preceptes teachyng a prynce or a noble estate his duetie, written by Agapetus in Greke to the emperour Justinian, and after translated into Latin, and nowe to Englysshe by T. Paynell,' T. Berthelet, London [1532?], 8vo (Brit. Museum and Britwell). It is undated, but the dedication to 'my lorde Montjoy, lord-chamberlaine to the queene,' i.e. William Blount, fourth lord Mountjoy, lord chamberlain to Queen Catherine, places it before his death in 1534, and probably before the divorce proceedings. Another edition, dated 1563, and bound with Ludovicus Vives's 'Introduction to Wisdom,' translated by Sir Richard Morison [q. v.], is in the Britwell Library (cf. LOWNDES, i. 18). 3. Erasmus's 'De Contemptu Mundi, translated in to englysshe' [by T. Paniell], T. Berthelet, London, 1533, 16mo (Brit. Mus.); another edition, undated and perhaps earlier, is in the Britwell Library. It is dedicated to Mary, queen-dowager of France, to whom Paynell describes himself as 'your daily oratour.' 4. Ulrich von Hutten's 'De Morbo Gallico' [translated into English by T. Paynell], T. Berthelet, London, 1533, 8vo (Brit. Mus.) Another edition appeared in

1730 (Brit. Mus.) This work is, except the title-page, identical with 'Of the wood called Guaiacum, that healeth the Frenche Pockes . .' [translated by T. Paynell], T. Berthelet, London, 1536, 8vo (Brit. Mus. and Britwell). Other editions appeared in 1539 and 1540 (Brit. Mus.) 5. 'A moche profitable treatise against the pestilence, translated into ēglyshe by Thomas Paynel, chanon of Martin Abbey,' T. Berthelet, London, 1534, 12mo (Brit. Mus.) 6. Erasmus's 'Comparation of a Vyrgin and a Martyr,' T. Berthelet, London, 1537, 12mo, dedicated to John Ramsay, prior of Merton, at whose request Paynell undertook the translation. The only known copy is in the Lambeth Library (Maitland, *Early Printed Books in the Lambeth Library*, p. 199; cf. Lowndes, i. 750; Ames, ed. Herbert, i. 429; Maunsell, p. 47; Dibdin, iii. 297). 7. 'A Sermon of St. Cyprian made on the Lordes Prayer,' T. Berthelet, London, 1539, 8vo (Brit. Mus. and Britwell), dedicated to Sir Anthony Denny [q. v.] 8. 'The Conspiracie of Lucius Catiline, translated into englishe by Thomas Paynell, worthy, profitable, and pleasaunt to be read,' T. Berthelet, 1541 (Britwell and Huth), dedicated to Henry VIII. Another edition, with Barclay's translation of Sallust's 'Catiline,' revised by Paynell, was published by J. Waley in 1557, 4to, and dedicated to Anthony Browne, viscount Montagu (Brit. Mus.) 9. 'A compēdious ꝯ moche fruytefulle treatyse of well livynge, cōtaynyng the whole sum̃e . . . of all vertue. Wrytten by S. Bernard ꝯ translated by T. Paynell,' T. Petyt, London [1545?], 16mo (Lambeth and Brit. Mus.); dedicated to the Lady Mary. 10. 'The Piththy and moost notable sayinges of al Scripture gathered by T. Paynell, after the manner of common places . . .' T. Gaultier, London, 1550, 8vo; dedicated to the Lady Mary. Copies are in the British Museum, Britwell, and Bodleian libraries (cf. Strype, *Eccl. Mem.* I. i. 75, II. i. 415). Another edition, 'newly augmēted and corrected,' was published in the same year by W. Copland for R. Jugge (Britwell and Brit. Mus.), and a third in 1560 by W. Copland. 11. 'The faythfull and true storye of the Destruction of Troy, compyled by Dares Phrygius . . .' John Cawood, London, 1553, 8vo (Bodleian) (cf. Hazlitt, *Handbook*, p. 140; Wood, *Athenæ*, i. 340). 12. 'The Pandectes of the Evangelicall Law, comprisyng the whole Historye of Christes Gospell,' Nycolas Hyll for Wyllyam Seres and Abraham Vele, 1553, 8vo (Britwell). 13. 'The office and duetie of an husband made by the excellēt Philosopher, L. Vives, and translated into Englyshe by T. Paynell,' J. Cawood, London [1553], 8vo (Brit. Mus. and Britwell). The date is determined by the dedication to 'Sir Anthony Browne,' who was created Viscount Montagu on 2 Sept. 1554; it refers to his intention to marry again (his first wife died on 22 July 1552), and Cawood is described as printer to the 'Queenes highnesse' (i.e. Queen Mary). 14. 'Certaine godly and devout prayers made in latin by the reverend father in God, Cuthbert Tunstall, bishop of Durham,' London, John Cawoode, 1558, 12mo (Brit. Mus.); dedicated to Queen Mary. 15. 'The Complaint of Peace . . .' Jhon Cawoode, 1559, 8vo (Brit. Mus. and Britwell); translation of Erasmus's 'Querela Pacis,' reprinted in 1802. 16. 'The Civilitie of Childehoode, with the discipline and institution of children . . . translated out of Frenche,' John Tisdale, 1560, 8vo (Hazlitt, *Collections*, i. 101); apparently a version of Erasmus's 'De civilitate morum puerilium libellus,' which was translated into English by Udall in 1542. 17. 'The Ensamples of Vertue and Vice gathered out of holye scripture . . . By N. Hanape. And Englyshed by T. Paynell,' John Tisdale [1561], 8vo; dedicated to Queen Elizabeth (cf. Arber, i. 153) (Brit. Mus. and Britwell). 18. 'A frutefull booke of the common places of all St. Pauls Epistles . . . sette foorthe by T. Paniell,' J. Tisdale, 1562, 8vo (Brit. Mus., Bodleian, and Britwell); dedicated to Thomas Argall. 19. 'The moste excellent and pleasaunt booke entituled 'The treasurie of Amadis of Fraunce . . . translated out of Frenche,' Thomas Hacket [1568], 4to (Brit. Mus. without title-page). The 'Stationers' Register' for 1567–8 assigns the authorship to 'Thomas Pannell.' Paynell also edited and wrote a preface for Richard Benese's 'Boke of Measurynge of Lande' [1537?], 4to; other editions were 1540? 1562, and 1564? He likewise supplied a table for the 1557 edition of the works of Sir Thomas More. Other works which Wood and Bale attribute to him have not been identified.

Paynell is confused by Wood, Cooper, and others with a contemporary Thomas Paynell or Parnell, apparently one of the Paynells of Lincolnshire, who was born at Boothby Pagnell or Paynell, and educated at Louvain under Robert Barnes [q. v.], then an Augustinian friar. When Barnes became prior of the Austin friars at Cambridge, Paynell went thither with him, and together 'they made the house of the Augustinians very famous for good and godly literature' (*Athenæ Cantabr.* i. 78). It may be he who was in the king's service at Boston in 1538, and wrote to Cromwell certifying the suppression of the friars' houses there, and urging the application of the building materials to the repair of the haven and town (Ellis, *Original Letters*, 3rd ser. iv.

170–2). A third Thomas Paynell studied at St. Bernard's (afterwards St. John's) College, Oxford, became rector of Cottingham, near Beverley, Yorkshire, and left benefactions to the place by will, which was proved at the prerogative court of Canterbury on 22 March 1563–4 (Wood, *Athenæ Oxon.* i. 337–40). A Nicholas Paynell of Yorkshire was elected fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge, in 1515, and subsequently became public lecturer in mathematics (Strype, *Eccl. Mem.* I. i. 75).

[Works in Brit. Mus. Library; Catalogues of the Bodleian and Huth Libraries; Maunsell's Cat.; Dibdin's Cat. of Spencerian Library; Maitland's Early Printed Books in the Lambeth Library; Hazlitt's Handbook and Collections, passim; Collier's Bibl. Lit. iii. 135; Lowndes's Bibl. Manual; Jamieson's edit. of Barclay's Ship of Fools, vol. i. p. cviii; Bale's Scriptores, ed. 1557–9, pp. 724–5; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib.; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. i. 337–40; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 78; Dodd's Church Hist. i. 243; Foxe's Acts and Monuments, v. 415, 426–7; Strype's Works, Index; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 252; Cotton MS. Galba B. xi. 103; Letters and Papers of Henry VIII, ed. Gairdner, passim; State Papers of Henry VIII, i. 604–6, &c.; Dugdale's Monasticon, ed. Cayley, Ellis, and Bandinel; Willis's Hist. of Mitred Parliamentary Abbeys, ii. 232; Manning and Bray's Surrey, i. 254; Archæologia, xxxix. 445; Arber's Transcript of the Stationers' Register; information kindly supplied by Mr. R. E. Graves.] A. F. P.

**PAYNTER, DAVID WILLIAM** (1791–1823), author, son of Richard Walter Paynter, attorney, was born at Manchester in 1791, and educated at the grammar school of that town. He was intended for the medical profession, but early evinced a predilection for poetry and the drama, and became closely associated with James Watson, a local literary character, with whom he frequently figured in the magazines and newspapers as 'Corporal Trim,' while Watson called himself 'Uncle Toby.' His separate publications were: 1. 'The History and Adventures of Godfrey Ranger,' 1813, 3 vols., a sort of novel, in coarse imitation of Smollett. 2. 'Eurypilus, King of Sicily: a Tragedy,' 1816, 4to. 3. 'The Muse in Idleness,' 1819. This volume was the subject of a sarcastic article by James Crossley [q. v.] in 'Blackwood's Magazine.' 4. 'King Stephen, or the Battle of Lincoln: an Historical Tragedy,' 1822. 5. 'The Wife of Florence: a Tragedy,' 1823 (posthumous). In 1820 he edited Watson's literary remains, under the title of 'The Spirit of the Doctor,' to which he appended some of his own fugitive pieces, including letters from Lancaster Castle, where he was for some time a prisoner for debt. In the introduction to 'King Stephen' he tells of his efforts to get his productions put on the stage. After they had been declined by several managers he collected a company of his own, and brought out 'King Stephen' at the Minor Theatre, Manchester, on 5 Dec. 1821. This seems to have been the only occasion on which a piece of his was acted. He died at Manchester on 14 March 1823, and was buried at Blackley, near that city. He married in 1813, and left children.

[Manchester Guardian, 6 Oct. 1841; Procter's Literary Reminiscences and Gleanings, 1860, p. 57; Manchester School Register (Chetham Soc.), ii. 229; Blackwood's Mag. 1821, ix. 64, 196.] C. W. S.

**PAYNTER** or Cambourne, **WILLIAM** (1637–1716), rector of Exeter College, Oxford, born at Trelissick in St. Erth parish, Cornwall, and baptised at St. Erth on 7 Dec. 1637, was son of William Paynter or Cambourne, by Jane, sixth child of Richard Keigwin of Mousehole in that parish. He matriculated from Exeter College, Oxford, 29 March 1656, and was a poor scholar there from 27 Feb. 1655–6 to 3 July 1657, when he was elected to a fellowship. He graduated B.A. 3 May 1660, M.A. 21 Jan. 1662–3 (being incorporated at Cambridge 1664), B.D. 7 July 1674, and D.D. 27 June 1695. In 1669 he was suspended from his fellowship on the ground that, although a Cornishman, he had 'succeeded to a Devon fellowship.' He was appointed to the rectory of Wotton, Northamptonshire, on 24 July 1686, and vacated his fellowship in February 1687–8. On the deprivation of Dr. Arthur Bury [q.v.], he was elected to the rectorship of Exeter College, 15 Aug. 1690. The circumstances came before the court of king's bench, and on 11 Feb. 1694–5 the election was confirmed, whereupon he was again appointed fellow. He held the rectorship until his death, and he was vice-chancellor of the university in 1698 and 1699. Paynter died at Wotton on 18 Feb. 1715–16, and was buried on 22 Feb., an inscription to his memory being placed upon a freestone monument in the chancel, and his will being proved in the court of the chancellor of Oxford University on 2 April 1716. His first wife was Mary, daughter of John Conant, rector of Exeter College, and widow of M. Pool, M.D. She was born in 1657, and died on 7 May 1695, being buried at Wotton, near her two children, William and Elizabeth. His second wife was Sarah, daughter of Francis Duncombe of Broughton, Buckinghamshire. She was buried at Ilsington, Devon, 22 Sept. 1725, aged 76.

K

When Paynter was rector of Exeter College a benefactor's book was begun, and in 1685 he inscribed a gift of 100*l.* The substance of some letters which passed between him and Kennett on the patronage administered by the college is in Boase's 'Registrum Collegii Exon.' (1894, p. 336). Among his pupils was Sir George Treby the lawyer. Antony Wood more than once applied to him for information. Letters to and from him are in Harleian MSS., Addit. MSS. 4055 f. 50, and 28886 f. 37.

[Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. ii. 434–5; Boase's Collect. Cornub. pp. 670–1; Boase's Exeter Coll. (1894 ed.), pp. cxxix–xxxiv, clxxv. 114, 269; Wood's Colleges, ed. Gutch, ii. App. pp. 156–9; Vivian's Visit. of Cornwall, pp. 353, 558; Bridges's Northamptonshire, i. 393–4; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, i. 102; Wood's Life (Oxford Hist. Soc.), ii. 506, iii. 139, 142, 174, 338, 349, 477.] W. P. C.

**PEABODY, GEORGE** (1795–1869), philanthropist, was born in Danvers, Massachusetts, on 18 Feb. 1795. His ancestors were of a Leicestershire family, one of whom, Francis Paybody, sailed for New England in 1635. His parents, who came of an old puritan stock, were poor, and at the age of eleven the boy was apprenticed to a Danvers grocer. In 1811 he became clerk in a dry goods store, which his brother David had opened in Newburyport; but a fire burned the premises to the ground, and in May of the following year he went to Georgetown, Columbia, to manage a business for an uncle. Shortly afterwards Peabody joined the volunteer company of artillery raised in Georgetown to oppose the progress of the British fleet, which had entered the Potomac, and was threatening Washington. But on the withdrawal of the fleet he returned to his uncle, and remained with him for two years, when, fearing financial complications, he deemed it expedient to seek other employment.

In 1814 the foundation of his future prosperity was laid, when, in conjunction with Elisha Riggs, who supplied the money, he opened a wholesale dry goods warehouse at Georgetown. Next year the house was established in Baltimore, and in 1822 branches were opened in New York and Philadelphia. In connection with this business Peabody first came to England in 1827, and after several such visits took up his abode permanently in London ten years later. Meanwhile Mr. Riggs had retired, and Peabody became senior partner in 1829. In 1843 he withdrew from the firm of Peabody, Riggs & Co., and began business in London as a merchant and banker. He was thus engaged when he died, at the house of a friend in Eaton Square, on 4 Nov. 1869. His body, after lying for a month in Westminster Abbey, was removed to Portsmouth in December, was taken to America on board the Monarch, specially granted for the purpose by the queen, and was buried at Danvers on 8 Feb. 1870.

Peabody is justly esteemed as a public-minded citizen and humane philanthropist. Throughout his life he was a zealous American, and his first great public service was rendered to his native state, Maryland. During a visit to London on business in 1835, at a time when Maryland was on the verge of bankruptcy, he succeeded in negotiating a state loan of 1,600,000*l.* For this he refused the monetary reward to which he was entitled, but received the special thanks of the state assembly in 1848. Again in 1837, when American credit in England was greatly shaken, he freely used his influence and name to restore confidence; and when the United States Congress refused to support the American section of the industrial exhibition of 1851, and the English press were commenting unfavourably on the American exhibits, Peabody promptly paid for arranging and decorating the section. With a view to promoting friendly relations between England and America, he made his London residence the meeting-ground for English and American public men, and his Fourth of July dinners were important political functions. Another of his earlier services to the honour of America was his contribution of 2,000*l.*, which enabled Dr. Elisha Kane, in 1852, to fit up his expedition in search of Franklin. From this circumstance Peabody Bay has its name.

But it is as the friend of education and the reformer of the homes of the working classes that Peabody is best known. In 1852, when his native town was celebrating the centenary of its corporate existence, he gave 6,000*l.*, afterwards increased to 50,000*l.*, to found an educational institute; on the occasion of his visit to the United States in 1857 he founded the Peabody Institute at Baltimore with a gift of 60,000*l.*, afterwards increased to 200,000*l.*; and when he revisited America in 1866 he gave Harvard University a sum of 30,000*l.* to found an institute of archæology, and Yale received a similar gift from him in aid of physical science teaching. In the same year he gave 420,000*l.* for negro education in the south, and three years afterwards increased the sum to 700,000*l.* The presentation of 150,000*l.* to the city of London in 1862, to be spent for the benefit of the poor, was the beginning of a series of gifts amounting in all to 500,000*l.*, from which the 'Pea-

body Dwellings' have been built. The first block of these buildings was opened in 1864 in Spitalfields; others quickly followed in Chelsea, Bermondsey, Islington, and Shadwell.

Although many public honours were offered to him, he accepted few. In 1867 the United States Congress voted him its thanks and conferred a gold medal on him; and in the same year he accepted an address from the working men of London. The queen offered him a baronetcy and the grand cross of the Bath, both of which he declined. During Peabody's absence in America in 1869 the Prince of Wales unveiled a bronze statue of him by Story, erected on the east side of the Royal Exchange, and the city of London conferred its freedom upon him. Oxford University also made him a D.C.L. in 1867. The centenary of his birthday was commemorated in Newburyport on 18 Feb. 1895.

[Times, 5 Nov. 1869; Appleton's Journal, 21 Aug. 1869; Winthorp's Eulogy on Peabody; H. R. Fox-Bourne's English Merchants; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886, iii. 1082.] J. R. M.

**PEACH, CHARLES WILLIAM** (1800–1886), naturalist and geologist, was born at Wansford in Northamptonshire on 30 Sept. 1800, being son of Charles William Peach and his wife Elizabeth Vellum, both of a yeoman stock. The lad was educated at Wansford and Folkingham (Lincolnshire), and was appointed by the Earl of Westmorland to the revenue coastguard in January 1824. Weybourne was his first station; then, after sundry moves, he was sent to Gorran Haven in Cornwall, where he remained till 1845. He performed his duties most efficiently. They gave him opportunities for the study of natural history of which he was not slow to avail himself, and before long he became known as a keen and accurate observer. A paper read before the meeting of the British Association at Plymouth in 1841 brought him to the notice of leading men of science, who in 1844 urged Sir R. Peel to give Peach a more lucrative position. In the following year he was appointed to a place in the customs at Fowey. In 1849 he was promoted to Peterhead, and in 1853 to a higher position at Wick, retiring on a pension in 1861. After his retirement he settled in Edinburgh, where he died on 28 Feb. 1886.

He married Jemima Maleson on 26 April 1829, by whom he had seven sons (only two of whom survived, one, Benjamin Neeve Peach, F.R.S., of her majesty's geological survey) and two daughters, one of whom married George Hay, the historian, of Arbroath.

Peach's life, like that of his friend Robert Dick, was a noble instance of the pursuit of knowledge under difficulties, and of an irrepressible love of nature. For many years his income was less than 100*l.* a year; the average from the date of his appointment to his death cannot have greatly exceeded that sum. As he had not enjoyed the advantage of a scientific training, his work was that of an observer rather than of a theorist. In natural history he added largely to the knowledge of marine invertebrates, discovering many new species of sponges, cœlenterates, and molluscs; he also made valuable observations on fishes. In geology he was the first to discover fish remains in the Devonian rocks of the south-west, fossils which determined the age of the quartzites of Gorran Haven and of the Durness limestone of Sutherlandshire. In addition to this he worked much in the boulder clay of Caithness, the old red sandstone, and the carboniferous plants of Scotland, the last being more especially the occupation of his later years.

In the Royal Society's 'Catalogue of Papers' seventy-one appear under Peach's name, rather more than half being geological; they were chiefly printed in the publications of the Geological and the Polytechnic Society of Cornwall and of the Physical Society of Edinburgh. He had the happiness of feeling that his work was appreciated. Grants were made by scientific societies in aid of his work, among them from the Wollaston donation fund of the Geological Society of London. He received two medals from the Royal Cornwall Polytechnic Society, and the Neill medal from the Royal Society of Edinburgh; while his help was frequently acknowledged in the works of the leading naturalists and geologists of his time.

[Obituary notices in Nature, xxxiii. 446; Athenæum, No. 3040, p. 362; private information; Smiles's Life of Robert Dick.] T. G. B.

**PEACHAM, EDMOND** (*d.* 1616), reputed traitor, was instituted to the rectory of Hinton St. George, Somerset, on 15 July 1587. The patron was Sir Amias Paulet (1536?–1588) [q. v.] Peacham adopted puritan opinions in early life, and sympathised with the popular party in politics. In 1603 he was accused, without, apparently, any serious result, of 'uttering in a sermon seditious and railing words against the king, and more especially against his counsellors, the bishops and judges' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1603–10, p. 26). The development of James I's policy in both church and state stirred in him a deep disgust, of which he made no concealment in the pulpit. James Montagu (1568?–1618)

[q. v.], who in 1608 became his diocesan, found it necessary to mark his resentment of Peacham's plainness of speech, and reprimanded him in his consistory court. Peacham retaliated by writing a book against that court for private circulation in manuscript, and either there or in conversation he brought grave charges against his bishop's character. Before the parliament of 1614 was dissolved he came to London, apparently to arrange for the presentation of a petition against one Dr. James and other officials of the ecclesiastical courts in the diocese of Bath and Wells. When, later in the year, he was asked to subscribe to the benevolence demanded by the king, he is said to have answered, with St. Peter, 'gold and silver he had none, but that he had he would give, which was his prayers for the king.'

In December 1614 Peacham was arrested on Montagu's complaint by order of the court of high commission. He was brought to London, and was detained in the Gatehouse. On 9 Dec. he was transferred to the Tower. Ten days later he was brought to trial before the high commission court at Lambeth on a charge of libelling Montagu. He was found guilty, and was deprived of his orders.

But more serious accusations were soon brought against him. While his house was being searched for his writings against Montagu, the officers discovered some carefully prepared notes of a sermon in which the king and the government were denounced with reckless vehemence. Not only were James's ministers charged with misconduct, the king with extravagance, and the ecclesiastical courts with a tyrannical exercise of their powers, but the king's sudden death and a rebellion of the people were declared to be the probable outcome of the government's alleged misdeeds. The council treated Peacham's words as of treasonable intent. He was at once examined (December), but offered no defence, and declined all explanation. His defiant attitude suggested to the ministers' minds that he was implicated in some conspiracy in his neighbourhood. The Somerset gentry had shown exceptional unwillingness to contribute to the benevolence of 1614, and Peacham was known to be in friendly relations with many of them. The king, who bitterly resented Peacham's remarks on himself, urged the government to test their suspicions to the uttermost. But it was needful to obtain fuller information from the silent prisoner. Although the common law did not recognise the legality of torturing a prisoner to extort a confession, it was generally admitted that torture might be lawfully applied by the privy council to a prisoner who deliberately refused to surrender information in his possession respecting a plot against the life of the sovereign or the security of the government. Bacon, who was attorney-general, laid it down as a legal maxim that 'in the highest cases of treason torture is used for discovery and not for evidence' (Spedding, iii. 114)—that is to say, torture might be used to extract from a suspected conspirator information respecting the conspiracy and his fellow-plotters, although not to obtain evidence to be employed against himself. Accordingly the king issued a warrant on 18 Jan. 1614–15 to two privy councillors (Winwood and Sir Julius Cæsar), the attorney-general Bacon, Serjeant Henry Montagu, brother of the bishop of Bath and Wells, and the officers of the Tower to 'put Peacham to the manacles as in your discretion you shall see occasion if you find him obstinate and perverse, and not otherwise willing or ready to tell the truth.' Next day the torture was applied in the presence of the persons named, and he was examined 'before torture, in torture, between tortures, and after torture.' But 'nothing could be drawn from him.' He still persisted 'in his obstinate and insensible denials and former answers.' Peacham is described as an old man at the time, and the inhumanity of the proceedings was revolting.

On 21 Jan. 1614–15 Bacon wrote to James that he was 'exceedingly grieved that your majesty should be so much troubled with this matter of Peacham, whose raging devil seemeth to be turned into a dumb devil.' The council, to satisfy the king's wishes, determined to bring the prisoner to trial on a charge of high treason; but doubt was entertained whether the offence was legally entitled to that description. Bacon undertook to consult the judges separately on the point before the indictment was drawn up. The king approved the suggestion. Bacon was confident that by private persuasion he could obtain from the bench a unanimous decision in favour of the council's contention. His anticipations were realised except in the case of Coke, who protested against 'such particular and auricular taking of opinions,' and further asserted that unless a written attack on the king 'disabled his title' no charge of treason could be based upon it. The arrangements for Peacham's trial were not interrupted by Coke's want of compliance; but Peacham, perceiving that his trial meant his death, resorted to desperately dishonest expedients in order to interpose delay. He declared that Sir John Sydenham, brother-in-law of Paulet, the patron of his living, had suggested to him the objectionable words. Syden-

ham and Paulet were summoned before the council, and Peacham was re-examined; but, although Peacham continued to give mysterious hints that he was abetted by persons of influence, no evidence on the point was adduced, and Peacham fell back on a denial of the authorship of the incriminating papers (10 March 1614–15). They were by a namesake, 'a divine, a scholar, and a traveller,' who dwelt 'sometimes at Hounslow as a minister,' who had visited Hinton St. George, and had left some manuscripts in the rectory study. Peacham was apparently referring at random to the contemporary writer, Henry Peacham [q. v.]

In July Peacham was sent to Taunton to stand his trial. On 7 Aug. 1615 he was arraigned at the assizes before Sir Christopher Tanfield and Serjeant Montagu. Sir Randal Crewe, the king's serjeant, and Sir Henry Yelverton, solicitor-general, came from London to conduct the case (Yonge, *Diary*, Camd. Soc.) 'Seven knights were taken from the bench to be of the jury.' Peacham defended himself 'very simply, but obstinately and doggedly enough.' He was, however, found guilty and condemned to death. No efforts seem to have been made to carry out the sentence. On 31 Aug. he was examined anew, and, while admitting that he wrote the sermon, declared that he had no intention of publishing or preaching it. For seven months he lingered in the gaol at Taunton. On 27 March 1616 Chamberlain wrote to Carleton: 'Peacham, the condemned minister, is dead in the jail at Taunton, where, they say, he left behind him a most wicked and desperate writing, worse than that he was convicted for.'

Peacham's character demands no admiration, and his persecution would not have given him posthumous fame had not James I and Bacon by their zealous efforts to obtain his conviction raised legal controversies of high constitutional importance.

[Spedding's Life and Letters of Bacon, v. 90–128; Gardiner's Hist. of England, ii. 272–83; Hallam's Const. Hist. i. 343; State Trials, ii. 869; Dalrymple's Memorials of James I, i. 56; Cal. State Papers, 1603–6; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. ii. 426, 451.] S. L.

**PEACHAM, HENRY** (1576?–1643?), author, was born at North Mimms, Hertfordshire, about 1576. His father, Henry Peacham, after serving the cure of North Mimms, became in 1597 rector of the north mediety of the parish of Leverton, near Boston, Lincolnshire. That benefice he was still holding in 1605. The elder Peacham was a good classical scholar, and published in 1577, with a dedication to John Elmer or Aylmer [q. v.], bishop of London, 'The Garden of Eloquence, conteyning the figures of Grammar and Rhetorick, from whence maye bee gathered all manner of Flowers, Colours, Ornaments, exornations, forms, and fashions of Speech,' London, 1577 (by H. Jackson), 4to. Another edition, 'corrected and augmented,' appeared with a dedication to Sir John Puckering in 1593. The elder Peacham was also author of 'A Sermon upon the three last verses of the first chapter of Job,' London, 1590, 16mo, dedicated to Margaret Clifford, countess of Cumberland, and Anne, countess of Warwick (Lowndes).

Henry the younger went to school, first near St. Albans and afterwards in London, and as a boy he saw Dick Tarleton on the stage (*Truth of Our Times*, p. 103). Subsequently he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was admitted a scholar on 11 May 1593, along with George Ruggle [q. v.] and Thomas Comber, afterwards master of the college. He graduated B.A. in January 1594–5, and M.A. in 1598.

'Rawlie torn' from the university, and thrown on his own resources at an early age (*ib.* p. 13), he became master of the free school at Wymondham in Norfolk. He disliked the scholastic profession, but took an interest in his pupils (cf. *Thalia's Banquet*, epigrams 70 and 87). His accomplishments were far more varied than are usually found in a schoolmaster. He could make competent Latin and English verses, knew something of botany, and was, besides, a musical composer, a student of heraldry, and a mathematician, being, he says, 'ever naturally addicted to those arts and sciences which consist of proportion and number.' Moreover he could paint, draw, and engrave portraits and landscapes. While at Cambridge he made a map of the town (*Compleat Gentleman*, p. 126). Horace Walpole commends a print that he engraved of Sir Thomas Cromwell after Holbein. His first essay in literary work was a practical treatise on art. It was entitled 'Graphice, or the most auncient and excellent Art of Drawing with the Pen and Limning in Water Colours,' London, 1606, 4to, and was dedicated to Sir Robert Cotton; it passed through many editions under the new title of 'The Gentleman's Exercise,' 1607, 1612, 1634, when it was dedicated to Sir Edmund Ashfield, deputy lieutenant of Buckinghamshire. In 1610 he translated King James's 'Basilicon Doron' into Latin verse, 'and presented it, with emblemes limned in liuely colours, to Prince Henry' (cf. *Gentleman's Exercise*, 1612, p. 7). The work—a curious example of Peacham's versatility—is still extant in Harl. MS. 6855, art. 15 (38 pp.), and bears the title 'Βασιλικὸν

*Δῶρον εἰς τὰ ἐμβλήματα βασιλικά* totum versum,' in three books, dedicated to James I. The penmanship and the pen-and-ink drawings are very neat. Each emblem is subscribed by four Latin verses, and each quatrain embodies the substance of a passage from the 'Basilicon Doron,' which is supplied in a footnote in an English translation. At the end of the manuscript are the music and words of a madrigal by Peacham in four parts, entitled 'King James his quier;' the first words are 'Wake softly with singing Oriana sleeping.'

Peacham's reputation was sufficiently high in 1611 to lead Thomas Coryate [q. v.] to include four pieces of burlesque verse by him in his 'Odcombian Banquet.' In the same year he contributed verses to Arthur Standish's 'Commons' Complaint.' Next year he gave further proof of his skill as an artist by publishing 'Minerva Britanna; or a Garden of Heroical Devises, furnished and adorned with emblemes and impresa's of sundry natures, newly devised, moralized, and published by Henry Peacham, M^r^ of Artes,' London, 1612 (cf. BRYDGES, *Restituta*, ii. 148). In 1613 he displayed his loyalty in his 'Period of Mourning in memorie of the late Prince [Henry], disposed into sixe visions, with nuptiall Hymnes in honour of the marriage between Frederick, Count Palatine . . . and Elizabeth' (reprinted in Waldron's 'Literary Museum,' 1789). It is dedicated to Sir John Swinnerton, lord mayor of London, and contains both Latin and English verse.

The next two years (1613–14) Peacham spent in foreign travel. He acted for part of the time as tutor to the three elder sons of the great art collector, Thomas Howard, second earl of Arundel [q. v.], but apparently during a portion of the tour he was unaccompanied. He was always a diligent sightseer, and he made himself familiar with the chief cities of Holland, France, Italy, and Westphalia. In Italy he studied music under Orazio Vecchi of Modena (*Compleat Gentleman*, p. 102). In France he paid frequent visits to the house of M. de Ligny, an accomplished soldier and scholar, near Artois (*ib.* ded.) He visited Breda and Antwerp, and made a long stay in Leyden. One of his published epigrams is entitled 'A Lattin Distich, which a Frier of Shertogen Bosch in Brabant wrote in my Greek Testament, while I was busie perusing some Bookes in their Library' (*Thalia's Banquet*, p. 108). Another epigram (*ib.* p. 83) he addressed to a jovial host at Utrecht, where he saw much of the engraver Crispin van de Pas (cf. *ib.* p. 15). Subsequently he visited the elector's court at Heidelberg. In 1614 he was present with the army of Sir John Ogle [q. v.] at the operations in Juliers and Cleves, and in the next year published, with dedications to that general, two works which he wrote while in the Low Countries. One was 'A most true relation of the affaires of Cleves and Gulick . . . unto the breaking up of our armie in the beginning of December last past;' the second was a rambling poem, in both Latin and English, called 'Prince Henrie revived; or a poeme upon the Birth and in Honor of the Hopefull young Prince Henrie Frederick, First Sonne and Heire apparant to the most Excellent Princes, Frederick Count Palatine of the Rhine, and the Mirrour of Ladies, Princesse Elizabeth his wife,' London, 1615, 4to.

In 1615 Peacham seems to have settled at Hoxton, London (cf. *Compleat Gentleman*), and to have finally adopted the literary profession. He endeavoured to attract patrons, and the Earl of Dorset and Lord Dover viewed his efforts with favour. Meanwhile he gained admission to literary society. To Drayton, Selden, Ben Jonson, as well as to the musicians Bird and Dowland, he addressed epigrams (cf. *Thalia's Banquet*), and his intimate friends included Sir Clement Edmondes [q. v.] and Edward Wright the mathematician. He quickly established some popular reputation. In 1615, when Edmond Peacham [q. v.], the rebellious rector of Hinton St. George, was charged with having written a libel on the king, he resorted, in his defence, to the impotent device of declaring that the obnoxious work was from the pen of Peacham the traveller and author. The statement was made at random. 'The author' Peacham was described as a minister of religion, and the rector's knowledge of him obviously rested on the merest hearsay (SPEDDING, *Bacon*). In 1620 Peacham published 'Thalia's Banquet, Furnished with an hundred and odde dishes of newly devised Epigrammes. Whereunto (beside many worthy friends) are invited all that love inoffensive mirth and the muses, by H. P.,' London, 1620. In epigram 70 he notes that he has a piece of music ready for the press, 'a set of four or five partes.'

Two years later Peacham published the work by which he is best known, the 'Compleat Gentleman, fashioning him absolute in the most necessary and commendable qualities concerning minde or bodie that may be required in a noble gentleman.' The treatise was written for William Howard, Lord Arundel's youngest son, a boy of eight, to whom it is dedicated. The lad had not been Peacham's pupil; but they had met at Norwich, while the boy was a pupil of the

bishop there. The book was suggested to him by M. de Ligny of Artois, who called Peacham's attention to the defective equipment of English youths in the matter of accomplishments. It is an interesting endeavour to encourage young men to devote themselves at once to the arts and athletic exercises. A valuable survey is incidentally given of contemporary English efforts in science, art, and literature. A second impression, 'much inlarged,' appeared in 1626, and again in 1627, with an attractive chapter on fishing among other additions. This edition was reissued in 1634. A third edition, with additional notes on blazonry by Thomas Blount (1618–1679) [q. v.], is dated 1661. Dr. Johnson drew all the heraldic definitions in his dictionary from the last edition of Peacham's book.

In 1624 Peacham lamented the death of his patron, Richard Sackville, earl of Dorset, in 'An Aprill Shower.' In 1638 he dedicated to Henry Carey, earl of Dover, a collection of anecdotes, mainly from late classical authors, suggested by a work of Pancirolla. It was entitled 'The Valley of Varietie, a Discourse for the Times, containing very Learned and Rare Passages out of Antiquitie, Philosophy, and History' (London, 1638, 4to). There is an engraved frontispiece of an oak encircled by flowers. In chapter xiv. Peacham says he was living in the parish of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, and describes some incombustible flax given him by an Arab who was residing in that neighbourhood. A gossiping autobiographical tract followed in the same year, 'The Truth of our Times: revealed out of One Man's Experience by Way of Essay,' dedicated to Henry Barnwell of Terrington, near King's Lynn (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 3rd ser. xii. 221–2).

Reduced to poverty in his old age, Peacham became subject to fits of melancholy, but tempted fortune in his last years in a series of pamphlets on politics and social topics. He is also said by the herald John Gibbon to have written children's books at a penny each. His political tracts, which are of a strong royalist tone, included: 'The Duty of Subjects to their King, and Love of their Native Country in time of Extremity and Danger. In Two Books,' 4to, London, 1639, dedicated to Sir Paul Pindar; 'A Merry Discourse of Meum and Tuum, or Mine and Thine,' 4to, London, 1639; 'A Dialogue between the Crosse in Cheap and Charing Crosse . . . by Ryhen Pameach,' 1641; 'Paradox in Praise of a Dunce in Smectymnus,' 1642; and 'Square Caps turned into Round Heads, or the Bishop's Vindication and the Brownists' Conviction: a Dialogue . . . showing the Folly of one and the Worthiness of the other;' 4to, with a curious woodcut, 1642.

Of greater literary interest were: 'The Art of Living in London, or a Caution how Gentlemen, Countreymen, and Strangers, drawn by Occasion of Businesse, should dispose of themselves in the Thriftiest Way, not onely in the City, but in all other Populous Places,' 1642, 4to (reprinted in the 'Harleian Miscellany,' vol. ix.); and 'The Worth of a Peny, or a Caution to keep Money, with the Causes of the Scarcity and Misery of the Want thereof in these Hard and Merciless Times.' The latter, which was first privately issued for presentation to the author's friends, was printed originally, as internal evidence shows, in 1641, and not in 1647—the year which appears, by an error, on the title-page. It was dedicated to Richard, eldest son of Richard Gipps, one of the judges of the Guildhall, London. It discusses, without much plan, the economic condition of the country, but includes many interesting anecdotes illustrating social life. A new edition in 1664 added some biographical observations by a friend of Peacham, who knew him in the Low Countries. To a third edition in 1667 were added the bills of mortality from 1642 to 1676 (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 2nd ser. xii. 84). Another edition is dated 1695, and reprints were issued in 1814, and by Mr. Arber in his 'English Garner' (vi. 245 sq.) in 1883.

To Peacham is also doubtfully ascribed 'History of the Five Wise Philosophers, or a Wonderful Relation of the Life of Jehosophat the Hermit, son of Avenario, King of Barma in India,' 1672, with an address to the reader by Nicholas Herrick, who found the manuscript by accident (cf. *ib.* 3rd ser. xi. 217). It is quite possible, too, that Peacham, rather than Henry Parrot [q. v.], is the H. P. who published a volume of epigrams in 1608. They were published by John Helmes of St. Dunstan's Churchyard, who produced for Peacham 'Henrie revived' in 1615, and they contain at least one epigram which appears in Peacham's 'Minerva,' and is undoubtedly his.

Peacham, who was unmarried, died soon after 1641, when his 'Worth of a Peny' was first published.

[Collier's Bibl. Cat.; Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, iii. 160; Hawkins's Hist. of Music, iii. 194–5; Brydges's Censura and Restituta Lit.; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. xi. 218, 296, 407, 3rd ser. xii. 221; Cat. of Malone's Books in Bodleian Library, where the best collection of Peacham's work is preserved; Hazlitt's Bibliographical Handbook and Notes; information kindly furnished by Dr. Aldis Wright.]

PEACHELL. [See also PECHELL.]

PEACHELL, JOHN (1630–1690), master of Magdalene College, Cambridge, son of Robert Peachell or Pechell of Fillingham, Lincolnshire, was educated at Gainsborough school, and was admitted as a sizar of Magdalene on 1 Aug. 1645. His subsequent degrees were B.A. 1649, M.A. 1653, S.T.B. 1661, S.T.P. 1680. He was elected fellow on Smith's foundation in 1649, on Spendluffe's in 1651, and a foundation fellow in 1656; and acquired a considerable popularity as a staunch toper and an unswerving royalist. In 1661 Pepys spent a merry evening with him at the Rose tavern in Cambridge; but he objected to be seen walking with Peachell on account of the rubicundity of the latter's nose. This proved no bar to his preferment; in 1663 he was presented by Sir John Cutts to the rectory of Childerley, Cambridgeshire, which he resigned upon obtaining the rectory of Dry Drayton in the same county in 1681. He was also presented to the vicarage of Stanwix in Cumberland, and from 1667 to 1669 held a prebend at Carlisle (WOOD, *Fasti Oxon.* ed. Bliss, ii. 398). In 1679, moreover, Peachell became master of his college, and in 1686 vice-chancellor of the university. In the same year was issued from the university press in his name, 'Mœstissimæ ac lætissimæ Academiæ Cantabrigiensis affectus decedente Carolo II, succedente Jacobo II' (4to).

In the course of 1686 James II discovered that Dr. Lightfoot, the great rabbinical scholar, had not taken the oaths when he was admitted to his master's degree at Cambridge, and he promptly determined to take advantage of this precedent, and to furnish with royal letters patent a Roman catholic candidate for the degree, in the person of Alban Francis [q. v.], who was, says Burnet, 'an ignorant Benedictine monk.' According to Clarke, the king's idea was to familiarise those of different religions, and make them live in greater peace and unity together. However this might be, on 7 Feb. 1687 a royal letter was sent to Cambridge enjoining the admission of Francis, and on 21 Feb. this letter was laid before congregation. It was there decided that Francis should be admitted only on condition that he took the oaths. He, however, refused to be sworn, remonstrated with the officers of the university, and, finding them resolute, took horse and hastened to relate his grievance at Whitehall. Whereupon Peachell, at the urgent instance of the chief members of the senate, wrote to the Duke of Albemarle, who was then chancellor of the university, and also to the Earl of Sunderland, to beg their intercession with the king. Albemarle soon replied to Peachell that he had done his best for the university, but that in two special interviews he had only succeeded in provoking the displeasure of the king. Shortly afterwards (9 April) a summons was sent down citing the vice-chancellor and deputies of the senate (among whom was elected Mr. Isaac Newton) to appear before the ecclesiastical commissioners. When he appeared in the council-chamber on 21 April, Peachell, who, though an honest, was a very weak man, was thoroughly scared by Jeffreys, who sat at the head of the board. With some pains he got leave to prepare an answer in writing, and for the examination to be postponed for a week. He gave in his answer in writing on 27 April, and was summoned again on 7 May, when he made a lamentable exhibition of ignorance and timidity. Jeffreys began by asking what was the oath he had taken as vice-chancellor. After many evasions the unfortunate man stammered out 'that I should well and faithfully præstare or administrare munus. . . .' When other of the delegates who were more capable of defending their cause attempted to speak, they were rudely silenced. Finally Peachell was deprived both of his mastership and of the vice-chancellorship, and the deputation was contemptuously dismissed by Jeffreys with the words, 'Go your way and sin no more, lest a worse thing happen to you.' During this business Peachell stayed in town at Well Court, Bartholomew's Hospital, whence he addressed to Pepys several letters full of alarm at the situation. Shortly afterwards, however, he returned to Cambridge, and he was restored to his headship by James on 24 Oct. 1688. In the vice-chancellorship he was replaced by Dr. Balderstone, who proved a more resolute champion of the rights of the university. Peachell did not long survive the restitution of his emoluments as master of Magdalene. During a visit to Cambridge in the course of 1690 Sancroft rebuked him for setting an ill example in the university by drunkenness and ill-conduct. Peachell, says Burnet, did penance by four days' abstinence, after which he would have eaten, but could not. He was succeeded as master by Dr. Gabriel Quadring. No monument was erected over his tomb in the college chapel.

[Information from the registrary's office at Cambridge; Cole's Athenæ Cantabr. (Addit. MS. 5878, f. 116); Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Anglic. iii. 254; Woolrych's Life of Jeffreys; Macaulay's Hist. of England, chap. viii.; Pepys's Diary and Correspondence, ed. Braybrooke, 1849, i. 258, iv. 35, 454, v. 306, 324, 328; Corrie's Brief Hist. Notices of Interference of Crown with Affairs of

the Universities; Cooper's Annals of Cambridge University; Burnet's Own Time, 1838, vol. iii.; Luttrell's Brief Hist. Relation of State Affairs; Cartwright's Diary (Camden Soc.), p. 53; Howell's State Trials, xi. 1338; information kindly given by the hon. and rev. the Master of Magdalene College.] T. S.

PEACHI, JOHN (*fl.* 1690), medical writer. [See under PECHEY, JOHN.]

PEACOCK, SIR BARNES (1810–1890), judge, third son of Lewis H. Peacock, a solicitor practising in Lincoln's Inn Fields, was born in 1810. At the age of eighteen he joined the Inner Temple, but postponed his call to the bar till he had been in practice as a special pleader some five or six years. In 1836 he was called, and joined the home circuit, and presently obtained the name of a sound lawyer. He made his chief reputation as one of the counsel for O'Connell in his appeal to the House of Lords, and it was a technical objection which he suggested that led the majority of the House of Lords to allow the appeal. He pointed out that the indictment contained numerous counts and several separate charges, and that some of the counts had been held to be bad in law. Yet upon this indictment, and upon good counts and bad counts indiscriminately, one general verdict and judgment had been given. This, it is true, had been done in accordance with a practice which, however slovenly, was common, and supposed to be undoubtedly valid, but the House of Lords declared it to be a wrong practice, and that a judgment so given could not stand (see *State Trials*, new ser. vol. v.)

In spite of this success Peacock did not become a queen's counsel till 1850, when he was also elected a bencher of the Inner Temple. In 1852 he was appointed legal member of the supreme council of the viceroy at Calcutta, in succession to Drinkwater Bethune, and here, in the preparation of various codifying acts, he proved his high excellence as a jurist. He wrote an important minute on the affairs of Oudh, in which he advocated complete annexation. In 1859 he succeeded Sir James Colville in the chief-justiceship of the supreme court in Calcutta, and was knighted. He held the post, the duties of which were modified in 1862 on the constitution of the high court, until 1870. He was indefatigable in moulding the practice of his court as an appellate tribunal, and for eighteen years, with equally remarkable vigour of mind and body, worked in the plains of India with only one furlough. In 1870 he resigned and returned to England, where, in 1872, he was appointed under the act of 1871 a paid member of the judicial committee of the privy council. Here his great knowledge of Indian customs, his persevering industry, and his painstaking accuracy made him a specially useful member of the court. He was sitting to hear appeals only three days before his death, which took place, from failure of the heart, at his house, 40 Cornwall Gardens, Kensington, on 3 Dec. 1890. He was in person slight and short, an indifferent speaker, but possessing rare powers of memory and application. He was twice married; first, to Elizabeth, daughter of W. Fanning, in 1835; and then, in 1870, to Georgina, daughter of Major-general Showers, C.B.

His eldest son, FREDERICK BARNES PEACOCK (1836–1894), was born in 1836, educated at Haileybury, entered the Bengal civil service, and landed in India in February 1857. He was employed in the revenue and judicial department of the service, became registrar of the high court in 1864, was president of the committee on the affairs of the king of Oudh, officiating secretary to the board of revenue in 1871, a magistrate and collector in 1873, commissioner of the Dacca division in 1878 and of the Presidency division in 1881. In 1883 he was appointed chief secretary to the government of Bengal for the judicial, political, and appointments departments, an acting member of the board of revenue in 1884, and an actual member in 1887, and in 1890 he was made a C.S.I. and retired. He died on board the Britannia, off Sicily, in April 1894.

[See Times, 4 Dec. 1890 and 25 April 1894; Law Times, 20 Dec. 1890.] J. A. H.

PEACOCK, DMITRI RUDOLF (1842–1892), traveller and philologist, was born on 26 Sept. 1842 at the village of Shakhmanovka, district of Kozlov, in the government of Tambov, Russia, being the son of Charles Peacock, estate manager, and his wife Concordia, whose maiden name was Schlegel. He was educated at a school in England, and afterwards at the university of Moscow. On 25 Oct. 1881 he was appointed vice-consul at Batoum, which had then risen to considerable importance in consequence of its annexation by the Russians. He became consul on 27 Jan. 1890. He is said to have owed his appointments to his familiarity with the Russian language. Certainly few foreigners were better acquainted than he with the languages and customs of the mountaineers of the Caucasus, among whom he had established such friendly relations that he was admitted into their most remote fastnesses. One of the fruits of these expeditions was the pub-

lication of original vocabularies of five west Caucasian languages—Georgian, Mingrelian, Lazian, Svanetian, and Apkhazian (*Journal of Royal Asiatic Society*, 1877, pp. 145–56). Up to that time no contribution on these languages had appeared in English. On 14 Oct. 1891 Peacock was appointed consul-general at Odessa, but had only been in residence a few weeks when he died, as is reported, of Caucasian fever, the marshes which surround Batoum rendering that town very unhealthy. His death occurred on 23 May 1892 at Odessa, and he was buried in the British cemetery there. He left a widow, Tatiana *née* Bakunin, a Russian lady, and six children, three sons and three daughters. They were residing in 1894 at Diadino, in the government of Iver, in Russia. Peacock was a man of rare attainments, and left little by which the world can form a judgment of his powers. According to the 'Levantine Herald,' as quoted by the 'Athenæum,' he wrote a book on the Caucasus which was not approved by the foreign office, but his widow promised to publish it. It has not yet appeared. Travellers in the Caucasus found a hearty welcome at his house at Batoum.

[Obituary notices in the Times, 17 June 1892, and Athenæum, January–June, 1892, p. 794; information from the Foreign Office, and personal recollections.] W. R. M.

PEACOCK, GEORGE (1791–1858), mathematician and dean of Ely, was fifth and youngest son of Thomas Peacock, for fifty years perpetual curate of Denton in the parish of Gainford, near Darlington. George was born on 9 April 1791 at Thornton Hall, Denton, where his father resided and kept a school. As a boy he was more remarkable for a bold spirit and active habits of body than for love of study. In January 1808, when nearly seventeen years old, he was sent to the school at Richmond kept by the Rev. James Tate, formerly fellow of Sidney-Sussex College, Cambridge, then at the height of its reputation. There his talents speedily developed. His schoolfellow and friend, Charles (afterwards archdeacon) Musgrave, bears witness that Peacock 'made himself a sound scholar in Greek and Latin, and in this branch of study, as well as in mathematics, was looked up to as an authority by his fellow-students' (*Gent. Mag.* 1859, pt. i. p. 426). He always frankly acknowledged his obligations to Tate, and dedicated his 'Algebra' to him. In the summer of 1809, before proceeding to Cambridge, he read with John Brass of Richmond, then an undergraduate, and afterwards fellow, of Trinity College.

Peacock's name was entered on the books of Trinity College as a sizar on 21 Feb. 1809, and he came into residence in the following October. He was elected scholar of his college on 12 April 1812. In the summer of that year he read mathematics at Lowestoft with Adam Sedgwick [q. v.], with whom he maintained a lifelong friendship. He graduated B.A. in 1813, being placed second wrangler in the mathematical tripos, and he afterwards gained the second Smith's prize. In both examinations Sir John Frederick William Herschel [q. v.] was first. In the following year (1814) Peacock was elected fellow of his college. He proceeded M.A. in 1816.

Peacock was appointed a lecturer in mathematics in Trinity College in 1815, and in 1823 tutor, jointly with Robert Wilson Evans [q. v.] From 1835 till 1839 he was sole tutor. His success both as a lecturer and a tutor was very great. He possessed great knowledge, a clear intellect, and a power of luminous exposition, joined to a gift of sympathy with, and interest in, his pupils, which, at that time, was not cultivated in the university. His friend and former pupil, Canon Thompson, said of him, in the sermon which he preached in Ely Cathedral on the Sunday after his funeral, that 'his inspection of his pupils was not minute, far less vexatious, but it was always effectual. . . . His insight into character was remarkable, and, though he had decided preferences in favour of certain qualities and pursuits over others, he was tolerant of tendencies with which he could not sympathise, and would look on the more harmless vagaries of young and active minds rather as an amused spectator than as a stern censor and critic' (Thompson, *Funeral Sermon*, p. 13).

In politics a whig, Peacock was a zealous advocate for progress and reform in the university. While still an undergraduate he became convinced of the necessity of introducing analytical methods and the differential notation into the mathematical course. This had been already suggested without effect by Robert Woodhouse [q. v.] Peacock, Herschel, and Babbage used to breakfast together on Sunday mornings, and as early as 1812 agreed to found an analytical society, so as 'to leave the world better than they found it' (*Life of J. F. W. Herschel*, p. 263). This society hired a meeting-room, open daily; held meetings, read papers, discussed them, and published a volume of transactions. A translation of Lacroix's work on the 'Differential and Integral Calculus' was published at Cambridge in 1816, with appendices or 'notes,' as they are called, the first twelve of

which were written by Peacock. In 1816–17 he held the office of moderator, and introduced the symbols of differentiation into the papers set in the senate-house. This innovation was regarded with a good deal of disfavour (cf. TODHUNTER, *Life of Whewell*, ii. 16). Peacock himself, nothing daunted, wrote to a friend on 17 March 1817: 'I shall never cease to exert myself to the utmost in the cause of reform. It is by silent perseverance only that we can hope to reduce the many-headed monster of prejudice, and make the university answer her character as the loving mother of good learning and science' (*Proceedings of the Royal Society*, 1859, p. 538). His expectations were realised. He was moderator in 1818–19, and again in 1820–1, so that he had ample opportunities for carrying further the reform he had inaugurated. His reputation as a philosophic mathematician was greatly increased by the publication of his 'Algebra' in 1830.

Abstract science, however, was only one of the subjects to which he devoted himself. In 1817 he was one of the syndics for building the new observatory; in 1819 he took part in the establishment of the Philosophical Society; between 1831 and 1835 he warmly espoused the scheme for rebuilding the university library on an enlarged scale, and specially recommended the design by Charles Robert Cockerell [q. v.], in defence of which he wrote three pamphlets; in 1832 he interested himself in the new building for the university press; and in 1835 was a member of the syndicate for building the Fitzwilliam Museum. During these years he gradually became one of the most popular and influential of the resident members of the senate. The measures he advocated were not always palatable; but the charm of his manner, his exquisite courtesy, his consideration for those who differed with him, generally enabled him to carry his point without either losing a friend or exasperating an opponent.

Peacock's scientific attainments were quickly recognised. He was made F.R.S. in 1818, and in 1836 he was elected to the Lowndean professorship of astronomy, then in the gift of certain high officers of the crown. For this office Whewell was also a candidate. Peacock was Lowndean professor until his death, although he soon treated the office as a sinecure. He at first lectured on practical and theoretical astronomy; afterwards, by arrangement with his colleague of the Plumian chair, on geometry and analysis. But the attendance, at first large, gradually fell off, and in later years he practically ceased to lecture. In 1838 and 1843 he was appointed a member of the commission for the restoration of the standards of weight and measure destroyed by the burning of the houses of parliament. The commission was indebted to him for many valuable suggestions.

In 1839 he was made dean of Ely. He at once removed thither, and threw himself, with characteristic energy, into the duties of his new office. The cathedral was sorely in need of repair, little or nothing having been done to it since James Essex [q. v.] had altered its internal arrangements in the last century. Peacock persuaded the chapter to undertake a complete restoration of the fabric. He was ably seconded by Professor Willis and other archæologists, and by the professional skill of Sir George Gilbert Scott [q. v.]; but his own energy and zeal carried the work through, and by his personal exertions a large sum was raised by subscription. He also interested himself in the condition of the city of Ely. He got an improved system of drainage carried out, notwithstanding bitter opposition, and he did much for the education of the middle classes and the poor. He also took an enlightened interest in the affairs of the church at large, and was chosen in 1841 prolocutor of the Lower House of Convocation, an office which he held till 1847. He served again from 1852 to 1857, when failing health compelled him to resign.

In 1841 he published a work on 'The Statutes of the University.' The Elizabethan statutes, by which it was then governed, were there carefully analysed, and the distinction shown between their prescriptions and existing practice. Finally, a scheme was set forth for future adoption, in which many of the changes since introduced were foreshadowed. When, in 1850, the government decided to appoint a royal commission of inquiry, he became one of the commissioners; and in 1855 he was also a member of the parliamentary commission for making new statutes for the university and colleges. Both these commissions were greatly disliked in the university. The report of the first, published in 1852, was so conciliatory that the commissioners recovered much of their personal popularity; but the draft statutes for the colleges of Trinity and St. John's were condemned by both conservatives and liberals. It was generally believed that Peacock, from his recognised influence with the commissioners, was responsible for all that was most obnoxious. He was, in fact, in favour of compromise and conciliation, but thought it his duty to shield, at cost to his own reputation, the real author of the offensive statutes.

In 1855 he published a memoir of Dr. Thomas Young [q.v.], on which he had been engaged for more than twenty years. There appeared at the same time a collected edition of Dr. Young's works in three volumes, for the first two of which Peacock was responsible. This work, notwithstanding the long delay in its appearance, was warmly commended as a model of scientific biography.

Peacock's health had been failing for many years, but in 1848 he derived temporary benefit from a visit to Madeira. He died on 8 Nov. 1858, and was buried in the cemetery at Ely.

Peacock married, in 1847, Frances Elizabeth, second daughter of William Selwyn, Q.C. He left no children.

He was the author of the following works: 1. 'Collection of Examples of the Applications of the Differential and Integral Calculus,' Cambridge, 1820, 8vo. 2. 'Arithmetic: Encyclopædia Metropolitana,' 1825–6. 3. 'A Treatise on Algebra,' Cambridge, 1830, 8vo. 4. 'Observations on the Plans for the New Library, &c. By a Member of the First Syndicate,' Cambridge, 1831, 8vo. 5. 'Remarks on the Replies to the Observations,' &c., Cambridge, 1831, 8vo. 6. 'Syllabus of a Course of Lectures upon Trigonometry, and the application of Algebra to Geometry,' Cambridge, 1833, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1836. 7. 'On the recent Progress of certain branches of Analysis' (British Association Reports, 1834). 8. 'Observations upon the Report made by a Syndicate appointed to confer with the architects who were desired to furnish . . . designs for a new library,' Cambridge, 1835, 8vo. 9. 'Remarks on the suggestions [of Standard Commission]. In a letter addressed to Mr. Airy 16 Jan. 1841.' 10. 'Remarks on the Decimal Nomenclature of Coins, Weights, and Measures, and other points connected with the subject,' 24 Feb. 1841. 11. 'A Treatise on Algebra,' 2 vols. Cambridge, 1842–5, 8vo. 12. 'Upon the Probable Influence of a Repeal of the Corn Laws upon the trade in Corn,' London, 1846, 8vo. 13. 'Some Observations upon the Episcopal and Capitular Estates Bill proposed by Lord Blandford 20 Dec. 1854,' Cambridge, 1855, 8vo. 14. 'Life of Thomas Young, M.D.,' London, 1855, 8vo. 15. 'Oratio habita in Camera Hierosolymitana Ecclesiæ Divi Petri Westmonasteriensis xii° Nov. 1852,' Cambridge, 1859, 4to.

[Obituary notices of Royal Society, Proceedings, 1859, pp. 536–43; Gent. Mag. 1859, pp. 426–8; Fraser's Magazine, 1858, pp. 741–6; Babbage's Passages from the Life of a Philosopher, London, 1864, p. 29; Edinb. Review, Oct. 1837, p. 114; Ball's History of the Study of Mathematics at Cambridge, 8vo, 1889, pp. 119–121, 124; personal knowledge.] J. W. C–k.

**PEACOCK, GEORGE** (1805–1883), sea captain and shipowner, born in 1805 at Starcross, near Exeter, was son of Richard George Peacock, a master in the navy, who had served with Sir Alexander Cochrane [q.v.] in the West Indies, and with Thomas, lord Cochrane, afterwards tenth earl of Dundonald [q.v.] After the peace his father owned and commanded ships trading to the Mediterranean and Brazil, and young Peacock served his apprenticeship with him, rising gradually to command a ship on a voyage to the Pacific. In 1828 he entered the navy as second master of the steamer Echo, employed in surveying the lower Thames. In the next year he went out to the West Indies in the Winchester, and in March 1831 was appointed acting-master of the Magnificent, from which he exchanged into the Hyacinth as a sea-going ship. While in the Hyacinth he surveyed the harbour of San Juan de Nicaragua, his chart of which, with later corrections, is still in use. He also, in an official letter, pointed out the advantages of the route across the isthmus from San Juan, and recommended Colon, then known as Victor Cove, as a terminus for a railway. He seems to have persuaded himself that in this he made an original discovery; but the routes he recommended were known to the Spaniards from the earliest times, and in after years to Drake, Morgan, and the later buccaneers. On 21 Sept. 1835 Peacock was confirmed as master of the Medea steamer in the Mediterranean, and, while serving on the coast of Greece, made a survey of the isthmus of Corinth, marking the line of a possible canal. A copy of this he presented to the Greek government, in acknowledgment of which the king of Greece in 1882 conferred on him the order of the Redeemer of Greece; at the time, however, in 1836, King Otho, paying a visit to the Medea, presented Peacock with a gold snuff-box.

In 1838, being then master of the Andromache, Peacock surveyed and buoyed the harbours of Charlotte-town and Three-rivers in Prince Edward Island. In 1840 he applied to be appointed to the Blenheim, then going to China; his application was refused, and, being offered the command of the steamers of the newly constituted Pacific Steam Navigation Company, he resigned his warrant in the navy. He superintended the building and equipment of the steamers, and himself commanded the first that went out, which he took through the Strait of Magellan. For the next five years he acted as the company's

marine superintendent, and claimed to have during this time laid down buoys, erected beacons, built a lighthouse, surveyed harbours, opened and worked coal-mines, discovered new guano-beds, suggested railways, and brought the first regular mails from Valparaiso to Panama. In 1846 he returned to England, and seems to have been busy for the next two years in carrying out experiments with an anti-fouling composition for the bottoms of iron ships, for the manufacture of which he started a company in 1848, under the style of Peacock & Buchan. In 1848 he accepted an appointment as dock-master at Southampton, the title of which office was afterwards changed to superintendent of the docks. He held this till 1858, when he retired to Starcross, and carried on business there as a shipowner.

In 1859 he vainly memorialised the admiralty with a view to having his name reinstated on the list of masters. He printed the memorial, letters, and certificates, under the title of 'Official Correspondence.' In 1860 he commanded an unsuccessful expedition, under the patronage of Napoleon III, for the discovery of 'nitrates' in the Sahara, the idea being, apparently, that they were the natural concomitants of sandy desert. In 1873 he took out a patent for chain cables of a specified pattern, in connection with which he published 'A Treatise on Ships' Cables, with the History of Chains, their Use and Abuse' (cr. 8vo). He wrote many other pamphlets, among which may be named 'The Resources of Peru . . .' (cr. 8vo, 1874), which ran through four editions within six months; 'On the Supply of Nitrate of Soda and Guano from Peru, with the History of their first Introduction into this Country' (cr. 8vo, 1878); 'Notes on the Isthmus of Panama and Darien;' 'The Guinea, or Gold Coast of Africa, the veritable Ophir of Scripture.' He died on 6 June 1883, in the house of his son-in-law, Henry Cookson of Liverpool, and was buried at Starcross.

[His own pamphlets, especially the Official Correspondence; information from the family.]

J. K. L.

PEACOCK, JAMES (*d.* 1653), vice-admiral, appears to have been a merchant and sea captain, whose native place was Ipswich. He is first mentioned as captain of the Warwick frigate for the parliament, and commanding a squadron of ships-of-war in the North Sea in the summer of 1647. In December he was moved into the Tiger, and continued on the same service till December 1649. During this time he made several prizes, apparently royalist privateers hailing from Jersey or from Ireland; convoyed the trade from Elsinore, and was repeatedly warned to station vessels near the Orkney Islands, to surprise Irish pirates, or on the coast of Norfolk, from Cromer to Lynn, to look out for 'pickaroons,' 'pilfering sea-rovers.' In June 1648 he assisted in the siege of Colchester by blockading the river. In September 1649 he was looking out for a ship from Amsterdam laden with arms for the Duke of Montrose. In 1650 the Tiger was one of a squadron sent to the Mediterranean under Vice-admiral Edward Hall in charge of convoy and for the security of trade against pirates and the royalist privateers, and also with letters of reprisal against the French. In January 1650–1 Peacock was awarded a gold chain and medal of the value of 50*l.* for services at sea; at the same time 50*l.* was ordered to be paid in gratuities to the officers and men of the Tiger. In October 1651 the Tiger arrived in the Thames, and was ordered to be paid off. The order was apparently annulled, for in January 1651–2, still commanded by Peacock, she was sent to Leith with 80,000*l.* for the army. Afterwards she seems to have captured sundry small pirate vessels, the men of which were lodged in Ipswich gaol.

On 23 May 1652, on the news of the action off Folkestone on the 19th [see BLAKE, ROBERT], the Tiger, then in the Thames, was ordered to the Downs. Shortly afterwards she was cruising in the North Sea, and, in company with another frigate, engaged two Dutch men-of-war. On 10 June the council of state wrote to the generals to signify to Peacock 'their acceptance' of his 'worthy deportment.' On 18 Oct. Peacock reported his arrival at Yarmouth with twenty prizes. A month later he was appointed to command a squadron going to the Mediterranean to reinforce Richard Badiley [q. v.], but the defeat of Blake on 30 Nov. prevented his sailing. On 4 Dec. he was ordered to go to the Downs with any ships-of-war ready in the river; on the 7th he was told that he should have a better ship; shortly afterwards he was moved into the Rainbow, and in the following February was appointed vice-admiral of the white squadron, in which capacity he took part in the great battle off Portland on 18 Feb., and in the pursuit of the Dutch fleet as far as Gris-nez. In March Peacock was moved again to the Triumph, and in the action of 2–3 June 1653 was vice-admiral of the red squadron, as also in the concluding action of the war, 29–31 July, when he was mortally wounded.

Peacock died a few days later. He left a widow and five children, to whom parliament voted a gratuity of 750*l.*, vested in

trustees belonging to Ipswich, where they desired that the money might be paid.

[Calendars of State Papers, Dom. ; Granville Penn's Memoirs of Sir William Penn.]

J. K. L.

PEACOCK, JAMES (1738?–1814), architect, born about 1738, became assistant to George Dance the younger [q. v.] when Dance was appointed architect and surveyor to the city of London at Guildhall. He retained his post for 'nearly 45 years,' and was also employed by Dance in his private practice. Finsbury Square (1777–1791) was a result of their joint labours, and at No. 17 Peacock himself lived and died. His former residence was at Coleman Street Buildings. In 1801–2 Peacock designed the first Stock Exchange in Capel Court, and he 'restored and preserved' St. Stephen's, Walbrook. There is also a drawing by him in the King's collection, British Museum, of the elevation of the Mines Royal, Dowgate Hill. Peacock published a few books connected with his professional studies. These were 'Oikidia,' a little tract containing plans for houses, London, 1785, 8vo, published under the pseudonym of Jose Mac Packe ; 'A new Method of Filtration by Ascent,' London, 1793, 4to ; and 'Subordinates in Architecture,' London, 1814, 4to. He also contributed 'An Account of Three Simple Instruments for Drawing Architecture and Machinery in Perspective,' printed in the 'Philosophical Transactions' for 1785.

Peacock was also interested in economic and social problems, and his treatises on these subjects, small as they are, are more remarkable than his architectural works. His 'Outlines of a Scheme for the General Relief, Instruction, Employment, and Maintenance of the Poor' was published in 1777 (cf. *London Review of English and Foreign Literature*, viii. 156), and is described by Peacock as 'an imperfect and crude performance' in another tract entitled 'Proposals for a Magnificent and Interesting Establishment,' London, 1790, 8vo. In 1789 he published 'Superior Politics,' and in 1798 'The Outlines of a Plan for establishing a United Company of British Manufacturers.' All of these tracts set forth, with various modifications, Peacock's main project of 'giving protection and suitable incitement, encouragement, and employ to every class of the destitute, ignorant, and idle poor who shall be healthy, able to work, and willing to conform . . . to such . . . regulations as the company shall enact, and which are intended to be of mutual benefit and advantage to the company and the workpeople, and eventually so to society at large.' Peacock asserts that 'very considerable use has been made of the original thoughts' in his two earlier pamphlets by several writers, and refers to the first two reports of the Philanthropic Society, which was a flourishing and important institution.

Besides these published works, Peacock wrote a folio volume, still in manuscript, and preserved in the Soane Museum, on 'Terms of Contracts for Bricklayers', Slaters', and Joiners' Works, on the Peace Establishment, for the Service of the Board of Ordnance.' He died on 22 Feb. 1814, 'universally beloved and respected,' 'in his seventy-ninth year,' according to the 'Gentleman's Magazine ;' but according to the tombstone in the back cemetery of St. Luke's, Old Street, he was in his seventy-sixth year.

[Dict. of Architecture ; Gent. Mag. 1814, pt. i. p. 411 ; Peacock's Works ; London Review ; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

L. B.

PEACOCK, JOHN MACLEAY (1817–1877), verse-writer, son of William Peacock, was born on 31 March 1817 at Kincardine, Perthshire, the seventh of eight children. While his family was young the father died, and the struggle for existence became severe. Peacock was sent to work at a very early age, first at a tobacco factory, and afterwards at some bleaching works. Ultimately he was apprenticed to boiler-making, and this became his trade. Commercial fluctuations, and a strong natural disposition to travel, took him in the course of his lifetime to many parts of the world. Thus he gathered knowledge which went far to compensate for the want of school-training. He became a man of wide information, and a clear and original thinker. In both politics and religion he was always radical. He shared actively in the chartist movement, and afterwards, for many years, until his death, was an energetic secularist. For a considerable period he was employed at Laird's iron shipbuilding works, Birkenhead, where the Alabama was built; but this did not prevent him from openly advocating the cause of the north in the American civil war. Undoubtedly his outspokenness helped to keep him poor. Physically he was delicate, and, his occupation being arduous, in middle life his health failed ; thenceforward he only earned a precarious income, chiefly as a newsvendor. He died in Glasgow of heart disease on 4 May 1877.

If Peacock's worldly circumstances had been better, or his disposition less modest, he might have become more famous, for wherever his work was known it was highly valued. At Birkenhead, at the Shakespeare tercentenary (1864), he was considered the

most fitting person in the town to plant the memorial oak-tree. He directed much vigorous verse against what he regarded as theological superstition and political tyranny; but his finest poetical work was of a contemplative kind. Three volumes of his poems have been published, viz.: 'Poems and Songs' (1864), 'Hours of Reverie' (1867), and a selection of published and unpublished verse (to which is prefixed a portrait of Peacock), edited by the present writer for the benefit of the widow in 1880.

[Prefaces to Works and private information.] W. L.

PEACOCK, LUCY (*fl.* 1815), bookseller and author, kept a shop in Oxford Street, and wrote tales for children, for the most part anonymously. Among the earliest of these were 'The Adventures of the Six Princesses of Babylon in their Travels to the Temple of Virtue: an allegory' (1785; 3rd edit. 1790), and 'The Rambles of Fancy, or Moral and Interesting Tales' (2 vols., 1786). In the following years she contributed to the 'Juvenile Magazine' similar tales, which were reissued in 'Friendly Labours, or Tales and Dramas for the Amusement and Instruction of Youth' (Brentford, 1815). Other of her publications were: 'The Knight of the Rose' (1793; 2nd edit. 1807); 'The Visit for a Week' (1794; 7th edit. 1812), which was translated into French in 1817 by J. E. Le Febvre; 'Emily, or the Test of Sincerity' (1816); and 'The Little Emigrant: a Tale' (4th edit. 1820).

Miss Peacock also translated from the French 'Ambrose and Eleanor, or the Adventures of Two Children deserted on an Uninhabited Island' (1796, 1812, by R. and L. Peacock), an adaptation of 'Fanfan et Lolotte;' Veyssière de la Croze's 'Grammaire Historique' (1802), and 'Abrégé Chronologique de l'Histoire Universelle' (1807).

[Literary Memoirs of Living Authors of Great Britain, 1798; Dict. of Living Authors, 1816; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Allibone's Dict. of Engl. Lit.] G. Le G. N.

PEACOCK, REGINALD (1395?–1459?), bishop of Chichester. [See PECOCK.]

PEACOCK, THOMAS (1516?–1582?), president of Queens' College, Cambridge, born at Cambridge, about 1516, was son of Thomas Peacock, burgess of Cambridge, whose will, dated 1528, was proved in the court of the archdeacon of Ely in 1541. He was admitted fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1534, and graduated B.A. 1534–5, M.A. 1537, and B.D. 1554. He adhered to the old religion; and in the disturbance in St. John's College leading to the visitation by Thomas Goodrich [q. v.], the protestant bishop of Ely, on 5 April 1542, Peacock was one of the appellants (BAKER, *Hist. of St. John's*, p. 116). He subsequently became chantry priest in St. Lawrence's Church, Ipswich, and rector of Nacton, and from 23 April 1554 to 1556 was prebendary of Norwich. On 1 April 1555 he signed the Roman catholic articles promoted by Dr. Atkynson and others (LAMB, *Cambr. Documents*, p. 175), and on 25 Oct. Thirlby, bishop of Ely, whose chaplain he was, presented him to the rectory of Downham, Cambridge. In 1556 he exchanged his Norwich prebend for one in Ely Cathedral. On the occasion of Cardinal Pole's visitation of the university (11 Jan. 1556–7) Peacock preached in Latin before the visitors in St. Mary's Church, 'inveighing against heresyes and heretyckes as Bylney, Cranmer, Latimer, Ridley, &c.' (FOXE, *Acts and Monuments*, viii. 266). On 31 Jan. 1558 he was presented by the bishop of Ely to the rectory of Burley in Hertfordshire, and on 23 Nov. of the same year was elected president of Queens' College, Cambridge.

Refusing to comply with the change of religion at the accession of Elizabeth, he lost all his preferments. He resigned the presidency of Queens' College on 1 July 1559, in order to avoid expulsion. He made various benefactions to the churchwardens of the parish of Holy Trinity (cf. *Reports of the Charity Commissioners*, xxxi. 72) and to the corporation of Cambridge. He died about 1582 (see COOPER, *Annals of Cambr.* ii. 366).

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr.; Blomefield's Norfolk, ii. 666; Cooper's Annals of Cambr. ii. 114, 366; James Bentham's Hist. and Antiq. of the Conventual and Cathedral Church of Ely, p. 260; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 80; Rob. Clutterbuck's Hertfordshire, iii. 385; Addit. MS. 5808, p. 138; Cotton MS., Titus, c. x. 6; Baker's Hist. St. John's College, pp. 116, 335; Browne Willis's Cathedrals, ii. 387; State Papers, Dom., Eliz. 16 March 1559; Charity Comm. Reports, xxxi. 30, 72; Baker MS. xxx. 218, 253, 266.] W. A. S.

PEACOCK, THOMAS BEVILL, M.D. (1812–1882), physician, son of Thomas Peacock and his wife Sarah Bevill, members of the Society of Friends, was born at York on 21 Dec. 1812. At the age of nine he was sent to the boarding-school of Mr. Samuel Marshall at Kendal, where he remained till apprenticed to John Fothergill, a medical practitioner at Darlington. In 1833 he came to London, entered as a student of medicine at University College, also attending the surgical practice of St. George's Hospital,

and in 1835 became a member of the College of Surgeons and a licentiate of the Society of Apothecaries. He then travelled for his health, twice visiting Ceylon, and studying for a time at Paris. He spent 1838 as house-surgeon to the hospital at Chester, and in 1841 went to Edinburgh, where in 1842 he took the degree of M.D. In 1844 he was admitted a licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians of London, and in 1849 was elected assistant physician to St. Thomas's Hospital. In 1850 he was elected a fellow of the College of Physicians, and in 1865 delivered the Croonian lectures there on 'Some of the Causes and Effects of Valvular Disease of the Heart.' A dispensary which he began in Liverpool Street, London, ultimately grew into the present Victoria Park Hospital for diseases of the chest, to which he was physician from its foundation, and where he did much excellent clinical work. He lectured at St. Thomas's Hospital, first on materia medica and then on medicine, and worked hard in its school. He was one of the founders of the Pathological Society of London in 1846, and was a very frequent contributor to its 'Transactions.' He was its secretary in 1850, vice-president 1852–6, and president in 1865 and 1866. In 1848 he published a valuable monograph 'On the Influenza or Epidemic Catarrh of 1847–8,' and in 1866 a treatise 'On Malformations of the Human Heart,' which is still the best English book on the subject. These, with his Croonian lectures and a small book 'On the Prognosis in Cases of Valvular Disease of the Heart,' published in 1877, are his most important separate publications. They contain numerous accurate observations, related with precision and many useful conclusions, though a want of generalisation detracts somewhat from their value as additions to science. It was perhaps this which prevented his election on the single occasion when he was a candidate for the fellowship of the Royal Society. He would not allow himself to be again nominated, but the society could hardly have found in London a man more deserving of honour as a disinterested and accurate observer in the laborious field of morbid anatomy. All his numerous papers in the 'Transactions' of the Medico-Chirurgical Society and of the Pathological Society, in the 'Monthly Journal of Medical Science,' the 'British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review,' the 'Transactions' of the Clinical Society, and the St. Thomas's Hospital 'Reports,' are worth reading, and contain material often used with just confidence by later investigators. The College of Surgeons gave him a gold medal in recognition of his valuable additions to their museum. In 1850 he married Cornelia Walduck, also a member of the Society of Friends, who died childless in 1869. He was fond of travelling, and in his holidays visited both North and South America, as well as the coasts of the Mediterranean. He lived at 20 Finsbury Circus in London, a region where many physicians resided in the second quarter of this century. He had an attack of left hemiplegia in 1877, but recovered from the paralysis, and saw patients and attended at the Pathological Society, though obviously shattered. In 1881 he had a slight attack of right hemiplegia, from which he also recovered. On 30 May 1882, while walking in St. Thomas's Hospital, he became suddenly unconscious, fell in one of the corridors, was carried into a ward which was formerly under his own care, and died there the next morning, without having recovered consciousness.

[Lancet, 17 June, 1882; Memoir by Sir J. Marshall in Medico-Chirurgical Transactions, 1883; St. Thomas's Hospital Reports, new ser. vol. xi.; Works; private information.] N. M.

PEACOCK, THOMAS LOVE (1785–1866), novelist, poet, and official of the East India Company, was born at Weymouth, Dorset, on 18 Oct. 1785. His father, Samuel Peacock, who left him an orphan at the age of three, was a glass merchant in London; his mother, Sarah Love, was daughter of Thomas Love, master in the navy, who had lost a leg in Rodney's great victory over De Grasse in 1782. Mrs. Peacock, a woman of vigorous character, who sympathised with her son's literary pursuits, went to live with her father at Chertsey, and Peacock received his education at a school kept by a Mr. Wicks at Englefield Green. At sixteen he removed with his mother to London, and was engaged in some mercantile occupation, which he did not long prosecute. His time was employed in study, without apparently any ulterior object, and he made himself an excellent classical scholar and a proficient in French and Italian. His means allowed him to publish in 1804 and 1806 two small volumes of poetry, 'The Monks of St. Mark' and 'Palmyra.' In 1807 he contracted an engagement with a young lady unnamed, broken off, it is stated, 'through the underhand interference of a third person,' an event speedily followed by the young lady's marriage to another, and her death. Peacock's grief was not demonstrative, but its sincerity is attested by some beautiful lines written as late as 1842. In the winter of 1808–9 he officiated as secretary to Sir Home Riggs

Popham [q. v.] on board the fleet before Flushing, an uncongenial situation which his friends had probably procured for him, in the hopes of its leading to a permanent appointment. Still an idle man, though always an industrious student, he spent a great part of 1810 and 1811 in North Wales, publishing meanwhile, in 1810, a new and more ambitious poetical effort, 'The Genius of the Thames.' While in Wales he made the acquaintance of his future wife, Jane Gryffydh, whose personality and family relations he seems to have shadowed forth in his fragmentary romance, 'Sir Calidore.' The heroines of his other fictions are commonly adumbrations of his early love. In 1812 he published another poem, 'The Philosophy of Melancholy,' and in the same year was introduced to Shelley by his publisher, Thomas Hookham, then proprietor of an extensive circulating library, who lent books to Shelley and sold them for Peacock. There is no trace for some time of any peculiar closeness of intimacy, but in the winter of 1813 Peacock accompanied Shelley and Harriet on their visit to Edinburgh, which he is said to have prompted. In 1814, in which year Peacock published a satirical ballad, 'Sir Proteus,' which appeared under the pseudonym 'P. M. O'Donovan, Esq.,' Shelley resorted to him during the agitation of mind which preceded his separation from Harriet, and after his return from the continent Peacock was an almost daily visitor. By the time that Shelley had taken up his residence at Bishopsgate, near Windsor (September 1815), Peacock had settled at Great Marlow, and spent great part of the winter in visiting Shelley. When Shelley settled at Great Marlow, after his return from the continent in the autumn of 1816, Peacock's intimacy with him continued very close; but, as Peacock still declined to follow any profession ('he seems an idly inclined man,' writes Charles Clairmont; 'indeed, he is professedly so in the summer'), it is not surprising that Shelley's munificence had to be resorted to. Peacock for a time received from Shelley a pension, which he may have more than repaid if, as Miss Mitford affirms, he was put into requisition to keep off wholly unauthorised intruders upon Shelley's hospitable household. Peacock was consulted respecting the alterations in Shelley's 'Laon and Cythna,' and Peacock's enthusiasm for Greek poetry undoubtedly exercised a most beneficial influence upon the poet. Something of Shelley's influence upon Peacock may be traced in the latter's poem of 'Rhododaphne, or the Thessalian Spell,' published in 1818; it is much superior to his other elaborate compositions, and Shelley wrote a eulogistic review of it just before his final departure for Italy. The friends' agreement for mutual correspondence produced Shelley's magnificent descriptive letters from Italy, which otherwise might never have been written.

Peacock had meanwhile discovered the true field for his literary gift in the satiric novel, interspersed with delightful lyrics, amorous, narrative, or convivial. 'Headlong Hall' was published in 1816, 'Melincourt' in 1817, 'Nightmare Abbey' in 1818. 'Calidore' was begun about this time, but never completed. These brilliant prose extravaganzas, overflowing with humour both of dialogue and situation, obtained a certain vogue. 'Headlong Hall' went through two editions; 'Melincourt' was translated into French. They cannot, however, have been productive of much profit.

Peacock told Shelley that 'he did not find this brilliant summer,' of 1818, 'very favourable to intellectual exertion;' but before it was quite over 'rivers, castles, forests, abbeys, monks, maids, kings, and banditti were all dancing before me like a masked ball.' He was, in fact, writing his romance of 'Maid Marian,' which he had completed with the exception of the last three chapters when, at the beginning of 1819, he was unexpectedly summoned to London to undergo a probation for an appointment in the India House. The East India Company had seen the necessity of reinforcing their staff with men of talent, and had summoned to their service James Mill and three others, among whom Peacock was included at the recommendation of Peter Auber, the historian of the company. His test papers earned the high commendation, 'Nothing superfluous and nothing wanting.' The amount of his entrance salary is not stated, but it justified him in marrying in the following year 'his Carnarvonshire nymph,' Jane Gryffydh, daughter of the vicar of Elwys Vach, whom he had thought in 1811 'the most innocent, the most amiable, the most beautiful girl in existence,' but whom he had never seen since. He proposed by letter, and was accepted. 'The affair,' remarked Shelley, 'is extremely like the dénouement of one of your own novels.' His mother continued to live with him in Stamford Street, Blackfriars; a few years later he acquired a country residence at Lower Halliford, near Shepperton, Middlesex, constructed out of two old cottages, where he could gratify the love of the Thames, which was with him as strong a partiality as his zest for classical literature. In 1820 he contributed to Ollier's 'Literary Pocket Book' 'The Four Ages of Poetry,' which provoked Shelley's 'Defence of Poetry.'

The official duties of the India House delayed the completion and publication of 'Maid Marian' until 1822, and the delay occasioned its being taken for an imitation of 'Ivanhoe,' although its composition had, in fact, preceded Scott's novel. It was almost immediately dramatised by Planché.

Peacock's life from this period is almost devoid of any but official and literary incidents. He displayed great ability in business and in the drafting of official papers. In 1829 he began to devote attention to steam navigation, and drew up a valuable memorandum for General Chesney's Euphrates expedition, which was praised both by Chesney and Lord Ellenborough. He opposed the employment of steamers on the Red Sea, but this was probably in deference to the supposed interests of the company. In 1839 and 1840 war steamers were constructed under his superintendence which doubled the Cape, and took an honourable part in the Chinese war. He frequently appeared as the company's champion before parliamentary committees, especially in 1834, when he resisted James Silk Buckingham's claim to compensation for his expulsion from the East Indies, and in 1836, when he defeated the attack of the Liverpool merchants and Cheshire manufacturers upon the Indian salt monopoly. In the latter year Peacock succeeded James Mill as chief examiner, holding this post until 1856, when he retired in favour of John Stuart Mill [q. v.]

Despite his absorption in official labours, he produced in 1829 the delightful tale of 'The Misfortunes of Elphin,' founded upon Welsh traditions, and in 1831 'Crotchet Castle,' perhaps the most brilliant of his writings. The death of his mother in 1833 greatly shook him; he said himself that he never wrote anything with interest afterwards. In 1837 appeared his lightsome 'Paper Money Lyrics and other Poems' (only one hundred copies printed), but this was 'written in the winter of 1825–6, during the prevalence of an influenza to which the beautiful fabric of paper-credit is periodically subject.' Towards the period of his retirement from the India office he began to contribute to 'Fraser's Magazine,' and in that periodical appeared his entertaining and scholarly 'Horæ Dramaticæ,' and his reminiscences of Shelley. Shelley's admirers were annoyed at their apparent coldness, and not without reason; but want of personal knowledge disabled them from taking Peacock's idiosyncrasies into due account, and there could be no question of the extreme value of the appendix of Shelley's letters which he added in 1860. In the same year he gave a remarkable instance of vigour by the publication in 'Fraser' of 'Gryll Grange,' his last novel. The exuberant humour of his former works is indeed wanting, but the book is delightful from its stores of anecdote and erudition, and unintentionally most amusing through the author's inveterate prejudices and pugnacious hostility to every modern innovation. The last products of his pen were two translations, 'Gl' Ingannati. The Deceived:' a comedy, performed at Siena in 1851; and 'Ælia Lælia Crispis,' of which a limited edition was circulated in 1862. He died at Halliford on 23 Jan. 1866. His wife had died in 1852. Only one of his four children, a son, survived him, and he for less than a year; but he left several grandchildren.

Peacock's character is well delineated in few words by Sir Edward Strachey: 'A kind-hearted, genial, friendly man, who loved to share his enjoyment of life with all around him, and self-indulgent without being selfish.' He is a rare instance of a man improved by prosperity; an element of pedantry and illiberality in his earlier writings gradually disappears in genial sunshine, although, with the advance of age, obstinate prejudice takes its place, good humoured, but unamenable to argument. The vigour of his mind is abundantly proved by his successful transaction of the uncongenial commercial and financial business of the East India Company; and his novels, their quaint prejudices apart, are almost as remarkable for their good sense as for their wit. But for this penetrating sagacity, constantly brought to bear upon the affairs of life, they would seem mere humorous extravaganzas, being farcical rather than comic, and almost entirely devoid of plot and character. They overflow with merriment from end to end, though the humour is frequently too recondite to be generally appreciated, and their style is perfect. They owe much of their charm to the simple and melodious lyrics with which they are interspersed, a striking contrast to the frigid artificiality of Peacock's more ambitious attempts in poetry. As a critic, he was sensible and sound, but neither possessed nor appreciated the power of his contemporaries, Shelley and Keats, to reanimate classical myths by infusion of the modern spirit. His works have been edited by Sir Henry Cole in 1873, and by the present writer in 1891; neither edition is entirely complete. Four of the novels—'Headlong Hall,' 'Nightmare Abbey,' 'Maid Marian,' and 'Crotchet Castle'—form vol. lvii. of Bentley's 'Standard Novels,' published in 1837. A photographic portrait, representing him in old age, is inserted in both editions of his works, and

the edition of 1891 has a youthful portrait also.

[Memoirs by the present writer and by Sir Henry Cole prefixed to their respective editions of Peacock's writings. The latter has also an essay by Lord Houghton, and personal reminiscences by Mrs. Clarke, Peacock's granddaughter. Recollections by Sir Edward Strachey, bart., in vol. x. of Garnett's edition; Shelley's letters to Peacock, and his biographers in general; James Spedding in Edinburgh Review, vol. lxviii.; James Hannay in North British Review, vol. xlv.; R. W. Buchanan in New Quarterly Mag. vol. iv.; George Saintsbury in Macmillan's Mag. vol. liii.] R. G.

**PEADA** (*d.* 656), under-king of the South Mercians, the eldest son of Penda [q. v.], king of the Mercians, was made ealdorman or under-king of the Middle Angles by his father in 653. He desired to marry Alchflæd, or Ealhflæd, the daughter of Oswy, or Oswiu [q. v.], king of the Northumbrians, and went to her father's court to ask for her as his wife, but Oswy refused unless Peada became a Christian. Accordingly he heard preaching, and was further persuaded by his friend and brother-in-law Alchfrith or Alchfrid, who had married his sister Cyneburh or Ciniburga, so that he declared that he would profess Christianity, even though his wished-for bride should be denied him. He was therefore baptised by Bishop Finan [q. v.], along with his thegns and other followers, at a place called At-wall, supposed to be Walbottle, near Newcastle, and, having received his bride, took back with him to his kingdom four priests, Cedd [q. v.], Adda, Betti, and Diuma, afterwards bishop of the Middle Angles and Mercians. With the help of Peada these missionaries had great success, and daily baptised many nobles and sick people; nor were they forbidden by Penda to preach in his immediate dominions (Bede, *Historia Ecclesiastica*, iii. c. 21). On the overthrow and death of Penda in 655, Oswy made Peada under-king of the South Mercians, separated by the Trent from the North Mercians, who seem to have then become directly subject to the Northumbrian king. At the following Easter-tide, however, Peada was wickedly slain, it was said, through the treachery of his wife (*ib.* c. 24). He is said to have been one of the co-founders of the monastery of Medeshamstede, or Peterborough, with his brothers Wulfhere [q. v.], Æthelred, and Merewald, and his two sisters [see under Penda].

[Bede's Hist. Eccl., Flor. Wig. (both Engl. Hist. Soc.); Anglo-Saxon Chron. an. 652, and Peterborough insertion under 656; Green's Making of England; art. 'Peada' in Dict. Chr. Biogr. by Bishop Stubbs.] W. H.

**PEAK** or **PEAKE**, JAMES (1730?–1782?), engraver, born about 1730, practised in London as an engraver in the mixed etching and line manner of Thomas Vivares [q. v.] and others. He attained some eminence as an engraver of landscape, and his works are noteworthy in the history of English engraving. These are mostly from paintings by Claude Lorraine, G. Smith of Chichester, R. Wilson, J. Pillement, and other landscape-engravers. He also executed some spirited etchings of dogs and other animals. He is said to have died about 1782.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Nagler's Künstler-Lexicon.] L. C.

**PEAKE**, RICHARD BRINSLEY (1792–1847), dramatist, son of Richard Peake, who was for forty years in the treasury office of Drury Lane Theatre, was born in Gerrard Street, Soho, on 19 Feb. 1792. He was articled to James Heath [q. v.], the engraver, and remained with him from 1809 to 1817, when he turned his attention to writing for the stage. His first production seems to have been 'Amateurs and Actors,' a musical farce, given at the English Opera House on 29 Aug. 1818, and revived at Covent Garden on 28 Oct. 1826. It was followed by 'The Duel, or My Two Nephews,' a two-act farce (Covent Garden, 18 Feb. 1823); 'Presumption, or the Fate of Frankenstein,' based partly on Mrs. Shelley's novel, and partly upon a French piece (Covent Garden, 9 July 1824); and 'Comfortable Lodgings, or Paris in 1750,' a farce, played first at Drury Lane on 10 March 1827 and on twelve subsequent occasions, with Liston in the chief part of Sir Hippington Miff. One of the best of Peake's numerous pieces, 'The Haunted Inn,' a two-act farce, appeared at Drury Lane on 31 Jan. 1828, and was played eighteen times. His farce 'Before Breakfast' was acted at Bath on 28 Feb. 1828, and 'Master's Rival,' which had proved an utter failure at Drury Lane in the previous February, was given with applause at Covent Garden on 6 May 1829. Peake is said to have written most of the later 'At Homes' given by Charles Mathews at the Adelphi from 1829 onwards. For about the last ten years of his life he he was treasurer at the Lyceum Theatre. His last play, 'The Title Deeds,' an original comedy, in three acts and in prose, appeared in 1847, and Peake died on 4 Oct. in this same year, leaving a large family in somewhat necessitous circumstances.

Besides those above mentioned, Peake's chief plays were: 1. 'The Bottle Imp,' a melodramatic romance, produced at Covent

Garden on 17 Oct. 1828, and played several times. 2. 'The Hundred Pound Note,' a two-act farce [1829]. 3. 'Court and City,' a comedy, based upon Sir Richard Steele's 'Tender Husband' and Mrs. F. Sheridan's 'Discovery' [1830]. 4. 'Uncle Rip,' a two-act farce [1830]. 5. 'The Chancery Suit,' a comedy in three acts and in prose, 1831. 6. 'House Room, or the Dishonoured Bill,' a farcetta, 1836. 7. 'Blanche of Jersey,' a musical romance [1838]. 8. 'Gemini,' a farce, 1838. 9. 'The Spring Lock,' an operatic romance in two acts, 1838. 10. 'The Meltonians, a perfectly illegitimate drama and extravaganza' [1838]. 11. 'The Sheriff of the County,' a comedy, 1840. 12. 'The Title Deeds,' an original comedy in three acts and in prose, 1847. Peake also wrote the letterpress for 'French Characteristic Costumes,' 1816, 4to; Snobson's 'Seasons,' being annals of cockney sports, illustrated by Seymour, 1838, 8vo; the useful 'Memoirs of the Colman Family,' including their correspondence with the most distinguished persons of their time, 2 vols. 1841, 8vo; and 'Cartouche, the celebrated French Robber,' 3 vols. 12mo, 1844.

[Genest's History of the English Stage, vol. ix. passim; Times, 7 Oct. 1847; Era, 10 Oct. 1847; Ann. Register, 1847, p. 261; Georgian Era, iii. 586; Hall's Reminiscences; Atlantic Monthly, April 1865; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

**PEAKE, Sir ROBERT** (1592?–1667), print-seller and royalist, born about 1592, was son of Robert Peake, serjeant-painter to James I. His father held the office of serjeant-painter conjointly with John De Critz the elder [q. v.], with remainder to John De Critz the younger, and John Maunchi (see *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. Ser. 1603–1610). His skill in oil-painting was extolled by Henry Peacham [q. v.] in his 'Treatise on Limning and Painting.' The father, who is described as a 'picture-maker,' was probably the author of many of the numerous portraits of James I which exist. In 1612 he was in the employment of Charles I, then Duke of York (see Walpole, *Anecdotes of Painting*, ed. Wornum, p. 220). In 1613 he was employed by the university of Cambridge to paint a picture of Prince Charles, to celebrate the prince's visit to Cambridge and his taking the degree of master of arts on 4 March 1612–13; this portrait still hangs in the university library (see *Collected Papers of Henry Bradshaw*, 'On the Collection of Portraits belonging to the University before the Civil War'). Among the elder Peake's pupils was William Faithorne the elder [q. v.] He probably died soon after the accession of Charles I, leaving two sons, William and Robert Peake, who became print-sellers on Snow Hill at a shop near Holborn Conduit, where they also dealt in pictures.

Robert Peake the younger published a number of engravings by Faithorne, who, after studying for three years under John Payne, returned to work under his former master's son. When the civil war broke out Peake took up arms on the royal side. He, Faithorne, and Wenceslaus Hollar [q. v.] the engraver were all among the besieged in Basing House, of which Peake acted as lieutenant-governor under the command of John Paulet, fifth marquis of Winchester [q. v.] Peake, then lieutenant-colonel, was knighted for his services by Charles I at Oxford on 28 March 1645. On the surrender of Basing House in October 1645 Peake was brought to London, and committed first to Winchester House, and then to Aldersgate. He was subsequently released, but exiled for refusing to take the oath of allegiance to Cromwell. After the Restoration Peake was appointed vice-president and leader of the Honourable Artillery Company under James, duke of York. He died in 1667, aged about 75, and was buried in St. Sepulchre's Church, London. A broadside 'Panegyrick' was published shortly after his death (Brit. Museum).

[Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, ed. Wornum; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Fagan's Cat. of Faithorne's Works; Vertue's Diaries (Brit. Mus. Harl. MSS. 5910, iv. 157).] L. C.

**PEAKE, THOMAS** (1771–1838), serjeant-at-law and legal author, born in 1771, probably son of Thomas Peake, solicitor, of Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, gained celebrity in the legal profession by his unusually accurate reports of Lord Kenyon's decisions, viz. 'Cases determined at Nisi Prius in the Court of King's Bench from the sittings after Easter Term, 30 Geo. III, to the sittings after Michaelmas Term, 35 Geo. III, both inclusive,' London, 1795 and 1810, 8vo; American reprint, ed. T. Day, Hartford, 1810, 8vo; and 'Additional Cases at Nisi Prius; being a Continuation of Cases at Nisi Prius before Lord Kenyon and other eminent Judges, taken at different times between the years 1795 and 1812, with Notes by Thomas Peake, jun.,' London, 1829, 8vo. Peake was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn on 6 Feb. 1796, and to the degree of serjeant-at-law in Hilary term 1820. He practised as a special pleader and on the Oxford circuit. He died on 17 Nov. 1838.

Peake married, on 21 Jan. 1800, Miss Budgen of Tottenham, by whom he had

issue a son Thomas, who was admitted student at Gray's Inn on 15 April 1823, called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn on 19 June 1828, and died on 30 Jan. 1837.

Besides his reports, Peake was author of 'A Compendium of the Law of Evidence,' London, 1801, 8vo, a work which, though largely indebted to that of Sir Geoffrey Gilbert [q. v.], embodied considerable original thought and research, and was long in high repute on both sides of the Atlantic. The fifth edition, greatly enlarged, was published at London, 1822, 8vo; American reprint, ed. J. P. Norris, Philadelphia, 1824, 8vo.

[Gent. Mag. 1800 pt. ii. p. 587, 1837 pt. i. p. 329, 1838 pt. i. p. 106; Foster's Gray's Inn Admission Register; Law List; Marvin's Legal Bibliography; Brit. Mus. Cat.] J. M. R.

**PEARCE.** [See also PEARSE and PIERCE.]

**PEARCE, SIR EDWARD LOVET** (*d.* 1733), architect of the Irish parliament-house, was a captain in Neville's regiment of dragoons, and represented the borough of Ratoath, co. Meath, in the Irish parliament which met in 1727. In January 1728 Chichester House on College Green, where the parliament had formerly assembled, was pronounced unsafe, and it was demolished in the following December to make way for a new building, the first stone of which was laid on 3 Feb. 1728–9. The designs appear to have been made by Pearce for Thomas Burgh, who held the office of director-general and overseer of fortifications and buildings in Ireland. Pearce succeeded Burgh in 1730, and was knighted in the same year; and he superintended the works until they were sufficiently advanced to excite general admiration. Pearce is described as both the 'contriver and projector' and 'the architect of this work' (*Constit. of the Free Masons*, Dublin, 1730, p. 37), and it is plain that the credit of this 'noble piece of architecture' was mainly due to him. The committee appointed to inquire into the progress of the work having submitted their report on 22 Nov. 1729, the commons unanimously voted the payment of 1,000*l.* to Pearce for 'his care and pains.' In December 1731 this was supplemented by an additional payment of 1,000*l.* Another work, carried on simultaneously by Pearce, was the theatre in Aungier Street, Dublin, designed in 1732, at which time the architect was also contemplating the construction of a theatre at Cork. He died at his country house in Stillorgan, co. Dublin, on 16 Nov. 1733, and was buried in Donnybrook church on 10 Dec. following. His brother, Lieutenant-general Thomas Pearce, governor of Limerick, who had served with distinction under Galway in Spain, was subsequently buried by his side. Shortly after Pearce's death the parliamentary committee appointed to inquire into the state of the building found that 'Sir Edward Lovet Pearce, late engineer and surveyor-general, and his executrix, Anne, lady Pearce, had faithfully and honestly accounted for the sums received by them.' The building—now the Bank of Ireland—was ultimately completed by Arthur Dobbs [q. v.] in 1739, and was subsequently embellished by James Gandon [q. v.] and Robert Parke [q. v.] Delany's contemporary poem, entitled 'The Pheasant and the Lark,' contains a complimentary allusion to Pearce's architectural skill, and, although the structure on College Green was incidentally ridiculed by Swift in his 'Legion Club,' it was highly praised by the English artist Thomas Malton the elder [q. v.] in his work on Dublin. The rumour that Pearce obtained his plan from Richard Castle [q. v.], the architect of Leinster House, has been traced to a pseudonymous pamphlet privately printed in 1736, the author of which avowed that Pearce had incurred his enmity by opposing him in a lawsuit.

[Dict. of Architecture; Gilbert's Hist. of Dublin, iii. 74–7; Webb's Compend. of Irish Biogr.; Gent. Mag. 1733, p. 663; Harris's Hist. of Dublin, 1766, p. 410; Mulvany's Life of Gandon, p. 117; Builder, 1872, pp. 410, 451, 511; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Lenihan's Hist. of Limerick; Members of Parl. ii. 664.] T. S.

**PEARCE, NATHANIEL** (1779–1820), traveller, born on 14 Feb. 1779, at East Acton, Middlesex, was educated at private schools, but, proving wild and incorrigible, was apprenticed to a carpenter and joiner in Duke Street, Grosvenor Square. He soon ran away to sea, and on his return was apprenticed to a leather-seller, whom he left suddenly to enlist on the Alert man-of-war. In May 1794 he was taken prisoner by the French; but after many attempts succeeded in escaping, and served again in the navy. Many adventures followed. Deserting from the Antelope in July 1804, he seems to have made his way to Mocha and adopted mahomedanism, but managed to reach, on 31 Dec. 1804, the vessel that was conveying Lord Valentia's mission to Abyssinia. Arrived at Massowa, he accompanied, in the summer of next year, Henry Salt [q. v.] as English servant on his mission to the court of the Ras Welled Selassé of Tigré. On Salt's departure in November, Pearce stayed behind in the service of the Ras. On more than one occasion he was compelled by jealous intriguers to quit the court, but by the autumn of 1807 he had made his position

there secure. In 1808 he married the daughter of Sidee Paulus, a Greek. In 1810 he met Salt's second expedition, and escorted it from the coast and back. Pearce remained in Abyssinia till 1818, when he set out for Cairo on a visit to Salt. He reached Cairo in 1819, and, after a journey up the Nile, returned there and died from the results of exposure in June 1820, just as his passage had been taken to England, the 'R' against his name in the navy list having been removed at the instance of his friends.

His journals, which are one long record of adventures, and contain a most minute and careful account of the habits and customs of the Abyssinians, were edited by J. J. Halls, and published under the title of the 'Life and Adventures of N. Pearce,' 2 vols. 12mo, London, 1831.

[Pearce's Life; Salt's Voyage to Abyssinia, 1814; Viscount Valentia's Voyages and Travels, vol. ii. 1809.] B. B. W.

**PEARCE, SAMUEL** (1766–1799), hymn-writer, the son of a silversmith, was born at Plymouth, Devonshire, on 20 July 1766. He studied at the Baptist College, Bristol, and in 1790 was appointed minister of Cannon Street Baptist Church, Birmingham. There he laboured successfully till his death on 10 Oct. 1799. He was one of the twelve ministers who, on 2 Oct. 1792, signed the resolutions founding the Baptist Missionary Society. In his 'Memoirs,' edited by A. Fuller, London, 1800, there are eleven poetical pieces, some of which have been included in nonconformist hymnals.

[Memoirs by Fuller as above; Julian's Dictionary of Hymnology.] J. C. H.

**PEARCE, THOMAS** (*fl.* 1755), legal author, was perhaps identical with the Thomas Pearse who was returned to parliament for Weymouth and Melcombe Regis on 24 April 1722, vacated the seat on being appointed chief clerk of the Navy Office on 13 Sept. 1726, and was subsequently, on 7 Sept. 1727, made commissioner of the navy.

Pearce was author of: 1. 'The Laws and Customs of the Stannaries in the Counties of Cornwall and Devon,' London, 1725, fol. 2. 'The Justice of the Peace's Pocket Companion, or the Office and Duty of a Justice Epitomised,' London, 1754, 8vo. 3. 'The Poor Man's Lawyer, or Laws relating to the Inferior Courts Laid Open,' London, 1755, 8vo. 4. 'The Complete Justice of the Peace and Parish Officer,' London, 1756, 8vo.

[Hist. Reg. Chron. Diary, 1726 p. 35, 1727 p. 36; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub.; Members of Parl. (Official List); Hutchins's Dorset, ii. 437; Brit. Mus. Cat.] J. M. R.

**PEARCE, Sir WILLIAM** (1833–1888), naval architect, was born at Brompton, near Chatham, on 8 Jan. 1833. He served his apprenticeship in the dockyard at Chatham, under Oliver Lang, and, continuing in the government service, was, in 1861, charged with the superintendence of the building of the Achilles, the first ironclad built in any of the royal yards. In 1863 he was appointed surveyor of Lloyd's registry for the Clyde district, and in 1864 became general manager of the works of Robert Napier & Son [see Napier, Robert, 1791–1876], who then built most of the vessels for the Cunard line. The vessels, however, which established Pearce's reputation were built in 1865 for the Compagnie Générale Transatlantique, and their speed excited much attention. In 1869, on the death of John Elder [q. v.], Pearce, in conjunction with Messrs. Ure & Jameson, carried on the business under the style of John Elder & Co. In 1878 his partners retired, and Pearce remained alone till, on his entering parliament in 1885, the business was turned into a limited company under the name of the Fairfield Shipbuilding and Engineering Company, of which Pearce was chairman. During these years, by his skill, energy, and talent for organisation, the building of iron steamers was developed in an extraordinary degree. The Arizona, Alaska, the ill-fated Oregon, the Orient, Austral, Stirling Castle, and more especially the Etruria and Umbria, were among his best known ships; he built all the steamers for the North German Lloyd's and for the New Zealand Shipping Company, as well as several for the Dover and Calais line, reducing the time of crossing to less than an hour. It was his ambition to built a vessel which should cross the Atlantic within five days, and in the summer of 1888 he exhibited in Glasgow the model of one calculated to do so. The admirable organisation of his works enabled him, on occasion, to produce most remarkable results, as when, in 1884, he built eleven stern-wheel vessels for service on the Nile in twenty-eight days, delivering them at Alexandria within the contract time, for which he received the thanks of the secretary of state for war. In 1885, and again in 1886, he was returned to parliament, in the conservative interest, by the Govan division of Lanarkshire; he was also chairman of the Guion Steamship Company and of the Scottish Oriental Steamship Company. He was a deputy lieutenant and justice of the peace for Lanarkshire, and in 1887 was created a baronet. The excessive strain of his gigantic and complicated business affected his nervous system, and gave rise to or aggravated a disease of the heart of which he died in

London on 18 Dec. 1888. He was buried at Gillingham, Kent, on the 22nd. He left a widow and one son, William George, who succeeded to the baronetcy.

[Times, 18, 19, 24 Dec.; Engineer, 21 Dec.; Engineering, 21 Dec. 1888.] J. K. L.

PEARCE, ZACHARY (1690–1774), bishop of Rochester, born on 8 Sept. 1690 in the parish of St. Giles's, High Holborn, was son of John Pearce, a distiller, who made a fortune and bought an estate at Little Ealing. After living there for forty years, he died, aged 85, on 14 Aug. 1752. After some education in a school at Great Ealing, Zachary was sent to Westminster, 12 Feb. 1704, and in 1707 was granted a queen's scholarship. He was elected to Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1710. While at college he wrote a paper in the 'Guardian,' and two in the last series of the 'Spectator' (Nos. 572 and 633), and afterwards one in Ambrose Philips's 'Freethinker' (No. 114). In 1716 he printed an edition of Cicero's 'De Oratore' at the university press. A friend of his was known to Chief-justice Thomas Parker, afterwards (1721) Lord Macclesfield [q. v.], and obtained Parker's consent to receive a dedication. Parker was so much gratified that he requested Bentley to obtain Pearce's election to a fellowship. Bentley consented, but apparently with some reluctance (Monk, *Bentley*, i. 411), for which perhaps he had reasons. At any rate, Pearce soon afterwards encouraged Colbatch in his famous struggle against the master. Pearce upon thanking Parker received a present of fifty guineas from his patron. He was ordained deacon in 1717, and priest in 1718, by Bishop Fleetwood. Parker upon becoming chancellor in 1718 appointed Pearce to a chaplaincy. He lived in the chancellor's family for three years. In December 1719 he became rector of Stapleford Abbots, Essex, and on 19 March 1719–20 was inducted into the rectory of St. Bartholomew's, in the gift of the chancellor. The chancellor said that when applying to Bentley for the Trinity fellowship he had promised to make a vacancy as soon as possible. The Duke of Newcastle, dining one day at the chancellor's, recognised Pearce as an old schoolfellow, and made him one of the king's chaplains. In February 1721–2 he married Mary, daughter of Benjamin Adams, a rich distiller in Holborn. On 10 Jan. 1723–4 he was inducted into the vicarage of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, worth 500*l.* year, which was at the chancellor's disposal in consequence of the translation to Ely of Dr. Thomas Green [q.v.], who had held it *in commendam* with the bishopric of Norwich. The chancellor then obtained for Pearce a degree of D.D. from the archbishop of Canterbury. Pearce showed his gratitude for this series of favours by dedicating an edition of Longinus, 'On the Sublime,' to his patron. The chancellor's impeachment in 1725 put an end to his power of helping Pearce; but they remained on friendly terms till Macclesfield's death in 1732. The plan for rebuilding the church of St. Martin's in 1724 made an act of parliament necessary in order to raise additional funds. Pearce waited upon Pulteney, who had large property in the parish, to ask his concurrence; and Pulteney, also a Westminster boy, became a warm friend and patron. Lord Sundon, another parishioner, made Pearce's acquaintance, and Lady Sundon introduced him to Queen Caroline, with whom she had great influence (see Walpole, *Reminiscences* in Letters i. cxxx.; and Hervey, *Memoirs*, i. 90). The queen took a liking to the popular doctor, ordered him to preach before her, and made two offers of preferment, which were accidentally frustrated. She also spoke in his favour to Sir Robert Walpole, but died before she could do anything for him. Pearce asked Walpole in 1739 for the deanery of Wells; and Pulteney, then in the heat of opposition, begged that his friendship with Pearce might not hinder the preferment. Walpole politely promised, but kept the deanery vacant until the death of Nailor, dean of Winchester. On 4 Aug. 1739 Pearce was instituted to the deanery of Winchester, worth 600*l.* year, in consequence, as he believed, of a promise made by Walpole to the queen. Pulteney, after joining the cabinet, proposed Pearce for a bishopric; but the Duke of Newcastle would only promise for the next occasion, and Pulteney ceased to have influence. Archbishop Potter applied on his behalf in 1746, without success, when Pearce declared that upon his father's death he should resign his living and be content with his deanery. In 1747 Matthew Hutton (1693–1758) [q.v.], bishop of Bangor, was translated to York, and the Duke of Newcastle offered the vacant see to Pearce, allowing him to hold St. Martin's *in commendam*. Pearce at first declined, and even persuaded his father and Pulteney, now Lord Bath, to allow him to refuse 'without their displeasure.' Newcastle, however, pointed out that, if clergymen of merit refused bishoprics, ministers could not be blamed for appointing men of less merit. Pearce did not see his way to answer this argument, and was consecrated bishop of Bangor on 21 Feb. 1748. Bath had, he thinks, reminded Newcastle of his old promise. He visited his diocese annually (with one exception) till 1753, when his health became

too weak, and he gave all preferments in his gifts to Welshmen. In 1755 the duke persuaded him with less trouble to exchange Bangor for the bishopric of Rochester (installed 9 July 1756) and the deanery of Westminster (15 April 1756).

In 1761 he was more obstinate. Lord Bath offered to procure his appointment to the bishopric of London, but he stated his resolution to decline. He was growing old, and told Lord Bath that he meant to resign both bishopric and deanery. After some difficulty the king consented. The ministry, however, objected, because, as Pearce says, Bath had asked the king to appoint Thomas Newton [q. v.] to the vacant preferment. They thought that the king would thus be encouraged to interfere personally in the appointment of bishops, and objected successfully to the acceptance of Pearce's resignation. Pearce, however, resigned the deanery of Westminster in 1786. Although Pearce had obtained patronage in the manner common to the clergy of the day, this desire to resign at the age of seventy seems to have struck his contemporaries as a proof of singular disinterestedness.

He celebrated the fiftieth year of his marriage (1772) as 'a year of jubilee' (verses written on the occasion are given in the 'Annual Register' for 1776, p. 233). His wife died on 23 Oct. 1773, their children having all died very young. A fortnight after her funeral he lamented his loss 'in proper expressions of sorrow and respect,' and spoke of her in the evening, but never mentioned her again. He was declining, and died at Little Ealing on 29 June 1774. He divided his time between Ealing and the palace belonging to the bishops of Rochester at Bromley, Kent. He was buried by the side of his wife at Bromley. He left his library to the dean and chapter of Westminster; his manuscripts to his chaplain, John Derby; and 5,000*l.* to the college founded for clergymen's widows at Bromley by Bishop Warner. He built a registry at Rochester, and left legacies amounting to 15,000*l.* to various other charities. There is a portrait in Bromley College, and a marble bust, said to be a striking likeness, on his monument in Westminster Abbey. A portrait painted by Thomas Hudson, belonging to the archbishop of Canterbury, was engraved in 1754 and prefixed to his works.

Pearce was known as a good scholar. His editions of Cicero, 'De Oratore' (1716) and 'De Officiis' (1745), went through several editions, and the first brought him a complimentary letter from his rival editor, Olivet. His edition of Longinus (1724) reached a ninth edition in 1806, though eclipsed by Toup's in 1778.

His other works are: 1. 'An Account of Trinity College,' 1720 (mentioned in the list appended to the 'Life,' but not in the British Museum or elsewhere; it is probably one of the pamphlets about Bentley, possibly to be identified with 'A Full and Impartial Account of the Proceedings . . . against Dr. Bentley,' 1719). 2. 'Epistolæ duæ ad . . . F. V. professorem Amstelodamensem scriptæ . . .' by 'Phileleutherus Londinensis,' 1721 (an examination of Bentley's proposals for an edition of the Greek Testament). 3. 'A Letter to the Clergy of the Church of England on Occasion of the Bishop of Rochester's Commitment to the Tower,' 1722 (and a French translation). 4. 'The Miracles of Jesus defended,' 1729 (against Thomas Woolston's 'Discourses'). 5. 'Reply to a "Letter to Dr. Waterland," setting forth many Falsehoods . . . by which the Letter-writer [Conyers Middleton, q. v.] endeavours to weaken the Authority of Moses,' 1731 (Middleton published a 'Defence,' and Pearce a 'Reply' to the defence). 6. 'Review of the Text of Milton's "Paradise Lost," in which the chief of Dr. Bentley's Emendations are considered,' 1732. 7. A 'Concio ad Clerum,' preached before the convocation in 1741, was published with a translation; and, in reply to some criticisms, he published in 1742 'Character of the Clergy Defended.' 8. 'A Commentary, with Notes on the Four Evangelists and the Acts of the Apostles, together with a new Translation of St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians, with a Paraphrase and Notes,' 2 vols. 4to, was published in 1777, with his life, by his chaplain, John Derby, who in 1778 published also four volumes of his sermons.

Ten sermons were also published separately during his life.

[The Life (see above) prefixed to the Commentary published also in 'Lives' edited by A. Chalmers in 1816. It consists of autobiographical notes connected by Dr. Johnson, who also wrote the dedication to the king (Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, ii. 446, iii. 112). Republished [by A. Chalmers] in 'Lives,' 1816. A letter upon the publication of Sir Isaac Newton's Chronology is appended. Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, iii. 107–11; Monk's Bentley, i. 411, ii. 79, 80, 144, 323; Lyttelton's Memoirs and Correspondence, i. 161–2; Welch's Alumni West. pp. 248, 252–3; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 108, ii. 575, iii. 22, 349; Cole's Athenæ Cantabr.; Gent. Mag. 1775 p. 421, 1776 pp. 62, 103, 116, 183, 208.] L. S.

**PEARD, GEORGE** (1594?–1644), parliamentarian, born about 1594, was the son of John Peard of Barnstaple, Devonshire. Peard

was admitted to the Middle Temple on 23 June 1613, and represented his native town in the two parliaments called in 1640. In the Short parliament he attacked ship-money with great boldness, calling it 'an abomination,' an expression which he was obliged to explain and withdraw (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, ii. 68; *Commons' Journals*, ii. 9). In the Long parliament he took an active part in the proceedings against Strafford, and made long speeches against the etcetera oath imposed by the canons of 1640, and against Lord-keeper Finch (*Speeches and Passages of this great and happy Parliament*, 4to, 1641, p. 313; *Notebook of Sir John Northcote*, p. 98; Sanford, *Studies and Illustrations of the Great Rebellion*, pp. 339, 344). He signalised himself also by moving that the Grand Remonstrance should be printed, and by the disrespectful comments on the royal family (Gardiner, *Hist. of England*, x. 76; Clarendon, *Rebellion*, v. 178). In June 1642 he contributed 100*l.* towards raising an army for the defence of the parliament, and promised 20*l.* a year towards the expenses of the Irish war (*Commons' Journals*, ii. 544).

On the outbreak of the civil war Peard returned to Barnstaple, and became the guiding spirit of the preparations for its defence against the royalists. He was deputy recorder, and afterwards recorder, of the borough, and advanced various sums of money towards the cost of its fortifications. But the west in general fell into the power of the king's forces in the summer of 1643, and Barnstaple, in spite of 'the petulancy of Master Peard,' surrendered to Prince Maurice in August 1643 (*Mercurius Aulicus*, 27 Aug. 1643; Cotton, *Barnstaple during the Civil War*, p. 213). Peard fell ill soon after the surrender, is said to have been imprisoned for some time in Exeter gaol, and died during the following year. His monument, surmounted by a portrait-bust, is in St. Peter's Church, Barnstaple, and his epitaph is given at length by Cotton (p. 282).

[Cotton's Barnstaple and the Northern part of Devonshire during the great Civil War, 1889.] C. H. F.

PEARD, JOHN WHITEHEAD (1811–1880), 'Garibaldi's Englishman,' born at Fowey, Cornwall, in July 1811, was the second son of Vice-admiral Shuldham Peard [q. v.], by his second wife, Matilda, daughter of William Fortescue of Penwarne. He was educated at the King's School, Ottery St. Mary, Devonshire, and at Exeter College, Oxford, where he matriculated 4 March 1829, and graduated B.A. 2 May 1833, M.A. 17 Nov. 1836. A youth of 'great stature and extraordinary muscular strength,' who when but nineteen years of age weighed fourteen stone, he was described by an old waterman at Oxford as possessing 'the shoulders of a bull.' As stroke of the college boat, he was famous on the river, and during the town-and-gown rows of his undergraduate days his height and skill in boxing made him an object of terror to the roughs (Tupper, *My Life as an Author*, p. 61). In 1837 he became a barrister-at-law of the Inner Temple, being called on the same day with Sir F. H. Doyle, who describes his draining on a gaudy day in hall a loving-cup 'which held about two quarts of spiced and sweetened wine.' For some time he went the western circuit, but life at the bar must have been irksome to him, and down to 1859 he was a captain in the Duke of Cornwall's rangers. During his frequent visits to Italy he had been cut to the quick by the brutalities of the Neapolitan officials. He therefore joined the forces of Garibaldi, with whose aims he was in thorough sympathy, and, as a 'splendid rifle-shot,' organised and commanded a company of revolving-rifle soldiers, who gave him much trouble. When Garibaldi made his expedition to Sicily he was joined by Peard, who distinguished himself at the battle of Melazzo (20 July 1860), and at its conclusion was raised to the rank of colonel. He also accompanied the troops of Garibaldi on their advance to Naples, and commanded the English legion. For these services he received from Victor Emmanuel the cross of the order of Valour, and was known throughout England as 'Garibaldi's Englishman' (cf. *West Briton*, 9 Aug. p. 6).

On the retirement of Garibaldi to Caprera Peard returned to England, and when Garibaldi visited England he paid a visit to his old comrade at his seat of Penquite, on the Fowey river, 25–27 April 1864 (cf. *Journals of Caroline Fox*, 2nd edit. ii. 290–1, and Frederick Arnold, *Reminiscences*, ii. 9). Peard was a J.P. and D.L. for Cornwall, and he served the office of sheriff in 1869. He was also a prominent freemason, becoming P.G.M. of Cornwall 26 Aug. 1879. He died at Trenython, Par, 21 Nov. 1880, from the effects of a paralytic stroke, and was buried in Fowey cemetery on 24 Nov. He married at East Teignmouth, Devonshire, 7 June 1838, Catherine Augusta, daughter of the Rev. Dr. William Page Richards, formerly headmaster of Blundell's school, Tiverton. She survived him.

A portrait is in the 'Illustrated London News,' 11 Aug. 1860 (p. 135).

[Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. ii. 439, iii. 1456; Boase's Collect. Cornub. pp. 690, 1018;

Ann. Register, 1880, pt. ii. p. 217; Western Morning News, 22 Nov. 1880; Boase's Exeter Coll. Commoners, p. 245; Trollope's What I Remember, ii. 222–7; Sir C. Forbes's Campaign of Garibaldi, pp. 94–9, 143, 200, 217–31; Sir F. H. Doyle's Reminiscences, pp. 222–3; Pycroft's Oxford Memories, i. 48–9, ii. 71.]

W. P. C.

**PEARD, SHULDHAM** (1761–1832), vice-admiral, third son of Captain George Peard of the navy, was born at Penryn in 1761, and baptised at St. Gluvias on 29 Oct. At the age of ten he was entered on the books of the Fly, and afterwards on those of the Racehorse, as an 'able seaman.' He probably first went afloat in 1776, in the Worcester, with Captain Mark Robinson; he was afterwards in the Martin with Captain (afterwards Sir William) Parker, and in the Thetis with Captain John Gell on the Newfoundland station. In 1779, having been sent away in command of a prize, he was taken prisoner and carried into Cadiz. On his return to England he passed his examination on 6 April 1780, and on 26 April was promoted to the rank of lieutenant. In June 1780 he was appointed to the Edgar, one of the Channel fleet, and continued in her till February 1782, taking part in the relief of Gibraltar in April 1781. From 1785 to 1790 he was in the Carnatic guardship at Plymouth; in 1790–1, during the Spanish armament, he was in the Princess Royal, flagship of Rear-admiral Hotham, at Portsmouth, and was again in the Carnatic in 1791–2. In January 1793 he joined the Britannia going out to the Mediterranean with the flag of Hotham, and on 30 Jan. 1795 was promoted to command the Flèche.

On 5 May he was posted to the Censeur, and in July was appointed to the Britannia as second captain. From her, in January 1796, he was moved into the St. George, which he still commanded on 18 Jan. 1797, when, as the fleet was leaving Lisbon, she got on shore, had to cut away her masts, and was left behind disabled, while the fleet went on to fight the battle of Cape St. Vincent. The ship afterwards rejoined the flag off Cadiz, and was still there in the beginning of July, when a violent mutiny broke out on board. Peard, with his own hands, assisted by the first lieutenant, seized two of the ringleaders, dragged them out of the crowd, and had them put in irons. His daring and resolute conduct struck terror into the rest, and they returned to their duty; but the two men were promptly tried, convicted, and hanged on 8–9 July [see JERVIS, JOHN, EARL OF ST. VINCENT]. Of Peard's conduct on this occasion St. Vincent thought very highly, and many years afterwards wrote, 'his merit in facing the mutiny on board the St. George ought never to be forgotten or unrewarded' (TUCKER, *Memoirs of the Earl of St. Vincent*, ii. 408).

In March 1799 Peard commissioned the Success frigate for the Mediterranean, and on his way out, when off Lisbon, fell in with and was chased by the Brest fleet. He, however, made good his escape, and joined Lord Keith off Cadiz on 3 May [see ELPHINSTONE, GEORGE KEITH, VISCOUNT KEITH], in time to warn him of the approaching danger. In the following February the Success formed part of the squadron employed in the blockade of Malta, and on the 18th had a large share in the capture of the Généreux, hampering her movements as she tried to escape, and raking her several times (NICOLAS, *Nelson Despatches*, iv. 188–9). On 9 Feb. 1801 the Success was lying at Gibraltar, when a strong French squadron, under Rear-admiral Ganteaume, passed through the Straits. Peard conjectured—as was the fact—that they were bound for Egypt, and thinking that Keith ought to have warning of their presence in the Mediterranean, he immediately followed, hoping to pass them on the way. He fell in with them off Cape Gata, but was prevented by calms and variable winds from passing, and, after a chase of three days, was overtaken and captured. From the prisoners Ganteaume learned that the route to Egypt might be full of danger to himself, and turned aside to Toulon, whence Peard and his men were at once sent in a cartel to Port Mahon. On his return to England he was appointed in June to the Audacious, in which he joined the squadron at Gibraltar under Sir James Saumarez (afterwards Lord de Saumarez) [q. v.], and took part in the actions at Algeziras on 6 July, and in the Straits on the night of the 12th. The Audacious was afterwards sent to the West Indies, and was paid off in October 1802. In 1803 and during the war Peard commanded the sea-fencibles on the coast of Cornwall. On 5 July 1814 he was superannuated as a rear-admiral, but was restored to the active list on 5 July 1827, advanced to be vice-admiral on 22 July 1830, and died at Barton Place, near Exeter, on 27 Dec. 1832. He left two sons, of whom the elder, George, died, a captain in the navy, in 1837; the younger, John Whitehead, well known as 'Garibaldi's Englishman,' is separately noticed.

[Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. iii. (vol. ii.) p. 23; Service-book in the Public Record Office; Ann. Biogr. and Obit. for 1834; James's Naval Hist. Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub.]

J. K. L.

PEARL, CORA (1842–1886), courtesan, the assumed name of Emma Elizabeth Crouch, was born at Caroline Place, East Stonehouse, Devonshire, on 23 Feb. 1842. She was the daughter of Frederick William Nicholls Crouch, by his wife, Lydia Pearson, a singer. Crouch, who was born on 31 July 1808, was a musical director and composer of many songs, including the well-known ballads 'Kathleen Mavourneen' and 'Dermot Asthore.' He went to America in 1845, and took up his residence in that country. Cora, one of a family of sixteen children, was educated at Boulogne until thirteen years of age. Coming to England in 1856, she was misled by an elderly admirer into a life of dissipation, and took the name of Cora Pearl. In March 1858 she went to France, and a series of liaisons followed with various persons of influence under the second empire. Although large sums of money, with diamonds and jewellery, passed through her hands, she never became rich. She maintained a large establishment in the Rue de Chaillot, which her admirers called Les Petits Tuileries, and kept the finest carriages and horses of any one in Paris. For some time she excited the greatest interest among all classes of Parisian society, and ladies imitated her dress and manners. She inherited the singing talents of her father, and at one period, when in want of money, made her appearance at Les Bouffes Parisiens as Cupid in Offenbach's opera 'Orphée aux Enfers.' On the night of her début the theatre was filled to overflowing; certain of the boxes sold at five hundred francs, and orchestra-stalls fetched 150 francs each. On the twelfth night she was hissed, and she never reappeared on the stage. At the commencement of the war in 1870 she came to England, but, being refused admission at the Grosvenor Hotel, London, she returned to Paris, converted her residence into an hospital, and spent twenty-five thousand francs on the care of the wounded. On the conclusion of the war the commissioners refused any recognition of her services, and on her appealing to the law she only recovered fifteen hundred francs. A son of Pierre Louis Duval, the butcher and founder of the restaurants known as the Bouillons Duval, however, befriended her. In the two years following his father's death (1870–1) M. Duval spent on Cora Pearl seventeen million francs; and when he reached the end of his fortune she left him with contempt. At various times she was expelled by the police from France, Baden, Monte Carlo, Nice, Vichy, and Rome. In her last years she occupied herself in compiling her 'Memoirs,' and sent round advance sheets to the people mentioned, offering to omit their names on suitable payment. The work as ultimately published in 1886 proved dull reading, and gave little information. She was often called La Lune Rousse, in allusion to her round face and red hair. She had small eyes, high cheek-bones, beautiful skin, and good teeth. Her figure was modelled in marble by M. Gallois in 1880. She died of cancer, in squalid poverty, in a small room in the Rue de Bassano, Paris, on 8 July 1886.

[Mémoires de Cora Pearl, Septième mille, Paris, 1886; Memoirs of Cora Pearl, London, 1886; Folly's Queens, New York, 1882, pp. 23–7; Vizetelly's Glances Back, 1893, ii. 232; Truth, 15 July 1886, pp. 105–6; Daily News, 10 July 1886, p. 5; London Figaro, 24 July 1886, p. 6, with portrait.] G. C. B.

PEARMAN, WILLIAM (*fl.* 1810–1824), vocalist, born at Manchester in 1792, entered the navy when a boy, but, being wounded in the leg before Copenhagen, retired with a pension from the service. He then made some unsatisfactory attempts to become an actor, appearing at Tooting, Surrey, at the Sans Pareil Theatre in the Strand, and with Macready's company at Newcastle. He at last achieved some measure of success as a singer of Dibdin's nautical songs at Sadler's Wells. John Addison (1766?–1844) [q.v.] gave him lessons, and enabled him to take leading singing parts in provincial theatres, while Macready again engaged him for musical drama at Newcastle.

On 7 July 1817 Pearman made his début at the English Opera House as Orlando in the 'Cabinet,' and he leaped into public favour. Of other impersonations in a similar vein of light opera, his Captain Macheath was especially good; he was said to be impressive in the prison scene, and, in short, the best Macheath on the stage. In 1819 Pearman was retained at Drury Lane for secondary parts, and in 1822 at Covent Garden; but his voice and style were ineffective in a large house. His best effort here was said to be the imitative song, in 'Clari,' composed for him by Bishop, 'Ne'er shall I forget the day.' In September 1824 he distinguished himself as Rodolph in 'Der Freischütz' at the English Opera House.

Pearman's natural voice, soft or veiled in tone (Oxberry describes it as smothered), did not reach beyond E, although he could force a G. His falsetto was sweet when audible. It was not possible for him to sing many tenor songs in their original key. He was a small man, well proportioned, and so easy and graceful that his lameness was scarcely perceived. A portrait of Pearman as Leander

in 'The Padlock,' drawn by De Wilde and engraved by J. Rogers, was published by Oxberry.

[Oxberry's Dramatic Biography, i. 143; Georgian Era, iv. 521; Brown's Dictionary of Musicians, p. 465; Harmonicon, October 1824.]

L. M. M.

PEARS, STEUART ADOLPHUS (1815–1875), schoolmaster and author, born at Pirbright, Surrey, on 20 Nov. 1815, was seventh son of the Rev. James Pears, headmaster of Bath grammar school, and brother of Sir Thomas Townsend Pears [q. v.] Pears was educated at Bath under his father, and was elected scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, in 1832. He graduated B.A. in June 1836, with a second class in *literæ humaniores*; was elected fellow of Corpus, and remained in residence till 1838. He then became tutor to Lord Goderich (the present Marquis of Ripon), of whom he took charge until 1842. In 1839 he gained the Ellerton theological prize for an essay on the 'Conduct and Character of St. Paul,' and in 1841 the Denyer theological prize for an essay on the 'Divinity of our Lord.' In 1843 he was sent abroad by the Parker Society to search the libraries of Zurich and other places for correspondence relating to the English Reformation. In the course of his researches he discovered a number of original letters in Latin from Sir Philip Sidney to his friend Hubert Languet, which he translated and published on his return (London, 1845). During 1844 and 1845 he was in residence at Oxford as dean of Corpus Christi College. In 1846 he was appointed fellow and tutor of Durham University; and in 1847, at the age of thirty-two, assistant-master at Harrow under Dr. Vaughan. In the same year he married the elder daughter of Temple Chevallier [q. v.], professor of mathematics and Hebrew in Durham University. He remained at Harrow until 1854, when he was elected head-master of Repton School. At the time there were about fifty boys in the school, many of them village boys; the schoolhouse contained only two or three class-rooms, and there were two boarding-houses.

In 1857 the tercentenary of the school was celebrated, and it was resolved to build a school-chapel, which a large increase in the number of boys had rendered necessary. A boarding-house was built by Pears about the same time. He built another in the next few years with class-rooms, fives-courts, and library; and several other houses were erected during his mastership. In 1869 he was examined before the endowed schools commission; and a scheme was settled for the government of the school, which was included in the list of first-grade public schools. In 1874 Pears resigned the headmastership, after nearly twenty years' service, during which he had raised the school from a local grammar school of fifty boys to a first-grade public school of nearly three hundred.

He was, shortly afterwards, presented by the president and fellows of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, to the living of Childrey, Berkshire, where he died on 15 Dec. 1875, aged 60. A fine speech-room, named after him, was subsequently erected at Repton in his memory.

Besides Sidney's correspondence, he published 'Sermons,' 1851; 'Three Lectures on Education,' 1859; 'Short Sermons on the Elements of Christian Truth,' 1861; and he edited 'Over the Sea, or Letters from an Officer in India to his Children at Home,' 1857.

[Ann. Reg. 1875, p. 156; private information.]

PEARS, Sir THOMAS TOWNSEND (1809–1892), major-general royal engineers, son of the Rev. James Pears, head-master of Bath grammar school, and brother of Steuart Adolphus Pears [q. v.], was born on 9 May 1809. He went to the East India Company's Military College at Addiscombe in 1823; received a commission as lieutenant in the Madras engineers on 17 June 1825, and, after the usual course of professional study at Chatham, sailed for India towards the end of 1826. He was employed in the public works department, and became a superintending engineer as early as 1828. Invalided to England in 1834, he returned to India overland through Persia in 1836, and was appointed commandant of the Madras sappers and miners. He was promoted second captain on 15 Sept. 1838. In 1839, while still commanding his corps, he was appointed chief engineer with the field force employed in Karnul. At the close of this expedition, which resulted in the seizure of the fort and town of Karnul and the subsequent capture of the nawab, he was despatched as field engineer with the force in China, and took part in the capture of the island of Chusan on the east coast in 1840.

In the following year he was appointed commanding engineer with the army in China under Sir Hugh Gough, and highly distinguished himself. In Sir Hugh Gough's despatch of 3 Oct. 1841, reporting the capture of the city of Tinghai, he observes that 'the scaling-ladders had been brought up in most difficult and rugged heights by the great exertions of the Madras sappers, and were gallantly planted under the direction

of Captain Pears, who was the first to ascend.' After the capture of the fortified city and heights of Chapoo, Pears was again honourably mentioned for his judgment and gallantry in placing the powder-bags which blew in the defences of a fort where a desperate resistance was offered. With the exception of the attack on Canton and the bombardment of Amoy, Pears was present as commanding engineer in every action of Sir Hugh Gough's China campaign of 1841–2. He was repeatedly mentioned in despatches, and at the close of the war was rewarded with a brevet majority on 23 Dec. 1842, and the companionship of the Bath.

On Pears's return to Madras he was employed in the public works department, as superintending engineer at Nagpúr, and in various other responsible situations, chiefly in the inception and development of the railway system. From 1851 to 1857 he was the consulting engineer for railways to the government of Madras. He was then appointed chief engineer in the public works department for Mysore, and was the trusted adviser of Sir Mark Cubbon [q. v.]

Pears was promoted lieutenant-colonel on 1 Aug. 1854, and colonel in the army on 1 Aug. 1857. He retired on a pension on 8 Feb. 1861 with the honorary rank of major-general, but, on his arrival in England, was offered, unsolicited, the appointment of military secretary at the India office in succession to Sir William Baker.

When Pears took office under Sir Charles Wood (afterwards Lord Halifax) the duties were formidable and delicate, consequent on the reorganisation of the whole military system after the abolition of the East India Company. Vested interests, often extravagantly asserted, had to be defended against attacks often unreasonable in their character. He gained the implicit trust of the several statesmen under whom he served—Sir Charles Wood, Sir Stafford Northcote, the Duke of Argyll, and Lord Salisbury. The organisation at home of the arrangements for the Abyssinian expedition was entrusted to him, and Sir Stafford Northcote wrote to him expressing the highest appreciation of his labours. On 13 June 1871 his services were recognised by the honour of a civil K.C.B. He retired in 1877 from the public service. He died at his residence, Eton Lodge, Putney, on 7 Oct. 1892, and was buried in Mortlake cemetery.

Pears married, at Madras, on 31 Dec. 1840, Bellina Marianne, daughter of Captain Charles Johnston of the Madras army. She died at Putney on 17 Jan. 1892. By her he had seven children, of whom six survive him. His eldest son, in the Bengal civil service, collector of Budáon, died at Allahabád in 1883. His second son, Major T. C. Pears, Bengal staff corps, is political agent at Ulwar, Rajputana. One daughter married the Rev. Loraine Estridge, vicar of Bursledon, Hampshire; and another, J. H. Etherington-Smith, barrister-at-law and recorder of Newark. A portrait of Pears, by W. W. Ouless, R.A., is in the possession of Mrs. Etherington-Smith.

[Despatches; private information; Vibart's History of the Madras Engineers, 1883, and his Addiscombe, 1894; Ouchterlony's Chinese War, 1844; India Office Records; Royal Engineers' Journal, November, 1892.] R. H. V.

PEARSALL, RICHARD (1698–1762), dissenting divine, was born at Kidderminster 29 Aug. 1698. His eldest sister, Mrs. Hannah Housman, extracts from whose diary he published, stimulated his religious temper. Another sister, Phœbe, was married to Joseph Williams, esq., of Kidderminster, whose 'Diary' was published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge. Richard was educated at a dissenting academy at Tewkesbury under Samuel Jones. Joseph Butler, author of the 'Analogy,' and Secker (afterwards archbishop of Canterbury) were among his fellow-students. He was admitted to the ministry among the dissenters before 1721 (*Evang. Mag.* xviii. 377).

He was ordained at Bromyard in Herefordshire, and succeeded Samuel Philips (*d.* 1721), whose daughter he married, in the pastorate of the presbyterian (now independent) congregation there. He removed in 1731 to Warminster in Wiltshire, where he apparently ministered to a body of seceders who charged the original presbyterian society with Arianism. From 1747 until 1762 he was minister of the large independent church at Taunton, Somerset. He died at Taunton on 10 Nov. 1762. In the 'Evangelical Magazine' (xviii. 377) there is a fine portrait, engraved by Ridley.

Pearsall as a religious writer was a feeble imitator of James Hervey (1714–1758) [q. v.], who gave him much encouragement (cf. Hervey, *Theron and Aspasio*, vol. iii. letter 9). Apart from a few tracts, sermons, and letters, Pearsall's works were: 1. 'The Power and Pleasure of the Divine Life exemplified in the late Mrs. Housman of Kidderminster, Worcester, as extracted from her own papers,' London, 1744; new edit. 1832, London (edited by Charles Gilbert). 2. 'Contemplations on the Ocean, Harvest, Sickness, and the Last Judgment, in a series of letters to a friend,' London, 1753; Nottingham, 1801; Evesham, 1804. 3. 'Meditations on

Butterflies: philosophical and devotional, in two letters to a lady,' London, 1758. 4. 'Reliquiæ Sacræ, or Meditations on Select Passages of Scripture and Sacred Dialogues between a Father and his Children; published from his MSS., designed for the press by Thomas Gibbons, D.D.,' London, 1765 (only one volume published).

Some poems by Pearsall, one of which appeared in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' March 1736, are printed in 'Extracts from the Diary, Meditations, and Letters of Mr. Joseph Williams [Pearsall's brother-in-law],' Shrewsbury, 1779.

[Memoir by Gibbons, prefixed to Reliquiæ Sacræ (supra); Mrs. Housman's Diary (supra), pp. 68, 82, 90, and editor's preface to 1832 reprint; Mayo Gunn's Nonconformists in Warminster; Evangelical Mag. xviii. 377; Diary of Joseph Williams of Kidderminster; Middleton's Biographia Evangelica, iv. 390; Jerome Murch's Presbyterian and Baptist Churches in the West, pp. 86, 193; Bogue and Bennett, iv. 293; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Wilson's Dissenting Churches, i. 352; information kindly sent by the Rev. W. B. Row, minister of the Independent Church at Bromyard, and by Mr. W. Frank Morgan of Warminster.] W. A. S.

**PEARSALL, ROBERT LUCAS** (DE) (1795–1856), musical composer, was born at Clifton on 14 March 1795. His father, Richard Pearsall, had held a commission in the army; his maternal grandmother, Philippa Still, was a descendant of John Still, bishop of Bath and Wells. His mother was Elizabeth Lucas, from whom he inherited his musical taste. At her desire he was educated (by private tutors) for the bar, to which he was called in 1821. He went on the western circuit for four years. During that period he was a constant contributor to 'Blackwood's' and other magazines.

His musical talent was precocious, and at thirteen he wrote a cantata, 'Saul and the Witch of Endor,' which was privately printed. In 1825 he went abroad to recruit his health, and, settling at Mainz, where he remained four years, he studied music under Josef Panny, an Austrian, who directed a private music-school there. In 1829 he returned for a year to England, staying at his seat, Willsbridge House in Gloucestershire. Soon removing to Carlsruhe, for the purpose of educating his children, he continued composing. Among other works he wrote an overture to 'Macbeth,' with witches' chorus, which, after a spell of popularity in Germany, was published at Mainz in 1839. At Munich Pearsall subsequently studied the strict style of church music under Caspar Ett (1788–1847), an organist and teacher of repute. From Munich he went to Vienna, where he formed a lasting friendship with Kiesewetter, and he visited Nuremberg, where he investigated the 'Kiss of the Virgin,' a mode of torture which he described in 'Archæologia.'

In 1836 he returned once more to England, and became in the following year one of the first members of the Bristol Madrigal Society, a body which during the early years of its existence frequently performed his compositions. It was probably due to the encouragement offered him by this society that Pearsall devoted himself to the composition of madrigals, with which his name is chiefly identified. An essay by him on the madrigalian style was published in Germany.

In 1837 he sold his property of Willsbridge, and returned to the continent. In 1842 he purchased the beautiful castle of Wartensee, on the lake of Constance. With Schnyder von Wartensee, a former owner of the castle, Pearsall had previously studied; and, after a brief visit (his last) to England in 1847, he restored the ruined parts of his castle, where he passed the remainder of his life. At Wartensee Pearsall kept open house, and was frequently visited by men eminent in music, literature, and archæology. There, too, he wrote the greatest number and the best of his musical compositions. He died suddenly, of apoplexy, on 5 Aug. 1856, and was buried in a vault in the chapel of Wartensee. Before his death he was received by his friend the bishop of St. Gall into the Roman church, and added the prefix 'de' to his surname. He left a widow, a son, and two daughters, one of whom, Elizabeth Still, married Charles Wyndham Stanhope, seventh earl of Harrington, in 1839.

Pearsall's works include many settings of psalms (68th, 1847; 77th and 57th, 1849); a requiem, which he considered his *chef d'œuvre*; forty-seven part-songs, madrigals, including 'The Hardy Norseman,' 'Sir Patrick Spens' in ten parts, 'Great God of Love,' 'Lay a Garland on her Hearse.' The last two, for eight voices, and his arrangement of 'In dulci jubilo' (four voices) deserve a place among the finest specimens of English part-writing. Pearsall's madrigals combine 'artistically the quaintness of the old style with modern grace and elegance' (GROVE, *Dict. of Music*, ii. 659*a*, s.v. 'Part-song'). Besides his numerous compositions, Pearsall co-operated in editing the old St. Gall hymn-book, which was published under the title 'Katholisches Gesangbuch zum Gebrauch bei dem öffentlichen Gottesdienste' in 1863. Pearsall was also an excellent draughtsman, and assisted in illustrating von

Hefter's 'Geschichte der Geräthschaften des Mittelalters.' He also published translations in English verse of 'Faust' and 'Wilhelm Tell.' His extensive and valuable library of musical treatises was presented by his heirs to the Benedictine Abbey at Einsiedeln in Switzerland.

[Grove's Dict. of Music, passim; an excellent brief memorial of De Pearsall was published by Mr. Julian Marshall in the Musical Times, 1882, p. 376, which corrected many errors that had appeared in previous notices; Novello's catalogues.] R. H. L.

**PEARSE.** [See also PEARCE and PIERCE.]

**PEARSE, EDWARD** (1633?–1674?), nonconformist divine, born about 1633, matriculated as a servitor from St. John's College, Oxford, on 10 April 1652, and graduated B.A. on 27 June 1654. In June 1657 he was appointed morning preacher at St. Margaret's, Westminster, the former preacher and lecturer having been removed by the Protector's injunction (MACKENZIE WALCOTT, *St. Margaret's*, p. 93 *n.*) On 31 Dec. his salary was increased by 50*l.* a year (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. Ser. 1657–8, p. 239); but it does not appear that he was appointed regular incumbent, and Calamy's statement that he was ejected in 1662 probably only means that he lost his post as preacher. He seems to have continued to live in London, and was lying ill at Hampstead in October 1673; he apparently died there early in the next year. An engraved portrait by R. White is stated by Granger and Bromley to have been prefixed to Pearse's 'Last Legacy,' 1673, where his age is given as forty.

He wrote religious works of evangelical tone which passed through numerous editions. The chief are: 1. 'The Best Match, or the Soul's Espousal to Christ,' 1673, 8vo. Other editions appeared in 1676, 12mo; 1683, 8vo; 1752, 12mo; 1831, 12mo (Religious Tract Society); 1839, 8vo; and 1873, 8vo. 2. 'A Beam of Divine Glory, or the Unchangeableness of God . . . whereunto is added the Soul's Rest in God,' 1674, 8vo. These two discourses were also published under the title 'Mr. Pearse's last Legacy, being two Discourses,' &c. The only edition in the British Museum is the third, dated 1704, 12mo; but Granger mentions one in 1673. 3. 'The Great Concern, or a Serious Warning for a timely and thorough Preparation for Death . . .' 17th edit., London, 1692, 12mo; a 25th edit. appeared in 1715, 12mo, and a new edition in 1840.

Pearse has been confused by Wood and others with another EDWARD PEARSE (1631–1694), divine, 'a Welshman born,' who matriculated from Jesus College, Oxford, on 7 Dec. 1650, graduated B.A. on 10 March 1654–5, and M.A. on 25 June 1657. He is then stated to have become rector of St. Michael's, Crooked Lane, London. In 1663 he became vicar of Duston, rector of Aldwinckle All Saints, and of Cottesbrooke, all in Northamptonshire. He died at Cottesbrooke on 2 Sept. 1694, aged 63, and was buried in the chancel of his church. He was licensed on 15 May 1666, being described as about thirty-three years of age, to marry Elizabeth, niece of Sir John Langham, bart., whose patronage he enjoyed. She died on 4 Aug. 1705, aged 72, and was buried by her husband's side, leaving two sons—John (1667–1732), who succeeded him as rector of Cottesbrooke; and William. Pearse was author of: 1. 'The State of Northampton from the beginning of the Fire on Sept. 20th 1675 to Nov. 5th. By a County Minister,' 1675, 4to. 2. 'The Conformist's Plea for the Nonconformists,' 1681, 4to; 2nd edit., corrected and enlarged, 1681; 3rd edit., 'enlarged with a full Vindication of the Nonconformists from the Charge of the Murder of the late King,' 1683; all of these editions are in the Bodleian, but none in the British Museum. 3. 'The Conformist's Second Plea for the Nonconformists. By a charitable and compassionate Conformist, author of the former Plea,' 1682, 4to; 2nd edit. in the same year. 4. 'The Conformist's Third Plea,' &c., 1682, 4to. 5. 'The Conformist's Fourth Plea,' &c., 1683, 4to. These pleas are referred to by Dr. Robert South [q. v.] when he denounced 'all the Pleas and Apologies for the Nonconformists (tho' made by some Conformists themselves)' as 'senceless and irrational' (*Sermons*, edit. 1711–44, vi. 33).

No relationship has been traced between either of the foregoing and WILLIAM PEARSE (1625–1691), ejected minister, who was son of Francis Pearse of Ermington, Devonshire. He studied at Exeter College, Oxford (1649–50), was presented to the parish church of Dunsford on 25 Dec. 1655, and was ejected on the passing of the Act of Uniformity in 1662. He preached privately at Tavistock for ten years. Upon the passing of the Indulgence Act in 1672 he received a license for himself and his house, but was afterwards much persecuted, being in January 1683 committed to the New Prison. At the Revolution of 1688 he was instrumental in erecting a meeting-house at Ashburton, where he continued till his death, on 17 March 1691, aged 65. He published 'A Present for Youth, and an Example for the Aged, being some Remains of his Daughter, Damaris Pearse.'

[Works in Brit. Museum and Bodleian Libraries; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714 Wood's Athenæ, iv. 700–1, &c.; Granger's Biogr Hist. iii. 335; White Kennett's Register and Chron. ed. 1728, p. 835; Bridges's Northamptonshire, i. 448, 556; Chester's London Marriage Licenses; Palmer's Nonconformist's Memorial, i. 149; Darling's Cycl. Bibl. ii. 2317–18; McClintock and Strong's Cycl. of Biblical Literature; authorities quoted.] A. F. P.

PEARSE, THOMAS DEANE (1738?–1789), colonel, born about 1738, after serving as lieutenant in the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich, was appointed second lieutenant royal artillery on 24 Oct. 1761, first lieutenant on 3 Feb. 1766, and was transferred to the East India Company's service in February 1768. He was made major in the Bengal artillery on 2 Sept. 1768, lieutenant-colonel on 30 Oct. 1769, and colonel on 12 June 1779. In India he was high in the favour of Warren Hastings, the governor-general, and acted as Hastings's second in his duel with Sir Philip Francis [q. v.] on 17 Aug. 1779.

In 1781, on the formation of the Bengal sepoy corps, Warren Hastings resolved on sending a detachment of five regiments to the relief of the presidency of Fort St. George. This important force was assembled at Midnapoor, and the command of it was conferred on Pearse. Artillery officers of the East India Company's army, in the early wars in India, held general commands, and were not, as in the royal artillery, confined to their department of the army. The detachment consisted of the 12th, 13th, 24th, 25th, and 26th regiments. They proceeded on their march through Orissa and the northern circars; and, having reached the vicinity of Madras about the middle of 1781, the Bengal troops joined the other forces in the field, under the commander-in-chief, Sir Eyre Coote [q. v.]; and during the arduous warfare in which they were engaged from that period down to the cessation of hostilities before Cudalore in June 1783, the Bengal corps, under Pearse, established for themselves a lasting reputation. The attack on the French lines at Cudalore was one of the first occasions on which European troops and the disciplined natives of India had met at the point of the bayonet. Lieutenant (afterwards Sir) John Kennaway [q. v.] was Pearse's Persian secretary in the campaign. Some two thousand out of the five thousand troops, the veteran remains of those gallant corps, returned to Bengal early in 1785, when their encampment was visited by the governor-general in person, and his testimony of their services was recorded in the general orders issued at Fort William on 22 Jan. 1785, and three days later in the camp at Ghyretty. In the latter the governor-general desires that 'the commanding officer, Colonel Pearse, whom he is proud to call his friend, will make [his thanks] known in public orders to the officers, his countrymen, and to the native officers and private sepoys of the detachment.' For his services in the defence of the company's territories in the Carnatic Pearse received a sword of honour.

In May 1785 Pearse contributed a paper on 'Two Hindu Festivals and the Indian Sphinx' to the proceedings of the Asiatic Society at Calcutta, which was subsequently published in 'Dissertations and Miscellaneous Pieces relating to the History and Antiquities . . . of Asia, by Sir W. Jones . . . and others, Dublin,' 1793. Pearse died on the Ganges on 15 June 1789.

[India Office Records: Philippart's East India Military Calendar; Malleson's Decisive Battles of India; cf. Brit. Mus. Addit. MSS. 29147–193 (Warren Hastings Papers).] B. H. S.

PEARSON. [See also PEERSON, PEIRSON, and PIERSON.]

PEARSON, ALEXANDER (*d.* 1657), lord of session, under the title of LORD SOUTHALL, is supposed to have been the son of Alexander Pearson who was one of the counsel for Lord Balmerino in 1634 (BRUNTON and HAIG, *Senators of the College of Justice*, p. 338), but not improbably he himself acted as Balmerino's counsel. Possibly also he was the Alexander Pearson who was appointed in 1638 one of a committee to examine if certain registers of the kirk were full and authentic (BAILLIE, *Letters and Journals*, i. 129), and in 1641 was appointed, with other advocates, to draw up the summons and libel against Montrose (*ib.* p. 384). Along with seven others he was in March 1649 nominated a lord of session, in succession to those lords who had been cashiered for their loyalty (BALFOUR, *Annals*, iii. 390; GUTHRY, *Memoirs*, p. 300). He was also shortly afterwards named one of a committee for the revision of the laws and acts of parliament, a commissioner for the plantation of kirks, and one of the visitors of the university of Edinburgh. He sat as lord of session until the supremacy of Cromwell in 1651 (NICOLL, *Diary*, p. 76), and in October 1653 he was appointed a commissioner of judicature by the English parliament (*ib.* p. 115). In 1654 he was conjoined, with Sir John Hope of Craighall, as judge of the high court; but, according to Nicoll, he was 'not comparable to Sir John Nather [*sic*] in judgement nor actioun' (*ib.* p. 122). In November 1655 he

was continued an extraordinary judge (*ib.* p. 168). He died at Edinburgh on 12 May 1657 (LAMONT, *Diary*, p. 98).

[The authorities mentioned in the text.]

T. F. H.

PEARSON, ANTHONY (1628-1670?), quaker, of Ramshaw Hall, West Auckland, Durham, was probably born there in 1628. After a good education and some training in law, he became, in 1648, secretary to Sir Arthur Hesilrige [q. v.] He acted as clerk and registrar of the committee for compounding from its appointment on 2 March 1649 (*Cal. State Papers, Committee for Compounding*, pp. 812, 821). On 10 Feb. 1651–2 Pearson was nominated by the committee sequestration commissioner for the county of Durham (*ib.* pp. 541, 649).

On the sale of bishops' lands Pearson purchased the manors of Aspatricke, Cumberland (31 May 1650), and Marrowlee, Northumberland (5 March 1653), with other delinquents' estates belonging to Sir Thomas Riddell and the Marquis of Newcastle (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1661–2, p. 239), but he continued to reside at Ramshaw. He was appointed a justice of the peace in three counties, and went on circuit to Appleby, Westmoreland, in January 1652. James Nayler [q. v.], the quaker, was tried before him there (SEWEL, *Hist. of the Rise, &c.* ii. 432). Pearson appears to have regarded him as a dangerous fanatic (see NAYLER, *Works*, pp. 11–16, and NICHOLSON and BURNS, *Hist. of Westmoreland*, i. 537 seq.), but FOX, who had previously been to his house, made a better impression. So attracted was Pearson by the quaker's teaching that he repaired to Swarthmore Hall, and came under the strong personal influence of Margaret Fell [q. v.] and her daughters. In a letter to Alexander Parker [q. v.], dated 9 May 1653, he says he heard from her the truth of quakerism, which he had 'thought only the product of giddy brains' (*Swarthmore MSS.*) Pearson and his wife afterwards accompanied Fox to Bootle in Cumberland, and Pearson was thenceforth a devoted follower of Fox (cf. *Journal*, p. 109). On 3 Oct. Pearson wrote 'An Address to the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England' (4to, no printer's name or place), representing in measured terms the unjust persecution of the quakers.

In the spring of 1654 he was in London, and there wrote 'A few Words to all Judges, Justices, and Ministers of the Law in England,' London, Giles Calvert, 1654. On his return home he wrote to Fox, urging that no quakers should go to London 'save in the clear and pure movings of the Spirit, for there were many mighty in wisdom, and weak ones would suffer the truth to be trampled on.' The same year he was sent to Scotland as a commissioner for the administration of justice (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1654, p. 126). On 9 May 1655 Pearson returned to London, and began a systematic visitation of all law courts, to gather information about tithes, and the treatment of the quakers who declined to pay them (BARCLAY, *Letters of Early Friends*, pp. 31, 33, 34). On 28 May he delivered to Cromwell papers gathered by Thomas Aldam [q. v.] and himself during a visit to most of the principal prisons in England as to the commitments (*Swarthmore MSS.*) Cromwell promised to read the papers, but was evidently averse to the release of prisoners. Aldam was soon after imprisoned, and Pearson with great difficulty, and after 'seeing Treasury Barons of Exchequer and other great men about it,' at last obtained, in a remarkable personal interview with Cromwell, a warrant for his discharge under the Protector's own hand.

This interview is related in a letter, dated 18 July 1654, from Pearson to George Fox (*ib.*) On the previous Sunday, near sundown, the Protector was walking alone on the leads of the housetop, after his return from chapel. He led Pearson to a gallery, and 'kindly asked me how I did, with his hat pulled off.' The quaker remained covered, stood still, and gave him not a word. Fixing his eyes on Cromwell, Pearson fell into a trance, and at length began an impassioned and highly mystical harangue. The late wars he described as a figure, not for the Protector's or any person's interest, but for 'the seed's sake.' Cromwell had been raised up to throw down oppression, and was alone responsible for the cruel persecution of the quakers. Cromwell's wife and fifty or more ladies and gentlemen then coming in, Pearson 'cleared his conscience to them all;' but the Protector now grew weary, and bade them let him go, maintaining that 'the light within was an unsafe guide, since it led the ranters and their followers into all manner of excesses.' Pearson adds, 'I think he will never suffer me to see him again.'

Pearson's well-known work, 'The great Case of Tythes truly stated, clearly opened, and fully resolved. By a Countrey-man, A. P.,' London, was published in 1657. The preface is addressed to the 'Countrey-men, Farmers, and Husbandmen of England.' A second edition was published in 1658; a third, corrected and amended, in 1659. An answer to this edition was published by Immanuel Bourne [q. v.] On 22 June 1659 he delivered, with Thomas Aldam, the

'Friends' Subscription against Tithes' to parliament (BARCLAY, *Letters*, p. 71). He acted as clerk to the general meeting of Durham Friends held on 1 Oct. 1659 (*Letters*, p. 292).

At the Restoration Pearson's loyalty was suspected. He was described as 'the principal quaker in the north, having meetings of at least one hundred in his house almost every night, with two or three horse-loads of skeene knives and daggers concealed there' (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. p. 93 *a*). He admitted to having stored the arms, but for the service of the king (*Cal. State Papers*, 1661–2, p. 239). On 14 Dec. 1661 he was examined at Whitehall, and reported that he had lately been in Scotland by direction of Sir John Shaw and Sir Nicholas Crisp, that he had not corresponded with any one there since the Restoration, nor borne arms against the king. He was apprehended on 16 Jan. 1662 for being in London contrary to the proclamation, but released under a certificate of Sir Edward Nicholas [q. v.], secretary of state. After this he appears to have renounced his quakerism, in his endeavour to stand well with the monarchy, going so far as to say that, although he had 'embraced the chimerical notions of those times and ran into excesses in his zeal for religion, he was still one of the best friends to the king's distressed servants or to expelled ministers.' He protested that he was won over to different opinions many years ago, 'when it was not seasonable to express them,' by Sir William D'Arcy, and in proof of sincerity surrendered the delinquents' estates that he had bought (*loc cit.*) He was further employed in Edinburgh by the government (cf. *Cal. State Papers*, 1663–4, p. 191).

In 1665 he was under-sheriff for the county of Durham, and high in favour with the bishop, John Cosin [q. v.], in whose nomination the office was (*ib.* 1664–5, p. 482, and 1665–6, p. 224). Pearson probably died at Ramshaw Hall in 1670. He appears to have been a man of many parts, and one who came to the front in whatever he did, but without much stability.

He married some time before May 1652. A daughter Grace married Giles Chambers, and became a noted quaker minister, travelling through England, Ireland, and Wales. She died in 1760, aged between 90 and 100 (*Notes and Queries*, 1st ser. xii. 520).

Pearson's work on tithes was reprinted, London and Dublin, 1730, and again in the same year (London, J. Sowle), with 'an Appendix thereto.' To which is added a 'Defence of some other Principles held by the People called Quakers . . . . By J. M.,' i.e. Josiah Martin [q. v.] Another edition, with a new appendix, consisting of 'An Account of Tithes,' by Thomas Ellwood, Thomas Bennett, and others, was published London, Luke Hinde, 1754, 8vo, and reprinted as the seventh edition, 1762. Subsequent editions have appeared, one by the Tract Association of the Society of Friends being dated 1850.

[Authorities quoted above; Lilburne's Just Reproof to Haberdashers' Hall, 1651, p. 6; Janney's Hist. of Friends, i. 162, 163; Fox's Journal (fol. ed.), pp. 95, 108, 109, 161, 181, 182, 265, 286, 456; Barclay's Letters of Early Friends, pp. 31, 33, 34, 71, 292; Sewel's Hist. of the Rise, &c., ed. 1834, i. 86, 95, 104, 240, ii. 431; Webb's Fells of Swarthmore, pp. 47, 59, 71, 81; Smith's Catalogue; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. iii. 979; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1654 p. 126, 1658–9 p. 360, 1659–60 p. 127, 1661–2 pp. 177, 181, 239, 244, 1663–4 p. 191, 1664–5, p. 482, 1665–6 p. 224; Committee for Compounding, pp. 201, 541, 679, 812, 821, 1739; Thurloe State Papers, vi. 811. An autograph letter from Pearson is Addit. MS. 21425, fol. 178. Six letters from him are in the Swarthmore MSS. at Devonshire House, and continual mention of him is to be found in the letters from Thomas Willan and George Taylor of Kendal, to Margaret Fell, in the same collection.] C. F. S.

**PEARSON, CHARLES HENRY** (1830–1894), colonial minister and historian, born at Islington on 7 Sept. 1830, was fourth son of the Rev. John Norman Pearson [q. v.] His brother, Sir John Pearson the judge, is separately noticed. He was a quiet boy, and, his parents belonging to the evangelical party, he was when quite young accustomed to read many religious books. Having, until the age of twelve, been taught by his father, he was in 1843 sent to Rugby school, where he remained until May 1846. After being for a year with a private tutor, he entered King's College, London, in 1847, and that year obtained the prize for English poetry. At King's College he was diligent, became a disciple of Frederick Denison Maurice [q. v.], and highly valued the teaching of Professor John Sherren Brewer [q. v.] While acting as a special constable on 10 April 1848, the day of the chartist demonstration, he contracted a chill, which brought on a long and severe illness and left permanent bad effects on his constitution. He matriculated as a commoner from Oriel College, Oxford, in June 1849, obtained a scholarship at Exeter College the next year, and was in the first class in the *literæ humaniores* examination in the Michaelmas term of 1852. He graduated B.A. in 1853, proceeding M.A. in 1856. From boyhood he knew French, and while an undergraduate he studied, in addition to his uni-

versity work, German, of which he read much, Bohemian, Italian, and Swedish; he belonged to a small society for intellectual discussion, which included some of the most promising among the younger members of the university, and he was president of the Union debating society. Intending to enter the medical profession, he read anatomy and physiology at Oxford for about two years after taking his degree, employing himself also in private tuition. In Easter term 1854 he was elected a fellow of Oriel, and soon after, being attacked by pleurisy, gave up his intention of becoming a physician, on the advice of his doctors. In the following year he was appointed lecturer on English literature, and shortly afterwards professor of modern history at King's College, London. He obtained the prize for a poem on a sacred subject at Oxford in 1857 with a poem on the death of Jacob, and about that time became a contributor to the 'Saturday Review.' He was editor of the short-lived 'National Review' in 1862–3. Believing that his religious opinions were not in harmony with those held by the authorities at King's College, he proposed to the principal, Dr. Richard William Jelf [q. v.], to resign his professorship without making the cause of his resignation public, but was persuaded by Jelf to retain office, and did so until 1865. For several years he travelled much in Europe, applying himself when abroad to the study of foreign languages, and in 1865 visited Australia, and remained there about a year. From 1869 to 1871 he lectured on modern history at Trinity College, Cambridge.

Finding that his eyesight was suffering, he resolved to emigrate in 1871, and to engage in sheep-farming in South Australia. He landed in Australia in December, and his health was much strengthened by his new mode of life. On 6 Dec. 1872 he married, at Gawler, Edith Lucille, daughter of Philip Butler of Tickford Abbey, Buckinghamshire. About a year after his marriage he gave up farming, and, leaving South Australia, became in 1874 lecturer on history at the university of Melbourne. He resigned this post in 1875, and was appointed to the head-mastership of the Ladies' Presbyterian College, which he resigned in 1877, on account of the dislike with which the patrons of the college regarded his advocacy of a policy with reference to the land question contrary to their own (*The Age*, 4 June 1894). He took a deep interest in the public affairs of the colony; from this time onwards contributed freely to its newspapers; and in 1877 unsuccessfully contested the representation of Boroondara in the liberal interest. Having been appointed by the minister of education to inquire into, and report on, the state of education in Victoria, and the best and most economical mode of rendering it completely free, he drew up an exhaustive report, issued in the spring of 1878, advocating several changes of system, some of which have since been adopted. For this report, which involved much labour, he received a fee of 1,000*l*. He was in the same year elected member of the legislative assembly for Castlemaine. He advocated an advanced liberal policy, specially with regard to a progressive taxation of landed estates. Being chosen to accompany Mr. (afterwards Sir) Graham Berry on his unsuccessful mission to England to request the intervention of the home government in a difficulty between the houses of the legislature, he left Australia on 27 Dec. and returned in June 1879. He was re-elected for Castlemaine in 1880, and was minister without portfolio in the Berry administration from the August of that year until July 1881, when he was offered the agent-generalship of Victoria; but the ministry being then on the point of being turned out, he did not think that it would be honourable to take the office, and accordingly declined it. He was elected in 1883 for the East Bourke boroughs, for which he sat until the general election in April 1892, when he did not contest the seat. On the formation of the Gillies and Deakin administration, in February 1886, he became minister of education, and held that office until November 1890.

His official duties were congenial to him, and he performed them zealously, introducing many changes into the system of education in the colony. Working in opposition to the general colonial tendency, he set himself to separate primary from secondary education, and to this end founded two hundred scholarships, admitting the holders of them to pass from primary to high schools. He tried, though without success, to make the compulsory clauses of the Education Act as operative as like provisions in Switzerland, reduced the limit of compulsory attendance at school from fifteen to thirteen years of age, and the statutory amount of attendances from forty to thirty days a quarter. He largely raised the pay of certificated teachers, though he made some saving in that direction by employing teachers of inferior quality in very small schools. Believing strongly in the importance of technical education, he procured liberal endowments for technical schools, and increased their number; and, having obtained the assistance of an expert from England, he reorganised

the teaching of drawing. He was a firm supporter of secular education as established in the colony, thinking it the only means of securing perfect fairness towards all religious denominations. Some parts of his work as minister are embodied in the Act for Amending the Education Act, which he succeeded in carrying through both the houses of the colonial parliament in 1889. At the time of his resignation of office he was preparing a scheme for the abolition of the system of payment by results.

An attack of influenza with pneumonia in 1892 led to his retirement from the assembly and to his return to England, where for a time his health was restored. Owing to pecuniary losses he accepted in 1893 the post of permanent secretary to the agent-general. He contributed to some English journals, and in 1893 published his 'National Life and Character: a Forecast,' which attracted general attention. In this book Pearson arrived at very pessimistic conclusions respecting the future of mankind. He prophesied the triumph of state socialism, the substitution of the state for the church, the loosening of family bonds, the tyranny of industrial organisations, and other developments consequent on the growth of modern democracy in highly civilised countries. He pointed out that these developments imply the decay of character, of independent genius, and of all that is best and noblest; and he argued that the time will come when Europeans will find that the increase of the black and yellow races will be so far greater in proportion to the white that Chinamen and negroes will become masterful factors in the trade and politics of the world. A second edition appeared in 1894, and the reception of the work held out to its author the hope of further literary success. He died in London on 29 May 1894, in his sixty-fourth year, his wife and three daughters surviving him. Speeches were made by the head of the government of Victoria and others in the assembly on 5 June expressing the general regret with which the news of his death had been received, and the high esteem felt for him by men of different parties. In 1895 his widow was granted a pension of 100*l.* on the civil list.

Pearson was a polished speaker, and his literary style was simple and graceful. Though he was primarily a man of letters, he showed practical ability in public affairs. His convictions were strong, and he stated them courageously and in forcible language, yet he never spoke harshly of his opponents; and one of the foremost of them, in a speech made in the legislative assembly on his death, declared that he had not left a personal enemy, and that he had raised the tone of debate in the house. Throughout his whole career he showed a fine sense of honour, and was always ready to sacrifice his personal interests to what he believed to be right. He was an honorary LL.D. of the university of St. Andrews.

In addition to 'National Life and Character,' magazine articles, contributions to journalism, and the report already noticed, his published works are: 1. 'Russia, by a recent Traveller,' 1859, written after a visit to that country in the previous year. 2. 'The Early and Middle Ages of England,' 1861, a brightly written and interesting book, though not fully representing the then state of historical scholarship, and afterwards held unsatisfactory by the author, who extensively revised it, and republished it as the first volume of 3. 'The History of England during the Early and Middle Ages,' 1867, 2 vols., the second volume of which continues the history from the accession of John to the death of Edward I. This book was reviewed with some bitterness by E. A. Freeman in the 'Fortnightly Review,' 1868 (vol. ix. new ser. iii. pp. 397 sqq.), though the value of the second volume was acknowledged by him as well as by all others. Pearson replied to Freeman's review, referring to other criticisms which had appeared elsewhere anonymously, though coming, as he believed, from the same quarter, in a pamphlet entitled 4. 'A Short Answer to Mr. Freeman's Strictures,' &c. 5. 'An Essay on the Working of Australian Institutions' in 'Essays on Reform,' 1867. 6. 'An Essay' in 'Essays on Woman's Work,' 1869. 7. 'Historic Maps of England during the first Thirteen Centuries,' 1870, a work of much value. 8. 'English History in the Fourteenth Century,' 1873, a handbook. 9. 'A Brief Statement of the Constitutional Question in Victoria' [1879 ?], a pamphlet. 10. 'An English Grammar,' with Professor H. A. Strong, published in Australia. Pearson also edited Blaauw's [see BLAAUW, WILLIAM HENRY] 'Barons' War,' 1871, and Thirteen Satires of Juvenal,' with Professor Strong, Oxford, 1887, 1892.

[Mennell's Dict. of Australian Biogr.; Age (Melbourne), 4 and 6 June 1894; Argus (Melbourne), 2 June 1894; Westminster Gazette, 1 June 1894, with portrait; Academy, 9 June 1894; Sydney Mail, 16 June 1894, with portrait; private information.] W. H.

**PEARSON, EDWARD** (1756–1811), theologian, was born at St. George's Tombland in Norwich on 25 Oct. 1756. His father, Edward Pearson (*d.* 1786), who was descended from a collateral branch of the family of Dr.

John Pearson [q. v.], bishop of Chester, followed the business of a wool-stapler at Norwich, but shortly after 1756 he removed to Tattingstone, Suffolk, where he obtained the post of governor of the local poorhouse. Edward, the eldest son, was educated at home, and entered as sizar at Sidney-Sussex College, Cambridge, on 7 May 1778. He attracted the favourable notice of Dr. William Elliston, the master; and the Rev. John Hey, the college tutor, who held the rectory of Passenham, Northamptonshire, soon appointed him his curate (26 April 1781). Pearson was ordained by the bishop of Peterborough on 26 June 1781. He came out sixth senior optime in the mathematical tripos for 1782, proceeded to the degree of B.A. (M.A. 1785, B.D. 1792), and was elected fellow of his college. In 1786 he obtained the Norrisian prize for an essay on 'The Goodness of God as manifested in the Mission of Jesus Christ.' Early in 1788 he became tutor of Sidney-Sussex College, and at the same time undertook the curacy of Pampisford, about seven miles from Cambridge. He had previously held curacies successively not only at Passenham, but also at Cosgrove and at Strutton. He obtained fame as a preacher, and published in 1798 'Thirteen Discourses to Academic Youth, delivered at St. Mary's, Cambridge.' In 1796 he left Cambridge to become vicar of Rempstone, Nottinghamshire, and thenceforth took a prominent position as a controversialist. In 1800 he published a searching criticism of Dr. Paley's system, entitled 'Remarks on the Theory of Morals,' which was followed in 1801 by 'Annotations on the Practical Part of Dr. Paley's Work.' He next attacked the writings in defence of justification by faith published by John Overton (1763–1838) [q. v.] Of his tracts on this subject the most important is 'Remarks on the Controversy subsisting, or supposed to subsist, between the Arminian and Calvinistic Ministers of the Church of England' (June 1802).

In May 1806 Pearson proposed, in the 'Orthodox Churchman's Magazine,' the foundation of 'a ritual professorship in divinity' at Cambridge. Spencer Perceval, then chancellor of the exchequer, approved the scheme, and offered to guarantee the expenses for five years; but the academic authorities refused to adopt it. Pearson was a strong advocate of Perceval's conservative policy in church matters, and issued, among other tracts in this connection, 'Remarks on the Dangers which threaten the Established Religion, and the Means of Averting Them' (1808).

In 1807 Pearson was appointed by Perceval's interest Warburtonian lecturer at Lincoln's Inn. In 1808, after the death of Dr. Elliston, he was elected master of Sidney-Sussex College, and received by royal mandate the degree of D.D. In the same year he was appointed vice-chancellor, and in 1810 he was elected Christian advocate on the Hulsean foundation; his 'Hulsean Defence, consisting of an Essay on the Preexistence of Christ, a Sermon on the Trinity, and a Proposal respecting the Athanasian Creed,' was published the same year. During the later years of his life Pearson engaged in frequent discussions with Charles Simeon, whose views he attacked in 'Cautions to the Hearers and Readers of the Rev. Mr. Simeon's Sermon entitled "Evangelical and Pharisaical Righteousness compared"' (1810). Pearson died of an apoplectic fit at his parsonage at Rempstone on 17 Aug. 1811. Besides the above-mentioned works, his publications include numerous tracts, sermons, and 'Prayers for Families,' which went through four editions. In 1797 he married Susan, daughter of Richard Johnson of Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, London.

[Green's Biographical Memoir, 1819, reprinted in Nichols's Literary Illustr. v. 86–91; Hunt's Brief Memoir, 1845 (containing full bibliography); Records of Sidney-Sussex College; Graduati Cantabr.; Gent. Mag. 1811, pt. ii. p. 198; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Watt's Bibl. Brit.] G. P. M–r.

PEARSON, GEORGE (1751–1828), physician and chemist, son of John Pearson, an apothecary, and grandson of Nathanael Pearson, vicar of Stainton, was born at Rotherham in 1751. He studied medicine in Edinburgh, and became the pupil of Joseph Black [q. v.] the chemist. In 1773 he obtained the degree of M.D. with a thesis 'De Putredine.' In 1774 he removed to London, and studied at St. Thomas's Hospital. In 1775 he travelled through France, Germany, and Holland, returning to England in 1777, and settling in Doncaster, where he became intimate with the actor John Philip Kemble [q. v.] During his six years' stay in Doncaster he made his remarkable 'Observations and Experiments . . . [on] the Springs of Buxton,' London, 2 vols. 1784. He showed that the gas rising from the springs was nitrogen. He was admitted L.R.C.P. on 25 June 1784, and became on 23 Feb. 1787 physician to St. George's Hospital, where he lectured on 'chemistry, materia medica, and the practice of physic.'

He was elected F.R.S. on 30 June 1791, and was for many years a member of the council. In 1796, when his name appears in the 'List of the Members of the Board of Agriculture,' he lived in Leicester Square. Pearson and his colleague Woodville were among the first to

recognise the value of the discovery of vaccination by Edward Jenner (1749–1823) [q. v.], and were, indeed, the first to make experiments on a large scale in this matter. Soon after Jenner's first publications they vaccinated 160 patients, and subsequently inoculated sixty for smallpox, of whom none took the disease (20 Jan. to 17 March 1799). Some of these experiments seem, however, to have been vitiated by the introduction of smallpox virus into the lymph. Pearson sent out letters to doctors in England and abroad with regard to his work; and, in spite of the continental war, correspondence on vaccination was permitted between him and medical men in France and Italy (*Gent. Mag.*) On 2 Dec. 1799 a vaccine pock institution, which became the official institution for the army and navy, was established by his efforts at 5 Golden Square. He had not informed Jenner of his plan, though he eventually offered him the post of extra corresponding physician, an honour promptly declined. Jenner was now persuaded by his friends to come to London, and induced the Duke of York and Lord Egremont to withdraw their support from Pearson's institution. When Jenner was rewarded for his services by parliament, the claims of Pearson and Woodville were ignored, and the former at once published an 'Examination of the Report . . . on the Claims of Remuneration for the Vaccine Pock Inoculation' (1802), a violent but able and important polemic against Jenner, whom he now took every opportunity to denounce. Jenner wisely made no reply. While Pearson was evidently anxious for an undue share of credit in the matter, his claims both as a critic and a populariser of vaccination are undeniable. His objection to Jenner's term, 'Variola Vaccinæ,' and the identification of cowpox with smallpox which it involves, and also to Jenner's identification of cowpox with the 'grease' of horses, have been sustained by subsequent research (see Chauveau and others, quoted in Crookshank's *History*, &c. pp. 302–5). Later, Pearson seems to have lost faith in vaccination (Baron, *Life of Jenner*, ii. 359).

Pearson was intimate with Horne Tooke and Sir F. Burdett, but took no part in politics. He was physician to the Duke of York's household. He died from an accidental fall at his house in Hanover Square, on 9 Nov. 1828. He left two daughters.

Pearson was 'a disinterested friend, and a good-humoured and jocose companion.' As a practitioner he was 'judicious rather than strikingly original' (Munk). As a lecturer he was 'distinct, comprehensive, argumentative, witty, and even eloquent.' It is as a chemist, and as an early advocate of vaccination, that he will be remembered. He was one of the first Englishmen to welcome the theories of Lavoisier, and did much to spread them in England by translating in 1794 the 'Nomenclature Chimique,' in which he substituted, without acknowledging the source, Chaptal's name 'nitrogen' for 'azote.' As an experimenter he was methodical, ingenious, and trustworthy. His critical power is best illustrated in the memoir 'On the Nature of Gas produced by passing an Electric Discharge through Water' (Nicholson's 'Journal,' 1797, abstracted in *Annales de Chimie*, xxvii. 61). Among his most important chemical papers are those on the composition of carbonic acid, an extension of the work of Smithson Tennant [q. v.], which led Pearson to the discovery of calcium phosphide; on wootz, an excellent account of the properties of iron and steel; and on urinary concretions, including a chemical description of uric acid (a term invented by Pearson), which was criticised by Fourcroy in 'Annales de Chimie,' xxvii. 225.

[Gent. Mag. vol. xcviii. pt. ii. p. 549 (1828) and vol. xcix. pt. i. p. 129 (1829); Pantheon of the Age, 2nd edit. iii. 107; Rose's Biogr. Dict.; Munk's Coll. of Phys.; Baron's Life of Jenner, i. 312, 319, ii. 32, 359; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Crookshank's Hist. and Pathology of Vaccination, i. 302–5, vol. ii.; Thorpe's Dict. of Applied Chemistry (Lac-Dye); Percy's Iron and Steel (1864), p. 775; Lettsom's Observations on the Cowpock, 2nd edit. 1801, gives silhouette; Creighton's Epidemics in Great Britain, ii. 563 (1894); Scudamore's Treatise . . . on Mineral Waters, 2nd edit. p. 12 (1833); Donaldson's Agricultural Biography; Dict. of Living Authors, 1816; Wiegleb's Geschichte der Chemie, ii. 449, 463; Gmelin's Gesch. der Chemie, passim; Kopp's Gesch. der Chemie, passim; Observations on Dr. Pearson's Examination of the Report, &c., by T. Creaser (1803); Royal Society's Catalogue.] P. J. H.

**PEARSON, HUGH NICHOLAS** (1767–1856), dean of Salisbury, only son of Hugh Pearson, was born at Lymington, Hampshire, in 1767, and matriculated from St. John's College, Oxford, on 16 July 1796. He graduated B.A. in 1800, M.A. in 1803, and D.D. as 'grand compounder' in 1821. He gained in 1807 the prize of 500*l.* offered by Claudius Buchanan [q. v.] for the best essay on missions in Asia, and printed his work in the following year at the university press under the title 'A Dissertation on the Propagation of Christianity in Asia,' Oxford, 4to. The interest thus aroused in Christian missionary enterprise in Asia prompted him

to undertake in 1817 his 'Memoirs of the Life and Writings of the Rev. Claudius Buchanan' (2 vols. Oxford, 8vo; another edition, Philadelphia), which he dedicated to William Wilberforce; and in 1834 a biography of greater interest, namely, 'Memoirs of the Life and Correspondence of the Rev. Christian Frederick Swartz, to which is prefixed a Sketch of the History of Christianity in India.' This reached a third edition in 1839, and was translated into German by C. P. Blumhardt, Basel, 1846. Pearson was in 1808 appointed vicar of St. Helen's, Abingdon, with Radley and Drayton chapelries, and in 1823 he was preferred to the deanery of Salisbury and made a domestic chaplain to George IV. He resigned his deanery in 1846, and died at Sonning in Berkshire on 17 Nov. 1856. During the last years of his life he resided mainly with his fourth son, Hugh [see below].

The dean's eldest son, CHARLES BUCHANAN PEARSON (1807–1881), born in 1807 at Elmdon, Warwickshire, graduated B.A. from Oriel College, Oxford, with a second class in *literæ humaniores* in 1828. He took orders in 1830, and was, in November 1838, preferred to the rectory of Knebworth, Hertfordshire, where he became intimate with the first Lord Lytton. Besides a paper on 'Hymns and Hymn-writers,' contributed to 'Oxford Essays for 1858,' and 'Latin Translations of English Hymns' (1862), he published 'Sequences from the Sarum Missal, with English Translations' (London, 1871), and 'A Lost Chapter in the History of Bath' (Bath, 1877). His translations and paraphrases of hymns, based upon the best Latin models, are commended by Dr. Julian for their gracefulness. He died at Bath on 7 Jan. 1881 (MOZLEY, *Reminiscences*, i. 168; *Times*, 10 Jan. 1881; *Guardian*, 12 Jan. 1881).

The dean's second son, William Henley Pearson (1813–1883), assumed in 1865 the additional name of Jervis [see JERVIS, WILLIAM HENLEY PEARSON-]. Another son, Henry Hugo, who changed his surname to Pierson, is also separately noticed.

The dean's fourth son, HUGH PEARSON (1817–1882), canon of Windsor, born on 25 June 1817, graduated M.A. from Balliol College, Oxford, in 1841, and was in the same year appointed vicar of Sonning in Berkshire, a preferment which he held until his death. He was rural dean of Henley-on-Thames from 1864 to 1874, and of Sonning from 1874 to 1876; he was appointed chaplain to the bishop of Manchester in 1870, was created a canon of Windsor in 1876, and, upon Dean Stanley's death in 1881, succeeded him in the post of deputy-clerk of the closet to the queen. By nature excessively retiring, and undogmatic to the extreme limits of latitudinarianism, Canon Pearson was a notable figure within the church; while, outside it, his character endeared him to people of every rank in life. He was an excellent preacher, but would not allow his sermons to be printed; and though he had an extraordinary knowledge of literature, he never dreamed for a moment of becoming an author. His friendships among persons of eminence were many and sincere, but the attachment of his life was that to Dean Stanley, with whom his friendship commenced from the days that they were undergraduates together in 1836. He frequently accompanied Stanley abroad, and was with him in Italy just before his marriage and his decision to accept the deanery of Westminster in 1863; he was present at Stanley's deathbed on 18 July 1881. He declined an invitation to succeed Stanley in the deanery at Westminster, on the ground that he wished to remain what he had always been—a private person. He died, unmarried, on 13 April 1882, and at his funeral in Sonning church, on 18 April, Lord-chief-justice Coleridge, Matthew Arnold, Benjamin Jowett, John Walter, and Professor Goldwin Smith were among the principal mourners. A memorial was erected in Sonning church, which had been finely restored through his instrumentality (*Times*, 15 and 19 April and 25 May 1882; *Guardian*, 20 April 1882; PROTHERO, *Life of Stanley*, i. 218, 280, 301, 309, 422, 500, ii. 45, 133, 137, 145, 332, 467, 571).

[Jones's Fasti Ecclesiæ Sarisberiensis, p. 325; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; Gent. Mag. 1856, ii. 775; Annual Register, 1856 p. 279 (the name is here given 'Pearsun'), 1882 p. 129; Darling's Encycl. Bibl.; Times, 24 Nov. 1856; Salisbury and Winchester Journal, 22 Nov. 1856; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

PEARSON, JAMES (*d.* 1805), glass-painter, was a native of Dublin, but was trained as an artist in Bristol. He had a large practice as a glass-painter, and introduced some improvements into the colouring of glass. Pearson executed on glass, in 1776, 'Christ and the Four Evangelists' for Brasenose College, Oxford, and 'The Brazen Serpent,' from the designs of J. H. Mortimer, R.A., for the east window of Salisbury Cathedral, inserted at the expense of the Earl of Radnor. He was assisted in his work by his wife, EGLINGTON MARGARET PEARSON (*d.* 1823), daughter of Samuel Paterson the auctioneer, who sold the first collection of pieces of glass-painting brought from abroad, and they together copied some of the paintings by the old masters, such as 'The Saluta-

tion' by Carlo Maratti, 'The Temptation of St. Anthony' by Teniers, &c., which they transferred to glass. A copy of Guido's 'Aurora' by Mr. and Mrs. Pearson is in the collection of the Duke of Norfolk at Arundel Castle. A collection of small paintings on glass, executed by Mr. and Mrs. Pearson conjointly, was sold by auction in 1797. Specimens of Pearson's work are to be seen in the churches of St. Botolph, Aldersgate, and St. Giles's, Cripplegate; and also in the parish churches of Battersea and Wandsworth. Pearson died in 1805. Mrs. Pearson executed two sets of copies from Raphael's cartoons, one purchased by the Marquis of Lansdowne, and the other by Sir Gregory Page-Turner, bart. While she was making a third copy, a too close application to her art brought on an illness of which she died on 14 Feb. 1823. Mr. and Mrs. Pearson exhibited paintings at the Society of Artists' exhibitions in 1775, 1776, and 1777, and were then residing in Church Street, St. John's, Westminster.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Winston's Memoirs of the Art of Glass-Painting; Dallaway's Anecdotes of the Arts in England; Smith's Antiquities of Westminster; Notes and Queries, 6th ser. xii. 255.] L. C.

**PEARSON, JOHN** (1613–1686), bishop of Chester, was born at Great Snoring in Norfolk on 28 Feb. 1612–13, and was baptised on 12 March. His father, Robert Pearson, Person, or Pierson, a native of Whinfell, near Kendal, entered at Queens' College, Cambridge, as a sizar in 1587, and was elected fellow in 1592. In 1607 he was presented to the rectory of North Creake in Norfolk, and in 1610 to the neighbouring rectory of Great Snoring. Bishop John Jegon [q. v.] appointed him archdeacon of Suffolk on 6 Oct. 1613. That office he retained till his death in 1639, zealously aiding Bishops Wren and Montague in their enforcement of ecclesiastical order in the diocese. Archdeacon Pearson married Joanna, daughter of Richard Vaughan [q. v.], successively bishop of Bangor, Chester, and London, by whom he had a large family.

John, the eldest child, seems to have received his early training under his father's eye. In after life he 'took occasion very often and publicly to bless God that he was born and bred in a family in which God was worshipped daily' (Wilson, *Parochialia*). From 1623 till 1631 he was at Eton. Sir Henry Wotton [q. v.] was provost, and John Hales (1584–1656) [q. v.] was one of the fellows, and while at Eton Pearson was thus able to lay the foundation of the erudition which distinguished him in an age of great scholars. One of his school contemporaries alleges that he spent all his money in books, and scarcely allowed himself natural rest, so intent was he in the acquisition of learning. Before he left school he had read many of the Greek and Latin fathers, and other books outside the ordinary study of schoolboys. Pearson's gratitude to Eton found expression in his 'Vindiciæ Ignatianæ' (cui ego literarum primitias debeo).

He was admitted at Queens' College, Cambridge, on 10 June 1631; but, within a year, in April 1632, he was elected scholar of King's. Here he was made fellow in 1634, graduated B.A. in 1635, and M.A. in 1639. In the last year he took holy orders.

Pearson's earliest extant literary production are some Latin verses, composed in 1632, on the king's recovery from smallpox ('Anthologia Cantabrigiensis in Exanthemata Regia'). A few years later he wrote other verses to commemorate the death of Edward King (1612–1637) [q. v.], the Lycidas of Milton's elegy, who was drowned on the passage to Ireland on 10 Aug. 1637 ('Justa Edovardo King, naufrago ab amicis mœrentibus, amoris et Μνείας χάριν, Cantabr.', 1638, p. 14). Pearson's verses, while displaying accurate scholarship, are quite destitute of poetic fire.

In 1640 Pearson paid his firstfruits for the prebend of Netherhaven in the cathedral of Salisbury, to which he had been collated by his father's friend, Bishop John Davenant [q. v.] He thereupon resigned his fellowship on 2 Aug. 1640, though he continued to reside at King's as a fellow-commoner. In the same year he was appointed chaplain to Lord-keeper Finch [see Finch, Sir John, Baron Finch of Fordwich], but that unfortunate statesman went into exile before the end of the year. The loss of his chaplaincy was in some degree made up to Pearson by his presentation to the rectory of Thorington in Suffolk on 27 Oct. 1640.

In the troubled years which ensued Pearson cannot have resided much at Thorington. He certainly spent a portion of his time at Cambridge up to 1643. In that year, just before the opening of the Westminster Assembly, he preached a remarkable university sermon on 'The Excellency of Forms of Prayer.' He boldly declared his theological and political views, and with undisguised passion—from which his other published writings are wholly free—lamented the risk to which the cherished institutions of the church were being subjected by men who had little regard for learning and tradition.

Subsequently Pearson joined the last remnant of Charles I's party in the west, acting as chaplain in 1645 to Goring's forces at Exeter (SHERMAN, *Hist. MS. Coll. Jesu, Cantabr.* p. 407). On the collapse of the royal cause he withdrew to London, where he seems to have remained till the Restoration, devoting the greater part of his time to his studies. He had lost the revenue of his prebend as early as 1642, and had resigned or been deprived of his rectory four years later; but the possession of a small patrimony in Norfolk freed him from extreme privations, and enabled him to maintain two younger brothers at Eton. Moreover, patrons gave him pecuniary assistance. He is said to have been for a time chaplain to Sir Robert, the eldest son of Sir Edward Coke, and subsequently to George, lord Berkeley, and his son of the same name and title, afterwards first Earl of Berkeley. In 1654 he accepted an invitation from the inhabitants of St. Clement's, Eastcheap, to deliver a weekly sermon in their parish church. This he appears to have regularly continued up to the Restoration, without receiving any pecuniary recompense. It was at St. Clement's that he preached in substance the series of discourses which he published in 1659 under the title of 'An Exposition of the Creed,' a work which is, within its limits, the most perfect and complete production of English dogmatic theology. Evelyn writes in his 'Diary,' 15 April 1655: 'In the afternoon Mr. Pierson (since bishop of Chester) preached at East Cheap, but was disturbed by an alarm of fire, which about this time was very frequent in the city.'

While debarred from the full exercise of his ministry, Pearson defended the church with his pen against both Romanist and puritan assailants. In a preface to Lord Falkland's 'Infallibility of the Church of Rome,' he pointed out some singular admissions made by Hugh Paulinus Cressy [q.v.], a recent convert to the Roman catholic communion; and in 1649 he published a short tract, entitled 'Christ's Birth not mistimed,' in refutation of an attempt made by some of the church's opponents to throw discredit on the calculation by which Christ's nativity is observed on 25 Dec. He also interested himself in promoting the great work of the silenced clergy, the polyglot Bible, which appeared in 1654-7, under the editorship of Brian Walton [q.v.] (see EVELYN, *Diary*, 22 Nov. 1652). It does not, however, appear that Pearson had any literary share in this undertaking. He only gave or obtained for it pecuniary aid.

Pearson's reputation as a scholar was soon established, and his commendation was considered sufficient evidence of the value of a work. Prefaces by him were published with Meric Casaubon's edition of Hierocles, Stokes's 'Explication of the Minor Prophets,' and John Hales's 'Remains.' In 1657 Pearson, with his friend Peter Gunning [q. v.], engaged in a conference with two Roman catholics on the question whether England or Rome was guilty of schism at the Reformation. A garbled account of this controversy, under the title of 'Schism Unmaskt,' appeared in the following year.

After the Restoration, Pearson was collated by Juxon to the rectory of St. Christopher-le-Stocks in the city of London on 17 Aug. 1660, and in the same month Bishop Wren made him a prebendary of Ely. On 26 Sept. Brian Duppa, bishop of Winchester, conferred upon him the archdeaconry of Surrey, which he retained till his death. About this time he proceeded to the degree of D.D., and was appointed a royal chaplain, and on 30 Nov. he received from the patron, Bishop Wren, the mastership of Jesus College, Cambridge.

In February 1661 Pearson was one of the Lent preachers at court, and three months later one of the posers at the annual examination of the Westminster scholars (EVELYN, *Diary*, 13 May). In the spring and summer of this year he took an active part in the Savoy conference, where his courtesy and forbearance won the respect of his opponents. He was the only champion of episcopacy whom Baxter notices favourably. 'Dr. Pierson,' he says, 'was their true logician and disputant. . . . He disputed accurately, soberly, and calmly, being but once in any passion, breeding in us a great respect for him, and a persuasion that if he had been independent he would have been for peace, and that if all were in his power it would have gone well.'

Pearson sat in the convocation which met in May 1661, when he was chosen, with John Earle, to superintend a version into Latin of the amended Book of Common Prayer; he also took part in drawing up the service for 29 May, and the prayer for parliament, and was one of three to whom the revision of all the additions and amendments of the prayer-book was committed prior to its acceptation by both houses. By order of the upper house he prepared in 1664 a Latin and Greek grammar to be used in all the schools of England.

Meanwhile, in June 1661, he succeeded Gunning as Margaret professor of theology at Cambridge, and hereupon he resigned his stall at Salisbury and his London living.

As professor he at once delivered an important series of lectures 'On the Being and Attributes of God,' forming the first portion of a scholastic treatise on the chief heads of Christian theology. A later course of lectures was on the Acts of the Apostles.

On the appointment of Henry Ferne [q.v.] to the bishopric of Chester, Pearson was chosen to succeed him as master of Trinity College, 14 April 1662. This position, which he probably owed to the discernment of Clarendon, he held for nearly eleven years. He proved a popular ruler, and during his reign the college was free from all intestine divisions and disorders, but he probably deferred too much to the seniors (JEBB, *Bentley*, p. 93). He firmly resisted, however, an attempt of the crown to encroach upon the rights of the master and fellows in the exercise of their patronage.

In 1667 Pearson was elected a fellow of the newly founded Royal Society, though he seems to have shared little in its proceedings. In the same year he pronounced a noble oration at the funeral of his friend and patron Bishop Wren.

During his stay at Trinity, Pearson made several important contributions to learning. In 1664 he wrote a preface to Ménage's edition of 'Diogenes Laertius,' and in the following year he prefixed a critical essay to a Cambridge edition of the 'Septuagint.' But the great work which employed his learned leisure was his 'Vindiciæ Epistolarum S. Ignatii,' on which, with his 'Exposition of the Creed,' his reputation mainly rests. This profoundly learned work appeared in 1672, the last year of his residence at Cambridge.

Early in the following year (9 Feb. 1673) Pearson was consecrated bishop of Chester, in the place of John Wilkins [q.v.] His elevation to the episcopate had been long delayed by the influence of the Cabal ministry; but Archbishop Sheldon at length succeeded in bringing about the well-earned promotion. Pearson took little or no part in state affairs, and seems to have resided seldom in London, spending most of his time in his diocese, either at Chester or Wigan, the rectory of which town he held *in commendam*. He occasionally preached at Whitehall, but there is only one of his sermons extant preached after he became a bishop. Burnet asserts that 'he was not active in his diocese, but too remiss and easy in his episcopal functions; and was a much better divine than bishop.' This charge is not borne out by facts. The act-books of the diocese prove his painstaking care, and he was certainly wise in the choice of those he preferred. The testimony of Laurence Echard, that 'he filled the bishopric of Chester with great honour and reputation,' is probably entirely true. During his episcopate he continued to employ the hours spared from public duties in the service of sacred learning. The fruit of those labours was displayed in the 'Annales Cyprianici,' prefixed to Bishop Fell's edition of St. Cyprian, which appeared in 1682, and in two dissertations on the 'Succession and Times of the first Bishops of Rome,' which were not published till after his death.

Pearson died at Chester on 16 July 1686. The common report that he was disqualified from all public service by his infirmities, and especially by a total loss of memory, for some years before his death is groundless. He held an ordination service so late as 21 Dec. 1684, and six months later he added to his will a codicil which showed him in full possession of his mental faculties. In the last year of his life he certainly suffered from decay of mind as well as body; and Henry Dodwell has left an affecting account of the great scholar, led by his nurse, stretching his hands to his books, and crying 'O sad, whose books are all these!' (BRYDGES, *Restituta*, i. 53).

The bishop's body was laid in his cathedral at the east end of the choir, but no monument was raised to his memory till 1860, when a stately tomb, designed by Sir A. Blomfield, was placed in the north transept, at the expense of admirers of Pearson both in Great Britain and America (HOWSON, *Handbook to Chester Cathedral*).

It seems all but certain that Pearson died unmarried. The only reference to a wife occurs in a reported conversation with a nonagenarian fellow of Trinity, in which either the old man's memory or the reporter's statement appears to have been at fault.

Pearson was a man of spotless life and of an excellent temper. His equanimity perplexed his nonconformist opponents. This absence of passion, while it proved a most valuable quality in controversy, rendered him 'more instructive than affective' as a preacher. Pearson strongly supported the Restoration settlement of the church, and would give no support to any schemes of comprehension which did not insist on uniformity.

Among Englishmen of the seventeenth century, Pearson was probably the ablest scholar and systematic theologian. Burnet pronounces him 'in all respects the greatest divine of the age,' Ménage 'le plus savant des Anglais,' and Bentley writes of 'the

most excellent Bishop Pearson, the very dust of whose writings is gold' (*Dissertation on Phalaris*, pp. 424–5, ed. 1699). 'Probably no other Englishman,' says Archdeacon Cheetham, 'few of any nation, had the same accurate knowledge of antiquity which Pearson possessed, and the same power of using it with skill and judgment. If he had not been a theologian, he might have been known simply as the best English scholar before Bentley; he was a theologian, but he was none the less a great scholar. . . . No English theologian has less claim to originality or imagination; he proceeds always upon authorities, and his distinctive skill is in the discrimination and use of authorities.'

The 'Exposition of the Creed,' on which Pearson's reputation still mainly rests, has long been a standard book in English divinity. It has won the highest praise, not only from Anglican theologians, but from such men as Dr. Johnson, Dean Milman, and Hallam. The last-mentioned writer says: 'It expands beyond the literal purport of the Creed itself to most articles of orthodox belief, and is a valuable summary of arguments and authorities on that side. The closeness of Pearson and his judicious selection of proofs distinguish him from many, especially the earlier, theologians' (*Lit. Hist. Eur.* pt. iv. ch. ii.). 'Pearson's preference for the scholastic method of theology appears in the book; it is the work of one accustomed to vigorous definition and exact deduction, and might easily be thrown into a form similar to that in which the schoolmen have treated the same subjects. The style is singularly unambitious, and seems to aim at nothing beyond the careful and accurate statement of propositions and arguments.' The notes to the 'Exposition'—a rich mine of patristic and general learning—are at least as remarkable as the text, and form a complete catena of the best authorities upon doctrinal points.

The first edition of the book (which is dedicated to the parishioners of St. Clement's, Eastcheap) appeared in quarto in 1659; all the subsequent editions down to 1723 were folios. The latest in which the author made any alterations was the third, 1669. The famous ninth edition, 'by W. Bowyer' the elder, appeared in 1710. The earliest octavo edition was published at Oxford in 1797. Numerous editions of the work have appeared in the present century under the editorship of W. S. Dobson, E. Burton, Temple Chevallier, J. Nichols, and E. Walford; the latest and best is Chevallier's, revised by R. Sinker, Cambridge, 1882. Numerous abridgments have been made, the best known being those of Basil Kennett, Charles Burney, and C. Bradley. There are also several analyses, that by William H. Mill (London, 1843) being a masterly performance. The 'Exposition' has been translated into many languages; a Latin version, by S. J. Arnold, appeared as early as 1691.

The other great work of Pearson, the 'Vindiciæ Epistolarum S. Ignatii,' was an elaborate answer to Daillé's attack on the authenticity of the letters ascribed to Ignatius of Antioch. It was probably Pearson's veneration for episcopacy which induced him to undertake this work. The letters everywhere recognised it as an institution essential to the completeness of a church, and, if their early date could be proved, the opponents of episcopacy recognised the untenableness of their position. Daillé therefore sought to show that all the so-called Ignatian writings were not much earlier than Constantine. On this point Pearson gained an easy victory over him, and went a great way in proving the authorship of the letters. 'It was incomparably the most valuable contribution to the subject which had hitherto appeared, with the exception of Ussher's work. Pearson's learning, critical ability, clearness of statement, and moderation of tone, nowhere appear to greater advantage than in this work. If here and there an argument is overstrained, this was the almost inevitable consequence of the writer's position as the champion of a cause which had been recklessly and violently assailed on all sides. . . . Compared with Daillé's attack, Pearson's reply was as light to darkness' (Lightfoot, *Apostolic Fathers*, pt. ii. vol. i. p. 333). Till the discovery of Cureton's 'Syrian Recension of the Epistles,' in 1845, Pearson was considered to have practically settled the question of their genuineness. Cureton's discovery reopened the dispute, and for a while three only of the seven letters defended by Pearson were allowed to be of Ignatian origin. The recent labours of Zahn and Lightfoot have, however, vindicated the authenticity of the suspected letters, and Pearson's position is therefore once more generally accepted by scholars.

The first edition of the 'Vindiciæ' appeared in 1672, later editions in 1698 and 1724. The work was included in the Anglo-Catholic Library, edited by Archdeacon Churton.

The following is a list of Pearson's minor works: 1. 'A Sermon preached before the University of Cambridge at St. Mary's on St. Luke xi. 2, A.D. 1643.' This sermon is said to have been first printed in 1644, 4to, but

no copy of this edition is known to exist. It was, however, published in 1711 in 8vo, with the statement that it had never before been printed. 2. 'Christ's Birth not mistimed; or a clear refutation of a resolution to a question about the time of Christ's Nativity by R. S., pretending to evidence by Scripture that Iesvs Christ was not born in December,' London, 1649. 3. Preface to Lord Viscount Falkland's 'Discourse on the Infallibility of the Church of Rome.' This preface appears to have been first prefixed to a London edition of the treatise, published in 1647. Subsequent editions were issued in 1651 and 1660. The attack on De Cressy's views elicited from him a new edition of his 'Exomologesis,' with a long appendix, 'wherein certain misconstructions of the book by J. P. are cleared,' &c., 1653, 12mo. 4. 'Prolegomena in Hieroclem,' first printed at London 1655 as a preface to Meric Casaubon's edition of the 'Opuscula of Hierocles.' They were reprinted with an edition in 8vo, 1673; and again by Needham in his edition of 1709. Pearson's essay is a singular proof of the many strange untrodden paths of learning which he had explored, and with much curious illustrative criticism combines some notice of the last efforts of Gentile philosophy againt Christianity. 5. 'Papers in Schism unmasked; or a late conference between Mr. Peter Gunning and Mr. John Pierson, Ministers, on the one part, and two Disputants of the Roman Profession on the other; wherein is defined both what Schism is and to whom it belongs,' Paris, 1658, 12mo. There are some tokens of the hand of Pearson in this work, particularly in a vindication of the character of Firmilian; but the argument on the Anglican side was mainly sustained by Gunning. 6. 'The Patriarchal Funeral; a sermon on the death of George, Lord Berkeley,' London, 1658. This was preached in Lord Berkeley's private chapel. 7. Preface to the 'Explication of the Minor Prophets' of Dr. David Stokes [q. v.], 1659. 8. Preface to the 'Golden Remains of the ever memorable Mr. John Hales of Eton College,' London, 1659; 2nd edit. 1673; 3rd edit. 1688. 9. 'No Necessity of Reformation of the Publick Doctrine of the Church of England,' London, 1660. 10. 'An Answer to Dr. Burges his Word, by way of Postscript, in vindication of No Necessity of Reformation of the Public Doctrine of the Church of England,' London, 1660. These tracts, written by Pearson, in controversy with Dr. Cornelius Burges, under all the provocations which the character and style of his opponent could occasion, are a model for Christian controversy. 11. 'Præfatio ad Criticos Sacros,' 9 vols. London, 1660. The 'Critici Sacri' was an undertaking of some of the deprived clergy, and embraced a commentary on holy scripture. The selection of commentators and the collection of tracts in the last two volumes were probably the work of Pearson, who also contributed the preface. 12. 'Dedicatio et Præfatio ad Diogenem Laertium Menagii,' London, 1664. An English edition of the author, as published by Gilles Ménage, was preceded by a short dedication to Charles II, and a preface by Pearson. 13. 'Præfatio Parænetica ad Vetus Testamentum Græcum ex Versione LXX interpretum,' Cambridge, 1665. This essay is mainly a defence of the old translators against some censures of St. Jerome; it was reprinted by Grabe with his LXX. 14. 'Oratio ad Exsequias Matthæi Wrenn, Episc. Eliensis,' 1667. 15. 'Promiscuous Ordinations are destructive to the Honour and Safety of the Church of England, if they should be allowed in it. Written in a Letter to a Person of Quality,' 1668. 16. 'Lectiones de Deo et Attributis,' about 1661. These were some of Pearson's professorial lectures, which were first printed in Churton's edition of the 'Minor Theological Works.' 17. 'Orationes in Comitiis Cantabrigiens. 1661–71.' Seven orations first printed by Churton. 18. 'Conciones ad Clerum sex, eodem decennio habitæ.' First printed by Churton. 19. 'Determinationes Theologicæ Sex.' First printed by Churton. 20. 'A Sermon [on Ps. cxi. 4] preached Nov. 5, 1673, at the Abbey Church in Westminster,' London, 1673. 21. 'Annales Cyprianici.' In 1682 Bishop Fell brought out an excellent edition of 'St. Cyprian,' to which Pearson prefixed the 'Annales,' which display his usual untiring research, sifting of historical testimonies, and well-weighed decision of disputed points. Schönemann published an abridgment of the 'Annales' in 1792, declaring that 'they have ever been and ever will be esteemed among the learned as of the highest value.' 22. 'Annales Paulini.' 23. 'Lectiones in Acta Apostolorum.' 24. 'Dissertationes de Serie et Successione Primorum Romæ Episcoporum.' These three works were edited by Dodwell, and included in Pearson's 'Posthumous Works,' 1688. The 'Annals of St. Paul' were translated into English by J. M. Williams in 1825, and again, together with the 'Lectures on the Acts,' by J. R. Crowfoot in 1851. 25. 'Various Letters, Epistolæ Latinæ, Fragments,' &c., collected by Churton in Pearson's 'Minor Theological Works,' Oxford, 1844. 26. 'Adversaria Hesychiana,'

2 vols. Oxford, 1844. Under this title Pearson's 'Notes on Hesychius' were edited by Dean Gaisford. Alberti had previously tried to get them (*Fabricii Vita*, p. 215). There is a copy of Hesychius's lexicon in the cathedral library at Chester, on the title-page of which Pearson has written: 'Hesychium integrum primo perlegi MDCLV. Oct. XV — Iterum MDCLXVII. Mart. XXVI (BURGON, *Twelve Good Men*, ii. 277–8). 27. 'Notes on St. Ignatius,' published in Smith's edition, Oxford, 1709. 28. 'Notes on St. Justin,' published by Thirlby in his edition, London, 1722. 29. 'Notes on Æschylus,' Bibl. Bodl. Rawl. MS. 193. On Pearson's 'Emendations on Æschylus,' see Butler's 'Æschylus,' vol. iv. (4to edit.), pp. xx, xxi. 30. 'Marginalia,' from certain of Pearson's books preserved in Trinity College Library, published by Dr. Hort in the 'Journal of Classical and Sacred Philology,' i. 98 ff. 399 ff.

Among the works of Pearson which have been lost are a sermon preached at the funeral of the poet John Cleveland [q. v.], and one mentioned by Evelyn on Hebrews ix. 14; 'Lectiones Theologicæ quamplures—Adversaria Sacra;' 'Vita S. Justini;' 'Epistolæ ad Vir. Rev. Geo. Bull;' 'Liber Grammaticalis.'

The whole of Pearson's theological works, with the exception of the 'Exposition of the Creed' and the 'Annales Cyprianici,' were collected and admirably edited by Archdeacon Churton in 1844.

There is an original portrait of Pearson in the hall of Trinity College, Cambridge, which has been engraved for Churton's work. In the older folio editions of the 'Exposition of the Creed' there is an engraving from a portrait, by W. Sonman, representing the bishop with a lean, attenuated face. The sixth and later editions contain a well-executed engraving from a drawing by Loggan, taken when Pearson was in his seventieth year; here he appears 'fair and comely.'

Pearson bore for his arms: argent, a chevron erminois between three leaves vert (*Blazon of Episcopacy*).

[Life of Pearson, by Archdeacon E. Churton, prefixed to the Minor Theological Works, Oxford, 1844. This is by far the best account of the bishop, and is a most painstaking and accurate piece of work. 'History of the Church and Manor of Wigan,' by G. T. O. Bridgeman, in Publications of Chetham Society; John Pearson, by Archdeacon Cheetham in Masters in English Theology, edited by Bishop Barry; D'Oyly's Life of Archbishop Sancroft; Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy; Burnet's History of His Own Times; Evelyn's Diary; Dean Howson's Handbook to Chester Cathedral; Baxter's Life and Times; Bishop Lightfoot's Ignatius; Wake on Convocations; Brydges's Restituta; Boswell's Johnson; Nelson's Life of Bull; Bentley's Works; Life of J. Milles; Birch's Hist. Royal Society; Blomefield's Norfolk; Le Neve's Fasti; Wills and Admonitions in P. C. C.; Bishop's Certificates in dioc. Norwich; First Fruits Composition Books; Graduati Cantabrigienses; No. 13 Publications of Cambr. Antiq. Soc.; Wood's Athenæ; the 'Old Parchment Register,' Queens' College, Cambridge.] F. S.

**PEARSON, JOHN** (1758–1826), surgeon, son of John Pearson of Coney Street, York, was born there on 3 Jan. 1758. He was apprenticed, at the age of sixteen, to a surgeon in Morpeth, whence he removed, in June 1777, to Leeds. There he lived for three years, under the roof of William Hey (1736–1819) [q. v.], the great surgeon to the Leeds General Infirmary, whose biography he afterwards wrote. He came to London in 1780, and entered as a student at St. George's Hospital, to work under John Hunter (1728–1793) [q. v.] He appears to have been granted the diploma of the Surgeons' Company on 4 Oct. 1781, when he was found qualified to act as surgeon to a regiment. In the same year he became house surgeon to the Lock Hospital at so critical a period of its fortunes that in 1782 he was appointed surgeon there, a post he held until 1818. He was also made surgeon, about this time, to the public dispensary, then newly founded, in Carey Street, an office which he resigned in 1809. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on 24 March 1803, and he afterwards became a fellow of the Linnean Society. In 1820 he was made an honorary member of the Royal College of Surgeons of Ireland, and he also became a member of the Royal Medical Society of Edinburgh. In 1785 he was living in Air Street, but he afterwards moved into Golden Square. He died on 12 May 1826. He married Sarah, daughter and heiress of Robert Norman of Lewisham. His son John Norman is separately noticed.

Pearson appears to have been a careful surgeon, with a strong scientific bias. His writings, however, are neither numerous nor important. His chief works are: 1. 'Principles of Surgery,' pt. i. 1788, 8vo (the second part was never published); a new edition, 1808. The principles are drawn up in a concise and aphoristical form for the use of students attending Pearson's lectures on surgery. 2. 'A plain and rational Account of the Nature . . . of Animal Magnetism,' 1790, 8vo. 3. 'Practical Observations on Cancerous Complaints,' London, 1793, 8vo. 4. 'Observations on the Effects of Various

Articles of the Materia Medica in the Cure of Lues Venerea,' London, 1800, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1807, 8vo. 5. 'Some Account of the Two Mummies of the Egyptian Ibis,' 'Philosophical Transactions,' 1805, pt. i. p. 264, and plates. 6. 'Life of William Hey,' London, 1822, 2 vols. 8vo; 2nd edit. 1823.

[Lond. Med. and Phys. Journ. 1826, lvi. 51.] D'A. P.

**PEARSON, Sir JOHN** (1819–1886), judge, born on 5 Aug. 1819, was son of John Norman Pearson [q. v.], and elder brother of Charles Henry Pearson [q. v.] He graduated B.A. at Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, on 24 Feb. 1841, and proceeded M.A. on 2 July 1844, having been called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn on 11 June the same year. A sound and painstaking lawyer, but without influential connections or conspicuous brilliance, Pearson rose slowly at the chancery bar, and did not take silk until 1866 (13 Dec.) In the following year he was elected a bencher of his inn, of which he was treasurer in 1884–1885. In 1882, on the retirement of Vice-chancellor Hall, Pearson was appointed on 24 Oct. to succeed him, but without the title of vice-chancellor, and on 30 Nov. following was knighted at Windsor. He died at his residence, 75 Onslow Square, South Kensington, after a painful illness of some weeks' duration, on 13 May 1886. His remains were interred in Brompton cemetery.

During his brief judicial career Pearson proved himself an eminently competent judge. His decisions on the Settled Land Act of 1882 did much to determine the construction of that important statute; nor did he show less ability in dealing with patent cases and company law. Pearson was for some time a member of both the councils of legal education and law reporting.

Pearson married, on 21 Dec. 1854, Charlotte Augusta, daughter of William Short, rector of St. George's, Bloomsbury, who survived him.

[Foster's Men at the Bar and Index Ecclesiasticus; Grad. Cant.; Times, 14 May 1886; Ann. Reg. 1886, obituary; Law Times, Law Journ. and Solicitors' Journ. 22 May 1886; Haydn's Book of Dignities.] J. M. R.

**PEARSON, JOHN NORMAN** (1787–1865), divine, son of John Pearson (1758–1826) [q. v.], born 7 Dec. 1787, was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he gained the Hulsean prize in 1807. He then took orders, and acted as chaplain to the Marquis of Wellesley until the Church Missionary Society appointed him, in 1826, the first principal of its newly founded missionary college at Islington. In 1839 he was appointed vicar of Holy Trinity Church, Tunbridge Wells, a position which he resigned in 1853. He afterwards lived in retirement, doing occasional duty for the surrounding clergy, at Bower Hall, near Steeple Bumpstead in Essex, until his death in October 1865. He married Harriet, daughter of Richard Puller of London and sister of Sir Christopher Puller, by whom he had a numerous family. His sons Sir John and Charles Henry are separately noticed.

There is a three-quarter length portrait of Pearson in oils, dated 1843, but unsigned, in the hall of the Missionary College in Upper Street, Islington.

Pearson's works are: 1. 'A Critical Essay on the Ninth Book of Warburton's Divine Legation of Moses,' Cambridge, 1808. 2. 'Christ Crucified; or some Remarkable Passages of the Sufferings of Our Lord Jesus Christ, devotionally and practically considered,' London, 1826, 12mo. 3. 'Life of Archbishop Leighton,' prefixed to an edition of his 'Works' in 1829. 4. 'The Candle of the Lord uncovered; or the Bible rescued from Papal Thraldom by the Reformation,' London, 1835, 8vo. 5. 'The Faith and Patience of the Saints exhibited in the Narrative of the Sufferings and the Death . . . of I. Lefevere;' a new translation, 1839, 12mo. 6. 'Psalms and Hymns chiefly designed for Public Worship,' London, 1840, 12mo. 7. 'The Days in Paradise,' London, 1854, 12mo. He also published several volumes of sermons.

[Obituary notice in Gent. Mag. 1865, ii. 792.] D'A. P.

**PEARSON, Sir RICHARD** (1731–1806), captain in the navy, was born at Lanton Hall, near Appleby in Westmoreland, in March 1731. Entering the navy in 1745 on board the Dover, he joined in the Mediterranean the Seaford, commanded by his kinsman, Captain Wilson. In her he remained for three years, and in 1749 joined the Amazon, with Captain Arthur Gardiner [q. v.] In 1750, seeing little prospect of advancement in the navy, he took service under the East India Company; but returned to the navy when war was imminent in 1755, passed his examination on 5 Nov., and on 16 Dec. was promoted to be fourth lieutenant of the Elizabeth, which during 1756 was commanded by Captain John Montagu, and attached to the fleet employed on the coast of France and in the Bay of Biscay. In 1757 Montagu was superseded by Charles Steevens [q. v.], who took the Elizabeth out to the East Indies; and in her Pearson was present in the actions of 29 April and 3 Aug.

1758 and of 10 Sept. 1759. In one of these he was severely wounded. He was afterwards first lieutenant of the Norfolk with Steevens and Kempenfelt, and was actually in command during a violent hurricane on 1 Jan. 1761, owing to Kempenfelt's being disabled by an accident. It is said that Steevens was so well satisfied with his conduct on this occasion that he promised him the first vacancy, and that his commission to command the Tiger, a 60-gun ship, was actually made out; but that it never took effect, as Steevens died before it was signed. At the reduction of Manila in 1762 Pearson was first lieutenant of the Lennox, and afterwards returned to England in the Seahorse.

In 1769 he went out to Jamaica as first lieutenant of the Dunkirk with Commodore Arthur Forrest [q. v.], who had promised him the first vacancy. Forrest, however, died before a vacancy occurred; and, though Captain Stirling, who was left senior officer at Jamaica, gave him in August 1770 an acting order to command the Phœnix, it was disallowed by Captain Robert Carkett [q. v.], on whom the command properly devolved. The admiralty, however, took a favourable view of Pearson's claims, and promoted him on 29 Oct. 1770 to command the Druid sloop. In January 1773 he was appointed to the Speedwell; and on 25 June, being at Spithead when the king reviewed the fleet, was specially advanced to post rank. In 1776 he was appointed to the Garland, in which he went out to Quebec in charge of convoy, and for the next two years was detained for service in the St. Lawrence.

In March 1778 he was appointed to command the 44-gun ship Serapis; and in the autumn of 1779, having been sent to the Baltic with convoy, was returning in company with the Countess of Scarborough, a hired ship, and the trade from the Baltic, when, off Flamborough Head, on the evening of 23 Sept., he met the little squadron commanded by John Paul Jones [q. v.] The Pallas, one of Jones's squadron, engaged and captured the Countess of Scarborough, while Jones's own ship, the Bon-homme Richard, grappled with the Serapis, and between the two one of the most obstinate fights on record took place; it was ended in favour of the Richard by the latter's consort the Alliance, a 36-gun frigate, coming under the stern of the Serapis and raking her, though the fire was not effective, and the officers of the Richard alleged that much of it struck their ship. But Pearson felt unable to withstand a second enemy, and struck his colours. The Richard was on the point of sinking, and did sink a few hours after the Serapis was taken possession of. Meantime the convoy had made good its escape; Jones's cruise was necessarily brought to an end; and the defence of the Serapis against a nominally superior force won for Pearson a very general approval. When able to return to England he was honourably acquitted by a court-martial held on 10 March 1780; he was afterwards presented with the freedom of the towns by Hull, Scarborough, Lancaster, and Appleby, and by the Russia Company and the Royal Exchange Assurance Company with handsome pieces of plate. He was also knighted. Pearson was an honest, brave officer, and no blame was attributable to him for his ill-success; but, though the merchants were satisfied, the defeat was not one which should have been officially rewarded. Jones's remark on hearing of the honour conferred on him was: 'Should I have the good fortune to fall in with him again, I'll make a lord of him.' In April 1780 Pearson was appointed to the Alarm. He afterwards commanded the Arethusa; but in 1790 was retired to Greenwich Hospital, where, in 1800, he succeeded Captain Locker as lieutenant-governor. He died there in January 1806. He married Margaret, daughter of Francis Harrison of Appleby, by whom he left issue four sons and two daughters. Two engraved portraits of Pearson are mentioned by Bromley.

[Naval Chronicle (with a portrait), xxiv. 353; List-books and other official documents in the Public Record Office; Laughton's Studies in Naval History, p. 396.] J. K. L.

**PEARSON, RICHARD, M.D.** (1765–1836), physician, was born in Birmingham in 1765. After education at Sutton Coldfield grammar school, he began medical study under Mr. Tomlinson in Birmingham, and, while a student, obtained a gold medal from the Royal Humane Society for an essay on the means of distinguishing death from suspended animation. He proceeded to the university of Edinburgh, where he graduated M.D. on 24 June 1786. While a student he became president of the Royal Medical Society, as well as of the Natural History Society in the university. His inaugural dissertation was on scrofula, and was published at Edinburgh in 1786. It shows more reading than original observation, but the tendency even at so early a date to make clinical experiments with electricity is shown by his recommendation of that physical agent for the cure of enlarged lymphatic glands (*Dissertatio*, p. 38). After graduating he travelled in France, Germany, and Italy for two years with Thomas Knox, lord North-

land, and afterwards first earl of Ranfurley. On 22 Dec. 1788 he was admitted a licentiate of the College of Physicians of London, and began practice at Birmingham, where he became physician to the General Hospital in September 1792. In 1795 he published 'A Short Account of the Nature and Properties of different kinds of Airs so far as relates to their Medicinal Use, intended as an introduction to the Pneumatic Way of Treating Diseases,' and in 1798 'The Arguments in Favour of an Inflammatory Diathesis in Hydrophobia considered,' in which he combats the then prevalent opinion of Dr. John Ferriar [q. v.] of Manchester that general inflammation and inflammation of the fauces were the chief pathological conditions in hydrophobia. Pearson expresses the opinion that the case of Dr. Christopher Nugent (*d.* 1775) [q. v.] was one of hysteria, and recommends the omission of bleeding in such cases, the administration of wine, and the application of caustics in regions distant from the bite. In 1799 he published 'Observations on the Bilious Fever of 1797, 1798, and 1799,' and in 1801 resigned his hospital appointment and settled in London, where he lived in Bloomsbury Square. He published in 1803 'Observations on the Epidemic Catarrhal Fever or Influenza of 1803.' The epidemic had begun in London in February, and thence spread all over England; and this work, after a brief but lucid statement of the clinical features of the disease, discusses its treatment fully, and concludes with some interesting letters from practitioners in country districts. Pearson describes clearly the extreme mental depression which has been observed in subsequent epidemics as a frequent sequel of influenza. An epidemic of plague was raging on some of the coasts of the Mediterranean in 1804, and he published 'Outlines of a Plan calculated to put a Stop to the Progress of the Malignant Contagion which rages on the Shores of the Mediterranean.' Two treatises on materia medica in 1807 were his next publications: 'Thesaurus Medicaminum,' which reached a fourth edition in 1810, and 'A Practical Synopsis of the Materia Alimentaria and Materia Medica,' of which a second edition appeared in 1808. In 1812 he published 'Account of a Particular Preparation of Salted Fish,' and in 1813 'A Brief Description of the Plague.' After this he migrated to Reading, thence to Sutton Coldfield, and at last to Birmingham, where he was one of the founders of the present medical school. In 1835 he published 'Observations on the Action of the Broom Seed in Dropsical Affections.' He also wrote several medical articles in Rees's 'Encyclopædia' and in the 'British Critic,' and took part in the abridgment of the 'Philosophical Transactions.' He died at Birmingham on 11 Jan. 1836, and was buried at St. Paul's Chapel there.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. vol. ii.; works.] N. M.

**PEARSON, THOMAS HOOKE** (1806–1892), general, was the son of John Pearson, advocate-general of India. He was born in June 1806, educated at Eton, and entered the army as a cornet in the 11th light dragoons on 14 March 1825. In November of that year he served at the siege of Bhurtpore under Lord Combermere; and when, owing to the scarcity of European infantry, volunteers were called for from the cavalry to take part in the assault, he was one of those who offered themselves. The arrival of an additional infantry regiment made it needless to use them, but the cavalry did good service in preventing the escape of the usurping rajah and his followers.

When Lord Amherst, the governor-general, paid a visit to Runjeet Singh, Pearson accompanied him as aide-de-camp, and received a sword from the maharajah for his skill in mounting and riding a horse that was believed to be unmanageable. He obtained a troop in the 16th lancers on 16 Aug. 1831, and served with that regiment at the battle of Maharajpore, where Sir Hugh Gough defeated the Mahrattas on 29 Dec. 1843, and also in the first Sikh war. At Aliwal (28 Jan. 1846) he commanded one of the squadrons which broke through an infantry square. During the latter part of that day, and at Sobraon (10 Feb.), he was in command of the regiment; he was twice mentioned in despatches, and received a brevet majority 19 June 1846. He became major in the regiment 23 April 1847; but he saw no further service in the field, and was placed on half-pay 7 April 1848. He became lieutenant-general 1 Oct. 1877, and was then retired with the honorary rank of general. He had been made C.B. 2 June 1869, and on 4 Feb. 1879 he was given the colonelcy of the 12th lancers. He died 29 April 1892, leaving four sons and three daughters.

[Records of the 16th Lancers; Despatches of Lord Hardinge, Lord Gough, &c., pp. 89, 127; Times, 3 May 1892.] E. M. L.

**PEARSON, WILLIAM** (1767–1847), astronomer, was born at Whitbeck in Cumberland on 23 April 1767. He came of a good old yeoman family, and appears to have been the second son of William Pearson by

his wife Hannah Ponsonby. Educated at the grammar school of Hawkshead, near Windermere, Cumberland, he took orders and went to reside at Lincoln. There he constructed a curious astronomical clock and an orrery, noticed in Rees's 'Cyclopædia' (art. 'Orrery'); described in 1797 a new electrical machine (Nicholson, *Journal of Natural Philosophy*, i. 506); and in 1798 an apparatus for showing the phenomena of Jupiter's satellites (*ib.* ii. 122). Two papers on the minor planet Ceres were dated from Parson's Green in 1802 (*ib.* i. 284, ii. 48, new ser.)

Pearson was one of the original proprietors of the Royal Institution, and finished in 1803 a planetarium for illustrating Dr. Young's lectures (Rees, *Cyclopædia*, art. 'Planetarium'). On 10 Jan. 1810 he was presented to the rectory of Perivale in Middlesex, and by Lord-chancellor Eldon, on 15 March 1817, to that of South Kilworth in Leicestershire. In 1811 he became owner of a large private school at Temple Grove, East Sheen, where, having established an observatory, he measured the diameters of the sun and moon during the partial solar eclipse of 7 Sept. 1820 with one of Dollond's divided object-glass micrometers (*Memoirs Astronomical Society*, i. 139).

To his initiative the foundation of the Astronomical Society of London was largely due. In 1812, and again in 1816, he took preliminary steps towards the realisation of a design which assumed a definite shape at a meeting held at the Freemasons' Tavern on 12 Jan. 1820. Pearson helped to draw up the rules, and acted as treasurer during the first ten years of the society's existence. In 1819 he was elected F.R.S., and about the same time granted an honorary LL.D. On quitting East Sheen in 1821 he erected an observatory at South Kilworth, first in a wing added to the rectory, later as a separate building. Among the fine instruments collected there were a 3-foot altazimuth, originally constructed by Troughton for the St. Petersburg Academy of Sciences (*ib.* ii. 261), a 3½-foot achromatic by Tulley, a transit by Simms, and a clock by Hardy. A piece of flint-glass by Guinand, nearly seven inches across, purchased by him in 1823 for 250*l.*, was worked by Tulley into the largest object-glass then in England.

Pearson's first notable observations at South Kilworth were of the occultations of the Pleiades in July and October 1821 (*ib.* p. 289). In 1824 and 1829 appeared the two quarto volumes of his 'Introduction to Practical Astronomy.' The first was mainly composed of tables for facilitating the processes of reduction; the second gave elaborate descriptions of various astronomical instruments, accompanied by engravings of them and instructions for their use. For this publication, styled by Sir John Herschel 'one of the most important and extensive works on that subject which has ever issued from the press' (*ib.* iv. 261), he received, on 13 Feb. 1829, the gold medal of the Royal Astronomical Society. To that body he bequeathed the stock and plates of the work.

In 1830 Pearson was nominated a member of the new board of visitors to the Royal Observatory, and he undertook in the same year, assisted by a village mathematician named Ambrose Clarke, the reobservation and computation of 520 stars tabulated for occultations in his 'Practical Astronomy.' The resulting catalogue was presented to the Royal Astronomical Society on 11 June 1841 (*ib.* xv. 97). On 29 Oct. 1835 he observed Halley's comet; in 1839 he deduced from his own determinations a value for the obliquity of the ecliptic (*ib.* ix. 269, xi. 73). His death occurred at South Kilworth on 6 Sept. 1847, and a tablet inscribed to his memory in the church perpetuates the respect earned by his exemplary conduct as a clergyman and a magistrate. Some improvements effected by him in Rochon's doubly refracting micrometer (*ib.* i. 67, 82, 103) were claimed by Arago (*Annales de Chimie*, August 1820); but the accusation of plagiarism was satisfactorily refuted (*Phil. Mag.* lvi. 401). Pearson contributed to Rees's 'Cyclopædia' sixty-three articles on subjects connected with practical astronomy. His second wife survived him, and he left one daughter by his first wife.

[Memoirs Royal Astr. Society, xvii. 128; Proceedings Royal Society, v. 712; Lonsdale's Worthies of Cumberland, vi. 147; Gent. Mag. 1847, pt. ii. p. 661; Foster's Index Ecclesiasticus; Allibone's Critical Dict. of English Literature; Poggendorff's Biogr. Lit. Handwörterbuch; Lardner's Handbook of Astronomy, ii. 831, ed. 1856.] A. M. C.

PEARSON-JERVIS, WILLIAM HENLEY (1813–1883), ecclesiastical historian. [See Jervis.]

PEART, CHARLES (*fl.* 1778–1798), sculptor, first appears as an exhibitor at the Royal Academy in 1778, sending in that and the four following years various models in wax. In 1782 he obtained the gold medal of the Royal Academy for a group of 'Hercules and Omphale.' In 1784 he exhibited a plaster model of 'Prometheus,' and in later years was largely employed on monumental work, either in the style of classical or

allegorical friezes, or memorial busts. He had a studio in the New (now the Euston) Road, in the vicinity of the chief stoneyards in that locality. The date of his death has not been ascertained, but he exhibited for the last time at the Royal Academy in 1798.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Graves's Dict. of Artists, 1760–1880; Royal Academy Cat.]

L. C.

**PEART, EDWARD** (1756?–1824), physician, born about 1756, was M.D. and a corresponding member of the London Medical Society. He practised for some time at Knightsbridge, but afterwards removed to Butterwick, near Gainsborough, Lincolnshire, where he wrote on numerous scientific topics. He was chiefly known for his works on physical and chemical theory, which involved him in polemics with the critical magazines. Although an acute critic both of Priestley and Lavoisier, he failed to grasp the distinction made by the latter chemist between ponderable matter and caloric, and hence his constructive theories, though ingenious, were unsound and sterile, and discredited his criticisms. Peart in his 'Animal Heat' (1788) explained all chemical and physical phenomena by assuming the existence of four elements—æther, phlogiston, the acid principle, and earth. In the following year these were reduced to three, two active principles, æther and phlogiston, and one fixed. When a fixed particle is surrounded by an atmosphere of particles of æther radiating from it in straight lines, it forms an earthy (i.e. alkaline) particle; a phlogiston atmosphere producing an acid particle (*The Elementary Principles of Nature*, pp. 24, 285). All actions 'at a distance,' corresponding to the phenomena of electricity, magnetism, and gravitation, are explained by means of these 'atmospheres.' The least fantastic of Peart's books are those on physiology and medicine. In his 'Animal Heat' Peart revives the idea of John Mayow [q. v.] that animal combustion takes place in the substance of the muscle and not in the lung, as Lavoisier thought. In the same book he sees clearly that the constant temperature of animals in exercise and at rest must be due to a correlation of various functions, and investigates the matter experimentally in a somewhat rough way. The formula 'excitability of the muscular fibres is the great characteristic of life in animals' (loc. cit. p. 91) is still accepted. In his medical works he shows himself untrammelled by the school teaching of his day, and his independent observation of nature should have exerted a useful influence on his contemporaries. He used simple drugs, and ascribed their beneficial effects to direct action on the *materies morbi* of the disease. Peart declares (*On the Composition of Water*, p. 67), 'I write for amusement at my leisure hours,' and (*Physiology*, preface, p. xiii) 'I have no expectation of making converts to my peculiar views.' He seems to have made none. From his writings, and in spite of his controversies, Peart appears as a man of kindly though erratic tendencies. In his 'Physiology' (p. 280) and elsewhere he vigorously protests against the unnecessary vivisections of his time.

Peart died at Butterwick in November 1824.

The following is a list of Peart's works: 1. 'The Generation of Animal Heat,' 1788. 2. 'The Elementary Principles of Nature,' 1789. 3. 'On Electricity,' 1791. 4. 'On the Properties of Matter, the Principles of Chemistry,' &c., 1792. 5. 'On Electric Atmospheres [with] a Letter to Mr. Read of Knightsbridge,' 1793. 6. 'The Antiphlogistic Doctrine . . . critically examined . . . [with] Strictures on Dr. Priestley's Experiments on the Generation of Air from Water,' 1795. 7. 'On the Composition and Properties of Water, with a Review of Mrs. Fulhame's Essay on Combustion,' 1796. 8. 'Physiology,' 1798. 9. 'On Malignant Scarlet Fever and Sore Throat,' 1802. 10. 'On Erysipelas and Measles,' 1802. 11. 'On Rheumatism, Inflammation of the Eyes,' &c., 1802. 12. 'On Inflammation of the Bowels,' 1802. 13. 'On Consumption of the Lungs,' 1803.

[Gent. Mag. 1824, ii. 472; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Monthly Review, 1795, 2nd ser. xix. 194; Critical Review, 1795, xv. 161; information kindly given by Dr. L. Larmuth; Peart's works.]

P. J. H.

**PEASE, EDWARD** (1767–1858), railway projector, born at Darlington on 31 May 1767, was the eldest son of Joseph Pease and his wife Mary Richardson. A brother Joseph (1772–1846) was one of the founders of the Peace Society in 1817, and a supporter of the Anti-Slavery Society, for which he wrote tracts in 1841 and 1842. Edward was educated at Leeds under Joseph Tatham the elder, and in his fifteenth year was placed in the woollen manufacturing business carried on by his father at Darlington. About 1817 he retired from active participation in the business. Soon afterwards he became interested in a scheme for constructing a tramroad from Darlington to Stockton; in 1818 preliminary steps were taken to obtain parliamentary sanction for the undertaking, but the bill was thrown out owing to the opposi-

tion of the Duke of Cleveland, near one of whose fox-covers the line was to run. In 1819 a new route was proposed, and the measure received royal assent on 19 April 1821. Originally the cars were only intended to carry coal, and be drawn by horses; but in the spring of 1821 George Stephenson, then only an 'engine-wright,' introduced himself to Pease, and pressed upon him the practicability and advantages of steam locomotives, and a railway instead of a tramroad. Convinced by an inspection of Stephenson's engine at Killingworth, Pease adopted Stephenson's plan. Stephenson was appointed to survey the proposed route, in which he made several alterations, and the first rail was laid on 23 May 1823.

Meanwhile Stephenson persuaded Pease to advance him money in order to start an engine factory at Newcastle, and there was constructed the first engine used on the Stockton and Darlington line; it now occupies a pedestal at Darlington station. After considerable opposition the line was opened for traffic on 27 Sept. 1825, and at once proved a success [see STEPHENSON, GEORGE]. Pease, however, withdrew from railway enterprise about 1830, and died at his residence, Northgate, Darlington, on 31 July 1858. His relations with George Stephenson and his son Robert remained cordial to the end of his life.

Both Pease and his wife were devout quakers, being 'overseers' in the society in their youth, Pease subsequently becoming an elder and his wife a minister. Dr. Smiles describes Pease as 'a thoughtful and sagacious man, ready in resources, possessed of indomitable energy and perseverance;' extracts from his journal are printed in the 'Annual Monitor' (1859, pp. 123–64), and a portrait is given in Smiles's 'Lives of the Engineers' (George and Robert Stephenson, ed. 1874, p. 124).

Pease married, on 30 Nov. 1796, Rachel, daughter of John Whitwell of Kendal. She died at Manchester on 18 Oct. 1833, having had five sons and three daughters.

The second son, JOSEPH PEASE (1799–1872), aided his father in carrying out the project for the railway from Stockton to Darlington in 1819 and 1820. The draft advertisement of the opening of the line, dated 14 Sept. 1825, in his autograph, is preserved by the company. Upon the extension of the railway to Middlesbrough in 1828, the mineral owners offered powerful opposition. Pease consequently purchased a coal-mine in the neighbourhood in order to prove the value of the new mode of conveyance. Four years later the colliery owners were convinced, and admitted their obligations to Pease for conquering their prejudices. After the passing of the Reform Bill in 1832, Pease was returned for South Durham, and retained the seat till his retirement in 1841. He was the first quaker member who sat in parliament, and on presenting himself on 8 Feb. 1833 he objected to take the usual oath. A select committee was appointed to inquire into precedents, and on 14 Feb. he was allowed to affirm (HANSARD, *Parl. Deb.* xv. 387, 639). He was a frequent speaker on matters of social and political reform, always avoiding the use of titles when addressing the house, and retaining his quaker dress (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 3rd ser. ix. 153). In addition to business of various kinds and politics, he devoted himself to philanthropic or educational work, aiding Joseph Lancaster [q. v.], and acting as president of the Peace Society from 1860. Before 1865 he became totally blind, but, with the aid of his secretary, republished and distributed many Friends' books; and he had the 'Essays, Moral and Religious,' of Jonathan Dymond [q. v.] translated into Spanish, for which service the government of Spain conferred on him (2 Jan. 1872) the grand cross of Charles III. He died on 8 Feb. 1872. At the time of his death there were nearly ten thousand men employed in the collieries, quarries, and ironstone mines owned by him and his family, who also directed the older woollen and cotton manufactories. Pease married, on 20 March 1826, Emma (*d.* 1860), daughter of Joseph Gurney of Norwich, leaving five sons and four daughters. Joseph Whitwell Pease, the eldest son, who was created a baronet on 18 May 1882, was member for South Durham from 1865 to 1885, and subsequently for Barnard Castle. Arthur Pease, the third son, was M.P. for Whitby from 1880 to 1885, and for Darlington from 1895.

Edward Pease's fifth son, HENRY PEASE (1807–1881), also entered with zeal into the railway projects of his father. His principal achievement was the opening in 1861 of the line across Stainmoor, called 'the backbone of England,' the summit of which is 1374 feet above sea level. It joined at Tebay the London and North-Western railway, and was soon extended to Saltburn-on-Sea. In January 1854 Pease was deputed by the meeting for sufferings, held on the 17th of that month, to accompany Joseph Sturge [q. v.] and Robert Charleton as a deputation from the Society of Friends to Russia. On 10 Feb. they were received by the Emperor Nicholas, and presented him with a powerful address, urging him to abstain from the then imminent Crimean war. He received them politely, but their efforts were unavailing, and Kinglake

(*Invasion of the Crimea*, ii. 54) ridiculed their action. Pease was M.P. for South Durham from 1857 to 1865. In 1867 he visited Napoleon III with a deputation from the Peace Society, but their request for permission to hold a peace congress during the International exhibition in Paris was rejected. He was chairman of the first Darlington school board in 1871, first mayor of the town, president of the Peace Society from 1872, and on 27 Sept. 1875 chairman of the railway jubilee held at Darlington, at which eighty British and thirty foreign railways were represented. He was always a prominent member of the Society of Friends. He died in Finsbury Square, London, while attending the yearly meeting, on 30 May 1881, and was buried at Darlington. Pease married, on 25 Feb. 1835, Anna, only daughter of Richard Fell of Uxbridge, who died on 27 Oct. 1839, leaving a son, Henry Fell Pease, M.P. from 1885 for the Cleveland division of Yorkshire; secondly, he married Mary, daughter of Samuel Lloyd of Wednesbury, by whom he had three sons and two daughters.

Schools and a library were presented by members of the Pease family to Darlington, which has in many other ways benefited by their munificence.

[Cat. of Devonshire House Portraits, pp. 487–495, 503, 507; Annual Monitor, 1859 pp. 122–164, 1873 pp. 101–10, 1882 iii. 122; Foster's Pease of Darlington; Our Iron Roads, 1852; Smiles's Lives of the Engineers; Illustrated London News, 7 Aug. 1858; the Engineer, 1858, ii. 103; Times, 2 Aug. 1858; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. vii. 465; Joseph Pease, a Memoir, reprinted from the Northern Echo of 9 Feb. 1872, with Appendix, and 31 May 1881; Longstaff's Hist. of Darlington, pp. xciv, 318, 333; Random Recollections of the House of Commons, p. 289; the Peases of Darlington, British Workman, February 1892; Smith's Catalogue, ii. 278; information from Henry Fell Pease, esq., and personal knowledge.] A. F. P. and C. F. S.

**PEAT**, THOMAS (1708–1780), almanac-maker, was born in 1708 at Ashley Hall, near Wirksworth, Nottinghamshire, where his father held a farm. He early acquired a taste for learning, which his father strove to repress. A brother, a joiner in Nottingham, to whom he became apprenticed, gave him no more encouragement; but Cornelius Wildbore, a master-dyer, and like the Peats, a regular attendant at the presbyterian High Pavement chapel, noticed him, and supplied him with the means of obtaining books. Peat devoted himself chiefly to the study of mathematics and astronomy, and in 1740 he was one of the principal projectors of 'The Gentleman's Diary, or Mathematical Repository.' The first number appeared in 1741, with Peat as joint-editor; in 1756 he became sole editor, and filled that office until his death in 1780, his successor being a Rev. Mr. Wildbore, probably a son of Peat's early benefactor. In addition to the usual information contained in almanacs, 'The Gentleman's Diary' was largely devoted to the solution of mathematical problems. The original editions in the British Museum are not complete. A collected edition was published in 1814 (3 vols.) The numbers edited by Peat occupy the first two volumes.

Subsequently Peat became editor of the 'Poor Robin's Almanac,' which is erroneously said to have been started by Herrick (*Notes and Queries*, 6th ser. vii. 321–3). It was conducted anonymously. Peat's share in it ceased some time before his death.

Peat was also a surveyor, architect, and schoolmaster, using his almanacs as means for advertising himself in each of these capacities; he is also said to have been 'not a bad censor of poetry.' About 1743 he projected a course of fourteen lectures at Nottingham on mechanics, hydrostatics, optics, pneumatics, astronomy, and the use of globes; the price of a ticket for the course was a guinea, and a syllabus of the lectures was published at Nottingham. In 1770 he proposed to publish a map of Leicestershire, drawn from his own survey; at that time he was residing at Thringstone; in 1771 he removed to Swannington, both in Leicestershire, and in 1777 he returned to Nottingham, where he died, at his residence at Greyfriars' Gate, on 21 Feb. 1780, aged 72.

[Prefaces to the Gentleman's Diary, signed Thomas Peat; Syllabus of Lecture, 1744?; Wylie's Old and New Nottingham, p. 158; Brown's Nottinghamshire Worthies, p. 379; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. viii. 465.] A. F. P.

**PEBODY**, CHARLES (1839–1890), journalist, the son of Charles and Eliza Pebody, was born at Leamington, Warwickshire, on 3 Feb. 1839. His parents removing to Watford, Leicestershire, where the family had lived for some three hundred years, Pebody went to the village school, and afterwards was taught privately by the schoolmaster. At the age of fourteen he came up to London, and entered a lawyer's office, but soon found work as a reporter, and afterwards joined the staff of the 'Chelmsford Chronicle.' At the age of twenty-one he was appointed editor of the 'Barnstaple Times.' From Barnstaple he moved to Exeter as editor of the 'Flying Post,' and from Exeter to Bristol as editor of the 'Bristol Times and Mirror.' It was while at Bristol that Pebody obtained

in 1875 the prize of 50*l.* offered by Mr. James Heywood for the best essay 'showing the expediency of an Address by the House of Commons to the Crown in favour of such a Rubrical Revision of the Services of the State Church as will abrogate the threat of everlasting Perdition to those of Her Majesty's Subjects who do not agree with the Doctrines contained in the Athanasian Creed.' In 1882 Pebody was appointed editor of the 'Yorkshire Post,' a conservative morning paper published at Leeds. Under his direction it rapidly grew in circulation and influence, and before his death it stood in the front rank of provincial journals. Although an enthusiastic student of English political history, and profoundly interested in the course of public events, Pebody was not, apart from journalism, a political worker. In 1888 his health showed signs of failure; but after six months' rest he resumed work, and organised a new evening paper. He died at Leeds on 30 Oct. 1890. Pebody brought to his work quick intelligence, unfailing industry, and high spirits; a singularly wide knowledge of literature and affairs, great organising power, and a marked capacity for making friends. He married, 22 Aug. 1859, Mary Ann Martyn, who survived him, and by whom he had one daughter.

He published, besides the essay noticed, 1. 'Authors at Work,' 1872. 2. 'English Journalism and the Men who have made it,' 1882.

[Yorkshire Post, 31 Oct. 1890; Leeds Mercury, 31 Oct. 1890; personal knowledge.] A. R. B.

**PECHE**, RICHARD (*d.* 1182), bishop of Lichfield, was son of Robert Peche, an earlier bishop of the see. Richard is said to have been archdeacon of Chester in 1135, and subsequently archdeacon of Coventry. In 1161 he was consecrated to the bishopric of Lichfield by Walter of Rochester (Gervase of Canterbury, i. 168; Rad. de Diceto, i. 305, Rolls Ser.; Wharton, *Anglia Sacra*, i. 435; *Annales Monastici*, i. 49, ii. 56, 238, iii. 18, Rolls Ser.) Peche is frequently, even in official documents, styled bishop of Chester on account of the removal of the see, for a short time, from Lichfield to Chester in 1075. He is said to have called himself only bishop of Coventry, to which place the seat of the bishopric had been for a second time removed before its final return to Lichfield (*Anglia Sacra*, i. 463). The title of Lichfield is rarely given to him by the chroniclers. Peche was at Westminster in 1162, at the settlement of a protracted dispute between the churches of Lincoln and St. Albans (Matthew Paris, *Hist. Angl.* i. 318; *Chron. Majora*, ii. 219; *Gesta Abbat. Monast. S. Albani*, i. 139, 157; Roger of Wendover, i. 22, Rolls Ser.) In 1170 he made the grave mistake of sanctioning by his presence the coronation of the young prince Henry by the archbishop of York, in defiance of the rights of the church of Canterbury (*Chronicles of Stephen*, &c., iv. 245). The archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Becket [see Thomas], was then in exile, but returned in the same year, and Peche was among the prelates who were at once suspended from their sees for their share in the coronation of the prince (Rad. de Diceto, i. 340; *Annales Monastici*, iv. 382; Matt. Paris, *Hist. Angl.* i. 357; *Chron. Majora*, ii. 277). He appears to have been soon forgiven and restored, for in 1171 he was one of the bishops chosen to reconcile the church of Canterbury, in which divine service had been suspended after the murder of the archbishop (Gervase of Canterbury, i. 236). About this time he made a grant of lands and rents to augment the deanery of Lichfield, which had been impoverished during the previous wars (Whitelocke, *Hist. Lichfield*, ap. *Anglia Sacra*, i. 448). In 1175 Peche attended the council of Westminster (Walter of Coventry, i. 239, Rolls Ser.) During his last years he was a liberal benefactor to, if not the actual founder of, the Augustinian priory of St. Thomas the Martyr at Stafford (Tanner, *Notit. Monast.* Staffordshire, xxiv. 2). He had a great affection for the house, and when, shortly before his death, he resigned his bishopric, it was to this foundation that he retired. He took the habit of the canons of St. Thomas, and died among them, 6 Oct. 1182. He was buried in the priory church (*Annales Monastici*, i. 52, 187, ii. 242, iv. 385; Rog. Hov. ii. 284).

[In addition to the authorities cited, see Dugdale's Monasticon, vi. 471–2; Madox's Form. Angl. cclxxxvii; Trivet, Annales, p. 51 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Le Neve's Fasti, i. 545, 565; Stubbs's Registrum, p. 31.] A. M. C–e.

**PECHELL.** [See also Peachell.]

**PECHELL**, Sir GEORGE RICHARD BROOKE (1789–1860), vice-admiral, born on 30 June 1789, son of Sir Thomas Brooke Pechell, bart., and younger brother of Sir Samuel John Brooke Pechell [q. v.], entered the navy in 1803, served in the Triumph in the fleet off Toulon under Lord Nelson in 1804, and afterwards in the Medusa, at the capture of the Spanish treasure-ships off Cape St. Mary on 5 Oct. [see Gore, Sir John; Moore, Sir Graham]. In 1806 he was in the Revenge off Brest and Rochfort, and in 1809 in the Barfleur in the Tagus. On 25 June 1810 he was promoted to be lieute-

nant of the Cæsar, from which he was moved in 1811 to the Macedonian, and in 1812 to the San Domingo, commanded by his brother, and carrying the flag of his uncle, Sir John Borlase Warren [q. v.], on the North American station. By Warren he was appointed to the acting command of the Colibri brig, and afterwards of the Recruit, in both of which he cruised with some success on the coast of North America. On 30 May 1814 he was promoted to the rank of commander, and in May 1818 commissioned the Bellette for the Halifax station, where he was employed in enforcing the treaty stipulations as to the fisheries. In October 1820 he was appointed by Rear-admiral Griffith to the command of the Tamar frigate, which, being very sickly, had come north from Jamaica, and had lost her captain and a large proportion of her officers and men. The commander-in-chief on the Jamaica station, however, claimed the vacancy, and the matter being referred to the admiralty, all the promotions were disallowed, and Pechell returned to the Bellette. While in the Tamar he had obtained the authority of the Haytian government for putting a stop to piracy committed by vessels pretending to be Haytian, and for searching all suspected vessels. He accordingly captured a large brigantine, with a crew of ninety-eight men, and forged commissions from the different independent states of South America. On 26 Dec. 1822 Pechell was advanced to post rank. In July 1830 he was nominated gentleman-usher of the privy chamber, and in April 1831 equerry to Queen Adelaide. In 1835 he was returned to parliament as member for Brighton, which he continued to represent in the whig interest during his life, taking an active part in public affairs, and especially in all questions relating to the navy, the mercantile marine, or the fisheries. On the death of his brother on 3 Nov. 1849 he succeeded to the baronetcy, and took the additional surname of Brooke; he became a rear-admiral on the retired list on 17 Dec. 1852, and vice-admiral on 5 Jan. 1858. He died at his house in Hill Street, Berkeley Square, on 29 June 1860. He married, in 1826, Katharine Annabella, daughter and coheiress of the twelfth Lord de la Zouche, by whom he had issue a son and two daughters. The son having predeceased him, the baronetcy passed to his cousin.

[O'Byrne's Naval Biogr. Dict.; Times, 30 June 1860.] J. K. L.

PECHELL, Sir PAUL (1724–1800), first baronet and soldier, second son of Jacob Pechell and of Jane, daughter of John Boyd, was born at Owenstown, co. Kildare, in 1724 His father, Jacob, served in the British army and adopted the war-office spelling, Pechell. His grandfather, Samuel de Péchels (1645–1732), a native of Montauban, was ejected from his estate upon the revocation of the edict of Nantes in 1685. In a brief narrative (printed in *Sussex Archæological Collections*, xxvi. 116) he relates how, after the entry of the 'missionary' dragoons into Montauban, he was first imprisoned at Cahors, and then in 1687 conveyed to Montpellier, whence he was shipped to the French West Indies. He managed to escape from St. Domingo to Jamaica in 1688, and, after many hardships, reached England in the autumn of that year. In August 1689 he accompanied William III to Ireland as a lieutenant in Schomberg's regiment, and in January 1690 the king granted him a pension. He subsequently acquired the estate of Owenstown, co. Kildare, and, dying at Dublin in 1732, was buried in St. Anne's Church in that city.

Paul himself entered the army as cornet-en-second in the royal regiment of dragoons (1st dragoons), 17 March 1743–4. He was promoted to be captain in Brigadier-general Fleming's regiment (36th foot), now the second battalion Worcestershire regiment, 12 Dec. 1746. At the beginning of 1747 the 36th regiment embarked at Gravesend to join the army of the Duke of Cumberland in Flanders. Pechell was present at operations near the frontiers of Holland, which led to the battle of Laffeld or Val, near Maestricht, 2 July 1747. His regiment lost two officers, two sergeants, and twenty-two rank and file, and he was among the wounded. He received from the Duke of Cumberland 'the greatest commendation' (*Lond. Gazette*, 27 July 1747).

After the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, 7 Oct. 1748, the establishment of the regiment was reduced on its return to England, and Pechell was gazetted captain in the 3rd dragoon guards, 31 May 1751. In the spring of 1752 this regiment furnished relays of escorts to attend George II to Harwich, where his majesty embarked on his way to Hanover, and for the next three years the regiment was on coast duty to put down the smuggling and highway robbery in Suffolk, Essex, and Devonshire. On 25 Nov. 1754 Pechell was gazetted guidon and captain in the second troop of the horse grenadier guards (now the 2nd lifeguards), lieutenant and captain 5 July 1755, major 7 Feb. 1759, and lieutenant-colonel 20 Jan. 1762.

He retired from the service on 24 June 1768, receiving a lump sum for his commis-

sion. He was created a baronet on 1 March 1797, and died in 1800. He married, in 1752, Mary, only daughter and heiress of Thomas Brooke, of Paglesham, Essex, and left two sons and five daughters. His eldest son, Major-general Sir Thomas Brooke Pechell (*d.* 1826), was father of Rear-admiral Sir Samuel John Brooke Pechell, and of Admiral Sir George Richard Brooke Pechell, both of whom are separately noticed.

[Burke's Peerage, s.v. Pechell; Sussex Archæological Collections, xxvi. 113–51 (with pedigree); Benoit's Hist. de l'Edit de Nantes; Erman et Reclam's Mémoires des Réfugiés Français; Agnew's French Protestant Exiles; War Office Records; De Ainslie's First Dragoons; Cannon's First Dragoons and Third Dragoon Guards; Army Lists.] B. H. S.

PECHELL, Sir SAMUEL JOHN BROOKE (1785–1849), rear-admiral, born 1 Sept. 1785, belonged to a French family which settled in Ireland after the revocation of the edict of Nantes. He was eldest son of Major-general Sir Thomas Brooke Pechell, bart., was brother of Sir George Richard Brooke Pechell [q. v.], and nephew of Admiral Sir John Borlase Warren [q. v.] Under Warren's care he entered the navy on board the Pomone in July 1796. In August 1797 he was moved into the Phœbe, with Captain (afterwards Sir Robert) Barlow, and was present at the capture of the Nereide on 21 Dec. 1797, and of the Africaine on 5 March 1800, in two of the most brilliant frigate actions of the war. After the latter, Barlow, who had been knighted, was moved into the Triumph of 74 guns, and Pechell followed him, till, in February 1803, he was appointed acting-lieutenant of the Active, a promotion confirmed by the admiralty on 1 April. In January 1806 he joined his uncle's flagship, the Foudroyant, and in her was present at the capture of the Marengo and Belle Poule on 13 March. On 23 March 1807 he was promoted to the command of the Ferret sloop on the Jamaica station, and on 16 June 1808 was posted to the Cleopatra, a 38-gun frigate, in which, on 22 Jan. 1809, he engaged the 40-gun French frigate Topaze, at anchor under a battery at Point Noire in Guadeloupe. The battery, however, had only one effective gun, and the Topaze, having sustained great loss, struck her colours when, after forty minutes, the Jason frigate and Hazard sloop joined the Cleopatra (James, v. 3; Chevalier, p. 350). The disparity of force at the close of the action necessarily dimmed its brilliance, but Pechell's judgment in so placing the Cleopatra as to render the enemy's fire ineffective was deservedly commended. He afterwards took part in the reduction of Martinique. In October 1810 he was moved into the Guerrière, but returned to the Cleopatra in July 1811, and commanded her in the North Sea, on the coast of France and at Gibraltar.

In December 1812 he was appointed to the San Domingo, the flagship of his uncle, as commander-in-chief on the coast of North America, and in her returned to England in June 1814. He was nominated a C.B. in June 1815, and in July 1823 commissioned the Sybille frigate for service in the Mediterranean, where, in 1824, she formed part of the squadron off Algiers, under Sir Harry Burrard Neale [q. v.], and was afterwards employed in preventing piracy, or the semi-piratical attempts of the Greek provisional government, near the Morea. The Sybille was paid off in November 1826, and Pechell, having, by the death of his father, succeeded to the baronetcy on 17 June 1826, took the additional surname of Brooke, in conformity with the will of his grandmother, the only daughter and heiress of Thomas Brooke of Paglesham in Essex. He had no further service afloat, but from 1830 to 1834, and again from 1839 to 1841, was a lord of the admiralty. He was in parliament as member for Hallestone in 1830, and for Windsor in 1833. He attained the rank of rear-admiral on 9 Nov. 1846, and died on 3 Nov. 1849. He married, in 1833, Julia Maria, daughter of the ninth lord Petre, but, dying without issue, the title passed to his brother, George Richard Brooke Pechell.

Pechell was one of the few officers of his time to recognise the immense importance of practice and precision in the working and firing great guns. Following the plan of Captain Broke in the Shannon [see Broke, Sir Philip Bowes Vere], he carried out, when in command of the San Domingo, systematic exercise and target practice, by which he obtained results then considered remarkable. In the Sybille he followed a similar method, again with results far superior to anything before known. As the Excellent gunnery school at Portsmouth was first instituted in 1832, while Pechell was one of the lords of the admiralty, it may be fairly presumed that the establishment of it was mainly due to him. He was also the author of a valuable pamphlet entitled 'Observations upon the defective Equipment of Ships' Guns,' first published in 1812 (2nd edit. 1824; 3rd, 1828).

[Marshall's Royal Naval Biogr. v. (suppl. pt. i.) p. 361; O'Byrne's Naval Biogr. Dict.; James's Naval History; Chevalier's Histoire de la Marine française sous le Consulat et l'Empire.] J. K. L.

PECHEY, JOHN (1655–1716), medical writer, whose name is also spelt Peachey and Peche, was son of William Pechey of Chichester, and was born in 1655. He entered at New Inn Hall, Oxford, in 1671, and graduated B.A. in 1675, M.A. in 1678. On 7 Nov. 1684 he applied for admission as a licentiate of the College of Physicians in London; his application was further considered on 5 Dec., and he was admitted on 22 Dec. 1684. He practised in the city of London, residing at the Angel and Crown in Basing Lane. His methods were those of an apothecary rather than of a physician, and on 15 Nov. 1688 he was summoned before the College of Physicians 'upon printing bills signifying his removal and shilling fee, and putting up a board of notice to the people with his name over his dore.' He was admonished, but on 7 Dec. 1688, the board remaining over his door as formerly, and he not having ceased 'spargere cartulas,' the censors fined him 4*l.* On 4 Jan. he declined to pay, and on 17 Jan. 1689 he had no further excuse than that 'other have broake our statutes besides' himself, and was fined 8*l.* for his second contempt. On 30 July 1689 he took the oaths and declaration, and his autograph signature remains in the original record at the College of Physicians as 'Joh. Peachey.' In 1692 he published two books, 'Collections of Acute Diseases, in five parts,' and 'A Collection of Chronical Diseases.' The first treats of smallpox, measles, plague, and other febrile disorders, of rheumatism, apoplexy, and lethargy; and the second, of colic, hysteria, gout, and hæmaturia. He published in 1693 'Promptuarium Praxeos Medicæ,' in Latin—a compendium of medicine with many prescriptions given in full. The book ends with an admonition or puff of 'Pilulæ catharticæ nostræ,' which 'venales prostant' at his own house in Basing Lane. He next published 'The Compleat Herbal of Physical Plants' and 'The Storehouse of Physical Practice.' Another edition of the former appeared in 1707, and of the latter, with slightly altered title, in 1697. In 1696 he published 'A General Treatise of the Diseases of Maids, Big-bellied Women, Childbed Women, and Widows'—a compilation without any original observations. All these were brought out by his original publisher, Henry Bonwicke, and slightly varied parts of some of them appeared as separate works. In the same year he published the book by which he is best known—a vigorous and idiomatic translation of 'the whole works of Sydenham. The preface, which contains a short account of Sydenham, is dated from the Angel and Crown in Basing Lane, 12 Oct. 1695, and on the last page is an advertisement of Pechey's pills, sold at his house at 1*s.* 6*d.* the box. A seventh edition of this translation appeared in 1717, and an eleventh in 1740. Pechey moved into Bow Lane, Cheapside, near his former house, and the last list, at the College of Physicians, in which his name appears is that of 1716.

He has often been confused with John Peachi or Pechey, who was a doctor of medicine of Caen in Normandy, and was admitted an extra-licentiate of the College of Physicians on 26 July 1683 (original record at College of Physicians). This physician is stated in a manuscript note on the title-page of a pamphlet in the library of the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society to be the 'doctor of physick in Gloucestershire' who wrote 'Some Observations made upon the Root called Casmunar,' reprinted in London in 1693. Several other pharmacological tracts are attributed to him without satisfactory proof, and many of them contain internal evidence of another authorship. That he practised outside London is certain, as his name never appears in the College of Physicians' lists, in which at that time extra-licentiates were not included (*Manuscript Annals or Minutes of Proceedings at the College of Physicians*, 1683–9).

[The prefaces and advertisements which corroborate the statements in the Annals of the College of Physicians conclusively establish that the works mentioned in this life are all by John Pechey the licentiate, and not by John Peachi the extra-licentiate, and show that the lists in Dr. Munk's College of Physicians, the printed catalogue of the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society, 1879, and the index catalogue of the library of the surgeon-general's office, United States Army (vol. xiv.), 1893, do not accurately distinguish the two writers. In Minutes of Evidence, University for London Commission, 1889, p. 208, a witness quotes an advertisement of Pechey in the Postman of 10 Jan. 1700 to support an argument as to practice, in ignorance of the fact that Pechey's conduct was censured, and not approved, by the College of Physicians. See also Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Athenæum, iv. 787.] N. M.

PECK, FRANCIS (1692–1743), antiquary, younger son of Robert and Elizabeth Peck, was born in the parish of St. John the Baptist at Stamford, Lincolnshire, on 4 May 1692, and baptised in St. John's on 12 May. His mother's maiden name was Jephson, and his father is believed to have been a prosperous farmer. He entered Trinity College, Cambridge, at the age of fifteen, and graduated B.A. in 1709, and M.A. in 1713. On leaving Cambridge he took holy orders, and in 1719 became curate of Kingscliff in

Northamptonshire. In the same year he married Anne, daughter of Edward Curtis of Stamford, and shortly afterwards, in 1721, gave the first indication of his lifelong devotion to antiquarian studies by issuing proposals for printing the history and antiquities of his native town. In 1723 he obtained by purchase from the patron, Samuel Lowe, the advowson of the rectory of Goadby-Marwood in Leicestershire. He wrote to Browne Willis that Bishop Gibson confirmed his appointment within one hour of his translation from the see of Lincoln to that of London. Peck was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries on 9 March 1732. In January 1738 he obtained by the favour of Bishop Reynolds the prebendal stall of Marston St. Laurence in Lincoln Cathedral. He held this prebend, which had previously been held by White Kennett, until his death on 9 July 1743. The latter portion of his life was wholly devoted to antiquarian pursuits. He was buried just within the south door of Goadby church, where a Latin inscription, modelled upon that of Robert Burton, describes him as 'notus nimis omnibus, ignotus sibi.' He left two sons—Francis (1720–1749), rector of Gunby, Lincolnshire; and Thomas, who died young—and one daughter, Anne, born in 1730, who married John Smalley, a farmer and grazier of Stroxton. Peck's widow retired to Harlaxton in Lincolnshire, where she died about 1758. In this year Peck's books were sold by auction (Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* iii. 655).

At the time of his death Peck had in contemplation no less than nine different works, several of which were in an advanced stage of preparation (see below). He had a remarkable faculty for accumulating out-of-the-way facts, which is best exhibited in his well-known 'Desiderata Curiosa,' but his talent for arrangement and generalisation was less conspicuous. His researches were mainly confined to the seventeenth century, but were not sufficiently concentrated to render him an expert in dealing with the value of evidence or any other subjects of controversy. He was, however, commendably free from political bias. Some of his literary peculiarities are on the whole fairly characterised by William Cole, who writes of Peck: 'Had he lived longer we might have had many more curious peices of antiquity, which he seems to have been in possession of; but the cheif and great failing of this gentleman seemed to be an eager desire to publish as little in one volume as he could, in order to eke out his collections. His "Desiderata Curiosa" is full of curious things, but he has so disjointed, mangled, and new-sentenced all of them, and what with detached books, chapters, and heads of the chapters, that, in endeavouring to be more than ordinarily clear, he has become many times quite the reverse' (Cole, *Collections*, Addit. MS. 5833, f. 176). A portrait of the antiquary in 1735, engraved by J. Faber after J. Highmore, is prefixed to his 'Cromwell' (1740). Another portrait, drawn by B. Collins *ad vivum* in 1731, is prefixed to the 1779 edition of the 'Desiderata.'

The following is a list of Peck's chief works, all of which were printed at his own charge, and for which he solicited orders and subscribers at the end of several of his smaller tracts: 1. 'Τὸ Ὕψος Ἅγιον, or an Exercise on the Creation, and a Hymn to the Creator of the World; written in the express words of the Sacred Text, as an attempt to show the Beauty and Sublimity of Holy Scripture,' 1716, 8vo. 2. 'Sighs upon the never enough lamented Death of Queen Anne,' in imitation of Milton (blank verse), 1719, 4to. Prefixed is a representation of Queen Anne ascending from the earth with the support of angels and cherubs; and appended to the main poem are three minor pieces. At the end of this work he solicits assistance for a 'History of the Two Last Months of King Charles I,' which never appeared. 3. 'Academia Tertia Anglicana; or the Antiquarian Annals of Stamford in Lincoln, Rutland, and Northampton shires; containing the History of the University, Monasteries, Gilds, Churches, Chapels, Hospitals, and Schools there,' 1727, 4to. This elaborate work was dedicated to John, duke of Rutland, and in it is incorporated the substance of a previous tract by Peck upon 'The History of the Stamford Bull-running.' 4. 'Desiderata Curiosa, or a Collection of Divers Scarce and Curious Pieces, relating chiefly to matters of English History; consisting of choice Tracts, Memoirs, Letters, Wills, Epitaphs,' &c., 1732, 4to. This volume, to which the author contributed two original papers—one on the ancient divisions of the day and night, the other a description of Burghley House—was dedicated to Lord William Manners; and it was followed in 1735 by a second volume dedicated to Bishop Reynolds. Only two hundred and fifty copies of these volumes having been printed, they soon became scarce, and were reprinted in one volume in 1779, 4to, with a scanty memoir of Peck by Thomas Evans. 5. 'A Complete Catalogue of all the Discourses written both for and against Popery in the time of King James II; containing in the whole an account of 457 books and pamphlets . . . with an alphabetical list of the

writers on each side,' 1735, 4to. This pamphlet was edited, with large additions, for the Chetham Society in 1859, by Thomas Jones, then librarian of the Chetham Library, which is especially rich in these pamphlets. 6. 'Memoirs of the Life and Actions of Oliver Cromwell, as delivered in three panegyrics of him, written in Latin; the first, as said, by Don Juan Roderiguez de Saa Meneses, Conde de Penguias, the Portugal ambassador; the second, as affirmed, by a certain jesuit, the lord-ambassador's chaplain; yet both, it is thought, composed by Mr. John Milton (Latin secretary to Oliver Cromwell), as was the third; with an English version of each. The whole illustrated with a large historical preface; many similar passages from the "Paradise Lost" and other works of Mr. John Milton, and "Notes from the Best Historians,"' 1740, 4to. To the work was appended a collection of 'Divers Curious Historical Pieces' relating to, among others, Sir Thomas Scot, Thomas Hobson the carrier, Old Parr, John Evelyn, Gerard Salvin, Tobias Rustat, and Abraham Cowley; and there is 'a large account of Queen Elizabeth's entertainment at Oxford in 1592.' 7. 'New Memoirs of the Life and Poetical Works of Mr. John Milton; with, first, an Examination of Milton's Style; secondly, Explanatory and Critical Notes on divers Passages in Milton and Shakespeare, by the Editor; thirdly, Baptistes: a Sacred and Dramatic Poem in defence of Liberty, as written in Latin by Mr. George Buchanan, translated into English by Mr. John Milton, and first published in 1641 by order of the House of Commons; fourthly, the Parallel, or Archbishop Laud and Cardinal Wolsey compared—a vision by Milton; fifthly, the Legend of Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, knight, chief butler of England, who died of poison anno 1570—an historical poem by his nephew, Sir Thomas Throckmorton, knight; sixthly, Herod the Great, by the editor; seventhly, the Resurrection, a poem in imitation of Milton, by a friend; and, eighthly, a Discourse on the Harmony of the Spheres, by Milton, with Prefaces and Notes,' 1740. The work, which was dedicated to Speaker Onslow, was adorned with a portrait of Milton which Peck obtained from Sir John Meres of Kirkby Beler in Leicestershire. Before the publication of the volume Vertue told Peck that the portrait was not Milton's, but Peck bade 'posterity settle the difference.' The critical notes on Milton and Shakespeare are remarkable, as being perhaps the first attempts made to illustrate their writings by extracts from contemporary writers, in accordance with the method subsequently followed by Steevens and Malone (see *Memoirs of Milton*, p. 5). 8. 'Four Discourses, viz.: i. Of Grace and how to excite it; ii. Jesus Christ the True Messiah, proved from a consideration of His Resurrection in particular; iii. Jesus Christ the True Messiah, proved from a consideration of His Resurrection in particular; iv. The Necessity and Advantage of Good Laws and Good Magistrates,' 1742, 8vo.

Of the various works that Peck had in contemplation at the time of his death probably the most important was his 'Natural History and Antiquities of Leicestershire.' The manuscript was purchased by Sir Thomas Cave in 1754 for ten guineas, and on his death in 1778 the whole of Peck's materials, together with those of Sir Thomas himself, were handed over by the latter's son to John Nichols. The materials of both were carefully, and with due acknowledgment, incorporated by Nichols in his monumental work. Peck's natural history collections were quaintly digested under the following heads: 'Stones, Salt, Long Life, Herbs, Earthquakes, Crevices, and Apparitions.' The next in importance of Peck's manuscripts was the 'Monasticon Anglicanum Volumen Quartum.' This work, which was also purchased by Cave, consisted of five quarto volumes, and was on 14 May 1779 presented to the British Museum. It has been used by numerous antiquaries and county historians, and was naturally of especial value to the subsequent editors of Dugdale (Ellis, Cayley, and Bandinel). The materials used by Peck in his 'Life of Nicholas Ferrar of Little Gidding,' which was also in an advanced stage of preparation, are for the most part embodied in Peckard's 'Memoirs' (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1791, i. 456). The remainder of his manuscripts, including the 'Lives' of William and Robert Burton (author of the 'Anatomy of Melancholy'), 'The History and Antiquities of Rutland,' 'The Annals of Stamford' continued, 'Memoirs of the Restoration of Charles II,' and a third volume of 'Desiderata Curiosa,' were all in a fragmentary or merely inchoate state. Several other manuscripts of Peck, of minor importance, are still preserved in the British Museum; and Gilchrist possessed a copy of Langbaine's 'Lives' carefully interlined by him. Peck, whose interests were so catholic, and whose reading was so omnivorous, was naturally in correspondence with most of the antiquaries of his day, and letters of his are extant to, among others, Thomas Hearne, Browne Willis, Thomas Wotton (Addit. MS. 24121), Zachary Grey (Addit. MS. 6396). He also communicated some notes on the Gresham professors to Dr. Ward (Addit. MS. 6209). Papers of

his, including copies of Milton's 'Poems' and transcripts of 'Robin Hood Ballads,' comprise Addit. MSS. 28637, 28638.

[Cole's Athenæ Cantabrigienses; Graduati Cantabrigienses, p. 134; Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Angl. ii. 184; Gent. Mag. 1743, p. 443; Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary, xxiv. 240; Nichols's Hist. of Leicestershire, preface; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. i. 507 (a valuable memoir, on which all subsequent lives are based), ii. 543, 604. iv. 553, vi. 159, 198, 309–453, viii. 573, 690, ix. 191; Mem. of Thomas Hollis (1780), pp. 513, 526, 531; Bibl. Topogr. Britannica, ii. 50; Birch's Life of Tillotson, p. 127; Hearne's Preface to Fordun's Scotichronicon; Chambers's Book of Days; Baker's Biogr. Dramatica (1812), i. 564; McClintock and Strong's Cyclopædia of Biblical Literature; Didot's Nouvelle Biographie Générale; English Cyclopædia; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

**PECK, JAMES** (1773–1810?), musician, music engraver, and publisher, is stated to have been born in London in 1773 (Fétis), and would seem to be a member of a family of printers and booksellers residing at York and Hull. A musician named Peck died at Bath on 3 Feb. 1784, but his relationship with James cannot be traced. James composed 1. 'Kisses,' a glee for three voices, published by Preston about 1798. It was followed by 2. 'Love and sparkling Wine,' and 3. 'Hail, Britannia,' printed by himself at Westmorland Buildings about 1799. Some of his other publications were: 4. 'Two hundred and fifty Psalm-tunes,' in three parts, 1798. 5. 'Peck's Collection of Hymn-tunes, Fugues, and Odes,' chiefly original, in three and four parts, 1799. 6. 'Peck's Miscellaneous Collection of Sacred Music' . . . original and selected hymn-tunes and odes, printed at Westmorland Buildings, and (book iii.) at Newgate Street, 1809. 7. 'Vocal Preceptor.' 8. 'Flute Preceptor.' 9. 'Advice to a young composer,' 1810. 10. 'Soft be the gently breathing notes,' a hymn for two or three voices, with accompaniment for two flutes and pianoforte,' 1810? 11. 'Sacred Gleanings, or Hymn-tunes adapted for two flutes.' 12. 'Beauties of Sacred Harmony, or Vocalist's Pocket-book,' 1824. 13. 'Peck's Pocket Arrangement of Psalm and Hymn-tunes,' 3 vols., 1833. The later works were probably published by John Peck, the organist at St. Faith's, and James Peck the younger.

[Gent. Mag. 1784 p. 152, 1798 p. 1149, 1801 p. 1210; Brown's Dict. of Musicians, p. 466; Peck's publications.] L. M. M.

**PECKARD, PETER, D.D.** (1718?–1797), whig divine, son of the Rev. John Peckard of Welbourn, Lincolnshire, matriculated from Corpus Christi College, Oxford, 20 July 1734, when aged 16, and was admitted on 9 Oct. He graduated B.A. 1738, M.A. March 1741–2, and became scholaris, or probationary fellow, in 1744 (Fowler, *Corpus Christi Coll.* p. 405). After having been ordained in the English church, he seems to have become a chaplain in the army, to have married about 1752, and to have settled for a time at Huntingdon. Probably through local influence he was appointed in 1760 to the rectory of Fletton and the vicarage of Yaxley, both near Peterborough. A dispensation for the holding of these two livings at the same time was requisite, and it was obtained with great difficulty from Secker, then archbishop of Canterbury. Peckard was considered heterodox 'upon the question concerning an intermediate or separate state of conscious existence between death and the resurrection,' and his examination was several times adjourned. He obtained his dispensation at last, but only after he had signed four articles to some extent modifying his views, and it was given at a date when the second benefice was within a day or two of lapsing. His own narrative of these proceedings and the Latin essays which he wrote for the archbishop are in Archdeacon Blackburne's 'Works' (vol. i. pp. xciv–cvii). The conclusion of Bishop Law was 'Peter Peckard has escaped out of Lollard's tower with the loss of his tail.'

In 1766 Peckard became chaplain to the first troop of grenadier guards, and served with it in Germany. He was at that time noted as a man of convivial tastes, but in after years he practised the strictest economy. The rectory of Fletton was held by him until his death, but he vacated the vicarage of Yaxley in 1777. He was prebendary of Clifton in Lincoln Cathedral from 9 May 1774, and of Rampton in Southwell Minster from 23 Oct. 1777 to his death. He was also appointed in 1777, under dispensation, to the rectory of Tansor in Northamptonshire, and from 1793 to 1797 he retained the rectory of Abbots' Ripton, near Huntingdon.

In 1781 he was appointed to the mastership of Magdalene College, Cambridge, by Sir John Griffin Griffin, afterwards Lord Howard de Walden, who had the right of presentation, as owner of the estate of Audley End. He was incorporated at Cambridge in 1782, appointed vice-chancellor in 1784, and created D.D. *per literas regias* in 1785. In April 1792 he was advanced by the crown to the deanery of Peterborough, and it is recorded, as a crowning proof of his parsimony, that he only gave one annual dinner to his chapter. He built a new parsonage-house at Fletton, and was permitted by the patron, Lord Carysfort, to nominate his successor to the benefice. Peckard died on 8 Dec. 1797, and was buried

at Peterborough. His wife was Martha (1729–1805), eldest daughter of Edward Ferrar, attorney at Huntingdon. A poetical essay on Peckard is in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' 1799 (pt. i. p. 325), and two poems, one by him and one by his wife, are in that periodical for 1789 (pt. ii. p. 748).

Peckard published many sermons of a liberal tendency, and those of later life drew attention to the evils of the slave traffic. The views which Archbishop Secker deemed heterodox were set out in: 1. 'Observations on the Doctrine of an Intermediate State,' 1756. 2. 'Further Observations on the Doctrine of an Intermediate State,' 1757. The last was in reply to the queries of Thomas Morton, rector of Bassingham. Peckard's opinions were also criticised by Caleb Fleming, D.D. [q. v.], in his 'Survey of the Search of the Souls,' 1759, and defended by him in 'Observations on Mr. Fleming's Survey,' 1759, which provoked from Fleming 'A Defence of the Conscious Scheme against that of the Mortalist.'

Among Peckard's other sermons and tracts were: 3. 'The popular Clamour against the Jews indefensible,' 1753. 4. 'A Dissertation on Revelation, chap. xi. ver. 13,' 1756. This was written to prove that the passage was prophetical, and fulfilled by the Lisbon earthquake. It was criticised at some length in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' 1756 (pp. 138–139), and defended by the author in the same periodical (pp. 213–14). 5. 'The proper Stile of Christian Oratory,' 1770 (against theatrical declamation). 6. 'National Crimes the Cause of National Punishments,' 1795. It passed through three editions, and referred chiefly to the slave trade, on which subject Peckard often preached. On becoming vice-chancellor at Cambridge he put the question, 'Anne liceat invitos in servitutem dare?' He published anonymously in 1776 a treatise on (7) 'Subscription with Historical Extracts,' and in 1778 a pamphlet (8) 'Am I not a Man and a Brother?'

Peckard's father-in-law, Edward Ferrar, left him by will many books and papers, including a 'life,' by John Ferrar, of Nicholas Ferrar [q. v.] It was published by him in 1790 as (9) 'Memoirs of the Life of Mr. Nicholas Ferrar,' but with some mutilations, through fear of a 'scornful public.' It was reprinted, with a few omissions, in Wordsworth's 'Ecclesiastical Biography' (v. 69–266), and published separately in an abridged form in 1852. Some of Peckard's manuscripts, which were valuable to students of the genealogy of the early American settlers, are referred to in J. W. Thornton's 'First Records of Anglo-American Colonisation,' Boston, 1859.

Peckard left property to Magdalene College, and also founded two scholarships. Portraits of him and his wife hang in the college hall. A 'capital portrait' of him is said to exist at Fletton.

[Gent. Mag. 1766 p. 496, 1777 p. 248, 1797 pt. ii. pp. 1076, 1126, 1798 pt. i. p. 440; Mayor's N. Ferrar, pp. 378–9, 382–3; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. ii. 119, 444; Nichols's Lit. Illustrations, vi. 729–31; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 134, 541, iii. 455, 611, 695; Sweeting's Churches of Peterborough, pp. 58, 187, 204; Blackburne's Works, vol. i. pp. xlii–xliii; Pinkerton's Lit. Correspondence, i. 44–9, 105–6; information from A. G. Peskett, Magdalene Coll.] W. P. C.

PECKE, THOMAS (*fl.* 1664), verse-writer, son of James Pecke, a member of the well-known family of his name settled at Spixworth in Norfolk, was born at Wymondham in 1637. His mother's maiden name was Talbot. He was educated at the free school, Norwich, under Thomas Lovering, to whom he addresses one of his epigrams, and was admitted a member of Gonville and Caius College, 3 Oct. 1655. He apparently owed his maintenance at the university to his uncle, Thomas Pecke of Spixworth, but seems to have left it without a degree. He entered at the Inner Temple on 22 June 1657, when he was described as of Edmonton, and was called to the bar on 12 Feb. 1664 (*Register Books of the Inner Temple*).

Pecke was a friend of Francis Osborne (1593–1659) [q. v.], the author of 'Advice to a Son,' and when Osborne was attacked by John Heydon [q. v.] in his 'Advice to a Daughter,' replied to the latter in 'Advice to Balaam's Ass,' 8vo, 1658. Heydon also gave currency to the report that Pecke was the author of 'A Dialogue of Polygamy,' a translation from the Italian of Bernardino Ochino [q. v.], published in 1657, and dedicated to Osborne.

Pecke also published 'An Elegie upon the never satisfactorily deplored Death of that rare Column of Parnassus, Mr. John Cleeveland,' a folio broadside, 1658 (Brit. Mus.); 'Parnassi Puerperium,' 8vo, 1659, a collection of epigrams, original and translated from Sir Thomas More and others, upon the title of which he describes himself as the 'Author of that celebrated Elegie upon Cleeveland,' and a congratulatory poem to Charles II, 4to, 1660.

There is a portrait of Pecke prefixed to 'Parnassi Puerperium.'

[Information kindly supplied by the master of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge.] G. T. D.

**PECKHAM**, Sir EDMUND (1495 ?–1564), treasurer or master of the mint, was son of Peter Peckham, by his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Eburton. His family was connected with Buckinghamshire, and he acquired a house and estate at Denham in that county. At an early age he entered the king's counting-house as a clerk, and attended Henry VIII on his visit to Gravelines in July 1520 (*Rutland Papers*, p. 5). Henry VIII appointed him in 1524 cofferer of the royal household, and in 1526 clerk of the green cloth. From 1525 he was a justice of the peace for Buckinghamshire. A like honour in regard to Middlesex was conferred on him in 1537. In 1527, on the attainder of Francis, viscount Lovel, he was granted the manors of Alford, Eccles, Alderley, Chester, and Flint. He was knighted on 18 May 1542 (Wriothesley, *Chronicle*, i. 135). In 1546 he added to his other offices that of treasurer or master of the mint, to which was attached a residence at Blackfriars. He retained the post till his death, although during 1552–4 his place was filled temporarily by Martin Pirri, master of the Dublin mint. In 1547 he was nominated an assistant executor of Henry VIII's will, under which he received 200*l*. In 1549—during Edward VI's reign—he was directed with others to restore the old standard of gold. In 1551 he coined the pound weight of silver —three-quarters alloy and one fine—into seventy-two shillings worth twelve pence a piece. On Edward VI's death Peckham maintained with much energy the cause of Queen Mary, in opposition to Lady Jane Grey. He proclaimed Queen Mary in Buckinghamshire (*Chronicle*, pp. 8, 12), and subsequently kept a careful watch on the movements of the Duke of Northumberland in the eastern counties. He was rewarded by becoming a privy councillor, and was elected M.P. for Buckinghamshire in the first and third parliaments of the new queen's reign (October 1553 and November 1554). He and his son Henry took a prominent part in repressing Wyatt's rebellion. Reputed to be a staunch catholic, he exerted much influence at Mary's court. In 1557 he attended the funeral of Anne of Cleves, and acted as her executor (Nicolas, *Testamenta Vetusta*, pp. 42, 44). With Queen Mary's death his political life ceased, but he remained treasurer of the mint, and helped to carry into effect Queen Elizabeth's measures for the restoration of the coinage. He was buried in Denham church on 18 April 1564. An elaborate monument was erected to his memory there, but only damaged fragments survive.

Peckham married Ann, daughter of John Cheyne of Chesham-Bois, Buckinghamshire. She was buried at Denham on 27 May 1570. By her he had four sons—Robert, Henry, George [q. v.], and Edward—and at least two daughters. The eldest son, Robert (1515–1569), stood high in Queen Mary's favour as a zealous catholic, was made a privy councillor by her, and was knighted in 1555. He was M.P. for Buckinghamshire in April 1554. According to his long epitaph at Denham, he sought to improve his health (which he had injured by excess of study) by a foreign tour, on which he set out in 1564. But his epitaph at Rome states that he voluntarily exiled himself from his native country on account of the final triumph of protestantism under Elizabeth. He died at Rome on 10 Sept. 1569, and was buried in the church of San Gregorio there, where a mural monument is still standing (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 3rd ser. i. 259). His heart was subsequently interred in Denham church, where he is commemorated in a tablet bearing a long inscription. He married Mary, daughter and coheiress of Edmund, lord Bray, whose sister was wife of Sir Ralph Verney.

Sir Edmund's son Henry was four times elected M.P. for Chipping Wycombe between March 1552–3 and October 1555. He was involved in 1556, with Henry Dudley and Job Throgmorton, in a conspiracy to rob the exchequer. He was arrested on 18 March, and sought to save his life by betraying his companions. He was hanged, along with John Daniel, on Tower Hill, on 7 May 1556. Both were buried in All Hallows Barking Church (Machyn, pp. 102, 109, 348, 351; Strype, *Memorials*, III. i. 489).

[Lipscomb's Buckinghamshire, iv. 449 et seq.; Harl. MSS. 1533 f. 75, 1110 f. 67; Strype's Memorials; Letters and Papers of Henry VIII, 1522–1539; Froude's History; Chronicle of Queen Mary and Queen Jane (Camden Soc.); Verney Papers (Camden Soc.), pp. 57 seq.; Hawkins's Silver Coins of England, p. 485; Rogers Ruding's Annals of the Coinage, ed. 1840, i. 29 *n*, 34, 54, 318 et seq.] S. L.

**PECKHAM**, Sir GEORGE (*d.* 1608), merchant venturer, was third son of Sir Edmund Peckham [q.v.] George succeeded to the paternal estate at Denham, and was knighted in 1570. In 1572 he was high sheriff of Buckinghamshire. In 1574 he, together with Sir Humphrey Gilbert [q. v.], Sir Richard Grenville [q. v.], and Christopher Carleill [q. v.], petitioned the queen 'to allow of an enterprise by them conceived . . . at their charges and adventure, to be performed for discovery of sundry rich and unknown lands . . . fatally reserved for England and for the

honour of her Majesty.' In 1578 a patent was granted to Gilbert, and in the enterprise, which finally took form in 1583, Peckham was the chief adventurer, Gilbert assigning to him large grants of land and liberty of trade. In November 1583 he published 'A true reporte of the late discoveries and possession taken . . . of the Newfound-landes . . . Wherein is also breefely sette downe her highnesse lawfull Tytle thereunto, and the great and manifolde commodities that is likely to grow thereby to the whole Realme in generall, and to the adventurers in particular. . . .' It is reprinted in Hakluyt's 'Principal Navigations,' iii. 165. Whether by unsuccessful ventures or otherwise, he afterwards became embarrassed in his circumstances, and in 1595 the estate and manor of Denham came to the queen 'by reason of his debt to the crown.' They were conferred on William Bowyer, in whose family they still remain. He died in 1608, the inquisition of his property being taken on 21 June. He married, in 1554, Susan, daughter and heiress of Henry Webbe. She died in childbed, at the age of seventeen, on 11 Dec. 1555 (Lipscomb, ii. 544). By a second wife two sons are mentioned—Edmund the elder, who would seem to have predeceased him, and George, who was his heir.

[Calendars of State Papers, Dom. and Colonial (America and West Indies); Lipscomb's Hist. of Buckinghamshire, freq. (see Index); Brown's Genesis of the U.S.A.; Prowse's Hist. of Newfoundland.] J. K. L.

**PECKHAM, JOHN** (*d.* 1292), archbishop of Canterbury, is stated by Bartholomew Cotton (*De Archiepiscopis Cantuariæ*, p. 371) to have been a native of Kent. Peckham, however, seems to have been connected with Sussex, and he himself says that he had been brought up in the neighbourhood of Lewes from a boy (*Registrum*, p. 902): from this it has been assumed that he was born at Lewes. But the connection may be merely due to the fact that the rectory of Peckham in Sussex belonged to Lewes priory (Dugdale, *Monast. Angl.* v. 16). Another suggestion connects the archbishop with the Sussex family of Peckham of Arches, and with Framfield in that county, where the family of Peckham survived till the eighteenth century (*Sussex Archæological Collections*, iv. 299). Peckham's parentage is unknown, but he had a brother Richard, whose son Walter received some patronage from the archbishop (*Registrum*, pp. 1010, 1048–50); several other persons of the name occur in the 'Register,' and one Simon de Peckham, who received orders by John's special command, may have been a relative (*ib.* pp. 1046, 1048). Hook, on the supposed authority of Archbishop Parker, gives the date of Peckham's birth as 1240, but the true date must clearly have been some years earlier. Peckham received his earliest instruction at Lewes priory (*ib.* p. 902). Afterwards he went to Oxford, but it is of course impossible that he was, as sometimes alleged, a member of Merton College; the statement to this effect appears to be due to a confusion with Gilbert Peckham (*fl.* 1324) (Little, *Grey Friars at Oxford*, p. 238; *Registrum*, Pref. i. p. lviii). The suggestion that Peckham was the 'Johannes juvenis' [see John, *fl.* 1267] whom Roger Bacon befriended is equally untenable. Peckham was perhaps a pupil of Adam Marsh, who, writing about 1250, speaks of him in favourable terms, and states that Peckham, having entered the Franciscan order, had resigned his post as tutor to the nephew of H. de Andegavia (*Monumenta Franciscana*, i. 256). In this letter Peckham is described as 'dominus' and 'scholaris;' he had therefore probably not graduated as master. He seems to have spent some time in the Franciscan convent at Oxford (*Registrum*, p. 977), but soon after 1250, if not before, he proceeded to Paris, where he studied under St. Bonaventure, took his doctor's degree, and ruled in theology (*Monumenta Franciscana*, i. 537, 550; Trivet, *Annals*, pp. 299–300). Peckham speaks of himself as educated in France from tender years; he must therefore have been quite young when he went to Paris. He mentions that he enjoyed the favour of Margaret, the wife of Louis IX, and that among his pupils at Paris was Thomas de Cantelupe [q. v.], the future bishop of Hereford (*Registrum*, pp. 315, 827, 874). At Paris also he met St. Thomas Aquinas, and was present when that doctor submitted his doctrine on the 'Unity of Form' to the judgment of the masters in theology. Peckham records that he alone stood by Thomas, and defended him to the best of his power (*ib.* pp. 866, 899). He also defended the mendicant orders against William of St. Amour, whose teaching caused so much disturbance at Paris between 1252 and 1262 (cf. *Registrum*, Preface, iii. p. xcvii). Peckham returned to Oxford about 1270, and there became eleventh lector of his order (*Monumenta Franciscana*, i. 550). On 2 May 1275 he was appointed, in conjunction with Oliver de Encourt, prior of the Dominicans, to decide a suit in the chancellor's court at Oxford (*Close Roll* 3 *Edw. I*, ap. Little, p. 155). A little later he was elected ninth provincial minister of the Franciscans in England, and

during the first year of his office attended a general council of the order at Padua. A year or two afterwards he was summoned to Rome by the pope, and made 'Lector sacri palatii,' or theological lecturer in the schools in the papal palace, being the first to hold the office (*Monumenta Franciscana*, pp. 537, 552; Trivet, p. 300; Martin, i. p. lxi). The Lanercost chronicler (p. 100) states that Peckham lectured at Rome for two years; but he probably did not hold the office much over a year, for it is unlikely that he was summoned by John XXI; and Nicholas III, who favoured the friars, only became pope on 25 Nov. 1277. Peckham gained a great reputation by his lectures, which were attended by many bishops and cardinals. His audience are said to have always risen and uncovered as he entered, a mark of respect which the cardinals refused to continue after he was made archbishop, lest its meaning might be misconstrued (Rodulphius, *Hist. Seraph. Religionis*, p. 117 *b*).

In 1278 Robert Burnell [q. v.] was elected archbishop of Canterbury, in succession to Robert Kilwardby [q. v.] Nicholas III, however, quashed the election, and on 25 Jan. 1279 nominated Peckham to the vacant see, very much against his will (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 279–80; the date is confirmed by the dating of Peckham's letters from 1283 onward, cf. *Registrum*, pp. 508, 510; but the papal bull announcing the appointment is dated 28 Jan. cf. Bliss, *Cal. Papal Registers*, i. 456). According to Thomas Wikes (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 280), Peckham was consecrated on the Sunday in Mid-Lent, 12 March, but other authorities give the first Sunday in Lent, 19 Feb. (Wharton, *Anglia Sacra*, i. 116); the latter date is shown to be correct by entries in Peckham's 'Register' (pp. 96, 98, 177–8, 301, 305; cf. Stubbs, *Reg. Sacr. Angl.* p. 46). Peckham did not leave Rome till some time after his consecration, and passed through Paris in haste, reaching Amiens on 21 May, in order to be present at the meeting there between Edward I and Philip III of France two days later (*Registrum*, pp. 3, 4). Edward received him kindly, and at once ordered the temporalities of Canterbury to be restored to him (*ib.* p. 6). On 26 May Peckham proceeded to Abbeville, and on 4 June crossed to Dover from Witsand (*ib.* pp. 8, 9). The order for restitution of the temporalities had been issued on 30 May, and restitution was made immediately on the archbishop's arrival (*Pat. Roll 7 Edw. I*, ap. 48th *Report of Dep.-Keeper*, p. 37; *Ann. Mon.* ii. 391, iii. 280). Peckham was not enthroned at Canterbury till 8 Oct., when he celebrated his entry in Edward's presence (*ib.* ii. 391).

As a friar Peckham was naturally inclined to favour the pretensions of the papal see (cf. *Registrum*, p. 240), and his tenure of office was marked by several bold though ineffectual attempts to magnify ecclesiastical authority at the expense of the temporal power. Almost his first act on landing was to summon a council to meet at Reading on 29 July. Among other acts at this council Peckham ordered his clergy to explain the sentences of excommunication against the impugners of Magna Charta, against those who obtained royal writs to obstruct ecclesiastical suits, and against all, whether royal officers or not, who neglected to carry out the sentences of the royal courts (Wilkins, *Concilia*, ii. 40; Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ii. 115–16). Edward took offence at Peckham's attitude, and in the Michaelmas parliament not only compelled him to withdraw the objectionable articles (*Rolls of Parliament*, i. 224), but also made the archbishop's action the occasion for passing Statute of Mortmain or De Religiosis. In the same parliament Edward demanded a grant of a fifteenth from the clergy. The northern province granted a fifteenth for three years; Peckham after some delay held a convocation, and granted a tenth for two years, 'so as to be unlike York' (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 286). During 1280 a further subject of dispute arose with the king, owing to Peckham's claim to visit Wolverhampton and other royal chapels in the diocese of Lichfield as a matter of right; Edward contested the archbishop's pretensions, and Peckham, after some demur, had to substantially yield the point (*Registrum*, pp. 109, 178–84). Peckham was not daunted by his failure, and in a council at Lambeth in 1281 the bishops proposed to exclude the royal courts from determining suits on patronage, and from intervention in causes touching the chattels of the spiritualty (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 285). Edward peremptorily forbade the proposal (*Fœdera*, i. 598), and Peckham had once more to yield. The archbishop's conduct 'no doubt suggested the definite limitation of spiritual jurisdictions which was afterwards enforced in the writ *circumspecte agatis*' (Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ii. 117). This legislation was not passed—in 1285—without further opposition from Peckham (*Ann. Mon.* iii. 317). In other matters Peckham was on not unfriendly terms with the king, and he intervened with success on behalf of Almeric de Montfort in 1282 (*ib.* iv. 483; *Registrum*, p. 361). But the chief political question in which Peckham was concerned was the Welsh war. The archbishop was anxious to put down the abuses in the Welsh church, and to bring it into greater harmony with English customs.

As early as 20 Oct. 1279 he wrote to Llywelyn, rebuking him for his infringements of the liberties of the church (*ib.* p. 77). In July 1280 he visited Wales, and made a friendly arrangement with Llywelyn as to the bishopric of Bangor, receiving a present of some hounds from the prince (*ib.* pp. 125–6). But a month later a letter of Peckham's, in which he asserted the reasonableness of Edward's claim to settle disputes on the marches by English customs, roused Llywelyn's wrath (*ib.* p. 135; see more fully under Llywelyn ab Gruffydd). The archbishop's ill-considered action led to the trouble which precipitated the end of Llywelyn's power. By the spring of 1282 the Welsh had broken out into open rebellion, and on 1 April Peckham ordered their excommunication (*ib.* p. 324). Towards the end of October Peckham joined the king at Rhuddlan, with the intention of endeavouring to mediate in person. On 31 Oct. he set out, against Edward's will, to meet Llywelyn, and spent three days with him at Snowdon. But prolonged discussion and negotiations between the archbishop and the Welsh prince failed to produce any terms to which Edward could give his consent (*ib.* pp. 435–78, cf. Pref. ii. pp. liii–lvi; *Ann. Mon.* iv. 289–90). After Llywelyn's death Peckham appealed to the king on behalf of the Welsh clergy (*Registrum*, pp. 489–91), and, after the completion of the conquest, took various measures intended to bring the church in Wales into conformity with English customs, and also induced the king to adopt some measures for remedying the damage which had been done to the Welsh churches through the war (*ib.* pp. 724–6, 729–35, 737, 773–82, cf. Pref. ii. pp. lvii–lx).

Peckham's ecclesiastical policy, like his political action, was marked by good intentions, but marred by blundering zeal and an inclination to lay undue stress on the rights and duties of his office. His position at the start was rendered more difficult by financial embarrassments. His predecessor, Robert Kilwardby, had sold the last year's revenues of the see, and had taken away much valuable property (*ib.* pp. 18, 277, 550). Peckham was consequently without means to discharge the debts which he had incurred for the expenses of his appointment, and, owing to this and the dilapidations of the archiepiscopal property, was much hampered by need of money. He endeavoured without success to recover the property taken away by Kilwardby (cf. *ib.* pp. 17, 21, 105–7, 120, 172, 1058–60). In his ecclesiastical administration Peckham applied himself with much zeal to the correction of abuses in the church. At the council of Reading in July–August 1279, statutes were passed accepting the constitutions of Ottobon, and forbidding the holding of livings in plurality or *in commendam*. At the council of Lambeth in October 1281 further statutes were passed to check the growth of plurality, and both councils dealt with minor ecclesiastical matters (Wilkins, *Concilia*, ii. 33, 51). Much of Peckham's episcopate was taken up with systematic and searching visitations of various dioceses of his province, for the most part conducted by himself in person. Lichfield and Norwich were visited in 1280 (*Ann. Mon.* iii. 282, iv. 284), the Welsh dioceses and Lincoln in 1284, and Worcester in 1285 (*ib.* iii. 351, iv. 491; *Registrum*, Pref. iii. pp. xxvii–xxxv). His insistence on his visitatorial rights had involved him in 1280 in a dispute with the king, and two years later the suffragans of Canterbury presented him with twenty-one articles complaining of his procedure and of the conduct of his officials. Peckham denied some of the allegations, and justified himself in regard to others, but at the same time found it necessary to appoint a commission of lawyers, who drew up regulations intended to obviate some of the complaints (*Registrum*, pp. 328–39). Nor were Peckham's relations with individual bishops always satisfactory. When William of Wickwaine, the recently consecrated archbishop of York, arrived in England late in 1279, Peckham at once resisted his claim to bear his cross in the southern province (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 281), even though the pope had expressly commanded him to abstain from a dispute on this matter (Bliss, *Cal. Papal Registers*, i. 459). When the question occurred again in 1284 and 1285, Peckham maintained the rights of his see with equal tenacity (*Reg.* pp. 869, 906–8). A more serious dispute was with Thomas de Cantelupe, bishop of Hereford, who complained of the removal of a matrimonial suit to the archbishop's court, and, failing to obtain redress, appealed to Rome (*ib.* p. 1057). In 1282 a fresh quarrel arose through the excommunication of Cantelupe's official by Peckham. Cantelupe refused to confirm the sentence, and, after an ineffectual meeting at Lambeth on 7 Feb., the archbishop excommunicated him. The bishop appealed to Rome, and on 25 Aug. died at Orvieto; even then Peckham's hostility did not cease, and he attempted to prevent the christian burial of Cantelupe's remains (*Reg.* pp. 299, 308, 315, 318–22, 382, 393; *Ann. Mon.* ii. 405). Peckham's visitation of the Welsh dioceses in 1284 involved him in a dispute with Thomas Bek, bishop of St. David's, who set up a claim to metropolitan

jurisdiction, and refused to receive the archbishop except as primate (*Reg.* Pref. iii. pp. xxvii–xxxiii).

Peckham was especially anxious to check the abuses of plurality, and his zeal involved him in several sharp disputes. In 1280 he compelled Antony Bek, the king's secretary, and afterwards bishop of Durham, to surrender five benefices; it was even reported that Peckham had obtained papal letters forbidding Bek to receive any ecclesiastical preferment, but this the archbishop denied (*ib.* pp. 112, 140, 144, 244). A more serious case was that of Richard de la More, whose election as bishop of Winchester in 1281 Peckham refused to confirm, on the ground that he held two benefices with cure of souls without dispensation. The bishop-elect appealed to Rome, but, despite the opposition of some cardinals, including Hugh of Evesham [q. v.], Peckham won his case (*ib.* pp. 206, 219, 277, 281, 1004, 1065–6; *Ann. Mon.* ii. 394–5, iv. 283). A somewhat similar case occurred at Rochester in 1283, when Peckham refused for a like reason to confirm John Kirkby (*d.* 1290) [q. v.], and compelled him to resign (*Reg.* pp. 575, 1032). Another long dispute was with Tedisio de Camilla (dean of Wolverhampton, and afterwards bishop of Turin from 1300 to 1318), an Italian ecclesiastic whom Peckham deprived of several benefices; but Tedisio could exert such powerful influence in the Roman curia that in this case Peckham, much to his chagrin, did not obtain complete success (*ib.* pp. 131, 384–7, 598–604, 822; Wadding, *Ann. Ord. Min.* v. 82).

Peckham's visitations naturally included the monastic houses, and his 'Register' contains a considerable number of injunctions and ordinances for the correction of abuses (cf. *Reg.* Pref. i. p. lxxiv, ii. pp. lxi–lxxiii, iii. pp. xxxix–xlvi); but none of them were of any special importance, though the archbishop's strictness lends some colour to the charge that he was actuated by enmity to the Benedictines. At Abingdon he interfered to prevent the use of a shortened form of devotions, and with the abbeys of Christchurch and St. Augustine's, Canterbury, and of Westminster he had some dispute as to his rights of entry (*ib.* pp. 72–3, 161, 341, 970; Thorn, *Chron.* ap. *Scriptores Decem.* 1951–4). In 1281 Peckham had summoned all the abbots, whether exempt or not exempt, to attend the Lambeth council. The Cistercians, together with the abbots of Westminster, St. Edmund's, St. Albans, and Waltham, appealed, claiming to have special privileges; the last three abbots made their submission in April 1282 (*Reg.* pp. 237, 280, 307, 1069). The abbot of Westminster seems to have held out, and the relations of that abbey with the archbishop were never friendly. In 1282 Peckham rebuked the abbot for extortion at his ferry at Lambeth, and in 1283 interfered on behalf of the priory of Malvern, which was a cell of Westminster (*ib.* Pref. ii. pp. lxxvii–lxxxii). In 1290 Peckham supported the Franciscans in a quarrel with the monks of Westminster, and laid the abbey under an interdict, in consequence of which he took no part in the funeral of Queen Eleanor on 17 Dec. (*Monumenta Franciscana*, ii. 33, 35, 40, 47, 56; *Ann. Mon.* iv. 326). On the other hand, Peckham interfered on behalf of the Benedictines of Rochester against their bishop in 1283 (*Flores Historiarum*, iii. 59–60). The charge that he was actuated by enmity to the monks had perhaps no better ground than the fact that he was a friar.

Certainly Peckham lost no opportunity of advancing the interests of the two great orders of mendicants, and especially those of his own order. He had been appointed by the pope 'protector of the privileges of the order of Minors in England' (cf. *Reg.* p. 246). In 1281 he interposed in their behalf against the Cistercians of Scarborough (*ib.* pp. 215–16, 246–8). In 1282 we find him seeking advantages for his order at Reading, in 1289 at Worcester, and in 1291 at Oxford and Exeter (*ib.* pp. 414, 977, 983; *Ann. Mon.* iv. 501). In 1283 he granted the house belonging to his see at Lyons to the Franciscans of that city (*Reg.* p. 615). While he sometimes associated the Dominicans in advantages sought for his own order (*ib.* pp. 724, 744), he denied their claim to superiority, and asserted that the Franciscans, following the example of the apostles in their poverty, led a holier life than any other order in the church (*ib.* Pref. iii. p. xcix; Little, pp. 75–76). While again he asserted the right of the Franciscans to hear confessions and grant absolution (*Reg.* pp. 877, 952, 956), he denied the like right to the Carmelites and Austin friars at Oxford. On another occasion the latter order were compelled to surrender a Franciscan whom they had received into their own body, and the Carmelites of Coventry were prohibited from settling within the prescribed distance of the Franciscans (*ib.* pp. 838–40, 952, 956, 977).

Peckham's visitation of Lincoln diocese brought him to Oxford on 30 Oct. 1284, when he condemned certain erroneous opinions in grammar, logic, and natural philosophy, which, though censured by his Dominican predecessor, Kilwardby, had now revived (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 297–8; Wood, *Colleges and Halls*, i. 318–25). The gram-

matical errors, which included such absurdities as that 'ego currit' was good Latin, were of no importance; but the logical and philosophical questions were more serious. Chief among them was the vexed question of the 'form' of the body of Christ, which involved the received doctrine of the Eucharist. The doctrines in question were maintained by the Dominican rivals of Peckham's own order, and their condemnation appeared to impugn the reputation of the Dominican doctor St. Thomas Aquinas. The archbishop's action consequently raised a storm of opposition. In his letter to the chancellor on 7 Nov., forbidding the assertion of the condemned opinions, Peckham was at some pains to declare that he intended no hostility to the Dominicans. But a month later he had to complain that his orders had been disregarded, and that the provincial prior of the Dominicans had made an attack on him in the congregation of the university. The prior, he said, had misrepresented him; he was actuated by no hostility to the Dominicans, nor to the honoured memory of St. Thomas; he had no intention to unduly favour his own order, and his censure was supported by the action of his predecessor. On 1 Jan. 1285 Peckham wrote to certain cardinals in defence of his proceedings (*Reg.* pp. 840, 852, 862, 864, 870). The enmity of the Dominicans, however, still continued, and on 1 June 1285 Peckham complained in warm terms of an attack made on him in an anonymous pamphlet, written apparently by a Cambridge Dominican (*ib.* pp. 896–901). On 28 March 1287 he ordered the archdeacon of Ely to inquire into certain slanders against him at Cambridge (*ib.* p. 943). It was the same heresy as to the 'form' of the body of Christ that led to the trial and condemnation of the Dominican Richard Clapwell [q. v.] by Peckham in April 1286 (*ib.* pp. 921–3; *Ann. Mon.* iii. 323–5).

Peckham's other relations with Oxford were friendly. On 31 July 1279 he wrote to the chancellor confirming the privileges of the university (*Reg.* p. 30). On 24 Nov. 1284 he remonstrated with the bishop of Lincoln on his interference with the privileges of the university (*ib.* pp. 857–8); but he was unable to support the masters entirely, and on 27 Jan. 1281 advised them to submit (*ib.* p. 887, cf. Pref. iii. pp. xxxvii–xxxviii). As archbishop, Peckham was patron of Merton College, and on several occasions intervened in matters concerning its government (*ib.* pp. 123, 811–18, 836).

Peckham's health, both bodily and mental, began to fail some time before his death (cf. *Flores Hist.* iii. 82). On 20 March 1292 the bishop of Hereford had license to confer orders in his place (*Reg.* p. 1055). Peckham died at Mortlake, after a long illness, on 8 Dec. 1292 (*Ann. Mon.* iv. 511; *Anglia Sacra*, i. 793; the date is variously given, but see *Registrum*, Pref. iii. p. liii). In the previous September Henry of Eastry had written to the archbishop (Wilkins, *Concilia*, ii. 184–5), reminding him of his promise to be buried in the cathedral, and Peckham was buried accordingly on 19 Dec. in the north cross aisle near the place of Becket's martyrdom (*Cont.* Gervase, ii. 300). His tomb is of grey Sussex marble, with an oak recumbent effigy under a canopy. There are engravings of the monument in Parker's 'De Antiquitate Britannicæ Ecclesiæ,' and Dart's 'Antiquities of the Cathedral Church of Canterbury,' both apparently from the same plate; there are other engravings in Blore's 'Monumental Remains of Noble and Eminent Persons,' and in Britton's 'Cathedral Antiquities,' vol. i. pl. xviii (*Registrum*, Pref. iii. pp. liii–lv). Peckham's heart was buried in the choir behind the high altar at the Grey Friars of London (*Cotton MS.* Vit. F xii. f. 274). He is stated to have left 5,305*l.* 17*s.* 2¼*d.*, though the Dunstable annalist (*Ann. Mon.* iii. 373) says he left little treasure. In his will he named as his executors the Friars Minors of Paris (cf. *Fœdera*, i. 800). Peckham completed the foundation in 1287 for a provost and six canons at Wingham, Kent, which had been designed by Kilwardby (Dugdale, *Monast. Angl.* vi. 1341–2; *Registrum*, iii. 1080; cf. Bliss, *Cal. Papal Registers*, i. 548). Some of the buildings of the archiepiscopal palace at Mayfield, Sussex, may date from his time (*Sussex Arch. Coll.* ii. 235).

Peckham was learned and devout, and in his conduct as archbishop was clearly actuated by a sincere love of justice and hatred of oppression. His defects were due to an exaggerated sense of the importance of his office, and of the superiority of the ecclesiastical power. Trivet well describes him as 'a zealous promoter of the interests of his order, an excellent writer of poetry, pompous in manner and speech, but kind and thoroughly liberal at heart.' The Lanercost chronicler (pp. 101, 144) speaks of his humility, sincerity, and constancy in the duties of his office, and of his strict observance of the Franciscan rule. Even when archbishop, he contined to style himself 'frater Johannes humilis,' was assiduous in prayer and fasting, and wore only the poorest clothing. When, as provincial prior, he attended a general council at Padua, he travelled all the

way on foot rather than break the rule which forbade friars to ride (Rodulphius, *Hist. Seraph. Rel.* p. 117; Wadding, *Ann. Ord. Min.* v. 53). When, on 29 June 1282, he visited Lewes priory, he showed his affection for the monks and his own humility by sharing their simple fare in the refectory (*Chron. de Lewes*, ap. *Sussex Arch. Coll.* ii. 33). The Franciscans styled him the moon of their order, Pope Nicholas IV being the sun (*Flores Hist.* iii. 81); both died in the same year, and the Worcester chronicler commemorates the event in two verses:

> Sol obscuratur, sub terra luna moratur,
> Ordo turbatur, stellarum lux hebetatur.

Another though prejudiced view is given by the writer of the 'Flores Historiarum' (iii. 82), who says that in his prosperity Peckham scorned and despised many, and especially the Benedictines.

Peckham was a voluminous writer of treatises on science and theology, as well as of poetry. His extant works are: 1. 'Perspectiva Communis;' this treatise deals not with what is now called perspective, but with elementary propositions of optics. Printed as 'Perspectiva communis domini Johannis,' &c. (Petrus Cornenus, Milan, 1482), fol.; other editions appeared at Leipzig, 1504, fol.; Venice, 1504, fol., and 1505? fol.; Nuremberg, 1542, 4to; Cologne, 1508, and 1542, 4to, and 1627; an Italian translation appeared at Venice in 1593, as 'I tre Libri della Perspettiva commune.' There are two manuscripts in the British Museum, viz., Add. MSS. 15108 and 17368, both of the fifteenth century. In the Bodleian Library there are Digby 218 (sec. xiv.; apparently not seen by the editors of the printed text), Digby 28 and 98, and Bodleian 300. 2. 'Theorica planetarum;' this may be the treatise in British Museum Add. MSS. 15107, ff. 65–71 *b*, and 15108, ff. 139–49 *b*. 3. 'De Sphæra;' inc. 'Principalium corporum mundanorum,' Arundel MS. 83, f. 123 *b* (sec. xiii.), in the British Museum; MSS. Laurentianæ Plut. xxix. Cod. xv. (written in 1302), and ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xxii. Dext. Cod. xii. p. 125. 4. 'Collectanea Bibliorum.' Printed as 'Divinarū Sententiarū Librorū Biblie ad certos titulos redacte Collectariū. Ingenio Joannis de Peccano . . . compilatū,' Paris, 1513, 8vo. Printed by Wolfgang Hopilius, at the suggestion of John Fisher (1459?–1535) [q. v.] Other editions are Paris, 1514, ap. J. Frelon, and Cologne, 1541, 8vo. 5. 'Postilla in Cantica Canticorum;' inc. 'Dissolueris filia vaga proverb.' Manuscript in the 'Bibliotheca Ambrosiana' at Milan (Montfaucon, *Bibliotheca Bibliothecarum*, i. 518). 6. 'Tractatus de misteriatione numerorum in Sacra Scriptura.' MS. Lincoln College, Oxford, 81, ff. 40–8 (sec. xv.), and Arundel MS. 200, ff. 1–14 *b*, in the British Museum. 7. 'Quæstiones Quodlibeticæ.' MS. Merton College, 96, ff. 262–70, contains twenty-six theological questions, under the title, 'Quodlibet a fratre Johannis de Pech.' Sbaralea says that in the library of S. Croce at Florence there was 'Quodlibet. Queritur utrum corpus hominis corruptibile possit induere incorruptionem.' The Lanercost chronicler (p. 100) says Peckham was the first to dispute at Oxford 'in facultate Theologie de Quolibet.' 8. 'Quæstiones Ordinariæ;' inc. 'Utrum Theologia ex duobus.' MS. 3183 (sec. xiv.) in the 'Bibliothèque Nationale' contains two questions, 'Utrum theologia sit præ ceteris scientiis necessaria prælatis Ecclesiæ,' and 'Utrum theologia ex duobus componi debuerit Testamentis.' MS. 15805, in the 'Bibliothèque Nationale,' contains 'Quodlibeta S. Thome, J. de Pecham et Gul. de Hozun,' and MS. 15986, f. 238 (sec. xiii.), 'Responsio ad questionem J. de Peschant.' 9. 'Collationes de omnibus Dominicis per annum.' Rawlinson MS. C. 116, ff. 30–9 *b* (sec. xiv. imperfect), and Laud. MS. 85, ff. 1–31, both in the Bodleian Library. 10. 'De Trinitate.' MS. Reg. 10 B. ix. f. 61 *b* in the British Museum, followed by the office for Trinity Sunday, ascribed to Peckham, and containing the antiphon, 'Sedenti super solium.' Printed as 'De Summa Trinitate et Fide Catholica,' R. Pynson, London, 1510, and 'Liber de Sacrosancta . . . Trinitate in quo ecclesiasticū officium explanatur,' Antwerp, 1530, 8vo. The office was printed in the 'Breviarium Romanum' at Cremona, 1499. It was disused after the changes made in the 'Breviary' by Pius V, on account of its obscure and old-fashioned style (Barth. Gavanti, *Comment. in Rubricis Breviarii Romani*, ii. 89). 11. 'Diffinicio theologie;' inc. 'Pauca theologica rudimenta.' MS. Cambr. Univ. Libr. Gg. iv. 32, f. 10. 12. 'Super Magistrum Sententiarum.' 'Pecham super quartum sententiarum' is contained in Bodleian MS. 859, ff. 332–79 *b* (sec. xiv.) Sbaralea says there were manuscripts at Assisi and Santa Croce. This work was cited by John Peter Olivi in 1285. 13. 'Tractatus pauperis contra insipientem novellarum hæresum confictorem circa Evangelicam perfectionem;' inc. 'Quis dabit capiti.' MSS. Laurentianæ ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xxxvi. Dext. Cod. xii. p. 32, and Plut. xxxi. Sin. Cod. iii., MS. C. C. C. Oxon. 182, ff. 1–36, and in the library of S. Victor, Paris, as 'Apologia

contra obloquentes mendicitati de perfectione evangelica' (Montfaucon, *Bibl. Bibl.* ii. 1372; see also Denifle, *Chart. Univ. Paris.* i. 415). It was written by Peckham against the threefold work of William of St. Amour ('De Pharisæo et Publicano;' 'De periculis novissimorum temporum;' 'Collectiones Scripturæ Sacræ'), which appeared about 1256. The tenth chapter of this work is substantially identical with 14. 'Declaratio regule ordinis Fratrum minorum domini Johannis de Pechamo,' which is printed in the 'Firmamentum trium ordinum beatissimi . . . Francisci,' Venice, 1513. This exposition of the Rule was written before 1279; it is contained in MS. Laurentiana ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xv. Dext. Cod. xii. f. 116 *b*. 15. 'Canticum pauperis . . . de introitu ad religionem;' inc. 'Confitebor tibi.' Cotton MS. Vesp. D. xiii. ff. 144–55 *b*, in Brit. Mus., Trinity Coll. Dublin MS. C. 4, 22, MSS. Laurentianæ ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xxxi. Sin. Cod. iii. and Plut. xv. Dext. Cod. xii. p. 108. 16. 'Tractatus contra Fratrem Rogerium (ord. Præd.) obloquentem contra suum ordinem;' inc. 'Super tribus et super quattuor sceleribus.' MSS. Laurentianæ ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xv. Dext. Cod. xii. p. 146, and Plut. xxxvi. Dext. Cod. xii. p. 25. Tanner styles this 'Contra priorem Cisterciensium.' 17. 'Formula confessionum;' inc. 'Sicut dicit b. Joannes.' MS. Laurentiana ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. iv. Sin. Cod. xi. 18. 'Super libros Ethicorum Aristotelis.' MS. Laurentiana ex Bibl. S. Crucis Plut. xii. Sin. Cod. xi. 19. 'Vita S. Antonii Patavensis.' Nicholas Glasberger (*Annal. Franc.* ii. 91; cf. Brieger, *Zeitschrift für Kirchengeschichte*, xi. 211) states that Peckham wrote a life of St. Anthony of Padua, 'mero stilo,' at the bidding of Jerome of Ascoli; Peckham's life has been identified in a manuscript in the library of the Capuchins at Lucerne, and forms the basis of the 'Vie de S. Antoine de Padoue,' Paris, 1894, by Père L. de Chersnée. Sbaralea wrongly identified it with one by Bernard de Besse. A life of St. Anthony was published at Paris in 1890 by J. R. P. Hilaire, under the names of St. Bonaventure and Peckham, 'Saint Antoine de Padoue, sa legende primitive.'

Poetry: 20. 'Philomela:' inc. 'Philomela prævia temporis amœni.' This graceful religious poem has been wrongly ascribed to St. Bonaventure, among whose works it is printed; Mayence edition, 1609, vi. 424–7, Venice edition, vi. 445, and also at Paris in 1503, with Bonaventure's 'Centiloquium,' and Munich, 1645, with a paraphrase. A German translation appeared at Munich, 1612, 'Nachtigall dess Heiligen Bonaventura,' and a Spanish translation in the works of Ludovicus Granatensis, viii. 438, Madrid, 1788; there is an English imitation written about 1460 in MS. Cott. Cal. A. ii. ff. 59–64. There are numerous MSS.—e.g. Cott. Cleop. A. xii., Harleian 3766, Royal 8 G. vi. in the British Museum, and Laud. 402 in the Bodleian Library, besides seven others noticed by Mr. C. T. Martin. This poem has also been attributed to John Hoveden [q. v.], but is more probably by Peckham. 21. 'Defensio Fratrum Mendicantium;' inc. 'O Christi Vicarie, Monarcha terrarum.' Ascribed to Peckham in a modern hand in MS. Dd. xiv. 20, ff. 294 *b*–297, in Cambr. Univ. Libr., and in a fourteenth-century hand in Digby MS. 166, f. 68, in the Bodleian Library. 22. 'Meditacio de Sacramento Altaris et ejus utilitatibus;' inc. 'Ave, vivens hostia, veritas et vita.' Arundel MS. 374, f. 76 *b*, Royal MS. 2 A. ii. f. 88 *b*, and Harleian MS. 913, f. 57 *b* (imperfect), all in the British Museum. 23. 'Versus de Sacramento Altaris;' inc. 'Hostia viva, vale, fidei fons gloria matris,' Rawlinson MS. C. 558, f. 157, in the Bodleian Library. This is quite different from the preceding poem. 24. 'A Poem on Confession.' MS. Ee. vi. 6 ff. 42–53 *b*, in Cambr. Univ. Libr. This is mutilated at the beginning. 25. 'Psalterium Beate Marie de Psalmis sacris sumptum;' inc. 'Mente concipio laudes conscribere.' MSS. Dd. xv. 21 ff. 1–15, Ff. vi. 14, ff. 8–22, Mm. v. 36, in the Cambr. Univ. Libr., and Sidney-Sussex D. 2, 14. 26. 'A Poem on Age;' inc. 'Dum juvenis crevi, ludens nunquam requievi.' MS. Ee. vi. 6, ff. 40–41 *b*, where it is stated to be 'most probably by John Peckham.'

Pits and Tanner ascribe a number of other works to Peckham; some are clearly confusions with one or another of the foregoing, others may be parts of his constitutions. In addition to the works given by these writers, Sbaralea gives: (1) 'Expositio in Ecclesiastem;' inc. 'Hoc nomen Ecclesiastes,' of which there was a manuscript at Assisi; and (2) 'Postilla in Ezechielem' manuscript at Clairvaux (Le Long, *Bibl. Sacra*, p. 896). There are manuscripts of many of Peckham's works as Assisi. Peckham's name appears in the manuscripts and printed copies of his works, under a variety of forms—e.g. Peccanus, Pisanus.

Peckham is erroneously credited with the following works: 1. 'Speculum disciplinæ,' ascribed to Peckham by Sbaralea, but really by Bernard de Besse. 2. 'Speculum Ecclesiæ,' ascribed to Peckham in a modern hand in MS. C. C. C. Oxon. 155, but it really belongs to Hugh of St. Cher, the Dominican. 3. 'De Oculo Morali.' Printed at Augsburg about

1475, as a work of 'Joannis Pithsani Archiepiscopi Canthuariensis.' Mr. Martin has examined nineteen manuscripts, in none of which it is ascribed to Peckham (*Registrum*, Pref. iii. pp. lxxxi–xcvii; but cf. Cooper, Appendix A. to *Report on Fœdera*, p. 17, for a manuscript at Bamberg). In some manuscripts it is ascribed to Robert Grosseteste, but it really belongs to Pierre de Limoges (Hauréau, *Notices et Extraits*, vi. 134).

Peckham's provincial constitutions at Reading and Lambeth are printed in Wilkins's 'Concilia,' ii. 33–6, 51–61; other statutes not assigned to either of these councils are given by Wilkins, ii. 48. Wilkins did not use the best copies; Mr. Martin gives a detailed account of the chief manuscripts on pp. cxxiii–cxliii of his preface to the third volume of the 'Registrum.' A selection from Peckham's 'Constitutions' was printed by Richard Pynson in 1520?; other editions were printed by Julian Notary, 1519, Wynkyn de Worde, and H. Pepwell. Many of Peckham's 'Constitutions' are comprised in the 'Provinciale' of William Lyndwood [q. v.] Peckham's 'Register' is the oldest of the Canterbury Registers now preserved at Lambeth. The earlier records of the see were removed by Archbishop Kilwardby. The most important contents of the 'Register,' with an epitome of the formal documents not printed in full, has been edited by Mr. C. T. Martin for the Rolls Series, in three volumes, 1882–85. Mr. Martin has also included some letters not enrolled in the 'Register,' but extant in other collections. A large number of documents from the 'Register' are printed in Wilkins's 'Concilia,' vol. ii.

[The main facts of Peckham's archiepiscopate are to be drawn from his Register; an account of his life is given in Mr. Martin's three valuable prefaces; a detailed account of most of his writings is given on pp. lvi–cxliv of the preface to the third volume. Other authorities are: Monumenta Franciscana, Annales Monastici, Flores Historiarum, Cotton's and Oxenedes' Chronicles, all in the Rolls Ser.; Lanercost Chronicle, pp. 100, 101, 144 (Bannatyne Club); Trivet's Annals, pp. 299–300 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Wharton's Anglia Sacra, i. 11, 58. 116–17; Wilkins's Concilia, ii. 33–185; Rodulphius' Historia Seraphicæ Religionis, ff. 116–17; Wadding's Ann. Ord. Min. v. 52–4, 78–85, and Script. Ord. Min. 148–9; Sbaralea's Suppl. ad Script. Ord. Min. pp. 447–50; Leland's Comment. de Script. Brit.; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. pp. 584-5; Wood's Colleges and Halls, i. 318-25, ed. Gutch, and City of Oxford, ii. 369 (Oxford Hist. Soc.); Little's Grey Friars at Oxford (Oxford Hist. Soc.); Sussex Archæological Collections, espec. ii. 33, 224, 235, iv. 299; Zeitschrift für Katholische Theologie, xiii. 1 (Innsbrück), a reprint of some of Peckham's letters on Aristotelianism and Augustinianism, with notes by F. Ehrle; Hook's Lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury, iii. 327–367; Hauréau's Notices et Extraits de Quelques Manuscrits Latins de la Bibl. Nat. vi. 134, 150–154, 273–4; Catalogue of Printed Books at British Museum; Catalogues of Manuscripts at Brit. Mus., Bodl. Libr. and Cambr. Univ. Libr.; Græsse's Trésor de Livres, iii. 463; Hain's Repertorium, iii. 9425–7; Bandini's Bibliotheca Leopoldina Laurentiana, and Catalogus Codicum Latinorum Bibliothecæ Mediceæ Laurentianæ, ii. 35, iv. 263, 478–9, 620, 717–18; Montfaucon's Bibliotheca Bibliothecarum; Denis Cat. MSS. Bibl. Pal. Vindobonensis, ii. 2108, 2320, 2322, 2596; Denifle's Chartularium Universitatis Parisiensis; Cooper's Appendix A. to Report on Fœdera, pp. 17, 23, 25, 69, 224.] C. L. K.

PECKITT, WILLIAM (1731–1795), glass-painter, the son of a husbandman, was born in April 1731 at Carlton Husthwaite, near Easingwold, Yorkshire. He was brought up as a carver and gilder, but of his own accord adopted glass-painting as a profession. According to one account, Peckitt was entirely self-taught; but another more probable story is that he learnt from William Price, who had studied under Henry Gyles [q. v.] In 1753 Peckitt completed an emblematical subject of 'Justice' on glass, which he presented to the corporation of York, and which is still in the justice-room of the guildhall at York; for this he was admitted gratis to the freedom of the city in 1754. In 1762 he executed the east window in Lincoln Cathedral, and in 1764 was commissioned by the dean and chapter of Exeter to paint the west window of the cathedral there. In 1765 he commenced a series of paintings in the north side of New College, Oxford, consisting of apocryphal portraits of church dignitaries and worthies from the designs of Biagio Rebecca, R.A. In 1767 he executed for Oriel College a window with 'The Presentation of Christ in the Temple,' from the designs of Dr. Wall, a physician and amateur artist. In 1775 Peckitt completed from the design of G. B. Cipriani, R.A., the absurd and pretentious window in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, into which portraits of Francis Bacon, Sir Isaac Newton, and George III are introduced. In York Minster there are four windows painted by Peckitt in the south transept: one of these was presented by him to the dean and chapter, and set up in 1768, and the remaining three were bequeathed to them by his will and set up after his death. Peckitt married, on 3 April 1763, Mary, daughter of Charles Motley, a sculptor of York. He died on 14 Oct. 1795, and was

buried in the churchyard of St. Martin's, Micklegate, at York, in which parish he had resided. Peckitt had considerable reputation during his lifetime as a glass-painter, and made several new experiments in the use of coloured glass. His work is, however, of very inferior merit, and, certainly at York, incongruous and wanting in true artistic taste.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Davies's Walks through the City of Yorkshire; Dallaway's Anecd. of the Arts in England; Gent. Mag. 1817, pt. i. p. 392.] L. C.

PECKWELL, HENRY (1747–1787), divine, son of Henry Peckwell of Chichester, was born in 1747. About 1764 he entered the house of an Italian silk merchant in London, with the intention of representing the firm in Italy. But he spent more of his time at Whitefield's Tabernacle than in the counting-house, and before his term was finished gave up his position and matriculated at St. Edmund Hall, Oxford, on 17 May 1770. He soon attracted the notice of the Countess of Huntingdon, who made him one of her chaplains. Before 1773 he visited Dublin, and drew large congregations in the city. Through the influence of the Countess of Moira, Lady Huntingdon's eldest daughter, he was permitted to preach in the chapel of the Magdalen Institution, founded by Lady Arabella Denny, which was patronised by the highest and most fashionable society in Dublin. Here he spoke out more plainly than was agreeable to the congregation, and many complaints were made. The circumstance created a breach between Lady Arabella and the Countess of Moira, and application was made to the archbishop of Dublin to use his influence to arrest the spread of methodism in the church. Many influential pulpits, however, remained at Peckwell's disposal. In April 1774 the chapel in Prince's Street, Westminster, was repaired and opened for him. In the same year he preached the anniversary sermon at Lady Huntingdon's College at Trevecca, and afterwards visited many places in England, preaching for the connexion. Subsequently he was presented by Lord Robert Manners to the rectory of Bloxholm-cum-Digby in Lincolnshire, which he retained till his death. Residing in London, he founded in 1784 an institution called 'The Sick Man's Friend,' for the purpose of relieving the sick poor of all denominations, as well as supplying instruction. To render himself of greater service to the work, he studied medicine. The sermons which he preached for the benefit of the charity produced as much as 400*l.* per annum. He died from the effects of a wound in his hand, inflicted upon himself while making a post-mortem examination, on 18 Aug. 1787, at his house in St. James's, Westminster. He was buried in the family vault at Chichester.

Peckwell married, on 23 Feb. 1773, Bella Blosset of co. Meath. By her he had a son, Robert Henry (noticed below), and a daughter, Selina Mary (named after her godmother, the Countess of Huntingdon), who, in 1793, married George Grote, the banker, and became the mother of George Grote [q. v.], the historian. Mrs. Peckwell died in her house in Wilmot Street, Brunswick Square, on 28 Nov. 1816.

Peckwell published, besides many sermons, 'A Collection of Psalms and Hymns,' London, 1760? Several portraits of Peckwell were published: a mezzotint engraving by R. Houston, from a painting by J. Russell in 1774; an engraving by T. Trotter in 1787; and another by J. Fittler, after R. Bowyer in 1787; this was accompanied by a vignette of the charity 'The Sick Man's Friend.' The face was afterwards altered to that of Rowland Hill. A small etched profile was also published in 1787.

His only son, Sir Robert Henry Peckwell, afterwards Blosset (1776–1823), was born in 1776. He matriculated at Christ Church, Oxford, on 23 Oct. 1792, graduated B.A. 19 Oct. 1796, M.A. 5 July 1799, became barrister-at-law at Lincoln's Inn in 1801, and serjeant-at-law in 1809. He was deputy recorder of Cambridge, and counsel upon the Norfolk circuit. In 1822 he was appointed chief justice of Calcutta, and was knighted. He died unmarried in Calcutta on 1 Feb. 1823, after only two months' exercise of his judicial functions. He took his mother's name of Blosset. He published 'Cases on Controverted Elections in the Second Parliament of the United Kingdom,' London, 1805–6.

[Foster's Alumni, 1715–1886; Gent. Mag. 1787 pp. 746, 834–5, 1823 pt. ii. p. 83; Life and Times of the Countess of Huntingdon, ii. 77, 121, 196–200, 295; Plain Narrative of the death of Dr. Peckwell, pp. 11, 42, 44, 51; Harriet Grote's Personal Life of George Grote, pp. 4–6; Bromley's Catalogue of Engraved Portraits.] B. P.

PECOCK, REGINALD (1395?–1460?), bishop successively of St. Asaph and Chichester, was a Welshman, probably born in the diocese of St. David's about 1395. Proceeding to Oxford, he entered Oriel College, where he was elected to a fellowship on 30 Oct. 1417. Next year he was teaching in one of the schools belonging to Exeter College in School Street. Possibly at this time

he formed his friendship with Walter Lyhert [q.v.], afterwards bishop of Norwich. On 21 Dec. 1420 he was admitted both acolyte and subdeacon by Richard Fleming [q.v.], bishop of Lincoln; he was ordained deacon on 15 Feb. 1421, and priest on the title of his college fellowship on 8 March following. In 1425 he proceeded B.D. His talents and learning attracted the notice of Humphrey, duke of Gloucester [q.v.], then protector, and soon after 1425 Pecock probably left Oxford for the court. In 1431 he was elected to the mastership of Whittington College, near the Three Cranes in the Vintry, London (Wharton, *Hist. de Episc. et Dec. Londin. et Assav.* p. 349). To the college was attached the rectory of St. Michael's in Riola, and to this Pecock was presented by the chapter of Canterbury on 19 July 1431 (*ib.*)

His work in London, where the lollards were still numerous, forced on his attention the points at issue between them and the church. Pecock at once entered the lists in behalf of the orthodox position. His earliest extant work is 'The Book or Rule of Christian Religion,' in three parts, the manuscript of which was purchased by Sir Thomas Phillipps. To this period also is ascribed the 'Donet' (1440?), or an introduction to the chief truths of the Christian faith, in the form of a dialogue between father and son. It was intended 'to be of little quantity, that wellnigh each poor person may by some means get cost to have it as his own.' In it Pecock complains that other books by him had already been copied and spread abroad against his will, and he offered to retract, at the bidding of the church, any false conclusion at which he might have arrived. This remark implies that he had excited some suspicion in regard to his orthodoxy (*Repressor of Over Much Blaming of the Clergy*, Rolls Ser. vol. i. pp. xxi, lxi, lxx). Some years later, about 1454, appeared a supplement to the 'Donet,' entitled 'The Follower to the Donet,' also in the dialogue form. Both works are extant in manuscript, the 'Donet' in the Bodleian, the 'Follower' in the British Museum.

In 1444 Pecock was promoted by papal provision (dated 22 April) to the bishopric of St. Asaph, and was consecrated by John Stafford [q.v.], archbishop of Canterbury, at Croydon on 14 June, the temporalities having been restored to him on the 8th (Rymer, *Fœdera*, vol. v. pt. i. p. 132). At the same time he vacated the mastership of Whittington College (Newcourt, *Repertorium*, i. 493), and proceeded D.D. at Oxford without offering any exercise or act (Gascoigne, *Loci e Libro Veritatum*, pp. 26, 30, &c., ed. Rogers). In 1447 Pecock preached at St. Paul's Cross a sermon which offended both the stricter churchmen and the advocates of church reform. He asserted seven conclusions in which he sought to justify the practice of bishops who did not preach, who absented themselves from their dioceses, received their bishoprics from the pope by provision, and paid firstfruits. He distributed his argument in English among his friends, and forwarded it to Archbishop Stafford in an extant document called 'Abbreviatio Reginaldi Pecock' (*Repressor*, ii. 615 seq.) Such an endeavour to stifle the growing agitation against ecclesiastical abuses only stimulated the activity of the agitators. Dr. William Millington [q.v.], provost of King's College, Cambridge, denounced Pecock's teaching, from St. Paul's Cross, as a national danger (Gascoigne, p. 44). His enemies in the universities, and especially among the four orders of friars, made a fruitless appeal to Archbishop Stafford, and afterwards to Archbishop John Kemp [q. v.], to proceed against him. Privately Pecock seems to have modified his statements. The bishops were exempt, he explained, not from the duty of expounding the scripture after the manner of the fathers, but from preaching after the modern fashion of the friars. In a letter to the Franciscan Dr. Goddard, he denounced the friars as 'pulpit-bawlers' (*ib.* pp. 42, 44, 100, 208).

In 1450 he was translated to the bishopric of Chichester in succession to his friend Adam Molyneux or Moleyns [q. v.] This appointment was one of the last acts of William de la Pole, first duke of Suffolk [q.v.], and attached Pecock publicly to the falling house of Lancaster. Shortly afterwards he was called to the privy council, on the records of which his name appears from 29 May 1454 until 27 Jan. 1457 (Nicolas, *Proceedings*, vi. 185 &c.) In the parliament called on 9 July 1455 he was one of the triers of petitions for Gascony and the islands. On 10 Nov. and 11 Dec. following his name was attached to the documents which empowered Richard Plantagenet, duke of York [q. v.], to act as protector during the illness of King Henry VI (*Rolls of Parliament*, v. 279 *a*, &c., and App. pp. 453–4).

About 1455 Pecock's 'Repressor of Over Much Blaming of the Clergy,' which he had begun some six years before, was probably published (*Repressor*, pp. xxii *n.* 90, ii. 576). It is in English throughout. In the prologue Pecock proposes to consider eleven points of objection advanced by the lollards against the clergy. These are: 1, the use of images; 2, pilgrimages; 3, clerical property in land;

4, inequality of rank among the clergy; 5, the lawfulness of papal and episcopal statutes; 6, the religious orders; 7, the invocation of saints and priestly intercession; 8, the rich adornments of churches; 9, the sacraments, especially that of the altar; 10, the taking of oaths; 11, the upholding of the lawfulness of war and capital punishment. The work is divided into five parts. In the first and most important part Pecock deals in general terms with the principles underlying the complaints against the clergy. He tries to confute in the first place the conclusion that an ordinance is not to be esteemed a law of God unless grounded on scripture. He argues, in anticipation of Hooker, that the moral law is in no true sense grounded on scripture, but rests upon the 'doom,' or judgment, of natural reason or 'moral law of kind,' which the scriptures presuppose and illustrate rather than declare or define. The sole function of the scriptures is to reveal supernatural truth which is beyond the reach of unaided human reason. The four remaining parts of the 'Repressor' deal with the various lollard positions; but of the eleven points advanced by them which Pecock had proposed to consider, he deals fully only with the first six; for a discussion of the last five he refers his readers to other of his works.

The 'Repressor' is a monument of fifteenth-century English, clear and even pointed in style, forcible in thought. The argument is logical and subtly critical, informed by wide, if not deep, learning. On the other hand, in the detailed application of his principles Pecock often fails to carry conviction, and his tendency to casuistry irritates the modern reader. He sets forth, however, the views of his opponents so clearly as to render his book an invaluable record of the theological opinions of his time.

Apparently next year (1456) Pecock issued his 'Book of Faith,' also in English, of which portions of the first part, together with the whole of the second, were printed by Wharton in 1688. Almost the entire work is extant in manuscript in Trinity College, Cambridge. The object of the book is 'to win the lay children of the church into obedience' by rational arguments. He renounces at the outset, for the purposes of argument at any rate, the claims of the church to infallibility, maintaining, however, that it is a man's duty to hold to the clergy so long as they are not proved to be actually in error. Faith itself, Pecock argues, is of two kinds: opinional, or resting on probability, and sciential, or resting on knowledge; and it is only to the former, as a rule, that the Christian attains in this life. The second part of the book treats of the rule of faith, and maintains that Scripture is itself the ultimate authority for the truths it contains, a view in which Pecock was not in advance of his age (*Book of Faith*, Pref. pp. xi seq. ed. 1688). The work clearly illustrates the limits within which Pecock confined his rational speculations. Where reason speaks with perfectly certain voice, that voice is to be obeyed, even in defiance of the church. But the absolute certainties of the reason are few, and, wherever reason hesitates, authority commands allegiance. He never admits that the church, though supposed fallible, can be proved to have actually erred in matters of faith, and 'if thou canst not prove clearly and indubitably that the church errs . . . thou art in damnation for to hold against the church.'

In another work, the 'Provoker'—which is not known to be extant—Pecock's scepticism took a more fatal direction. He denied that the apostles wrote the creed which goes by their name (Gascoigne, pp. 104, 209). He had already issued in the 'Donet' a revised creed omitting the article affirming Christ's descent into hell, and altering the wording of the clause concerning the holy catholic church (*ib.* p. 210; *Repressor*, pp. xx–i). Now, probably in a lost portion of the 'Book of Faith,' he included a new creed in English (*ib.* p. xliii).

By such writings Pecock alienated every section of theological opinion in England. His old patrons were either dead or disgraced, and his political opponents were in power. In 1456 he exasperated the Yorkist lords by hinting in a letter to Canning, mayor of London, at coming political disturbance. This was laid before the king and his advisers, and the knowledge of that fact apparently stimulated the activity of his theological enemies (Gascoigne, l. c. p. 213).

On 22 Oct. 1457 Archbishop Thomas Bourchier [q. v.] issued from Lambeth a citation, addressed to the clergy of Canterbury, calling Pecock's accusers to appear before him on 11 Nov. following. Pecock was ordered to then produce his books for examination. He refused to answer for any works issued by him more than three years ago, for those, he said, had only been privately circulated, and were without his final corrections (Gascoigne, p. 211). On 11 Nov. he produced copies of nine of his books, into which he is said to have introduced vital corrections. They were handed to a committee of twenty-four doctors. Pecock vainly claimed that he was entitled to be tried by a committee of his peers in scholastic disputation. He was

charged, among other offences, with having set natural law above the scriptures and the sacraments (*ib.* p. 212), with having disregarded the authority of Saints Jerome, Augustine, Ambrose, and Pope Gregory, and with having written on great matters in English.

Next day (12 Nov.), apparently, he was carried before the king in council, and was formally expelled from the privy council (*ib.* pp. 210–11). George Neville [q. v.], the young Yorkist bishop-elect of Exeter, took a foremost part in denouncing his errors, and thus disclosed the political feeling at work against him. The hostility of the Yorkist lords seems to have cowed Pecock, who weakly declared himself ignorant of the matters in dispute—matters upon which he had, at least, read, thought, and taught for twenty years (*ib.* p. 213; cf. Foxe, *Acts and Monuments*, ed. Townsend, iii. 733; cf. Bale, *Script. Illustr. Cat.* p. 594). On the Sunday after his first examination Pecock's creed was read and condemned at St. Paul's Cross by the archbishop's order. Ultimately, at a final examination at Westminster, in the presence of the king and lords (Whethamstede, *Monast. S. Albani*, Rolls Ser. i. 281), the archbishop offered Pecock his choice between a public recantation and delivery to the secular arm to be burnt (*ib.* pp. 282–4). Pecock chose the former. His decision need not be ascribed to cowardice. He probably accepted the leading orthodox doctrines. A few of them he had exposed to negative criticism; the majority he had spent his life in defending, if by unorthodox arguments.

On 23 Nov. Pecock made a private recantation before an assembly of archbishops, bishops, and doctors (Gascoigne, p. 214), and again on the 28th, when some temporal lords were present (*ib.*) His public abjuration of all his alleged errors took place at Paul's Cross on 4 Dec., in the presence of the archbishop of Canterbury and thousands of spectators. Clothed in full episcopal robes, he delivered up fourteen of his books to be burnt (Whethamstede, i. 287; Gascoigne p. 216). The populace threatened him with violence, and lampoons upon him circulated freely (Whethamstede, i. 288).

After his recantation Pecock was sent to Maidstone or Canterbury (Gascoigne, p. 216) to await his sentence. He seems to have at once sent to Calixtus III some account of his case, possibly in the lost document, 'De sua palinodia,' which is mentioned among his works. Later a hostile version of the events was sent to Rome by John Milverton [q. v.], provincial of the Carmelites, one of Pecock's old opponents (Bale, *Script. Illustr. Cat.* Append. p. 593). The pope seems to have issued bulls for Pecock's reinstatement, whereupon Archbishop Bourchier appealed to the king. The latter appointed a commission of inquiry (*Wharton MSS.* 577, pp. 26 seq.), and on receiving its report (17 Sept. 1458) sent a deputation to Pecock offering him a pension if he would resign his bishopric, and threatening 'the uttermost rigour of the law' should he refuse. That Pecock was neither deprived nor degraded, but resigned, is clear (*Regist. of Arch. Bourchier*, institution under date 27 July 1458, Lambeth; information kindly supplied by the Very Rev. Canon Moyes; Vatican Transcripts in Brit. Mus. xxxiii. 485). His successor was appointed in March 1459 (*ib.* pp. 484 et seq.; *Fœdera*, v. ii. 83). Calixtus's successor, Pius II, doubting the genuineness of his repentance, issued a brief dated 7 April 1459, to the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of London and Winchester, ordering a new trial. In the event of conviction Pecock was to be either sent to Rome for punishment or publicly degraded from his episcopal office ('Annals of Raynaldus,' x. 191, in Baronius's *Ann. Eccles.* vol. xxix.) It is probable that this brief was neither published nor acted upon (*Dublin Review*, new ser. xlvii. 34).

Pecock was sent to Thorney Abbey in Cambridgeshire. Forty pounds were assigned to the abbey for his maintenance. He was to be confined to one room, to have no books save a mass-book, psalter, legend, and bible, and no writing materials (*Wharton MSS.* No. 577, p. 80).

From this point Pecock disappears from history. He probably lived in seclusion at Thorney Abbey until his death, a year or two later (*Chron.* ed. Davies, p. 77), and was doubtless buried within the abbey precincts. Foxe, with the keen instinct of the martyrologist, hints that Pecock was 'privily made away;' but the suggestion (which was not unknown to Bale) has merely a psychological interest (*Acts*, &c. iii. 734).

Pecock is stated to have been a man of stately presence and pleasing appearance (Whethamstede, i. 279), though he suffered from an hereditary cutaneous disease (Gascoigne, p. 29). Conceit and self-confidence are apparent throughout his writings, but his disposition was naturally kindly (Waterland, *Works*, x. 217). That he had a considerable following, especially of young men, is clear (*Three Fifteenth-Century Chron.* p. 168; Gascoigne, pp. 212, 215, &c.; Lewis, pp. 214 seq.) About the time of his trial Archbishop Bourchier commissioned John Bury, an Augustinian friar, to reply to Pecock's 'Re-

pressor.' This he did in the 'Gladius Salomonis,' printed by Mr. Babington in the appendix to the 'Repressor' (ii. 571 seq.) His books were twice burnt by the university of Oxford, on 17 Dec. 1457 (GASCOIGNE, p. 218) and in 1476 (TWYNE, *Ant. Acad. Oxon.* p. 322). By a strange perversion of fact, Pecock's heresies have been sometimes confounded with those of Wiclif (HARPSFIELD, 'Hist. Wicleff.' in *Hist. Angl. Eccles.* i. 719, ed. 1622); and in the 'Index Librorum Prohibitorum et Expurgandorum' (Madrid, 1667) Pecock appeared as 'a Lutheran professor at Oxford.'

Besides the editions of the 'Repressor' and 'Book of Faith' above mentioned, a small collection of excerpts from Pecock's works (chiefly from the 'Book of Faith') called 'Collectanea quædam ex Reginaldi Pecock Cicestrensis episcopi opusculis exustis conservata,' is printed in Foxe's 'Commentarii Rerum in Ecclesia Gestarum' (1554), and was published separately earlier.

In addition to the works already noticed, Pecock wrote the 'Poor Men's Mirror,' preserved in manuscript in Archbishop Tenison's library, Leicester Square, London. Numerous allusions to many works by him, not known to be extant, are made in his accessible writings. But some of these, of which a full list is given by Mr. Babington (*Repressor*, vol. i. pp. lxxvii seq.), were doubtless only in contemplation. The ascription to him (*Chron.* ed. Davies, p. 75) of a translation of the scriptures is probably a mistake.

[Gascoigne's Liber Veritatum, or Dictionarium Theologicum, extant in manuscript in Lincoln College, Oxford, and in part printed by Professor Thorold Rogers in Loci e Libro Veritatum, supplies the fullest contemporary account of Pecock; but it is very hostile to him. The chief modern biography is Lewis's Life of Pecock, for which Waterland (Works, x. 213 seq.) furnished much information. A valuable biographical notice is prefixed to Babington's edition of the Repressor of Over Much Blaming of the Clergy (Rolls Ser.), to which also are appended some important documents bearing upon Pecock, such as extracts from Bury's Gladius Salomonis. Other authorities are Whethamstede's Chron. Monast. S. Albani, i. 279 seq.; Wharton MSS. in Lambeth Palace Libr. Nos. 577, 594; Vatican Transcripts in Brit. Mus. xxxiii. 484 seq.; Three Fifteenth-Century Chronicles, pp. 71, 167–8 (Camden Soc.); English Chronicle of the Reigns of Richard II, Henry IV, Henry V, and Henry VI, pp. 75 seq. ed. Davies (Camden Soc.); Hist. MSS. Comm. 12th Rep. App. pt. ix. p. 584; Leland's Collectanea, ii. 409, 410, ed. 1715, and Comment. de Scriptt. Brit. pp. 458–9, ed. 1709; Bale's Script. Illustr. Cat. pp. 594–5, ed. 1559; Foxe's Acts and Monuments, iii. 731 seq. ed. Townsend; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 583; Wood's Hist. et Ant. Univ. Oxon. lib. i. pp. 220 seq., ed. 1674, and Athenæ Oxon. i. 232, ii. 875; Hearne's Hemingford, vol. i. pp. lxxxvi–lxxxvii, and pref.; Wharton's Hist. de Episc. et Dec. Londin. et Assav. p. 349, and preface to his edition of Pecock's Book of Faith, 1688, also Survey of Cath. of St. Asaph, i. 80–1, ii. 118–19; Dublin Review (new ser.), xlvii. 27 seq.; Caxton's Chron. of England, pt. vii. 'Henry VI,' p. cciii, ed. 1502; Fabyan's Chronicle, p. 463, ed. 1559; Monumenta Franciscana, ii. 174–175; Fabricius's Bibl. Lat. Med. æt. v. 657–8, vi. 172–3; Historiches Lexicon, ii. 745, ed. 1722; Holinshed's Chronicles, ii. 1291; Stow's Annals, pp. 402–3, ed. 1631; Harpsfield's Hist. Wicleff. in Hist. Angl. Eccles. i. 719, ed. 1622; Annals of Raynaldus, x. 191, in Baronius's Ann. Eccles. vol. xxix.; Rolls of Parliament, v. 279 *a*, &c.; Nicolas's Proceedings of the Privy Council, vi. 185 &c.; Rymer's Fœdera, vol. v. pt. i. p. 132, pt. ii. p. 25; Wilkins's Concilia, iii. 576, ed. 1737; Le Nevè's Fasti Eccles. Angl. i. 71, 247, ed. Hardy; Twyne's Ant. Acad. Oxon. p. 322; Hook's Lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury, v. 178, 293 seq.; Hallam's Middle Ages, ii. 448 *n.*; Cooper's Annals of Cambridge, i. 309; Stephens's Memorials of the See of Chichester, pp. 152 seq.; Ramsay's Lancaster and York, ii. 202 seq.; Ten Brink's English Literature, ii. 333 seq., translated by Robinson.] A. M. C–E.

PECTHELM (*d.* 735), bishop of Candida Casa or Whitherne, who is also known as Pehthelm, Pectelmus, Wecthelm, and Wethelm, was for some time a monk or deacon with Aldhelm [q. v.], probably at Malmesbury. William of Malmesbury calls him Aldhelm's pupil (*Gest. Pont.* p. 257). It was from him that Bede heard the story of a vision seen in Mercia between 705 and 709, and Bede also cites him as an authority for facts connected with Wessex history, especially for an account of events happening 'at the place where Heddi [q. v.], bishop of Winchester, died.' He was consecrated to the see of Whitherne, as the first of the Saxon line of bishops, in 730. He was learned in ecclesiastical law, and Boniface [q. v.] wrote to him in 735, asking for advice on the question, May a man marry his godson's mother? Boniface had searched the papal decrees and canons for information, but in vain, and asked both Nothelm [q. v.] and Pecthelm if they could find the case mentioned. Pecthelm and Boniface were united by a bond of mutual intercession, and Boniface sent with his letter a present of a corporal pallium, adorned with white scrolls, and also a towel to dry the feet of God's servants.

Pecthelm died in 735. Dempster ascribes to him letters to Acca [q. v.], bishop of Hexham, who, according to Richard of Hexham,

had some share in the creation of the Whitherne see (Haddan and Stubbs, *Councils*, ii. 7).

[Jaffé's Monumenta Moguntiniana, Ep. 29; Bede's Ecclesiastical Hist. v. 13, 18, 23; Dempster's Hist. Eccles. Gent. Scot. xv. 1026; see art. Plechelm.] M. B.

PECTWIN (*d.* 776), bishop of Candida Casa or Whitherne, whose name was also given as Petwin, Pehtwin, Pechtwin, Phechtwin, Hehtwin, and Witwin, was consecrated by Archbishop Egbert in the district called Ælfetee or Ælfete on 17 July 763. He died 19 Sept. 776.

Dempster (xv. 1013) states that Pehtwinus, bishop of Candida Casa, was the author of 'Commentaries on the Gospel of St. Matthew' in the library of Paul Petau (not given in Montfaucon, *Bibl.* i. 61–97). Citing in error the authority of Florence of Worcester, he says the same author died in 799 among the Franks.

[Chron. Sax. sub ann.; Flor. Wigorn. sub ann.; Dempster's Hist. Eccles. Gent. Scot. 1829, ii. 535.] M. B.

PEDDER, JOHN (1520?–1571), dean of Worcester, born about 1520, was educated at Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. 1538, M.A. 1542, and B.D. in 1552. Having embraced the protestant faith, he went abroad on Queen Mary's accession in 1553. In 1554 he was at Strasburg, and supported Grindal in his advocacy of the prayer-book of the church of England (*Troubles at Frankfort*, p. 23). But when, three years later, he was a member of the Frankfort congregation, he took the side of the main body, or calvinistic church members, in the disputes as to discipline. Returning to England at Elizabeth's accession, he was, on 27 Dec. 1559, installed dean of Worcester (cf. Rymer, *Fœdera*, xv. 563). He was already prebendary of the sixth stall of Norwich, and rector of Redgrave in Suffolk, which he resigned on 24 Feb. 1560. On 26 Sept. 1561 he was collated to the vicarage of Snitterfield, Warwickshire (Dugdale, *Warwickshire*, p. 505); and on 15 May 1563 to a prebend at Hereford, which he retained till death. He resigned his Norwich prebend on 24 Feb.

Pedder attended the lower house of convocation 1561–2, and subscribed the articles in February 1562, although he also approved of and signed the 'six articles' propounding certain alterations in the rites and ceremonies (13 Feb. 1562) (Strype, *Annals*, ii. 504; Burnet, *Reformation*, vi. 481). He supported the twenty-one 'requests' in which the lower house of convocation petitioned for changes in the articles, liturgy, and discipline (*ib.* p. 512).

Pedder, who improved the revenues of the church of Worcester, died on 5 April 1571, and was buried on the 8th in the cathedral. His successor in the deanery, Arthur Lake [q. v.], later bishop of Bath and Wells, erected a monument to his memory.

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr.; Blomefield's Norfolk, iii. 669; Rymer's Fœdera, xv. 563; Willis's Cathedrals, i. 564, 658; Lansd. MS. 981, f. 114; Thomas Abingdon's Antiq. of Worcester, p. 129; Thomas's Worcester, p. 69; Wood's Fasti Oxon. i. 691; Calendar of Proceedings in Chancery, temp. Eliz. iii. 170; Strype, ubi supra (Parker Soc.); Cranmer's Works, i. 9; Dugdale's Warwickshire, i. 505.] W. A. S.

PEDDIE, JAMES (1758–1845), presbyterian divine, son of James Peddie, a brewer, by his second wife, Ann Rattray, was born at Perth on 10 Feb. 1758. After attending several schools in his native town he entered the university of Edinburgh at the beginning of the winter session of 1775, and two years later became a member of the Secession Divinity Hall, then under the charge of Dr. John Brown of Haddington (1722–1787) [q. v.] After being licensed to preach in 1782, he travelled about the country for some time, supplying pulpits where there was no regular minister. In a notebook he wrote that during the first seven months of his ministry he rode as many hundred miles. Towards the end of 1782, after considerable opposition, he was appointed to the Bristo Street secession chapel in Edinburgh, and continued there until his death.

Peddie for over half a century played an important part in the affairs of the church to which he belonged. He was twice moderator of the synod, first in 1789, and again in 1825 after the two sections into which the secession church had been split were united. From 1791 he was treasurer to the fund for assisting poor outlying congregations for forty-five years, and the other church organisations with which he was associated include the clergymen's widows' fund, of which he was treasurer; the missionary and Scottish missionary societies; the Sunday school and Gaelic school movements. He was also interested in the philanthropic schemes of his day, and was one of the originators, and for years secretary, of the Edinburgh subscription library.

He took a leading, though generally quiet, part in the great theological controversy of his time—the 'Old' and 'New Light' dispute. When at the divinity hall he is said to have opposed the teaching of Dr. Brown, that civil magistrates ought to have power

to interfere in religious matters, and to have upheld the doctrines taught in Locke's 'Toleration,' of which he was a disciple. In 1795 matters reached a crisis in the secession church. Peddie sided with the 'new lights' for toleration and liberty; and in the famous Perth congregation lawsuit, which continued from 1799 to 1815, and which decided the legal position of the party to which Peddie belonged, he was untiring in his zeal and energy. In the earlier days of the controversy attempts were made by opponents to associate the 'new lights' with the friends of the French revolution, and the government became suspicious. Peddie promptly communicated with Pitt through Pulteney with such success that shortly afterwards Lord-advocate Dundas referred to them as 'loyal citizens, who had been calumniated.' For his efforts Peddie received the thanks of the synod. But the most effective service which he rendered to his side of the dispute was his spirited reply to an attack by Dr. William Porteous [q. v.] entitled 'The New Light Examined; or Observations on the Proceedings of the Associate Synod against their Own Standards.' Peddie's reply—'A Defence of the Associate Synod against the Charge of Sedition, addressed to William Porteous, D.D.'—'was much admired at the time for its delicate yet keen satire, and the clearness, strength, and elegance of its reasoning. The late Dugald Stewart recommended it to his students as one of the most masterly pieces of classical sarcasm in our language' (Kay, *Portraits*, ed. H. Paton, ii. 352). In 1818 Marischal College, Aberdeen, conferred upon him the degree of D.D. Peddie died in Edinburgh on 11 Oct. 1845.

Peddie was twice married: first, in 1787, to Margaret (*d.* 1792), eldest daughter of the Rev. George Coventry of Stitchell, Roxburghshire; and, secondly, in 1795, to Barbara, second daughter of Donald Smith, lord provost of Edinburgh, by whom he had nine children. He twice appears in Kay's 'Portraits.'

Besides his pamphlet (supra) in reply to Dr. Porteous, Peddie's published works were chiefly sermons and lectures: 1. 'The Revolution the Work of God and a Cause of Joy,' Edinburgh, 1789. 2. 'The Perpetuity, Advantages, and Universality of the Christian Religion,' Edinburgh, 1796. 3. 'Jehovah's Care to perpetuate the Redeemer's Name,' London, 1809. 4. 'A Practical Exposition of the Book of Jonah, in ten lectures,' Edinburgh, 1842. After his death his son William published his 'Discourses,' Edinburgh, 1846, with a memoir.

From 1797 to 1802 Peddie was one of the editors of the 'Christian Magazine,' and to this and other theological publications he was a frequent contributor. He also edited the posthumous works of Dr. Meikle of Carnwath (Edinburgh, 1801, 1803, 1805, 1807, 1811).

William Peddie (1805–1893), minister, son of the above, was born on 15 Sept. 1805, and, after passing through the high school and university of Edinburgh, entered the Secession Divinity Hall at Glasgow, and was licensed to preach in May 1827. In October of the following year he was appointed colleague and successor to his father by the Bristo Street congregation. He edited the 'United Presbyterian Magazine' for several years, and was moderator of the synod in 1855. Jefferson College, Pennsylvania, conferred upon him the degree of D.D. in 1843. His chief interest in the church was in connection with missions in France. Beyond his contributions to periodical literature his only published work was the prefatory memoir to his father's discourses, Edinburgh, 1846. He celebrated his jubilee at Bristo Street in 1878, and died, the 'father' of the church, on 23 Feb. 1893.

[Memoir by Dr. William Peddie, prefixed to James Peddie's Discourses, 1846; Kay's Portraits. An obituary of Dr. William Peddie was published in the United Presbyterian Magazine, April 1893.] J. R. M.

PEDDIE, JOHN (*d.* 1840), lieutenant-colonel, entered the army as an ensign in the 38th foot on 26 Sept. 1805. He became lieutenant on 26 Aug. 1807, and went with the first battalion of his regiment to Portugal in 1808. He took part in the action of Rolica, and the battle of Vimiera, in Sir John Moore's advance into Spain, and in the battle of Coruña. After serving in the Walcheren expedition he returned to Spain in 1812, was present at the battle of Salamanca, and lost his right arm. He was promoted captain on half-pay on 23 Sept. 1813, but was brought back to full pay in the 97th foot on 25 March 1824, and obtained a majority in the 95th regiment on 16 June 1825. After a further period on half-pay, he became lieutenant-colonel of the 31st foot on 26 Oct. 1830, and of the 72nd highlanders on 20 April 1832, and in the same year he was made a K.H.

In the beginning of 1835 the 72nd, then quartered in Capetown, were ordered to Grahamstown, in consequence of the incursions of the Gaikas, which gave rise to the first Kaffir war. At the end of March the British troops, under Sir Benjamin D'Urban [q. v.], entered Kaffraria in several columns. On 8 April, 'Colonel Peddie, leaving the camp

at midnight with four companies of the regiment and the first provisional battalion, ascended the Izolo Berg; and having early on the morning of the 9th divided his forces into two columns, and penetrated the fastnesses of the Isidengi, the Kaffirs, seeing they were attacked on every point, fled in the utmost dismay, and several thousand head of cattle were the reward of this movement' (*Records of the 72nd Regiment*, privately printed in 1886, p. 39). In September operations were brought to an end, the Gaika country was annexed as far as the Kei (though the annexation was not ratified till 1846), and the regiment returned to Grahamstown. A town in the newly acquired territory bears the name of Peddie.

On 23 Feb. 1838 Peddie exchanged into the 90th regiment, then stationed in Ceylon. There his health broke down, and he died at Newara Elija in August 1840.

[Hart's Army List, 1840; Delavoye's Records of the 90th Regiment.] E. M. L.

**PEDEN**, ALEXANDER (1626?–1686), covenanter, was born in or about 1626, according to some at the farm of Auchencloich, Ayrshire, and according to others in a small cottage near Sorn Castle, Ayrshire. In any case his father was in fairly good circumstances, being on terms of intimacy with the Boswells, lairds of Auchinleck. Peden attended the university of Glasgow; his name spelt Peathine is entered in the fourth class in 1648 (Scot, *Fasti Eccles. Scot.* i. 765). Some time after this he became schoolmaster, precentor, and session clerk at Tarbolton, Ayrshire, and subsequently was, according to Wodrow, employed in a like capacity at Fenwick, Ayrshire. As he was about to receive license to preach from the presbytery of Ayr a young woman accused him of being the father of a child to her, but her statement was finally proved to be false. On account of the 'surfeit of grief' that the woman then gave him Peden, according to Patrick Walker, made a vow never to marry. The young woman, Walker also states, committed suicide on the spot where Peden had spent twenty-four hours in prayer and meditation regarding the accusation.

In 1660 Peden was ordained minister at New Luce, Galloway; but having refused to comply with the acts of parliament, 11 June, and of the privy council, 1 Oct. 1662, requiring all who had been inducted since 1649 to obtain a new presentation from the lawful patron and have collation from the bishop of the diocese, letters were directed against him and twenty other ministers of Galloway, 24 Feb. 1663, for 'labouring to keep the hearts of the people from the present government in church and state,' and he was ordered to appear before the privy council on that day month to answer for his conduct. Failing to do so, he was ejected from his living. He preached his farewell sermon from Acts xv. 31, 32, occupying the pulpit till night, and as he closed the pulpit-door on leaving it, he knocked on the door three times with his Bible, saying, 'I arrest thee in my Father's name that none enter thee but such as come in by the door as I have done,' a prohibition which is said to have been effectual in preventing the intrusion of any 'indulged' minister, the pulpit remaining vacant until the Revolution.

After his ejectment Peden began to preach at covenanting conventicles in different parts of the south of Scotland, obtaining by his figurative and oracular style of address and his supposed prophetical gifts an extraordinary influence over the peasantry, which was further increased by his hardships, perils, and numerous hairbreadth escapes. On 25 Jan. 1665 letters were directed against him for keeping conventicles, and, as he disregarded the summons to appear before the council, he was declared a rebel and forfeited. He continued, however, to remain in the country, holding conventicles whenever opportunity presented. Patrick Walker states that he joined with that 'honest and zealous handful, in the year 1666, that was broken at Pentland Hills (on 28 Nov.), and came the length of Clyde with them, where he had a melancholy view of their end, and parted with them there.' He was excepted out of the proclamation of pardon on 1 Oct. 1667, and in December all persons 'were discharged and inhibited to harbour, reset, supply, correspond with or conceal' him and others concerned in the late rebellion. For greater safety he therefore passed over to Ireland; but having returned in 1673, he was in June apprehended by Major Cockburn in the house of Hugh Ferguson of Knockdow, Ayrshire, and sent to Edinburgh. After examination before the privy council on the 26th he was imprisoned on the Bass Rock in the Firth of Forth. On 9 Oct. 1677 the council ordered him to be liberated from the Bass, on condition that he bound himself to depart forth of Britain, and not to return under pain of being held *pro confesso* to have been at Pentland. He does not appear to have complied with this condition, but was shortly afterwards removed to the Tolbooth, Edinburgh. While there he on 14 Nov. petitioned the council to be liberated, and permitted to go to Ireland. Instead of granting the request the council

in December ordered that he and certain others should be transported to the plantations in Virginia, and be discharged from ever again returning to Scotland. They were therefore shipped from Leith to London; but Peden, according to Patrick Walker, comforted his fellow prisoners by the declaration that 'the ship was not yet built' that would take him or them 'to Virginia or any other plantation in America.' And so at last it turned out; for the captain of the ship chartered to convey them to Virginia, on learning that they were not convicts of the class to which he was accustomed, but persons banished on account of their religious beliefs, refused to take them on board, and they were set at liberty. Peden returned to Scotland in June of the following year, and went thence to Ireland. He was in Ayrshire again in 1680, and after performing the marriage ceremony of John Brown (1627 ?–1685) [q. v.], the 'Christian carrier,' in 1682, went back to Ireland. He returned to Ayrshire in 1685, and preached his last sermon at Colinswood at the water of Ayr. His privations and anxieties had gradually undermined his health, and, resolving to spend his last days in his native district, he found shelter in a cave on the banks of the river Ayr, near Sorn. Having a presentiment that he had not many hours to live, he one evening left the cave and went to his brother's house at Sorn, where he died on 28 Jan. 1686. Before his death he had an interview with James Renwick [q. v.], and the two became fully reconciled. Peden was buried in the Boswell aisle in the parish church of Auchinleck; but forty days after the burial a troop of dragoons came, and, lifting the corpse, carried it two miles to Cumnock gallows, intending to hang it up there in chains. Finding it impossible to do so, they buried it at the gallows' foot. After the Revolution the inhabitants of the parish of Cumnock, in token of their esteem for Peden, abandoned their ancient burial-place, and formed a new one round the gallows hill.

Peden's fame as a prophet was perpetuated among the peasants of the south of Scotland by the collection of his prophecies, with instances of their fulfilment, made by Patrick Walker. He was the most famed and revered of all the Scottish covenanting preachers. 'The Lord's Trumpet sounding an Alarm against Scotland by Warning of a Bloody Sword; being the substance of a Preface and two Prophetical Sermons preached at Glenluce, Anno 1682, by that great Scottish Prophet, Mr. Alexander Peden, late Minister of the Gospel at New Glenluce in Galloway,' was published at Glasgow in 1739, and reprinted in 1779.

[The Life and Prophecies of Alexander Peden by Patrick Walker has been frequently reprinted; see also Histories of Kirkton and Wodrow; Howie's Scottish Worthies; New Statistical Account of Scotland; Hew Scot's Fasti Eccles. Scot. i. 168; Scott's Old Mortality, note 18; Watson's Life and Times of Peden, Glasgow, 1881.] T. F. H.

PEDLEY, ROBERT (1760–1841), eccentric author. [See DEVERELL.]

PEDROG (*fl.* 550?), British saint, commemorated on 4 June, was the founder of the ancient church of Bodmin, where his relics were long preserved. The life in 'Acta Sanctorum' (June, i. 400–1), previously printed by Capgrave (*Nova Legenda Angliæ*, p. 266), is meagre and of no authority. We only learn from it that Pedrog was 'natione Cumber' (i.e. a Welshman), and of royal birth. On the death of his father he declined the succession to the crown, and, with sixty companions, retired to a monastery. After studying in Ireland for twenty years, he spent another thirty in monastic seclusion in Britain. Then he visited Rome, Jerusalem, and India, living for seven years on a desert island in the Indian Ocean. He returned to Western Britain, and ultimately died there on 4 June. The Life of St. Cadoc in 'Cambro-British Saints' (pp. 22–3), which was apparently written about 1070, so far confirms this account as to make Pedrog a son of King Glywys of (what is now) Glamorgan, who did not take his share of the royal inheritance with his brothers, but served God at 'Botmenei' in Cornwall, where a great monastery was afterwards founded in his honour. The Hafod MS. of 'Bonedd y Saint,' however, and other manuscripts of the same class call Pedrog the son of 'Clemens tywysog o Gernyw' (i.e. a prince from Cornwall) (*Myvyrian Archæology*, 2nd edit. pp. 416, 429; *Cambro-British Saints*, p. 267).

Pedrog is called by Fuller 'the captain of the Cornish saints,' and the number of dedications to him in Devonshire and Cornwall show that his name was widely revered in the district. He is the patron saint of Bodmin, Padstow, Trevalga, and Little Petherick in Cornwall, and of West Anstey, South Brent, Clannaborough, St. Petrock's, Exeter, Hollacombe, Lidford, and Newton St. Petrock in Devonshire. Llanbedrog, Carnarvonshire, and St. Petrox, Pembrokeshire, are also dedicated to him. He was, moreover, honoured, as St. Perreux, in the monastery of St. Méen in Brittany, and in 1177 the monks of St. Méen made an unsuccessful attempt to obtain possession of his relics (Rog. Hov. *sub anno*).

[Acta Sanctorum, 4 June; Cambro-British Saints; Rees's Welsh Saints; Stanton's Menology of England and Wales, 1887; Boase in Dict. of Christian Biography.] J. E. L.

PEEBLES or PEBLIS, DAVID (*d.* 1579), musician, was one of the canons of St. Andrews before the Reformation. In 1530 he set 'Si quis diliget me' as a motet for five voices, and presented it to James V. Thomas Wood, who in 1566 (and again in 1592) copied out the famous St. Andrews harmonised psalter, recorded that the tunes were 'Set in iiii partes be a Notable cunning man, David Peables i. s., Noted and Wretin.' The words 'Noted and Wretin' suggest that Peebles had also versified the psalter. Some of the other pieces which Wood included in his collection are also by Peebles. David Laing, who wrote an admirable account of Wood's part-books, could not give a complete example, as the contratenor volume was then missing from both of Wood's copies; all the treble and bass volumes, and one of the tenors, are at Edinburgh, and a supplementary volume is at Dublin. One of the missing contratenors, bound with a second copy of the supplement, has since been acquired by the British Museum (Addit. MS. 33933); it is, unfortunately, defective, but most of the psalter can now be completed by its help, and the result proves Peebles to have possessed great skill in pure diatonic harmony. He died in December 1579. During the short-lived episcopalian establishment set up by Charles I, Edward Miller, canon of Holyrood, published in 1635 a harmonised psalter, declaring that the settings were by 'the primest musicians that ever this kingdome had, as John Deane Angus, Blackhall, Smith, Peebles, Sharp, Black, Buchan, and others, famous for their skill in this kind.'

[David Laing's Account of the St. Andrews Psalter of 1566, Edinburgh, 1871; Addit. MS. 33933; Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians, iii. 441.] H. D.

PEECKE, RICHARD, of Tavistock (*fl.* 1626), traveller. [See Pike.]

PEEL, JOHN (1776–1854), Cumberland huntsman, came of an old yeoman or 'statesman' family of Caldbeck in Cumberland, where he was born on 13 Nov. 1776. As a youth he eloped with Miss White of Uldale to Gretna. It was a happy union. Of their thirteen children, only one died young. Peel's love of hunting was remarkable, even among a race keenly attached to field sports. For fifty-five years he maintained, at his sole expense, a pack, usually of twelve couples, of hounds, and generally kept two horses. He had a faultless knowledge of the country and of hunting, and was long aided by his eldest son, 'Young John.' The worldwide reputation he has won is attributable to the song celebrating his prowess as a hunter by his friend John Woodcock Graves. This was written under the following circumstances. Peel and Graves were planning a hunting expedition one evening in the parlour of the inn at Caldbeck when a casual question from Graves's daughter as to the words sung to an old Cumberland rant (tune), 'Bonnie Annie,' caused Graves to write impromptu 'D'ye ken John Peel,' the five verses of which he sang to the ancient air. Graves jokingly prophesied that Peel would 'be sung when we've both run to earth.' Few songs of modern date have so firmly established themselves in popular estimation. Late in life Peel's neighbours and friends, including Sir Wilfrid Lawson and George Moore the philanthropist, presented him with a sum of money in acknowledgment of his long services. Besides his patrimonial estate at Caldbeck, Peel acquired, through his wife, a property at Ruthwaite, on which his last years were spent. Here he died on 13 Nov. 1854. He was buried, and a headstone erected over his grave, ornamented with emblems of the chase, in the churchyard at Caldbeck. There is a good portrait of him in the possession of his descendants. Graves, who was born in a house next to the Market Hall in the High Street of Wigton in Cumberland, on 9 Feb. 1795, emigrated to Tasmania in 1833, settling in Hobart Town, where he died on 17 Aug. 1886, leaving a large family. He published 'Songs and Ballads of Cumberland,' and a 'Monody on John Peel.'

[West Cumberland Times, 9 Oct. 1886, and 2 Oct. 1886; Ferguson's Cumberland Fox Hounds; Smiles's George Moore, 1879, p. 26; Dixon's Saddle and Sirloin, p. 109.] A. N.

PEEL, JONATHAN (1799–1879), politician and patron of the turf, fifth son of Sir Robert Peel [q. v.], cotton manufacturer, and brother of Sir Robert Peel [q. v.], the statesman, was born at Chamber Hall, near Bury, Lancashire, on 12 Oct. 1799. He was sent to Rugby in 1811, and on 15 June 1815, three days before the battle of Waterloo, received a commission as second lieutenant in the rifle brigade. The peace that followed prevented him from seeing service, and his subsequent steps were obtained by purchase. From 18 Feb. 1819 to 13 Dec. 1821 he served as a lieutenant in the 71st highlanders, and from 7 Nov. 1822 to 19 May 1825 as a lieutenant in the grenadier guards. He was a major of the 69th foot from 3 Oct. 1826 to 7 June 1827, and lieutenant-colonel of the

53rd foot from 7 June 1827 until he was placed on half-pay on 9 Aug. 1827. He became a brevet colonel on 23 Nov. 1841, a major-general on 20 June 1854, a lieutenant-general on 7 Dec. 1859, and sold out of the army on 4 Aug. 1863. In 1854 he applied to Lord Panmure, the secretary for war, for permission to join the army before Sebastopol. He was then a hale man, aged only fifty-five, but his application was refused on the ground that he was too old.

At the general election in 1826 Peel entered parliament in the tory interest as one of the members for Norwich. He exchanged in 1831 for the more secure borough of Huntingdon, which he continued to represent down to his retirement from parliamentary life at the dissolution of 1868. During his brother's second administration, 1841–6, Peel held the post of surveyor-general of the ordnance. He was not given office in Lord Derby's first administration in 1852. But Derby, when he again became premier in 1858, appointed Peel secretary of state for the war department and a member of the cabinet by way of paying a tribute of respect to the name of Sir Robert Peel, his former colleague and rival. Peel soon made his mark in official life, and became very popular. None knew better than he the wants of the army, or more thoroughly mastered the details of the estimates. His letters to the 'Times' on military expenditure showed a complete grasp of the statistics of the subject. He again held the post of secretary of state for war in Lord Derby's third administration in 1866–7, but he resigned office with Lords Carnarvon and Salisbury rather than support Disraeli's scheme of reform (2 March 1867). Throughout his political career Peel preserved an irreproachable reputation, and, although a strong conservative, showed himself when in office a strenuous supporter of inquiries into abuses in all matters connected with military organisation.

General Peel was noted for his devotion to horseracing and his extensive acquaintance with all matters connected with the turf. His racing career commenced in 1821, when he was part owner of some horses with the Duke of Richmond and Lord Stradbroke. In 1824 his mare Phantom ran second for the Oaks to Lord Jersey's Cobweb. It was not till 1830 that Peel's name first appeared in the 'Calendar,' when he raced in confederacy with his relative, General Jonathan Yates. Two years later he took a leading position on the turf through the victory of his horse Archibald in the Two Thousand Guineas, and his good fortune culminated with the triumph of his Orlando in the Derby for 1844. In that race Ionian, another of his horses, gained the second place. This was one of the most sensational races on record, and will be always associated with the exposure of a most iniquitous fraud. A horse entered as Running Rein came in first, but was disqualified as being a four-year old, and the race was awarded to Orlando. Mr. A. Wood, the owner of Running Rein, then brought an action against General Peel, as a steward of the Jockey Club, for recovery of the stakes. The case was heard before Baron Alderson on 1 July 1844, when, Wood not producing Running Rein, a verdict was returned for the defendant. In the Newmarket Second October Meeting of 1848 Peel's purple jacket and orange cap, familiar on English racecourses for nearly sixty years, were borne to victory for the last time by a colt called Peter, so named after a sobriquet given to Lord Glasgow by his intimate friends. Peel's favourite jockeys were Arthur Pavis and Nat Flatman. On 18 Aug. 1851 he sold his stud for twelve thousand guineas; but, on the Earl of Glasgow dying in 1869, and leaving him some horses, he again became connected with the turf. At the time of his death his nominations for coming races numbered about fifty.

Peel died at his seat, Marble Hall, Twickenham, Middlesex, on 13 Feb. 1879, and was buried in Twickenham new cemetery on 19 Feb. He married, on 19 March 1824, Lady Alice Jane, youngest daughter of Archibald Kennedy, first marquis of Ailsa, by whom he had eight children: (1) Robert Kennedy, born 5 Sept. 1824, died 17 April 1863; (2) Edmund Yates, born 24 July 1826, lieutenant-colonel 85th foot; (3) Archibald, born 23 Jan. 1828, M.A. of Trinity College, Oxford; (4) John, born 11 April 1829, lieutenant-general, died 17 Nov. 1892; (5) William Augustus, born 27 Nov. 1833, an inspector of the local government board; (6) Margaret, died April 1890; (7) Alice, who married Sir Robert Burnett David Morier [q. v.]; and (8) Adelaide Georgiana, who married Michael Biddulph, M.P., and died in 1872.

[Baily's Mag. 1861 iii. 273–8 (with portrait), 1890 liv. 83–94, by the Hon. Francis Lawley; Thormanby's Famous Racing Men, 1882, pp. 120–4; Rice's History of the British Turf, 1879, ii. 267, 323–7; New Sporting Magazine, 1838, xv. 371 (with portrait); Sporting Times, 13 Feb. 1875, pp. 212–13 (with portrait); Illustrated Sporting and Dramatic News, 1874 i. 201–2 (with portrait), 1879 x. 549, 562 (with portrait); Illustrated London News, 1879, lxxiv.

224 (with portrait); Burke's Portrait Gallery, 1833, i. 58 (with portrait of Mrs. Peel).]

G. C. B.

**PEEL, Sir LAWRENCE** (1799–1884), chief justice of Calcutta, third son of Joseph Peel of Bowes Farm, Middlesex, who died in 1821, by Anne, second daughter of Jonathan Haworth of Harcroft, Lancashire, was born on 10 Aug. 1799. His father was younger brother of the first Sir Robert Peel (1750–1830) [q. v.], and he was thus first cousin of the statesman, the second Sir Robert Peel (1788–1850) [q. v.] He was sent to Rugby in 1812, and removing to St. John's College, Cambridge, graduated B.A. 1821 and M.A. 1824. After his call to the bar at the Middle Temple on 7 May 1824 he went the northern circuit, and attended the Lancaster, Preston, and Manchester sessions. He served as advocate-general at Calcutta from 1840 to 1842, and in the latter year, on being promoted to the chief-justiceship of the supreme court at Calcutta, was knighted by patent on 18 May. During 1854 and 1855 he was also vice-president of the legislative council at Calcutta. He gave away in public charity the whole of his official income of 8,000*l.* a year. He was consequently very popular throughout his career in India; and on his retirement in November 1855 a statue of him was erected in Calcutta.

After his return to England he was sworn of the privy council, and was made a paid member of the judicial committee on 4 April 1856. He was elected a bencher of the Middle Temple on 8 May 1856, and became treasurer of his inn on 3 Dec. 1866. From 1857 he was a director of the East India Company, and in the following year was created a D.C.L. of the university of Oxford. In January 1864 he became president of Guy's Hospital, London. He was for some years a correspondent of the 'Times' on legal and general topics. He died, unmarried, at Garden Reach, Ventnor, Isle of Wight, on 22 July 1884.

He wrote 'Horæ Nauseæ,' 1841, poems translated and original (the latter are probably juvenile productions) and 'A Sketch of the Life and Character of Sir R. Peel,' 1860.

[Times, 23 July and 1 Aug. 1884; Foster's Baronetage, 1883, p. 501.] G. C. B.

**PEEL, PAUL** (1861–1892), Canadian painter, was born at London, Ontario, where his father was a marble-cutter. He received his first training at the College of Fine Arts, Pennsylvania, and afterwards studied in Paris under Gérôme. His apprenticeship over, he settled in Paris, making occasional short sojourns in his native country. His art was entirely French in character. He was a successful exhibitor at the salon, gaining the gold medal in 1890 for his picture 'After the Bath.' His favourite subjects were taken from the nursery, but during the summer months he used to work *en plein air* in the northern provinces of France. He was an excellent colourist and a master of delicate effects of light. He died in October 1892, leaving a widow and one son.

[Times 28 Oct. 1892; private information.] W. A.

**PEEL, Sir ROBERT** (1750–1830), first baronet, manufacturer and member of parliament, was born at Peelfold, Oswaldtwistle, Lancashire, on 25 April 1750. His family, which has been obscurely traced to a Danish origin, had emigrated early in the seventeenth century from the district of Craven in Yorkshire to the neighbouring town of Blackburn in Lancashire. His father, Robert Peel, had founded the fortunes of the family in 1764, when, having mortgaged his family estates, he established at Blackburn, in conjunction with his brother-in-law, Mr. Haworth, and a neighbour named Yates, a calico-printing firm, which may be considered the parent of that industry in Lancashire. He has been described as 'a tall, robust, handsome man, of excellent constitution, with a character for uprightness and persevering industry, and possessing a mechanical genius.' He married, in 1744, Elizabeth Haworth, and by her had seven sons, the third of whom was Robert Peel, first baronet. The boy was educated at Blackburn, and subsequently in London, whence he returned to enter his father's business. At the age of twenty-three he became a partner in the firm of Haworth, Peel, & Yates, calico-printers.

In his business Peel was an originator and reformer. He imported deserted children from the London workhouses, educated them, and enabled them to earn their living. He appreciated and applied the discoveries of Arkwright and Hargreaves. It was probably because he feared that the jealousy of the handloom workers would be provoked by his new machinery that he removed a branch of his cotton business to Tamworth in Staffordshire, where he also bought a large estate and built Drayton Manor.

In 1780 he wrote a pamphlet entitled 'The National Debt productive of National Prosperity,' in which he argued that a domestic public debt owed by the community to itself cannot impair the aggregate wealth of the community. In 1790 he entered Par-

liament as member for Tamworth, and warmly supported Pitt. He at first hailed the French revolution as a 'temperate reformation,' but when it grew more violent in character resisted it as far as with him lay. To the voluntary contribution of 1797 his firm gave 10,000*l.*, and in 1798 he armed and commanded six companies of Bury royal volunteers. On 14 Feb. 1799 he spoke strongly for the union with Ireland, and his speech was printed in Dublin. In 1800 he was made a baronet, and assumed as his motto 'Industria.' On 7 May 1802 he defended Pitt, who when in office had constantly sought his opinion on financial and commercial matters. 'No minister,' he said, 'ever understood so well the commercial interests of the country. He knew that the true sources of its greatness lay in its productive industry.'

In the same year he carried the act which was the forerunner of all factory legislation: 'An Act for the Preservation of the Health and Morals of Apprentices and others, employed in Cotton and other Mills, and Cotton and other Factories.' He himself was the employer at this period of some fifteen thousand persons. In 1819 he opposed the resumption of cash payments, a measure carried in that year by his son.

Peel died at Drayton Park on 3 May 1830, and was buried in the church of Drayton-Bassett, Staffordshire. There is a portrait by Sir Thomas Lawrence. In person he was 'tall, manly, and well proportioned.' 'His eye' (it was said) 'when he speaks lights up his countenance with peculiar animation.' He possessed the vigour and the virtues of the national character, and may be claimed as a pioneer of the commercial greatness of England.

On 8 July 1783, at the age of thirty-three, he married Ellen Yates, the daughter of one of his partners. He married, secondly, in October 1805, Susanna, daughter of Francis Clerke; she died without issue on 10 Sept. 1824. By his first wife Peel had eleven children. The eldest son Robert, the statesman, and the fifth son, Jonathan, are separately noticed. It is said that on hearing of the birth of his eldest son he fell on his knees, and, returning thanks to God, vowed that he would give his child to his country.

The second son, William Yates Peel (1789–1858), born at Chamber Hall, Bury, Lancashire, on 3 Aug. 1789, was educated at Harrow and St. John's College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. 1812 and M.A. 1815. Entering Lincoln's Inn, he was called to the bar in June 1816; he sat in parliament for Bossiney, Cornwall, 1817–18, Tamworth (as colleague of his brother Sir Robert) 1818–30, Yarmouth, Isle of Wight, 1830–1, Cambridge University 1831–5, Tamworth 1835–7, and again 1847–52. In 1826 he was appointed a commissioner of the board of control in Lord Liverpool's administration; he was under-secretary for the home department under his brother, Sir Robert, in 1828, in the Duke of Wellington's administration; a lord of the treasury in 1830 in the same government, and again in 1834–5 in his brother's ministry; in the same year he was sworn of the privy council. He died on 1 June 1858, having married, on 17 June 1819, Jane Elizabeth (*d.* 1847), daughter of Stephen, second earl Mountcashell, and left issue four sons and nine daughters (Foster, *Lancashire Pedigrees*; Haydn, *Book of Dignities*; *Gent. Mag.* 1858, ii. 191).

[A Memoir of the Family of Peel from the year 1600, by Jane Haworth, 1836; a Memoir on the Genealogy of the Peels, by Jonathan Peel; a Memoir of Sir Robert Peel, by Rev. Richard Davies, vicar of St. Nicholas, Leicester, 1803; Gent. Mag. 1830 i. 556–7.] G. V. P.

PEEL, Sir ROBERT (1788–1850), second baronet, statesman, was born on 5 Feb. 1788, probably at Chamber Hall, near Bury in Lancashire. He was the eldest son of Robert (afterwards Sir Robert) Peel (1750–1830) [q. v.] His mother, Ellen Yates, was eldest daughter of William Yates, a partner in the firm of Haworth, Peel, & Yates, cotton manufacturers of Bury. The boy took lessons with James Hargreaves, curate of Bury, but learned more from his father, who had marked him out to be a statesman, and who, by way of training, would set him on Sunday evenings to repeat the morning and afternoon sermons of the day. At the age of ten he removed with his family to Drayton Manor, near Tamworth in Staffordshire, and was placed at school with Francis Blick, vicar of Tamworth, where he was judged 'a good boy of gentle manners, quick in feeling, very sensitive.' In January 1801 he went to Harrow, entering the house of the Rev. Mark Drury. According to Byron, his schoolfellow, 'there were always great hopes of Peel amongst us all, masters and scholars.' In 1804 the two friends declaimed together, Byron taking the part of Latinus, and Peel that of Turnus. Another schoolfellow remembered him as 'the light-haired, blue-eyed, fair-complexioned, smiling, good-natured boy, indolent somewhat as to physical exertion, but overflowing with mental energy.' At Christmas 1804 he left Harrow, and spent the ensuing season at his father's house in Upper Grosvenor Street, being very regular in his attendance under the gallery of the House of Commons, where Pitt and Fox still held sway.

In October 1805 he entered Christ Church, Oxford, as a gentleman-commoner. At the time Cyril Jackson [q. v.] was dean. His tutor was at first Thomas Gaisford [q. v.], and subsequently Charles Lloyd (1784–1829) [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Oxford, who was always his closest friend. Oxford had recently awakened from that lethargy which is the theme of Gibbon, and under the new system of 1807 Peel won, in 1808, a double first class in classics and mathematics, his viva voce examination being the first of his public triumphs. After he had taken his degree his father bought him the seat of Cashel in Tipperary, and he entered the House of Commons in April 1809, at the age of twenty-one. A tory ministry, with the Duke of Portland as prime minister, was in power, and the whigs, utterly wrecked since the death of Fox, were in opposition. Peel, fresh from a tory home and a tory university, naturally gave his support to the government. In 1810 he seconded the address, in a speech of about forty minutes, which the speaker (Charles Abbot, afterwards Lord Colchester) and others judged to have been 'the best first speech since that of Mr. Pitt.' Soon afterwards he accepted the under-secretaryship for war and the colonies. The secretary of state was Lord Liverpool, and the main business of the office was to direct the military operations against the French. According to the testimony of Lord Liverpool, Peel acquired in this post 'all the necessary habits of official business,' and showed 'a particularly good temper and great frankness and openness of manners.' Upon Perceval's murder in May 1812 Lord Liverpool became premier, and Peel accepted the post of chief secretary for Ireland in July. At the same time he exchanged the seat of Cashel for Chippenham.

Peel held the Irish office for six years, until 1818, and served under three viceroys—the Duke of Richmond, Lord Whitworth, and Lord Talbot. The duties were threefold. He had in the first place to administer the patronage of Ireland on behalf of the English government. Here his principle was to yield as little as possible to the influence of powerful individuals, to consult always the interests of his government, and never his own. He made no distinction between catholics and protestants in appointments open to both, and opposed the practice of selling public offices and of dismissing civil servants for political action. The success of the government in the Irish elections of 1812 and 1818 was ascribed to his vigour and prudence in distributing patronage. Secondly, he was bound to maintain order in Ireland. The young minister had to meet the Goliath of agitation, O'Connell, who in 1811 had organised the catholic board, and was rapidly ousting Grattan from popular favour. It was Peel's general desire to rule by the existing law, but disorder rose to such a height that in June 1814 he had to suppress the catholic board, and immediately afterwards carried two acts, one reviving in part the repealed Insurrection Act of 1807, and the other establishing the peace preservation police, vulgarly termed 'Peelers,' a body afterwards consolidated into the royal Irish constabulary. These measures were successful, and Ireland sank into an uneasy repose. Thirdly, Peel had to maintain in parliament the cause of protestant ascendency. Those who favoured catholic emancipation comprised the whig party and a section of the tories, led by Canning and Wellesley, besides Vansittart and Castlereagh in the English cabinet, and within the Irish government itself William Vesey Fitzgerald (afterwards Lord Fitzgerald and Vesey) [q. v.], the Irish chancellor of the exchequer, and Charles Kendal Bushe [q. v.], the solicitor-general. Four times in three months during 1813 did the House of Commons resolve that concessions should be made. But Peel was too firm, O'Connell too virulent, and the catholic party too divided on the question of imposing the royal veto on the appointment of bishops for anything to be done. In 1817 Peel sealed the victory by his first really great speech delivered on 9 May against the catholic claims.

Peel's policy did not solve the Irish question, but he ruled Ireland. Throughout his tenure of office O'Connell pursued him with excessive rancour, and in the course of 1815 Peel challenged the agitator to a duel. He crossed to Ostend to meet his opponent, but O'Connell was arrested in the Strand [see O'Connell, Daniel].

Among the whigs Peel's attitude to Irish questions at the same time gained him the reputation of being the 'spokesman to the intolerant faction.' The stalwart tories viewed his conduct with unbounded favour. In 1817 Oxford acknowledged his services to protestantism by making him her member, an honour that Canning himself had coveted in vain. In the same year fifty-nine Irish members signed a remarkable memorial urging him not to retire from a post which he had administered with masterly ability. But he was weary of the work, and on 3 Aug. 1818 laid down his office and quitted Ireland.

From 1818 to 1822 Peel was a private member. He married in 1820, and both in that year and in 1821 he declined offers of cabinet rank. But within this period falls one great political achievement. In 1819

the House of Commons appointed a 'committee of secrecy to consider the state of the Bank of England with reference to the expediency of the resumption of cash payments,' and though such men as Canning, Tierney, and Huskisson sat with him, Peel was chosen chairman. In 1811 he had voted against Horner's resolutions based on the report of the bullion committee of 1810 recommending resumption. Now he became convinced that the system of paper currency pursued since 1797 resulted in a fall of the foreign exchanges and a rise in the price of gold—that is to say, in a depreciated currency. On 24 May he introduced his resolutions in a memorable speech, and upon them was founded 'Peel's Act,' which provided that the acts restraining cash payments should finally cease on 1 May 1823. The young man of thirty-one thus achieved what Canning called 'the greatest wonder he had witnessed in the political world,' and gave the country the inestimable benefit of a sound system of metallic currency.

It was at this epoch in Peel's career that his political views underwent a subtle change. Although still as strongly opposed as his fellow tories to such measures as catholic emancipation or reform of the House of Commons, and although he still fully recognised the exigencies of party warfare, he began to perceive that it was the duty of politicians to study the condition of all classes of the people, and to bring parliamentary policy to some extent into harmony with the wishes and needs of the constituencies, even at the risk of ignoring many preconceived opinions. The earliest sign of his suspicion that toryism of the rigorously unchanging type might prove in his case an inadequate creed is supplied by a letter to Croker dated 23 March 1820. 'Do you not think,' he asks, 'that the tone of England is more liberal than the policy of the government?' And again: 'public opinion is growing too large for the channels that it has been accustomed to run through.'

While out of office his influence was steadily increasing. In 1820 it was noticed that 'his talents, independent fortune, official habits, and reputation, and, above all, general character both in and out of parliament, have disposed more men to follow and more to unite with him than any other person' (Buckingham, *Memoirs of George IV*, i. 102). On 17 Jan. 1822 he rejoined Lord Liverpool's government, accepting the seals of the home office and cabinet rank. In August Lord Londonderry died by his own hand, and the question at once arose whether Canning or Peel should succeed him as leader of the House of Commons. Canning had the prior claim, and became foreign secretary and leader of the house. Peel wrote: 'I have no difference with Canning on political questions except on the catholic question,' and, readily acquiescing in the appointment, he turned to consider the state of the criminal law. Since 1818 Sir James Mackintosh had advocated reform in that branch, but he now in 1823 resigned the project into the hands of the home secretary. Peel, though he had entered at Lincoln's Inn in 1809, had scarcely studied law. But his particular method in office was to summon experts from all quarters, and he thus always appeared before the House of Commons with an encyclopædic knowledge of his subject. Thus armed, he was able to pass in the next five years eight acts mitigating and consolidating the criminal law, and repealing in whole or in part more than 250 old statutes, not to mention another great measure dealing with the law of juries. His plan of legislation was to steer a middle course 'between the redundancy of our own legal enactments and the conciseness of the French code;' and the change that he wrought was so great that Mackintosh used to declare that he could almost think that he 'had lived in two different countries, and conversed with people who spoke two different languages.' Peel's administration was marked by the repeal or expiration of every law imposing extraordinary restrictions on the liberty of the subject (*Speeches*, i. 509). In the view of Canning, he was the most efficient home secretary that this country ever saw.

In February 1827 Lord Liverpool, the prime minister, was struck down by paralysis, and, after much negotiation, Canning succeeded to his office. In April Peel resigned, on the ground that he was opposed to Canning on catholic emancipation. That question had now risen into a position of pressing urgency. In 1823 O'Connell had organised the Catholic Association; in 1825 Peel had been 'left in minorities on three different questions immediately connected with Ireland—the catholic question, the elective franchise, and the payment of the catholic clergy.' He had offered to resign, and had only consented to remain when told that his resignation would break up the ministry. In 1826, at the general election, the Irish priesthood had for the first time thrown themselves into the popular cause. Further than this, Canning, the new prime minister, was the most powerful advocate of the catholics, as Peel was their most powerful opponent. Meanness suggested that there was jealousy between the two. But, though divided by public duty, they remained united in friendship. On 2 July, meeting in

Westminster Hall for the last time, they talked arm-in-arm with cordiality and good will. On 8 Aug. Canning was dead. Goderich became premier. Peel since his retirement had taken little part in politics, but he now worked energetically to reunite the two sections of the tory party. His efforts met with success, and on Goderich's resignation Wellington was able, in January 1828, to form a ministry out of the reunited party. Peel joined the new government as home secretary for the second time, and as leader of the House of Commons for the first time.

An extraordinary drama followed. On 26 Feb., and again on 12 May, the government was beaten—first, on a motion for the repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts, and, secondly, on a motion for the settlement of the catholic question. Peel resolved to resign; but Huskisson and the other Canningites anticipated him by themselves resigning when the majority of the cabinet declined to enfranchise Birmingham at the expense of East Retford. Had Peel withdrawn too the government would have fallen at once. He therefore determined to support the duke. Such was Peel's position when, at the end of June, Fitzgerald, who had sought re-election at Clare as the new president of the board of trade, was defeated by O'Connell. Fitzgerald at once wrote to Peel that 'the country is mad.' Lord Anglesey, the lord lieutenant [see PAGET, HENRY WILLIAM, first MARQUIS OF ANGLESEY], also wrote, on 26 July, that Ireland was on the verge of rebellion, and urged concession to the catholics. The mind of Peel soon arrived at a like conclusion; for he held, with his master Pitt, that to maintain a consistent attitude amid changed circumstances is to be 'a slave to the most idle vanity' (PITT, *Speeches*, iv. 77). During nearly twenty years he had opposed emancipation on 'broad and uncompromising grounds.' Those grounds may be summed up in a sentence of his own: 'May I not question the policy of admitting those who must have views hostile to the religious establishments of the state to the capacity of legislating for the interests of those establishments?' He now, on 11 Aug., felt that the crisis overrode all such arguments, and wrote to Wellington that, though emancipation was a great danger, civil strife was a greater. At the same time he stated that he felt bound to resign on his change of policy. Again he was thwarted; a new factor entered into the case. Though the duke thoroughly agreed with Peel, the king was violently opposed, so much so that the duke informed Peel on 17 Jan. 1829 that 'I do not see the smallest chance of getting the better of these difficulties if you should not continue in office.' On the same date Peel consented to remain. From that time till the opening of parliament Peel was engaged in preparing three bills—one for the suppression of the Catholic Association, another for catholic emancipation, and the third for the regulation of the franchise in Ireland. When the first of these bills had been read a third time, Peel placed himself in the hands of his constituents by accepting the Chiltern Hundreds (20 Feb.) He was defeated on seeking re-election at Oxford by 146 votes, but was elected for Westbury, and took his seat on 3 March. Next day the king saw the leading ministers, informed them in an interview lasting five hours of his disagreement with their policy, gave them 'a salute on each cheek,' and accepted their resignations. But the same evening he changed his mind, and recalled them to office. On 5 March Peel, in a great speech of over four hours' duration, introduced his bill for catholic emancipation. As he moved from point to point in his exposition, cheers broke out so loud as to be heard in Westminster Hall. For the measure was broadly based on equality of civil rights, and Peel assigned the honour to those to whom honour was due. 'The credit belongs to others, and not to me. It belongs to Mr. Fox, to Mr. Grattan, to Mr. Plunket, to the gentlemen opposite, and to an illustrious and right hon. friend of mine, who is now no more.' All three bills passed eventually into law, but the author of them was overwhelmed with abuse as a traitor and an apostate. Yet, having changed his policy, he had acted rightly—first, in offering to resign his place in the cabinet; secondly, in seeking re-election from his constituents; and, thirdly, in justifying his course before the House of Commons by submitting a practical proposal. His own words best describe his conduct: 'it was no ignoble ambition which prompted me to bear the brunt of a desperate conflict.'

Emancipation disposed of, he hastened to accomplish three other signal reforms. In 1828 he revised and consolidated the laws of offences against the person, and in 1830 dealt in the same way with the laws of forgery. Secondly, he created the metropolitan police force in 1829, thus solving a difficulty that had been felt by English statesmen for more than half a century. With true foresight he stated that by thus preventing the increase of crime he was paving the way for a still further mitigation of the criminal code. Thirdly, he carried in 1830 two important measures of law reform, notable as the first successful attempts in this country to improve the judicature.

In November 1830 Wellington's government was defeated on Parnell's motion to revise the civil list [see PARNELL, HENRY BROOKE, first BARON CONGLETON]. It was succeeded by the reform government of Lord Grey. On 22 Nov. Peel, who had succeeded to the baronetcy, a fine estate, and a great fortune at the death of his father on 3 May, and had become member for Tamworth at the August elections, took his place for the first time in his life on the opposition bench. Though he refused to pledge himself against all reform, and avowed 'that there might have been proposed certain alterations to which I would have assented,' yet, in a series of great speeches delivered on 3 March, 6 July, 21 Sept., 17 Dec. 1831, and 22 March 1832, he vigorously opposed the ministerial plans of parliamentary reform as an ill-advised reconstruction of the constitution. He was also a close critic of details, and between 12 and 27 July 1831 spoke no less than forty-eight times. His main arguments were that the plan in question would totally disfranchise the lower classes, that the rotten boroughs had given special opportunities to distinguished men of entering parliament, and that the existing constitution gave no hindrance to any necessary reforms. Early in April an amendment was carried in committee against the government, and Peel was the chief actor in the historic scene on 22 April 1831, when he was interrupted in the full tide of unwonted passion by black rod suddenly summoning the commons to hear the dissolution of parliament. In May 1832, after the lords had carried a motion in committee adverse to the Reform Bill, and the ministers had resigned, Peel's professions were put to the test by an offer of the premiership, 'on the condition of introducing an extensive measure of reform,' but he unhesitatingly declined. His conduct in this crisis won him back the tory allegiance which he had forfeited over catholic emancipation.

When Peel entered the parliament of 1833 as member for Tamworth his position was unique. He was the representative of an extinct system and the leader of a shattered party. For the tories, if nominally about 150 in number, rarely mustered one hundred on a division, and they were so dispirited that they even allowed their leader to be pushed from his place and made to sit nearer the speaker. On the other hand, he was incomparably the first man in the House of Commons. He had held office for sixteen years altogether, and had carried a long series of reforms. His weight was such that the whole house listened with an 'unutterable anxiety' to anything that he said or did. He was rid of embarrassing questions and an unmanageable party, and at once announced that he would accept the new order and act in the spirit of moderate reform. On this principle he constantly voted with Lord Grey's government against the extreme radicals and repealers, so that, out of the twenty important domestic questions dealt with during the sessions of 1833 and 1834, he sided on no less than sixteen with the government.

In July of the latter year the king tried to induce Peel to coalesce with the government on Lord Grey's resignation, but failed, and Lord Melbourne became prime minister. In November William IV abruptly dismissed Lord Melbourne and his colleagues. A romantic episode followed. The Mercury of the court, 'the hurried Hudson,' was sent to find Peel. He was found on 25 Nov. 1834 at Rome, at a ball of the Duchess of Torlonia, and he posted back to England to accept, on 9 Dec., the double office of first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer. He made his first appearance the next day, 'full of spirits and cordiality,' and at once took full responsibility for the king's action, although he disliked it. Then, having issued a manifesto to his Tamworth constituents in explanation of his past and future policy, he dissolved parliament, and thus added some hundred to the strength of his party. Toiling incessantly from seven in the morning till long past midnight, the minister prepared, against the meeting of the house, four great measures dealing with the church, three of which—the Dissenters' Marriage Bill, the English Tithe Bill, and the Irish Tithe Bill—were eventually carried, with additions, in 1836 and 1838 by the whigs. But the whig majority was merciless, and six times in six weeks Peel suffered defeat. At last, on 8 April 1835, having been outvoted on a resolution of Russell to appropriate the surplus revenues of the Irish church to non-ecclesiastical objects, the minister laid down his arms. As he announced his decision a tide of generous emotion swept through the ranks of his opponents. In his short term of office he had only actually done one thing: he had established the ecclesiastical commission. Yet he had proved himself, in the phrase of Guizot, 'the most liberal of conservatives, the most conservative of liberals, and the most capable man of all in both parties.' The shrewd remark of 'old Sir Robert Peel' was remembered, that his son would never display his talents in their fulness until he held the supreme place.

Peel now retired again into opposition and resumed his former attitude of 'a great,

prudent, wary leader who was fighting after a plan' (Dalling, p. 87). That plan was concisely described by himself in May 1838: 'My object for some years past has been to lay the foundations of a great party, which, existing in the House of Commons, and deriving its strength from the popular will, should diminish the risk and deaden the shock of collisions between the two deliberative branches of the legislature.' This was the party which bore the name, first used in 1831, of conservative. For the formation of such a body there were needed young men, and tried men, and men in numbers. Since the death of Pitt the tories seemed to have alienated political ability; in 1828 it was held that there was not a single young tory of promise in the House of Commons. In a cartoon of 1830 by 'H. B.,' Wellington and Peel are drawn looking over 'the Noddle Bazaar' for 'a few good heads.' Now the most brilliant young men in England gathered under the banner of the conservative chief, among them Sidney Herbert and the future Lord Canning, and, above all, Gladstone and Disraeli, who entered parliament in 1837. To the latter Sir Robert seems to have shown marked kindness and attention (*Beaconsfield's Correspondence with his Sister*, pp. 9, 10, 55, 59, 72, 79, 121, 148, 171). When Disraeli rose to make his maiden speech 'no one backed me with more zeal and kindness than Peel, cheering me repeatedly, which is not his custom.' When they talked of failure, Peel said: 'I say anything but failure; he must make his way' (*ib.* p. 79). The author of the 'Letters of Runnymede' dedicated them to the opposition leader and summoned him to come from 'the halls and the bowers of Drayton' to 'rescue the nation.' As for tried men, Peel succeeded in winning over two men in the House of Commons of first-class ability —Stanley and Sir James Graham. They had seceded from the whigs soon after the Reform Bill. He had in vain offered them places in his government of 1835; now in 1838 they openly avowed that they had thrown in their lot with his. As for numbers, his party had risen at the two successive elections of 1832 and 1834 from about 150 to about 250. In the first parliament of Queen Victoria's reign (November 1837) Peel's party numbered nearly 320. For half a century no such opposition had been gathered together.

The policy that united this opposition was that of maintaining intact the established constitution of church and state, and found its best expression in the indignant question of Sir Robert: 'Is the British constitution a standing grievance, to be redressed and abolished?' This was enough for an opposition, but not enough to be the policy of a government. Accordingly Peel laboured to infuse into the mind of his party that respect for the opinions and wishes of the nation as a whole which had grown to be the rule of his own mind. It was impossible, of course, to wholly restrain or exorcise bigotry and party spite. Peel sometimes found himself forced 'to keep his party in wind,' as he expressed it. But as a rule he was the master. His action over the question of privilege raised by the case of Stockdale *v.* Hansard brought upon him the wrath of his own side. But it 'appealed straight to the innermost heart of Sir Robert Peel, than whom our constitutional and representative system never had a more loving child or a more devoted champion' (Mr. Gladstone in the *Nineteenth Century*, xxvii. 40). Again, when the lords, led by Lyndhurst, had mutilated the English Municipal Corporations Bill, Peel boldly stood by the government, in the spirit of a patriot, not of a partisan. Mr. Gladstone has recorded that there never was a period when the struggle of parties was 'so intense, so prolonged, and so unremitting.' But he has added that the struggle was sharp because Peel on one side and Russell on the other 'were strong men and earnest men,' and that 'it was perhaps the best time I have ever known' (*ib.* p. 40).

On all sides there were symptoms of the expanding influence of the opposition chief. In 1836 he was elected lord rector of the university of Glasgow, and at a great banquet given in his honour at that town in the following January he expounded the new conservative faith. In 1838 he was entertained by 313 members of the House of Commons at Merchant Taylors' Hall, where he reviewed the power and the patriotic conduct of his party, and, probably for the first time, laid down the duties of a constitutional opposition. In the same year he forced the government to omit from their settlement of the Irish tithe that very principle of appropriation which they had adopted as the main object of their policy in 1835. So puissant had he become that a political opponent declared soon after in the House of Commons that 'the right honourable member for Tamworth governs England.'

In 1839 Lord Melbourne's government resigned on the Jamaica question. Peel was summoned to form a cabinet, and submitted a list which was approved by the queen. But when he proceeded to claim permission to recommend certain changes in the household, by which he meant that some few ladies of the bedchamber closely connected

with the outgoing ministers should be superseded, the queen declined to entertain the proposal, and Lord Melbourne and the whigs resumed office. Peel held that his view was not only constitutional, but also that the whigs had hitherto been so much in favour with the court that some overt act was needed to inform the public that the conservatives enjoyed an equal measure of the royal confidence. The 'bedchamber question' was settled in 1841 by the intervention of Baron Stockmar, who supported the view of Sir Robert Peel, and by the mediation of Prince Albert.

It is important to trace the steps by which Peel at length attained power. At the commencement of 1841 it appeared that the coming financial year, 1841–2, would result in a large deficit. It was proposed to avert this deficit in two ways. Firstly, the timber and sugar duties were to be modified in the direction of free trade. Further, a fixed duty of 8*s*. a quarter on wheat was to be substituted for the existing sliding scale of duties. But the opposition defeated the former proposal by carrying an amendment against the reduction of the sugar duties, on the ground that this step would encourage the production of slave-grown sugar. The government, though the budget was ruined, did not resign; but before their second proposal as to the corn law could be reached, Peel himself moved and carried a vote of want of confidence. The ministers dissolved, and were returned in a minority of upwards of ninety. They met parliament in August, were defeated on an amendment to the address, and at once resigned. Thereupon Peel formed a ministry.

The new government had to face difficulties in all directions. A war with China and an invasion of Afghanistan were in progress. The late administration had drifted into serious antagonism with France, Canada was at open enmity, and the United States were contemplating active hostilities But the domestic affairs of the country were no less critical. There was the open feud between the two houses. Two great organisations, the anti-corn law league and the chartists, were thundering against established laws. Deficits had become as annual as the harvest. There was intense distress among the working classes. Worst of all, the British government was discredited abroad.

The party that now found itself in power under Peel's guidance contained political talents unparalleled for splendour and promise. It could show seven men who had been or were to be prime ministers—Peel himself, Wellington, Ripon, Stanley, Aberdeen, Gladstone and Disraeli. It possessed five future viceroys of India—Ellenborough, Hardinge, Dalhousie, Canning, and Elgin. But all these looked to the leader alone for a policy. His career up to 1841 may be divided into two unequal parts. From 1810 to 1832 it had been an attempt on a great scale to maintain and justify the aristocratic system of government. That attempt, though nominally foiled by the passing of the Reform Bill, had resulted in catholic emancipation, a revised penal code, an excellent police system, and a restored currency. After 1832 he had worked for a new object. Perceiving that the whigs depended for place, and therefore to some extent for policy, on the Irish repealers and on the radicals, and desiring to defeat the aims of the two latter parties, he had organised conservatism. Hitherto that party had confined itself to defending the constitution; henceforth it was to be the instrument of a series of great social reforms.

The cabinet was formed of fifteen members, too large a number in Peel's opinion for the proper despatch of business. But the effectual ruler was the premier himself, assisted by his two especial allies, Sir James Graham as home secretary, and Lord Aberdeen as foreign minister, with Lord Lyndhurst as lord chancellor. Peel held no post beyond that of first lord of the treasury. But in the general direction of finance he superseded Goulburn, the chancellor of the exchequer, and himself introduced the great budgets of 1842 and 1845. Further, the position of foreign affairs was so critical that it was arranged that Peel should fulfil in the House of Commons the duties of an undersecretary in that respect. He had also an intimate acquaintance with the business of the home office and with Irish policy. Thus nothing of importance escaped him; it was, in Mr. Gladstone's phrase, 'a perfectly organised administration.'

In the house he at once assumed a supreme position. His main principle of conduct, constantly avowed both in and out of office, was that on entering into power he ceased to represent a party because he represented a people. Thus in 1829, for example, he said: 'As minister of the crown I reserve to myself, distinctly and unequivocally, the right of adapting my conduct to the exigency of the moment, and to the wants of the country.' He held that a statesman is bound to study the new sources of information open to him as minister, and is not less bound to modify previous opinions if circumstances should warrant or demand it. Accordingly, during the brief autumn session of 1841 he declined to declare his policy until he had devoted

the coming months to a complete survey of national necessities. During his second ministry (1841–6) Peel's attention was mainly occupied with the four subjects—finance, banking, Ireland, and the corn laws.

On 11 March 1842 he introduced the budget in a speech that 'took the house by storm.' During the five preceding years there had been annual deficits, averaging about a million and a half. The position was the more grave from the fact that these had been due more to deficiency of income than to excessive expenditure. It was therefore necessary to increase the revenue, four-fifths of which came from the customs and the excise. Additional revenue might be obtained from these taxes in one of two ways. The rate of charge might be raised, or it might be lowered. But the former method would make consumption so expensive, and therefore check it to such a degree, that the higher rate might produce a lesser revenue. If, on the other hand, the tariff were lowered, increased consumption would no doubt eventually make good the loss immediately resulting. But that recovery would be a matter of several years. In a great passage Peel addressed 'an earnest appeal to the possessors of property, for the purpose of repairing this mighty evil.' He proposed an income-tax for three years at sevenpence in the pound. This resource would not only make good the balance of revenue and expenditure, but it would also leave a surplus. This surplus was to be devoted to 'great commercial reforms,' and, above all, to the reduction of 'the cost of living.' In other words, the burden of indirect taxation was to be lightened. At this announcement the funds at once rose from 89 to 93. The prime minister in his closing words had appealed, not in vain, to the patriotism of the House of Commons, and his scheme was passed into law. The budget of 1845, opened on 14 Feb., was scarcely less momentous than that of 1842. In 1842 duties had been reduced on 769 articles, on the principle that the more nearly an article of import approached to the character of a raw material, the less should be the duty imposed. By 1845 it was found that these reductions in the rate of levy had almost been made good by the increase of consumption bringing more articles into charge. Peel, however, decided not to remit but to renew the income-tax for three more years, and to employ the considerable surplus thus provided 'for the purpose of enabling us to make this great experiment of reducing other taxes.' In one sense Peel had been long a free-trader. In the debates that preceded the downfall of Melbourne's ministry in 1841 he had said: 'If by the principles of free trade you simply mean the progressive and well-considered relaxation of restrictions upon commerce, I can say with truth that there was no man in this house from whom Mr. Huskisson derived a more cordial and invariable support than he derived from me' (*Speeches*, iii. 754). He held, however, that special circumstances prevented the application of this system to the sugar duties or to the corn duties. Accordingly, no less than 522 duties were now totally repealed, with the avowed object of giving 'a new scope to commercial enterprise, and occasioning an increased demand for labour.' Including 1846, the total number of duties reduced during the five years was 1,035, while 605 duties were totally repealed. When he left office in 1846 he had remitted taxation at the rate on balance of two and a half millions a year, yet had secured a series of surpluses; he had improved the credit of the country so much that the funds had risen from 89 to nearly 100; he had ensured for our trade the first position in the world, by enabling it to procure with unfettered ease the raw materials of commerce; and, finally, he had gone far towards accomplishing his great object of making this country a cheap place in which to live. His friend Guizot some years before had remarked his constant preoccupation with the condition of the working classes, and, indeed, it is not too much to say that Peel's finance was in one of its aspects a profound and far-seeing policy for the improvement of their lot.

But the measure of which Peel himself was most proud was his reorganisation of the banking system of the country, and particularly of the Bank of England. The speech in which he expounded his policy, on 6 May 1844, is a masterly survey of 'the great principles which govern, or ought to govern, the measure of value, and the medium of exchange,' opening with the question—What is the signification of that word, 'a pound'? Turning to the practical side of the question, he asked how far a state should enforce proper principles upon banks. The reply he gave was, 'we think that the privilege of issue is one which may be fairly and justly controlled by the state, and that the banking business, as distinguished from issue, is a matter in respect to which there cannot be too unlimited and unrestricted a competition' (*ib.* iv. 361). Viewed more in detail, Peel's banking policy may be reduced to the following propositions: (1)

The Bank of England was constituted a 'controlling and central body' in the matter of the issue of bank notes; (2) it was divided into two branches, an issue and a banking department, the latter branch being wholly free of government interference, except only that it was obliged to publish its accounts; (3) the issue department was allowed to utter notes, such notes to be secured as follows: 'The fixed amount of securities on which I propose that the bank of England should issue notes is 14,000,000*l.*, the whole of the remainder of the circulation to be issued exclusively on the foundation of bullion' (*ib.* p. 360).

As for Ireland, Peel always considered it the great difficulty of his life, and a cartoon of 'Punch' represented him as the modern Sisyphus rolling uphill a huge stone, the head of O'Connell, while the whigs look on smiling at his discomfiture. He was a strong supporter of the union, and on 25 April 1834 had given a final pronouncement on that subject in a speech the peroration of which is among his best. Now O'Connell resolved to measure himself once more against his old rival, and announced that 1843 was to be the repeal year. Agitation and crime grew side by side, and in 1843 the government carried an arms act. Still O'Connell defied them, and a great meeting was summoned to be held in the autumn at Clontarf. It was proclaimed and prohibited; O'Connell was arrested and imprisoned for conspiracy. The verdict was, however, set aside in September 1844 by the House of Lords on a technical plea, and he was released. But his influence had been broken, and was not to revive. Peel, however, was not the minister to rest satisfied with so barren a triumph. Hitherto he had not had an opportunity of dealing with Ireland in a comprehensive manner, for it was his maxim that a government should only undertake one great measure at a time. But he now took two important steps as the introduction to a wide scheme of Irish policy. In 1843 he appointed the well-known Devon Commission to inquire into the 'state of the law and practice in respect to the occupation of land in Ireland.' The report, presented in 1845, revealed to the public, for the first time, the real state of Ireland. The second step was to send, in Peel's phrase, 'a message of peace to Ireland.' He adopted in 1845 the measure of increasing the annual grant to Maynooth, a college for the education of the Irish priesthood, from 9,000*l.* to about 26,000*l.*, and of establishing certain queen's colleges on a non-sectarian basis. Again, as in 1829, the minister was assailed by all the bigotry of protestant England. The tory portion of the conservative party, to the number of about one hundred, voted against him; and Disraeli, a member since 1843 of the Young England party, seized his opportunity and, fomented by his exertions, 'the disgust of the Conservatives and their hatred of Peel kept swelling every day' (Greville, ii. 277). On the other hand, Peel haughtily declined to notice these personal attacks. The measure was not of any magnitude in itself. It is remarkable, however, as an indication of Peel's tendency, that, in private conversation at Nuneham a few years later, he recommended as a measure fit to be adopted the endowment of the Roman catholic church in Ireland (Earl Russell, *Recollections*, p. 213). But this by no means exhausted his scheme of policy. In offering to William Gregory the conduct of Irish business in 1846, he used these words: 'It will hereafter be a matter of pride to you to be associated with measures of a wide and generous character, which may entirely change the aspect of Ireland to England' (Gregory, *Autobiography*, p. 129). Unhappily Peel fell in 1846, before he could mature his plans. Too late, he pressed a portion of them on the whig ministry in the debate 30 March 1849. He then stated that at the root of the Irish question were 'the monstrous evils which arise out of the condition of landed property,' and he pressed for a commission with powers for 'facilitating the transfer of property from insolvent to solvent proprietors.' Something, but not much, was done, and twenty years passed before another scheme was carried to its fulfilment by Mr. Gladstone, Peel's arduous disciple.

Lastly, there were the corn laws. The principle of the acts of 1815 and 1822 had been the total prohibition of the importation of foreign corn until the price had risen very high in the home market. But the act of 1828, passed while Peel was a minister, abolished prohibition and substituted a duty varying inversely with the price of corn—in other words, a sliding scale. After the Reform Act the question slowly rose into prominence. But it remained open until the whig government, on the eve of its fall in 1841, had declared for a fixed duty of eight shillings the quarter. On the other hand, Peel declared for the existing law subject to certain necessary amendments, and during the winter of 1841 brought the matter before the cabinet in two memoranda. For his method of business in the cabinet was to prepare and read to his colleagues an exposition of his views on any subject, and subse-

quently to circulate the paper among them. Accordingly in 1842 a measure was carried, altering in two important details the act of 1828. In the first place, the scale was so revised as to tend to secure the price of wheat at fifty-six shillings a quarter, a figure considerably lower than that aimed at by the law of 1828. In the second place, experience had shown that hitherto the sliding scale had actually encouraged the foreign importer to keep back his corn until corn in our market reached famine prices, at which point the law allowed him to import free of duty. Peel now devised a highly complicated plan. The chief point was that there were to be certain resting-places in the downward movement of the scale of duties, and it was hoped that at such resting-places the importer would send his corn into the market instead of waiting for the total abrogation of the duty in consequence of the famine price. The measure was moderate, and yet it encountered fierce opposition in four quarters. In the cabinet there was considerable dissension (*Memoirs*, pt. iii. p. 101), and the Duke of Buckingham resigned. In the party 'nobody expected such a sweeping measure, and there is great consternation among the conservatives. It is clear that he has thrown over the landed interest' (*Memoirs of an ex-Minister*, p. 139). The abolitionists, led by Cobden, were incensed on exactly opposite grounds. But Peel was opposed to total repeal for the twofold reason that protection duly compensated the agriculturists for the heavy burdens on land, and also that it would be wise as far as possible to make ourselves independent of foreign nations in respect of the supply of corn. Finally, he resisted the whig plan of a fixed duty. 'I think the sliding scale preferable to a fixed duty,' he had said in the debates of 1841 (*Speeches*, iii. 794). For it was obviously better that in time of famine the duty should fall to nothing, as it did under a sliding scale, than that it should remain rigid at its original figure. The fixed duty was a tableland ending in a precipice.

At the close of the session of 1845 in August the government was held, in spite of the opposition to the Maynooth grant, to be of immovable strength. Cobden said that neither the Grand Turk nor a Russian despot had more power than Peel, who himself told the Princess Lieven that he had never felt so strong or so sure of his party, and of parliament. Yet even as he spoke the rains of July had fallen that were to 'rain away the corn laws.' In England the harvest had been spoilt; in Ireland the disease of the potato crop had appeared.

The corn law of 1842 stood unaltered. But during the three years 1842–5 Peel's mind had changed, and he no longer believed in protection for agriculture. To the general principles of free trade he had, with certain reservations, avowed himself favourable on taking office. The attitude which he had uniformly maintained since in the House of Commons on the question of protection was that the act of 1842 was an experiment; that he had no present intention of altering it; that if it proved a failure, it should be carefully revised. Attentive to Cobden's reasoning and to the successful free-trade budget of 1842, he was conscious of a growing conviction that the experiment had been a failure. He was accordingly prepared 'to apprise the Conservative party, before the corn law could be discussed in the session of 1846, that my views with regard to the policy of maintaining that law had undergone a change' (*Memoir*, pt. iii. p. 318). Famine intervened, and during August, September, and October, Peel watched and collected information, with feelings of which Wellington said 'I never witnessed in any case such agony.' He found that some three million poor persons in Ireland who had hitherto lived on potatoes would require in 1846 to be supported on corn. But, as the English harvest was bad, corn would have to be freely imported in order to avert starvation. Peel saw that the corn law should be at once suspended, and he resolved never to be a party to its reimposition. On 15 Oct. he wrote: 'The remedy is the removal of all impediments to the import of all kinds of human food—that is, the total and absolute repeal for ever of all duties on all articles of subsistence' (*ib.* p. 121).

From 31 Oct. to 5 Dec. a series of cabinet councils were held, at which Peel endeavoured to impress three things on his colleagues: that the crisis was urgent, that an order in council should at once be issued to suspend the duties on grain, and, that once those duties were suspended, they could never be reimposed. But the cabinet shrank from the vista of policy thus opened before them. No decision was taken. At last on 2 Dec. Peel clenched the question by stating that he himself was willing to introduce a measure 'involving the ultimate repeal of the corn laws' (*ib.* p. 221). Stanley and Buccleuch could not agree to this proposal, and on 9 Dec. Peel resigned. Lord John Russell, who, by a letter dated from Edinburgh on 22 Nov., had declared for total repeal, tried to form a government, but failed owing to a dissension between Lords Grey and Palmerston. On 20 Dec. Peel resumed

office, feeling, in his own words, 'like a man restored to life.' All his former colleagues stood by him, with the exception of Stanley.

Parliament met in January 1846, and the government introduced a protection of life (Ireland) bill in the lords, and a corn bill and customs bill in the commons. Peel's friends were astonished to observe how, in that extreme crisis, the spirits of youth revived within him. Never had he been so unerring in debate, or so splendid in exposition. He knew that his time was short; all but 120 of his followers announced their intention of disowning him, but the flower of his party remained faithful to him, and he was assured of victory. In a series of speeches delivered on 22 and 27 Jan., 9 Feb., 27 March, and 15 May, he expounded the theory and practice of free trade. It was in the first of these that he made the declaration that, as a conservative minister, he had done his best 'to ensure the united action of an ancient monarchy, a proud aristocracy, and a reformed constituency.' It was of the third that Bright said it was the most powerful ever made within living memory. The peroration contains the passage opening with the words, 'This night you will select the motto which is to indicate the commercial policy of England.' It is noticeable that Peel did not recommend free trade on the ground that other nations would imitate us. He considered hostile tariffs 'an argument in its favour' (*Speeches*, iv. p. 601).

On the other hand, the protectionists were ready with personal abuse and skilful obstruction. Thus on one occasion they refused during some five minutes to allow the prime minister to so much as begin his speech (Greville, ii. 380). On another they assailed him 'with shouts of derision and gestures of contempt' (*ib.* p. 392). But the minister was reckless of himself, and continually pointed to the common good and to the verdict of the future. He did not attempt to stem the torrent of Disraeli's abuse; 'every man has a right to determine for himself with whom and on what occasions he will descend into the arena of personal conflict. I will not retaliate upon the hon. gentleman' (*Speeches*, iv. 709). Emboldened by their impunity, Bentinck and Disraeli now drew nearer and accused him of having hounded Canning to death in 1827. Then at last they felt to the full the weight of Peel's hand. He made his defence, and crushed the insidious charge.

Nor did obstruction avail much against 'the greatest member of Parliament that ever lived' (Disraeli, *Bentinck*, p. 231), and on 25 June the corn bill and customs bill passed the lords. But on that same night the whigs and protectionists in the House of Commons who had supported in May the first reading of the Irish bill now, in June, combined to defeat it.

On 29 June Peel announced his resignation, and intimated at the same time that his last outstanding diplomatic difficulty, the Oregon question, had been settled satisfactorily. He declared that the name to be associated with free trade in corn was not his own, but that of Richard Cobden. Finally he said that 'it may be that I shall leave a name sometimes remembered with expressions of goodwill in the abodes of those whose lot it is to labour, and to earn their daily bread by the sweat of their brow, when they shall recruit their strength with abundant and untaxed food, the sweeter because it is no longer leavened by a sense of injustice.'

On the news of his fall from office there was consternation in Europe; long after (12 March 1851), the king of the Belgians wrote to Lord Aberdeen: 'I still think with dismay of your letter by which you informed me of the breaking up of Sir R. Peel's administration; then was the beginning of those awful events which not only nearly upset all the governments of Europe, but even civilised society itself.' For the government of Louis-Philippe was supposed to rest on the sage counsels and the unswerving friendship of Peel. It is said that when, on the night of 24 Feb. 1848, the news of that monarch's fall and flight reached the House of Commons, Hume crossed over to inform Peel, who was seated on the front opposition bench. 'This comes,' said the ex-minister, 'of trying to carry on a government by means of a mere majority of a chamber without regard to the opinion out of doors. It is what those people—and he pointed to the protectionists behind—wished me to do, but I refused.' Four years of life remained to Peel after his retirement. During that period, though surrounded by a small band of Peelites, he organised no party, but constituted himself the guardian of the policy of free trade, and the mainstay of the whig government. He would accept no honours, and declined the Garter.

Yet these were years of profound happiness, for Peel lived in hope of the future. Writing to Stockmar in March 1848, he said: 'The times are in our favour—that is, in favour of the cause of constitutional freedom under the ægis of monarchy' (Stockmar, *Memoirs*, ii. 427); and again: 'A victory of communistic theories over the institutions

of property I consider as altogether impossible' (*ib.*) His advice was not to fight with phantoms, but to hasten and pass on; 'let us suppress every desire for crusades against principles and elements which are only those of anarchy and madness' (*ib.*)

On 28 June 1850 he spoke for the last time in the House of Commons, on the affairs of Greece and the foreign policy of Lord Palmerston. His voice, as usual, was raised for peace and good will among the nations: 'What is this diplomacy? It is a costly engine for maintaining peace. It is a remarkable instrument used by civilised nations for the purpose of preventing war.' Next day, as he was riding up Constitution Hill, his horse grew restive, and he fell, sustaining mortal injuries. He was carried home to his house in Whitehall Gardens. The dying statesman asked to see Sir James Graham and Lord Hardinge; and these tried and true companions attended him. Dr. Tomlinson, the bishop of Gibraltar, performed the services of the church of England. He died on the night of Tuesday, 2 July 1850. He was buried in the church of Drayton-Bassett. The queen wrote that the nation mourned for him as for a father.

In June 1820 Peel married Julia, youngest daughter of General Sir John Floyd, bart. Though in her own phrase 'no politician,' she became in time the closest or the only companion of the statesman in his inmost thoughts. She survived her husband till 27 Oct. 1859. They had two daughters and five sons. The eldest son, Sir Robert Peel, G.C.B., the third baronet, and the third son, Sir William Peel, K.C.B., are separately noticed; the second son, Sir Frederick Peel, K.C.M.G., is chief railway commissioner; the fifth son, Arthur Wellesley, was speaker of the House of Commons from 1884 to 1895, and was created Viscount Peel on his retirement from that office. About the date of his marriage Peel began to form a famous collection of pictures, a large portion of which is now in the National Gallery. It consisted in its final shape of some seventy specimens, each a masterpiece, of the Dutch school of the middle of the seventeenth century, together with a few of the Flemish school. Besides these were nearly sixty pictures of the best English masters, the most notable being portraits of statesmen, such as Canning, or of authors, such as Johnson. The third portion consisted of eighteen original drawings by Rubens and Vandyck, from the collection of Sir Thomas Lawrence. Peel did not spare money, giving three thousand five hundred guineas for the 'Chapeau de Poil' by Rubens, 1,100*l.* for the 'Triumph of Silenus' by the same, 1,270*l.* for the 'Poulterer's Shop' by Dow, and nine hundred and twenty guineas for the 'Music Lesson' by Terburg.

The best portraits of Peel are: (1) by Sir Thomas Lawrence in 1826; (2) Peel in the queen's first council, 1837, by Wilkie; (3) by Linnel in 1838; (4) by Partridge, date unknown. There are miniatures by Ross, Thorburn, and A. E. Chalon, and busts by Noble, Sir John Steell, and Gibson. Many monuments were erected to his memory; among the chief is a statue by Gibson in Westminster Abbey; another stands at the head of Cheapside.

Sir Robert Peel had a tall commanding figure, and a frame so strong as to endure the labours of prime minister at the rate of sixteen hours a day. Deliberation and public care were at the close of his life deeply engraven upon a countenance that in its prime had worn a radiant expression, as may be seen in the portrait by Sir Thomas Lawrence, painted in 1826. His nervous organisation was highly strung, so that he felt physical pain acutely, and was keenly sensitive to the insolence of an opponent. The fire of his spirit was backed by a cool and prompt courage, and a readiness to run all risks in defence of honour. But as a rule his emotions and purposes lay hid under an exterior that was cold even to a proverb, and this was largely due to the guard that he had deliberately put upon himself in early life, when he was cast into the boisterous uncongenial society of Dublin, or was associated with the proud and vehement tories of the older school. Yet in his hours of ease he could charm his companions with the endowment of a vast and ready memory, a fine sense of humour, and a dramatic power in the narration of anecdote. And again the sense of authority or of success would warm him singularly, so that with the accomplishment of each great reform his spirits rose, as though the good of his country were the measure of his private happiness.

But his native place, so to speak, was the House of Commons. It was there that his reserve would change into ease and expansion, since he had in a strong degree the quality of a statesman which sympathises more naturally with the character of great assemblies than with that of private individuals. Hence the references to his own views and feelings which recur in his speeches, and which his enemies affected to ascribe to egoism, are more rightly attributable to an opposite cause—the open terms on which he stood with the House of Commons. Not that there was no trace of the art whereby an

orator invests the dry details of business with the attraction of personal feeling, for no one was a more refined master of persuasion than Sir Robert Peel.

To the reader his speeches may appear encumbered with a weight of matter, and embarrassed by the necessity of exact statement in the presence of inveterate foes. But from the hearer this was concealed by the triumphant march of the argument and the masterly disposition of detail. In expounding a policy he delighted in an exhaustive form of argument, wherein the possible courses of action were in turn reviewed and rejected, until the last remaining appeared to be dictated to his audience by necessity rather than to have been chosen for them by the minister. Nor was he less eminent in reply when he combined promptitude with prudence. If the occasion suited, he could be witty, and with a look or a phrase could effectively convey contempt. But what was most admirable was the temper in which his speeches were cast. From instinct or from experience, or both, he infallibly knew where to take his stand with the House of Commons, and could mingle in the exact proportions which the occasion demanded the spirit of combat with the scope and dignity of a statesman. His finest efforts are those of the latter period of his ministry, when the consciousness of his coming fall gave him freedom and the strength of conviction inspired him with the splendid assurance of victory. Of the orators of that period, it may be said that Plunket was the most brilliant, and Canning the most charming, but that the weightest was Peel.

The motives of his life were simple. Among the chief was the excellence of civil government. In his view that end was to be attained by amending the laws without altering the constitution, so that the same minister who revolutionised the penal code could oppose the reform of parliament. At an age when most men are entering upon a profession he was set to rule Ireland. Thus early placed in the routine of office, he had often to decide later between old pledges and new ideas. But when once the choice was taken —and it was always a masculine and unbiassed reason that eventually chose—no one was more adverse to half measures and halting instalments of policy. He became as bold as before he had been cautious.

But what most impressed those who knew him was his unvarying sense of public duty, which was carried by an iron will into every detail of action, and round the whole circle and sphere of conduct. Thus the colleague who had stood by him in his greatest trials could say, 'I never knew a man in whose truth and justice I had a more lively confidence' (Wellington, 4 July 1850). This sentiment was shared by the people at large. He had first attracted their attention by his policy in regard to catholic emancipation in 1829, and as time went on he won their complete confidence. His repeal of the corn laws, though it alienated the majority of his party, was recognised as a sacrifice made for the public good.

In an age of European revolutions, Peel may alone be said to have had the foresight and the strength to form a conservative party, resting not on force or on corruption, but on administrative capacity and the more stable portion of the public will. As for his more specific achievements, they are the mitigation of the rigour of the penal laws, a sound financial system, a free unrivalled commerce, the security of our persons from civil disorder, and the cheapness of our daily bread. Other political leaders may be credited with a more original eloquence, a greater obedience to the ties of party, or a stricter adherence in age to the political principles which animated their youth. But no other statesman has proved more conclusively that the promotion of the welfare of his countrymen was the absorbing passion of his life.

[By far the most important authorities are: The Collection of the Speeches delivered by Sir Robert Peel in the House of Commons, 1853, in 4 vols.; Memoirs by Peel, published by Earl Stanhope and Lord Cardwell, 1856–7, in 2 vols. and 3 pts. (pt. i. The Roman Catholic Question; pt. ii. The New Government, 1834–5; pt. iii. The Repeal of the Corn Laws, 1845–6); Sir Robert Peel, his Life from his Private Correspondence, published by Viscount Hardinge and A. W. Peel, speaker of the House of Commons, edited by C. S. Parker, 1891, in 1 vol., two more to follow. Of biographies hitherto issued, the chief are: Life and Times of Sir Robert Peel, by W. Cooke Taylor and Charles Mackay, in 4 vols.; The Political Life of Sir Robert Peel, an analytical biography by Thomas Doubleday, 1856, in 2 vols.; Leben und Reden Sir Robert Peel's, by Von Heinrich Kunzel, 1851, in 2 vols.; Sir Robert Peel, Étude d'Histoire Contemporaine, by Guizot, 1856; Life and Character of Sir R. Peel, by Sir Lawrence Peel, 1860; Sir R. Peel, an historical Sketch, by Lord Dalling, 1874; Peel, in the Twelve English Statesmen Series, by J. R. Thursfield, 1891; Sir Robert Peel, in the Prime Ministers of Queen Victoria Series, by Justin McCarthy, 1892; Peel, in the Statesmen Series, by F. C. Montague, 1888; Sir Robert Peel, by G. Barnett Smith, in the English Political Leaders Series, 1881; The late Sir Robert Peel, a critical biography, by G. H. Francis, 1852; A Personal Sketch of Sir R. Peel, by Cap-

tain Martin, 1850. Other works on the subject are: The Opinions of Sir R. Peel expressed in Parliament and in Public, by W. T. Haly, 1850; Speeches by Sir Robert Peel during his Administration, 1834–5, also his address to the electors of Tamworth, and speech at the entertainment at Merchant Taylors' Hall, 11 May 1835; Inaugural Address as Lord Rector of the University of Glasgow, 11 Jan. 1837; The Peel Banquet at Merchant Taylors' Hall, 12 May 1838; Speech of Sir R. Peel at Tamworth, 28 July 1841; Peel and O'Connell, by G. Shaw-Lefevre, 1887; The Prime Ministers of Queen Victoria, article on Sir R. Peel, by G. Barnett Smith, 1886; Biographical Studies, the Character of Sir Robert Peel, by W. Bagehot, 1856; The Commercial Policy of Pitt and Peel, 1847; Sir R. Peel's Essay on Sir R. Walpole, 1833, published in Miscellanies collected and edited by Earl Stanhope, 1863; Encyclopædia Britannica, article on Sir R. Peel, by Goldwin Smith. See also: Greville's Memoirs; Croker Papers; Wellington's Despatches and Correspondence, &c., new ser. vols. vi. vii. viii.; Baron Stockmar's Memoirs, vol. ii.; Walpole's Hist. of England, vols. i.–iv.; Life of Sir James Graham, by McCullagh Torrens, 1863, vol. ii.; Life of Lord G. Bentinck, by B. Disraeli, 1872; Life of Prince Consort, by Sir Theodore Martin, 1875–6, vols. i. ii.; Recollections and Suggestions, by Earl Russell, 1875, especially as to government of 1834–5, and the Maynooth grant in 1845; Life of Richard Cobden, by John Morley, 1881, vol. i.; Finance and Politics, by Sydney Buxton, 1888, vol. i.; Twenty Years of Financial Policy, by Sir S. Northcote, 1862; Cartoons, by H. B.; Cartoons, by Punch; The Administrations of Great Britain, 1783–1830, by Sir G. C. Lewis, 1864; The Runnymede Letters, 1835–6; Lord Beaconsfield's Correspondence with his Sister 1832–1852, 1886; Waagen's Treasures of Art in Great Britain; Mrs. Jameson's Private Galleries of Art; History of Toryism, article on Sir R. Peel, by T. E. Kebbel. The most important magazine articles are: Revue des Deux Mondes, vol. iv. 1874; Deutsche Zeitung, 16 July 1850; Quarterly, vols. lviii. lxx. lxxii. lxxviii. lxxxi. clxxiii.; Westminster, vol. lviii. (or ii. in new ser.); Edinburgh, vols. xlviii. clviii. clxxiv.; Macmillan, vols. xix. xxxi.; Blackwood, vol. cl.; Fraser, vol. xlii.; Nineteenth Century, vols. xi. xv. xviii. xxv. xxvii.] G. V. P.

**PEEL, Sir ROBERT** (1822–1895), third baronet, politician, eldest son of Sir Robert Peel (1788–1850) [q. v.], the statesman, was born in London on 4 May 1822, and went to Harrow School in February 1835. He matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, on 26 May 1841, but did not take a degree. Entering the diplomatic service, he became an attaché to the British legation at Madrid on 18 June 1844. He was promoted to be secretary of legation in Switzerland on 2 May 1846, and was chargé d'affaires there in November 1846. On his father's death, on 2 July 1850, and his own succession to the baronetcy, he resigned his office at Berne. Entering the House of Commons as liberal-conservative member for his father's former constituency, Tamworth, on 19 July 1850, he had every opportunity open to him of taking a distinguished place in public life. He had a fine presence and gaiety of manner, and was popular in social life; while his oratorical gifts—a rich ringing voice, a perfect command of language, rare powers of irony, a capacity for producing unexpected rhetorical effects—ought to have rendered his success in parliament a certainty. But he used his abilities fitfully. The want of moral fibre in his volatile character, an absence of dignity, and an inability to accept a fixed political creed, prevented him from acquiring the confidence of his associates or of the public.

On 24 April 1854 he was shipwrecked off the coast of Genoa in the steamboat Ercolano, and only saved his life by swimming ashore on some portion of the wreck. From 29 March 1854 to 1859 he served as a captain in the Staffordshire yeomanry. In March 1855 Lord Palmerston, who had been foreign minister while Peel was in the diplomatic service, appointed him a junior lord of the admiralty. Henceforth he was regarded as a liberal, and his persistent advocacy of the liberation of Italy fully justified this view of his political opinions.

In July 1856 he acted as secretary to Lord Granville's special mission to Russia at the coronation of Alexander I. On 5 Jan. 1857, during a lecture delivered at the opening of the new library at Adderley Park, near Birmingham, he spoke discourteously of the Russian court and the court officials. The lecture was severely commented on by the Russian and French press, was the subject of a parliamentary debate, and caused great annoyance to the English court.

Nevertheless, on Palmerston's return to power, he, on 26 July 1861, made Peel chief secretary to the lord lieutenant of Ireland and a privy councillor. In this position his careless good humour pleased the Irish and the prime minister, and he almost thought he had solved the Irish question when he made excursions incognito through the country on a jaunting-car and interviewed the peasants. His speeches were very optimistic; but, before his connection with the castle ended, fenianism came to a head. Irish debates became more embittered, and his replies and speeches in parliament lacked discretion and were not calculated to promote peace. In February 1862 he received a

challenge from the O'Donoghue, but the matter was brought before the commons on 25 Feb. and was adjusted. Although he took a warm interest in some Irish questions, especially higher education, which he had aided by a handsome contribution to the Queen's Colleges founded by his father, his career in Ireland was a failure. When the liberal government was reconstituted, after the death of Lord Palmerston, by Lord John Russell, to whom Peel's failings were peculiarly obnoxious, he was succeeded in the Irish secretaryship by Chichester Fortescue, and he did not again hold office. On 5 Jan. 1866 he was created G.C.B.

He continued to sit for Tamworth as a liberal, but was often a severe critic of Mr. Gladstone's policy. In 1871 he gave a remarkable proof of his eloquence by describing to the house the rout, which he had himself witnessed, of the French army of General Bourbaki, and its flight over the Swiss frontier in the depth of winter. In 1874 he for a second time christened himself a liberal-conservative; and when the eastern question, during Lord Beaconsfield's administration, came to the front, he wholly separated himself from the followers of Mr. Gladstone. He did not stand for Tamworth at the general election in 1880, but unsuccessfully contested Gravesend in the conservative interest; and his voice was often heard on conservative platforms, denouncing the action of the liberal administration in Egypt and Ireland. In the 'Times' of 8 May 1880 he published a letter, in which he recounted the offers from various governments of honours and offices which he had refused. On 21 March 1884 he was returned as a conservative member for Huntingdon. When that borough was disfranchised, he was, in November 1885, returned for Blackburn.

On the critical division on the second reading of the Home Rule Bill, on 7 June 1886, he abstained from voting. At the general election in the following July he contested the Inverness burghs, but was not successful. Subsequently, with characteristic impetuosity, he threw himself into the home rule agitation as a supporter of the Irish demands, and at a by-election in 1889 came forward as a candidate for Brighton in the home rule interest. He was hopelessly defeated, and his political career came to a disappointing close.

From about 1856 he was extensively engaged in racing under the name of Mr. F. Robinson; and later on had an establishment at Bonehill, near Tamworth, where he bred horses.

His father's fine collection of seventy-seven pictures and eighteen drawings, including the well-known 'Chapeau de Poil,' by Rubens, he sold to the National Gallery, in March 1871, for 75,000*l.* (*Parliamentary Papers*, 1872, No. 35). In later life his private circumstances were embarrassed, chiefly owing to his reckless extravagance, and he ceased to reside at Drayton Manor, Warwickshire. On 9 May 1895 he was found dead, from hæmorrhage on the brain, in his bedroom at 12 Stratton Street, London. He was buried at Drayton-Bassett parish church on 16 May.

By his wife, Lady Emily Hay, seventh daughter of George, eighth marquis of Tweeddale, whom he married on 13 Jan. 1856, he left Robert, born in 1867, who succeeded to the baronetcy, and three daughters.

[Hansard's Parliamentary Debates, 14 March 1851, pp. 1375–84 et seq.; St. Stephen's Review, 9 May 1891, pp. 13–14, with portrait; Sporting Times, 1 May 1875, pp. 297, 300, with portrait; Illustr. London News, 29 March 1851, p. 254 (with portrait), 26 Jan. 1856, 18 May 1895 p. 606 (with portrait); Times, 10,13 May 1895.]

G. C. B.

PEEL, Sir WILLIAM (1824–1858), captain in the navy, third son of Sir Robert Peel (1788–1850) [q. v.], the statesman, was born on 2 Nov. 1824. He entered the navy in April 1838 on board the Princess Charlotte, carrying the flag of Sir Robert Stopford [q. v.] as commander-in-chief in the Mediterranean; and in her was present at the several operations on the coast of Syria in 1840. He was afterwards in the Monarch with Captain Chambers, and in the Cambrian in China with Captain Henry Ducie Chads [q. v.], returning to England in the Belleisle troopship, with Captain John Kingcome, in September 1843. In November he joined the Excellent gunnery-ship at Portsmouth, and in May 1844 passed his examination with 'a brilliance that called forth a public eulogium from Sir Thomas Hastings [q. v.], and a very flattering notice from Sir Charles Napier in the House of Commons' (O'Byrne; Hansard, 16 May). On 13 May Peel was promoted to be lieutenant of the Winchester, flagship of Rear-admiral Josceline Percy [q. v.] at the Cape of Good Hope. It does not appear that he joined the Winchester, being appointed in June to the Cormorant in the Pacific. From her he was moved to the Thalia, and afterwards to the America, from which he was sent with despatches overland from San Blas to Vera Cruz, and thence to England. In February 1846 he was appointed to the Devastation at Woolwich; in May to the Constance at Plymouth; and on 27 June 1846 he was promoted to the rank of commander. In 1847–

1848 he commanded the Daring on the North American and West Indies station, and on 10 Jan. 1849 was promoted to be captain.

As he was likely to be on half-pay for some time he resolved to explore the interior of Africa, with the hope of doing something to ameliorate the condition of the negro. By way of preparation he devoted himself for some months to the study of Arabic, under the tuition of Joseph Churi, a Maronite educated at Rome, and in September 1850 proposed to Churi to make a short tour to Egypt, Mount Sinai, Jerusalem, Nazareth, and Syria. They left England on 20 Oct., and were back by 20 Feb. 1851. On 20 Aug. following they left on the longer and more serious journey. They went up the Nile, across the desert to Khartoum, and on to El Obeid, where both the travellers had a severe attack of fever and ague. Peel returned to England early in January. He shortly afterwards published an account of the journey, under the title of 'A Ride through the Nubian Desert' (8vo, 1852).

In October 1853 Peel commissioned the Diamond frigate, attached to the fleet in the Mediterranean, and afterwards in the Black Sea. When the naval brigade was landed for the siege of Sebastopol, under the command of Captain Stephen Lushington (1803–1877) [q. v.], Peel was landed with it. In the operations that followed Peel repeatedly distinguished himself by his bravery. On 18 Oct. 1854 he threw a live shell, the fuse still burning, over the parapet of his battery. On 5 Nov., in the battle of Inkerman, he joined the officers of the grenadier guards, and assisted in defending the colours of the regiment. On 18 June 1855 he led the ladder party at the assault on the Redan, himself carrying the first ladder, until severely wounded. For these services he was nominated a C.B. on 5 July, and on the institution of the Victoria Cross he was one of the first to whom it was awarded.

On 13 Sept. 1856 he commissioned the Shannon, a powerful 50-gun steam-frigate, for service in China. She did not sail till the following March. At Singapore she was met by the news of the sepoy mutiny, and, taking Lord Elgin up to Hong Kong, where she arrived on 2 July, sailed again for Calcutta, with Elgin on board, on the 16th. She took also a detachment of marines and soldiers. At Calcutta Peel formed a naval brigade. On 14 Aug. he left the ship with 450 men and ten 8-inch guns. At Allahabad, on 20 Oct., he was reinforced by a party of 120 men; and from that time was present in all the principal operations of the army. The coolness of his bravery was everywhere remarkable, and his formidable battery rendered most efficient service. The huge guns were, under his orders, manœuvred and worked as though they had been light field-pieces. He was nominated a K.C.B. on 21 Jan. 1858. In the second relief of Lucknow on 9 March 1858 he was severely wounded in the thigh by a musket-bullet, which was cut out from the opposite side of the leg. Still very weak, he reached Cawnpore on his way to England, and there, on 20 April, he was attacked by confluent small-pox, of which he died on the 27th.

In announcing his death, the 'Gazette,' published at Allahabad on the 30th, said: 'Sir William Peel's services in the field during the last seven months are well known in India and in England; but it is not so well known how great the value of his presence and example has been wherever during this eventful period his duty has led him.' 'He was successful,' wrote Colonel Malleson, 'because he was really great: and, dying early, he left a reputation without spot, the best inheritance he could bequeath to his countrymen.' His portrait, by John Lucas [q. v.], is in the Painted Hall at Greenwich. A white marble statue to his memory is in the Eden Gardens at Calcutta.

[Gent. Mag. 1858, ii. 86; Times, 16 July 1858; Navy Lists; Churi's Sea Nile, the Desert, and Nigritia; Kinglake's Crimean War; O'Byrne's Victoria Cross; Verney's Shannon Brigade in India; Kaye and Malleson's Hist. of the Mutiny.]

J. K. L.

PEELE, GEORGE (1558?–1597?), dramatist, born about 1558, belonged to a family supposed to have been of Devonshire origin. His father, James Peele, was a citizen and salter of London, and for many years held the office of clerk of Christ's Hospital (cf. *State Papers*, Dom. Eliz. Addenda, xxiii. 28). At the same time he taught and wrote on book-keeping, and it is claimed for him that he was the first to introduce the Italian system into this country. But it is improbable that he had a knowledge of Italian. His earliest publication was 'The maner and fourme how to kepe a perfecte reconyng, after the order of the moste worthie and notable accompte, of Debitour and Creditour, set Foorthe in certain tables, with a declaracion thereunto belongyng, verie easie to be learned, and also profitable not onely vnto suche that trade in the facte of Marchaundise, but also vnto any other estate, that will learne the same,' London, 1553, dedicated to Sir William Denzell, knt., treasurer of the queen's majesty's wards, and governor of the company of Merchant Adventurers. Sixteen years later Peele repub-

lished the work, enlarged fourfold, as 'The Pathewaye to perfectnes in th' accomptes of Debitour and Creditour: in manner of a Dialogue, very pleasaunte and proffitable for Marchauntes and all other that minde to frequente the same: once agayne set forth and very much enlarged,' London, 16 Aug. 1569. Both editions are in the British Museum.

George was a 'free scholar' at Christ's Hospital at all events from 1565 to 1570 (Bullen, pp. xiii–xiv). In March 1571 he entered at Broadgates Hall, now Pembroke College, Oxford; but from 1574 to 1579 he was a member of Christ Church, whence he graduated B.A. 1577, and M.A. 1579. Wood states that at the university Peele was esteemed a noted poet, and it is supposed that while at Oxford he wrote his 'Tale of Troy,' which he described in the first impression of 1589 as 'an old poem of mine own.' During his residence in the university he also translated one of the Euripidean 'Iphigenias.' The performance of this tragedy was celebrated in two Latin poems by Dr. William Gager [q. v.] of Christ Church; and in one of these the writer alludes to the social gaieties, together with the academical successes, of Peele's Oxford career.

The gaieties Peele appears to have continued after leaving Oxford for London; for on 19 Sept. 1579 the governors of Christ's Hospital, who had contributed 5*l.* to his B.A. fees, bound over his father to 'discharge his house' before Michaelmas 'of his son George Peele, and all other his household' (including apparently a younger son James) 'which have been chargeable to him' (court-book entries, ap. Bullen, p. xv).

Turned out of the precincts of the hospital, Peele seems to have embarked on a career of work and dissipation. He returned to Oxford in June 1583 to aid in the production of Gager's comedy 'Rivales' and tragedy 'Dido.' He was then married, and had acquired some land in his wife's right, but had not otherwise attained respectability. His earliest known play, 'The Arraignment of Paris,' was, as Mr. Fleay shows, acted before 1584, and, in all probability, early in 1581. His first pageant bears date 1585.

There seems sufficient proof that he was a successful player as well as a playwright. Fleay (*English Drama*, ii. 154) concludes that Peele left the lord admiral's company of players (Henslowe) and joined the queen's men in 1589 (the document representing him as in that year a sharer in the Blackfriars Theatre is discredited). In the 'Jests' (v. infra) he is said to have announced a theatrical performance at Bristol; but he may not have meant to take part in it himself. In a supplementary 'Jest' he and John Singer [q. v.], a well-known actor, are said to have 'ofttimes' played at Cambridge; but this anecdote dates from the time of Charles I. He doubtless added to his income by addressing for payment literary tributes to private patrons. Verses of his in praise of Thomas Watson appeared in 1582 with that poet's 'Ekatompathia' (Bullen, ii. 359). The Earl of Northumberland, the 'Mæcenas' of the 'Honour of the Garter,' seems to have presented him with a fee of 3*l.*

Peele's wanton mode of life involved him in endless anxieties. He may indeed be held innocent of part, or possibly of the whole, of the discreditable escapades detailed in the 'Merry conceited Jests of George Peele, sometime a Student in Oxford,' which was entered in the 'Stationers' Registers' in 1605, and of which the earliest known edition appeared in 1607, nine years or more after his death. The only extant copy is in the library of Mr. W. Christie-Miller of Britwell Court, Buckinghamshire. Later editions were issued about 1620, and in 1627, 1657, and 1671. Like other publications of the sort, this is largely a *réchauffé* of earlier collections of facetiæ (the edition of 1627 is reprinted by Dyce, and by Mr. Bullen, vol. ii.) But suspiciously personal touches occur occasionally. He states that he resided on the Bankside, and describes his voice as 'more woman than man;' and mention is made of his wife and of a ten-year-old daughter. One of 'Peele's Jests' was dramatised in the comedy of the 'Puritan, or the Widow of Watling Street,' 1607, ludicrously misattributed to Shakespeare; the hero, George Pyeboard, is supposed to be Peele ('peel' = a baker's board for shoving pies in and out of the oven). Collier and Fleay conjecture that Peele was also portrayed as the 'humorous George' of the prologue to 'Wily Beguiled' (first known to have been printed in 1606, but probably of much earlier date in its original version).

Robert Greene appealed at the close of his 'Groatsworth of Wit' to Peele as one driven, like the writer himself, 'to extreme shifts' to avoid a life of vice. In Dekker's tract, 'A Knight's Conjuring,' 1607, he is represented as a boon companion of Marlowe and Greene. Peele paid a beautiful tribute to the dead Marlowe in the 'Honour of the Garter' (ll. 60–3); and Nash eulogised Peele as 'the chief supporter of pleasance now living, the Atlas of poetry, and primus verborum artifex' ('Address' prefixed to Greene's *Menaphon*, 1587). Peele took no prominent part in the many controversies in which his associates were engaged; although in the 'Old Wives'

Tale' he cites in ridicule a hexameter from the poem of Gabriel Harvey [q. v.], which was satirised by Nash in the course of his fierce contest with Harvey [see NASH, THOMAS, 1567–1601].

In May 1591, when Queen Elizabeth visited Lord Burghley's seat of Theobalds, Peele was employed to compose certain speeches addressed to the queen which deftly excused the absence of the master of the house. In January 1596 he sent his 'Tale of Troy' to the great lord treasurer through a 'simple messenger,' 'his eldest daughter, necessity's servant.' His lyrics were popular in literary circles, and were included in the chief anthologies of the day ('The Phœnix Nest,' 1593; 'England's Helicon' and 'England's Parnassus,' 1600; 'Belvidera, or the Garden of the Muses,' 1610). The date of his death is unknown. In 1598 Francis Meres, in his 'Palladis Tamia, Wit's Treasury,' mentions him as having died of a loathsome disease. Samuel Rowlands, in his lines on 'The Letting of Humour's Blood in the Head-vein,' 1600, on the virtues of charnico, seems to allude to his death, as well as to the deaths of Greene and Marlowe (see WARTON, *Hist. of English Poetry*, ed. W. C. Hazlitt, 1871, iv. 418. A forged letter, dated 1600, from Peele to Marlowe, cited by Dyce, p. 327 *n.*, was first printed in BERKENHOUT, *Biogr. Lit.* p. 404).

Peele's works fall under the three divisions of (i) plays, (ii) pageants, and (iii) 'gratulatory' and miscellaneous verse.

I. PLAYS.—1. 'The Arraignment of Paris' was presented to the queen by the chapel children, probably in 1581 (see FLEAY, *English Drama*, i. 152), and certainly before 1584, when it was anonymously printed. Copies are in the British Museum and in the Capell collection at Trinity College, Cambridge. Peele's authorship is attested by Nash. The idea of this piece—the trial by Diana, with whom Queen Elizabeth is easily identified, of Paris for error of judgment in giving the apple to Venus—was apparently original, though possibly the nucleus may be traceable to Gascoigne (see F. E. Schelling in *Modern Language Notes*, Baltimore, April 1893). Malone conjectures that Spenser is the Colin of this play, and that Spenser retorted upon Peele under the name of Palin in 'Colin Clout's Come Home Again' (ll. 392–3). Peele's diction is fearlessly affected, and the versification various and versatile. There is little blank verse, as compared with the rhymed lines. Some of the lyrics became popular, and one of them ('Fair and Fair,' &c.) is singled out for eulogy by Charles Lamb. 2. 'The Famous Chronicle of King Edward I, surnamed Edward Longshanks,' &c., &c., printed 1593, may have been acted two or three years earlier (the arguments of FLEAY, *English Drama*, ii. 157, are not strong). This production—a chronicle history—marks a phase of the transition from the historical morality of the type of Bale's 'Kynge Johan' to the national historical tragedy of Shakespeare and Marlowe. Peele's play, although in its spirited opening and elsewhere it is dramatically effective and displays its author's classical and Italian reading, possesses little poetical merit. Its farcical scenes are calculated to make the judicious grieve; and its more serious portion, mostly adapted from Holinshed, recklessly embodies lying scandal about the good Queen Eleanor, 'assimilated' by Peele from a ballad (for which see DYCE, pp. 373–4) launched in the later Tudor spirit against a princess of Castilian birth. Copies of the first edition are in the British Museum, Bodleian Library, and the collection of Mr. Locker-Lampson at Rowfant. The second edition was issued in 1599, and is to be found in the British Museum, and in the libraries of Mr. Huth and Mr. Locker-Lampson. 3. 'The Battle of Alcazar,' printed in 1594, was in all probability acted before the spring of 1589 (cf. PEELE, *Farewell*, &c.) It was assigned to Peele in 'England's Parnassus' (1600), and the internal evidence is conclusive (see DYCE and LÆMMERHIRT). 'The Battle of Alcazar' is the play mentioned by Henslowe as 'Muly Mulocco,' the name of one of its characters, on 29 Feb. 1592, and later (*Diary*, ed. Collier, p. 21, et al.) The conduct of its action is vigorous, and it has flights of exuberantly virile rhetoric which fit it for comparison with Marlowe's 'Tamberlaine.' But the play is more clumsily constructed. A presenter introduces each act, and there is a series of dumb-shows (cf. Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's note, ap. BULLEN, i. 211 sqq.) Copies of this, the least rare of Peele's dramatic works, are in the British Museum, and at Britwell, Rowfant, and elsewhere. 4. 'The Old Wives' Tale,' printed in 1595, is held by Fleay (*English Drama*, ii. 154–5) to have been acted five years earlier, by way of a retort to Gabriel Harvey's attack upon Lyly. The latter, dated 5 Nov. 1589, was not published till 1593. The theory appears to rest on the very slender fact that one hexameter is quoted in the play from Harvey's 'Encomium Lauri' in his 'Three Proper and Familiar Letters' (1580). This romantic interlude, or farce, is pervaded, more particularly in its induction, by an irresistible flood of high spirits, which, on the stage as elsewhere, covers a multitude

of nonsense. The plot was indebted to Ariosto, as well as probably directly to Apuleius, and other classical sources. In its turn it conveyed suggestions to Milton (whose acquaintance with Peele's writings probably also included 'Edward I') when transfusing the materials for 'Comus.' The only copies known are in the British Museum and at Bridgwater House. 5. 'The Love of King David and Fair Bethsabe, with the Tragedy of Absalon,' was not printed till 1599. Copies are in the British Museum, at Britwell and Rowfant, and in the Huth collection. The date of its composition remains uncertain, although Fleay (*English Drama*, ii. 153–4) considers it an allegory of the state of affairs which led to the execution of Mary Queen of Scots in 1587. It appears to have been reproduced in 1602 (Henslowe, *Diary*, p. 241; cf. Fleay, u. s.) In construction it is of the chronicle history type. Its original text is the Old Testament, to which Peele is supposed to have resorted in order to disarm the existing prejudices against stage-plays. Possibly he made use of some unknown mystery or early religious play. The diction is generally pleasing, and the verse, if rather monotonous, is fluent, and rises to impressiveness in a few florid passages. The piece lacks dramatic characterisation and effect.

Besides the above, Peele wrote: 6. 'The Hunting of Cupid,' a lost pastoral drama licensed 26 July 1591 (see Arber, *Stationers' Registers*, ii. 278), which, from a manuscript statement by Drummond of Hawthornden, seen by Dyce, appears to have been printed before 1607 (see the fragments chiefly lyrical, put together by Dyce, pp. 603–4).

He has further been credited on inadequate evidence with the authorship of 'Sir Clyomon and Sir Clamydes,' 1599. The external evidence—a manuscript note in a very old hand on the title-page of a copy of this play—is trifling. The list of parallel phrases (rather than parallel passages) in plays certainly by Peele compiled by Læmmerhirt is unconvincing; and, on the whole, Fleay and Bullen (Symonds declines to offer an opinion) may be followed in their refusal to burden Peele's reputation with the authorship. Peele has also been credited with 'The Life and Death of Jack Strawe,' 1593, portions of the 'First and Second Parts of Henry VI,' 'The Troublesome Reign of King John' (printed in 1591), 'The Wisdom of Doctor Doddipoll' (printed in 1600), and 'Alphonsus, Emperor of Germany' (published as Chapman's in 1654). In 'Wily Beguiled,' first known to have been printed in 1606, he may possibly have had a hand.

II. Pageants, &c.—1. 'The Device of the Pageant borne before Woolston Dixie, Mayor [of London], 29 October 1585'; printed in 1585. The only copy known is in the Bodleian Library. This is the first lord mayor's pageant of which a printed text is known to exist (see Fairholt, *Lord Mayors' Pageants*, Percy Society's publ. 1843, pt. i. pp. 24–6). 2. 'Descensus Astrææ,' written for the mayoral solemnity of Sir William Webbe, 29 Oct. 1591. While Astræa is the queen, Superstition appears as a friar, and Ignorance as a monk (*ib.* pp. 27–9). The only copy known is in the Guildhall Library. 3. 'Speeches to Queen Elizabeth at Theobalds,' composed for an entertainment devised for the queen's visit in 1591 to Lord Burghley's country seat. Of the three 'Speeches,' the first was in part printed by Collier in his 'History of English Dramatic Poetry,' 1831 (see new edit. 1879, i. 275–6); the second and third afterwards came into his hands, and were printed by Dyce, and afterwards by Mr. Bullen.

III. Miscellaneous Writings.—1. 'A Farewell, &c., to Sir John Norris and Sir Francis Drake, Knights, and all their brave and resolute Followers,' 1589, in spirited blank verse. The only copies known are in the British Museum and at Britwell. 2. 'The Beginnings, Accidents, and End of the Fall of Troy.' This piece was first published with the 'Farewell' in 1589. An edition, printed apparently from a revised copy, appeared in 1604 as a thumb-book, measuring 1¼ inch by 1 inch, and having two lines only on a page. A copy, believed to be unique, was sold by Messrs. Sotheby & Co. in 1884. The reference in this short and commonplace epical version, in rhymed couplets, of the Trojan story to the episode of Troilus and Cressida may conceivably have suggested to Shakespeare a full dramatic treatment of the theme (1609). 3. 'An Eclogue Gratulatory, entitled: "To the Right Honourable and Renowned Shepherd of Albion's Arcadia, Robert, Earl of Essex, for his Welcome into England from Portugal,"' 1589; a 'pastoral' in rhymed quatrains—as full of archaisms as is the 'Shepherds' Calendar.' The only copy known is now in the Bodleian Library. 4. 'Polyhymnia; describing the immediate Triumph at Tilt before Her Majesty on the 17th of November last past, &c.; with Sir Henry Lea's Resignation of Honour at Tilt to Her Majesty, and received by the Right Hon. the Earl of Cumberland,' 1590, in flowing blank verse. An account of the proceedings celebrated is in Segar's 'Honour, Military and Civil,' 1602. 5. 'The Honour of the Garter, displayed in a Poem Gratulatory, entitled: "To the worthy and

renowned Earl of Northumberland,"' 1593. This, the most elaborate of Peele's non-dramatic productions, was written (in blank verse) to commemorate the installation as knights of the Garter of several noblemen and gentlemen, including Henry Percy, ninth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] The poem introduces the well-known legend as to the foundation of the order. Copies are in the British Museum, Bodleian Library, and Dyce collection, and at Britwell. 6. 'Anglorum Feriæ, England's Holidays, celebrated the 17th of November last,' 1595, was first printed in 1830 from a manuscript now in the British Museum. It celebrates in blank verse the appearance of a noble company at tilt, in honour of the birthday of the queen.

Besides the above, Peele wrote lines to Thomas Watson (1582) and the 'Praise of Chastity' (in 'The Phœnix Nest,' 1593), and has been 'credited' with 'A Merry Ballet of the Hawthorn-tree,' first printed in Ritson's 'Ancient Songs,' 1790, from a manuscript in the Cottonian Library, signed 'G. Peele,' in a much more modern hand than that of the ballad (Dyce). Collected editions of Peele's works were edited by Dyce in 1829-39, and by Mr. A. H. Bullen in 1888.

Peele is one of the most prominent figures among those of Shakespeare's 'predecessors' and earlier contemporaries. In his manipulation of his own language for metrical purposes he was skilful, and now and then wonderfully successful. His blank verse, usually fluent though monotonous, rises here and there to grandeur and force; and scattered through his plays and pastorals are more than one lyric of imperishable charm. His text is so largely corrupt as to make generalisations unsafe, but he seems hardly to have mastered the management of rhyme. In constructive power as a dramatist he was, so far as the plays to be with certainty ascribed to him are concerned, consistently deficient; and he 'exercised far less influence over the development of our drama than either Lyly or Greene, not to mention Marlowe' (Symonds, *Shakspere's Predecessors*, p. 564). Yet his fancy was quick and versatile, and his dramatic writings derived their effectiveness, not only from the varied brilliancy of his imagery, but also from the occasional strength of his feeling, which readily reflected the popular and patriotic sentiment of his age (see *The Battle of Alcazar*, *A Farewell*, &c.) The growth of his powers had been stimulated by a university training, and his works abound in classical allusions; but he was not often markedly felicitous in his employment of them. He had, for better or worse, imbibed something, too, of the spirit of his Italian sources. His method of literary workmanship was assimilative, and he subsequently served at times the purposes of the greatest of literary assimilators, Milton.

[Dyce's Account of George Peele and his Writings, in the Dramatic and Poetical Works of Robert Greene and George Peele (1861, Dyce's first edition of Peele's Works, with Life, was published in 3 vols. in 1829-39); Mr. A. H. Bullen's Works of George Peele, 2 vols. 1888, introduction; Fleay's Biographical Chronicle of the English Drama, 1891, ii. 150-162; Symonds's Shakspere's Predecessors in the English Drama, 1844, pp. 537 seqq.; Collier's History of English Dramatic Poetry, 3 vols. (new edit. 1879); Ward's History of English Dramatic Literature (1875), i. 203-13; Læmmerhirt's George Peele, Untersuchungen über sein Leben und seine Werke (Rostock, 1882).]

A. W. W.

**PEEND or DE LA PEEND, THOMAS** (*fl.* 1565), translator and poet, educated, apparently, at Oxford University, was a London barrister. According to Wood he 'much delighted in poetry and classical learning.' His chief work was 'The Pleasant Fable of Hermaphroditus and Salmacis, by T. Peend, Gent. With a Morall in English Verse. Anno Domini 1565; Mense Decembris. Imprinted by Thomas Colwell,' 8vo. This is dedicated by T. Peend, esq., 'from my chamber over agaynst Sergeants Inne in Chancery Lane, 1564,' to Nicholas St. Leger. Peend says he had translated and in part printed much more of the original, but he kept it back lest 'I shall seeme to abuse the writer or reader of those four bookes of Metamorphosis whych be so learnedly translated all redye.' Golding's translation had just appeared. Peend's extract is from Book IV. of the 'Metamorphoses,' and is in fourteen-syllable verse. It is followed by an original 'morall to the fable,' and 'a pleasaunt question' in irregular verse, written with force and ease. This is signed 'T. D. Peend.' A short account in prose of the persons alluded to in the poems concludes the volume. Peend also issued a translation from the Spanish, entitled 'The moste notable Historie of John Lord Mandozze,' 1565, 12mo. The dedication is addressed from the Middle Temple to a kinsman, Sir Thomas Kemp, knight. It is followed by a poetical address to the reader and an argument. The poem is in alternate fourteen and sixteen syllable lines. In the margin attention is called to copious passages 'added by the Translatour.' There are some verses by Peend prefixed to John Studley's 'Agamemnon' (1566).

[Hunter's Chorus Vatum (Add. MS. 24491), p. 388; British Bibliographer, ii. 344, 373, 523, 587; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, i. 430; Warton's History of English Poetry (1871), iv. 297; Arber's Stationers' Register, i. 301; Tanner's Bibliotheca, p. 587.] R. B.

**PEER, WILLIAM** (*d.* 1713), actor, owes the survival of his name to a humorous mention of his career by Steele in the 'Guardian,' No. 82. He is declared to have been an actor at the Restoration, and to have taken 'his theatrical degree under Betterton, Kynaston, and Harris.' No mention of him is traceable in early theatrical records, and Genest only quotes what is said by Steele. He is said to have 'distinguished himself particularly in two characters, which no man ever could touch but himself.' One was the speaker of the prologue to the play introduced into 'Hamlet.' This preface he spoke 'with such an air as represented that he was an actor, and with such an inferior manner as only acting an actor, as made the others on the stage appear real great persons, and not representatives. This was a nicety in acting that none but the most subtle player could so much as conceive.' His delivery of the three lines assigned him won universal applause. His second part was the Apothecary in the 'Caius Marius' of Otway, an adaptation of 'Romeo and Juliet,' first played at Dorset Garden in 1680. When Marius demanded the poison 'Peer at length consented in the most lamentable tone imaginable, delivered the poison like a man reduced to the drinking of it himself, and said:

> My poverty, but not my will consents;
> Take this and drink it off, the work is done.'

Steele continues: 'It was an odd excellence, and a very particular circumstance this of Peer's, that his whole action of life depended upon speaking five lines better than any man else in the world.' No other parts were apparently assigned him, and the management of the Theatre Royal (Drury Lane) gave him the post of property man. The easy circumstances thus induced made him grow fat and so disqualify himself for his theatrical parts. This, it is hinted, shortened his life, which closed near his seventieth year, presumably about June 1713. Steele then gives a list of the properties Peer left behind him, including items such as 8*d.* for 'pomatum and vermilion to grease the face of the stuttering cook, 3*d.* for blood in Macbeth, 8*d.* for raisins and almonds for a witch's banquet,' &c.

[Chalmers's British Essayists, 1802, xvii. 149–150; Genest's Account of the English Stage, ii. 517–19.] J. K.

**PEERIS, WILLIAM** (*fl.* 1520), family chronicler, was a clerk in holy orders and secretary to Henry Algernon Percy, fifth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] He wrote in English verse a 'Metrical Chronicle' of the Percys from the Conquest downwards. It commences 'here beginneth the Prologue of this little treaties followinge w$^{ch}$ is y$^{e}$ dis-cent of the Lord Percies made . . . by me W$^{m}$ Peeris, clerke and priest, secretary to the R$^{t}$ noble Earl Harry the V$^{th}$ Earl of Northumberland.' According to De Fonblanque, who quotes copiously from it, it is full of inaccuracies; the original manuscript is now among the Royal MSS. in the British Museum Library (18 D ii) (Casley, *Cat.* p. 283), but a copy is also extant among the Dodsworth MSS. in the Bodleian (Bernard, *Cat. Cod.* No. 4192), which the Rev. John Besley, vicar of Long Benton, printed at Newcastle in 1845. Ritson also attributes to Peeris some proverbs in verse which adorned the walls of three apartments in Wressell Castle, Yorkshire, and have been printed in the 'Antiquarian Repertory,' ed. 1808, iv. 332, &c. A manuscript copy is among the Royal MSS. in the British Museum.

[Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 587; Ritson's Bibl. Poet. pp. 296–7; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 4–6, &c.; printed copy of Peeris's Work in Brit. Mus. Libr. 1845.] A. F. P.

**PEERS, RICHARD** (1645–1690), translator and author, the son of Richard Peers of Lisburn, co. Antrim, was born there in 1645. His father, a poor tanner, apprenticed him to his own trade. Peers, however, ran away to Bristol, whence an uncle sent him to a school in Carmarthenshire. It is stated on doubtful authority that the master was Jeremy Taylor, and that by Taylor's intercession Peers became a scholar at Westminster under Busby. He matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, on 22 July 1664, aged 19, was elected student in 1665, and graduated B.A. in 1668, M.A. in 1671. As an undergraduate he eked out his scanty living by 'doing the exercises of idle scholars.' In 1670 the delegates of the university press bought of Wood for 100*l.* his completed 'History and Antiquities,' with a view to publishing a Latin translation. The work was entrusted to Dr. Fell of Christ Church, who employed Peers to execute it. Wood says that Peers was no Latin scholar when he took up the translation, and frequent alterations had at first to be made in his rendering. In a year, however, he translated to the end of 1298, and 'at length, by his great diligence and observation overcoming the difficulties, became a

compleat master of the Latin tongue, and what he did was excellent.' Peers and Fell, however, took many liberties with the original, much to Wood's annoyance, and Wood consequently always treated Peers with contempt. He calls him 'a rogue' and 'a sullen, dogged, clownish, and perverse fellow;' speaks of his 'low, drunken company,' and accuses him of forsaking his studies, marrying a wife, and enjoying the goods of the world. The Latin version of the 'History and Antiquities' was published in 1674, Oxford, folio.

On 18 Sept. 1675 Peers was elected esquire bedell of arts as a reward for his translation; 'I was absent,' writes Wood, 'else he should not have carried it.' Later on he became esquire bedell of physic, and on 6 July 1688 was licensed to practise medicine; he is said to have qualified himself for medicine, fearing James II would expel him from his studentship of Christ Church and leave him destitute. He was not present in his capacity of senior bedell at the reception of the king in September 1687, because, says Wood, 'being fat and wieldy, he could not ride or walk as others could.' He died at his residence at Holywell, near Oxford, on Monday, 11 Aug. 1690, about 8 or 9 A.M., and was buried in St. Aldate's Church, in the middle aisle of which is a flat stone to his memory.

Besides his translation of Wood's 'History and Antiquities,' Peers compiled the first catalogue of Oxford graduates, entitled 'A Catalogue of Graduats in Divinity, Law, and Physick; and of all Masters of Arts and Doctors of Music who have regularly proceeded or been created in the University of Oxford; between the 10th of October 1659 and the 14th of July 1688,' Oxford, 1689, 8vo; many subsequent editions, with continuations, have been published. Peers also wrote 'Four small copies of Verses on Sundry Occasions,' Oxford, 1667, 4to, and 'The Description of the Seventeen Provinces of the Low Countries or Netherlands,' Oxford, 1682, fol., which is the fourth volume of the 'English Atlas' published by Moses Pitt [q. v.] The latter is a substantial compilation, containing 244 large double-column folio pages. He translated into English the life of Alcibiades in 'Lives of Illustrious Men,' from the Latin of Cornelius Nepos, Oxford, 1684, 8vo, and contributed a set of verses to the Oxford collection on the death of the Duke of Albemarle. Wood also attributes to him 'A Poem in Vindication of the late Public Proceedings, by Way of a Dialogue between a High Tory and a Trimmer,' folio, no date.

By his wife, who was an Oxford lady, Peers had a son, RICHARD PEERS (1685–1739), who was born in the parish of All Saint's, Oxford, on 15 July 1685, matriculated from Trinity College, Oxford, on 3 Dec. 1701, was elected scholar in 1702, graduated B.A. 1705 and M.A. 1708. From 1710 to 1711 he was vicar of Hartley-Wintney, Hampshire, and of Faringdon, Berkshire, from 1711 till his death there on 20 July 1739. He was author of: 1. 'The Character of an Honest Dissenter,' 3rd edit. Oxford, 1717, 8vo; another edition was published in 1718, and it called forth two letters from an anonymous clergyman, published in 1716 and 1717, and a reply by Thomas Moore, entitled 'The Honesty of Protestant Dissenters Vindicated,' 1718, 8vo. 2. 'The Great Tendency . . .' London, 1731, 8vo. 3. 'A Companion for the Aged,' of which the fourteenth edition was published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge in 1823.

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Cat. Bodleian Libr.; Wood's Athenæ, ed. Bliss, iv. 199, 290–291, Fasti, ii. 301, 308, and Life and Times, ed. Clark, passim; Hearne's Collectanea, ii. 63; Gutch's preface to the Hist. and Antiq. Oxford, 1786; Peshall's Oxford, p. 16; List of Queen's Scholars, p. 159; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Ware's Ireland, ii. 205–6.] A. F. P.

**PEERSON or PIERSON, ANDREW** (*d.* 1594), divine, graduated B.A. from Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, in 1540–1541 or 1542, and M.A. in 1544 or 1545 (cf. COOPER, *Athenæ Cantabr.* ii. 173; MASTERS, *Hist. of C. C. C.* pp. 354–5). Soon after graduating B.A. he was elected fellow of his college; for a time he was bursar, and laid out and planted with fruit trees the fellows' garden (WILLIS, *Architectural History of Cambridge*, i. 252, 261). In 1550–1 he served as proctor, and was also auditor of the Trinity chest. He vacated his fellowship about 1552, and seems to have accepted some cure in Cambridge, from which he was ejected on 3 Oct. 1553 for continuing to administer the communion in the form used under Edward VI. On Parker's election as archbishop he made Peerson his chaplain, almoner, and master of faculties, chose him to preach a sermon at the consecration on 21 Jan. 1559–60 of five bishops, bestowed upon him the livings of Brasted, Wrotham, and Chiddingstone in Kent, and, on the death of John Bale [q. v.] in 1563, secured his election to the eleventh prebendal stall in Canterbury Cathedral; he also recommended him for the provostship of Eton in 1561, but without success. In 1562–3 Peerson sat in convocation as proctor for the clergy of the diocese of Llandaff, subscribed the articles then agreed upon, and voted against the six

articles for abolishing certain rites and ceremonies. Peerson took part in preparing for press the 'Bishops' Bible,' and revised the translation of Leviticus, Numbers, Job, and Proverbs (*Parker Corresp.* p. 355 *n.*) Tanner doubtfully attributes to him Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther, Job, and Proverbs. In 1569 he was one of two commissioners to visit the diocese of Canterbury, and on 4 Jan. 1570–1 had a license for non-residence. In September 1573 he entertained Burghley at his 'fine house,' as Parker called it, at Canterbury; the archbishop named Peerson one of his executors on his death in 1575, and bequeathed him a gilt cup, the gift of Elizabeth. On 30 June 1580 he was presented to the living of Hardres, Kent, but resigned it in 1582; on 1 Sept. 1589 he received the living of Harbledown, Kent. He died early in November 1594, having married at Sheldwich, on 16 April 1582, Sarah Sampson, widow; but he must have had a previous wife, as in his will he mentions his son, Andrew Peerson, and daughter-in-law, Joan, and their children (Hasted, *Kent*, iv. 492).

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. ii. 173; Strype's Works, Index, passim; Parker Corresp. (Parker Soc.), pp. 197 *n.* 335 *n.* 442, 444; Burnet's Hist. Reformation, iii. 423; Masters's Hist. Corpus Christi Coll., ed. Lamb, pp. 328, 334, 354–5; Hasted's Kent, i, 381, 407, ii. 245, iii. 583, 735, iv. 492, 620; Cowper's Canterbury Marriage Licenses, 1st ser. col. 320; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 587; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 60.] A. F. P.

**PEERSON, PIERSON, or PEARSON, MARTIN** (1590?–1651?), musical composer, was born probably about 1590 at March, Cambridgeshire. He graduated Mus. Bac. from Lincoln College, Oxford, in 1613. Fulke Greville, first lord Brooke [q. v.], was his earliest patron. In 1604 he wrote music for the song, 'See, oh see, who here is come a-maying' (*Private Musicke*) in Ben Jonson's 'Penates,' with which the king and queen were entertained on May-day at Highgate. Peerson afterwards became master of the choristers at St. Paul's Cathedral 'when John Tomkins was organist there' (Hawkins), i.e. between 1617 and 1636 (Payne Fisher); but no record of his appointment appears before 1633. In that year the buildings around St. Paul's were condemned to destruction preliminary to the repairing of the cathedral, and Peerson's 'demolished' or threatened house was the subject of several orders and counter-orders. The commissioners finally purchased for 240*l.* (and a certain rent) Partridge's house, which was part of the petticanons' college, and large enough for Peerson and his boys.

Peerson died between 26 Dec. 1650 and 17 Jan 1650–1, and was to be buried in St. Faith's Church, under St. Paul's. He was twice married. Among his legacies he left 100*l.* to the poor of March, for the purchase of freehold land of the yearly value of 4*l.* or 5*l.*, the proceeds to be distributed every Sunday in twopenny loaves, to eight, nine, ten, eleven, or twelve poor persons. He held property in the parishes of St. Giles's-in-the Fields and Walthamstow, Essex.

He published: 1. Three sacred songs, in four and five parts, in Leighton's 'Teares and Lamentations,' 1614. 2. 'Private Musicke, or the First Booke of Ayres and Dialogues, contayning songs of 4, 5, and 6 parts; of severall sortes, and being verse and chorus, is fit for voyces and viols. And for want of Viols they may be performed to either Virginal or Lute, where the proficient can play upon the Ground, or, for a shift, to the Bass Viol alone. All made and composed according to the rules of art.' They were dedicated to 'the right vertuous, beauteous, and accomplished Gentlewomen, Mistris Mary Holder, daughter to the worshipful Cle[ment] Holder, prebend residenciary of the collegiate church of Southwell' (probably sister to the musical canon, William Holder [q. v.], of St. Paul's); 'and Mistris Sara Hart, daughter of the worshipful John Hart of London, esq.,' 1620. A copy of this work, 'perhaps the rarest set of part-songs by an English composer,' is in the Douce collection in the Bodleian Library (Rimbault). 3. 'Moottetts [meaning madrigals], or grave Chamber Musique, contayning songs of 5 parts of severall sortes, some ful, and some verse and chorus; but all fit for voyces and viols, with an organ part; which for want of organs may be performed on Virginals, Base-lute, Bandora, or Irish Harpe. Also a mourning song of 6 parts for the death of Sir Fulke Grevil . . . Lord Brooke . . . composed according to the rules of art,' 1630. The dedication was made to Robert, second lord Brooke. Clifford's 'Divine Anthems' includes the words of Peerson's 'I will magnify Thee' and 'Blow the Trumpet.'

In manuscript are the following: Six fantazias and seven almaines, *a* 6, Brit. Mus. Addit MSS. 17786–92; part-songs, including 'O Arabella' (*ib.* 29372 and 29427); Four pieces in the virginal book, Fitzwilliam Museum, Cambridge; service and mottetts in Peterhouse, Cambridge.

Some lines by Peerson in praise of the book are printed in Ravenscroft's 'Discourse on Music,' 1614.

[Hawkins's History, p. 571; Grove's Dict. of Music, ii. 683; Wood's Fasti, i. 351; will re-

gistered P. C. C., Grey, f. 9; State Papers, Charles I, Dom. vol. ccxxxvi. No. 17; Payne Fisher's Tombs in St. Paul's, p. 79; Prefaces to Peerson's publications.] L. M. M.

**PEETERS**, GERARD (*fl.* 1582–1592), author, was educated at Westminster School, whence he was elected scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1582; he matriculated on 13 Oct. in that year, graduated B.A. in 1586–7, and M.A. in 1590. In 1587 he was elected to a fellowship of Trinity, but vacated it between 1592 and 1595. He has Greek verses in the university collection on the death of Sir Philip Sidney (*Acad. Cantabr. Lachrymæ*, p. 72), and was probably the author of: 1. 'Libellus de Memoria verissimaque bene recordandi scientia. Authore G. P. Cantabrigiense. Huc accessit ejusdem Admonitiuncula ad A. Dis-conum [*sic*] de Artificiosæ Memoriæ, quam publice profitetur, vanitate,' London, 1584, printed by Robert Waldegrave and dedicated to John Verner. 2. 'Antidicsonus cujusdam Cantabrigiensis G. P. Accessit libellus in quo dilucide explicatur impia Dicsoni Artificiosa Memoria,' London (by Henry Midleton for John Harrison), 1584, 12mo. It is dedicated to Thomas Moufet [q. v.] Copies of both works are in the British Museum Library.

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Acad. Cantabr. Lachrymæ, London, 1587, 4to, p. 72; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, p. 1141; Cole's MSS. xlv. 237, 300; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. ii. 178–9; List of Queen's Scholars, p. 57.] A. F. P.

**PEETERS** or **PIETERS**, JOHN (1667–1727), painter, born at Antwerp in 1667, was related to the eminent marine painter Bonaventura Peeters. He studied painting at Antwerp under a history painter called Eeckhout, and in 1685 came to England with a recommendation to Sir Godfrey Kneller [q. v.] Peeters worked with Kneller for several years, being one of Kneller's chief drapery painters until 1712, when he left, and devoted himself chiefly to mending and repairing damaged pictures and drawings. From his success in this line he obtained the nickname of 'Doctor Peeters.' He was also a skilled copyist, especially of the works of Rubens. He was one of the masters of George Vertue [q. v.], the engraver, who spoke highly of his merits as a teacher. Peeters was a man of a lively disposition and improvident nature, and, after suffering much from the gout, he died in London in September 1727, and was buried in St. Martin's-in-the-Fields.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Vertue's Diaries (Brit. Mus. Addit. MS. 23076, f. 27).] L. C.

**PEGGE**, SIR CHRISTOPHER, M.D. (1765–1822), son of Samuel Pegge the younger [q. v.], by his first wife, was born in London in 1765. He entered Christ Church, Oxford, as a commoner on 18 April 1782, and graduated B.A. on 23 Feb. 1786. He was elected a fellow of Oriel College in 1788, and thence graduated M.A. and M.B. on 10 June and 18 July 1789. He returned to Christ Church, was appointed Lee's reader in anatomy there in 1790, and thence proceeded M.D. on 27 April 1792. On 9 Nov. 1790 he became physician to the Radcliffe Infirmary, and a fellow of the Royal Society in 1795. He was knighted on 26 June 1799, and in 1801 was appointed regius professor of physic at Oxford. He was elected a fellow of the College of Physicians on 25 June 1796, delivered the Harveian oration in 1805, and became a censor in 1817, having left Oxford the year before, and taken a house in George Street, Hanover Square, in hopes of obtaining relief from a severe asthma by change of abode. Soon after the same cause led him to move to Hastings. He had resigned his readership in 1816, but retained the regius professorship, an office the duties of which were small. He attended in the university, in accordance with the statutes, and died in Oxford, after an asthmatic seizure, on 3 Aug. 1822. He was master of the charitable foundation known as Ewelme Hospital, and was buried in Ewelme church, where his epitaph in the south aisle has become almost illegible. His portrait was painted by T. Nevins, and was engraved. He is represented in his full academical dress.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. ii. 449; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886.] N. M.

**PEGGE**, SAMUEL the elder (1704–1796), antiquary, born on 5 Nov. 1704 at Chesterfield, Derbyshire, was son of Christopher Pegge by his wife Gertrude, daughter of Francis Stephenson of Unstone, near Chesterfield. Christopher Pegge (*d.* 1723), who belonged to a family that had lived for several generations at Osmaston, near Ashbourne, Derbyshire, was a woollen dealer at Derby, and afterwards a lead merchant at Chesterfield, of which place he was three times mayor.

Samuel Pegge was educated at Chesterfield, and became a pensioner and scholar of St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1722. He graduated B.A. 1725, M.A. 1729. He was elected to a lay fellowship on the Beresford foundation of his college on 21 March 1726, but was removed in favour of Michael Burton (afterwards vice-master of St. John's), who claimed founder's kin. Pegge was then

made an honorary fellow, and in 1729 was elected a 'Platt' fellow of St. John's. In 1730 he was elected a member of the Spalding Society, to which he contributed some papers, and from 1730 to 1732 belonged to the Zodiac Club, a college literary society consisting of twelve members denominated by the signs of the zodiac. Pegge was the original Mars.

Pegge was ordained in 1729, and in 1730 became curate to Dr. John Lynch at Sundridge in Kent. On 6 Dec. 1731 he was inducted into the vicarage of Godmersham, Kent, where he lived for about twenty years, writing on antiquities and collecting books and coins. From 1749 to 1751 he lived at Surrenden, Kent, as tutor to the son of Sir Edward Dering. In 1751 he was elected fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, and in the same year was inducted into the rectory of Whittington, near Chesterfield, exchanging Godmersham for the rectory of Brinhill (or Brindle), Lancashire. On 22 Oct. 1758 he exchanged Brinhill for the vicarage of Heath, near Whittington, holding Heath together with Whittington until his death. In 1765 he was presented to the perpetual curacy of Wingerworth, near Whittington. He was a prebendary of Lichfield (1757–1796), and in 1772 was collated to a stall in Lincoln Cathedral. In 1791 he was created LL.D. by the university of Oxford. He died, after a fortnight's illness, on 14 Feb. 1796, in the ninety-second year of his age, and was buried in the chancel at Whittington, where there is a mural tablet to his memory. His coins and medals were sold by auction at Leigh & Sotheby's, London, on 23 March 1797. The collection was a small one, consisting chiefly of English coins (*Priced Sale Catalogue* in Dept. of Coins, Brit. Mus.) Pegge had inherited some property at Osmaston and at Unstone in Derbyshire.

Pegge married, on 13 April 1732, Anne (*d.* July 1746), daughter of Benjamin Clarke of Stanley, near Wakefield, Yorkshire, and had by her three children: Christopher (died in infancy), Samuel the younger [q. v.], and Anna Katharine, wife of the Rev. John Bourne of Spital, near Chesterfield. A portrait of Pegge, drawn by Gustavus Brander [q. v.], and engraved by James Basire, is prefixed to Pegge's 'Forme of Cury' (cf. Bromley, *Cat. of Engraved Portraits*, p. 367); and there was an oil-painting of him (reputed a better likeness) by Elias Needham.

Pegge contributed to the first ten volumes of the 'Archæologia' memoirs on a great variety of topics, such as Anglo-Saxon jewellery; the introduction of the vine into Britain; the stylus; King Alfred; the 'bull-running' at Tutbury; the horn as a charter or instrument of conveyance; shoeing horses among the ancients; cock-fighting; the right of sanctuary; the manner of King John's death; Kits Coty house; the commencement of day among the Saxons and Britons; 'the mistaken opinion that Ireland and the Isle of Thanet are void of Serpents and prehistoric remains generally.' He wrote seven memoirs in the 'Bibliotheca Topographica Britannica,' including 'The Story of Guy, Earl of Warwick' (1783); 'The History of Eccleshall Manor' (1784); 'The Roman Roads of Derbyshire' (1784); 'The Textus Roffensis' (1784); 'History of Bolsover and Peak Castles, Derbyshire' (1783). He also wrote a large number of articles for the 'Gentleman's Magazine' from 1746 to 1795, signing himself 'Paul Gemsege' (= Samuel Pegge), 'T. Row' (= the rector of Whittington), and 'L. E.' (= [Samue]l [Pegg]e). While vicar of Godmersham Pegge made collections relating to Kent, including a 'Monasticon Cantianum' in two folio manuscript volumes, and an account of the antiquities of Wye. He compiled a manuscript 'Lexicon Xenophonticum,' and possessed various lexicons annotated by himself, as well as two volumes of collections in English history.

Pegge's separately published works are as follows: 1. 'A Series of Dissertations on some elegant and valuable Anglo-Saxon Remains' (chiefly coins), London, 1756, 4to. 2. 'Memoirs of the Life of Roger de Weseham . . . Bishop of Coventry and Lichfield,' London, 1761, 4to. 3. 'An Essay on the Coins of Cunobelin,' London, 1766, 4to. Evans (*Coins of the Ancient Britons*, p. 7, cf. p. 342) remarks that Pegge's division of the coins is judicious, but that many of his descriptions of the types are 'supremely ridiculous.' 4. 'An Assemblage of Coins fabricated by authority of the Archbishops of Canterbury,' London, 1772, 4to. 5. Fitz-Stephen's 'Description of London' (translated from the Latin), 1772, 4to. 6. Evelyn's 'Fumifugium,' edited by S. P., 1772, 4to. 7. 'The Forme of Cury: a Roll of ancient English Cookery,' London, 1780, 8vo; published from a manuscript belonging to Gustavus Brander. 8. 'Annales Eliæ de Trickingham,' &c., ed. by S. P., 1789, 4to. 9. 'The Life of Robert Grossetête . . . Bishop of Lincoln,' London, 1793, 4to (Pegge's principal work). 10. 'An Historical Account of Beauchief Abbey' (Derbyshire), ed. by J. Nichols, London, 1801, 4to, the printing of which was largely supervised by Pegge's son Samuel. 11. 'Anonymiana, or Ten Centuries of Observations,' 1809, 8vo; also 1818, 8vo. 12. 'An

Alphabet of Kenticisms,' printed in 'Cleveland Words,' &c. (English Dialect Society), 1876, 8vo. (Nos. 10-12 were posthumous.)

[Memoir in Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, vi. pp. 224 ff., principally based on memoirs by Samuel Pegge the younger; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; Brit. Mus. Cat.] W. W.

PEGGE, SAMUEL, the younger (1733–1800), antiquary, poet, and musical composer, born in 1733, was the only surviving son of Samuel Pegge, LL.D. (1704–1796) [q. v.], by his wife Anne, daughter of Benjamin Clarke, esq., of Stanley, near Wakefield, Yorkshire. After receiving a classical education at St. John's College, Cambridge, he was called to the bar at the Middle Temple, and by the favour of the Duke of Devonshire, lord chamberlain, he was appointed one of the grooms of his majesty's privy chamber and an esquire of the king's household. On 2 June 1796 he was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries (Gough, *Chronological List*, p. 59). He died on 22 May 1800, and was buried on the west side of Kensington churchyard, where a monument, with an English inscription, was erected to his memory.

By his first wife, Martha, daughter of Dr. Henry Bourne, an eminent physician of Chesterfield, he had one son, Sir Christopher Pegge, M.D. [q. v.], and a daughter, Charlotte Anne, who died unmarried on 17 March 1793. He married, secondly, Goodeth Belt, aunt to Robert Belt, esq., of Bossall, Yorkshire.

In early life he acquired considerable proficiency in music. He composed a complete melodrama—both the words and the music in score — which remains in manuscript. Many catches and glees, and several of the most popular songs for Vauxhall Gardens were written and set to music by him. He was also the author of some prologues and epilogues which were favourably received. Among these were a prologue spoken by Mr. Yates at Birmingham in 1760 on taking the theatre into his own hands; an epilogue spoken by the same actor at Drury Lane on his return from France; and another epilogue, filled with pertinent allusions to the game of quadrille, spoken by Mrs. Yates at her benefit in three different seasons—1769, 1770, and 1774. He was likewise the author of a pathetic elegy on his own recovery from a dangerous illness, and of some pleasant tales and epigrammatic poems.

His other acknowledged writings are: 1. 'An Elegy on the Death of Godfrey Bagnall Clerke, M.P. for Derbyshire, who died on 26 Dec. 1774,' printed at Chesterfield. 2. 'Brief Memoirs of Edward Capell, Esq. 1790, in Nichols's 'Literary Anecdotes' (i. 465–76). 3. 'Curialia; or an Historical Account of some Branches of the Royal Household,' 5 parts, London, 1782–1806, 4to; parts iv. and v. were edited by John Nichols. 4. 'Illustrations of the Churchwardens' Accompts of St. Michael Spurrier-Gate, York,' in 'Illustrations of the Manners and Expences of Antient Times,' 1797. 5. 'Memoir' of his father, Dr. Samuel Pegge, in Nichols's 'Literary Anecdotes' (i. 224–58). 6. 'Anecdotes of the English Language; chiefly regarding the Local Dialect of London and its Environs,' edited by John Nichols, London, 1803, 8vo; 2nd edit. enlarged, 'to which is added a Supplement to the Provincial Glossary of Francis Grose,' edited by John Nichols, London, 1814, 8vo; 3rd edit., enlarged and corrected, edited by H. Christmas, London, 1844, 8vo. 7. 'Curialia Miscellanea; or Anecdotes of Old Times, regal, noble, gentilitian, and miscellaneous, including Authentic Anecdotes of the Royal Household,' edited by John Nichols, London, 1818, 8vo.

[Addit. MS. 5878, f. 150 *b*; Gent. Mag. 1782 p. 340, 1800 i. 494; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. vi. 258; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. iv. 561; Pegge's Curialia Miscellanea, pp. lxxvii sq.; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. xii. 327.] T. C.

PEILE, THOMAS WILLIAMSON (1806–1882), author and divine, eldest son of John Peile of Whitehaven, a justice of the peace for Cumberland, was born 10 Nov. 1806. He was educated under Dr. Butler at Shrewsbury, where he followed B. H. Kennedy as captain of the school, and in 1824 entered Trinity College, Cambridge. After gaining the Davies scholarship in his freshman's year, he graduated B.A. in 1828 as eighteenth wrangler and bracketed second in the first class of the classical tripos. He was also second chancellor's medallist. On 1 Oct. 1829 he was elected fellow of his college, and proceeded M.A. in 1831, and D.D. in 1843.

In 1829 Peile was appointed head-master of the Liverpool collegiate school, and in the same year was ordained by Bishop Sumner of Chester. In 1831 he became perpetual curate of St. Catherine's, Liverpool. In 1834 he removed to Durham to hold a tutorship in the newly constituted university. In 1836 he was appointed to the perpetual curacy of Croxdale, near Durham.

From 1841 to 1854 Peile was head-master of Repton school, when he was succeeded by Steuart Adolphus Pears [q. v.] Towards the close of 1857 he became vicar of Luton,

Bedfordshire, a large and populous parish, which he began dividing into districts. But as the task proved too great for his strength, he removed in October 1860 to the newly formed parish of St. Paul, South Hampstead. This he held till 1873, when he resigned. He resided in the district till his death on 29 Nov. 1882.

Peile was a sound scholar, and his knowledge of the classics, especially Thucydides and the Greek Testament, was remarkable. His principal works were: 1. Editions of the 'Agamemnon of Æschylus' 1839, 'Choephori,' 1840. 2. 'Annotations on the Apostolical Epistles,' 4 vols. 1851–2. 3. 'Sermons, doctrinal and didactic,' 1868. 4. 'Three Sermons on the Holy Communion,' 1871.

In 1831 he married Mary, daughter of James Braithwaite, esq. (who died in 1806), and by her, who survived him till 1890, he left a numerous family. A portrait of Dr. Peile is in the hall of Repton school.

[Article in the Guardian, 6 Dec. 1882; information from the Rev. T. W. Peile, rector of Ashmore, Dorset; personal acquaintance.]

J. H. L.

**PEIRCE.** [See also PEARSE and PIERCE.]

**PEIRCE, JAMES** (1674?–1726), dissenting divine, son of John Peirce, was born at Wapping about 1674. His parents, who were in easy circumstances, were members of the congregational church at Stepney, under Matthew Mead [q. v.] Left an orphan about 1680, he was placed, with a brother and sister, in charge of Mead as guardian. Mead took him into his own house, and educated him with his son, Richard Mead, M.D. [q. v.], under John Nesbitt [q. v.] and Thomas Singleton, also at Utrecht (from 1689) and Leyden (from 1692). At Utrecht he formed a lasting friendship with his fellow-student, Adrian Reland, the orientalist; and he made valuable friendships among his class-mates at Leyden, then the resort of the aristocracy of English dissent. He travelled a little in Flanders and Germany before returning home in 1695.

After spending some time in Oxford, for the purpose of study at the Bodleian Library, he returned to London, was admitted (11 Feb. 1697) a member of Mead's church, and preached the evening lecture at Miles Lane congregational church, of which Matthew Clarke the younger [q. v.] was minister. He, however, 'did not interest himself in the disputes then on foot between presbyterians and independents,' and was ordained in 1699 by four London presbyterians, headed by Matthew Sylvester, the literary executor of Baxter. His own ideal of church government was based on Baxter's rectoral theory; he had no theoretical objection to a modified episcopacy. Early in 1701 Peirce's presbyterian friends urged his acceptance of a charge in Green Street, Cambridge, where there was a mixed congregation of independents and presbyterians. Agreeing to take it for three years, he was duly 'dismissed' to it by the Stepney church. He held it for six years (probably 1701–6), and received 'a handsome allowance.' He evidently still ranked as an independent, for he was made a trustee of the Hog Hill chapel on 23 Jan. 1702. At Cambridge he was intimate with William Whiston, who describes him as 'the most learned of all the dissenting teachers I have known.' He read much, especially in the topics of nonconformist controversy. John Fox (1693–1763) [q. v.] says that when he began to write in vindication of dissent, he usually sat in his study from nine at night till four or five next morning.

His removal to the presbyterian congregation at Toomer's Court, Newbury, Berkshire, was probably coincident with his first controversial publication (end of 1706) in defence of nonconformist positions against Edward Wells, D.D. [q. v.] The appearance of his 'Vindiciæ' (1710) in reply to the 'Defensio' (1707) of William Nicholls, D.D. [q. v.] brought him into prominence as a polemic; 'he was looked upon as the first man of the party' (Fox). Latin was employed on both sides, to gain the ear of the foreign protestants. According to Fox the latinity of the 'Vindiciæ' was 'corrected very accurately by the then master of Westminster School,' Thomas Knipe [q. v.] The work, which is dedicated to the clergy of the church of Scotland, contains a very able digest of nonconformist history and nonconformist argument, marked by acuteness and dignity. The theology of the 'second part' is strongly calvinistic. Peirce was sensible of the distinction which his book brought him, and this gained him enemies.

Early in 1713 he received a unanimous call to succeed George Trosse [q. v.] as one of the ministers of James's Meeting, Exeter, having to preach also in rotation at the Little Meeting. Against his removal his Newbury flock appealed to the 'Exeter Assembly,' a coalition of presbyterian and independent divines of Devonshire and Cornwall, on the model of the London Union of 1690 [see HOWE, JOHN, 1630–1705]. Peirce was not sure of his health at Newbury; an opinion was asked of Dr. Mead, who said that if he 'did study less and divert himself more, and had more help, he might have his health tolerably well.' The Newbury people were

willing to provide an assistant, and Peirce was willing to stay on these terms. The 'Exeter Assembly' sought advice from the Salters' Hall lecturers, who were equally divided; their report was presented to the assembly on 6 May 1713 by Edmund Calamy, D.D. [q.v.], who describes the excessive eagerness of the Exeter dissenters to secure Peirce; Calamy thought the circumstance ominous of future trouble. The assembly decided for the removal, and Peirce settled in Exeter before the end of 1713; his congregation numbered eleven hundred hearers.

He had subscribed (1697) the doctrinal part of the Anglican articles as the condition of toleration. But the theology in which he had been bred was really Sabellian, as he afterwards discovered when introduced to the 'odd notions' of orthodoxy by reading St. Basil. In fact, the theological tone of the less cultivated dissenters was, in his judgment, largely patripassian. On hearing of Whiston's change of views, he wrote to him from Newbury (10 July 1708) expressing amazement that he should 'fall in with the unitarians,' and referring to the 'very melancholy instance' of Thomas Emlyn [q.v.] Whiston's books, and the more important 'Scripture Doctrine of the Trinity' (1712) by Samuel Clarke (1675–1729) [q.v.], he did not read till 1713, moved by Whiston's importunity. He became convinced that error on this topic was not fundamental, and that it was 'the safest way' to adhere closely to the letter of scripture. Hence, before going to Exeter, he disused the ordinary doxology. Whiston claims him as a unitarian; he held (with Clarke) a subordination of the Son, but he constantly emphasises his rejection of 'the distinctive opinion of Arius,' and defends himself (as Clarke had done) by citing the authority of Bull and Pearson. The difficulties of theology impressed him greatly, and made him an advocate of latitude; but his own views were critical to a fault rather than positively heterodox.

Peirce's first controversy at Exeter was on the question of ordination. On 5 May 1714 he preached to the 'united ministers' a sermon with the title 'An Useful Ministry a Valid One.' It was at once supposed that he abandoned the defence of dissenting ordination. Preaching again at the ordination (19 Oct. 1715) of John Lavington [q. v.], as one of the ministers of Bow Meeting, Exeter, he distinguished between a valid and a regular ministry, asserting the irregularity of existing episcopal ordination, and maintaining, against the independents, that not the people, but the ministers, and they only, may judge the qualifications of candidates and ordain. This he defined, improperly, as 'presbyterian ordination,' for he excluded, with Baxter, the function of the lay eldership. His high views of the ministerial office were consonant with his character, and were acceptable to a section of his brethren; his positions were criticised by Samuel Chandler [q. v.], as well as by Anglican writers.

The controversy which wrecked Peirce's reputation, and severed the doctrinal accord of the old dissent, began at the end of 1716, when Lavington impugned the orthodoxy of Hubert Stogdon [q. v.] In April or May 1717 Henry Atkins of Puddington, Devonshire, preaching for Peirce during his absence in London, sounded an alarm of heresy. Peirce was asked (30 May) to preach on the atonement, and did so (2 June) in a somewhat guarded strain, and on principles which differed from those of Trosse, his predecessor. On 15 July he joined Joseph Hallett (1656–1722) [q. v.] and John Withers in giving a testimonial to Stogdon. At the 'assembly' in September he piloted Fox through his examination for license, refusing to require 'explications' of scriptural terms. An expression in his Christmas sermon renewed the doubts of his soundness. In fact the danger of Arianism was a burning topic at the time. Sir Robert Price [q. v.] 'had spent most of his charge at the Exeter assizes against those errors.'

At Exeter a self-elected body of thirteen laymen managed the finance of the three congregations. Early in 1718 a deputation from this body waited on Peirce and his colleagues, asking them to 'assert the eternity of the Son of God.' Peirce complied; for a time complaint ceased, but it was revived during his absence in London (July and August). In September the 'Exeter assembly' resolved, after much debate, that each minister should make a personal declaration on the subject of the Trinity. All complied except Samuel Carkeet [q. v.] and two others, and all the declarations were accepted except that of John Parr of Okehampton, who merely quoted Eph. iv. 4–6. Lavington then drew up, as 'the general sense' of the assembly, a short formula, which was carried by a very large majority.

The body of thirteen, not satisfied with a 'general sense,' appealed to the Exeter ministers for individual assurances. Failing in this, they sought advice from five London ministers, including Calamy, who deprecated London interference, and suggested a consultation with neighbouring divines. Seven Devonshire ministers, headed by John Ball (1665?–1745) [q. v.], were called in (19 Jan.

1719). They corresponded on the case with their London brethren. Peirce also wrote to his London friends, among whom the most influential was John Shute Barrington, afterwards first Viscount Barrington [q. v.] Barrington, an independent, was the parliamentary leader of the dissenting interest. He had defeated a presbyterian amendment to the bill for repealing the 'Schism Act,' which would have introduced a new test in regard to the Trinity, on the express ground of Peirce's alleged heresies. He now brought the Exeter dispute before the London committee, representing the civil interests of dissenters. The committee agreed (5 Feb.) to lay a draft of 'advices for peace' before the whole body of London ministers of the three denominations; hence the Salters' Hall conferences, which began on 19 Feb., and came to a rupture on 3 March [see Bradbury, Thomas]. The rupture was in reference, not to the 'advices' themselves, but to the spirit in which they should be tendered. Both sections endorsed the principle of uncompromising independency, namely, that each congregation is sole judge of the errors which disqualify its ministers. The non-subscribing section sent its 'advices,' with an orthodox letter, on 17 March; the 'advices' of the subscribing section, with an orthodox preamble, followed on 7 April; but the Exeter affair had already come to an issue, without any appeal to the congregation.

On 4 March the clerical council of seven gave judgment in writing, to the effect that denial of Christ's 'true and proper divinity' is a disqualifying error. On 5 March the 'thirteen' asked for an explicit statement on this head from the Exeter ministers. Peirce urged that the advices from London should be waited for; but the 'thirteen' declined to recognise 'advices' in which 'anabaptists' took part. Peirce then declined to subscribe to any proposition not in scripture (not even 'that three and two make five'). Hallett declined also; Withers faltered, and ultimately offered to subscribe the Nicene creed; Lavington alone gave complete satisfaction. On 6 March the four 'proprietors' of James's Meeting closed it against Peirce and Hallett; they were permitted, however, on the following Sunday (8 March) to preach at the Little Meeting. But on 10 March the 'proprietors' of the several meeting-houses held a joint meeting, and agreed, 'without consulting the people,' to exclude Peirce and Hallett from them all. They were excluded also from their share in the income of the Elwill trust for dissenting ministers of Exeter (unpublished letter of Peirce, 11 Sept. 1721). They still remained members of the 'Exeter assembly.' A temporary meeting-place was secured by 15 March, and a new building, the Mint Meeting, was soon erected (opened 27 Dec.) The congregation, which numbered about three hundred, was classed as presbyterian in the lists of the London fund of that name; but Peirce declined any designation except Christian. In May 1719 the 'Exeter assembly' called for a subscription from its members, identical with that adopted by the London subscribers. Peirce, with eighteen others, declined and seceded. The seceders subscribed a paper (6 May) repudiating the charge of Arianism, and making a confession in biblical terms. Peirce was not readmitted as a member, but was present as a visitor in September 1723. The ministers of Mint Meeting were admitted in 1753; the succession of ministers was maintained till 1810; subsequently (before 1817) the building was sold to Wesleyan methodists, who erected another on its site.

Peirce never rose above the mortification inflicted on him by his summary ejection. Friends of position, such as Peter King, first lord King [q. v.], stood by him; but he deeply felt the loss of leadership and popularity. His numerous pamphlets in self-defence are written with a strong pen; the 'Letter' to Eveleigh is an admirable piece of satire. He moved out of Exeter to a country house at St. Leonard's, in the suburbs, and lived much among his books, busying himself with paraphrases of St. Paul's Epistles, in continuation of the series begun by Locke. Fox has left a very graphic account of him. He seems to have been a moody man, of dignified and polished manners, with much reserve, yet humorous and even jocose when the ice was broken. His theological writing is scholastic and unimpassioned, but when moved he preached with great fervour, using few notes. His means were ample, but he is said to have been remiss in the duty of returning hospitality. He had ancient notions of domestic strictness, and 'condescended to the discipline of the horsewhip.' Fox asserts that, having written against the ring in marriage, he refused to attend his daughter's wedding; but this is improbable, for Peirce maintains that the ring is 'a civil rite, and not unlawful in itself,' and therefore to be used so long as it is prescribed by law. Nor, according to Fox, would he sit for his portrait, since 'pictures originally were the occasion of worshipping images.' His disuse of exercise led to 'the swelling of his legs and other disorders.' At length he broke a blood-vessel in his lungs, lingered a few days in great composure, and died on 30 March 1726. He was buried in the church-

yard of St. Leonard's, near Exeter. His funeral sermon was preached by Joseph Hallett (1691?–1744)[q.v.], who had followed his father as Peirce's colleague. Thomas Emlyn was invited to succeed him, but declined. He left a widow and family.

Avery gives a long Latin inscription (reprinted by Murch) which was intended for his tombstone. The cutting of it was nearly finished when Richard Gay (Avery misspells the name Gey), rector of St. Leonard's, interposed with a prohibition. It was proposed to substitute the words, 'Here lies the reverend, learned and pious Mr. James Peirce.' Gay objected that Peirce could not be 'reverend,' because not lawfully ordained; nor 'pious,' since he taught errors. Finally the inscription took this form: 'Mr. James Peirce's Tomb, 1726.' A mural monument, erected to his memory in the Mint Meeting, is now in the vestry of George's Meeting, Exeter.

He published, besides single sermons (1714–23); 1. 'Exercitatio Philosophica de Homœomeria Anaxagorea,' Utrecht, 1692, 4to. 2. 'Remarks on Dr. Wells's Letters,' &c., 1706–8, 8vo, eight parts; 3rd edition, 1711, 8vo. 3. 'Some Considerations on . . . a Vindication of the Office of Baptism, and . . . the Sign of the Cross,' &c, 1708, 8vo. 4. 'Vindiciæ Fratrum Dissentientium in Anglia adversus . . . Nicholsii . . . Defensionem Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ,' &c. 1710, 8vo; in English, 'A Vindication of the Dissenters,' &c., 1717, 8vo; the translation, though otherwise augmented, omits a considerable portion of the 'second part,' among the omissions being a chapter on the charge of Socinianism brought against Anglican divines, in which Peirce contends that dissenters are free from this taint; 2nd edition, 1718, 8vo; pt. iii. chapter 3 of the English edition, was reprinted as 'A Tractate on Church Music,' &c., 1786, 8vo. 5. 'An Enquiry into the present Duty of a Low-Churchman,' &c., 1711, 8vo; anon. 1712, 8vo. 6. 'A Letter to Dr. Bennet . . . concerning the Nonjurors' Separation,' &c., 1717, 8vo; two editions same year [see Bennet, Thomas, D.D.] 7. 'A Defence of the Dissenting Ministry and Presbyterian Ordination,' &c. 1717, 8vo (two parts). 8. 'The Dissenters' Reasons for not Writing in the behalf of Persecution,' &c., 1718, 8vo; three editions same year, addressed to Andrew Snape, D.D. 9. 'Some Reflections upon Dean Sherlock's Vindication of the Corporation and Test Acts,' &c., 1718, 8vo; two editions same year. 10. 'The Interest of the Whigs with relation to the Test Act,' &c., 1718, 8vo (anon.); two editions same year. 11. 'The Loyalty . . . of High Church and the Dissenters compar'd,' &c., 1719, 8vo (in reply to J. Jackman). 12. 'The Case of the Ministers Ejected at Exon,' &c., 1719, 8vo; four editions same year. 13. 'The Charge of Misrepresentations maintain'd against . . . Sherlock,' &c., 1719, 8vo. 14. 'A Defence of the Case of the Ministers,' &c., 1719, 8vo. 15. 'A Justification of the Case of the Ministers,' &c., 1719, 8vo. 16. 'A Letter to Mr. Josiah Eveleigh,' &c., Exeter, 1719, 8vo (Eveleigh was minister at Crediton, Devonshire, from 1702, and died on 9 Sept. 1736). 17. 'Animadversions upon . . . A True Relation of . . . Proceedings at Salters-Hall,' &c., 1719, 8vo; another edition, same year, has reprint of No. 16 appended. 18. 'A Letter . . . in Defence of the Animadversions,' &c., 1719, 8vo. 19. 'A Second Letter to . . . Eveleigh,' &c., Exeter, 1719, 8vo. 20. 'Remarks upon the Account of what was transacted in the Assembly at Exon,' &c., 1719, 8vo; second edition, same year, has a 'Postscript.' 21. 'An Answer to Mr. Enty's Defence . . . of the Assembly,' &c., 1719, 8vo [see Enty, John]. 22. 'The Western Inquisition,' &c., 1720, 8vo. 23. 'The Security of Truth without... Persecution,' &c., 1721, 8vo (against Enty). 24. 'Inquisition Honesty display'd,' &c. 1722, 8vo (a defence of No. 22). 25. 'A Paraphrase and Notes on . . . Colossians,' &c., 1725, 4to (anon.); reprinted, with name, 1727, 4to; 1733, 4to. 26. 'A Paraphrase and Notes on . . . Philippians,' &c., 1725, 4to (anon.); reprinted, with name, 1727, 4to; 1733, 4to. Posthumous were: 27. 'A Paraphrase and Notes on . . . Hebrews,' &c., 1727, 4to (edited by Hallett, his successor); also in Latin, 'J. Peircii Paraphrasis et Notæ... in Epistolam ad Hebræos,' &c., 1747, 4to. 28. 'Dissertations on Six Texts,' &c., 1727, 4to. 29. 'An Essay in favour of . . . giving the Eucharist to Children,' &c., 1728, 8vo. 30. 'Fifteen Sermons . . . To which is added A Scripture Catechism,' &c., 1728, 8vo (edited, with a memorial preface, by Benjamin Avery, LL.D. [q. v.]; contains all the single sermons printed in his lifetime, and eight others. His funeral sermon for Mrs. Hallett is reprinted in the 'Practical Preacher,' 1762, 8vo, vol. iii.) Nos. 5 and 10 above are doubtful. Several anonymous pamphlets in the paper war at Exeter were freely ascribed to Peirce, and have been catalogued and referred to as his, apparently without ground; of these the most important is 'The Innocent vindicated,' &c., 1718; 2nd edition, 1719, 8vo, which, Peirce says, he never read, and supposed to be by a lay hand (*West. Inquis.* pp. 143–46); an appendix to the second edition has 'Thirteen Queries' on

the Trinity, which are defended as Peirce's in 'The Truth and Importance of the Scripture Doctrine of the Trinity,' &c., 1736, 8vo, a publication against Waterland, which has been ascribed to Hallett.

[Funeral Sermon by Hallett, 1726; Avery's Preface, 1728; Calamy's Continuation, 1727, ii. 289, Own Life, 1830, ii. 263, 403 seq.; Whiston's Memoirs, 1753, pp. 121 seq.; Memoir in Protestant Dissenters' Magazine, 1795, pp. 441 seq. (probably by Joshua Toulmin); Account of Cambridge Dissent in Monthly Repository, 1810, p. 626 (with additional information supplied from manuscript records at Cambridge); Fox's Memoirs, and Fox's Character of Peirce, in Monthly Repository, 1821, pp. 197 seq., 329 seq.; Murch's Hist. Presb. and Gen. Bapt. Cong. in West of England, 1835, pp. 386 seq., 421 seq.; Turner's Lives of Eminent Unitarians, 1840, i. 89 seq. (an excellent account; but Turner, though he insists, erroneously, that Peirce discarded the worship of Christ, is puzzled to rank him as a unitarian); Newbury Weekly News, 29 March and 12 July 1888 (articles by W. Money, F.S.A.); Christian Life, 16 and 23 June 1888 (articles on the Salters' Hall Fiasco); Peirce's pamphlets, especially the autobiographical postscript to Remarks, 1719, The Case, 1719, and Western Inquisition, 1720, manuscript records of Stepney Meeting; manuscript records of Exeter Assembly in Dr. Williams's Library.] A. G.

**PEIRSON.** [See also PEARSON and PIERSON.]

**PEIRSON, FRANCIS** (1757-1781), major, the eldest son of Francis Peirson of Lowthorpe, Yorkshire, was born in 1757, and entered the army at an early age, rising to the rank of major in April 1780, when he was appointed to the 95th regiment, which was shortly afterwards stationed in Jersey. At this period the Channel Islands were subjected to the constant danger of attacks from the French, who made several futile attempts to gain possession. By far the most important of these raids was that of 6 Jan. 1781, known as the 'battle of Jersey,' when the French, under the Baron de Rullecour, a desperate adventurer, landed under cover of night and took possession of the town of St. Helier, making the lieutenant-governor, Major Moses Corbet, a prisoner in his bed. Under these circumstances the command of the troops devolved upon the youthful Peirson. Rullecour succeeded in inducing Corbet to sign a capitulation, and Elizabeth Castle was summoned to surrender, but the officer in command boldly refused to obey the order. Meanwhile the regular troops and the island militia, under the command of Major Peirson, advanced in two divisions towards the Royal Square, then the market-place, where a vigorous engagement took place, resulting in great loss to the French, who, though fighting with great obstinacy, became disordered and were compelled to retire. The victory was complete, but had been gained at the heavy price of the life of a promising young officer, for in the very moment of victory the gallant Peirson was shot through the heart, and fell dead in the arms of his grenadiers. Rullecour himself was mortally wounded, and most of the French soldiers were taken prisoners. Peirson, who had only attained his twenty-fifth year, was interred in the parish church of St. Helier with all the honours of war, and in the presence of the States of the island, who caused a magnificent monument to be erected to his memory. Peirson's death forms the subject of Copley's famous picture now in the National Gallery at London.

[The Death of Peirson, by Ouless, published at the centenary of the battle, 1881; Plees's Hist. of Jersey, ed. 1824, pp. 199–209; Ahier's Tableaux Historiques, p. 367 et seq.; Le Quesne's Hist. of Jersey, pp. 502 et seq.; Société Jersiaise, 7th and 8th bulletins, 1882 and 1883.]

E. T. N.

**PELAGIUS** (*fl.* 400?), heresiarch, was probably born about 370. His British birth is asserted by Prosper, Gennadius, Marius Mercator, Orosius, and St. Augustine; a tradition records his native name to have been Morgan, of which 'Pelagius' ('Sea-born') was the Greek translation. Jerome more precisely calls him a 'Scot'—i.e. an Irishman. It is stated that he was a monk; and, according to one account, he was once at Bangor monastery; but both Pope Zosimus and Augustine's friend Orosius speak of him as a layman. It is improbable that he is the Pelagius whose desertion St. John Chrysostom lamented in a letter (to Olympias) of 405; but it is certain that he came to Rome early in the fifth century, and almost immediately became prominent as a theological disputant.

Mercator says he borrowed his 'distinctive doctrines' from Rufinus the Syrian. According to Jerome, Rufinus was a theologian of Aquileia, a pupil of the famous Theodore of Mopsuestia, and a student of Origen. Rufinus visited Rome while Anastasius was pope, i.e. between 398 and 402. Pelagius doubtless met Rufinus in the capital not later than 401, and it appears that he did not leave till 409. While he resided at Rome Pelagius made the acquaintance of Augustine and Paulinus of Nola, who spoke of him with great respect.

It was probably at Rome that Pelagius wrote his three works, 'On the Trinity,' 'On

Testimonies' (Eulogiarum or Testimoniorum Liber, arranged after the model of St. Cyprian's 'Testimonia'), and 'On St. Paul's Epistles.' It was also during his stay at Rome that he made the acquaintance of Celestius, afterwards his foremost disciple, and began by writings, especially letters, to show plainly that he had rejected the dominant theology upon the points of human freewill and divine grace.

Pelagius's doctrines dealt with six chief points, as his opponents sometimes divided them: original sin, infant baptism, the effect of the fall of Adam, free will in man, divine grace, and predestination; but the gist of them all is contained in the single point on which the ninth article of the English church condemns his followers as 'talking vainly,' viz. whether or not 'the condition of man after the fall is such that he . . . has no power to do good works without the grace of God.' He annulled that grace, said Augustine, by representing it as the payment of what was strictly due. His position certainly rested on two particular denials—first of the necessity of supernatural and directly assisting grace in order to any true service of God; secondly, of the transmission of the corruption of human nature and of physical death to the descendants of the first man, in consequence of his transgression. Personally he wrote in support of the divinity of Christ, but some of his followers were less explicit, and after his death his party became somewhat connected with the Nestorian. As to the necessity of infant baptism, Pelagius distinguished between an eternal life that the unbaptised could possibly enter, and a kingdom of heaven that was closed to them.

About 409 Pelagius went with Celestius to Sicily, to escape Alaric's attack upon Rome, and soon after passed on to Africa, missing St. Augustine, bishop of Hippo, in his own city, but meeting him in Carthage, where the bishop was then busy with the Donatist controversy. Thence Pelagius sailed to Palestine, where he met Jerome at Bethlehem; while Celestius, staying behind in Africa, and going beyond his leader in the boldness and definiteness of his heresy, was accused, tried, and condemned, on seven counts of false doctrine, by a synod at Carthage (412). At the same time Augustine, though strongly opposed to 'Pelagianism,' as doctrines in favour of the freedom of the will came to be called, received a letter from Pelagius himself, to which he replied in 'friendly terms.' But a little later he received another work by Pelagius, with a letter, from two 'youths,' Timasius and James, asking him to satisfy them on various points in it, and this book seems to have alarmed him.

Next year accordingly (415) Orosius, sent by Augustine to Palestine to watch Pelagius, accused him of heresy before a synod at Jerusalem (28 July 415). Pelagius was at first disposed to question the right of the African church to dictate in the matter, but finally decided to plead, and justified his doctrines at length. The presiding bishop, John of Jerusalem, showed him some favour; and the result was the acquittal of Pelagius of any definite false doctrines. On this the 'Augustinians' appealed to Rome, declaring that Pelagius's Latin was not properly understood in Syria; that his interpreter was incompetent; and that the Eastern judges had not grasped the facts.

The appeal to Rome was allowed, as a compromise, by the synod of Jerusalem; but at the end of 415 Pelagius was again indicted before a synod at Diospolis, or Lydda, in Palestine, by two (deposed) western prelates—Heros of Arles, and Lazarus of Aix. Fourteen bishops again met together to decide upon an appeal really coming, as was supposed, from Jerome and his party at Bethlehem. The 'miserable conventicle of Diospolis' as Jerome calls it, came to the same result as the synod of Jerusalem, and the main hope of the predestinarian party now rested on the expected sympathy and support of Innocent I. The Roman appeal was accordingly repeated in 416 by over sixty-nine bishops in the synod of Carthage, and by sixty-one more in a synod in Numidia; and a letter was addressed to the great western see by Augustine and four other bishops (Aurelius, Alypius, Evodius, and Possidius), who also forwarded to Rome the book of Pelagius which Timasius and James had before sent to Augustine, with the latter's answer in the treatise 'De Natura et Gratia.'

Innocent answered these various addresses by three letters, written on 27 Jan. 417, in which he condemned Pelagius's distinctive doctrines without reserve, and called upon him to abjure his heresy, or to leave the communion of the church.

But on the death of the 'first great pope,' 12 March 417, his successor Zosimus showed a very different spirit. He was mystified, it was said, by Celestius, whose plausible tongue smoothed away difficulties, and who offered boldly to condemn all that Innocent or the apostolic see judged heretical. To the pope his statement appeared to be 'catholic, plain, and explicit.' Accordingly Zosimus deprived and anathematised Heros

and Lazarus, and, without fully acquitting Pelagius, blamed the African bishops for undue haste; finally, on receiving the accused's confession from Palestine, with a letter in his favour from Praylius, the new bishop of Jerusalem, he declared him entirely cleared (417).

The African bishops, in answer, reiterated their charges before the end of 417, and again more solemnly in the next year (1 May 418) in a synod of 214 (or 224) prelates at Carthage. Furthermore, they now began also to set in motion the civil power, probably by means of Augustine's friend, Count Valerius.

Representations were made to the emperors Theodosius and Honorius. Pelagius was consequently banished from Rome, and sentence of confiscation and banishment was passed upon all his followers. Zosimus himself found it convenient to reconsider the matter, summoned Celestius before him, and, on the withdrawal of the latter, condemned Pelagianism by a circular letter ('Epistola Tractoria'). Subscription to its terms was enforced throughout Italy and Africa, and eighteen bishops were deprived for refusing their assent; chief among these was Julian, bishop of Eclanum in Apulia, the great defender of Pelagianism in the next generation.

The personal history of Pelagius, after his condemnation in 418, is very obscure. He is said to have died at the age of over seventy, in a small Syrian town. He is described by Jerome and Orosius as tall, stout, and elderly at the time of his visit to Palestine.

Pelagius specially enraged Jerome and the high monastic party by his opposition to the extreme celibate ideals. 'The virginal life,' he was accused of saying, 'is not commanded,' and his system was condemned as a 'philosophy of this world,' that is, essentially rationalistic; but the charges of folly and luxuriousness, brought by Jerome and Orosius, seem to have been rooted mainly in 'odium theologicum,' and to be inconsistent with the strong language of Augustine and Paulinus in praise of his piety and virtue. His temper was rather studious than active; he thought and wrote, while Celestius and others undertook the business of public disputation. His life shows the first sign of the intellectual activity of the Celtic church, which afterwards bore fruit in the Irish missions. Pelagius journeyed from end to end of the Roman empire in order to propagate his opinions, and his activity and that of his friends was very probably what turned afresh the attention of catholic Christianity upon our islands, and led, among other things, to the Irish mission of Palladius [q. v.] in 431.

Throughout the middle ages theological controversy tended to revert to the questions raised by Pelagius, and Thomas Bradwardine [q. v.], one of the most famous of fourteenth century English doctors, celebrated by Chaucer as proverbially learned, left a great treatise on the subject—'De Causa Dei contra Pelagium.'

[Pelagius's own writings, as mentioned in text: with additional Letters and Libelli, e.g. to Paulinus, Pope Innocent, &c. A book of his, in 4 parts, on Freewill is referred to by Augustine, De Gratia Christi, § 45, and Ep. 186, § 34, cf. Tillemont, xiii. 687; St. Jerome, esp. On Jeremiah, bks. i. iii. and preface; Jerome's Letters, e.g. 133, cf. his Collected Works (Benedictine ed.), v. 57, &c.; Gennadius, c. xlii. of De Viris Illustribus; Orosius's Apology, cc. 2, 4, 12, 29, 31, cf. Gallandius's Bibliotheca Vet. Patrum, vol. ix.; Orosius, De Arbit. Lib., cf. Tillemont, xiii. 562–5, &c., 687, &c.; Augustine (Benedictine ed.), vols. ii. x.; Bright's Select Anti-Pelagian Treatises of St. Augustine (viz., De Spiritu et Littera, De Natura et Gratia, De perfectione Justitiæ Hominis, De Gestis Pelagii, De Gratia Christi et de Peccato Originali, Contra duas Epistolas Pelagianorum); Marius Mercator's Adv. Pel. in Gallandius, viii. 615, &c.; Commonit. ii. 2; Prosper of Aquitaine, Works, i. 399–400, iii. 69–70 (ed. of 1782); Bede on Canticles, iv. 719 (Giles's Bede, ix. 195); Gildas's Hist. § ix.; Bright's Church Hist. pp. 249, 269, 276–9, 285; Robertson's Church Hist. ii. 139–54; Haddan and Stubbs, under A.D. 415, &c.; Stokes's Ireland and Celtic Church, pp. 20–2; Reeves's Adamnan; Ussher's Works, ed. Elrington, passim; notice by Professor Ince in Dictionary of Christian Biography.] C. R. B.

**PELGRIM, JOYCE** (*fl.* 1514), stationer in London, is first heard of in 1504, when an edition of the 'Ortus Vocabulorum' was printed for him in Paris. In 1506, in partnership with another stationer, Henry Jacobi, he issued a book of hours and a psalter according to the use of Sarum, and an edition of Lyndewode's 'Provinciale.' From the colophons of these books it is clear that Jacobi lived at the sign of the Trinity, and Pelgrim at the sign of St. Anne, both in St. Paul's Churchyard. Under the patronage of William Bretton, an important merchant of the staple of Calais, who assisted them with money, they worked in partnership for a few years, having books printed for them both in the Low Countries and in France. After 1508, when they had issued seven books, the name of Pelgrim no longer appears in connection with the business, though Jacobi still continued at work. About 1513 the latter moved to Oxford, and

opened a shop there under his old sign of the Trinity, but died in the following year. William Bretton, as a creditor, applied for letters of administration, and was represented at Oxford by his agent, Joyce Pelgrim. Nothing further is known of Pelgrim.

[Bibliographica, 1894, pt. i.] E. G. D.

**PELHAM**, Sir EDMUND (*d.* 1606), chief baron of the exchequer in Ireland, was the fifth son of Sir William Pelham (1486?–1538) of Laughton, Sussex, by his second wife, Mary, daughter of Lord Sandys of the Vine, near Basingstoke. His eldest uterine brother was Sir William Pelham (*d.* 1587) [q. v.] Edmund, or Edward, as his name is frequently given, was admitted a member of Gray's Inn in 1563; he was autumn reader for that society in 1588. He was elected member of parliament for Hastings on 22 Oct. 1597, and in 1601 was appointed serjeant-at-law. On the removal of Sir Robert Napier (*d.* 1615) [q. v.] for neglect of his duties, Pelham was appointed chief baron of the exchequer in Ireland in September 1602; at the same time he was sworn of the privy council. In the summer of 1603 he went on circuit through Ulster; it was the first time that an English judge had been seen in the north of Ireland, and Pelham reported that 'the multitude that had been subject to oppression and misery did reverence him as if he had been a good angel sent from heaven, and prayed him upon their knees to return again to minister justice unto them' (*Cal. State Papers*, Ireland, 1603–6, p. 111). Pelham's appointment was confirmed on James's accession, and on 3 July 1604 he was knighted by the king at Greenwich. On 20 Oct. 1604 he was placed on a commission to inquire into the waste suffered by Sir Henry Harington's lands during the war. From 5 March to 5 April 1605 he went on circuit through Meath, Westmeath, Longford, King's County, Athlone, and Queen's County; illness seems thenceforth to have prevented the exercise of his judicial functions. In 1606 he went to England, and on his return died at Chester on 4 June. He was possessed of the manor of Catsfield, Sussex, and left a son, Herbert Pelham, of the age of nineteen and upwards, ancestor of the Pelhams of Catsfield. In Chichester's opinion, Pelham was a 'very learned and worthy judge.'

His brother, Sir Nicholas Pelham (1517–1560), eldest son of Sir William Pelham by his first wife, Mary, daughter of Sir Richard Carew of Beddington, Surrey, made himself conspicuous by his defence of Seaford against a French invasion under Claude d'Annabant in 1545 (Lower, *Memorials of Seaford*, p. 16; *Archæologia*, xxiv. 293). From 1547 to 1552 he represented Arundel in parliament, and in 1549 was sheriff of Sussex and Surrey, and was knighted. He was elected knight of the shire for Sussex on 16 Jan. 1557–8, and died, in his forty-fourth year, on 15 Dec. 1560. He was buried in St. Michael's Church, Lewes, under a handsome mural monument, with an inscription which records his repulse of the French. By his wife Anne, daughter of John Sackville, he had ten children, of whom the second son, Sir Thomas, became ancestor of the earls of Chichester.

[Calendars of Carew MSS. 1601–3, and Irish State Papers, 1603–6, passim; Smyth's Law Officers of Ireland, pp. 138–40; Morrin's Cal. Patent Rolls, Eliz. p. 623; Dugdale's Origines Juridiciales, p. 295, and Chron. Ser. p. 101; Lascelles's Liber Munerum Hibern. pt. ii. pp. 49–50; Foster's Gray's Inn Register, col. 32; Metcalfe's Book of Knights, p. 153; Willis's Notitia Parl. iii. 144; Collins's Peerage, viii. 116–121; Off. Returns of Members of Parl.; Literary Remains of Edward VI (Roxburghe Club), pp. lxii, cccvii, 273; Holinshed's Chron. p. 969; Lower's Historical and Genealogical Notices of the Pelham Family, pp. 38–41, and Sussex Worthies, pp 43–4; Berry's Sussex Genealogies, pp. 313–16; Gardiner's Hist. of England, i. 380.] A. F. P.

**PELHAM**, GEORGE, D.D. (1766–1827), bishop successively of Bristol, Exeter, and Lincoln, born 13 Oct. 1766, was third son and seventh and youngest child of Thomas Pelham, first earl of Chichester [q. v.] He was at first in the English army, holding a commission in the guards, but soon changed his vocation to the church. After he had been trained by James Hurdis [q. v.] at the family seat of Stanmer, near Lewes, from 1784, he was sent to Cambridge, graduating B.A. at Clare College, Cambridge, in 1787. As the younger son of a leading whig family, he was quickly promoted. On 28 Oct. 1790, when he was only twenty-four, he was installed as prebendary of Middleton and canon residentiary in Chichester Cathedral, and held that preferment until his death. In 1792 the vicarage of Bexhill in Sussex was given to him by the bishop of the diocese; in 1800 he was appointed by his family to the vicarage of Hellingly, and from 17 Nov. 1797 to 1803 he was prebendary of the eleventh stall at Winchester. Hurdis, who acknowledged many good qualities in his pupil, wrote to William Cowper, the poet, that young Pelham had 'just turned of five and twenty, and is already in possession of two livings' (*Village Curate*, 1810 ed., p. xi). Pelham was consecrated bishop of Bristol on 27 March 1803 in the chapel at Lambeth Palace, and at the same time received from

the archbishop of Canterbury the degree of D.C.L. When the see of Norwich became vacant, he wrote (8 Feb. 1805) from his house in Welbeck Street, London, to Mr. Pitt, stating that he had heard 'from so many quarters' of his nomination for that bishopric, that he could 'no longer refrain expressing his gratitude,' as it would be 'a lasting obligation.' A dry answer was immediately sent back by Pitt, that the report 'had arisen without his knowledge, and that he could not have the satisfaction of promoting his wishes' (Stanhope, *Life of Pitt*, iv. 253–4). In 1807 he was transferred to the diocese of Exeter, being installed on 28 Sept. 1807, and holding with it the archdeaconry of Exeter and the treasurership of the cathedral, to which was annexed a residential stall. In this position he 'continued for thirteen years, expecting higher preferment.' His desires were realised in October 1820, when he was made bishop of Lincoln. An epigram on his greed for lucrative office is given in Gronow's 'Reminiscences' (1889 ed. ii. 80–1), and attributed to Canning; but the diarist is mistaken in saying that it was penned on Pelham's attempt to succeed Tomline at Winchester, as the see was not vacated by that divine until the close of 1827. 'Winton,' in the epigram, is probably a mistake for 'Lincoln.' Pelham was also clerk of the closet to the king. He caught cold while attending the funeral of the Duke of York in St. George's Chapel, Windsor, on 19 Jan. 1827; died of pleurisy at Connaught Place, London, on 7 Feb., and was buried in the family vaults at Laughton in Sussex on 15 Feb.

Pelham was the author of two sermons and a charge. He is described as urbane in his manners, punctual in the discharge of business, and impartial in the distribution of patronage. When raised to the episcopal bench he nearly went down on his knees to George III to be permitted to dispense with his wig, but the king was inexorable (Hayward, *Essays*, 1873 ser., ii. 40).

He married, on 14 Dec. 1792, Mary, third daughter of Sir Richard Rycroft. She died, without issue, at Connaught Place, on 30 March 1837.

Jekyll notes that the bishop and his wife were in 1818 daily attendants at the dinners given by the prince-regent in the pavilion at Brighton. She was haughty in her style, and in the palace at Exeter 'never rises from her seat to receive the visitors' (*Letters*, p. 67). His portrait, by Joseph Slater, was lithographed by Isaac Slater.

[Gent. Mag. 1827 pt. i. p. 269, 1837 pt. i. p. 553; Oliver's Bishops of Exeter, pp. 166, 274, 287; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 221, 280, 283, 383, 397, 416, 432, ii. 29, iii. 42; Notes and Queries, 5th ser. ii. 213; Richard Polwhele's Reminiscences, i. 137, 155.] W. P. C.

**PELHAM, HENRY** (1695?–1754), statesman, was the younger son of Thomas, fourth baronet, first baron Pelham [q. v.], by his second wife, Lady Grace Holles, youngest daughter of Gilbert, third earl of Clare, and sister of John Holles, duke of Newcastle [q. v.] He was educated at Westminster School, and at Hart Hall, Oxford, where he matriculated on 6 Sept. 1710, at the age of fifteen, but did not graduate. He was gazetted a captain in Brigadier Dormer's regiment on 22 July 1715, and served as a volunteer at the defeat of the rebels at Preston in November following. Shortly after the suppression of the rebellion, Pelham visited the continent, returning to England in October 1717. During his absence he was elected for Seaford at a by-election in February 1717. He acted as a consistent supporter of the whig party under Walpole and Townshend, with both of whom he was connected by marriage. On 6 May 1720 he made his maiden speech in the House of Commons, while moving an address of thanks to the king (*Parl. Hist.* vii. 648–9), and on the 25th of the same month he was appointed treasurer of the chamber. On 3 April 1721 he became one of the lords of the treasury. At the general election in the spring of 1722 he was returned to the House of Commons for Sussex, which he continued to represent for the rest of his life. Resigning his seat at the treasury board, he was appointed secretary at war on 1 April 1724. He was sworn a member of the privy council on 1 June 1725 (*London Gazette*, 1725, No. 6377), but the statement that he was admitted to Walpole's cabinet appears to be incorrect (see Lord Hervey, *Memoirs*, 1884, iii. 358–9). Pelham frequently proved of service to the ministry as a mediator between his brother, the Duke of Newcastle, and Walpole, whose mutual jealousy led to frequent disputes. On 8 May 1730 he was promoted to the more lucrative post of paymaster of the forces. On 11 Feb. 1732 he became involved in an altercation with Pulteney during a debate in the house, and a duel was only prevented by the interposition of the speaker (*Journals of the House of Commons*, xxi. 796). In defiance of the popular clamour, Pelham supported Walpole's excise scheme in the spring of 1733, and on the evening after the last debate on that measure he extricated Walpole from the attack of a well-dressed mob in the lobby of the House of Commons (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, 1829, i. 10 *n.*) At the general election

in the following year he was returned for Aldborough in Yorkshire, as well as for Sussex, but he elected to sit for his old constituency. The only occasion on which Pelham is known to have voted in opposition to Walpole was when he supported Sir John Barnard's scheme for the conversion of the national debt in the spring of 1737 (Lord Hervey, *Memoirs*, iii. 133). On 13 Feb. 1741 he spoke warmly in opposition to Sandys's motion for the removal of Walpole (*Parl. Hist.* xi. 1243–54, 1367–70), and on 9 March 1742, during the debate on Lord Limerick's motion for a committee of inquiry, he energetically defended the policy of the fallen minister (*ib.* xii. 473–82, 501–507).

Pelham refused the chancellorship of the exchequer under Wilmington, notwithstanding the pressure put upon him by Lord Orford and the king, preferring to retain his old post of paymaster. In April 1743 Pelham was appointed a lord justice during the king's absence from England, an office which he filled on three subsequent occasions in 1745, 1750, and 1752. After Wilmington's death Pelham was appointed first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer (25 Aug. 1743), in accordance with a promise previously made to him by the king, and in spite of the opposition of Carteret, who wished to secure the post for Lord Bath (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, i. 82). Carteret's influence still remained extremely powerful at court, and the efforts of Pelham and his brother were from the first directed to thwarting the Hanoverian policy of that minister, who wished to gain the co-operation of the tories. 'Whig it,' wrote Orford to Pelham on 25 Aug. 1743, 'with all opponents that will parly; but 'ware Tory!' (*ib.* i. 93). Though Pelham was nominally prime minister, the parliamentary influence and the superior rank of Newcastle placed him practically on an equality with his brother in the cabinet, and gave rise to considerable difficulties when their views were at variance. Though in favour of bringing the war to an early conclusion, Pelham was not strong enough to openly oppose the king and Carteret. One of his first speeches as prime minister was in favour of a grant for the maintenance of British troops in Flanders (*Parl. Hist.* xiii. 399, 416–18), and he conciliated the king by upholding the employment of the Hanoverian troops (*ib.* xiii. 463). Pelham's attempt in February 1744 to impose an extra duty on sugar was defeated by the secret intrigues of the Prince of Wales and Carteret, and he was obliged to have recourse to the surplus arising from the additional duties which had been imposed on spirituous liquors in the previous year (*ib.* xiii. 639–41, 652–5). On 17 Nov. 1744 Hardwicke presented a memorial from Pelham and his supporters in the cabinet to the king, urging him to take steps for a general pacification. This led to the retirement of Carteret (now Earl Granville), who was unable to find sufficient support among the opposition for his war policy. A rearrangement of the ministry on what was called a 'Broad-Bottom' basis followed, and, by the admission of several tories, Pelham was enabled to carry out his policy of a close alliance with the Dutch, and to compel the king, as elector of Hanover, to join as a principal in the war. Pelham's plans were also forwarded by the Jacobite rebellion of 1745. His conduct, however, in dealing with that outbreak was weak and vacillating, and he endeavoured to throw all the responsibility of resistance on Argyll. In a letter of 11 Dec. 1745 to the English minister at the Hague, Pelham gives a most desponding account of affairs at home and abroad (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, i. 282–3). The king becoming very dissatisfied with his ministers, whom he styled 'pitifull fellows' (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 1st Rep. App. p. 115), formed a plan for the recall of Granville with Bath to power. On learning this, Pelham resigned on 11 Feb. 1746, but was reinstated in office on the 14th, in consequence of the inability of Granville and Bath to form an administration (*Marchmont Papers*, 1831, i. 171–4). Pelham was now able to insist upon the inclusion of Pitt in the ministry, which from that time forth had practically no opposition to encounter either from the court or in parliament. In April 1747 the lords took measures against the publishers of their debates. Pelham refused to take a similar course in the commons, saying, 'Let them alone; they make better speeches for us than we can make for ourselves' (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, i. 355). Differing from Newcastle and the king, Pelham was from the first desirous to accept the French proposals for peace, which ultimately resulted in the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle on 7 Oct. 1748 (Chalmers, *Collection of Treaties*, 1790, i. 424–67). In his defence of the peace in the House of Commons on 29 Nov. 1748 (*Parl. Hist.* xiv. 346), Pelham argued that 'it must certainly be a bad peace indeed if it be worse than a successless war,' and quoted the lines:

Si quid novisti rectius istis,
Candidus imperti; si non, his utere mecum.

Pelham now devoted himself to the reduction of the national expenditure, and to the rearrangement of the finances. In the winter of 1749 he successfully carried out an extensive scheme for the reduction of the interest on the national debt to three per cent. (*ib.* xiv. 619–21). At the end of the following year the question of the Duke of Bedford's resignation caused a violent quarrel between Newcastle and Pelham, which for a time entirely suspended their private intercourse, and nearly broke up the ministry. The dissolution of the Leicester House party consequent on the death of the Prince of Wales (20 March 1751) was on the whole favourable to Pelham; but the discussions on the regency bill which ensued lost him the friendship of the Duke of Cumberland. In April 1751 Pelham expressed a wish to retire and take the sinecure office of auditor of the exchequer, but was dissuaded by the king. In June 1751 Pelham consented to Granville joining the ministry as lord president of the council. A curious account of the negotiations between Pelham and Granville was given to the House of Commons on 20 Feb. 1784, by Lord Nugent, who was the intermediary on that occasion (*Parl. Hist.* xxiv. 634). In the reform of the calendar which was adopted during this session Pelham cordially concurred (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, ii. 178). In November 1751 he took part in the debate on the land forces for the ensuing year, and drew a distinction between a standing army maintained against law, and one maintained by law (*Parl. Hist.* xiv. 1118). His resistance to the reduction of the land tax gave rise to the following paraphrase of the well-known epigram on Sir John Vanbrugh:

> Lie heavy on him, land, for he
> Laid many a heavy tax on thee

(*ib.* xiv. 1132; Walpole, *Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, 1847, i. 219). Contrary to his own convictions, and in defiance of his previous policy, he was induced by the king in January 1752 to propose the grant of a subsidy to the elector of Saxony. In the same session he continued his financial reforms by carrying a measure for the consolidation and simplification of the national debt (25 Geo. II, cap. 27). With his usual tolerance, he supported a bill for the naturalisation of the Jews, which became law in 1753 (*Parl. Hist.* xiv. 1412), but was repealed in the following year, with Pelham's consent, owing to the popular clamour against it (*ib.* xv. 142). He was 'not unfriendly to the scheme' of founding the British Museum, but was averse to raising the money by means of a lottery (Edwards, *Lives of the Founders of the British Museum*, 1870, pt. i. pp. 307–9). Though he supported Lord Hardwicke's bill for preventing clandestine marriages (26 Geo. II, cap. 33), his private opinions on the subject are disputed (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, ii. 267; Walpole, *Letters*, 1857, ii. 335). Pelham died at Arlington Street, Piccadilly, on 6 March 1754, from an attack of erysipelas, which is said to have been brought on by immoderate eating and want of exercise (*ib.* ii. 374). He was buried in the Pelham vault in Laughton Church, near Lewes. On hearing the news of his death, the king is said to have exclaimed, 'Now I shall have no more peace' (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, ii. 302).

Pelham was a timid and peace-loving politician, without any commanding abilities or much strength of character. He was a good man of business, and both an able and an economical financier. His temper was somewhat peevish, but his manners were conciliatory, and his opinions were tolerant. Though not a brilliant orator, he was an able debater and an excellent parliamentary tactician. His speeches were marked by readiness and common-sense; but the 'candour and openness of his temper,' according to Lord Hardwicke in his 'Parliamentary Journal,' 'led him occasionally to depreciate the resources of the country, and to magnify the strength of the rival power' (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, ii. 105). It is true that he chiefly maintained his influence in parliament by an elaborate system of corruption; but Horace Walpole, who hated him, believed that he 'would never have wet his finger [in corruption] if Sir Robert Walpole had not dipped up to the elbow; but as he did dip, and as Mr. Pelham was persuaded that it was as necessary for him to be minister as it was for Sir Robert Walpole, he plunged as deep' (*Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 234–5). Pelham's private life was respectable, except that he was a 'professed gamester' (Glover, *Memoirs by a celebrated Literary and Political Character*, 1814, p. 48). Even Horace Walpole admits 'that he lived without abusing his power, and died poor' (*Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 371).

A genuine attachment existed between Pelham and his brother, the Duke of Newcastle; and on Pelham's marriage, Newcastle assigned to him one-half of the property which he had inherited from his father (*ib.* ii. 305). In 1729 Pelham purchased Esher Place in Surrey, which, with the aid of Kent,

he greatly improved and embellished. Pope, in the 'Epilogue to the Satires' (*Dialogue II*, pp. 66–7), refers to

> Esher's peaceful grove
> Where Kent and nature vie for Pelham's love;

and Thomson to 'Esher's groves,' where 'from courts and senates Pelham finds repose' (*Seasons*, 'Summer,' ll. 1429–32). Esher Place was sold by Pelham's grandson Lewis, second baron Sondes, in July 1805, to Mr. John Spicer, who pulled down Pelham's house with the exception of the old gatehouse, known as Wolsey's Tower, which is still standing.

'An Ode to the Right Honourable Henry Pelham, Esq., on his being appointed first Commissioner of the Treasury,' appears in the 'Works of Sir Charles Hanbury Williams' (1822, ii. 71–3). Garrick's well-known ode on Pelham's death was first published in the 'London Magazine' for March 1754 (xxiii. 135–6). Pelham's correspondence with Lord Essex 1732–6 (Addit. MSS. 27732–5), and with the Duke of Newcastle and others, 1716–54 (*ib.* 32686–33066), is preserved in the British Museum. His letters to President Dundas, 1748–52, are among the manuscripts at Arniston (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 3rd Rep. App. p. 415). Pelham was a frequent subject of caricatures, in many of which he was styled 'King Henry the Ninth' (cf. *Cat. Satirical and Political Prints and Drawings in British Museum*, ed. Stephens and Hawkins).

Pelham married, on 29 October 1726, Lady Catherine Manners, eldest daughter of John, second duke of Rutland, by whom he had two sons and six daughters. Both his sons died in November 1739, of ulcerated sore throat, which became subsequently known as the 'Pelham fever' (Coxe, *Memoirs of the Pelham Administration*, ii. 305). Four of his daughters survived infancy, viz. (1) Catherine, born 24 July 1727, who married on 3 Oct. 1744, her cousin, Henry Fynes Clinton, ninth earl of Lincoln, afterwards second duke of Newcastle (cr. 1756), and died on 27 July 1760; (2) Frances, born on 18 Aug. 1728, who died unmarried on 10 Jan. 1804; (3) Grace, born in January 1735, who married, on 12 Oct. 1752, the Hon. Lewis Watson, afterwards first baron Sondes, and died on 31 July 1777; and (4) Mary, born in September 1739, who died unmarried. His widow, who was ranger of Greenwich Park, died at her house at Whitehall on 17 Feb. 1780, aged 79.

There is a portrait of Pelham by Hoare of Bath in the National Portrait Gallery. Another portrait was exhibited by the Duke of Newcastle at the Loan Collection of National Portraits at South Kensington in 1867 (Catalogue, No. 336); and a third, also by William Hoare, was lent by the Earl of Chichester to the Guelph exhibition in 1891. There are engravings of Pelham by Houston, after both Hoare and Shackleton.

[Besides Coxe's Memoirs of the Pelham Administration and the other works quoted in the text, the following books have been consulted: Lecky's Hist. of England in the Eighteenth Century, 1883, vol. i.; Mahon's Hist. of England, 1858, vols. iii. iv.; Torrens's History of Cabinets, 1894; Dodington's Diary, 1784; Chesterfield's Letters, 1845, ii. 457; Macaulay's Essays, 1885, pp. 286–7, 293, 299–303; Ballantyne's Life of Carteret, 1887; Earle's English Premiers, 1871, i. 79–126; Georgian Era, 1832, i. 298–9; Lower's Notices of the Pelham Family, 1873, pp. 49–51; Horsfield's Sussex, 1835, i. 182–5, 351–3; Brayley's Surrey, 1850, ii. 435–441; Thorne's Environs of London, 1876, i. 203–205; Collins's Peerage of England, 1812, v. 518–521; Burke's Peerage, 1894, p. 280; Foster's Alumni Oxonienses, 1500–1714, iii. 1138; Alumni Westmonasterienses, 1852, pp. 544, 555, 556; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, pt. ii. pp. 47, 56, 67, 79, 81, 92, 104; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. vi. 168.] G. F. R. B.

**PELHAM, HENRY THOMAS**, third Earl of Chichester (1804–1886), second, but eldest surviving, son of Thomas, second earl [q. v.], born in Stratton Street, Piccadilly, on 25 Aug. 1804, was educated at Westminster and Trinity College, Cambridge. On 24 April 1824 he entered the army as a cornet in the 6th dragoons, but, by the influence of the Duke of Wellington, was able on 14 Oct. of the same year to exchange into the royal horse-guards (*Addit. MS.* 33230, ff. 22–4). He became lieutenant in 1827, captain (unattached) in January 1828, and major in the army in 1841. In 1844 he resigned his commission. He was afterwards an active supporter of the volunteer movement. In 1825 the Duke of Newcastle invited him, without making any stipulation regarding Pelham's political principles, to accept his nomination for the parliamentary representation of the duke's borough of Newark; but Pelham succeeded to the earldom in 1826, before the election, and Mr. Gladstone became member in his stead. Chichester held whig opinions, but was not an ardent partisan. He was deeply interested in religious, social, and educational questions. On 22 Feb. 1841 he was appointed an ecclesiastical commissioner, and on 30 Jan. 1847 became a commissioner to report on the question of equalising the pecuniary value of episcopal sees. When the Church Estates'

Committee was appointed in 1850 Chichester was made head of the board, with the title of first church estates' commissioner. He retained the position until October 1878, and after his retirement from it continued to be an ecclesiastical commissioner. To him were to a large extent due the important reforms carried out in the management and distribution of church revenues. Chichester was also for half a century president of the Church Missionary Society, and was connected with the Evangelical Alliance, the British and Foreign Bible Society, and the Church of England Temperance Society. He was also interested in the management of prisons; becoming in 1843 a commissioner of Pentonville prison, and editing in 1863 Sir Joshua Jebb's 'Reports and Observations on the Discipline and Management of Convict Prisons.' In spite of his evangelical views, he spoke on 16 July 1845 in support of the grant to Maynooth College. He was a regular attendant, and not infrequent speaker, in the House of Lords.

Chichester was appointed lord lieutenant of Sussex on 21 Nov. 1860, where he was very popular. He died at Stanmer House on 16 March 1886. He married, on 18 Aug. 1828, Lady Mary Brudenell, fifth daughter of the sixth Earl of Cardigan. She died on 22 May 1867, leaving issue four sons and three daughters. The eldest son, Walter John (*b.* 1838), who was M.P. for Lewes from 1865 to 1874, succeeded to the title.

[G. E. C[okayne]'s Complete Peerage; Doyle's Baronage; Brighton Argus, 17 March 1886 (with portrait); Times, 17 March 1886; Record, 19 March 1886; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Parl. Debates, 3rd ser. passim.] G. LE G. N.

**PELHAM, HERBERT** (1600–1673), colonist, born probably in Sussex, but possibly in Lincolnshire, in 1600, was the eldest son of Herbert Pelham and Penelope, a younger daughter of Thomas West, second lord De la Warr. He must be carefully distinguished from a very distant relative, Herbert, son of Sir William Pelham, fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford, who was born in 1602. The colonist, who was at no university, was brought up as a country gentleman. His uncle, Thomas Pelham, was a member of the Virginia Company, and Herbert Pelham and a younger brother William interested themselves in projects of colonisation.

In 1629 Pelham joined the Massachusetts Company. It would appear from Winthrop's 'Journal' that he arranged to sail with Winthrop for Massachusetts in the Arabella on Easter Monday 1630, but, though the younger brother went, Herbert did not actually go out till later, possibly 1635. There he became a freeman of the company, a prominent citizen, and a captain of the militia. He took an active part in the settlement of Sudbury, and later resided at Cambridge, where, in 1640, he and his family narrowly escaped being burnt to death with their house. He was made the first treasurer of Harvard College in 1643. In the following year he seems to have been in England; but, returning to the colony, became a member of the court of assistants in 1645. In 1646 he was one of the commissioners of the United Colonies for arranging a treaty with the Narragansett and Niantic Indians. In 1647 he seems to have returned to England for good, residing at Bures in Essex for some years, and interesting himself in the endeavour to form a society for the religious instruction of the Indians. Ultimately he removed to Suffolk, where he died on 1 July 1673. His property, according to his will, lay chiefly in Lincolnshire, Ireland, and Massachusetts Bay; he was heir to his younger brother, who died before him, in August 1667.

Pelham married, first, Jemima, daughter of Thomas Waldegrave, who died before his emigration; secondly, in 1638, in New England, Elizabeth, daughter of Godfrey Basseville or Bosvile of Gunthwaite, Yorkshire, and widow of Roger Harlakenden. By each wife he had five children. His daughter Penelope was wife of Josiah Winslow. It was his sister Penelope who married Governor Richard Bellingham [q. v.]

[Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography; Herbert Pelham, his Ancestors, &c., by Colonel Chester, republished 1879 from the Collections of the Massachusetts Hist. Society; Bennett Roll, a genealogical record, compiled by a relative of Pelham.] C. A. H.

**PELHAM, JOHN DE** (*d.* 1429), treasurer of England, was the son of Sir John Pelham, a Sussex knight who fought in the wars of Edward III in France, and of his wife Joan Herbert of Winchelsea. He was in the service of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, and afterwards of his son, Henry of Derby, subsequently Henry IV. On 7 Dec. 1393 he was appointed by John of Gaunt constable of Pevensey Castle for life. He was possibly one of the scanty band that landed with Henry at Ravenspur in 1399, and was certainly with him at Pontefract soon after his landing. Meanwhile his wife Joan Pelham sustained something like a siege from Richard's partisans in Pevensey Castle. An interesting letter, written in English and dated 25 July, from Joan to John is printed in Collins's 'Peerage,' viii. 95–6 (1779). Hallam, who reprints it in modern spelling (*Litera-*

*ture of Europe*, i. 55–6), describes it as 'one of the earliest instances of female penmanship.' Pelham was knighted at Henry's coronation on 13 Oct. 1399, and is therefore reckoned among the original knights of the Bath. On 24 Oct. he received the honour of bearing the royal sword before the king. He conducted the deposed Richard II from Leeds Castle in Kent to the Tower (*Chronique de la Traïson*, App. p. 296, Engl. Hist. Soc.) Henry IV. granted to Pelham and his heirs male on 12 Feb. 1400 the constableship of Pevensey and the honour of Laigle, of which Pevensey was the chief place. This involved a paramount position over the whole rape of Pevensey. Pelham served as knight of the shire for Sussex in the first, second, fourth, fifth, and sixth parliaments of Henry IV, as sheriff of Surrey and Sussex in 1401. In 1402 he served on a commission to repair the banks of Pevensey marsh, and to draw up a survey and statutes (Dugdale, *Hist. of Imbanking and Drayning*, pp. 95–7). As constable of Pevensey he was busied in defending the coast from threatened French invasions. In the 'Unlearned' parliament of October 1404 he was appointed, with Thomas, lord Furnival, treasurer of war to collect the special subsidies granted by the commons, and to apply the results strictly to the purpose for which it was granted (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 546 *b*). The date of their appointment was 11 Nov., and their earliest recorded payment was on 18 Nov. (Wylie, *Henry IV*, ii. 111). But the task was a thankless one. In the long session of the parliament of 1406 Pelham, who joined with Furnival in begging to be relieved of their duties, was discharged on 19 June by the king, at the request of the estates (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 577, 584–5). But Pelham petitioned for and obtained the appointment of auditors to the war accounts. From these he ultimately obtained his discharge. He was moreover one of the committee appointed to inspect the engrossing of the roll of parliament (*ib.* iii. 585).

On 5 Feb. 1405 Pelham was made keeper of the New Forest, and on 8 Dec. of the same year steward of the duchy of Lancaster. In March 1405 Edward, duke of York, was put under his charge at Pevensey, while in October of the same year Pelham conducted his prisoner to the king's presence, probably at Kenilworth (Wylie, ii. 42, 46, 48; *Fœdera*, viii. 387, 388). The state of Pevensey was, however, hardly secure. In October Pelham complained to the council that the keep had partly fallen down (*Ord. Privy Council*, i. 261). In February 1406 Pelham had the custody of Edmund, earl of March, and his brother Roger, with an allowance of five hundred marks a year for their maintenance. In 1409 these prisoners were transferred from his custody to that of the Prince of Wales. In 1407 Pelham became chief butler of Chichester and of all the ports of Sussex. On 22 Jan. 1412 he succeeded Lord Scrope of Masham as treasurer. This shows that Pelham acted politically along with Archbishop Arundel, who had just been reappointed chancellor. On 11 July 1412 he was appointed with others to muster the troops going with the Duke of Clarence to Aquitaine (*Fœdera*, viii. 757). On 12 Nov. 1412 he was rewarded with fresh grants, including the rape of Hastings, with all the franchises exercised by the dukes of Brittany and Lancaster, its former lords. He was nominated an executor of Henry IV's will (*Rot. Parl.* iv. 5 *a*).

After Henry V's accession Pelham was deprived of the treasury on 21 March, and replaced by the Earl of Arundel. He was still, however, much employed. He was put on a commission appointed on 31 May 1414 to negotiate for an alliance with France, or to revive Henry's claims to the French throne (*Fœdera*, ix. 133). Pelham is sometimes said to have accompanied Henry V on his Norman expedition in 1417, but it was really his son, John, who did this (*Ord. Privy Council*, ii. 218). In 1414 for a short time he was made guardian of the captive James of Scotland at Pevensey (Wylie, ii. 403). In February 1415 he received a grant of 700*l.* for James's custody and maintenance (*Fœdera*, ix. 203). Many years after, in 1423, he was on the commission appointed to negotiate for King James's release (*Rot. Parl.* iv. 211). He was named executor to Thomas, duke of Clarence (*Fœdera*, ix. 462; Nichols, *Royal Wills*, p. 232). In 1422 Sir John Mortimer was committed to his custody at Pevensey (*Ord. Privy Council*, ii. 332, iii. 11). He was in custody of the queen-dowager Joan of Navarre, who expiated her crime of necromancy by a long imprisonment at Pevensey. He was on a commission to borrow money for the king in Sussex and Kent. He was also an executor of the will of Henry V. Under Henry VI he again sat in parliament in 1422 and 1427, and in 1423 negotiated for a peace with Scotland and the release of King James. He drew up his last will on 8 Feb. 1429, and died four days later. He ordered that his body should be buried in the Cistercian abbey of Robertsbridge. He gave the land for the rebuilding of the Austin priory of Holy Trinity at Hastings, which had to be now removed from its former site within the town, which had been swept away by the sea, to be rebuilt at Warbleton, ten

miles away. He was therefore regarded as the founder of the 'New Priory of Holy Trinity beside Hastings' (*Monasticon*, vi. 168).

He married Joan, daughter of Sir John Escures, and had by her a son named John, his successor, and two daughters, Agnes and Joan, who respectively married John Colbrond of Boreham, and Sir John St. Clair. A valuation of his estates made in 1403 is printed by Collins and translated by Lower. The rental amounted to the large sum of 870*l.* 5*s.* 3*d.* Besides his wife's letter already mentioned, four familiar letters to him in English are printed by Collins.

[Collins's Peerage, 1779, viii. 94–109; Lower's Historical and Genealogical Notices of the Pelham Family (privately printed, 1873), pp. 10–21, is mainly based on Collins, which it often follows verbally; Rot. Parl. vols. iii. and iv.; Nicolas's Proceedings and Ordinances of the Privy Council, vols. i. ii. and iii.; Rymer's Fœdera; Ramsay's Lancaster and York; Wylie's Henry IV, ii. 42, 46, 48, and especially ii. 111–12; Sussex Archæological Collections, x. 133–4; Return of Members of Parliament, pt. i. pp. 259, 261, 266, 267, 270, 273, 304, 314.] T. F. T.

PELHAM, JOHN THOMAS, D.D. (1811–1894), bishop of Norwich, third son of Thomas, second earl of Chichester [q. v.], by Lady Mary Henrietta Juliana, eldest daughter of Francis Godolphin, fifth duke of Leeds, was born on 21 June 1811. He was educated at Westminster School and Christ Church, Oxford, where he matriculated on 5 June 1829, graduated B.A. in 1832, and proceeded M.A. and D.D. in 1857. He was ordained deacon by the bishop of London (Blomfield) in 1834, and placed in sole charge of the parish of Eastergate in the diocese of Chichester, where he laid the foundations of a lifelong friendship with Cardinal Manning; subsequently he was instituted on 23 May 1837 to the rectory of Bergh Apton, Norfolk, which he held until 1852. In 1847 he was made honorary canon of Norwich Cathedral, and chaplain to the queen, and in 1852 perpetual curate of Christ Church, Hampstead. In 1855, on the recommendation of Lord Palmerston, he was instituted to the crown living of St. Marylebone, Middlesex, and in 1857 was consecrated, on 30 April, to the see of Norwich, vacant by the resignation of Bishop Hinds. His preferment is understood to have been due to the influence of Lord Shaftesbury. The consecration ceremony was performed by Archbishop Sumner and Bishops Tait and Sumner. His episcopate lasted more than thirty-six years, a longer term than that of any of his predecessors, except Bishop Le Spencer [q. v.], who held the see from 1370 to 1406, and was rendered memorable by a marked revival of christian life and discipline. At once zealous and judicious, and an excellent organiser, Pelham was indefatigable in parochial visitation, and applied a gentle but effectual stimulus to the dormant energies of honorary canons and rural deans. He also provided by means of a diocesan church association for the building and restoration of churches, parsonages, and schools throughout the diocese, and in 1879 he instituted a diocesan conference which has met regularly from that date. Though a strong evangelical, he viewed the high-church movement without marked disfavour. He advocated the reform of convocation by the consolidation of the provinces of Canterbury and York, a readjustment of the proportion of *ex officio* to elected members, and an extension of the franchise to all licensed clergymen in priest's orders. He also formed a scheme for the augmentation of small benefices at the expense of episcopal emoluments. Early in 1893 Pelham resigned the see, and retired to Thorpe, a suburb of Norwich, where he died suddenly on 1 May 1894.

Pelham married, on 6 Nov. 1845, Henrietta (*d.* 31 Dec. 1893), second daughter of Thomas William Tatton of Wythenshawe Hall, Cheshire, by whom he left issue three sons and one daughter. His eldest son, Henry Francis Pelham, holds the chair of ancient history at Oxford.

[Foster's Peerage, Chichester; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Foster's Index Eccles.; Barker's Westminster School Register; Clergy List; Crockford's Clerical Directory, 1893; Eastern Daily Press, 4 Feb. 1893, memoir, with portrait, reproduced in Norwich Diocesan Calendar for 1894, p. 151; Times and Guardian, 2 May 1894; Review of the Churches, 16 May 1894, p. 74; Ormerod's Cheshire (ed. Helsby), iii. 611.] J. M. R.

PELHAM, PETER (*d.* 1751), mezzotint-engraver, son of Peter Pelham of Chichester, was born, according to Redgrave, about 1684, but more probably some ten years later. His father died at Chichester in 1756, aged over eighty, and a sister Helen was living there in 1762. The earliest date on his plates is 1720, and between that year and 1726 he produced a number of excellent portraits, which were published in London, some of them by himself; these include Queen Anne, Lord Carteret, Lord Wilmington, George I, and the Duke of Newcastle, after Kneller; Oliver Cromwell, after Walker; the Earl of Derby, after Winstanley; Lord Molesworth, and Dr. Edmund Gibson, bishop of London, after Murray; James Gibb, the architect, after Huyssing or Hysing; and Mrs. Cent-

livre, after Firmin. In 1726 Pelham emigrated to America with his wife Martha and two sons, Peter and Charles, and settled at Boston, where he established a school, in which were taught writing, reading, dancing, painting, and needlework, and practised both as painter and engraver until the end of his life; he was the earliest artist resident in America, and his portrait of the Rev. Cotton Mather, published in 1727, is believed to have been the first mezzotint plate ever executed there. Pelham's American prints, of which thirteen are catalogued by Chaloner Smith, comprise portraits of the Rev. Charles Brockwell; Thomas Hollis, after Highmore; Benjamin Colman, Joseph Sewall, and Governor W. Shirley, all after Smibert. In 1748 Pelham married, at Boston, as his second wife, Mary Copley, widow of Richard Copley and daughter of John Singleton of Quinville Abbey, co. Clare, and thus became the stepfather and first instructor of John Singleton Copley [q. v.], the painter. Mrs. Copley appears to have kept a tobacco store, which was added to the already varied attractions of the Pelham establishment. He died in December 1751, and was buried on the 14th of that month at Trinity Church, Boston; his widow survived him until 1789. Of his sons by his first wife, Peter Pelham settled in 1749 in Virginia, William Pelham died at Boston in 1761, and Charles Pelham became a schoolmaster at Medford in Massachusetts, purchased land at Newton in the same state, married Mary Tyler, niece of Sir William Pepperell, and left a daughter, married to Thomas Curtis, and mother of Charles Pelham Curtis.

By his second marriage he had a son, Henry Pelham (1749–1806), who painted historical subjects and miniatures, and exhibited at the Royal Academy in 1777 and 1778, when he was residing in London with his half-brother, Copley; later he went to Ireland, intending to practise as an engineer, became agent of Lord Lansdowne's estates in Kerry, and was accidentally drowned in the Kenmare river in 1806. He was married to the daughter of William Butler of Castlecrine, co. Clare, but left no surviving issue. A good mezzotint plate by W. Ward of 'The Finding of Moses,' from a picture by Henry Pelham, was published in 1787. The first picture sent by Copley to England, 'A Boy with a Squirrel,' was a portrait of Henry Pelham.

[Massachusetts Historical Society's Proceedings, May 1866; Perkins's Life of J. S. Copley; J. Chaloner Smith's British Mezzotinto Portraits; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists.]

F. M. O'D.

PELHAM, THOMAS, fourth Baronet and first Baron Pelham (1650?–1712), eldest son of Sir John Pelham, third baronet, by Lady Lucy, second daughter of Robert Sidney, second earl of Leicester of that name, was born about 1650. He was returned to parliament for East Grinstead, Sussex, on 25 Oct. 1678, and retained the seat until 13 Aug. 1679, when he was returned for Lewes. He continued to represent Lewes until July 1702, when, being doubly returned, he elected to sit for the county of Sussex. Pelham belonged to the whig party, and held office as commissioner of customs from 20 April 1689 to 24 March 1691, and as lord commissioner of the treasury from 18 March 1689–90 to 21 March 1690–1, again from 1 May 1698 to 1 June 1699, and from 29 March 1701 to 8 May 1702. He succeeded his father as fourth baronet in January 1702–3, was sworn in as vice-admiral of the coast of Sussex on 21 May 1705, and by letters patent, dated 16 Dec. 1706, was created Baron Pelham of Laughton, and took his seat in the House of Lords accordingly (30 Dec.) He died at his seat, Halland Place, Sussex, on 23 Feb. 1711–12. His remains were interred (8 March) in the chancel of Laughton parish church.

Pelham married twice, viz.: (1) Elizabeth (*d.* 1681), daughter of Sir William Jones, attorney-general to Charles II; (2) Lady Grace (*d.* 1700), youngest daughter of Gilbert Holles, third earl of Clare. By his first wife he had issue, two daughters only, viz.: Lucy (*d.* 1689), and Elizabeth (married in July 1698 to Charles, second Viscount Townshend [q. v.], died 11 May 1711). By his second wife he had issue two sons, viz.: Thomas, who succeeded him [see Pelham-Holles, Thomas, Duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and Newcastle-under-Lyne], and Henry [see Pelham, Henry, 1695?–1754], and five daughters: (1) Grace (*d.* 1710), wife of George Naylor of Hurstmonceaux, York herald; (2) Frances (*d.* 1756), to Christopher Wandesford, viscount Castlecomer; (3) Gertrude, to David Polhill of Otford, Kent; (4) Lucy, to Henry Clinton, earl of Lincoln (afterwards Duke of Newcastle-under-Lyne [q. v.]; and (5) Margaret, to Sir John Shelley of Mitchelgrove, Sussex.

[Lower's Pelham Family; Berry's County Genealogies (Sussex); Misc. Geneal. et Herald. 2nd ser. i. 266, iv. 62; Boyer's Annals of Queen Anne, 1711–12; Collins's Peerage (Brydges), v. 517; Luttrell's Brief Relation of State Affairs; Horsfield's Lewes, i. 340, and Sussex, i. 184; Members of Parliament (official list); Lords' Journals, xviii. 191, xx. 4; Cobbett's Parl. Hist.

vol. v.; Haydn's Book of Dignities, ed. Ockerby; Diary of Henry Sidney, ed. Blencowe (1843).]

J. M. R.

**PELHAM, THOMAS**, first Earl of Chichester (1728–1805), born on 28 Feb. 1728, was the son and heir of Thomas Pelham, esq., of Stanmer, Sussex, by Annetta, daughter of Thomas Bridges, esq., of Constantinople. His grandfather, Henry Pelham, clerk of the Pells, who died in 1721, was a younger brother of the first Baron Pelham of Laughton. The father, after having been a merchant at Constantinople, was M.P. for Lewes from 1727 to 1737. He died on 21 Dec. 1737 (*Gent. Mag.* p. 767). His correspondence between 1718 and 1737 is among the Pelham MSS. (Addit. MS. 33085).

After spending a few months at Cambridge, the younger Pelham went in 1749 to Florence, where he was entertained by Sir Horace Mann, and formed an unsuitable attachment for the Countess Acciajuoli. In the summer of 1750 he was at Hanover, and dined with the elector.

Meanwhile he had been elected to parliament, on 13 Dec. 1749, for Rye. Being appointed a commissioner of trade on 6 April 1754, he accepted the offer of a seat for Sussex from his cousin, the Duke of Newcastle, and represented the county from May 1754 till Nov. 1768. In 1761 Pelham was named a lord of the admiralty. On 23 Oct. 1762 his relative Newcastle informed him of his intention not to serve under Lord Bute, and asked Pelham's advice. In the same year, when the duke obtained for himself the barony of Pelham of Stanmer, the reversion of it was secured by the patent to Pelham (Walpole, *Mem. George III*, i. 156; Jesse, *George III*, i. 122).

On the formation of the first Rockingham ministry in July 1765, Pelham was named comptroller of the household, and was sworn of the privy council. When Newcastle followed Rockingham out of office a year later, Pelham resigned. On this occasion Newcastle recommended all his friends to the king's favour, 'and my cousin Pelham in particular.' But neither Newcastle nor the Duke of Portland thought Pelham's resignation necessary. On the death, in Nov. 1768, of Newcastle, with whom Pelham was in confidential correspondence till the last, Pelham became Baron Pelham of Stanmer and head of the family. In 1773 he obtained the lucrative sinecure of the surveyor-generalship of the customs of London, the reversion to which he had obtained in 1756.

From 1774 to 1775 he also held the nominal office of chief justice in eyre north of the Trent, which he gave up on his appointment as master of the great wardrobe. The offer of the latter office was 'quite unexpected and unasked.' The office was abolished in 1782, and Pelham was its last holder. He continued to attend occasionally the debates in the House of Lords, and in 1788 his name was attached to the two protests drawn up against Pitt's provision for the expected regency (Rogers, *Protests of the Lords*, iii. 228, 230). Walpole ranks him among 'court ciphers,' and always refers contemptuously to 'Tommy Pelham.' He was intimate with the Princess Amelia, second daughter of George II, and when she died in 1786 acted as one of her executors (*Addit. MS.* 33135).

On 23 June 1801 Pelham was created Earl of Chichester. He died, on 8 Jan. 1805, at his country house of Stanmer, Sussex, and was buried at Laughton in the same county.

Pelham married, on 15 June 1754, at Mortlake, Anne, daughter and heiress of Frederick Meinhard Frankland, third son of Sir Thomas Frankland, bart. She died on 5 March 1813, having had three sons and four daughters. Three of the latter and one of the former predeceased their parents. The surviving daughter, Amelia, died unmarried in 1847. The eldest son, Thomas, and the third son, George, are noticed separately.

[The Pelham MSS. presented to the British Museum in 1887 by the present Earl of Chichester contain a large quantity of private and official correspondence of the first earl. See also Lodge's Genealogy of the Peerage; G. E. C.'s Peerage; Ret. Memb. Parl.; Gent. Mag. 1805, i. 91; Ann. Reg. p. 459; Walpole's Corresp. 1891, ii. 221–2 *n*. iii. 48, iv. 287, 454, Mem. George III, i. 45, 156, ii. 194, Last Journals (Doran), i. 520; Haydn's Dict. of Dignities; Luard's Grad. Cant.; Horsfield's Hist. of Lewes, i. 340, gives the Pelham pedigree.]

G. Le G. N.

**PELHAM, THOMAS**, second Earl of Chichester (1756–1826), born in Spring Gardens, London, on 28 April 1756, was the eldest son of Thomas Pelham, first earl of Chichester [q.v.] He was educated at Westminster and Clare Hall, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. in 1775. In the autumn of 1775, in order to learn Spanish, he went to Madrid on a visit to Lord Grantham, a friend of his family, who was then ambassador there. After remaining nearly a year in Spain, he went to France and Italy. In December 1776 he stopped for a short time at Munich and Vienna, where he had an interview with Kaunitz. He arrived in England early in 1778, and for the next two or three years was occupied with his duties as an officer in the

Sussex militia. He became lieutenant-colonel of the regiment in 1794.

Pelham quickly developed a strong interest in public affairs. On 14 Sept. 1780 he was elected to the House of Commons for Sussex, and acted with the Rockingham whigs. His intimate friends soon included Fox, Windham, Lord Malmesbury, and Minto. In April 1782 he was appointed surveyor-general of the ordnance in Lord Rockingham's ministry. When he resigned office, together with Rockingham's successor, Lord Shelburne, in April 1783, George III expressed a hope that it would not be his final retirement. At the same time he was on intimate terms with the Prince of Wales (*Addit. MS.* 33128, ff. 103–105). In the summer of 1783 he reluctantly accepted the Duke of Portland's offer of the Irish secretaryship in the coalition administration (*Addit. MS.* 33100). According to Charlemont's biographer, he adroitly steered through a stormy session in the Irish House of Commons, in which he sat for Carrick (Hardy, *Memoirs of Lord Charlemont*, ii. 87). On the fall of Portland's government, Pelham declined the offer of Pitt, the new prime minister, to retain his office, but in January 1784 had 'a very full and open conversation with Pitt and Lord Sydney on Irish affairs.' Until the whig schism caused by the French revolution, he remained an active member of the opposition.

In 1785 he took exception to Pitt's Irish commercial proposals, and was a member of a committee appointed to inquire into Indian administration. On 2 March 1787 he moved the article charging Warren Hastings with breach of treaty and oppression in the matter of the rajah of Furruckabad (*Parl. Hist.* xxvi. 781 et seq.) During Hastings's trial Pelham spoke in support of the article of impeachment relating to the Begums of Oudh. In 1788 he declared himself in favour of regulation of the slave trade, in a debate initiated by Pitt; but he never submitted a promised proposition on the subject (*ib.* xxvii. 506).

Between 1789 and 1793 Pelham paid many prolonged visits to the continent. According to Lord Malmesbury, he was entrusted in June and July 1791 with letters to Lafayette and Barnave in Paris, interceding for the life of the king and queen; but he prudently burnt them (*Diary*, ii. 454). In the same year he visited Naples, where he dined with the king, and met Sir William and Lady Hamilton. In 1793, after a tour in Switzerland, he spent part of August in the Duke of York's quarters in Flanders. Early in 1794 Pelham definitely threw in his lot with the old whigs, who supported Pitt's foreign policy. Next year he took office under Pitt, becoming chief secretary to Lord Camden, the lord lieutenant of Ireland, who had replaced Lord Fitzwilliam. Before his arrival in Dublin in March Fitzgibbon, the lord chancellor, wrote to him: 'I do not know a man who could come over here that would be so likely to succeed in composing the country as you' (Lecky, vii. 93). Though opposed to catholic emancipation, Pelham wrote to a correspondent, when on his way to Ireland: 'I will not lend my hand to a job for a clique on either side of the water. Resurgat Respublica, ruat Pitt, Beresford, &c.' He had been elected member for Clogher in 1790, and represented that place till 1797, when he transferred himself to Armagh, and remained the representative of that city till the union. On 4 May 1795 he spoke against Grattan's emancipation bill, and thought that he thus inspired the protestants with a confidence in the English government which they had not felt for some time (*ib.* vii. 45, 103). In June Burke wrote to Pelham a long letter on Irish affairs, with especial reference to the newly established catholic seminaries (*Addit. MS.* 33101, ff. 191–2). But Pelham's health was bad; he was often in England, and soon wished to retire.

Mr. Lecky states that he spent more time in England than any Irish secretary since Grenville held office in 1782; yet he was in Ireland throughout the critical year 1797, during which his hope of pacifying Ireland sank very low (cf. *Addit. MS.* 32105, f. 327). After a severe illness he left Ireland in May 1798, on the eve of the rebellion. Castlereagh took his place temporarily, but Pelham never resumed it, and finally resigned in November. The king said of Pelham's withdrawal that it was 'the greatest loss and greatest disappointment he could have experienced.' Portland wrote, on 23 Dec. 1798, that the king hoped Pelham would be one of the commissioners in whom it was contemplated to vest the Irish government.

Throughout this period Pelham had retained his seat for Sussex at Westminster, and he attended the House of Commons when in London. On 22 Jan. 1801 Pelham moved, in an animated speech, the appointment of Addington as speaker (*Parl. Hist.* xxxv. 859; Colchester, *Diary*, i. 220). On 4 April he was voted chairman of the secret committee on the affairs of Ireland (Colchester, *Diary*, i. 263). On 13th instant he presented the report to the House of Commons, and on the next day moved for leave to bring in a bill to suspend the Habeas Corpus Act in Ireland.

After having declined the offer of the secretaryship at war, the St. Petersburg em-

bassy, and the presidency of the board of control, Pelham joined the Addington ministry as home secretary in 1801. In July of the same year, on his father's promotion to the earldom of Chichester, he took his seat in the House of Lords under his father's former title of Baron Pelham of Stanmer. He told Lord Malmesbury he only joined the cabinet by the express wish of the king. His relations with Addington were never smooth. He resented the withdrawal of colonial affairs from his department, and had differences with the prime minister both on foreign policy and Irish affairs. As home secretary Pelham had the superintendence of Irish affairs, and made vain efforts to draw all the Irish patronage into the hands of the home office (Colchester, *Diary*, i. 303 et seq.) In the House of Lords Pelham took the lead in defending the peace of Amiens; but he made a protest in the cabinet, in March 1802, against signing the definitive treaty in the same terms as the preliminaries. He did not resign, because he agreed with his colleagues on all other points (Malmesbury, *Diary*, iv. 73, 74). Malmesbury records in his diary a little later: 'Pelham seems to have little influence with his colleagues, or not to consult with them, or be consulted by them' (*ib.* iv. 192). When, in 1803, negotiations were opened by Addington with Pitt, Pelham offered to give up his office in order to facilitate matters; but as a recompense he expected the chancellorship of the duchy of Lancaster for life. The negotiations came to nothing; but Addington took advantage of Pelham's offer to remove him in July 1803 from the home office to the duchy, 'subject to the usual contingencies.' On 11 Sept. 1803 Pelham wrote to the king, detailing his grievances against Addington. Malmesbury and Lord Minto (Elliot) both thought Pelham badly treated (cf. Pellew, *Sidmouth*, ii. 220 *n.*)

Pelham was deprived of the duchy of Lancaster on Pitt's re-entry into office in May 1804. When Pelham delivered up the seals, the king, without consulting Pitt, gave him the stick of the captain of the yeomen of the guard, adding, 'It will be less a sinecure than formerly, as I intend living more with my great officers.' Pelham soon resigned that post, and affected to believe that Pitt had entrapped him into it (Malmesbury, *Diary*, iv. 326–7). In January 1805, on the death of his father, Pelham became second Earl of Chichester. In March 1806 he declined Windham's offer of the government of the Cape. From May 1807 till 1823 he was joint postmaster-general, and from 1823 till his death was sole holder of the office. In 1815–17 he was president of the Royal Institution. At the coronation of George IV in July 1821 he was 'assistant carver.' He died on 4 July 1826.

Pelham was popular among his friends. Minto, in speaking of Pelham's satisfaction at the provision made for Burke in 1789, says: 'He felt on the subject as if it concerned himself, or rather his own father or brother; for I never saw anybody less thoughtful of himself than Pelham, or more anxious for his friends.' Lord Holland (to some extent a hostile witness) sums him up as, 'though somewhat time-serving, a good-natured and prudent man' (*Memoirs of the Whig Party*, i. 112); and Sir Jonah Barrington, who saw much of him during his second term of office in Ireland, calls him 'moderate, honourable, sufficiently firm and sufficiently spirited.' George III admired in him 'a peculiar right-headedness.' Queen Charlotte, writing to Pelham on 15 Aug. 1803, said that the friendship she bore to his wife was 'almost that of a parent' (*Addit. MS.* 33131, f. 85). Pelham was a good landlord, and improved agriculture in Sussex. A portrait of him as Irish secretary was painted by Hoppner and engraved by Reynolds. In 1802 another was executed by the same artist, and a later portrait by Dance was engraved by Daniel.

Pelham married, on 16 July 1801, Mary Henrietta Juliana Osborne, daughter of the fifth Duke of Leeds by his first wife. She died in Grosvenor Place on 21 Oct. 1862, having had four sons and four daughters. Of the latter, one died unmarried. The eldest son died in childhood; the second, Henry Thomas, who succeeded to the earldom of Chichester, is, like the third son, John Thomas (1811–1894), bishop of Norwich, separately noticed.

The second son, Frederick Thomas Pelham (1808–1861), entered the navy in June 1823, was appointed lieutenant in 1830, and commander in 1835. During 1837–8 he commanded the Tweed on the Lisbon station, and for his services received the cross of San Fernando of Spain. On 3 July 1840 he was advanced to post rank; in 1855 was again in the Baltic as captain of the fleet to Sir Richard Saunders Dundas [q. v.] on board the Duke of Wellington. On 6 March 1858 he was promoted to be rear-admiral, and was shortly afterwards appointed a lord commissioner of the admiralty under Dundas. He died on 21 June 1861. He married in 1841 Ellen Kate, daughter of Rowland Mitchell of Upper Harley Street, and left issue (O'Byrne, *Nav. Biogr. Dict.*; *Navy Lists*).

[The Pelham or Newcastle MSS. in the British Museum afford full material up to 1804, after

which date they contain little that is of value, except some letters from W. Coxe, to whom Chichester afforded much assistance in getting together material for his lives of Sir R. Walpole and H. Pelham. Other authorities besides those cited are: Lodge's Genealogy of the Peerage; G. E. C.'s Peerage; Doyle's Baronage; Luard's Grad. Cant.; Ret. Memb. Parl.; Ann. Reg. 1826; Append. Chron. p. 265; Parl. Hist. xxv.–xxxvi. passim; Irish Parl. Debates; Lecky's Hist. of England, vols. vii. viii. passim; Auckland Corresp. iv. 198, 234, 342; Windham's Diary, pp. 302, 341, 390; Life and Letters of first Lord Minto, i. 132, 135, 146, 262–3, ii. 56, 389, iii. 205, 217, 337; Lord Colchester's Diary, i. 220, 224, 233, 263, 277–8, 303–6, 420; Barrington's Personal Sketches, i. 180; Public Characters, 1800; Jesse's Memoirs of George III, iii. 269, 303, 318, 376, 379; Evans's Cat. of Engraved Portraits, Nos. 8171–2, 14204–5.]

G. Le G. N.

**PELHAM, Sir WILLIAM** (*d.* 1587), lord justice of Ireland, was third son of Sir William Pelham of Laughton, Sussex, by his second wife, Mary, daughter of William, lord Sandys of the Vine, near Basingstoke in Hampshire. His father died in 1538, and Pelham was probably thirty when he was appointed captain of the pioneers at the siege of Leith in 1560. He was specially commended for his 'stout and valiant endeavour' on that occasion; but, according to Humfrey Barwick (*Brief Discourse*), his bad engineering was responsible for the wound inflicted during the assault on Arthur Grey, fourteenth lord Grey de Wilton [q. v.] He commanded the pioneers at Havre in November 1562 under the Earl of Warwick; and, being despatched to the assistance of Admiral Coligny in February 1563, was present at the capture of Caen. Returning to Havre in March, he was wounded during a skirmish with the forces of the Rhinegrave in June. He assisted at the negotiations for the surrender of Havre, and was a hostage for the fulfilment of the conditions of surrender. Subsequently, on his return to England, he was employed with Portinari and Concio in inspecting and improving the fortifications of Berwick. Much confidence was reposed in his judgment, and, being appointed lieutenant-general of the ordnance, he was chiefly occupied for several years in strengthening the defences of the kingdom. He accompanied Henry, lord Cobham, and Secretary Walsingham on a diplomatic mission to the Netherlands in the summer of 1578, and in the following summer he was sent to Ireland to organise the defence of the Pale against possible inroads by the O'Neills. He was knighted by Sir William Drury [q. v.], and, on the latter's death shortly afterwards, was chosen by the council lord justice *ad interim*.

The situation of affairs in Munster, recently convulsed by the rebellion of James Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald (*d.* 1579) [q. v.], and the menacing attitude of the Earl of Desmond [see Fitzgerald, Gerald, fifteenth Earl of Desmond] and his brother Sir John of Desmond, obliged him instantly to repair thither. His efforts at conciliation proving ineffectual, he caused the earl to be proclaimed a traitor; but, finding himself not sufficiently strong to attack Askeaton, he returned to Dublin by way of Galway, leaving the management of the war in Munster to the Earl of Ormonde [see Butler, Thomas, tenth Earl]. His proceeding gave considerable offence to Elizabeth, who was loth to involve herself in a new and costly campaign; and Pelham, though pleading in justification Drury's intentions and the absolute necessity of the proclamation, found no little difficulty in mitigating her displeasure, and earnestly begged to be relieved of his thankless office. It was soon apparent that Ormonde's individual resources were unequal to the task of reducing Desmond, and, yielding to pressure from England, Pelham in January 1580 prepared to go to Munster himself. At Waterford, where he was detained till about the middle of February for want of victuals, he determined, in consequence of rumours of a Spanish invasion, to entrust the government of the counties of Cork and Waterford to Sir William Morgan (*d.* 1584) [q. v.], and in conjunction with the Earl of Ormonde to direct his march through Connello and Kerry to Dingle, and 'to make as bare a country as ever Spaniard put his foot in, if he intend to make that his landing place.' He carried out his intention ruthlessly to the letter, killing, according to the 'Four Masters,' 'blind and feeble men, women, boys and girls, sick persons, idiots and old people.' Returning along the sea-coast, he sat down before Carrigafoyle Castle on 25 March. Two days later he carried the place by assault, and put the garrison to the sword, sparing neither man, woman, nor child. Terrified by the fate of Carrigafoyle, the garrison at Askeaton surrendered without a blow, and Desmond's last stronghold of Ballyloughan fell at the same time into Pelham's hands.

Fixing his headquarters at Limerick, the lord justice proceeded to carry out his scheme of bridling the Desmond district with garrisons, his object being to confine the struggle to Kerry, and, with the assistance of the fleet, under Admiral Winter, to starve the rebels into submission. Thinking, too, as he said, to strike while the iron was still hot, he sum-

moned a meeting of the noblemen and chief gentry of the province 'to see what they may be drawn to do against the rebels . . . and what relief of victuals we may have of them, and what contributions they will yield to ease some part of her majesty's charge hereafter.' But the attendance at the meeting was meagre in the extreme, and even among the best disposed Pelham found 'such a settled hatred of English government' that it was clearly useless to expect any general submission so long as Desmond was at liberty. Accordingly, after many delays, he and Ormonde entered Kerry together. From Castle Island, where they narrowly missed capturing the Earl of Desmond and Dr. Nicholas Sanders [q. v.], they advanced along the valley of the Maine, scouring the country as they went, to Dingle. At Dingle they found Admiral Winter, and, with his assistance, Pelham ransacked every cove and creek between Dingle and Cork, while Ormonde harried the interior of the country. The devotion of the western chiefs to the house of Desmond was unable to bear the strain placed upon it, and one by one they submitted to Ormonde. At Cork there was a great meeting of all the lords and chiefs, 'cisalpine and transalpine the mountains of Slieve Logher.' All were received to mercy except Lord Barrymore; but Pelham, acting on the advice of Sir Warham St. Leger [q. v.], took them along with him to Limerick. Desmond was still at large, but his power had been greatly crippled, and Pelham, though by no means blind to the serious consequences of a Spanish invasion, was fairly satisfied with the results of his expedition.

Pelham, who insisted on an unconditional surrender, was preparing for a fresh inroad into Kerry, when he received information that the new viceroy, Arthur, lord Grey de Wilton, had arrived at Dublin. He had more than once expressed his willingness to serve in a subordinate capacity under Grey, and it was originally intended to send Wallop with the sword of state to Dublin. But Pelham was offended at the lack of courtesy shown to him by the deputy's secretary, Edmund Spenser, and determined to go himself to Dublin. He was detained for some time about Athlone by bad weather, and it was not till 7 Sept. that he formally resigned the sword of state to the deputy in St. Patrick's Cathedral. There was some talk of making him president of Munster, and he accompanied Grey to Drogheda to inspect the fortifications; but being taken dangerously ill, he was obliged to return to Dublin in a wagon. He obtained permission to return to England, and left Ireland early in October. On 16 Jan. 1581 he was joined in commission with the Earl of Shrewsbury and Sir Henry Neville to convey the Queen of Scots from Sheffield to Ashby in Leicestershire. He still retained the office of lieutenant-general of the ordnance, but his disbursements so far exceeded the profits of his office that in 1585 he found himself 8,000*l.* in arrears by virtue of his office alone, while his personal debts amounted to at least 5,000*l.* The queen refused either to remit or stall his debts; and, certain defalcations in connection with his office, for which he was held responsible, coming to light about the same time, she made the payment of his arrears, much to Leicester's annoyance and the detriment of the service, absolutely essential to permitting him to serve under the Earl of Leicester in the Netherlands. In vain Pelham implored her, 'If you will not ease me of my debts, pray take my poor living into your possession, and give order for their payment, and imprest me some convenient sum to set me forward.' Elizabeth was inexorable; but the remonstrances of Leicester and Burghley induced her so far to relent as to accept a mortgage on his property, and in July 1586 he joined Leicester in the Netherlands.

Leicester, who thought highly of his military abilities, created him marshal of the army, though by doing so he gave great offence to Sir John Norris [q. v.] and his brother Sir Edward. As for Pelham, he shared Leicester's prejudices against the Norrises, and at a drinking bout on 6 Aug. at Count Hohenlohe's quarters at Gertruydenberg, he was the cause of a fierce and brutal brawl which nearly cost Sir Edward Norris [q. v.] his life (cf. Motley, *United Netherlands*, ii. 92–9). Leicester laid the blame of the whole affair on Norris; but Pelham was naturally of an irascible disposition. A few days later, while inspecting the trenches before Doesburg in company with Leicester, he was wounded by a shot in the stomach. Thinking the wound to be fatal, he expressed his satisfaction at having warded off the blow from the commander-in-chief, who was standing directly behind him, and made other 'comfortable and resolute speeches.' But, though fated 'to carry a bullet in his belly' as long as he lived, the wound did not prove immediately fatal. He was able to take part in the fight at Zutphen, and, according to Fulke Greville, it was the desire to emulate him, and 'to venture without any inequality,' that made Sir Philip Sidney [q. v.] lay aside his cuisses and so to receive the wound that caused his death.

In consequence of the recalcitrant behaviour of the citizens of Deventer, he was entrusted with the task of bringing them to their senses, which he did in a resolute and summary fashion (*Leycester Corresp.* App. vi.) He returned to England with the Earl of Leicester in April 1587, and is said to have derived much benefit from the waters of Bath. He was sent back with reinforcements to Holland in the autumn, but died shortly after landing at Flushing, on 24 Nov. 1587.

Pelham married, first, Eleanor (*d.* 1574), daughter of Henry Neville, fifth earl of Westmorland. By her he had one son, Sir William Pelham, who succeeded him, and married Ann, eldest daughter of Charles, lord Willoughby of Parham. His second wife was Dorothy, daughter of Anthony Catesby of Whiston, Northamptonshire, and widow of Sir William Dormer, by whom he had a son, Peregrine, and a daughter, Ann.

Pelham's 'Letter Book,' comprising his diary and official correspondence when lord justice of Ireland, is preserved among the Carew MSS. at Lambeth (Brewer, *Cal. Carew MSS.* ii. 296). It was compiled by Morgan Colman, and consists of 455 leaves. The title-page is elaborately ornamented. Pelham also wrote commendatory verses prefixed to Sir George Peckham's 'A true Reporte of the late Discoveries . . . of the Newfound Landes: By . . . Sir Humphrey Gilbert,' London, 1583. And there is an interesting tract by him, with the title, 'A form or maner howe to have the Exersyse of the Harquebuse thorowe England for the better Defence of the same,' in 'State Papers,' Dom. Eliz. xliv. 60.

A portrait by Zucchero belongs to the Earl of Yarborough.

[Burke's Peerage, 'Yarborough;' Berry's County Genealogies, 'Sussex;' Horsfield's Hist. of Lewes, i. 340; Lower's Historical and Genealogical Notices of the Pelham Family; Stow's Annals; Cal. State Papers, Foreign; Toussaint's Pièces Historiques relatives au Siège du Havre; Churchyard's Chips; Barwick's Briefe Discourse concerning . . . Manual Weapons of Fire; Cal. State Papers, Eliz. Domestic and Ireland; Cal. Carew MSS.; Cal. Hatfield MSS.; Cal. Fiants, Eliz. Irel.; Bagwell's Ireland under the Tudors; Sadler's State Papers; Leycester Corresp. (Camden Soc.); Clements Markham's Fighting Veres; Grimestone's Historie of the Netherlands; Motley's United Netherlands; Sir John Smythe's Certain Discourses . . . concerning . . . divers sorts of Weapons, p. 36; Fulke Greville's Life of Sir Philip Sidney (ed. 1651), p. 143; Ritson's Bibliographia Poetica, p. 297; MSS. Brit. Museum Harl. 285 f. 239, 6993 f. 129, 6994 f. 88, Cotton. Galba, C. x. ff. 65, 67; Titus, B. xiii. ff. 285, 291, Lansdowne, 109, f. 158, Addit. 5752 ff. 28, 33, 375, 5754 ff. 188, 205, 5935 f. 5, 33594 ff. 5, 12–15.] R. D.

**PELHAM-HOLLES, THOMAS, Duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and of Newcastle-under-Lyne** (1693–1768), statesman, only son of Thomas Pelham, first lord Pelham [q.v.], by his second wife, Lady Grace, youngest daughter of Gilbert Holles, third Earl of Clare, and sister of John Holles, duke of Newcastle [q. v.], was born on 21 July 1693. He was educated at Westminster School (of which he was subsequently, in 1733, elected a trustee), and at the university of Cambridge, where, on 9 May 1709, he matriculated from Clare Hall, as the Hon. Thomas Pelham. He added the name and arms of Holles to those of Pelham in July 1711, on succeeding (as adopted heir) to the bulk of the estates of his uncle, John Holles, duke of Newcastle. On 23 Feb. 1711–1712 he succeeded his father as Baron Pelham of Laughton. Though he did not graduate, he acquired a certain tincture of the classics at the university, which conferred on him the degree of LL.D. on 25 April 1728, elected him its high steward in July 1737, and its chancellor on 14 Dec. 1748.

On the death of Queen Anne he declared for the house of Brunswick, and on the accession of George I was created Viscount Haughton of Haughton in Nottinghamshire, and Earl of Clare in Suffolk (19 Oct. 1714). About the same time he was commissioned as lord-lieutenant of Middlesex, Westminster, and Nottinghamshire, steward of Sherwood Forest and Folewood Park, and, a little later (5 Jan. 1715), vice-admiral of the coast of Sussex. With his brother Henry, he raised a troop for service against the Pretender, and was rewarded with the title of Marquis of Clare and Duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne (11 Aug. 1715). By the second marriage (1713) of his brother-in-law Charles, second viscount Townshend [q. v.], with Dorothy Walpole, the great minister's sister, Newcastle was brought into intimate relations with Sir Robert Walpole. His own marriage, on 2 April 1717, with Lady Henrietta, eldest daughter of Francis, second earl of Godolphin [q. v.], and granddaughter of John Churchill, duke of Marlborough [q. v.], connected him with Charles Spencer, third earl of Sunderland [q. v.] His rent-roll of 25,000*l.* gave him enormous political influence. As a speaker, he was fluent, if discursive, and was occasionally effective in reply. He adhered at first to Townshend, but on the party schism of 1717 went over to Sunderland, was made lord chamberlain of the household, and sworn of the privy council (14 and

16 April). Forced by George I upon the Prince of Wales as godfather to his first-born son, Newcastle was insulted by the prince after the christening, on 28 Nov. 1717 [see GEORGE II]. On 30 April 1718 he was installed K.G. at Windsor. Throughout the reign of George I and his successor he was one of the lords justices who composed the council of regency during the sovereign's periodical visits to Hanover. On 21 Dec. 1721 he was appointed a governor of the Charterhouse. Newcastle resigned the lord-chamberlaincy on succeeding Lord Carteret as secretary of state for the southern department in Walpole's coalition administration on 2 April 1724. He held, jointly with Townshend, secretary of state for the northern department, the seals of secretary of state for Scotland, from the dismissal of John Ker, duke of Roxburghe, on 25 Aug. 1725, until Townshend's resignation on 15 May 1730. William Stanhope, baron Harrington (afterwards Earl of Harrington) [q. v.], then received the seals of the northern department, while the Scottish seals were given to Charles Douglas, earl of Selkirk. In April 1726 Newcastle was chosen recorder of Nottingham, and on 6 June 1729 was appointed steward, feodary, and bailiff of the duchy of Lancaster in the county of Sussex.

George II, on his accession, pronounced Newcastle unfit to be chamberlain to a petty German prince, but continued him in office. At court he was nicknamed 'Permis' in mockery of his sheepish way of prefacing what he had to say to the queen and princesses with 'Est-il permis?' and became the butt of Lord Hervey's caustic wit. At the council-board and in parliament he was, perforce, during the period of Walpole's undisputed ascendency, little more than his instrument and echo. He had, however, provided himself with an excellent mentor in Philip Yorke (afterwards Lord Hardwicke) [q. v.], who never forgot, even on the woolsack, that he owed his start in public life to the Pelham interest.

As Walpole's power began to decline, Newcastle began to coquet with the opposition. In 1737 he followed Carteret's lead by introducing, on occasion of the murder of Captain Porteous [q. v.], a bill of pains and penalties against the city of Edinburgh. The bill embarrassed Walpole; and one of Queen Caroline's latest acts was to send for Newcastle and severely censure his conduct. He also aggravated the differences with Spain by the high tone which he took in his memorial to the court of Madrid on occasion of the merchants' petition; and in other ways contributed to increase Walpole's difficulties. On the death of the queen he aspired to establish a separate interest at court by flattering the Princess Amelia. When Walpole offered the privy seal to Lord Hervey, Newcastle talked of resigning, but allowed himself to be overruled by Lord Hardwicke. He was mainly responsible for the desultory, ineffectual character of the naval operations, which led to perpetual wrangles with Walpole, whom he nevertheless loyally defended on Carteret's motion for his removal on 13 Feb. 1740–1. Horace Walpole's imputation to him of deliberate treachery to his chief cannot now be substantiated.

On the outbreak of the war of the Austrian succession, Newcastle espoused the cause of Maria Theresa, and denounced the treaty of Hanover (providing for the neutrality of the electorate) as unconstitutional and perfidious [see GEORGE II]. On Walpole's resignation, and under his guidance, he managed the negotiations which resulted in the formation of Lord Wilmington's administration. Retaining the seals of the southern department himself, he transferred those of the northern department from Harrington to Carteret, and the privy seal from Lord Hervey to Earl Gower. Harrington became president of the council, and Hardwicke retained the great seal. The virtual prime minister was Carteret, notwithstanding the fact that on Wilmington's death, on 2 July 1743, Henry Pelham succeeded to the first lordship of the treasury. The Hanoverian colour of Carteret's policy was a favourite theme with the opposition, and Newcastle discerned in the resulting unpopularity the means of ousting Carteret and succeeding to his position of predominance. When, therefore, the treaty of Hanau was transmitted for ratification, he, as virtual head of the regency, secured its summary rejection in July 1743, notwithstanding that thereby the fruits of the victory of Dettingen were entirely thrown away. On Carteret's return to England, Newcastle united against him a powerful junto within the cabinet, which was supported in parliament by the opposition. He thus forced the king to abandon the idea of taking command of the troops in Flanders. The ill-success of the subsequent operations under Marshal Wade [see WADE, GEORGE, 1673–1748] strengthened the hands of the coalition, and on 1 Nov. 1744 Newcastle laid before the king a memorial (drafted by Hardwicke) which extorted from him the dismissal of Carteret [see GEORGE II]. Carteret disposed of, Newcastle adopted his policy without improving on his expedients. The fortune of war continued adverse to the allies. The king lost his temper, and abused Newcastle in the

closet. Newcastle accepted the abuse tamely enough, but vowed vengeance. Pitt was peculiarly obnoxious to the king, so Pitt should be forced upon him as secretary at war. When the matter was broached, the king positively refused to entertain the idea. The refusal was met by the concerted resignation of the majority of the ministers in the crisis of the Jacobite rebellion. Granville and Bath, whom the king sent for, failed to form an administration, and the Pelhams returned to power, with Pitt as joint vice-treasurer of Ireland (22 Feb. 1745-6).

In the course of the year the uninterrupted successes of the French in Flanders, and the evident inclination of the Dutch for peace, produced a schism in the cabinet. Pelham and Harrington, who had resumed the seals of secretary of state for the northern department, were for peace; Newcastle stood out strongly for war; and, by maintaining a clandestine correspondence with Lord Sandwich, ambassador-extraordinary at the Hague, occasioned Harrington's resignation (28 Oct.) Similar treatment, combined with disgust at the rejection of the overtures for peace made by France through Sir John Ligonier [q. v.], led to the resignation of Harrington's successor, Lord Chesterfield, on 6 Feb. 1747-8, upon which Newcastle transferred the seals of the southern department to the Duke of Bedford, and took the seals of the northern department himself (*Add. MSS.* 23823 f. 361, 23827 ff. 136, 142). This arrangement involved his attendance on the king at Hanover during the congress of Aix-la-Chapelle and the subsequent negotiations. At the congress the principal difficulty arose from the claim of the empress-queen to restitution of the Netherlands in their entirety. To induce her to waive this exorbitant pretension, Newcastle at first empowered Lord Sandwich to conclude a separate treaty with France, but afterwards revoked his instructions, and bade him conciliate the court of Vienna. This undignified change of front caused the withdrawal of the Dutch plenipotentiary, Count Bentinck, and, had not Lord Sandwich adhered to his original mandate, must have ruptured the negotiations altogether. Mortally offended by this display of independence, Newcastle avenged himself by driving Sandwich, and with him his friend the Duke of Bedford, from office on 13-14 June 1751. Robert D'Arcy, fourth earl of Holderness [q. v.], who succeeded Sandwich, consented to act as Newcastle's clerk, and the supremacy of the Pelhams was established.

At this period the principal object of Newcastle's diplomacy was to perpetuate the divisions between Austria and France. With this aim he supported the election of Archduke Joseph as king of the Romans, but that project was frustrated by the lukewarmness of the court of Vienna. On Pelham's death, 6 March 1754, Newcastle succeeded him as first lord of the treasury, with Henry Fox [q. v.] as secretary at war, and the incapable Sir Thomas Robinson secretary of state for the southern department and nominal leader of the House of Commons. The real leader of the House of Commons was the attorney-general, William Murray (afterwards Lord Mansfield) [q. v.] Fox, who declined the leadership because Newcastle had insisted on dissociating it from all participation in the disposal of the secret-service money, united with Pitt in making Robinson's position intolerable. Afraid to dismiss Fox, Newcastle eventually dismissed Robinson, and put Fox in his place, conceding the point in dispute (November 1755). When Lord Chesterfield heard of this he observed: 'The Duke of Newcastle has turned out everybody else, and now he has turned out himself.' The augury was speedily verified. The ministry was burdened with the defence of the Hanoverian subsidiary treaties, hastily negotiated by the king on the renewal of hostilities on the continent. Though not as yet declared, war with France had already begun in America. A fleet, under Sir Edward Hawke, lay idle at Spithead for months, while ministers debated what to do with it. Misled by the feints of preparations at Brest and Dunkirk for the invasion of England, they humiliated the nation by hurrying over Hessian and Hanoverian troops, while they overlooked the real object of the French, viz. the conquest of Minorca. Their discredit was completed by the success of the French expedition; and Newcastle, deserted almost simultaneously by Fox and Murray, tendered his resignation on 26 Oct. 1756. He gave up the seals on the formation of Pitt's administration on 11 Nov., was consoled (13 Nov.) with the title of Duke of Newcastle-under-Lyne, with remainder to his favourite nephew, Henry Fiennes Clinton, ninth earl of Lincoln, in tail, and retired to Claremont. He attended the House of Lords on the occasion of the debate on the bill for releasing the members of Byng's court-martial from their oath of secrecy, in which, however, he took no prominent part. Horace Walpole represents him as from first to last bent upon securing the admiral's execution, but adduces no tangible evidence. His party was still numerically strong, and on Pitt's dismissal, on 5 April 1757, he was sent for, but refused to take office without the support of Leicester House. In the end, Pitt

resumed the lead of the House of Commons as secretary of state for the northern department, while Newcastle returned to the treasury, bringing his brute votes with him (June 1757). Pitt's ascendency established, Newcastle found himself reduced to the same position of impotence which he had occupied under Walpole. On the accession of George III, he adopted the peace policy of Lord Bute [see STUART, JOHN, third EARL OF BUTE], who succeeded Lord Holderness as secretary of state for the southern department, and carried the majority of the ministers with him. Pitt, however, was no sooner out of office than the new ministers blundered into the very war with Spain which Pitt had sought to precipitate [see WYNDHAM, CHARLES, LORD EGREMONT]. Newcastle, who had hoped on Pitt's resignation to regain his old ascendency, found that he had only played jackal to Bute's lion, and veered round to the policy of continuing the war in Germany. He was accordingly driven out of office by an accumulation of studied slights, or positive indignities. When at length he tendered his resignation the king expressed neither surprise nor regret, but only spoke of filling up his place. Clinging to office with ignominious tenacity, he condescended to procure Lord Mansfield's 'intercession' with the favourite. Bute, however, was inexorable, and on 26 May 1762 Newcastle parted with the seals. He refused a pension, but was created (4 May) Baron Pelham of Stanmer, with remainder to his cousin, Thomas Pelham (afterwards first Earl of Chichester) [q. v.] Bute's ironical congratulations on his attainment of the peace befitting his advanced years elicited from him a flash of spirit worthy of a competent minister. 'Cardinal Fleury,' he replied, 'began to be prime minister of France just at my age.' Bute's hostility pursued him in his retirement; he was dismissed from his lord-lieutenancies and the stewardship of Sherwood Forest and Folewood Park. All who had received offices from him were cashiered. In face of this proscription his adherents melted away. The bishops, most of whom had received preferment from him, and had been conspicuous by their obsequiousness at his levees, fell from him almost to a man. 'Even fathers in God,' he wittily observed, 'sometimes forget their maker.' Newcastle closed his political career as lord privy seal in Lord Rockingham's administration, July 1765–August 1766. During this period he was one of the most earnest advocates of the repeal of the Stamp Act. Early in 1768 Newcastle had a paralytic stroke, after which he sank gradually, and died the same year (17 Nov.) at his house in Lincoln's Inn Fields. His remains were interred in the chancel of the parish church at Laughton, Sussex. His duchess survived until 17 July 1776, and was also buried at Laughton. Newcastle left no issue; and, except the dukedom of Newcastle-under-Lyne and the barony of Pelham of Stanmer, which devolved according to their limitations, his honours became extinct [see CLINTON, HENRY FIENNES, ninth EARL OF LINCOLN and second DUKE OF NEWCASTLE-UNDER-LYNE, and PELHAM, THOMAS, first EARL OF CHICHESTER].

By the acknowledgment of his bitter foe, Horace Walpole, Newcastle's person was not naturally despicable (*Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, ed. Lord Holland, i. 162), and probably he was less ridiculous in real life than he appears in Walpole's pages. It is evident, however, that he was nervous and pompous, always in a hurry, and always behindhand; ignorant of common things, and not learned in any sense. He is said to have earnestly besought Lord Chesterfield to let the calendar alone; to have discovered with surprise, after its conquest, that Cape Breton was an island; and to have been convinced of the strategic importance of Annapolis before he knew its latitude and longitude. His name is associated with no great legislative measure; and, though in abandoning Walpole's policy of non-intervention he was indubitably right, he evinced none of the qualities essential to a great minister of foreign affairs. The Spanish war he neglected, and the continental war he mismanaged. Had Carteret's counsels prevailed in 1743, peace might have been secured, at least for a time. Had Newcastle's counsels prevailed in 1748, the war must have been protracted to no purpose. His change of front in 1762 was probably due to mere personal pique; and, indeed, throughout his career a morbid vanity and immoderate love of place and power made him jealous, suspicious of his colleagues, fretful, and faithless.

On the other hand, he undoubtedly was, according to the standard of his age, an honest politician; and, while profuse in secret-service expenditure, kept his own hands clean, and died 300,000*l.* the poorer for nearly half a century of official life. Newcastle was a devout churchman, a patron of men of letters (cf. GARTH, *Claremont*, and Congreve's 'Dedication' prefixed to Tonson's 12th edition of *Dryden's Plays*, 1717), a placable foe, an easy landlord, a kind master, and a genial host. The fame of the Homeric banquets with which he used to regale his tenantry and dependents survived in Sussex until the present century. His portrait, by William

Hoare, belongs to the Duke of Newcastle; another, by Sir Godfrey Kneller, is among the Kit-Cat Club portraits at Hampton Court.

[Collins's Peerage (Brydges), v. 521; Doyle's Official Baronage; Lower's Pelham Family and Glimpses of our Sussex Ancestors; Coxe's Pelham Administration; Hist. Reg. 1714–38; Ann. Reg. 1738-68; Boyer's Political State of Great Britain, 1714–40; Granger's Biogr. Hist. of Engl. continued by Noble, iii. 19; Memoirs of the Kit-Cat Club (1821); Lords' Journals, xx. 27, 166, xxxii. 203; London Gazette, 13 Nov. 1756; Coxe's Memoirs of Sir R. Walpole and Horatio, Lord Walpole; Lady Cowper's Diary; Lord Hervey's Memoirs; Correspondence of John Russell, fourth Duke of Bedford; Marchmont Papers; Glover's Memoirs; Lord Chesterfield's Letters, ed. Mahon; Ernst's Life of Lord Chesterfield; Ballantyne's Life of Lord Carteret; Walpole's Memoirs of the Reign of George II, ed. Lord Holland; Walpole's Memoirs of the Reign of George III, ed. Sir D. Le Marchant; Walpole's Letters, ed. Cunningham; Waldegrave's Memoirs; Harris's Life of Lord Chancellor Hardwicke; Chatham Correspondence; Bubb Dodington's Diary; Fitzmaurice's Life of Lord Shelburne; Albemarle's Memoirs of the Marquis of Rockingham; Grenville Papers; Phillimore's Memoirs of George, lord Lyttelton; Holliday's Life of Lord Mansfield, p. 425; Life of Bishop Newton, prefixed to his Works; Cooke's History of Party; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. and Illustr. of Lit.; Hist. MSS. Comm. Rep. passim; Sussex Archæol. Collect. iii. 228, vii, 109, 232, ix. 33, x. 49, xi. 188, 191–203, xiii. 24, xiv. 188, 210, xix. 217, xxiii. 74, 80; Addit. MSS. 23627-23630, 34523 et seq.; Haydn's Book of Dignities, ed. Ockerby; Lecky's Hist. of Engl. in the Eighteenth Century; Mahon's Hist. of Engl.; Carlyle's Frederick the Great; Adolphus's Hist. of the Reign of George III; Jesse's Memoirs of George III; Torrens's Hist. of Cabinets; Brit. Mus. Cat.] J. M. R.

**PELL, JOHN** (1611–1685), mathematician, was born at Southwick in Sussex on 1 March 1611. His father, John Pell, was incumbent of that place, whither his grandfather, another John Pell, had migrated from Lincolnshire. He came of a good old family, one of his ancestors having been lord of a manor in Lincolnshire in 1368. He married Mary Holland of Halden, Kent, and died at Southwick in 1616, one year before his wife. Two sons survived him, the younger of whom is the subject of the present notice.

Pell was educated at the free school of Steyning in Sussex, and progressed so rapidly that he was admitted to Trinity College, Cambridge, at the age of thirteen, being then, Wood relates, 'as good a scholar as some masters of arts.' He worked indefatigably. A 'strong and good habit of body' enabling him to dispense with recreations, 'he plied his studies while others played.' Yet he never became a candidate for college honours. He graduated B.A. in 1628, proceeded M.A. in 1630, and in 1631 was incorporated of the university of Oxford. By this time, at the age of twenty, he was already 'in great reputation and esteem for his literary accomplishments,' which included the mastery, not only of Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, but of Arabic, Italian, French, Spanish, High and Low Dutch. He was 'also much talked of for his skill in the mathematics,' the taste for which continually grew upon him. He was, moreover, remarkably handsome, with dark hair and eyes, and a good voice. In 1628 he corresponded with Henry Briggs [q. v.] about logarithms, and drew up papers on the use of the quadrant and on sundials, which, however, remained unpublished. Lansberg's 'Everlasting Tables' were translated by him from the Latin in 1634. His 'Eclipse Prognosticator' was written about the same time. On 3 July 1632 he married Ithumaria, daughter of Henry Reginolles of London, by whom he had four sons and four daughters; and in 1643, through the interest of Sir William Boswell [q. v.], he became the successor of Hortensius in the chair of mathematics at Amsterdam. A course of lectures on Diophantus, delivered by him there, excited much applause, and his colleague, Gerard John Vossius, styled him 'a person of various erudition and a most acute mathematician' (*De Scientiis Mathematicis*, cap. x.) In 1646 he was induced by the Prince of Orange to remove to the new college of Breda, where he enjoyed a salary of one thousand guilders; and, returning to England in 1652, was appointed by Cromwell to lecture on mathematics at 200*l.* a year. Two years later he was despatched as Cromwell's political agent to the protestant cantons of Switzerland, in which capacity he acquitted himself so well that he was continued as resident at Zürich with a yearly salary of 600*l.* The real object of his mission was to detach the cantons from France, and to draw them into a continental protestant league headed by England. Interminable negotiations ensued. 'They move so slowly here,' Pell wrote to Thurloe from the Swiss Baden in May 1656, 'that it is hard to discern whether they go forward or backward' (Vaughan, *Protectorate of Cromwell*, i. 396). Recalled in 1658, he reached London on 13 Aug., three weeks before Cromwell's death. Some obscure services, however, rendered by him to the royalist party and to the church of England secured his position at the Restoration. Having taken orders, he was presented by Charles II in 1661 to the rectory of Fobbing in Essex, and by

Dr. Sheldon, bishop of London, in 1663, to the vicarage of Laindon with Basildon in the same county. Both preferments were held by him till his death. Assisted by William Sancroft [q. v.], he introduced on 5 Dec. 1661 a scheme for a reform of the calendar into the upper house of convocation; his name was included in the first list of fellows of the Royal Society chosen on 20 May 1663; and, having been nominated domestic chaplain to Dr. Sheldon on his elevation to the see of Canterbury, he took the degree of D.D. at Lambeth on 7 Oct. 1663 ('Graduati Lambethani' in *Gent. Mag.* 1864, i. 636). A bishopric was expected for him; but he drifted off the high-road to promotion into hopeless insolvency. 'He was a shiftless man as to worldly affairs,' Wood testifies, 'and his tenants and relatives dealt so unkindly with him that they cozened him out of the profits of his parsonages, and kept him so indigent that he wanted necessaries, even paper and ink, to his dying day.' He resided for some years at Brereton Hall, Cheshire, as the guest of William, third lord Brereton, who had been his pupil at Breda; and his children were in 1671 living in the same neighbourhood, as we learn from Thomas Brancker's mention of an unpaid loan for their support (Rigaud, *Correspondence of Scientific Men*, i. 166). Pell was also in debt to John Collins (1625–1683) [q. v.], having boarded long at his house. Collins nevertheless respected him as 'a very learned man, more knowing in algebra, in some respects, than any other.' 'But to incite him to publish anything,' he added, 'seems to be as vain an endeavour as to think of grasping the Italian Alps in order to their removal. He hath been a man accounted incommunicable' (*ib.* pp. 196–7). His hints of new methods led to nothing. 'We have been fed with vain hopes from Dr. Pell about twenty or thirty years,' Collins wrote to James Gregory in or near 1674 (*ib.* ii. 195). But for this reticence he would, it was thought, have been recommended by the Royal Society to the king of France for a pension. His embarrassments meantime increasing, he was twice thrown into the king's bench; then, in March 1682, Dr. Daniel Whistler [q. v.] afforded him, when utterly destitute, an asylum in the College of Physicians. A failure of health, however, soon compelled his removal to the house in St. Margaret's, Westminster, of one of his grandchildren, whence he was transferred to the lodging in Dyot Street of Mr. Cothorne, reader in the church of St. Giles-in-the-Fields. There, on 12 Dec. 1685, he died, and was buried in the rector's vault.

Pell's mathematical performance entirely failed to justify his reputation. He is remembered chiefly by his invention of the sign ÷ for division, and of a mode of marginally registering the successive steps in the reduction of equations. These novelties were contained in Brancker's translation of Rhonius's 'Algebra,' published, with additions and corrections by Pell, at London in 1668. Among his few and slight original printed works may be mentioned: 1. 'A Refutation of Longomontanus's pretended Quadrature of the Circle,' Amsterdam, 1646; in Latin, 1647. 2. 'Easter not mistimed,' a letter to Haak in favour of the new style, 1664. 3. 'An Idea of Mathematics,' written about 1639, and sent by Hartlib to Mersenne and Descartes. It was published as an appendix to Durie's 'Reformed Library-keeper,' London, 1650, and included by Hooke, with Mersenne's and Descartes's comments, in the 'Philosophical Collections,' 1679, p. 127. It sketched the outline of a comprehensive but visionary plan for the promotion of mathematical studies. 4. 'On the Day Fatality of Rome,' printed in 1721 among Aubrey's 'Miscellanies.' 5. 'A Table of Ten Thousand Square Numbers,' London, 1672. An 'Antilogarithmic Table,' the first of its kind, computed by Pell and Walter Warner [q. v.] between 1630 and 1640, was soon afterwards lost or destroyed. Pell had an edition of Diophantus nearly ready for the press in 1647, but it never saw the light. He demonstrated the second and tenth books of Euclid, and only laid aside Apollonius at the request of Golius in 1645. He left large deposits of manuscripts wherever he lodged. Most of these are now in the British Museum, occupying nearly forty volumes of the Birch collection. Among them are tracts entitled: 'Tabulæ Directoriæ ad Praxin Mathematicam conferentes,' 1628; 'The Eclipse Prognosticator,' 1634; 'Apologia pro Francisco Vietâ' (Sloane MS. 4397). Pell's loose mathematical papers occupy fourteen volumes of the same collection (Nos. 4418-31), while in three more (Nos. 4278–80) his correspondence with his scientific contemporaries is preserved. One of those with whom he was in frequent communication from 1641 to 1650 was Sir Charles Cavendish, brother of William, marquis of Newcastle. Cavendish unremittingly urged the publication of 'a large volume concerning Analyticks.' Pell replied from Amsterdam on 18 Feb. 1645: 'I fear it will be long ere I find leisure to finish such a volume for the press, adding: 'You have here some of the heads of that multitude of thoughts that I would willingly be delivered of; but it may be somebody else must bring them forth' (*Harleian MS.* 6796, f. 294). Eleven volumes of the Lansdowne manuscripts

(Nos. 745–55) are composed of Pell's further remains. Thence, as well as from one volume of the Sloane series (No. 4365), Dr. Robert Vaughan took the materials for 'The Protectorate of Cromwell' (London, 1638). The bulk of his two volumes consists of Pell's official reports to Thurloe and Sir Samuel Morland [q. v.] on the progress of his Swiss mission (1654–8). They are of great historical importance. His philosophical correspondence during the same interval with Sir William Petty, Hartlib, Brereton, Brancker, and others, is printed in an appendix, together with his letters to his wife. These last are harsh and contemptuous in tone, and suggest that Ithumaria was a foolish woman, though a devoted wife. She died on 11 Sept. 1661, and Pell remarried before 1669. His eldest daughter was married to Captain Raven on 3 Feb. 1656.

His only brother, Thomas Pell, a gentleman of the bedchamber to Charles I, went to America about 1635, and acted as a surgeon in the Pequot war. He settled later at Fairfield, Connecticut, and secured from the Indians in 1654 a large part of Westchester County, in the State of New York. A patent from the Duke of York converted this tract in 1666 into the lordship and manor of Pelham, and it passed by will in 1669, on the death without heirs of the first owner, to his nephew John (born on 3 Feb. 1643), the only surviving son of the mathematician. He was drowned in a boating accident in 1702, and his sons, John and Thomas, became the ancestors of all the American branches of the family.

[Wood's Fasti Oxon. i. 461 (Bliss); Biogr. Brit. 1760 vol. v.; Gen. Dict. 1739, viii. 250; Birch's Hist. Royal Soc. iv. 444; Phil. Trans. Abridged, Hutton, ii. 527; Hutton's Mathematical Dict., 1815; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Rigaud's Correspondence of Scientific Men, passim; Robert Boyle's Works, 1744, i. 35; Martin's Biogr. Phil. p. 334; Aikin's Gen. Biography, vol. viii.; Newcourt's Repertorium, ii. 269; Halliwell's Brief Account of Sir Samuel Morland, p. 27; Sherburn's Sphere of Manilius, p. 102; Kennet's Register, i. 574; Alfred Stern in Sybel's Hist. Zeitschrift, xi. 52; Poggendorff's Biogr. Lit. Handwörterbuch; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Lansdowne MS. 987, f. 77 (notice of Pell in Bishop Kennet's Collections); Sloane MS. 4223, f. 120 (copy of a biographical account of Pell by Hooke, derived from Aubrey); information from Mr. W. C. Pell, U.S.A.; Bolton's Hist. of Westchester County, ii. 39, 44; O'Callaghan's Hist. of New Netherland, ii. 283.] A. M. C.

PELL, Sir WATKIN OWEN (1788–1869), admiral, son of Samuel Pell of Sywell Hall, Northamptonshire, and, on the mother's side, grandson of Owen Owen of Llaneyher, Denbighshire, entered the navy in April 1799 on board the Loire, and on 6 Feb. 1800 lost his left leg in the capture of the French frigate Pallas, supported by a battery on one of the Seven Islands (James, iii. 6). He was consequently discharged, and remained on shore for the next two years, at the end of which time he rejoined the Loire. After serving in various ships on the home and West Indian stations, he was promoted on 11 Nov. 1806 to be lieutenant of the Mercury frigate, then on the Newfoundland station, and afterwards in the Mediterranean, where, as first lieutenant in command of the Mercury's boats, he repeatedly distinguished himself in cutting out gunboats or small armed vessels on the coast of Spain or Italy, and on one occasion, on 1 April 1809, was severely wounded in the right arm (*ib.* v. 37). In August 1809 he was presented by the Patriotic Society with 80*l.* for the purchase of a sword, and on 29 March 1810 was promoted to the rank of commander. In the following October he was appointed to the Thunder bomb, and was during the next two years mainly employed in the defence of Cadiz. On 9 Oct. 1813, as he was returning to England to be paid off, he fell in with and, after a sharp engagement, captured the Neptune privateer, of much superior force, for which, and other good service, he was advanced to post rank on 1 Nov. 1813. From 1814 to 1817 he commanded the Menai frigate on the coast of North America. In May 1833 he commissioned the Forte, and in her acted as senior officer on the Jamaica station till March 1837. On his return to England he was knighted by the queen, and, in accordance with the intention of William IV, was nominated a K.C.H. by the king of Hanover. In 1840 he was appointed to the Howe, and in August 1841 to be superintendent of Deptford victualling yard, from which he was shortly after moved to be superintendent of Sheerness dockyard, and in December to be superintendent of Pembroke dockyard, where he remained till February 1845, when he was appointed a commissioner of Greenwich Hospital. He became a rear-admiral on 5 Sept. 1848, vice-admiral on 28 Dec. 1855, admiral on 11 Feb. 1861, and died on 29 Dec. 1869.

[Marshall's Royal Naval Biogr. vii. (suppl. pt. iii.) p. 162; O'Byrne's Naval Biogr. Dict.; James's Naval History; Times, 1 Jan. 1870.] J. K. L.

PELL, WILLIAM (1634–1698), nonconformist divine, son of William Pell, was born at Sheffield in 1634. After passing through the grammar school at Rotherham,

Yorkshire, he was admitted as sizar at the age of seventeen on 29 March 1651 at Magdalene College, Cambridge, where his tutor was Joseph Hill [q. v.] He graduated M.A., was elected scholar 2 June 1654 and fellow 3 Nov. 1656, and received orders from Ralph Brownrig [q. v.], bishop of Exeter, probably at Sunning, Berkshire. He held the sequestered rectory of Easington, Durham, and a tutorship in the college at Durham founded by Cromwell by patent dated 15 May 1657. At the Restoration this college collapsed, and Clark, the sequestered rector of Easington, was restored. Pell was appointed to the rectory of Great Stainton, Durham, which he held until ejected in 1662.

After ejection he preached in conventicles, and was imprisoned at Durham for nonconformity. Removed to London by 'habeas corpus,' he was discharged by Sir Matthew Hale [q. v.] He then betook himself to the North Riding of Yorkshire, and practised medicine. His friends, who valued him for his breadth of acquirement, and especially for his eminence as an orientalist, repeatedly urged him to resume the work of teaching 'university learning.' He considered himself debarred from so doing by the terms of his graduation oath. The project of instituting a 'northern academy' fell accordingly into the hands of Richard Frankland [q. v.] After the indulgence of 1672 he 'preach'd publickly' at Tattershall, Lincolnshire, and was protected by holding the office of domestic steward to Edward Clinton, fifth earl of Lincoln. A London merchant of the same surname, but no kinsman, became his benefactor. On James's declaration for liberty of conscience (1687), he became pastor to the nonconformists at Boston, Lincolnshire. Thence he removed in 1694 to become the assistant of Richard Gilpin, M.D. [q. v.], at Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Here he died on 2 Dec. 1698, having entered his sixty-third year. He was buried on 6 Dec. at St. Nicholas's Church, Newcastle. He married Elizabeth (buried 30 Jan. 1708), daughter of George Lilburn of Sunderland. He published nothing, but left unfinished collections which showed the extent of his oriental and rabbinical studies.

[Calamy's Account, 1713, pp. 288 sq., Continuation, 1727, i. 454; Memoirs of Ambrose Barnes (Surtees Soc.) l. 141; extracts from the records of Magdalene College, Cambridge, per A. G. Peskett, esq.; extracts from the burial register of St. Nicholas, Newcastle-on-Tyne, per R. Welford, esq.] A. G.

PELLATT, APSLEY (1791–1863), glass manufacturer, eldest son of Apsley Pellatt, and of Mary, daughter of Stephen Maberly of Reading, was born on 27 Nov. 1791, probably at 80 High Holborn, London, where his father kept a glass warehouse. The elder Pellatt removed his business subsequently to St. Paul's Churchyard, and then to the Falcon Glass works, Holland Street, Southwark. He was the inventor of the glass lenses, known as 'deck lights,' used for giving light to the lower parts of ships, for which he obtained a patent in 1807 (No. 3058). He died on 21 Jan. 1826 (*Gent. Mag.* 1826 i. 187).

The younger Pellatt was educated by Dr. Wanostrocht at Camberwell, and joined his father in business. In 1819 he took out a patent (No. 4424) for 'crystallo-ceramie or glass incrustation,' which consisted in enclosing medallions or ornaments of pottery ware, metal, or refractory material in glass, by which very beautiful ornamental effects were produced. The new process was described by the inventor with illustrations in his 'Memoir on the Origin, Progress, and Improvement of Glass Manufactures,' London, 1821. It does not appear to have been his own invention, as it is stated in the patent that it was communicated to him by a foreigner residing abroad, whose name, however, is not given (*ib.* 1821, i. 70). He took out a patent in 1831 (No. 6091) for improvements in the manufacture of pressed glass articles, and another in 1845 (No. 10669), with his brother Frederick, for improvements in the composition of glass, and in the methods of blowing, pressing, and casting glass articles. Under his care the products of the Falcon glass works attained a high reputation both for quality and artistic design. He devoted much time to the investigation of the principles of glass-making both in ancient and modern times, and he became a high authority upon the subject. He published in 1849 'Curiosities of Glass Making,' in which the results of his researches are embodied. He was assisted in this work by John Timbs [q. v.] He was one of the jurors at the exhibition of 1862, and wrote the report on the glass manufactures shown on that occasion.

Pellatt was elected an associate of the Institution of Civil Engineers in 1838, and in 1840 he became a member of the council. He contributed in 1838 and 1840 papers on the manufacture of glass, which are printed in the 'Proceedings,' and he was a frequent speaker at the meetings of the institution.

Besides his work as a glass-maker, Pellatt took a considerable share in public affairs, and was for many years a member of the common council of the city of London. He was largely instrumental in securing the admission of Jews to the freedom of the city,

and embodied his views in a pamphlet, published in 1826, entitled 'A Brief Memoir of the Jews in relation to their Civil and Municipal Disabilities.' In 1832 he gave evidence before the select committee of the House of Commons on Sunday observance, with reference to Farringdon Market. This was afterwards printed separately. He represented Southwark in parliament from July 1852 until the general election in March 1857, when he was rejected in favour of Admiral Sir Charles Napier, and he was again unsuccessful in 1859. He was a frequent speaker in the house, and he introduced a bill for facilitating dissenters' marriages in 1854, 1855, and 1856. In 1856 he brought in a bill to define the law as to crossed cheques, which was passed (19 & 20 Vict. cap. 25). He was a prominent member of the congregational body (cf. *Nonconformist*, 22 April 1863, p. 309).

Pellatt was twice married, first, in 1814, to Sophronia, daughter of George Kemp of Reading (she died in February 1815); secondly, in 1816, to Margaret Elizabeth, daughter of George Evans of Balham, who survived him. He left three daughters, his only son having died about 1839. His death took place at Balham on 17 April 1863.

[Authorities cited and obituary notices in Times, 20 April 1863, p. 12; Illustrated London News, 16 May 1863, p. 546; Proceedings of the Institution of Civil Engineers, xxiii. 511; information communicated by his daughter, Mrs. Rickman, of Addlestone.] R. B. P.

**PELLEGRINI, CARLO** (1839–1889), caricaturist, was born at Capua in Italy in March 1839. His father was a landed proprietor there, and on his mother's side he was descended from the house of Medici. He received a liberal education, and while still a youth led the fashion in Naples, and was courted and flattered by Neapolitan society, which he in return caricatured good-humouredly in thumbnail sketches. He was not long in dissipating the fortune his father left him, and on the outbreak of the Italian war of independence he became a volunteer in the ranks of Garibaldi, and fought with him at the Volturno and at Capua. An unfortunate love affair and the death of a sister were the causes of his leaving Italy and coming to England in November 1864. He never saw his native land again. His slender funds were soon exhausted, and he then began to turn to account his talent for humorous portraiture. It was in a very early number of 'Vanity Fair' (30 Jan. 1869) that there appeared his first published English caricature, a portrait of Lord Beaconsfield (then Mr. Disraeli). This bore the signature 'Singe,' which he soon discarded for that of 'Ape.' Mr. Gladstone, one of his best sketches, followed a week later, and was succeeded by several hundred portraits of statesmen and men of the day, drawn almost entirely from memory. He sought his subjects wherever they were to be found—at the club, in the theatre, on the racecourse, in church, and in the lobby of the House of Commons. He himself considered Baron Brunnow and Lord Stanley (afterwards Earl of Derby) to be the best of his cartoons; but those of General Gordon and Sir Anthony Panizzi were equally good. His statuette in red plaster of Robert Lowe (afterwards Lord Sherbrooke) [q. v.] standing on a matchbox, executed in Count Gleichen's studio in 1871, was very successful, and increased his reputation. He had at one time an ambition to excel in oils, but did little beyond painting portraits of Sir Edward Watkin, Sir Algernon Borthwick, Robert W. Macbeth, A.R.A., and one or two other friends. He exhibited once at the Royal Academy, and occasionally at the Grosvenor Gallery.

Pellegrini, who was known among his intimate friends by the sobriquet of 'Pelican,' was of a gay and genial temperament. He died of lung-disease at 53 Mortimer Street, Cavendish Square, London, on 22 Jan. 1889, and was buried in St. Mary's Roman catholic cemetery at Kensal Green.

His portrait, by Arthur J. Marks, appeared as a cartoon in 'Vanity Fair' for 27 April 1889, and one by Dégas belongs to Louis Fagan, esq.

[Vanity Fair, 26 Jan. and 27 April 1889; Pall Mall Gazette, 24 Jan. 1889, by Tighe Hopkins; Times, 23 Jan. 1889; Athenæum, 1889, i. 124; Bryan's Dict. ed. Graves and Armstrong, 1886–9, ii. 769.] R. E. G.

**PELLETT, THOMAS, M.D.** (1671?–1744), physician, was born in Sussex about 1671, and was admitted at Queens' College, Cambridge, on 8 June 1689. He graduated M.B. in 1694, and in 1695 went to Italy with Dr. Richard Mead [q. v.], and resided in the university of Padua. In 1705 he was created M.D. at Cambridge, and on 22 Dec. 1707 was admitted a candidate at the College of Physicians in London, where he began practice, and resided in Henrietta Street, Covent Garden; he was elected a fellow on 9 April 1716, was censor in 1717, 1720, and 1727, and president 1735–9. He delivered the Harveian oration on 19 Oct. 1719, and it was finely printed in quarto by S. Buckley of Amen Corner. It is remarkable as the only one of the published Harveian orations which is partly in verse, and the only one in which a knight of the Garter, John, second duke of

Montagu [q. v], a doctor of medicine of Cambridge, is congratulated on having become a fellow. The works of Linacre, Glisson, Wharton, and Harvey are well described, and the whole oration is both graceful and lively. Pellett edited Sir Isaac Newton's 'Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms' with Martin Folkes [q. v.] in 1728. He felt the difficulties of private practice keenly, and inclined to give his time chiefly to medical study and to general learning. He died in London on 4 July 1744, and was buried in St. Bride's Church, Fleet Street, where he is commemorated by an inscription on a brass plate. His portrait, painted by Dahl, hangs on the staircase of the College of Physicians, and was engraved by J. Faber (Bromley).

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. vol. ii.; manuscript notes in a copy of his oration; works.] N. M.

PELLEW, EDWARD, Viscount Exmouth (1757–1833), admiral, born at Dover on 19 April 1757, was second son of Samuel Pellew (1712–1764), commander of a Dover packet. The family was Cornish. Edward's grandfather, Humphrey Pellew, a merchant, resided from 1702 at Flushing manor-house in the parish of Mylor, and was buried there in 1722. On the death of Edward's father in 1764 the family removed to Penzance, and Pellew was for some years at the grammar school at Truro. In 1770 he entered the navy on board the Juno, with Captain John Stott, and made a voyage to the Falkland Islands. In 1772 he followed Stott to the Alarm, and in her was in the Mediterranean for three years. Consequent on a high-spirited quarrel with his captain, he was put on shore at Marseilles, where, finding an old friend of his father's in command of a merchant ship, he was able to get a passage to Lisbon and so home. He afterwards was in the Blonde, which, under the command of Captain Philemon Pownoll, took General Burgoyne to America in the spring of 1776. In October Pellew, together with another midshipman, Brown, was detached, under Lieutenant Dacres, for service in the Carleton tender on Lake Champlain. In a severe action on the 11th Dacres and Brown were both severely wounded, and the command devolved on Pellew, who, by his personal gallantry, extricated the vessel from a position of great danger. As a reward for his service he was immediately appointed to command the Carleton. In December Lord Howe wrote, promising him a commission as lieutenant when he could reach New York, and in the following January Lord Sandwich wrote promising to promote him when he came to England. In the summer of 1777 Pellew, with a small party of seamen, was attached to the army under Burgoyne, was present in the fighting at Saratoga, where his youngest brother, John, was killed, and he himself, with the whole force, taken prisoner.

On returning to England he was promoted, on 9 Jan. 1778, to be lieutenant of the Princess Amelia guardship at Portsmouth. He was very desirous of being appointed to a sea-going ship, but Lord Sandwich considered that he was bound by the terms of the surrender at Saratoga not to undertake any active service. Towards the end of the year he was appointed to the Licorne, which, in the spring of 1779, went out to Newfoundland, returning in the winter, when Pellew was moved into the Apollo, with his old captain, Pownoll. On 15 June 1780 the Apollo engaged a large French privateer, the Stanislaus, off Ostend. Pownoll was killed by a musket-shot, but Pellew, continuing the action, dismasted the Stanislaus and drove her on shore, where she was protected by the neutrality of the coast. On the 18th Lord Sandwich wrote to him: 'I will not delay informing you that I mean to give you immediate promotion as a reward for your gallant and officer-like conduct;' and on 1 July he was accordingly promoted to the command of the Hazard sloop, which was employed for the next six months on the east coast of Scotland. She was then paid off. In March 1782 Pellew was appointed to the Pelican, a small French prize, and so low that he used to say 'his servant could dress his hair from the deck while he sat in the cabin.' On 28 April, while cruising on the coast of Brittany, he engaged and drove on shore three privateers. In special reward for this service he was promoted to post rank on 25 May, and ten days later was appointed to the temporary command of the Artois, in which, on 1 July, he captured a large frigate-built privateer.

From 1786 to 1789 he commanded the Winchelsea frigate on the Newfoundland station, returning home each winter by Cadiz and Lisbon. Afterwards he commanded the Salisbury on the same station, as flag-captain to Vice-admiral Milbanke. In 1791 he was placed on half-pay, and tried his hand at farming, with indifferent success. He was offered a command in the Russian navy, but declined it, and he was still struggling with the difficulties of his farm when the war with France was declared. He immediately applied for a ship, and was appointed to the Nymphe, a 36-gun frigate, which he fitted out in a remarkably short time. Having expected a good deal of difficulty in manning her,

he had enlisted some eighty Cornish miners, who were sent round to the ship at Spithead. With these and about a dozen seamen, besides the officers, who were obliged to help in the work aloft, he put to sea; and, by dint of pressing from the merchant ships in the Channel, succeeded in filling up his complement, but with very few man-of-war's men. On 18 June the Nymphe sailed from Falmouth, on the news of two French frigates having been seen in the Channel, and at daybreak on the 19th fell in with the Cléopâtre, also of 36 guns, commanded by Captain Mullon, one of the few officers of the *ancien régime* who still remained in the French navy. After a short but very sharp action, the Cléopâtre's mizenmast and wheel were shot away, and the ship, being unmanageable, fell foul of the Nymphe, and was boarded and captured in a fierce rush. Mullon was mortally wounded, and died in trying to swallow his commission, which, in his dying agony, he had mistaken for the code of secret signals. The code thus fell intact into Pellew's hands, and was sent to the admiralty. The Cléopâtre, the first frigate taken in the war, was brought to Portsmouth, and on 29 June Pellew was presented to the king by the Earl of Chatham and was knighted.

In January 1794 Pellew was appointed to the Arethusa, a powerful 18-pounder frigate —carrying 32-pounder carronades on her quarter-deck and forecastle—which in April was attached to the frigate squadron appointed to cruise towards Ushant, under Commodore Sir John Borlase Warren [q. v.] On St. George's Day they fell in with one of the French squadrons which Warren was specially directed to suppress. They captured three ships out of the four, the Pomone, the largest and heaviest frigate then afloat, striking her flag actually to the Arethusa. On 23 Aug. the same squadron fell in with and destroyed another small French squadron; and the admiralty, encouraged by this repeated success, formed a second squadron, under the command of Pellew, which, within a few days of its sailing, fell in with and captured the French frigate Révolutionnaire [see Nagle, Sir Edmund]. During the winter the frigates continued to keep watch on the fleet in Brest. In the end of January 1795 Pellew was moved into the Indefatigable, an old 64-gun ship which had been cut down to a frigate, and in her was employed during the year cruising off Ushant, either independently or in company with Warren.

In January 1796 the Indefatigable was refitting at Plymouth, when, on the afternoon of the 26th, the Dutton, a large transport bound to the West Indies with troops, was forced by stress of weather to put into the Sound, and in a violent gale was driven ashore under the citadel. Her masts went overboard, and she was beating to pieces. The captain and others of the officers were on shore; those on board were young, inexperienced, and unequal to the emergency. The men were panic-struck; some of the soldiers broke open the spirit-room and drowned their despair. Pellew happened to be on shore at the time, and, running down to the beach, succeeded in getting on board. He then took command; a boat sent from the frigate came to his assistance, and by his exertions hawsers were laid out to the shore, and Pellew, with his sword drawn, directed the landing. Every one was safely landed before the wreck broke up. His conduct was deservedly praised. The corporation of Plymouth voted him the freedom of the town, the merchants of Liverpool presented him with a service of plate, and on 5 March he was created a baronet, with the grant of an honourable augmentation to his arms, a civic wreath, and for a crest a stranded ship.

During the following months Pellew commanded a strong squadron of frigates on the coast of France, which made several important prizes, among others the 38-gun frigate Unité and the 40-gun frigate Virginie. In December they were off Brest, and on the 16th, when the French fleet put to sea, Pellew sent the Révolutionnaire to carry the news to Sir John Colpoys, then some distance to the westward, while he himself, in the Indefatigable, carried the news to Falmouth, whence it was sent post to the admiralty. On the 22nd he was at sea again, with the Amazon in company; and, after a stormy cruise in the Bay of Biscay, was returning towards the Channel, when, late in the afternoon of 13 Jan. 1797, the two frigates fell in with the French 74-gun ship Droits de l'Homme, one of the fleet which had sailed on 16 Dec., and had been scattered on the coast of Ireland. It was blowing a furious south-westerly gale; the Droits de l'Homme had her fore and main top-masts carried away, and rolled so heavily that when attacked by the frigates she could not open her lower-deck ports. For nearly an hour the Indefatigable, at first alone, and afterwards assisted by the Amazon, continued pouring in raking broadsides. Towards midnight the Frenchman's mizenmast was shot away, and the action continued in this tremendous storm till near daybreak. The three ships were by that time in Audierne Bay, the

wind blowing dead on shore, and a very heavy sea rolling in. By great exertions and remarkable seamanship, the Indefatigable succeeded in beating out of the bay; the Amazon, which had sustained more damage, struck, and became a total wreck, though with very little loss of life [see Reynolds, Robert Carthew]. The Droits de l'Homme was less fortunate. She struck almost at the same time as the Amazon, on the morning of the 14th, but the boats which were hoisted out were almost immediately broken to pieces. Many men were crushed or drowned; many died of cold, of hunger, of thirst. It was the 18th before the miserable survivors were landed. The loss of life has been very differently stated; but, according to the best French accounts, she had on board 1,280 men in all, of whom 580 were soldiers and fifty were prisoners. Of these, 960 were saved, 103 had been killed by the frigates' fire, and 217 were lost in the wreck. It is not improbable that these numbers are too small; but it is certain that the numbers reported in England—1,350 lost out of a total of 1,750 on board—are much exaggerated (Chevalier, ii. 303; Troude, iii. 59; Marshall, i. 219).

During 1797 and 1798 Pellew, still in the Indefatigable, continued in command of a frigate squadron to the westward; and in March 1799 he was moved to the Impétueux, a remarkably fine 74-gun ship, but with a ship's company known to be on the verge of mutiny. Pellew's personal influence and stern decision had prevented any outbreak on board the Indefatigable, even in 1797; and it was generally believed that he was appointed to the Impétueux in the hope that he might be equally successful with her. The men, perhaps, felt that they were 'dared;' and, when the fleet drew back to Bantry Bay towards the end of May 1799, a general mutiny seems to have been projected. On 30 May it broke out on board the Impétueux. Pellew threw himself among the men, seized one of the ringleaders, and dragged him on deck. The officers, following his example, secured others. The mutiny was at an end, and the Impétueux went out to the Mediterranean with Rear-admiral Cotton. At Port Mahon the ringleaders were tried by court-martial, sentenced to death, and executed. St. Vincent, speaking of the incident afterwards, said that Pellew was 'an excellent and valuable officer, but the most important service he ever rendered to his country was saving the British fleet in Bantry Bay. We know that it was the intention to burn the ships and join the rebels on shore.' The Impétueux returned to the Channel with Lord Keith, and remained with the fleet under Lord Bridport, and afterwards Lord St. Vincent. In June 1800 Pellew was sent with a strong squadron to Quiberon Bay, where it was proposed to land a force of five thousand men to co-operate with the French royalists. It was, however, found that the royalists were not able to rise, as they had intended, and, beyond destroying a small battery, and bringing away or burning the shipping in the inner bay [see Pilfold, John], nothing was done. Pellew was afterwards at Ferrol under Warren; and, having rejoined the fleet, remained with it till the peace of Amiens, when the ship was paid off.

In July 1802 he was returned to parliament for Barnstaple; but, as soon as the renewal of the war appeared certain, he applied for active employment. In March 1803 he was appointed to the 80-gun ship Tonnant, in which he joined the fleet off Brest under Cornwallis, and early in the summer was detached as commodore of a strong squadron to watch the port of Ferrol, which the French had practically appropriated, and where, during the autumn and winter, they had a squadron of six or seven ships of the line. To blockade this, Pellew's force was little, if at all, superior in numbers, and he had no certainty that some additional ships, escaping from Brest, might not overpower him; but the blockade was efficiently maintained throughout the winter. In March he was recalled to England, in reality, it would seem, to speak in support of the admiralty against Mr. Pitt's motion on 15 March 1804 for an inquiry into Lord St. Vincent's policy. In Parliament Pellew had supported Mr. Pitt, but on this occasion he spoke strongly in support of Lord St. Vincent, and especially against the idea that the enemy's gunboats ought to be met by gunboats. He agreed with St. Vincent that the true defence was in the fleet; the gunboats he thought a most contemptible force, and he was not disposed to concur in 'the probability of the enemy being able, in a narrow sea, to pass through our blockading and protecting squadrons with all that secrecy and dexterity and by those hidden means that some worthy people expect' (Osler, pp. 204, 223).

On 23 April 1804 Pellew was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral, and was at the same time appointed commander-in-chief in the East Indies. He went out with his flag in the Culloden, but he expected that, for his speech and vote of 15 March, he would be shortly superseded. The new admiralty did not venture quite so far, but they sent out Sir Thomas Troubridge [q.v.], with a

commission as commander-in-chief in the seas to the east of a line running due south from Point de Galle in Ceylon, leaving Pellew with only the western and least important part of the station, though with an authority to collect and command the two squadrons should the French come in force into the eastern seas. The division of the station, especially at that time (1805), when a strenuous attack by the French seemed not unlikely, was considered by Pellew as in the highest degree ill-judged, and he proposed various modifications of the order to Troubridge, at the same time offering him an equal share of the pecuniary advantages and of the patronage. Troubridge held that the admiralty order was absolute, and declined to accept the proposals of Pellew, who thereupon wrote a very strong remonstrance to the admiralty, who, apparently after consulting with Admiral Peter Rainier [q. v.], yielded to Pellew's reasoning, and recalled Troubridge, appointing him to the command at the Cape of Good Hope, Pellew remaining, as at first, commander-in-chief of the whole East India station.

On the part of the French the war was principally waged by a few powerful frigates and many privateers, fitted out for the most part from Mauritius. The imprudence of the Calcutta merchants in letting their ships sail without convoy played into the enemy's hands, and they suffered severely in consequence (Laughton, *Studies in Naval History*, pp. 449–50); but the arrangements of Pellew reduced the risk of ships sailing with convoy to a minimum, and the losses by capture were less than those by the dangers of the sea (Mahan, *Influence of Sea Power upon the French Revolution and Empire*, ii. 217). The Dutch, on the other hand, had a considerable force of ships-of-war on the station; but, after many minor losses, the residue was destroyed at Gressie on 11 Dec. 1807 (James, iv. 284). As captain and as admiral, Pellew was at all times most careful of the health and comfort of the men under his command; and, though determined to enforce the strictest discipline, he knew that, as a rule, frequency of punishment is a proof of unsatisfactory discipline. Accordingly, soon after arriving in India, he required a monthly return of punishment from every ship under his command; and the admiralty, struck with the good effects of the order, adopted it as general for the whole service. It is rightly described as 'the first step in the milder and more effectual system of discipline which has since prevailed' (Osler, p. 258).

On 28 April 1808 Pellew was advanced to the rank of vice-admiral, and in 1809 he returned to England in the Culloden. Having declined an offer of the post of second in command in the Mediterranean, under Lord Collingwood, he was, in the spring of 1810, appointed commander-in-chief in the North Sea, with the charge of blockading the enemy's fleet in the Scheldt. In the spring of 1811 he succeeded Sir Charles Cotton as commander-in-chief in the Mediterranean, and went out with his flag in the 120-gun ship Caledonia, in which he continued during the war, for the most part off Toulon. On 14 May 1814 he was raised to the peerage as Baron Exmouth of Canonteign, a Devonshire estate which he had bought; on 4 June 1814 he became admiral of the blue; and on 2 Jan. 1815 was nominated a K.C.B., from which he was advanced a few months later to a G.C.B.

On the conclusion of the war, by the exile of Napoleon to Elba, Exmouth returned to England; but, on the escape of Napoleon in the following year, he was again sent out with his flag in the Boyne. The squadron wintered at Leghorn, and early in 1816 he was ordered to visit the several North African powers and claim the release of all British subjects. This was granted without difficulty by Algiers, Tunis, and Tripoli; but the dey of Algiers positively refused a further request that he would abolish Christian slavery.

After a very warm altercation, and a serious risk of some of the English officers being torn to pieces by the mob, it was agreed to refer the matter to England, the dey undertaking to send a special embassy. Exmouth accordingly sailed for England; but before his arrival the news of a fresh outrage of the Algerines had determined the government to inflict a summary punishment on them. Exmouth was ordered to undertake the task, and, in consultation with the admiralty, declared his readiness to do so with five sail of the line. He was offered a larger force, but refused, considering that a greater number of ships could not be advantageously placed. The force with which he actually sailed from Plymouth on 28 July consisted of two three-deckers, the Queen Charlotte and Impregnable, and three 74-gun ships, with one of 50 guns, four frigates, and nine gun-brigs and bombs. At Gibraltar he found a Dutch frigate squadron, whose commander begged that they might be allowed to co-operate. To this Exmouth consented, and, coming off Algiers on 27 Aug. at daybreak, sent in a note demanding, among other points, the abolition of Christian slavery and the immediate release of all Chris-

tian slaves. At two o'clock in the afternoon no answer had been returned, and Exmouth, in the Queen Charlotte, made the signal to move in to the attack. At half-past two the Queen Charlotte anchored a hundred yards from the mole-head, the other ships taking up their appointed positions in excellent order. The fire of the batteries was immediately replied to by the ships, and the action continued with the utmost fury for nearly eight hours. The batteries were silenced and in ruins, so also was a great part of the town. On the next morning a message was sent off to Exmouth to the effect that all his demands were granted, and this was finally confirmed on the 29th. Some three thousand slaves, mostly Italians and Spaniards, were liberated and sent to their respective countries; and Exmouth, having completed his task, returned home.

It was felt through Europe that the victory was Christian rather than English, and the several states of Christendom hastened to testify their gratitude to the victor. His own sovereign raised him to the dignity of a viscount, with an honourable augmentation to his arms. London voted him the freedom of the city and a sword richly ornamented with diamonds. He was made a knight of the Spanish order of King Charles III; of the Neapolitan order of St. Ferdinand and Merit; of the Netherlands order of Wilhelm; of the Sardinian order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus. The pope sent him a valuable cameo, and the officers who had served under him in the battle presented him with a piece of plate of the value of fourteen hundred guineas.

From 1817 to 1821 Exmouth was commander-in-chief at Plymouth, after which he had no further service, and, with the exception of attending occasionally in the House of Lords, passed the remainder of his life at Teignmouth. On 15 Feb. 1832 he was appointed vice-admiral of the United Kingdom. 'I shall have it only for one year,' he wrote to his brother. He had it for not quite so long, dying at Teignmouth on 23 Jan. 1833. He had married, in 1783, Susan, daughter of James Frowde of Knoyle in Wiltshire, and had issue two daughters and four sons, of whom the eldest, Pownoll Bastard, succeeded as second viscount; the youngest, Edward, died honorary canon of Norwich in 1869; the second, Sir Fleetwood Broughton Reynolds, and the third, George, are separately noticed.

In figure Exmouth was tall and handsome, and of remarkable strength and activity. Almost as much at home in the water as on the land, he repeatedly saved life by jumping overboard—on one occasion from the foreyard of the Blonde: and more than once, in storm or battle, when the seamen quailed before some dangerous piece of work, he either did it himself, or set an example which the men felt bound to follow.

Exmouth's portrait, as a captain, by Opie, belongs to Mr. Tansley Witt; another, by Owen, is in the Painted Hall at Greenwich; another, by Sir William Beechey, in the National Portrait Gallery, has been engraved by C. Turner; a fourth, by Northcote, is also in the National Portrait Gallery; a fifth, by Sir Thomas Lawrence, was in 1863 in the possession of Mrs. H. E. Pellew.

[Osler's Life of Admiral Viscount Exmouth (with an engraved portrait after Owen) is the principal authority, and, is, in general, to be depended on except in the matter of dates. His official correspondence during his command in India, in the Public Record Office, which gives full details of the dispute with Troubridge, has an exceptional value for the history of the war in its commercial aspect. See also James's Naval History; Chevalier's Histoire de la Marine française (ii.) sous la première République, and (iii.) sous le Consulat et l'Empire; Troude's Batailles navales de la France; brief memoir in Mylor Parish Mag. 1895, by Fleetwood H. Pellew, esq., of Clifton, Lord Exmouth's grandson.]

J. K. L.

PELLEW, Sir FLEETWOOD BROUGHTON REYNOLDS (1789-1861), admiral, second son of Edward Pellew, first viscount Exmouth [q. v.], was born on 13 Dec. 1789, and in March 1799 was entered on board the Impétueux, then commanded by his father, with whom he was afterwards in the Tonnant, and in 1805 in the Culloden on the East India station. On 8 Sept. 1805 he was promoted to be lieutenant of the Sceptre, but, returning shortly afterwards to the Culloden, was successively appointed by his father to the command of the Rattlesnake sloop, the Terpsichore, and Psyche frigates, in which he was repeatedly engaged with Dutch vessels and Malay pirates. On 12 Oct. 1807 he was confirmed in the rank of commander, but was meanwhile appointed by his father acting-captain of the Powerful of 74 guns, and, in the following year, of the Cornwallis of 50 guns, and the Phaeton of 38 successively. His commission as captain was confirmed on 14 Oct. 1808, and, continuing in the Phaeton, he took part in the reduction of Mauritius in 1810 and of Java in 1811. In August 1812 the Phaeton returned to England with a large convoy of Indiamen. Pellew received for his care the thanks of the East India Company and a present of

five hundred guineas. He then went out to the Mediterranean in the Iphigenia of 36 guns, and from her was moved, in January 1813, to the Resistance of 46. That vessel in the following October was part of a strong squadron which silenced the batteries at Port d'Anzo and brought out a convoy of twenty-nine vessels that had taken refuge there. In February 1814 the Resistance was ordered home and paid off, in consequence, as it seemed, of a mutiny on board, for which several men were condemned to death, and several to be flogged. The sentence was, however, quashed on account of a technical error in the proceedings; and, though it did not appear officially, it was freely said that the men had been goaded to mutiny by Pellew's harshness. In June 1815 he was nominated a C.B.; and from August 1818 to June 1822 he had command of the Révolutionnaire of 46 guns, after which he was on half-pay for thirty years.

In January 1836 the king conferred on him the K.C.H., and at the same time knighted him. On 9 Nov. 1846 he was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral; and in December 1852 he was appointed commander-in-chief on the East India and China station, not without a strong expression of public opinion on the impolicy of sending out a man so old to conduct what might be a troublesome war in the pestilent climate of Burma. In April 1853 he hoisted his flag on board the Winchester, which returned to Hongkong in the following September, when the men applied for leave. The question of leave at Hongkong was then, and for some years afterwards, an extremely difficult one, on account of the great heat, the poisonous nature of the spirits sold in the low grog-shops, and the filthy condition of the Chinese. Pellew determined that the men should not have leave, at any rate till the weather was cooler; but he neglected to make any explanation to the men. The consequence was a mutinous expression of feeling. The admiral ordered the drum to beat to quarters, and as the men did not obey, the officers, with drawn swords, were sent on to the lower deck, to force the men up. Some three or four were wounded, and the mutiny was quelled; but on the news reaching England, the 'Times,' in a succession of strong leading articles, pointed out the coincidence of a mutiny occurring on board the Winchester and the Resistance within a short time of Pellew's assuming the command, and demanded his immediate recall. Even without this pressure the admiralty would seem to have decided that he had shown a lamentable want of judgment, and summarily recalled him. He had attained the rank of vice-admiral on 22 April 1853, and became admiral on 13 Feb. 1858, but had no further service, and died at Marseilles on 28 July 1861. He married, in 1816, Harriet, only daughter of Sir Godfrey Webster, bart., and by her (who died in 1849) had issue one daughter. He married again, in 1851, Cécile, daughter of Count Edouard de Melfort, but was divorced from her in 1859.

[Marshall's Royal Naval Biogr. v. (suppl. pt. i.) 402; O'Byrne's Naval Biogr. Dict.; Times, 21 Dec. 1852, 5, 14, 16 Jan. 1854; Minutes of Courts Martial, vol. 168, in the Public Record Office.] J. K. L.

PELLEW, GEORGE (1793–1866), theologian, third son of Edward Pellew, first viscount Exmouth [q. v.], was born at Flushing, Cornwall, in April 1793. He was educated at Eton from 1808 to 1811, and admitted as gentleman-commoner at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, on 20 March 1812, graduating B.A. 1815, M.A. 1818, and B.D. and D.D. in November 1828. In 1817 he was ordained in the English church, and in February 1819 he became, by the gift of the lord chancellor, vicar of Nazeing, Essex. In November 1820 he was advanced by the same patron to the vicarage of Sutton-in-the-Forest, or Sutton Galtries, Yorkshire. He subsequently was appointed seventh canon in Canterbury Cathedral (14 Nov. 1822 to 1828), rector of St. George-the-Martyr, Canterbury (1827–8), prebendary of Osbaldwick at York (15 Feb. 1824 to September 1828), prebendary of Wistow in the same cathedral (18 Sept. 1828 to 1852), rector of St. Dionis Backchurch, London (October 1828 to 1852), dean of Norwich 1828, and rector of Great Chart, Kent, 1852; and he held the last two preferments until his death. As dean of Norwich he had a seat in convocation, where he took a very active part in the debates, and threw in his influence with the moderate party. Pellew died at the rectory, Great Chart, on 13 Oct. 1866, and the east window of the church was afterwards filled with stained glass in his memory. He married, on 20 June 1820, Frances, second daughter of Henry Addington, prime minister and first viscount Sidmouth, and left issue one son and three daughters. The widow died at Speen Hill House, Newbury, Berkshire, on 27 Feb. 1870.

Pellew printed many sermons and tracts, the most important of which was a 'Letter to Sir Robert Peel on the means of rendering Cathedral Churches most conducive to the Efficiency of the Established Church.' Many of his sermons were included in two volumes printed in 1848, and entitled 'Sermons on

many of the leading Doctrines and Duties taught by the Church of England.' In 1847 he published 'The Life and Correspondence of Addington, first Viscount Sidmouth,' his father-in-law. These volumes are of much value for the history of the first twenty years of the century, and are written with 'good sense and unbiassed feeling.'

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Foster's Index Eccl.; Burke's Peerage; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. ii. 441, iii. 1307, with full bibliography; Boase's Collect. Cornub. p. 697; Athenæum, 20 Oct. 1866, p. 499; Gent. Mag. 1866, pt. ii. p. 705; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 55, ii. 478, iii. 208, 227; Men of the Time, 1865 edit.] W. P. C.

**PELLEW, Sir ISRAEL** (1758–1832), admiral, younger brother of Edward Pellew, viscount Exmouth [q. v.], was born on 25 Aug. 1758. He entered the navy in 1771, on board the Falcon sloop, in which he served for three years in the West Indies. He was afterwards for a short time in the Albion guardship, and for nearly three years in the Flora, which was sunk at Rhode Island in July 1778 to prevent her falling into the hands of the enemy. On 4 Feb. 1779 he passed his examination, and a few days later was promoted to be lieutenant of the Drake sloop in the West Indies. In 1781 he was lieutenant of the Apollo, and in 1782 commanded the armed cutter Resolution in the North Sea, where, on 20 Jan. 1783, he captured a dangerous Dutch privateer. As peace was already concluded when the action was fought, the admiralty declined to promote him, but he was continued in command of the cutter on the Irish station for the next four years. In 1787 he was appointed to the Salisbury, on the Newfoundland station, and from her was promoted to the rank of commander on 22 Nov. 1790. In the summer of 1798 he joined his brother Edward as a volunteer on board the Nymphe, and for his distinguished gallantry in the action with the Cléopâtre was advanced to post rank 25 June 1793, and appointed to the Squirrel, a small frigate, in the North Sea.

In April 1795 he was appointed to the Amphion of 32 guns, and, after some time on the Newfoundland and North Sea stations, was in September 1796 ordered to join the frigate squadron under his brother's command. On 19 Sept. he put into Plymouth for some repairs, and the next morning went into Hamoaze with all the ship's stores on board. On the 22nd the work was almost finished, and she was ordered to sail the next day. In the afternoon a great many visitors were on board, bidding farewell to their friends; and Pellew had invited Captain Swaffield, an old messmate, and the first lieutenant of the Amphion to dine with him. As they were at table a violent explosion of gunpowder destroyed the ship, killing about three hundred persons. Pellew was blown out of the port on to the deck of the adjoining hulk, but eventually recovered from his injuries. The lieutenant was comparatively unhurt. It appeared that the gunner had been fraudulently selling gunpowder; some seems to have been spilt, and in this way a train was laid to the fore magazine, which exploded and blew the fore-part of the ship to atoms; the afterpart, momentarily lifted, went to the bottom. It was afterwards raised and broken up.

In the following spring Pellew was appointed to the Greyhound, the crew of which joined the mutiny, and sent him on shore. He refused to rejoin her, and was appointed to the Cleopatra, which he commanded on the West Indies and North American station till the peace. In April 1804 he was appointed to the Conqueror, a 74-gun ship, one of the largest class and exceptionally well manned. She had been already a year in commission, and continued in the Channel until the following September, when she joined Nelson in the Mediterranean. In May 1805 she was one of the fleet that went with Nelson to the West Indies, and was again with him in the battle of Trafalgar, where she was the fourth ship in the weather line, and, following immediately after the Victory, Téméraire, and Neptune, completed in part the work which they had well begun. It was to the Conqueror that the Bucentaure, the French flagship, struck; and Captain Atcherley of the marines was sent to take possession. To him Villeneuve offered his sword; but Atcherley requested the admiral and the commandant of the soldiers to go in his boat on board the Conqueror, so as to surrender their swords to Pellew. The Conqueror, however, had made sail, and was then in close action with the Spanish fourdecker, the Santísima Trinidad, so Atcherley took his prisoners on board the Mars, where they delivered their swords to the lieutenant in command. The swords were afterwards given to Collingwood, who kept them, much to the indignation of Pellew, who considered that they belonged by right to him, as, by the custom of the service, they did; but Pellew never claimed them, and Collingwood probably supposed that the French officers had surrendered to the Mars. The Conqueror continued on the Cadiz and Lisbon station till 1808, when she returned to England, and was paid off,

Pellew being appointed to superintend the payment of the ships afloat at Chatham.

On 31 July 1810 he was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral, and in 1811 went out to the Mediterranean with his brother, as captain of the fleet. In January 1815 he was nominated a K.C.B., and in the spring returned to the Mediterranean with Lord Exmouth. But Exmouth refused to permit him to go with him to Algiers. He had thus no further service, but was advanced to be vice-admiral on 12 Aug. 1819, and admiral on 22 July 1830. He resided during his later years at Plymouth, and died there, after a lingering and painful illness, on 19 July 1832. He married, in 1792, Mary, daughter of George Gilmore, and had issue one son, Edward, a captain in the life-guards, who was slain in a duel at Paris on 6 Oct. 1819.

[Osler's Life of Viscount Exmouth, Appendix A; Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. ii. (vol. i. pt. ii.) 454; Ralfe's Nav. Biogr. iii. 55; Service-book, &c., in the Public Record Office; Gent. Mag. 1832, ii. 179.] J. K. L.

PELLEW or PELLOW, THOMAS (*fl.* 1738), captive in Barbary during twenty-four years, was the child of humble parents descended from a family which has numerous branches in the south of Cornwall, and of which Lord Exmouth was the most distinguished representative. After some years at Penryn school, upon the death of his father young Pellow obtained leave in 1715 to go to sea with his uncle, John Pellew. He embarked at Falmouth in the spring of 1715, in the merchant ship Francis, and before that vessel's arrival at the port of Genoa he had outlived his maritime ambition. Unfortunately for his resolution, the Francis on its return journey was surprised and captured off Cape Finisterre by a couple of Sallee rovers. The rovers were surprised in turn off the bar of Sallee by an English cruiser commanded by Captain Delgarnoe, but the Moors saved themselves by running ashore. After getting to land as best they could, the prisoners, consisting of twenty-five Englishmen and seventeen Frenchmen, were conducted to a prison, and thence, after a brief delay, were despatched to 'Mesquinez,' where the palace of the sultan Muley Ismail was situate. Being a mere boy at the time, Pellow was at first sent to clean arms in the armoury, and was then given as a slave to the emperor's son, Muley Spha, by whose influence, with the assistance of the bastinado, he was induced to adopt the faith of Islam. He was in consequence excluded as a renegade from the ransom effected by Commodore Stewart in 1720, when two hundred and ninety-six Englishmen, most of whom were sailors, were recovered and restored to their homes. The full printed account of Stewart's embassy was subsequently incorporated by the compiler in Pellow's narrative of his captivity. On arriving at manhood Pellow was trained in military exercises, and about 1725 was entrusted with the command of a Moorish castle at Tannorah; he was subsequently employed by the sultan to put down an insurrection in Guzlan. Muley Ismail died in 1727, after a reign of fifty-five years, and was succeeded by Muley Ahmed IV, during whose brief reign Pellow made an unsuccessful attempt to escape to Gibraltar, being recaptured and narrowly escaping execution. He had a share in the siege of Fez, and in the course of 1728 took with great equanimity the death of a mahommedan wife, whom he had married under Muley Ismail's orders, and of his daughter by her. The poisoning of Ahmed IV by one of the old sultan's wives, and the eventual succession of Muley Abdallah V (1728–1757), only involved him in a change of masters. During the next few years he was busily occupied as a captain of horse in assisting to put down the frequent insurrections inseparable from Moorish methods of government. During the fratricidal wars that followed Ismail's death Muley Abdallah was deposed six times, and as many times reinstated; and in all the vicissitudes of the earlier portion of his reign Pellow had an active share. He was also, according to his own account, entrusted with a large caravan to Timbuctoo in quest of slaves and other merchandise. If, as seems probable, he may be identified with a certain 'Pilleau,' a renegade of influence, who is mentioned in Braithwaite's 'History of the Revolutions in the Empire of Morocco' (1729), the importance of the services he claims to have rendered is to some extent corroborated. Braithwaite writes under date 27 Nov. 1727: 'To-day we were visited [in Mequinez] by one Pilleau, a young fellow of good family in Cornwall, but now turned Moor. He was taken very young with Captain Pilleau, his uncle, and, being a handsome boy, he was given by Muley Ismael to one of his sons. The Christian captives give this young man a wonderful character, saying he endured enough to kill seven men before his master could make him turn. . . . He spoke the Arabick language as well as the Moors, and having traversed this vast country, even to the frontier of Guinea, was capable of giving a very good account of it.' Pellow was occasionally employed as an interpreter at the embassy, but his staple employment was as a soldier, in which capacity he

had to gain a precarious livelihood by plunder. It was probably the continuous strain of this hazardous method of life that forced him, though in many respects prosperous, to meditate his escape. It was not, however, until the commencement of 1738 that he was able to put his plan into execution. The difficulty was to find a ship's captain bound for England who would take on board a Moorish subject and conceal him until safe out of the sultan's dominions. To attain this object, after leaving his quarters at Mequinez, he had to tramp the country for several months in disguise. After travelling with a party of conjurors, and as an itinerant quack, and after having been several times stripped literally naked by brigands, who robbed him even of the pots of ointment in which he concealed his money, he arrived at Santa Cruz. There he lived for a long time in a cave in company with other mendicants and outcasts; but failing to find a vessel, he set out for El Waladia, where he was reduced to stealing carrots to keep himself from starvation. Ultimately he reached Sallee, where he managed, without the knowledge of the Moors, to get a passage to Gibraltar in a small trading vessel, commanded by a Captain Toobin of Dublin. From Gibraltar, where a subscription was raised on his behalf, he sailed for London in the Euphrates, Captain Peacock; and, after a few days in London, where the account of his long captivity excited some little notice, he returned to his native town of Penryn (15 Oct. 1738), nothing further being known of his career. The narrative of his experiences appeared in 1739, under the title 'The History of the Long Captivity and Adventures of Thomas Pellow in South Barbary; giving an account of his being taken by two Sallee rovers and carry'd a slave to Mequinez at eleven years of age. . . . Written by himself, for R. Goadby,' London, n.d., 8vo. A second edition appeared in 1740, and a third, as 'Adventures of Thomas Pellow of Penryn, Mariner,' was edited by Dr. Robert Brown, with a copious introduction and valuable notes, for the 'Adventure Series,' 1890, 8vo. There are strong reasons, both external and internal, for believing that the kernel of Pellow's narrative is founded upon fact, but it was evidently edited with a great deal of latitude and with some literary skill. In addition to the incorporation of Stewart's 'Embassy,' already alluded to, the book is padded out by long extracts from Windus's 'Journey to Mequinez.' It is probable that other volumes on Morocco were pirated in the same way, especially for the somewhat hackneyed details given of the 'miseries of the Christian slaves.' The most genuine and also the most graphic portion is the account of Pellow's flight, which affords a vivid picture of the barbarous and unsettled state of the country under Muley Abdallah.

[Pellow's History; Boase and Courtney's Bibliotheca Cornub.; Chenier's Recherches Hist. sur les Maures; Braithwaite's Hist. of the Revolutions in the Empire of Morocco, 1729, p. 192; Houdas' Le Maroc de 1631 à 1812—extrait de l'ouvrage de Aboulqâsem ben Ahmed Ezziâni.]

T. S.

**PELLHAM, EDWARD** (*fl.* 1630), sailor, was a gunner's mate on board the Salutation of London in the service of the company of Muscovy merchants. On 1 May 1630 the Salutation, with two other vessels, under command of Captain William Goodlea, sailed for Greenland. On reaching the Foreland the Salutation was appointed to station there. When within four leagues of Black Point Pellham and seven of her crew were despatched in a shallop to Green Harbour to meet the second ship. Missing both points, the shallop was given up as lost, and the Muscovy fleet returned home. The eight men, whose names Pellham gives, passed the winter in dire privation at Bell Sound. On 25 May 1631 two ships from Hull came into the Sound, followed on the 28th by the Muscovy fleet, again under command of Captain William Goodlea. The eight men were at once taken on board, and on 20 Aug. departed for the Thames. Pellham wrote an account of his privations in 'God's Power and Providence shewed in the marvellous Preservation and Deliverance of Eight Englishmen left by mischance in Greenland, anno 1630, nine moneths and twelve days, with a true relation of all their miseries, their shifts, and hardship . . . with a map of Greenland,' London, 1631; reprinted in vol. iv. of A. and J. Churchill's 'Collection of Voyages and Travels,' 1732, 1744, 1752, all folio; and by Adam White for the Hakluyt Society, 1855, 8vo.

The book is dedicated to Alderman Sir Hugh Hammersley, governor of the Muscovy Company and to the Company's assistants and adventurers.

[Tract quoted.]

W. A. S.

**PELLING, EDWARD** (*d.* 1718), divine, of Wiltshire birth, was educated at Westminster School, and was admitted on 3 July 1658 to Trinity College, Cambridge, becoming a scholar on 14 April 1659. He was elected minor fellow 1664, and major fellow in the following year. He graduated B.A. 1661–2, M.A. 1665, and D.D. on the occasion of William III's visit to Cambridge in October 1689. From 11 May 1674 to the

autumn of 1678 Pelling was vicar of St. Helen's, London; from 1 Oct. 1678 till the close of 1691 vicar of St. Martin's, Ludgate; from 3 May 1683 till his resignation on 4 July 1691 prebendary of Westminster; and from 1691 rector of Petworth, Sussex. Before October 1679 he was chaplain to Charles, duke of Somerset. He was also chaplain in ordinary to William and Mary, and to Queen Anne. Pelling died on 19 March 1718 (*Historical Register*, 1718, Chronological Diary, p. 13). His son Thomas was elected from Westminster to Christ Church in 1689.

Pelling was a stout defender of the Anglican church against both Roman catholics and dissenters. He printed numerous sermons which he preached on public occasions, many before the king or the House of Lords at Westminster Abbey. Besides sermons, and a series of 'practical discourses,' Pelling published: 1. 'Ancient and Modern Delusions discoursed of in Three Sermons upon 2 Thess. ii. 11, concerning some Errors now prevailing in the Church of Rome,' London, 1679. 2. 'The Good Old Way . . .' London, 1680; a treatise aimed against concessions to dissenters for sake of unity. 3. 'The Apostate Protestant. A Letter to a Friend occasioned by the late reprinting of a Jesuit's Book about Succession to the Crown of England, pretended to have been written by R. Doleman [i.e. Robert Parsons (1546–1610) q. v.],' London, 1682; 2nd edition, 1685—an attack on the exclusion bill. 4. 'The Antiquity of the Protestant Religion. . . . In a Letter to a Person of Quality,' London, 1687, 2 parts. In the British Museum copy there follows a manuscript tract attacking Pelling's arguments concerning the 'use of images,' with 'Third and Fourth Letters to a Person of Quality' vindicating them. 5. 'A Discourse concerning the Existence of God,' London, 1696; reissued in 1704, when the title-page describes it as an exposition of 'the principles of the Epicureans and Hobbists of our age.' It is dedicated to Queen Anne. Part ii., issued separately, with same title-page, London, 1755.

Pelling also edited in 1688 the 'Dialecticon' of John Poynet [q. v.]

[Welch's Alumni Westmon.; Addit. MS. 5846 f. 123; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ii. 72, iv. 83, 369, and Fasti, ii. 216; Wedmore's Westminster Abbey, App. pp. 224–5; Dallaway's Rape of Arundel, p. 335; Le Neve, iii. 362; Sussex Archæol. Collections, ix. 86; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Newcourt's Repertorium; Hist. MSS. Comm. 4th Rep. p. 189, and 12th Rep. p. vii; documents in Westminster Abbey kindly furnished by the Very Rev. Dean Bradley; information kindly sent from the Rev. R. Sinker, D.D., librarian of Trinity College, Cambridge, and the Rev. Thomas Holland, rector of Petworth.] W. A. S.

PELLY, Sir JOHN HENRY (1777–1852), governor of the Hudson's Bay Company, born on 31 March 1777, was eldest son of Henry Hinde Pelly of Upton House, Essex, a captain in the service of the East India Company. His grandfather, John Pelly, was also a captain in the company's service. His mother was Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of Henry Hinde of Upton. John is said to have been in his youth in the navy. If so, he quitted it without obtaining a commission. It is more probable that he was with his father in the company's service; that he had nautical experience of some sort appears certain. Having settled in business in London, he became in 1806 a director of the Hudson's Bay Company, of which he was afterwards successively deputy governor and governor. In 1823 he was elected elder brother of the Trinity House, and, some years later, deputy master. In 1840 he was a director of the Bank of England, and in 1841 governor. As governor of the Hudson's Bay Company in 1835 he was mainly instrumental in sending out the exploring parties which, under Dease and Thomas Simpson (1808–1840) [q. v.], two of the company's agents, did so much for the discovery of the north-west passage and of the coast-line of North America. His share in this work is commemorated on the map, where Cape Pelly marks the eastern extremity of Dease and Simpson Strait. On 6 July 1840 he was created a baronet, on the recommendation of Lord Melbourne. The Duke of Wellington was on friendly terms with him. He died at Upton on 13 Aug. 1852. He married, in 1807, Emma, daughter of Henry Boulton of Thorncroft, Surrey, governor of the Corporation for Working Mines and Metals in Scotland, and a director of the Sun Fire Office, and had by her a large family.

[Gent. Mag. 1852 ii. 527; Ann. Reg. 1852, p. 300; Burke's Peerage and Baronetage; Simpson's Narrative of the Discoveries on the North Coast of America during the years 1836–9.] J. K. L.

PELLY, Sir LEWIS (1825–1892), Indian official, born at Hyde House, Minchinhampton, Stroud, Gloucestershire, 14 Nov. 1825, was son of John Hinde Pelly, esq., by his wife, of the same county, whose maiden name was Lewis. Sir John Henry Pelly [q. v.] of Upton, Essex, was his uncle. Pelly was educated at Rugby, and appointed to the Bombay army of the East India Com-

pany as ensign in 1841. He became lieutenant in 1843, captain in 1856, major in 1861, lieutenant-colonel in 1863, colonel in 1871, major-general in 1882, and lieutenant-general in 1887.

In 1851–2 Pelly served as assistant to the resident at the court of Baroda, and in that capacity prosecuted the Khutput inquiries before the commission under Sir James Outram [q. v.] in 1851. From 1852 to 1856 he was employed in a civil capacity in Sind, and in 1857 acted as aide-de-camp to General John Jacob [q. v.], commanding the cavalry division of the army in Persia. He remained with Jacob until the conclusion of the war, receiving the medal and clasp, and next year joined him in Sind as brigade-major of the irregular horse Sind frontier force. Pelly collected Jacob's opinions on the reorganisation of the Indian army, and published them in a volume entitled 'Views and Opinions of General Jacob,' which passed through two editions in 1858. He subsequently returned to Persia as secretary of legation at Teheran, and on the retirement of his cousin, Sir Henry Rawlinson, became chargé d'affaires. In 1860 he was sent on a special mission through the countries of Afghánistán and Balúchistán. His love of travel and adventure was strong, and was first displayed to conspicuous advantage in a journey from Persia to India by way of Herát and Kandahár. On this occasion he rode eight hundred miles through lawless lands inhabited by fanatical Moslems, without escort and without disguise, exposed at times to imminent danger.

On his return to India in 1861 Pelly spent a few months at Calcutta with Lord Canning, and afterwards went on a mission to the Comoro Islands. At the close of the year he became political agent and consul at Zanzibar, where he confirmed earlier treaties with the Sultan. In 1862 he was transferred to the post of political resident on the Persian Gulf, and took part in a long series of difficult negotiations with the Arabs near the coast. His journey in 1865 to Riyádh, the Wahábí capital of the highlands of Central Arabia, known as Nejd, was one of his most notable exploits. It was undertaken partly to fix the position of Riyádh on the map, and partly to arrange for restraining the Wahábís, whose increase of power and interference with smaller states were held to involve political danger. The Wahábís are the puritans of Islam. They laboured at first to restore and preserve the original spirit of their religion; but in course of time the attractions of temporal power obscured their spiritual aspirations, and the sect became as aggressive as it was fanatical. Their chief at the time of Pelly's visit was named Faizul, and entitled indifferently amír or imám. He bitterly resented the action of British naval officers in endeavouring to suppress the slave trade, and his feelings towards the British government and their representative were avowedly hostile. Consequently, when Pelly proposed to visit him and commence friendly relations, the overture was declined with scant courtesy. But Pelly, determined to succeed, crossed the Persian Gulf and established himself with some of the local shaikhs (chiefs), from whose quarters he wrote to inform the amír that he was on his way to Riyádh. Permission to advance was granted, but without the usual courtesies; nevertheless, the journey was performed without the assistance of a guide. An interview with the amír followed. He was an old man, blind, but of striking appearance—resigned, dignified, stern, and remorseless. He was favourably impressed with Pelly's address, but told him 'Riyádh was a curious place for a European to come to; that none had ever before been allowed to enter; but that he trusted all would go well.' Pelly had difficulty in getting safely away, and only succeeded by a judicious mixture of tact and boldness. In 1866 the journals of his recent travels both in Afghánistán and Arabia were printed by the government at Bombay.

Between 1865 and 1871 Pelly paid other visits to the Chaab Arabs and Arab tribes of the littoral of the Gulfs of Persia and Oman, and he negotiated conventions with the chiefs and with the Sultan of Muscat with a view to suppressing slavery and facilitating the progress of the telegraph. In 1868 his services were rewarded by the honour of C.S.I. In 1872 and 1873 he accompanied Sir Bartle Frere on an anti-slavery mission to the east coast of Africa and Arabia, and, resettling in India in the latter year, was made governor-general's agent and chief commissioner to the States of Rajputana. In May 1874 Pelly was made K.C.S.I. Later in the year he was sent as special commissioner to Baroda to investigate the disordered condition of that feudatory state. Baroda was ruled by a gaekwár named Mulhar Ráo, and the government of India had hitherto been represented by the resident, Col. R. Phayre, C.B. Misgovernment had led Phayre to remonstrate with the gaekwár, and in 1874 Mr. Dadabhai Naoroji, a Parsee gentleman, was, in spite of Col. Phayre's disapproval, appointed sole minister. Their antagonism was disclosed early in November, and on the 9th of that month an attempt was made to poison the

resident. The gaekwár himself was suspected of complicity. Pelly arrived on 30 Nov. as special commissioner, and in January 1875 arrested the gaekwár under orders from the government of India. He was tried by a commission consisting of Maharaja Sindhia, Maharaja of Jaipúr, Sir Dinkar Ráo, Sir Richard Couch, Sir Richard Meade, and Mr. P. S. Melvill, the defence being conducted by Serjeant Ballantine. The guilt of the gaekwár was not proved; but the supreme government, considering that his incapacity was established, deposed him and appointed a successor. Pelly's conduct throughout was approved by both sides, and Ballantine has recorded that his 'demeanour to the prince was characterised by all the courtesy and consideration that his duty would permit.'

In 1876 Pelly was again in attendance on the government of India, but was soon sent to Pesháwar as envoy-extraordinary and plenipotentiary for Afghan affairs. His mission was one of many steps which preceded the outbreak of war in 1878. The amír, Sher Ali, owing to the assiduous attentions he had received from British India on one side and from Russia on the other, formed an altogether exaggerated notion of his own importance. He harboured many grievances against the government of India, and took no pains to disguise his resentment, which he gratified by civility to Russia and discourtesy to England. To remove, if possible, the doubts excited by his conduct, a conference at Pesháwar between Sir Lewis Pelly and an Afghan representative, Saiyid Núr Muhammad Sháh, was arranged. They met on 23 Jan. 1877, but after some unprofitable discussions the Afghan envoy died on 2 March, and Pelly was immediately recalled. In August of that year he retired from the service, and was created K.C.B.

Returning to England, he married Miss Amy Lowder in 1878, and in 1883 he was offered charge of the Congo Free State by the king of the Belgians. But he declined the post, and found his chief employment in assisting the Geographical and Asiatic Societies until 1885, when he was elected M.P. for North Hackney in the conservative interest. Next year he was re-elected, and he continued to represent the constituency till his death. In the House of Commons he confined his speeches to subjects which he understood, and earned the respect of the house. He died at Falmouth on 22 April 1892, leaving no issue. Though short in stature, he was well and strongly built, and his appearance was distinguished. There is an excellent portrait of him by Madame Canziani in Lady Pelly's possession.

Pelly had considerable literary aptitude. Besides 'The Views and Opinions of Brigadier-general John Jacob, C.B.,' London, 1858, he published: 'The Miracle Play of Hasan and Husain: collected from Oral Tradition,' 2 vols. London, 1879; a pamphlet on the 'North-west Frontier of India,' 1858; several papers in the 'Proceedings of the Royal Geographical Society;' and occasional articles and letters in periodicals and newspapers.

Sir Lewis's elder brother, Surgeon-general Saville Marriott Pelly (1819–1895), after education at Winchester and Guy's Hospital, joined the Indian medical service. He joined the Sind irregular horse during Sir Charles Napier's campaigns (1844–7), and subsequently on the Sind frontier under General John Jacob [q. v.] He served with the second regiment light cavalry in Rajputana during the mutiny campaign, and joined in the pursuit of Tantia Topee with the column under Brigadier Parke. He was present as principal medical officer of the Indian medical department throughout the Abyssinian campaign of 1867–8 under Lord Napier of Magdala, obtained the companionship of the Bath, and retired as inspector-general of hospitals in the Bombay presidency in 1870. He died at Woodstock House, Lee, on 3 April 1895, leaving a widow with two sons and two daughters.

[Documents kindly lent by Lady Pelly; Journal of a Journey from Persia to India, through Herat and Candahar; Report of a Journey to the Wahabee Capital of Riyadh, in Central Arabia (Bombay, 1866); Proceedings of the Royal Geographical Society (1865, and obituary notice by Major-general Sir Frederic John Goldsmid, K.C.S.I., June 1892); The Trial and Deposition of Mulhar Ráo, Gaekwár of Baroda (Bombay, 1875); Ballantine's Experiences of a Barrister's Life, 1882; further papers relating to the Affairs of Afghanistan, No. 2, 1878; Forbes's Afghan Wars (London, 1892), pp. 163–7.] W. B–r.

**PEMBER**, ROBERT (*d.* 1560), scholar, was admitted fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, 26 July 1524, being described as of the diocese of Hereford. He was one of the group of scholars whose reputation raised that college to the highest place among English centres of learning. He taught Greek to Roger Ascham, with whom he formed a close friendship, and of whose talents he had a very high opinion. His advice to Ascham is summed up in a figurative sentence contained in a letter to him: 'Use diligence that thou mayest be perfect, not according to the stoical, but the lyrical perfection, that

thou mayest touch the harp aright' (cf. *Quarterly Review*, liv. 346). In 1546, when Trinity College was founded, Pember was appointed the reader in Greek there, while John Dee [q. v.] became under-reader. From Ascham's letters it appears that Pember took much interest in coins, and made a collection. In 1555 he subscribed the Roman catholic articles, and thereby retained his post at Trinity College, where he died in 1560.

He is only known to have written a few Latin verses, viz. a couplet in praise of Ascham's 'Toxophilus,' lines to William Grindal, and an elegy on the death of Martin Bucer.

[Baker's Hist. of St. John's Coll., ed. Mayor, i. 282; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 208; Grant's Life of Ascham, prefixed to Aschami Epistolæ, 6, 7, 8, 9, 11, 31; Aschami Epist. 228, 230; Biogr. Brit., ed. Kippis, v. 32; Buceri scripta Anglicana, p. 903; Hallam's Lit. of Europe, i. 342; Giles's Works of Ascham, i. 2, 316, iii. 308; Katterfeld's Roger Ascham, pp. 10–16; Cole MS. xlix. 333.] E. C. M.

PEMBERTON, CHARLES REECE (1790–1840), actor and lecturer, was born at Pontypool, Monmouthshire, on 23 Jan. 1790, and registered as Thomas Reece Pemberton. His father was a Warwickshire man, his mother a Welshwoman, and he was the second of three children. When he was about four years old, his parents removed to Birmingham, and Pemberton was placed at a unitarian charity school under Daniel Wright. He was subsequently apprenticed to his uncle, a brassfounder in Birmingham, but ran away in 1807 to Liverpool, where he was seized by a press-gang and sent to sea. He served for seven years, seeing some active service off Cadiz, Gibraltar, and Madeira. After the war he became an actor, and led a wandering life; he is said to have managed several theatres in the West Indies with some success. He made an unhappy marriage with a lady named Fanny Pritchard, and they soon separated. By 1827 he was in England again, acting, lecturing, and reciting. On 19 Feb. 1828 he played Macbeth at Bath. Genest says 'he acted tolerably, but nothing farther; he had an indifferent figure, and a bad face, with no expression in it; he had studied the part with great attention, and understood it thoroughly.' On 21 Feb. he played Shylock. During the same year he was acting at Hereford during the assizes; Serjeant (afterwards Sir Thomas) Talfourd [q. v.] was greatly impressed with his performances, and praised him highly in the 'New Monthly Magazine' for September 1828, especially his rendering of Shylock and Virginius. He also played Hotspur, Sir Peter Teazle, and other characters, but was not successful in comic parts. On Talfourd's recommendation, Pemberton was engaged at Covent Garden by Charles Kemble [q. v.] He made his first appearance there on 2 March 1829 as Virginius, and on 9 March played Shylock. There was much divergence among critics as to his merits, but Talfourd still eulogised him as a tragedian. Pemberton did not, however, reappear at Covent Garden; and, after an engagement at the Royal Theatre, Birmingham, he devoted himself to lecturing and reciting, principally at mechanics' institutes. His favourite subjects were the tragic characters of Shakespeare. 'Since Pemberton's day,' says Mr. Holyoake, 'I have heard hundreds of lecturers and preachers in England and America, but never one who had the animation, the inspiration, and the spontaneous variety he had' (*Sixty Years of an Agitator's Life*, i. 40). In 1833 he commenced writing in the 'Monthly Repository,' then edited by William Johnson Fox [q. v.], the 'Autobiography of Pel. Verjuice,' in which he gave an account of his own experiences. In 1836 he played Macbeth and Shylock at Birmingham, and at the end of the year visited the Mediterranean on account of his health. He recommenced lecturing in the summer of 1838 at the Sheffield Mechanics' Institute; but his powers were failing, and a subscription was set on foot to enable him to spend the winter in Egypt. This visit brought about no improvement, and he died, not long after his return, on 3 March 1840, at the house of his younger brother, William Dobson Pemberton, on Ludgate Hill, Birmingham. He was buried in the Key Hill cemetery, and the Birmingham Mechanics' Institute, of which Mr. Holyoake was secretary, placed a memorial, with an epitaph by Fox, over his grave. Ebenezer Elliott [q. v.], the corn-law rhymer, wrote some verses on him called 'Poor Charles.'

A portrait of Pemberton is prefixed to his 'Life and Literary Remains.' He expressed a wish that all his manuscripts, except three plays, should be destroyed. His 'Life and Literary Remains,' 1843, 8vo, edited by Fox, contains 'The Autobiography of Pel. Verjuice;' 'The Podesta, a Tragedy, in Five Acts;' 'The Banner, a Tragedy, in Five Acts;' 'Two Catherines, a Comedy, in Five Acts;' and various pieces in prose and verse. Another edition of the 'Autobiography of Pel. Verjuice' was edited in 1853 by George Searle Phillips [q. v.]

[Memoirs in the two editions of Pel. Verjuice; Holyoake's Sixty Years of an Agitator's Life, 3rd edit. i. 37–40, 85, 132, 221; Genest's English Stage, ix. 443, 480; Gent. Mag. 1880, i. 446;

Monthly Repository, 1833–4; Aris's Birmingham Gazette, 9 March 1840; Memoirs of Charles Mathews, iv. 169.] A. F. P.

PEMBERTON, CHRISTOPHER ROBERT, M.D. (1765–1822), physician, was born in Cambridgeshire in 1765. His grandfather was Sir Francis Pemberton [q. v.], lord chief-justice. After education at Bury St. Edmunds, he entered at Caius College, Cambridge, whence he graduated M.B. in 1789 and M.D. in 1794. He was elected a fellow of the College of Physicians of London on 25 June 1796, was Gulstonian lecturer in 1797, was censor in 1796, 1804, and 1811, and delivered the Harveian oration in 1806. He was in that year physician-extraordinary to the Prince of Wales and to the Duke of Cumberland, and afterwards became physician-extraordinary to the king. He was physician to St. George's Hospital from 25 April 1800 till 1808. In 1806 he published 'A practical Treatise on Various Diseases of the Abdominal Viscera.' It consists of eleven chapters, treating of the peritoneum, the liver, the gall-bladder, the pancreas, the spleen, the kidneys, the stomach, the intestines, and enteritis. His most original observations are that the disease known as waterbrash is rather a result of imperfect diet than of excess in alcohol (p. 101), that cancer of some parts of the bowel may exist for a long time without grave constitutional symptoms (p. 186), and that the over-exertion of muscles may lead to a condition indistinguishable from palsy (p. 157). This last observation is one of the first contributions in English medical writings to the knowledge of the large group of diseases now known as trade palsies. He recommends the use of a splint supporting the hand in cases of bad palsy of the muscles of the back of the forearm, so common as a result of lead-poisoning. The book shows him to have been an excellent clinical observer, who had paid much attention to morbid anatomy. He suffered from intense facial neuralgia or tic douloureux, and the division of several branches of the trigeminal nerve, by Sir Astley Paston Cooper [q. v.], failed to give him any relief. He was obliged, by his disease, to give up practice and to leave London, and died of apoplexy at Fredville, Kent, on 31 July 1822.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. ii. 450; Dr. Robert Bree's Oratio Harveiana, London, 1826; Sir Henry Halford's Essays and Orations, 2nd edit. London, 1833, p. 36, where he is mentioned as Dr. P.; Works.] N. M.

PEMBERTON, Sir FRANCIS (1625–1697), judge, son of Ralph Pemberton, mayor of St. Albans in 1627 and 1638, by Frances, daughter of Francis Kempe, was born at St. Albans, in 1625. His grandfather was Roger Pemberton of Hertfordbury, heir to Sir Lewis Pemberton, who succeeded his father, Sir Goddard Pemberton, as sheriff of St. Albans in 1615, and was knighted at Bewsey Hall, Lancashire, on 21 Aug. 1617. Sir Goddard Pemberton belonged to the old Lancashire family of that name, was doubly returned to parliament (for Peterborough and Lewes) in 1601, was knighted at Whitehall on 23 July 1603, and settled at Hertfordbury.

Pemberton was educated at the St. Albans grammar school and the university of Cambridge, where he matriculated (from Emmanuel College) on 12 Aug. 1640, and graduated B.A. in 1644. In November the same year he was admitted a student at the Inner Temple, was called to the bar on 7 Nov. 1654, elected a bencher on 5 Feb. 1670–1, and Lent reader on 21 Jan. 1673–4. Pemberton's pupilage was dissipated, and part of the long interval between his admission and his call was spent in a debtor's prison. There he pursued his studies to such purpose that, on regaining his liberty, he practised with brilliant success in the Palace Court, in Westminster Hall, and, after the Restoration, in the House of Lords; and on 21 April 1675 he was called to the degree of serjeant-at-law. On 28 May following the House of Commons committed him to the custody of John Topham, the sergeant-at-arms attending the house, for an alleged breach of privilege, —viz. his appearance before the House of Lords for the plaintiff appellant in the case of Crisp *v.* Dalmahoy, M.P. for Guildford. The affair caused a violent contention between the two houses of parliament. Pemberton, who under the ægis of black rod had defied the sergeant-at-arms, was eventually arrested (4 June) by the speaker in Westminster Hall, and lodged in the Tower, where, notwithstanding a writ of habeas corpus issued by the upper house on his behalf, he remained until the unseemly struggle was terminated by a prorogation (9 June). On 11 Aug. the same year he was made king's serjeant, and on 6 Oct. following was knighted at Whitehall. He succeeded Sir William Wylde [q. v.] as puisne judge of the king's bench on 5 May 1679, and assisted Scroggs in several of the 'popish plot' trials. He proved, however, not sufficiently partial, and had his quietus on 16 Feb. 1679–80. Nevertheless, on 11 April 1681, he succeeded Scroggs as lord chief justice of the king's bench.

His advancement was perhaps intended to give an air of judicial decorum to the trial of Edward Fitzharris [q. v.] But various

circumstances of the trial raise the suspicion that Pemberton was not altogether impartial, and this view is confirmed by his refusal to Dr. Oliver Plunket [q. v.] of sufficient time to collect his witnesses, and his attempt to snatch a true bill against Lord Shaftesbury by precluding the grand jury from inquiring into the credibility of the witnesses. He would also seem to have deviated in slight but material particulars from the strict course of procedure for the purpose of screening Count Königsmark on his trial as accessory before the fact to the murder of Thomas Thynne in March 1681–2 (E. B. De Fonblanque, *Annals of the House of Percy*, ii. 499). In May 1682 Pemberton vindicated the independence of the court of king's bench against the encroachments of the House of Commons by disallowing a plea to the jurisdiction of the court, set up by his old enemy, John Topham, the sergeant-at-arms, in an action of trespass brought against him by one whom he had arrested pursuant to an order of the house. On 22 Dec. the same year he was sworn of the privy council. On the institution of the proceedings on quo warranto against the City of London, Pemberton was transferred, on 22 Jan. 1682–3, to the chief-justiceship of the common pleas, to make way for Edmund Saunders [q. v.], who was supposed to be more favourable to the crown. He was removed from the bench on 7 Sept., and from the privy council on 24 Oct. in the same year. Burnet is probably right in ascribing his degradation to his want of zeal against Lord Russell [q. v.], at whose trial he presided. In 1687 Pemberton was consulted by the university of Cambridge as to the legality of the royal mandate for the admission of the Benedictine monk Alban Francis [q. v.] to the degree of M.A. without conformity to the established religion. His opinion, which was emphatically adverse to the legality of the mandate, is preserved in Addit. MS. 32095, f. 238 (cf. Bloxam, *Magdalen College and James II*, pp. 21, 244, Oxf. Hist. Soc.) After the Revolution, which he helped to precipitate by his successful defence of the seven bishops, 15–30 June 1688, he was summoned by the Convention parliament for his conduct in Topham's case. He complied, justifying his ruling on grounds of reason and public utility, but was thrown into gaol on 19 July 1689 for breach of privilege, and lay in confinement until the prorogation. His colleague, Sir Thomas Jones (*d.* 1692) [q. v.], who had concurred in the ruling, suffered the same fate. Pemberton was counsel for Sir John Fenwick [q. v.] in the proceedings for his attainder in November 1696. He died on 10 June 1697 at his house in Highgate. His remains were interred in the east end of the nave of Highgate Chapel, whence, on the demolition of the chapel in 1833, his monument was removed to the church at Trumpington, near Cambridge, the manor of which he had purchased in 1675. Pemberton married, by license dated 12 Oct. 1667, Anne, eldest daughter of Sir Jeremy Whichcote, bart., solicitor-general to the elector palatine, and younger brother of Dr. Benjamin Whichcote [q. v.] of Cambridge. His wife and seven children survived him. Lady Pemberton died in 1731, and was also buried in Highgate Chapel.

Pemberton was a profound lawyer, much versed in records, yet of independent mind, and, for his age, indifferent honest. His portrait is in the original engraving by R. White, 1689 (mezzotint by R. Williams), of the heads of the counsel for the seven bishops in the British Museum (cf. Bromley).

[Baines's County of Lancaster, iii. 562 *n.*; Nichols's Progr. James I, i. 519, iii. 408; Le Neve's Pedigrees of Knights (Harl. Soc.), p. 301; Metcalfe's Book of Knights, pp. 145, 171; Berry's County Geneal. 'Hertfordshire,' p. vii; Chauncy's Hertfordshire, p. 456; Clutterbuck's Hertfordshire, vol. i. pp. xxxiii, 82; Inner Temple Books; Wynne's Serjeant-at-Law; Pepys's Diary, vol. iv.; Evelyn's Diary; Sidney's Diary, ed. Blencowe, ii. 18; Cobbett's State Trials, vol. vi–xiii. (cf. Index); Shower's Rep. ii. 33, 94, 155, 218, 252, 311; Raymond's Rep. pp. 251, 478; Luttrell's Brief Relation of State Affairs; North's Lives, ed. 1826, ii. 38 et seq.; Burnet's Own Time (fol.) i. 501–2, 535, 556, 568; Hist. MSS. Comm. 5th Rep. App. p. 320, 7th Rep. App. pt. i. pp. 361, 408, 466, 500, 744, 9th Rep. App. passim, 11th Rep. App. pt. ii. pp. 115, 198; Lysons's Environs of London, iii. 68, 74; Kimber and Johnson's Baronetage, ii. 4; Chester's London Marriage Licences; Campbell's Lives of the Chief Justices; Foss's Lives of the Judges; Granger's Biogr. Hist. Engl. iii. 367; Addit. MSS. 21507 f. 43, 22263 f. 23.] J. M. R.

PEMBERTON, HENRY (1694–1771), physician and writer, born in London in 1694, went, after receiving a good general education in England, to Leyden in August 1714. There he studied medicine under Boerhaave, and 'contemplated with great effect' the best mathematical authors. From Leyden he passed to Paris to study anatomy, and bought a valuable collection of mathematical works at the sale of the library of the Abbé Gallois. He returned to London to attend St. Thomas's Hospital, but went back to Leyden in 1719 as the guest of Boerhaave, and graduated M.D. on 27 Dec. of that year.

On his final settlement in London Pemberton did not practise much, owing to his delicate health. He was, however, an industrious writer on medical and general subjects. He became a fellow of the Royal Society, and contributed many papers to its 'Transactions' (*Phil. Trans.* vols. xxxii.–lxii.) One of these, a demonstration of the inefficiency of an attempted proof by Poleni, an Italian mathematician, of Leibnitz's assertion that the force of descending bodies is proportional to the square of their velocity, was transmitted to Sir Isaac Newton by Dr. Mead, and gained for Pemberton Newton's friendship. Newton brought him a refutation by himself based on other principles. This was afterwards printed as a postscript to Pemberton's paper (vol. vi. 570 in Hutton and Shaw's *Abridgment*). Pemberton was employed by Newton to superintend the third edition of the 'Principia.' The new edition, which appeared in 1726, had a preface by Newton, in which Pemberton is characterised as 'vir harum rerum peritissimus.' Pemberton saw much of Newton in his old age. In 1728 he published 'A View of Sir I. Newton's Philosophy.' It is dedicated to Sir R. Walpole, and is preceded by a preface containing the writer's recollections of the philosopher. A German translation of pt. i. of the 'View,' by S. Maimon, appeared at Berlin in 1793. Pemberton's book was not remunerative to himself, and was regarded as disappointing. George Lewis Scott, however, recommended it to Gibbon as a propædeutic (Gibbon, *Miscellaneous Works*, 1837, p. 233). In 1724 Pemberton assisted Mead in editing W. Cowper's 'Myotomia Reformata.' Four years later (24 May 1728) he was appointed Gresham professor of physic in succession to Dr. Woodward. His 'Scheme for a course of Chymistry to be performed at Gresham College' appeared in 1731. Two courses of his lectures were published by his friend James Wilson—the first, in 1771, on chemistry; the second, in 1779, after Pemberton's death, on physiology. For seven years (1739–1746) he was chiefly employed in the preparation of the fifth 'London Pharmacopœia' for the Royal College of Physicians. He himself performed all the chemical and pharmaceutical experiments. The work was published in 1746 as 'Translation and Improvement of the London Dispensatory,' and he received from the college a gift of the copyright and a hundred guineas above the expenses incurred. Pemberton died on 9 March 1771.

In addition to the works mentioned above and some treatises left in manuscript, Pemberton wrote: 1. 'Dissertatio Physico-Medicinalis Inaug. de Facultate Oculi ad diversas Rerum Computatarum Distantias se accommodante,' Leyden, 1719. 2. 'Epist. ad Amicum [viz. J. Wilson] de Rogeri Cotesii Inventis,' 1722 (showing how Cotes's theorems by ratios and logarithms may be done by circle and hyperbola). 3. 'Observations on Poetry, occasioned by Glover's "Leonidas,"' 1738. His 'Account of the Ancient Ode' prefaces West's 'Pindar,' and a paper 'On the Dispute about Fluxions' is in the second volume of Robins's 'Works.'

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. iii. 382–3; Peacock's Index of English Students at Leyden; Gent. Mag. 1771, p. 143; Brewster's Life of Sir I. Newton, ed. W. T. Lynn, pp. 285–6; Ward's Lives of the Gresham Professors, ii. 301; Weld's Hist. Roy. Soc. i. 318; Georgian Era, ii. 556; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict. (founded on Hutton and Shaw's Abridgment of Phil. Trans.); Watt's Bibl. Brit. ii. 743; Allibone's Dict. Engl. Lit. ii. 1548; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Pemberton's Works; authorities cited.] G. Le G. N.

**PEMBERTON** (afterwards **PEMBERTON LEIGH**), THOMAS, Lord Kingsdown (1793–1867), eldest son of Robert Pemberton, a chancery barrister, by his wife Margaret, eldest daughter and coheiress of Edward Leigh of Bispham Hall, Lancashire, was born on 11 Feb. 1793. His father, a member of a family settled near Warrington in Lancashire, and a descendant of Sir Francis Pemberton [q. v.], chief justice of the common pleas, died in 1804. Though he had earned a good income, he had been unable to save money, and his widow was left poorly off, considering the size of his family—three sons and two daughters. Accordingly Thomas Pemberton, who had been for four years at Dr. Home's school at Chiswick to be prepared for Westminster and Oxford, was obliged to give up all hope of a university career, and, quitting Dr. Home's school at the age of sixteen, went into the office of a solicitor, Mr. Farrer, for twelve months, and then became a pupil in the chambers of his uncle, Edward Cooke, a barrister in good chancery practice. He had been a studious and diligent boy, left school a fair scholar, and was throughout his life fond of classical studies. He earned 100*l.* to 150*l.* a year before his call by drawing equity pleadings, according to the practice of the day, for solicitors. He was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn in 1816. His youth had been, as he called it, 'gloomy and joyless,' but he had read diligently, and success came rapidly. He made the hitherto unprecedented sum of 600*l.* in his first year. Though he joined the northern circuit and occasionally appeared before parliamentary committees on election

petitions, his practice was almost exclusively in equity. Before he was thirty his income was 3,000*l.* a year. In 1829 he became a king's counsel, and divided with Bickersteth the practice of the rolls court, which, when Bickersteth became Lord Langdale, he entirely dominated. In April 1831 he entered parliament for Rye as a staunch conservative, after an election at which great violence was displayed; he spoke with great effect against the Reform Bill, and afterwards published his speech. He lost the seat in 1832, began and abandoned a candidature for Taunton, and was elected in January 1835 for Ripon, which seat he retained as long as he remained in parliament. He declined in December 1835 Sir Robert Peel's offer of the solicitor-generalship in his first administration, as well as Lord Lyndhurst's offer of a puisne judgeship. With characteristic diffidence he distrusted his judicial fitness, and preferred to remain undisputed leader of the chancery bar. Until 1838 he spoke little in the House of Commons, when he joined with Sugden, his colleague in the representation of Ripon, in resisting the privilege claim of the House of Commons in the case of Stockdale *v.* Hansard. On no other occasion did he produce so powerful an effect in debate. His pamphlet on this controversy, in the form of a letter to Lord Langdale, had been much read, and had passed through two editions in 1837. He afterwards took a large share in the arrangements made for settling the matter by act of parliament. In 1841 the vice-chancellorship was offered him and refused, but he accepted from Sir Robert Peel in 1841 the post of attorney-general for the Duchy of Cornwall.

In December 1842 Pemberton came into a life income of upwards of 14,000*l.* a year on the death of Sir Robert Holt Leigh, a distant relative and large Lancashire landowner, whose admiration he had won by successfully conducting a cause for him in 1831. He then assumed the name of Leigh in addition to his father's surname, Pemberton, and took a step for which few parallels can be found among lawyers. His position at the bar was such that he could rise no higher, unless he became a judge or a law officer, and he wished to be neither. He was rich, unmarried, and unencumbered, and he determined to quit public and professional life, and retire into the country to his country seat, Torry Hill, near Sittingbourne, Kent, and to the country sports he loved. Sir Robert Peel made him thereon chancellor of the Duchy of Cornwall and a privy councillor, and it was arranged that when he quitted the bar he should become one of the members of the judicial committee of the privy council. He resigned his seat for Ripon in the spring of 1843, and his practice at the bar at Christmas. He was a man of varied tastes, and even when in full practice had travelled widely in Bohemia, Italy, and Spain; but he feared now the want of occupation. 'I provided myself,' he wrote, 'with microscopes, telescopes, painting implements, a chest of turners' tools, and I know not how many other resources against ennui, none of which I ever used, and after the lapse of seventeen years I can safely say that I have never had one hour hang heavy on me.'

In February 1844 he commenced his attendances at the judicial committee of the privy council, which continued for twenty years. He also devoted considerable time to the affairs of the Duchy of Cornwall, and thus became intimate with, and an admirer of, Prince Albert. During his tenure of the chancellorship he succeeded in rehabilitating the finances of the duchy, and in accumulating a considerable fund during the minority of the Prince of Wales. Honours were repeatedly offered to him and refused. It was expected that he would have been lord chancellor in 1849 (Lord Campbell, *Life*, ii. 248). Four successive governments, beginning with Lord John Russell's in 1853, offered him a peerage. Lord Derby pressed the great seal upon him in vain, though it is said that he promised to take it if the interests of the conservative party, to which he was staunch, imperatively demanded it. He steadily devoted himself to judicial labours. The judicial committee, reorganised in 1833, still required a strong hand to mould its practice. Pemberton Leigh (as he was called from 1842) soon acquired a control over its proceedings, and, more than any other member, regulated its practice, reduced its costs, and cleared off its arrears. Though nominally only the equal of his colleagues, it was well known that he was their chief in bearing the burden of preparing and formulating decisions. In 1854 Lord Aberdeen requested him to take especial charge of appeals in prize cases, and he uniformly interpreted the law of blockade, capture, and prize with a liberal bent towards freedom of trade. By his elevation to the peerage as Lord Kingsdown in 1858 he also became a member of the appellate tribunal of the House of Lords, and, though he never really approved of it as the ultimate court of appeal, was a much needed source of judicial strength there. In his later years indolence and distaste for judicial activity somewhat grew upon him, and at length, after a lingering illness, he died at Torry Hill on 7 Oct. 1867. He was

unmarried, and his title became extinct. He was buried at Frinsted Church, near Sittingbourne.

Modest and shy, Kingsdown shrank from publicity or popularity, and his great powers were only known to a few of the most enlightened members of his own profession. Yet he stands in the front rank of English judges. His fastidious striving after perfection, his refinement of taste, his inexhaustible patience and vast learning, made the judgments which he prepared at once standard decisions and models of judicial expression. Many of them he wrote and rewrote several times over. His legal knowledge was extraordinarily varied, and he was especially versed in the minutiæ of Indian land tenures. His grasp of principles was great, and led him to place little dependence on reported decisions. For twenty years, without ever receiving or desiring a shilling of public money, he rendered to the public unnoticed services of the highest imperial value. Personally he was simple and unassuming in tastes and manner, generous with money, tolerant in opinion, but a pious and convinced churchman; his fault, if it be one, was want of ambition and a dislike of popularity.

[See Edinburgh Review, cxxix. 40, founded on Lord Kingsdown's own privately printed Reminiscences; Law Mag. xxvi. 46; Times, 8 Oct. 1867, probably written by H. Reeve (see Nash's Life of Lord Westbury, ii. 157); Greville Memoirs, 1st ser. iii. 267; Gent. Mag. 1867 ii. 674.]

J. A. H.

**PEMBLE, WILLIAM** (1592?–1623), puritan divine, son of a clergyman, was born at Egerton, Kent, about the beginning of 1592. His father was poor, and his education was provided for by John Barker of Mayfield, Sussex. In March 1610 he was admitted to Magdalen College, Oxford, where Richard Capel [q.v.] was his tutor. He matriculated on 18 June 1610 at the age of eighteen. Having graduated B.A. on 3 March 1614, he removed to Magdalen Hall, where he became reader and tutor. He proceeded M.A. on 9 June 1618, took orders, and was made divinity reader of Magdalen Hall, a post which he filled with great distinction, being an able exponent of Calvinism, and famous as a preacher. He was loyal to the Anglican church, though anxious that the terms of conformity should be made easier to his party. His acquirements in various branches of learning were very remarkable. It would seem that his labours and studies exhausted his strength and shortened his days. He went for change of air on a visit to Capel, his old tutor, at the rectory of Eastington, Gloucestershire, and while staying there was seized with a fever, of which he died on 14 April 1623. He was buried in Eastington churchyard.

Pemble's works were all posthumous, edited and published by his friends, as follows: 1. 'Vindiciæ Fidei, or a Treatise of Justification,' &c., Oxford, 1625, 4to (edited, with preface, by John Geree [q.v.] 2. 'Vindiciæ Gratiæ: a Plea for Grace,' &c., 1627, 4to; Oxford and London, 1629, 4to (this and the foregoing consist of lectures delivered at Magdalen Hall). 3. 'Salomon's Recantation and Repentance,' &c., 1627, 4to; 1628, 4to (a comment on Ecclesiastes). 4. 'Five Godly and Profitable Sermons,' &c., 1628, 4to; Oxford and London, 1629, 4to. 5. 'An Introduction to the Worthy Receiving the Sacrament,' &c., 1628, 4to (edited by Capel and dedicated to Barker); 1629, 4to; 1639, 8vo. 6. 'Fruitful Sermons,' &c., 1629, 4to (on 1 Cor. xv. 18–19). 7. 'A Short and Sweete Exposition upon the first nine chapters of Zachary,' &c., 1629, 4to. 8. 'De Sensibus Internis. . . . Editio posthuma,' &c., Oxford and London, 1629, 12mo; 1647, 12mo. 9. 'De Formarum Origine. . . . Editio posthuma,' &c., 1629, 12mo (dedicated to Accepted Frewen [q.v.]); Oxford, 1647, 12mo; Cambridge [1650?], 12mo (highly commended by Adriaan Heereboord of Leyden, who has utilised it in his 'Melefemata Philosophica,' Amsterdam, 1665, 4to). 10. 'A Briefe Introduction to Geography,' &c., Oxford, 1630, 4to; 1658, fol.; 5th edit. 1675, fol.; 1685, 4to. 11. 'A Summe of Moral Philosophy,' &c., Oxford, 1630, 4to; 1632, 4to. 12. 'An Exposition of the . . . Fifth Chapter of St. John's Gospel,' &c., 1631, 4to. 13. 'The Period of the Persian Monarchie,' &c., 1631, 4to (condensed from Rainolds, and enlarged by Capel). 14. 'Tractatus de Providentia Dei. . . . Editio posthuma,' &c., 1631, 12mo (ed. by Capel). 15. 'Enchiridion Oratorium,' &c., Oxford, 1633, 4to. The above, omitting No. 10, were collected as his 'Workes,' 3rd edit. 1635, fol. (three parts); 4th edit. Oxford, 1658–9, fol. John Wilkins, D.D. [q.v.], bishop of Chester, highly commends Pemble's sermons.

[Fuller's Worthies, 1662, p. 109 (under Sussex); Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), ii. 330, Fasti (Bliss), i. 353, 381; Brook's Lives of the Puritans, 1813, ii. 304 sq.; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1891, iii. 1140.]

A. G.

**PEMBRIDGE, CHRISTOPHER** (*fl.* 1370?), conjectured by Ware to have been a native of Dublin, and to have lived about the middle of the fourteenth century, was apparently the author of 'Annales Hiberniæ

ab anno Christi 1162 usque ad annum 1370,' printed for the first time by Camden in 1607, at the end of his 'Britannia,' and again in 1884 by J. T. Gilbert in 'Chartularies of St. Mary's Abbey, Dublin.' The chief, and indeed the only, authority for ascribing the authorship of these annals to Pembridge, unless we include Archbishop Ussher, who once in his 'Ecclesiastical Antiquities' (p. 425) refers to 'Pembrigii Annal. Hib. apud Camden,' is Sir James Ware (*Writers of Ireland*, ed. Harris, p. 83). The original manuscript used by Camden is preserved in the Bodleian Library, Oxford (Laud 526). A note on the last page, written by the same hand as the body of the volume, states that it belonged to William Preston, viscount Gormanston, who died in 1532. It was probably given by him to Thomas Howard, second earl of Surrey, viceroy of Ireland in 1520, whose grandson, William, lord Howard of Naworth, gave it to Camden, from whom it passed to Sir George Carew, and afterwards to Archbishop Laud, who bequeathed it to the Bodleian Library. Other copies, but apparently of a later date, are preserved in Trinity College, Dublin (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 4th Rep. p. 597). It is supposed that Pembridge is identical with the certain 'nameless author' to whom Philip Flattisbury [q. v.], and through him Richard Stanihurst (Holinshed, *Chronicles*, ed. 1587, ii. 59), and also probably Edmund Campion ('Address to the Reader' prefixed to his 'History of Ireland'), were indebted for their information regarding Ireland between 1162 and 1370.

The Latin 'Annales Hiberniæ,' which are attributed to James Grace of Kilkenny, and were published in an English translation by the Irish Archæological Society, under the care of Richard Butler, in 1842, from a manuscript at Trinity College, Dublin, 'agree in substance' with those ascribed to Pembridge. But Grace's editor, Butler, thinks that 'the occasional difference of their contents and the constant difference in their language' render it unlikely that the 'Annales' of Grace were merely abridged from those of Pembridge; and he suggests that both were probably 'translated from some common original composed in some other language than Latin.' However this may be, the work attributed to Pembridge is by far the more valuable.

[Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. s. v. Pembrigius; Ware's Writers of Ireland, ed. Harris, pp. 83, 92; Gilbert's Chartularies of St. Mary's Abbey, Dublin (Rolls Ser.); Nicolson's Historical Libraries; Grace's Annales Hiberniæ, ed. Butler (Irish Archæol. Soc.); Camden's Britannia, London, 1607.] R. D.

PEMBRIDGE or PEMBRUGGE, Sir RICHARD de (*d.* 1375), soldier, was a native of Herefordshire. His family had been settled at Pembridge in that county as early as the reign of Stephen, but it seems impossible to fix his parentage with certainty. Several members of the family were fairly prominent in the early part of the fourteenth century (cf. Roberts, *Calendarium Genealogicum*, i. 278, ii. 518–9; Palgrave, *Parliamentary Writs*, iv. 1271–2). Richard at his death held, among other manors, those of Clehonger, Straddel, and Monyton, in Herefordshire. He was therefore, probably, a relative of the Henry de Pembridge who held Clehonger on 5 March 1316. At the same date a Richard de Pembridge was returned as lord of Monyton and Straddel. This Richard was a follower of Roger Mortimer, and an adherent of Thomas of Lancaster in 1322, and in 1325 was summoned for service in Guyenne (*ib.* iv. 1272; *Cal. Close Rolls, Edward II*, 1318–23, p. 573). On 6 Nov. 1328 Richard de Pembridge was appointed warden of the castle of Droslan, on 18 May 1329 was on the commission of peace for Hereford, and on 7 July following was a commissioner to bring into the king's peace those concerned in the disturbances in the parts of Senghenith (*Cal. Pat. Rolls, Edward III*, 1327–30, pp. 335, 430, 432). On 10 Oct. 1331 he was a commissioner of oyer and terminer for the county of Hereford (*ib.* 1330–4, p. 201), and was knight of the shire for the county in the parliaments of September 1337 and February 1338 (*Return of Members of Parliament*).

The later references, at all events, probably relate to the subject of this notice. Sir Richard de Pembrugge was, however, present as a knight at the sea-fight off Sluys on 24 June 1340, and in 1346 took part in the campaign of Creçy (Froissart, i. 222–3, iii. 130; *Fœdera*, iii. 51). In July 1355 he served in the abortive expedition of Edward III, and, afterwards proceeding to Guyenne, was present at the battle of Poitiers on 19 Sept. 1356 (Froissart, iv. 136, cf. p. liv, v. 32). In 1359 he served with the king in his French expedition (*ib.* v. 201; *Fœdera*, iii. 445). In 1361 he had a grant of the custody of Southampton Castle, the park of Lyndhurst, the New Forest, and the hundred of Redbridge for life. On 17 June 1363 he was appointed to take an oath from the Count of St. Pol, one of the French hostages then in England (*ib.* iii. 706). In November he was one of the courtiers appointed to receive Peter de Lusignan, king of Cyprus, at Dover, and on

4 Jan. 1364 was employed to receive John, king of France (Froissart, vi. 90, 95). In 1366 he received the manor of Bargate, Hampshire, and a knight's fee in the hundred of Fordingbridge, and in 1367 was made governor of Bamborough Castle; he discharged the duties of the last office by deputy, and his inefficient administration was the subject of an inquiry a few years later (Bateson, *History of Northumberland*, i. pp. 41–2).

In 1368 he was elected a knight of the Garter, occupying the fourth stall on the prince's side. On 6 July 1370, as constable of Dover and warden of the Cinque ports, he had to superintend the embarkation of the troops for Sir Robert Knolles's expedition (*Fœdera*, iii. 896). This same year he received 116*l.* 9*s.* 7*d.* for his expenses in the war (Brantingham, *Issue of Rolls*, p. 406). On 5 Nov. he was a witness to the ordinance made at Westminster by which Edward granted an amnesty to rebels in Aquitaine who made submission (Froissart, vii. 211). In March 1371 he is mentioned as a royal chamberlain (*Fœdera*, iii. 911), a position which he may probably have held for some years previously. He was present at the naval engagement in the bay of Bourgneuf off Brittany on 1 Aug. 1371 (Froissart, viii. 25). In 1373 he was appointed to act as the king's deputy in Ireland, but refused to accept the post, and was in consequence censured for his disobedience, notwithstanding the 'immense donations and remunerations received from the king for his services' (*Close Roll*, 46 *E.* 3, mem. 3, ap. Beltz). The grants which had been made to Pembridge were at the same time formally revoked, though at his death, on 26 July 1375, he was possessed of lands granted him by the king.

By his will, dated at London 31 May 1368, Pembridge ordered his body, if he died in England, to be buried in Hereford Cathedral, between two pillars of freestone before the image of the Virgin Mary on the south side, and gave special directions as to the erection of a tomb. His wishes were carried out by his executors, and his tomb, with a fine monumental effigy, still exists, though it has suffered from modern restorations; it is figured in Gough's 'Sepulchral Monuments,' p. 135 (cf. also Duncumb, *Herefordshire*, i. 540, and *Archæological Journal*, xxxiv. 410–11). He married Elizabeth, widow of Gerard de Lisle (*d.* 1360) of Kingston Lisle; she died before 1368, leaving an only son Henry, who died on 1 Oct. 1375, aged fifteen. Pembridge's eventual heirs were his nephews Sir Richard Burley, son of his sister Amicia by Sir John Burley, and Sir Thomas de Barre, son of another sister Hawisia. Burley is represented by the Earl of Portsmouth, and Barre by the family of Baghott of Lyppiatt Park, Gloucestershire. In Pembridge's will mention is made of a sister there called Alesia. His silver plate was purchased from his executors by Edward III for 233*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* (Devon, *Issues of the Exchequer*, p. 201).

[Froissart's Chroniques, ed. Luce (Soc. de l'Hist. de France); Calendar of Inquisitions post mortem, ii. 222, 354, 858; Rymer's Fœdera, Record edit.; Sharpe's Calendar of Wills in the Court of Husting, ii. 188; Beltz's Memorials of the Order of the Garter, pp. 163–5; other authorities quoted.] C. L. K.

PEMBROKE, Earls of. [See Clare, Richard de, *d.* 1176, called Strongbow, second Earl of the Clare line; Marshal, William, first Earl of the Marshal line, *d.* 1219; Marshal, William, second Earl of the Marshal line, *d.* 1231; Marshal, Richard, third Earl of the Marshal line, *d.* 1234; William de Valence, *d.* 1296; Aymer de Valence, *d.* 1324; Hastings, Laurence, first Earl of the Hastings line, 1318?–1348; Hastings, John, second Earl of the Hastings line, 1347–1375; Herbert, Sir William, first Earl of the Herbert line, of the first creation, *d.* 1469; Herbert, Sir William, first Earl of the Herbert line, of the second creation, 1501?–1570; Herbert, Henry, second Earl of the Herbert line, of the second creation, 1534?–1601; Herbert, William, third Earl, 1580–1630; Herbert, Philip, fourth Earl, 1584–1650; Herbert, Thomas, eighth Earl, 1656–1733; Herbert, Henry, ninth Earl, 1693–1751; Herbert, Henry, tenth Earl, 1734–1794; Herbert, George Augustus, eleventh Earl, 1759–1827.]

PEMBROKE, Countesses of. [See Herbert, Mary, 1555?–1621; Clifford, Anne, 1590–1676.]

PEMBROOKE, THOMAS (1662?–1690?), painter, was perhaps a member of a family of the name residing in the neighbourhood of Canterbury. He was a pupil of Marcellus Laroon the elder [q. v.], and painted, like him, small domestic or mythological pictures. Several of these were executed for Charles Granville, earl of Bath. A picture by Pembrooke of 'Hagar and Ishmael' was engraved in mezzotint by John Smith. Pembrooke died about 1690 at the early age of twenty-eight.

[De Piles's Lives of the Painters; Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, ed. Wornum.] L. C.

PENCESTER, PENCHESTER, or PENSHURST, STEPHEN DE (*d.* 1299), warden of the Cinque ports, was a member of an old Kentish family that took its name from its chief seat, the manor of Penshurst, or, as it was more often called in the thirteenth century, Pencester or Penchester. In the latter part of Henry III's reign this manor was held by John de Bellemains, a canon of St. Paul's, who was Stephen's uncle and trustee. Soon after the barons' wars Stephen appears as holding important offices under the crown, to whose service he devoted the rest of his life. Between October 1268 and January 1271 he served as sheriff of Kent, but his duties were discharged by his deputy, Henry of Leeds (*Deputy-Keeper's Thirty-first Report*, App. p. 298), who is described by Hasted as his assistant or shire clerk (HASTED, *Kent*, vol. i. p. lxxxi). In 1269 he was allowed to buy up the debt owed to two Jews by John de Peckham (*Fœdera*, i. 484). After 1271 he appears as constable of Dover Castle and warden of the Cinque ports, and was also granted the custody of the seven hundreds of the Weald, formerly held by Roger de Leyburne (*d.* 1271) [q. v.] (*Excerpta e Rot. Finium*, ii. 552). At first Pencester must have held these offices as Edward the king's son's deputy, but after Edward I's accession he held them independently, receiving the sum of 28*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* a year for the support of himself, his chaplain, servants, and engineers (*Pell Records*, p. 92). He was already a knight. Hasted (iv. 69) mentions various other constables of Dover under Edward I, but it seems more probable that they were Pencester's deputies, and that he held these offices up to his death; so that for nearly the whole of Edward I's reign he held a very prominent position in Kent and Sussex.

The critical state of the Cinque ports during the barons' wars, and their great importance to Edward during his reign, made Pencester's office a difficult and responsible one, and he is a conspicuous and successful figure among the minor agents of Edward I's policy. He was frequently assigned to try cases in which the rights of seamen of the Cinque ports were concerned (*Rot. Parl.* i. 98 *a*, 126 *b*). His authority was further strengthened by his receiving constant commissions of oyer and terminer, and occasional ones of gaol delivery in the south-eastern counties (examples in *Calendar of Patent Rolls*, 1281–92, pp. 37, 44, 65, 83, 90, 96, 141, 196; cf. *Rot. Parl.* i. 3 *b*, 47 *b*). This activity in judicial business has caused Dugdale to put him on his list of judges of common pleas; but Foss doubts whether he ever sat at Westminster, and is inclined to think that his constant judicial employment was discharged in his capacity of warden of the Cinque ports. This can hardly, however, have been strictly the case. Even the commissions held by Pencester in Kent and Sussex went far beyond the liberties of the Cinque ports, and it was no part of the warden's business to hold, for example, the commission of gaol delivery at Maidstone as Pencester did in 1285. Moreover, among the commissions recorded in the patent rolls as received by Pencester, there are included commissions in Surrey and Suffolk as well as Kent and Sussex. And in 1279 Pencester presided at a court held in the Guildhall of London as the result of which three christians and 293 Jews were hanged and drawn asunder for clipping the king's coin ('Ann. Londin.' in *Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II*, Rolls Ser. i. 88). In 1275 he had previously had to deal with the Jewish coin clippers, but had enjoined to let them off on payment of a fine (*Fœdera*, i. 570). In 1284 Archbishop Peckham, in granting him a license to try some pleas during Lent, describes him as a justice (PECKHAM, *Letters*, iii. 1077).

Among the important functions entrusted to Pencester as warden of the Cinque ports was the superintendence of the laying out of the site and constructing the buildings of New Winchelsea, the port which Edward I ordered to be constructed something after the manner of the Aquitanian bastides to replace Old Winchelsea, which was swallowed up by the sea (*Cal. Patent Rolls*, 1281–92, pp. 81, 225). He was appointed on 13 Oct. 1283, with two others, to this important post, and in 1286 was ordered to enlarge the town by laying out new lots for building and fixing rents for them. He acted also as convener of the musters of the freeholders of Kent in June 1287 (*ib.* p. 275). On 13 Oct. 1283 his appointment as constable and warden was renewed, and the large salary of 300*l.* assigned for the maintenance of him and his followers (*ib.* p. 83). After his death it was found that this grant was in arrears, and his widow Margaret had some trouble in prosecuting her claim for it at the exchequer. He died at Easter 1299 (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1313–18, p. 8). He was buried in the south chancel of Penshurst church, under an altar-tomb which represents him in armour reclining on a cushion (HASTED, i. 408). From this Foss infers that he was primarily a soldier rather than a judge.

Stephen became a considerable landowner in Kent. Besides Penshurst, he owned the adjacent manor of West Leigh, where he liberally endowed a free chapel. He also possessed the manors of Overhill, Shepherd's

Well, and Allington, for which place he procured a grant of a weekly market and fair in 1280, and in 1281 had license to build and fortify a castle there (Hasted, ii. 129, 182, iv. 3; cf. for his other estates *Cal. Inq. post mortem*, i. 233).

Stephen married twice. His first wife, whom he married not later than 1259, was Rohese of Baseville, the younger daughter and coheiress of Hawise de Baseville, a tenant-in-chief of the crown (*Cal. Genealogicum*, p. 141; cf. *Excerpta e Rot. Finium*, ii. 510). Before 1283 Stephen had married a second wife, Margaret (*d.* 1308?), said to have been the daughter of John de Burgh, the grandson of the famous justiciar Hubert de Burgh [q. v.], and the widow of Robert de Orreby. It is pretty clear that Hasted is wrong in making Orreby Margaret's second husband (Foss, *Judges of England*, iii. 138). Stephen left two daughters, his coheiresses. Of these Joan, the eldest (*b.* 1259), was the wife of Henry of Cobham of Rundall in Shorn. The younger, Alice (*b.* 1269), was the widow of John de Columbers (Hasted, i. 509, ii. 129, 183, 573).

[Rymer's Fœdera, Record ed. vol. i.; Rot. Parl. vol. i.; Cal. of Close and Patent Rolls; Cal. Inquisitionum post mortem; Pell Records; Rotulorum Originalium Abbreviatio; Calendarium Genealogicum; Excerpta e Rot. Finium; Peckham's Letters, Chron. of Edward I and Edward II, both in Rolls Ser.; Hasted's Kent; Foss's Judges of England, iii. 138–9; Foss's Biographia Juridica, p. 509.] T. F. T.

**PENDA** (577?–655), king of the Mercians, called Pantha by Nennius, son of Wibba, or Pybba, with a descent traced from Woden, came to the throne in 626, being then in his fiftieth year (*A.-S. Chron.* an. 626; Flor. Wig. an. 627). Until the end of the sixth century the Mercian people had no existence separate from other Anglian tribes, and the beginning of their rise may perhaps be dated from the reign of Crida, probably the father and predecessor of Wibba, who is supposed to have been the first king, and whose death is placed in 593 (Henry of Huntingdon, ii. cc. 26, 27, 31). It seems probable that this Crida, or Creoda, was the same as Cearl, and that he was the father of Coenburh, or Quenburga, the wife of Edwin or Eadwine [q. v.], king of the Northumbrians, though Henry of Huntingdon makes Cearl succeed Wibba, and thus reign to the prejudice of Penda, his kinsman (comp. *ib.* c. 27, followed by Green, *Making of England*, pp. 265–6, with Flor. Wig., *Genealogies*, and *A.-S. Chron.* u.s.) Whatever Crida may have accomplished, however, it is certain that the Mercians owed their rise from a mere tribe to a powerful people to the work of Penda, who is therefore described by Welsh tradition as having separated their kingdom from the kingdom of the Northumbrians (Nennius, p. 55), and whose vigour earned him a popular epithet, translated by the Latin 'strenuus.' It is probable that the conversion of Eadwine helped him in his plans for shaking off the Northumbrian supremacy over his people, and establishing a rival power south of the Humber, and that it fixed the character of his policy. He became the champion of heathenism against Christianity, and used the strife of religions to forward his political designs. The nucleus of his power lay about the Trent; it extended southwards probably to Watling Street, was on the west bounded indefinitely by the Welsh, and was closed in on the south-west by the forest of Arden. It was in this last direction that he seems to have made his first attempt at extension. In 628 he invaded the dominions of the West-Saxon kings Cynegils [q. v.] and his son Cwichelm [q. v.] Enfeebled by domestic feuds and by the late invasion of Eadwine of Northumbria, the West-Saxons were unable to stand against him. He defeated them at Cirencester in the land of the Hwiccas, and there made a peace with them, by which it is probable that all the Hwiccan territory from the forest of Arden to the river Avon became part of the Mercian realm (Green); and then, too, it may be that Cenwalh [q. v.], a son of Cynegils, married Penda's sister (Stubbs). Having thus vastly increased his power, he determined to strike at Northumbria, and, not being strong enough to attack Eadwine single-handed, made alliance with Cædwalla (*d.* 634) [q. v.], king of Gwynedd, who had his own quarrel with Eadwine to avenge. In 633 he and his Welsh ally invaded Northumbria, and on 12 Oct. defeated and slew Eadwine at Heathfield, probably Hatfield Chase [see under Edwin]. He does not seem to have followed up this victory, leaving his ally to overrun Deira, and he gave shelter to Eadfrith, one of Eadwine's sons by his own kinswoman Coenburh (Bede, *Historia Ecclesiastica*, ii. c. 20).

The greatness of Oswald [q. v.], king of Northumbria, evidently curtailed his power; he probably in some way owned Oswald's supremacy (*ib.* ii. c. 5, iii. c. 6), and, in order to please him, perjured himself by slaying his guest Eadfrith, who might have laid claim to the Northumbrian kingship. About this time he was pressing on the East-Angles, and is said, perhaps untruly (Stubbs), to have caused the death of their king, Earpwald (Henry of Huntingdon, ii. c. 31), who was actually slain by a heathen warrior

named Ricbert. This may have been at Penda's suggestion, especially as Earpwald's death caused the lapse of East-Anglia into heathenism (Bede, u.s. ii. c. 15); but there is not sufficient authority for certainly ascribing the deed to him. He utterly routed the East-Angles, slew their kings Sigebert and Ecgric in battle, and reduced their land to dependence, their next king, Anna, Sigebert's brother, reigning as his under-king. Oswald must have seen with displeasure this extension of Penda's power, and was perhaps the first to begin the war of 642. Penda defeated and slew him on 5 Aug. in a battle at a place called Maserfelth by Bede, and by the continuator of Nennius Cocboy, and believed to be Oswestry in Shropshire [see under Oswald]. This defeat brought Northumbria very low, and it is possible that Penda may have caused the temporary division of the kingdom by forcing Oswy or Oswiu [q. v.] to allow Oswin [q. v.] to reign in Deira (Stubbs). Soon after this Cenwalh, who had become king of the West-Saxons, put away Penda's sister and took another wife. Penda therefore went to war with him, and in 645 drove him from his kingdom and forced him to take refuge at the court of Anna. Nor did he cease from his hostility to Northumbria, which he laid waste far and wide, penetrating at one time as far as Bamborough. He was unable to take the city, and endeavoured to destroy it by fire. It was on this occasion that Aidan [q. v.] appealed to God against the ill that Penda was doing, and the city was delivered. Some years later, after Aidan's death, he again wasted Bernicia with fire and sword, burning the village where the bishop had died, with its church, not far from Bamborough (Bede, u.s. iii. cc. 16, 17). In 653 he made his eldest son, Peada [q.v.], ealdorman or under-king of the Middle-Angles, and when Peada became a Christian and brought missionaries into his kingdom, the old king, whose opposition to Christianity was apparently rather a matter of policy than of religious zeal, did not prevent them from preaching in his dominions; for the people he specially hated were Christians who were unfaithful to their profession, and he declared that they who thought scorn of obeying their God were despicable wretches (*ib.* c. 21). Probably in 654 Anna attempted to shake off the Mercian yoke, and was slain and his army utterly defeated, so that scarcely one of his men was left (Henry of Huntingdon, ii. c. 33). This war with the East-Angles probably caused a renewal of strife with Northumbria. Oswy in vain tried to buy off Penda, who seems again to have formed an alliance with the Welsh. Penda again invaded his land, and, wearied with the ever-increasing demands of the enemy, Oswy at last dared to meet him in battle near the river Winwaed, and there defeated and slew him on 15 Nov. 655 [see under Oswy]. Henry of Huntingdon, who preserves in the form of Latin hexameters some popular lines telling how, on the insurrection of Anna, Penda came upon East-Anglia like a wolf on the fold, also records a literal translation of an old verse saying that 'in the river Winwaed is avenged the slaughter of Anna, the slaughter of the kings Sigebert and Ecgric, the slaughter of the kings Oswald and Edwin' (*ib.* c. 34).

Penda's queen was Cynwise or Cyneswitha, by whom he had five sons—Peada [q. v.], Wulfhere [q. v.], Æthelred, Merewald [see under St. Milburg and St. Mildred], and Mercelm—and two daughters, Cyneburh or Ciniburga, who married Alchfrith or Alchfrid [q. v.], son of Oswy; and Cyneswitha. Penda is also credited with a daughter Wiliburh or Wilburga, wife of an under-king named Frithewald, said to have been the father of St. Osyth [q. v.], besides a bastard son named Osward.

[Bede's Eccl. Hist.; Flor. Wig. (both Engl. Hist. Soc.); A.-S. Chron.; Henry of Huntingdon; William of Malmesbury's Gesta Regum (all in Rolls Ser.); Green's Making of England; Skene's Celtic Scotland, vol. i.; Dict. Chr. Biogr. vol. iv., by Bishop Stubbs.] W. H.

**PENDARVES, JOHN** (1622–1656), puritan controversialist, son of John Pendarves of Crowan in Cornwall, was born at Skewes in that parish in 1622. His father, though connected with the opulent family of Pendarves, was himself poor, and the youth was admitted a servitor of Exeter College, Oxford, on 11 Dec. 1637, when 2*l.* was paid for his benefit as 'pauper scholaris' to the Rev. Robert Snow, the college chaplain. He matriculated on 9 Feb. 1637–8, on the same day as his elder brother, Ralph Pendarves, and, 'by the benefit of a good tutor, became a tolerable disputant.' He graduated B.A. on 3 March 1641–2, and took his name off the college books on 14 July 1642. Antony à Wood bitterly says that after this event he 'sided with the rout, and, by a voluble tongue having obtained the way of canting, went up and down (unsent for), preaching in houses, barns, under trees, hedges, &c.' For a time he was the parish lecturer of Wantage in Berkshire, but after several changes he became the anabaptist minister at Abingdon, where he obtained 'a numerous multitude of disciples, made himself head of them, and defied all authority.' His love of disputation

prompted him to challenge some clergymen of the established church to a public debate, and at last Jasper Mayne [q. v.] undertook to meet him. The debate took place in the church of Watlington, Oxfordshire, when there 'were present innumerable people on each side.' Pendarves, says Wood, was 'back'd with a great party of anabaptists and the scum of the people, who behaved themselves very rude and insolent,' and the discussion ended, as is usual in such cases, without any definite result. The eighth article brought against Edward Pocock, when he was cited in 1655 to appear before the commissioners for ejecting ignorant and scandalous ministers, was that he had refused to allow Pendarves to preach in his pulpit at Childrey (Pocock, *Life*, 1816 edit. p. 159). He was a fifth-monarchy man, and his love of disputation was inveterate. It is not necessary to accept the opinion of Wood that Pendarves worked for 'no other end but to gain wealth and make himself famous to posterity.'

In 1656 Pendarves issued a volume called 'Arrowes against Babylon,' in which he endeavoured to lay bare the mystery of iniquity by attacking the churches of Rome and England, attempted to reform the apparel of the saints, and addressed certain queries to the quakers, accusing them of concealing their beliefs, and of contemning christian pastors, yet preaching themselves. The first part of this treatise was answered by the Rev. William Ley of Wantage, the Rev. John Tickell, and the Rev. Christopher Fowler of St. Mary's, Reading. The quakers were championed by James Naylor and Denys Hollister. In the same year Pendarves joined four other dissenting ministers in preparing an address to their congregations, entitled 'Sighs for Sion,' and with Christopher Feake he composed prefaces for an anonymous pamphlet on 'The Prophets Malachy and Isaiah prophecying.'

At the beginning of September 1656 Pendarves died in London, changing 'his many quarrels here for everlasting peace.' After some hot debate the body, 'embowell'd and wrap'd up in sear-cloth by the care of the brethren,' was carried by water to Abingdon in a chest like those for sugar, fil'd up with sand and lodged at a grocer's.' It arrived there on Saturday, 27 Sept., and three days later was conveyed to a piece of ground 'at the Townes West-end and in the Axestreet' which had been purchased as a burial-place for his congregation. Crowds came from neighbouring villages, and spent the preceding and succeeding days in religious exercises; but on 2 Oct. Major-general Bridges sent fifty horse soldiers from Wallingford to dissolve the meetings (*Munster and Abingdon*, by W. Hughes of Hinton, Berkshire; *State Papers*, 1656–7, p. 130).

A sermon which Pendarves had preached 'in Petty France, London, the tenth day of the sixth month anno 1656,' was published after his death by John Cox.

[Boase's Exeter College Commoners, p. 247; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (ed. Bliss), iii. 419–21; Wood's Fasti, pt. ii pp. 3, 109; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. ii. 444–5; Brook's Puritans, iii. 256–7.]

W. P. C.

**PENDEREL, RICHARD** (*d.* 1672), one of five brothers who were primarily instrumental in the escape of Charles II after the battle of Worcester in 1651, was the son (reputedly the eldest) of William Penderel and Joan his wife. He was born on the Shropshire border of Staffordshire, with which county his family had been connected as early, at all events, as the time of Queen Elizabeth. His father was under-steward of the estate of the old knightly family of the Giffards of Chillington, and it was in that capacity that he occupied Boscobel House, which had been built by the Giffards about 1580, partly as a hunting lodge and partly as an asylum for recusant priests. For the latter purpose its situation in the thickest part of the forest of Brewood, and the numerous secret chambers with which it was honeycombed, eminently fitted it. It has often been stated that Richard Penderel and his brothers were 'poor peasants' and 'ignorant wood-cutters.' As a matter of fact they were substantial yeomen, as their wills at Somerset House and other documents executed by them sufficiently prove; and there were, moreover, relationships, in what precise degree is unascertained, between them and the Giffards, as well as with Father William Ireland [q. v.] At the time of the battle of Worcester (3 Sept. 1651) Richard Penderel was the tenant under a lease for lives (see his Will, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1672) of Hobbal Grange in the parish of Tong in the county of Salop, while his brother William was the tenant of Boscobel itself; and another brother Humphrey occupied the picturesque half-timbered house, called Whiteladies, adjoining the ruins of the Cistercian priory of that name lying about half a mile on the Shropshire side of Boscobel. While spurring away from Worcester field on the night of 3 Sept. 1651, the king was advised by James Stanley, seventh earl of Derby [q. v.], to entrust himself to the care of the Penderels, by whom he had, not long before, himself been concealed at

Boscobel. The king and his party reached Whiteladies in the dawn of the following morning. There he changed his clothes, and Richard Penderel concealed him for the rest of the day in the thickest part of Boscobel wood. At night the king completed his disguise in Richard's house of Hobbal Grange, and under his guidance made an unsuccessful attempt to pass the Severn into Wales. Returning to Boscobel, he was concealed, sometimes in the Royal Oak, and sometimes in the secret chambers of Boscobel House, until Richard and Humphrey, with their brothers William, John, and George, were able to conduct him on 9 Sept. to his next hiding-place at Moseley Court, near Wolverhampton, the seat of Mr. Whitgreave [see LANE, JANE].

At the Restoration the faithful brothers were not forgotten. They joined the procession of royalists through the streets of London on 29 May 1660. Charles loaded them with benefits, made them, it is believed, gentlemen of coat armour (but of this there is no record at the College of Arms), and commanded that they should attend at court once a year. Upon each of the brothers a pension, payable to them and their heirs 'for ever,' was settled by letters patent under the great seal, the amount of Richard's pension being 100*l.* per annum. When at court Richard Penderel, who had been presented by the king with a ring which is still possessed by the family, resided in the house of Henry Arundell in the Great Turnstile, Lincoln's Inn Fields (it was demolished in 1883). There, in February 1671–2, he fell ill of a fever, and died on the 8th of that month. He was buried in the churchyard of St. Giles-in-the-Fields, beneath an altar-tomb, still standing, which bears a eulogistic epitaph. The tomb was 'repaired and beautified' by order of George II in 1739. His will, made on the day of his death, describes him as of 'Hobbal Grange, Gentleman,' and shows him to have been a man of substance. He was survived by his wife Mary (her surname is unknown), who lived until 1689, and eight children, four sons and four daughters. William Penderel, his next brother, succeeded his father in the occupation of Boscobel House, and also received a pension of 100*l.* per annum. He died in 1706, aged over eighty-four. Each of the five brothers left posterity.

Richard Penderel di Boscobello (1679–1732), only son of Edmund Penderel, the son of Humphrey of Whiteladies, and great-nephew of Richard, had Queen Catherine of Braganza for godmother, and served part of his novitiate in the Society of Jesus at the English College in Rome. He was released from his vows, and became a secret agent of the exiled Stuarts. He was exempted by name, with the rest of his family, from the penal laws against the catholics (Orders in Council of 17 Jan. 1678–9, 25 July 1708, and 6 April 1716), a circumstance which enabled him to conspire in England with comparative safety. He appears to have lived chiefly in Italy, and was created by Charles Emmanuel III of Sardinia Marquis Penderel di Boscobel or di Boscobello, a title which still exists.

There are several engraved portraits of Richard Penderel and his brother William. Zoust painted a portrait of Richard, which was formerly in the Jennens collection, and was engraved in mezzotint by Houston. The extant portraits of William all represent him at the age of eighty-four (cf. BROMLEY, *Catalogue*).

[The Boscobel Tracts, edited by J. Hughes, 1857; Foley's Records of the English Province of the Society of Jesus, passim; Un Agent des Stuarts (Richard Penderel di Boscobel) par Charles Sebastiani. Paris, n.d.; L'Intermédiaire des Chercheurs et Curieux, xxviii. 193; Wills in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury; Records of the Privy Council; family papers; see also CARLOS, WILLIAM.] J. P. B.

**PENDERGRASS, SIR THOMAS** (*d.* 1709). [See PRENDERGAST.]

**PENDLEBURY, HENRY** (1626–1695), dissenting divine, born at Jowkin in the parish of Bury, Lancashire, on 6 May 1626, was son of Henry Pendlebury of Bury. The Pendleburys were a family long settled at West Houghton (see EARWAKER, *Local Gleanings*, ii. 632, 740). From Bury grammar school Henry passed to Christ's College, Cambridge, on 1 May 1645, where he became a sizar, and graduated B.A. on 26 April 1648, finally proceeding M.A. Taking holy orders, he was made minister at Ashworth, near Middleton, in 1648. In the following January he preached before the Bury classis, and was approved. In the Commonwealth church survey of 1650 he is noted as 'lately minister at Ashworth, but hath ceased to officiate for want of maintenance' (*Lanc. and Cheshire Record Soc. Publ.* i. 26).

Before July 1650 he had contracted 'a clandestine and irregular marriage' with Sarah Smith. But, after inquiry into the matter, the classis was satisfied (September 1650), and ordered him to be ordained at Turton, on 23 Oct. 1650, to Horwich chapel in Dean parish (*ib.* i. 32). Towards the end of the year (16 Oct. 1651, according to Chorl-

ton's memoir, infra) he removed to Holcome chapel in Bury parish, with the assent of the classis (HUNTER, *Life of Oliver Heywood*; FISHWICK, *Vicars of Rochdale*, Chetham Soc. i. 101). He was ejected from Holcome in 1662, but found occasional opportunities of preaching.

On the Declaration of Indulgence in 1672, Pendlebury returned to Holcome, where a temporary place of worship was built for him in Bass Lane (FISHWICK, *Hist. of Rochdale*, p. 252; NIGHTINGALE, *Lanc. Nonc.* ii. 157). He also officiated at Rochdale (cf. NIGHTINGALE, iii. 241 *n.*); but his ministrations were mainly devoted to Holcome. He died on 18 June 1695 in his seventieth year, and was buried in Bury church. In 1865 his bones were removed to a common receptacle on the occasion of the building of the new parish church. Newcome notes his death in his 'Autobiography' (p. 308) with the words 'a great loss.' His will was proved at Chester in 1695. His widow, his second wife, Jane Wolstenholme, died near Turton in Lancashire on 18 Nov. 1713 (Northowram Register). His son William Pendlebury, M.A., was for many years minister of Mill Hill Chapel, Leeds (see HEYWOOD, *Diaries*, iv. 319; BOOKER, *Hist. of Birch Chapel*, p. 86, Chetham Soc.)

Pendlebury was one of the most learned nonconformists of his day. Most of his works were published posthumously. The titles are: 1. 'A plain Representation of the Transubstantiation as it is received in the Church of Rome, by a Country Divine, London, 1687, sm. 4to, pp. 68. There is a questionable tradition that the work 'was carried by a friend of his privately to Archbishop Tillotson, who caused it to be printed, he so much approved of it' (CALAMY, *Account*, p. 400), but Tillotson was not archbishop till 1691. 2. 'Invisible Realities: the Real Christian's greatest Concernment, in several [i.e. six] sermons on 2 Cor. iv. 18,' London, 1696, dedicated to Hugh, lord Willoughby of Parham, by John Chorlton, with brief memoir of the author by Chorlton; reprinted at Bury, in 1816, with 'The Book Opened.' 3. 'The Book Opened, being [the substance of] several Discourses on Rev. xx. 14,' London, 1696; reprinted Bury, 1816, with No. 2. 4. 'The Barren Fig Tree, or a practical Exposition of the Parable, Luke xiii. 6-9,' London, 1700; Rochdale, 1700; Leeds, 1793. 5. 'Sermons by Henry Pendlebury of Rochdale,' with preface and dedication by Chorlton and Cunningham of Manchester; 2nd edit. Manchester, 1711. 6. 'Sacrificium missalicum mysterium iniquitatis, or a treatise concerning the Sacrifice of the Mass' (never before printed), London, 1768. Several sermons preached at the Bolton lecture were reprinted in Slate's 'Select Nonconformist Remains' (pp. 349–89).

[Authorities quoted; Fishwick's Lanc. Library, pp. 411–12; Scholes's Bolton Bibliogr. p. 201; Halley's Lanc. Nonconformity, p. 372; J. E. Bailey in Manchester Guardian, 'Local Notes and Queries,' 4 Jan. and 29 April 1874; notice by W. Hewitson in the Bury Times, June and July 1895; Lanc. and Chesh. Record Soc. Publ. i. 26, 37, xii. 66, xviii. 194; Manchester Minutes (Chetham Soc.); Heywood's whole Works, i. 130, 441; Oliver Heywood's Diaries; Northowram Register; Calamy's Continuation and Account of Nonc. Mem.; Thoresby's Ducatus Leodiensis, App. p. 122; Raines MSS. i. 291 (Chetham Libr.); Newcome's Autobiogr. (Chetham Soc.); Thorburn's Valedictory Address, Bury, 1874; Minutes of the Bury Classis (MS. in the writer's possession); information kindly sent by J. Peile, master of Christ's College; The Surey Demoniac, pp. 36, 73; Jolly's Vindication of the Surey Demoniac, pp. 40, 62; Long's Life of Matthew Henry, p. 57; Thoresby's Corresp. pp. 339, 404; Zachary Grey's Examin. of Neal, iv. 429; Jones's Popish Tracts, pp. 367, 463; Notitia Cestriensis, ii. 26, 41–2, 103 (Chetham Soc.)] W. A. S.

**PENDLEBURY, JAMES** (*d.* 1758?), colonel and last master-gunner of England, first appears as comptroller of the first permanent train of artillery on 1 May 1698. He embarked for Holland in 1702 as comptroller of the train then sent out, which consisted of thirty-four pieces, with two companies of gunners, one of pioneers, and one of pontooners. The staff included a colonel, a lieutenant-colonel, a major, a comptroller, a paymaster, adjutant, &c. In 1706 he was appointed chief fire-master; in 1708 second colonel and comptroller in Holland; in November 1709 master-gunner of England; in the following month colonel of royal artillery in the Low Countries. He was second colonel and comptroller in Flanders in 1711, and in 1715 he was placed on half-pay of 1*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* a day. The date of his death is not quite certain. He was the last officer who bore the title of master-gunner of England, which goes back to the time of Henry VIII.

[Proceedings of the Royal Artillery Institution, xix. 285; Duncan's History of the Royal Artillery, i. 63; Kane's List of Officers of the Royal Artillery, p. 104, where the name is given as John Pindlebury.] E. M. L.

**PENDLETON, FREDERICK HENRY SNOW** (1818-1888), divine, born on 13 Sept. 1818, was educated at the university of Ghent and at St. Aidan's College, Birkenhead. After being ordained in the diocese of Winchester, he served as curate of St.

Martin's, Guernsey, from December 1849 to June 1851, and as senior curate of St. Helier, Jersey, from August 1851 to July 1853. He was consular chaplain to the British residents at Monte Video from 6 May 1854 to 31 Dec. 1858. During his residence there 150 natives of the Vaudois, impelled by the scarcity of employment in Piedmont, left their native country and landed in Monte Video. They were followed in 1858 by about a hundred more, when the whole party settled at Florida, about sixty miles from the city. Jesuit opposition having arisen, the Vaudois settlers, under Pendleton's personal direction, removed to another locality known as the Rosario Oriental, where his influence obtained for them a church and a schoolroom. In 1857 a visitation of yellow fever swept over Monte Video, and Pendleton's services during the crisis were acknowledged by the French government, which granted him a gold medal. A similar recognition followed him from the Italian government. From 1863 to 31 Dec. 1868 he was chaplain to the British residents at Florence. In 1862 and again in 1867 he revisited the Waldensian colony at Rosario Oriental. He resided at the Casa Fumi, Porta Romana, Florence, until 1876, when he removed to Sydenham, Kent. There he served as curate of St. Bartholomew's Church till 1879. He was then curate of Ampthill, Bedfordshire, for two years, and finally became rector of St. Sampson's, Guernsey, in 1882. He died at St. Sampson's rectory, Guernsey, on 13 Sept. 1888. He wrote 'Lettres Pastorales' in 1851, and published various sermons in English and French between 1852 and 1868.

[Times, 19 Sept. 1888, p. 4; Guardian, 19 Sept. 1888, p. 1386; Foreign Office List, 1887, p. 164.] G. C. B.

**PENDLETON**, HENRY (*d.* 1557), Roman catholic controversialist, is said to have been born at Manchester, and to have come of a Lancashire family, a statement due perhaps to the identity of his name with two Lancashire villages. He entered Brasenose College, Oxford, about 1538, graduating B.A. on 16 Nov. 1542, M.A. on 18 Oct. 1544, and D.D. on 18 July 1552. During the reign of Henry VIII he made himself famous by preaching against Lutheranism, but on the accession of Edward VI he adopted protestant views, and was one of the first itinerant preachers appointed by the Earl of Derby 'to preach the doctrines of the Reformation in the ignorant and popish parts of the country' (Dixon, *Hist. Church of England*, iii. 176). In 1552 he became vicar of Blymhill, Staffordshire. After the accession of Mary he confirmed Laurence Saunders [q. v.] in his protestant opinions, and boasted of his own determination to maintain them. But he soon saw reason to change, and became a zealous Romanist. He received many preferments in 1554 as a reward for his conversion; he was collated to the prebends of Reculverland, St. Paul's (11 April), Ulveton, Lichfield (15 June), and received the living of Todenham, Gloucestershire, and St. Martin Outwich, London (14 Feb. 1554–1555). About the same time he became chaplain to Bonner, and took a prominent part in disputations with protestants who were brought before the bishop; among those with whom he argued were Thomas Mountain [q. v.], John Bradford (1510?–1555) [q. v.], and Bartholomew Green [q. v.] The substance of these discussions is printed in Foxe's 'Actes and Monuments.' Pendleton won some fame as a preacher. On one occasion, while preaching at St. Paul's Cross, on 10 June 1554, and making some severe strictures on the protestants, he was shot at. He resigned the vicarage of St. Martin Outwich on 1 April 1556, when he was admitted to the living of St. Stephen's, Walbrook. He died in September 1557, repenting, according to Foxe, his popish errors, and 'being brought with all Paul's choir' to be buried at St. Stephen's, Walbrook, on 21 Sept. (Strype, *Eccl. Mem.* III. ii. 18). Pendleton is author of two of the homilies published by Bonner in 1555, respectively entitled 'Of the Church what it is' and 'Of the Authoritie of the Church.' He is described as 'an able man, handsome and athletic, possessed of a fine clear voice, of ready speech and powerful utterance; his preaching was in popularity and influence second only to that of Bradford' (Halley, *Lancashire*, i. 68).

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. i. 325, 371; Strype's Eccl. Mem. III. i. 213, ii. 2, 18; Foxe's Actes and Mon. vi. 628–30, vii. 184–6, viii. 635; Bonner's Homilies, 1555, 8vo; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 589; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 632, ii. 431; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 204; Dodd's Church Hist. i. 511; Harwood's Lichfield, p. 239; Rymer's Fœdera, xv. 345; Sutton's Lancashire Authors, p. 91; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Lansd. MS. 981, f. 7; Simms's Bibl. Staffordiensis; Dixon's Church Hist. passim; Halley's Lancashire Puritanism; Hollingworth's Mancuniensis, ed. 1839, pp. 65–6.] A. F. P.

**PENDRAGON**, UTHER, father of King Arthur. [See under Arthur.]

**PENGELLY**, Sir THOMAS (1675–1730), chief baron of the exchequer, descended from a west of England family, was son of

Thomas Pengelly, by his wife Rachel, the eldest daughter of Lieutenant-colonel Jeremy Baines. He was probably born at his father's house 'next door to the 2 Twins in Moorefields,' and was baptised in Moorfields on 16 May 1675. His father was an opulent London merchant, who traded to Smyrna, Aleppo, and the Indies as early as 1642, and possessed considerable property at the east-end, Finchley, and at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire. At his house at Churchgate, Cheshunt, he provided a retreat for the ex-Protector Richard Cromwell on his return to England in 1683. After his host's death, Richard Cromwell, under the disguised names of 'Mr. Clarke' and 'The Gentleman,' continued to reside at Cheshunt with Pengelly's widow and son, and he died there on 12 July 1712, in the younger Pengelly's arms. The intimacy between Richard Cromwell and the Pengelly family led to the fabrication of a scurrilous and lying report that the younger Pengelly was Richard's natural son.

Thomas in youth closely applied himself to study, and showed much aptitude for classics. In December 1692 he was admitted into the Inner Temple; was called to the bar in November 1700, and in 1710 was made a bencher of the inn. His practice grew rapidly. He was for many years counsel to Charles Seymour, 'the Proud' duke of Somerset, and to Sarah, duchess of Marlborough. In 1705–6 he was one of the counsel retained by Richard Cromwell in the suit instituted against his daughters to obtain possession of Hursley Manor, in which he had a life interest under the will of his son Oliver. Pengelly obtained a decision in his client's favour. He was created serjeant-at-law on 12 May 1710, was knighted on 1 May 1719, and on 24 June of the same year, on the death of Sir Thomas Powis, was appointed king's prime serjeant. In January and February 1722 as king's serjeant, with the other law officers of the crown, he had the conduct of the indictment of Christopher Layer [q. v.] and others before the committee of the House of Commons on a charge of high treason.

He was elected member of parliament for Cockermouth in Cumberland, chiefly through the interest of the Duke of Somerset and the Marquis of Wharton, in 1717 and in 1722. In May 1725 he was one of the managers of the impeachment of the Earl of Macclesfield [see Parker, Thomas, 1666?–1732], and on the tenth day of the earl's trial replied to all the legal points raised for the defence. Pengelly argued that the sale of the lucrative offices of the court of chancery—the chief offence with which the earl was charged—violated statute law, and that the prisoner had in an illegal and arbitrary manner extended the power and authority of the lord chancellor and of the court of chancery beyond their lawful and just bounds.

Pengelly's reputation as a counsel was excelled by none in his generation. He spoke simply yet convincingly, and spared himself no pains in mastering his briefs. He often placed his services gratuitously at the disposal of poor suitors. On 16 Oct. 1726 he was appointed lord chief baron of the exchequer, in succession to Sir Geoffrey Gilbert [q. v.] Besides sitting at the Guildhall and at Westminster, he presided at many provincial assizes. The qualities that had characterised his career at the bar distinguished his conduct on the bench. Few judges more signally commanded public confidence. Richard Steele, who resented a judgment which deprived him of the licence for Drury Lane Theatre, found no more powerful means of attacking him than by quibbling upon his surname—'As "Pen" is the Welsh word for head, "Guelt" is the Dutch for money, which, taken with the English syllable "Ly," signifies one who turns his head to lie for money.'

In 1730, while presiding at the Lent assizes at Taunton, Pengelly was attacked by gaol fever, to which he succumbed, at Blandford in Dorset, on 14 April. He was buried in the Inner Temple vault, in the Temple Church, on 29 April. A few years before his death he built the house which has long been known as 'Pengelly' at Cheshunt, Hertfordshire, on the site of the old mansion-house which had belonged to his father. He was unmarried.

By his will, which was written by his own hand, and dated 16 March 1727, and by two codicils, he directed 2,800*l.* to be applied to the discharge of poor prisoners for debt lying in the gaols of the towns in which he had presided as judge on the western circuit or in London. He bequeathed to his sole executor, John Webb, esq., of the Inner Temple, the whole of his estates in Hampshire and Hertfordshire, as well as his personal property, including his books and manuscripts. He left bequests to the Duchess of Marlborough and to the Duke of Somerset. His portrait, in his robes as lord chief baron, three-quarter length, painted by G. Worsdale, is now in the possession of Mr. F. E. Webb of 113 Maida Vale, London, the present representative of his heir. A second portrait, also in his official robes, was painted by the same artist; it was engraved by Faber. A large mass of his papers—his correspondents included the chief public men of his time—

was presented to the British Museum by the Rev. John Webb, M.A., F.S.A., rector of Tretire, about 1860. Some of his legal papers (vols. vii.–ix.) are also in the British Museum (Addit. MSS. 19773–5). Two volumes of his 'Legal Common Place Book' were presented to the library of the Inner Temple by the Rev. Prebendary T. W. Webb, M.A., of Hardwick. A large number of his books and manuscripts are now preserved at Odstock, Netley Abbey, Hampshire.

[Historical Account of Gaol Fever, by F. C. Webb, M.D., F.R.C.P., 1857; Luttrell's Relation of State Affairs; Gent. Mag. 1751 p. 235; Foss's Judges; Life of Sir Thomas Pengelly by 'Philalethes' (Edmund Curll), 1733, 8vo; Brit. Mus. Addit. MS. 6727; Pengelly papers and manuscripts in the possession of the writer.]

W. W. W.

PENGELLY, WILLIAM (1812–1894), geologist, was born at East Looe in Cornwall, on 12 Jan. 1812, his father, Richard Pengelly, being the captain of a coasting vessel; his mother, whose maiden name was Sarah Prout, was a relative of Samuel Prout [q. v.], the artist. The boy remained at the village school till the age of twelve, when for a time he joined his father's vessel; but an ever-increasing thirst for knowledge determined him to educate himself and to earn his bread by teaching. About 1836 he removed to Torquay, where he opened a school on the system of Pestalozzi, and soon became active in every effort to improve the general state of education in that part of England; as, for instance, in the foundation of the Mechanics' Institute (1837), of the Torquay Natural History Society (1844), and of the Devonshire Association for the Advancement of Literature, Science, and Art (1862). Of the first he was ever a willing helper; of the second, honorary secretary from 1851 to 1890; of the third, president in 1867–8.

After giving up his school he continued to work for education as a private tutor in mathematics and geology at Torquay, and as a public lecturer in various parts of the kingdom. One of his pupils, afterwards his constant friend and frequent helper, was Miss (now Baroness) Burdett-Coutts, and among them he reckoned an unusual number of persons of high rank, including members of more than one royal house. Pengelly was twice married: first, about 1837, to Mary Ann Mudge, by whom he had three children; secondly, in 1853, to Lydia Spriggs, who, with two daughters, survives him.

The geology of Devonshire was Pengelly's principal study, and his fine collection of fossils was presented by Miss Burdett-Coutts to the museum of the university of Oxford; but in process of time he paid especial attention to the question of man's early history, and the antiquity of the race. He wrote many papers on scientific subjects, of which lists are given in the 'Bibliotheca Cornubiensis' and the Royal Society's 'Catalogue of Scientific Papers,' the latter enumerating 112. The more important of them appeared in the publications of the Royal Society, the Geological Society of London, and the British Association. But Pengelly's reputation rests especially on three arduous tasks of scientific exploration undertaken in Devonshire: the examination of the plant-bearing deposit at Bovey Tracey, that of the Brixham Cave, and that of Kent's Hole at Torquay. By the first, undertaken in part of 1860 and the following year at the expense of Miss Burdett-Coutts, large collections of fossil plants were secured; these were afterwards examined by Professor Heer who referred them to the earlier part of the miocene period, but at the present time they are more generally assigned to the middle eocene. The exploration of the Brixham Cave was begun in 1858, under the auspices of the Royal and the Geological Societies of London. This proved man to be contemporary with several large extinct animals, and the work in Kent's Hole at Torquay furnished additional evidence, with many new and important particulars. The latter place had been partially investigated by the Rev. J. MacEnery, the results of whose work had been received with general incredulity, and by Pengelly himself, with some local assistance, in 1846; but at the meeting of the British Association at Bath in 1864 a committee was appointed to aid him in a systematic exploration. The work was begun on 28 March 1865, and continued till 19 June 1880, under Pengelly's close personal superintendence. The various deposits covering the floor of the cavern were systematically excavated, an immense number of bones of animals was obtained, including those of the mammoth, woolly rhinoceros, cave-bear, cave-lion, and (most interesting of all) the extinct 'sabre-toothed tiger' (*Machærodus latidens*). With these were found instruments of bone and stone (palæolithic) and other proofs of the antiquity of the human race. Owing to Pengelly's singular industry and unwearied devotion the work was executed in the most exact and thorough manner, so as to place the results beyond the possibility of suspicion.

Pengelly became F.G.S. in 1850, and received the Lyell medal of the Geological Society in 1886; in 1863 he was elected F.R.S.; and he was president of the geological section

at the British Association meeting in 1877, and of the anthropological department in 1883. Among other tokens of good-will he was presented with a testimonial of about six hundred pounds in 1874, and with his portrait in oils by A. S. Cope in 1882 as an acknowledgment of his services as secretary of the Torquay Natural History Society. The portrait is now in the society's museum. A smaller portrait by the same artist, together with a bust in plaster, is in the possession of Pengelly's family. After some months of declining health, he died at his residence, Lamorna, Torquay, on 16 March 1894, and was buried in the cemetery of that town. As a memorial, a hall, built by subscription, has been added to the museum of the natural history society.

Pengelly was a man of good presence, with a fine forehead and a benevolent expression of face. He was a remarkably lucid and attractive lecturer and speaker, while his fund of anecdote, sense of humour, and ready wit made him one of the most genial companions.

[Obituary notices in the Geological Magazine and in Natural Science (both May 1894), the Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society, May 1895, and private information.] T. G. B.

**PENINGTON.** [See also PENNINGTON.]

**PENINGTON**, or **PENNINGTON**, SIR ISAAC (1587?–1661), lord mayor of London, born in London about 1587, was eldest son of Robert Penington (*d.* 18 April 1628), a merchant of London, by his first wife, Judith, daughter of Isaac Shetterden of London. He was grandson of William Penington, born at Henham, Essex, and buried at St. Benet's, Gracechurch Street, London, on 11 Nov. 1592. Admiral Sir John Penington [q. v.], whose financial and domestic affairs Isaac helped to direct, was his second cousin. The family invariably spelt their surname with a single *n* in the first syllable.

Isaac received a good education, and succeeded to his father's business as a fishmonger, as well as to his estates in Norfolk and Suffolk. He was elected an alderman of London 29 Jan. 1638, and was discharged 23 Oct. 1657. He was an ardent puritan. At the church at Chalfont St. Peter, Buckinghamshire, where he purchased an estate before 1635, he refused to comply with the injunction for bowing at the name of Jesus, and complaint was made to Archbishop Laud (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1635–1636, p. 556).

In 1638 Penington was chosen high sheriff of London (*ib.* 1638–9, p. 59). His house was in Wood Street, Cheapside, and he was a prominent member of St. Stephen's Church, Coleman Street (cf. *Archæologia*, l. 23 sq.) He was returned to both the Short and Long parliaments in 1640 as member for the city. On 11 Dec. 1640 he presented a petition to the commons from fifteen thousand citizens against the innovations of Archbishop Laud. Penington's influence in the city was invaluable to parliament, on the outbreak of hostilities, in raising loans and supplies for the army. It is said that he impoverished himself in the cause. On 21 Nov. 1640 he announced in the house that his constituents had subscribed 21,000*l.* They afterwards undertook to raise 60,000*l.*; but on 23 Jan. 1640–1 Penington informed the commons that, in consequence of the restoration of Godfrey Goodman [q. v.] to his see, they had decided to lend nothing. Clarendon says that he informed parliament at the beginning of March 'that the money the house stood in need of, or a greater sum, was ready to be paid to whomsoever they would appoint to receive it' (*Rebellion*, ed. Macray, iii. 92). During the short recess taken by parliament in September and October 1641, Penington sat on a committee of both houses, which met twice a week.

On 16 Aug. 1642, after the royalist lord mayor, Sir Richard Gurney [q. v.], had been expelled by parliament from his office, Penington was chosen to succeed him, and the commons gave him special permission to remain a member of their house (*Commons' Journals*, ii. 723). Clarendon says he forbore to sit after his election. Charles I never acknowledged the legality of the appointment (RAPIN, *Hist. of Engl.* ii. 468); and in January 1643 he demanded that Penington and three others should be delivered into custody as persons notoriously guilty of schism and high treason. Penington and his friends published 'The Declaration and Vindication of Isaac Penington, now Lord Mayor of the Citie of London, of Col. Ven, Capt. Mainwaring, and Mr. Fowke . . . in answer to sundry scandalous Pamphlets, wherein they are charged to be the maine incendiaries of these present troubles in the City of London,' 4to, London, Feb. 11, 1642–3. The next year Penington was again elected lord mayor. He was colonel of the 2nd or white regiment of the forces of the city of London (*Harl. MS.* 986). During his mayoralty Penington showed his puritanic fervour by issuing a proclamation, dated 19 June 1643, decreeing that milk be sold in the city on Sundays only before the hours of eight in summer and nine in winter (*Broadside* in Brit. Mus. 669, f. 7 [22]).

On Saturday, 26 Nov. 1642, he issued, in his official capacity, a proclamation ordering

the collection of 30,000*l.* by Tuesday. The ministers were directed to stir up their parishioners, the churchwardens to make the collection on Sunday after service, and to bring reports of their procedure to a committee of the lords and commons sitting at the Guildhall on the ensuing Monday (*The Discovery of a Great and Wicked Conspiracie, &c. . . . whereunto is added an Order by the Lord Mayor for the Raysing of* 30,000 *li in the City of London*,' &c., 28 Nov. 1642). This action again evoked threats from the king, and Penington's friends published 'An Humble Remonstrance' in his vindication, 14 Jan. 1642-3.

In April 1643 'A Trve Declaration and Just Commendation of... Penington ... in advancing and promoting the Bulwarkes and Fortifications about the City and Suburbs, with a Vindication of his honour from all the Malicious Aspersions of Malignants,' was published by W. S., 4to, London (*King's Pamphlets*, E. 99 [27]). In August 1643 (Clarendon says on a Sunday) Penington summoned a municipal council to frame a petition to the commons against the lords' propositions for peace and accommodation.

Among his friends were John Milton and John Goodwin [q. v.], whose church he attended. In 1642 Penington had been appointed lieutenant of the Tower, and held the post until deprived by the self-denying ordinance in 1645. In this capacity he conducted Archbishop Laud to the scaffold on 10 Jan. 1645 (cf. *Commons' Journals*, iv. 706). Penington was appointed a member of the commission for the trial of the king, but he did not attend the sittings till Saturday, 20 Jan. He was present on the first three days of the following week, and again on the day that the death-warrant was signed, but he declined to append his signature. He was, however, afterwards appointed one of the committee to confer with trustees for the sale of the king's goods.

On 14 Feb. 1648 Penington was appointed one of the council of state, and reappointed for the following year on 13 Feb. 1649, and again on 16 Feb. 1650. On 5 Dec. 1651 he took the oath of secrecy at the council at Whitehall. He was on the committees for foreign affairs, the admiralty, and other purposes; and was one of the most regular attendants at the council. He occupied lodgings in Whitehall. His services to the Commonwealth were rewarded by grants of lands in Norfolk and Buckinghamshire, houses and tenements in the city (some of which were purchased on the sale of bishop's lands, and were granted at the Restoration to George Morley [q. v.], bishop of Worcester) (*Lords' Journals*, x. 640; *Commons' Journals*, v. 161). He had already been granted 3,000*l.* on 6 May 1647 for satisfaction of his losses and damages (*Lords' Journals*, ix. 177, 178).

Soon after 6 June 1649, he was knighted by the speaker of the commons, on the recommendation of the house (Metcalfe, *Book of Knights*, p. 204). A satire entitled 'Hosanna, or a Song of Thanksgiving sung by the Children of Zion,' London, 1649, purported to include a speech by Penington at the dinner given at Grocers' Hall to the speaker, lieutenant-general, and others, on 7 June 1649.

About 1655 Penington suffered a complete reverse of fortune. He was prosecuted for debt, having borrowed money to pay to parliament for the maintenance of the army. On 25 May and 13 July 1655 he appealed to the Protector; his petition was read before the council, and proceedings were stayed (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1655–6, pp. 172, 179, 235, 244). At the Restoration Penington was attainted of treason with the other regicides. He was committed to the custody of the sergeant-at-arms on 15 June 1660, and was brought up for trial at the Old Bailey on 10 Oct. On the 16th he pleaded 'not guilty,' protesting his 'ignorance of what he did.' The jury convicted him, and he was committed a prisoner to the Tower, where, after rather more than a year's imprisonment, he died on 17 Dec. 1660. An order was issued for the delivery of his body to his friends. The place of his burial is not known.

Penington married, first, on 7 Feb. 1614–15, Abigail, daughter of John Allen of London, by whom he had six children, viz.: Isaac [q. v.] the quaker; Arthur, who became a Roman catholic priest, and was living in 1676; William (1622–1689), a merchant of London, who also became a quaker and follower of John Perrot [q. v.]; and three daughters: Abigail (married about November 1641), Bridget, and Judith. Letters from Isaac Penington the younger to his sister Judith imply that she also became a quaker. Penington married, secondly, Mary, daughter of Matthew Young. A portrait of him, as lord mayor, wearing the chain and badge of office, is prefixed to 'A True Declaration and Commendation of Alderman Penington for Promoting the Fortification of the City,' 1643, 4to (Bromley, *Cat. of Portraits*, p. 128). The same is given in Thane's 'British Autography.'

Penington was a sturdy and austere puritan. When he expressed violent disapproval of his son Isaac's joining the quakers, the son retorted that his father's religion was formal and invented, the result of fear lest wrath should overtake him.

[Authorities quoted; Foster's Penningtoniana, p. 66; Webb's Penns and Peningtons, pp. 1–3, 74–90; Stow's Survey, ed. Strype, ii. bk. v. pp. 143, 144; Stoughton's Ecclesiastical Hist. of England, i. 103, 109, 115; Gardiner's Fall of the Monarchy of Charles I, ii. 26, 90, and Hist. of the Civil War, i. 14; Hanbury's Hist. Mem. relating to Independents, ii. 141, iii. 391 *n.*, 393; Clement Walker's Hist. of Independency, p. 170. pt. ii. pp. 103, 113; Nalson's Trial of King Charles, i. 2, 17, 25, 37; Noble's Regicides, pp. 120–6; Clarendon's Rebellion, ed. Macray, bk. iii. par. 66, 92, iv. 12, 182, v. 441 *n.* vi. 143, 191, 203, 204, 216, 225, 228, vii. 170, 202; Ludlow's Memoirs, iii. 40; Cal. State Papers, 1625–62; Calendar of Comm. for Compounding, pp. 2, 64, 355, 805, 2050; Hist. MSS. Comm. 7th Rep. pp. 68, 152, 155; Verney Papers (Camden Soc.), p. 24; Smyth's Obituary (Camden Soc.), p. 55; Whitelocke's Memorials, pp. 39, 66, 71, 143, 245, 381, 444; Lipscombe's Hist. of Bucks, iii. 240; Hasted's Kent, ii. 851; Blomefield's Norfolk, i. 159; Rapin's Hist. of England, xii. ed. 1730, pp. 51, 587; Bromley's Cat. of Portraits, p. 128; Cobbett's State Trials, iv. 1069, 1078, 1080, 1093, 1094, 1099, 1121, v. 994, 999, 1195, 1198, 1199, 1221, 1222; Records of Buckinghamshire, vol. vii. No. 2, pp. 110, 112; Gent. Mag. 1821, pt. i. p. 583; Thane's British Autography, ii. 37 (and portrait); Hubbard's Hist. of New England, published by the Mass. Hist. Soc. 2nd ser. vols. v. and vi. 349; Masson's Life of Milton; Forster's Arrest of the Five Members, pp. 124, 155, 157, 174, 309, 340; Records of St. Stephen's, Coleman Street; Commons' Journals, vi. 101; Remembrancia, pp. 66 *n.*, 200; Nalson's Collections, ii. 773, 776; Laud's Works, iii. 245, iv. 10, 32, 114, 429; Sharpe's London and the Kingdom, ii. 169, 173, 302; Addit. MS. 12496, f. 252; Tanner MS. in the Bodleian, lxiv. 40, lxxxix. 25.] C. F. S.

**PENINGTON** or **PENNINGTON**, ISAAC, the younger (1616–1679), puritan and quaker, born in London in 1616, was eldest son of Alderman Sir Isaac Penington (1587 ?–1661) [q. v.], by his first wife, Abigail, daughter of John Allen of London, merchant. He matriculated as a fellow commoner at Catherine Hall, Cambridge, on 1 April 1637 (Harvey, *Alumni Cantabr.* 1891, p. 3), but did not follow any profession. From early years he was troubled by religious doubts, and described his perplexity in 'A Brief Account of my Soul's Travel towards the Holy Land,' and 'A True and Faithful Relation in Brief concerning Myself, in reference to my Spiritual Travails and the Lord's dealings with me.' The latter was written long after (15 May 1667) in Aylesbury gaol (*Works*, 3rd edit. p. xlii). A work published by Penington in 1649 is entitled 'The Great and Sole Troubler of the Times represented in a Mapp of Miserie: or a Glimpse of the Heart of Man, which is the Fountain from whence all Misery flows and the source into which it runs back, drawn with a dark Pencil, by a dark Hand in the midst of Darkness.' Between 1648 and 1656 Pennington published eleven works, all of a religious nature. But he made during the period an excursion into political controversy, and advocated a representative democracy in a pamphlet called 'The Fundamental Right, Safety, and Liberty of the People (which is radically in themselves, derivatively in the Parliament, their Substitutes or Representatives) briefly asserted,' London, 1651.

For a short time Pennington joined the independents, but while still unsettled made the acquaintance of Lady Springett, whom he married at St. Margaret's, Westminster, on 13 May 1654. Born about 1625, she was the only child and heiress of Sir John Proude of Goodnestone Court, Kent, by his second wife, Anne, daughter of Edward Fagge, of Ewell, Faversham, Kent. Both her parents died in 1628, and she passed her youth in the house of Sir Edward Partridge, the husband of her mother's sister. In January 1642 she married Partridge's nephew, William Springett, who was knighted, and she was left a widow in 1644, with a posthumous child, Gulielma Maria. As a girl she had shown strong puritan predilections, which were shared by Springett, but since his death she had grown unsettled in her faith, and 'went in for the gay world.' 'I gave up much to be a companion to him,' she writes, in her autobiography, of her marriage with Penington.

They lived sometimes in London, sometimes at Datchet, or at Caversham Lodge, near Reading, and made the acquaintance of Thomas Curtis of Reading, and other quakers, and read quaker writings. In 1656 Penington attended a quaker meeting at Reading, and on Whit-Sunday 1657 he heard George Fox preach at the large general meeting at the house of John Crook [q. v.], near Luton in Bedfordshire. Shortly after, Penington and his wife publicly joined the sect which, he says, 'his understanding and reason had formerly counted contemptible.' 'His station,' says William Penn [q. v.], who married Gulielma Springett, Penington's stepdaughter, 'was the most considerable of any that had closed with this way.' Penington's father was indignant, and wrote harshly to his son, but the latter was immovable (*Devonshire House MSS.*)

In 1658 Penington and his wife settled at the Grange, Chalfont St. Peter, Buckinghamshire, which his father gave him on his marriage. An influential body of quakers worshipped in their house until the meeting-house of Jordans, in the next parish of Chalfont St. Giles (still in perfect preserva-

tion), was built in 1688, after the death of both Penington and his wife, and partly with money left by Mrs. Penington for the purpose, on land which they had purchased in 1671. Thomas Ellwood [q. v.] and his father, who came from Crowell, Oxfordshire, to visit them soon after they arrived at Chalfont, were astonished to find them both garbed in sober quaker attire. 'The dinner,' Ellwood says in his 'Autobiography,' 'was very handsome, and lacked nothing but the want of mirth.' According to Pepys, who met Mrs. Penington in 1665, she was not always grave; the diarist enjoyed 'most excellent witty discourse with this very fine witty lady, and one of the best I ever heard speak, and indifferent handsome' (*Diary*, iii. 104, 121). Ellwood soon became a quaker himself, and an inmate of the Peningtons' house. For seven years he was tutor to their children.

In the end of 1660 and beginning of 1661 Penington was a prisoner in Aylesbury gaol, along with nearly seventy other quakers, for refusing to take the oaths of allegiance to the government. They were confined in a decayed building behind the gaol, once a malthouse, 'but not fit for a dog-house,' says Ellwood. Many like experiences followed his release. In 1664 he spent seventeen weeks in gaol, and between 1665 and 1667 three periods—the first of a month, another of nearly a year, and the third of a year and a half. The second and third terms he owed to the malignity of the Earl of Bridgwater, whom he had offended by not taking off his hat in his presence, and by not calling him 'My Lord.' He was released by the intervention of the Earl of Ancram. From Aylesbury gaol he wrote in 1666 and 1667 letters 'to Friends in and about the Two Chalfonts.' Soon afterwards he was removed to the king's bench bar, London, and, 'with the wonder of the court that a man could be so long imprisoned for nothing,' was released in 1668.

Meanwhile the Grange was confiscated with other property of Penington's father, and a suit in chancery deprived Mrs. Penington of one of her estates because she and her husband would not take an oath to verify their claims. But Mrs. Penington, who was an admirable manager of her own and her husband's possessions, soon purchased and rebuilt (1669–73) a small residence, Woodside, near Amersham. In 1670–1 Penington was detained in prison for twenty-one months on the plea of refusing the oath of allegiance. He was released by the proclamation of Charles II in 1671.

In 1675 Thomas Hicks, an anabaptist, published in his 'Dialogue between a Christian and a Quaker' certain misquotations from Penington's and others' writings. Penington replied to Hicks in 'The Flesh and Blood of Christ ... With a Brief Account concerning the People called Quakers,' 1675.

The long imprisonments and exposure to prison damps and fare had undermined Penington's always weak constitution, and in 1678 he went to Astrop, Northamptonshire, to drink its medicinal springs. He wrote while there, on 15 Aug. 1678, an address 'To those persons that drink of the waters at Astrop Wells,' and a short piece, 'The Everlasting Gospel,' &c., 1678, addressed to papists. On his return through Oxford he wrote 'To the Scholars that disturb Friends in their Meetings at Oxford,' 23 Sept. 1678. In the following year he and his wife visited her property in Kent. He preached at Canterbury, and went on to Goodnestone Court. On the day fixed for his return he fell ill, and died, after a week's illness, on 8 Oct. 1679. He was buried in the ground at Jordans, Chalfont St. Giles, acquired in 1671. Letters of administration were taken out by his wife on 1 Dec. 1680.

Mrs. Penington died while on a visit to her daughter at Warminghurst, Sussex, on 18 Sept. 1682, and was buried beside her second husband. She left legacies to her son-in-law Penn, and to Ellwood money for building the meeting-house of Jordans at Chalfont. She wrote, in 1680, 'Some Account of the Exercises of Mary Penington from her Childhood,' with a letter to her grandson, Springett Penn, 'to be given him when he shall be of an age to understand it,' an account of her husband's imprisonments in Reading and Aylesbury gaols, and a defence of herself for not sharing them. The two last pieces were published by her son John in his 'Complaint against William Rogers,' London, 1681.

Penington had by his wife four sons and a daughter Mary (*d.* 1726), wife of Daniel Wharley of London. Two sons, John and Edward, are noticed below. Isaac, the second son, was drowned at sea as a lad in 1670. The third son, William (1665–1703), was a druggist in London.

Penington was a man of transparent modesty and gentleness, yet with much intellectual power. His early despondency gave place to a cheerfulness which raised the drooping spirits of many a fellow-prisoner. An epistle from prison to his children, dated 10 May 1667, gives beautiful expression to parental affection. His writings are subtle and profound, free from invective or controversial heat, mainly in the form of question and answer. Not without mysticism, they are yet eminently practical, and powerfully

helped to build up the new church of the quakers. Like George Fox, Penington does not wholly denounce the use of the 'carnal sword,' but maintains that where it is 'borne uprightly' against foreign invasion or to suppress violence, its 'use will be honourable' (*Works*, 3rd edit. p. 183; see also 'Address to the Army,' *ib.* i. 330).

Besides the works already noticed, Penington published (all in London) books, broadsides, and pamphlets, of which the chief, after he joined the quakers, are (with abbreviated titles): 1. 'The Way of Life and Death made manifest;' a portion is by Edward Burrough and George Fox, 4to, 1658; translated into Dutch in 1661, reprinted 4to, Rotterdam, 1675. 2. 'The Scattered Sheep sought after,' 4to, 1659, 1665. 3. 'The Jew Outward: being a Glasse for the Professors of this Age,' 4to, 1659. 4. 'To the Parliament, the Army, and all the Wel-affected in the Nation, who have been faithful to the Good Old Cause,' 4to, 1659. 5. 'A Question propounded to the Rulers, Teachers, and People of the Nation of England,' 4to, 1659. 6. 'An Examination of the Grounds or Causes which are said to induce the Court of Boston in New-England to make that Order or Law of Banishment upon Pain of Death against the Quakers,' &c. 4to, 1660. 7. 'Some Considerations propounded to the Jewes, that they may hear and consider,' &c., 4to, no place or date; translated into German, entitled 'Einige Anmerckungen vorgestellet an die Juden,' &c., 4to, n.d. 8. 'Some few Queries proposed to the Cavaliers,' 4to, n.d. 9. 'Some Queries concerning the Work of God in the World,' 4to, 1660; reprinted the same year. 10. 'An Answer to that Common Objection to Quakers that they condemn all but themselves,' 4to, 1660. 11. 'The Great Question concerning the Lawfulness or Unlawfulness of Swearing under the Gospel,' 4to, 1661. 12. 'Somewhat spoken to a weighty Question concerning the Magistrates Protection of the Innocent . . . Also a Brief Account of what the People called Quakers desire, in reference to Civil Government,' 4to, 1661; reprinted as 'The Doctrine of the People called Quakers in relation to bearing Arms and Fighting,' &c., edited by Joseph Besse [q. v.], 8vo, 1746 (Salop, 8vo, 1756). 13. 'Concerning Persecution,' 4to, 1661. 14. 'Concerning the Worship of the Living God,' &c., 4to, no place or date. 15. 'Observations on some Passages of Ludowick Muggleton . . . in that Book of his stiled "The Neck of the Quakers Broken,"' 4to, 1668. 16. 'Some Thing relating to Religion proposed to the Consideration of the Royal Society,' 4to, 1668. 17. 'To the Jews Natural, and to the Jews Spiritual; with a few Words to England, my Native Country,' sm. 8vo, 1677. 18. 'Some Sensible Weighty Queries concerning some Things very sweet and necessary to be experienced in the Truly-Christian state,' sm. 8vo, 1677. 19. 'The Everlasting Gospel of Our Lord Jesus Christ and the Blessed Effects thereof Testified to by experience. With a few words to England, my Native Country,' 4to. 1678. His works, with some posthumous papers, were collected in 1681, fol. Fourteen testimonies by his friends, his wife, and son John were included. Two or three omitted pieces were given in the second edition, 2 vols. 4to, 1761. A third edition appeared in 4 vols. 8vo, 1784, and a fourth at New York, 4 vols. 1861–3. Some of Penington's letters, included in the last edition, had been already issued separately by John Kendall [q. v.], London, 1796, and again by John Barclay, London, 1828; 3rd edit. 1844. 'Extracts' from Penington's writings have been frequently published in England and America. 'Selections' were issued in 'Barclay's Select Series,' vol. iv., London, 1837. A manuscript collection of his 'Works,' in 4 vols. folio, made by his eldest son, John Penington, is preserved at Devonshire House, Bishopsgate Street, and contains many unpublished letters and addresses.

Isaac's eldest son, John Penington (1655–1710), was born in 1655 in London, and went with his brothers, after Ellwood ceased to be their tutor, to the quaker boarding-school at Waltham Abbey, kept by Christopher Taylor [q. v.] As he grew up he was much in his father's society. From 1676 to 1679 he corresponded in Latin with William Sewel [q. v.], the quaker historian of Amsterdam (*The Quarterly Magazine . . . for . . . the Society of Friends*, 1832, pp. 117–19). On his mother's death in 1682 he inherited her house at Amersham and her property in Kent. He engaged in the controversy with George Keith (1630?–1716) [q. v.], and was summoned by Keith to Turners' Hall, London, on 11 June 1696, when a famous dispute took place with the quakers. He died unmarried on 8 May 1710, and was buried in Jordans burial-ground, Chalfont St. Peter. Besides copying out all his father's works and issuing tracts (1695–7) against Keith, Penington wrote a 'Complaint' (1681) in reply to 'The Christian Quaker' of William Rogers [q. v.], who had attacked both his father and mother; and when Rogers defended his position in a 'Sixth part of the Christian Quaker,' &c. (London, 1681), Penington retorted in 'Exceptions against Will. Rogers's Cavills,' London, 4to, 1680.

The fourth son, EDWARD PENINGTON (1667–1711), emigrated to Pennsylvania in November 1698, and married at Burlington, New Jersey, on 16 Nov. 1699, Sarah, daughter of Samuel Jennings, formerly of Coleshill, Buckinghamshire, the governor of New Jersey and a prominent quaker. Through the influence of William Penn, the husband of his step-sister, Penington was appointed in 1700 the second surveyor-general of the province of Pennsylvania. He died in Philadelphia on 11 Nov. 1711, leaving one son, Isaac, from whom the Peningtons of Philadelphia are descended. His writings all attack George Keith (cf. APPLETON, *Cyclop. American Biog.*)

[Works, passim; Mrs. Webb's Penns and Peningtons, 1867; J. Gurney Bevan's Life of Isaac Penington, 1784; Smith's Catalogue, ii. 337–61; Penington's Letters, published by John Barclay, London, 1828; Sewel's Hist. of the Rise, &c., edit. 1834, ii. 132, 135, 285, 422–6; Besse's Sufferings, i. 31, 76, 77; Gough's Hist. of Quakers, ii. 439–47; Ellwood's Autobiography; Letters of Early Friends, 1841, pp. 161, 255, 397; Kelty's Early Days of the Society of Friends, 1840; Lipscomb's Hist. of Buckinghamshire, iii. 240, iv. 587; Foster's Penningtonia; Fox's Journal, ed. 1765, pp. 282, 419, 522; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict. xxiv. 282–5; Summers's Memories of Jordans and the Chalfonts, 1895, passim; Gibbs's Worthies of Buckinghamshire, p. 318; Registers and manuscripts at Devonshire House.]

C. F. S.

**PENINGTON, SIR JOHN** (1568?–1646), admiral, second cousin of Sir Isaac Penington or Pennington (1587?–1661) [q.v.], was the son of Robert Penington of Henham in Essex, described as a tanner. He is said to have been baptised at Henham on 30 Jan. 1568; but the circumstances of his later career, and the fact that he is unmentioned during the war with Spain or for twelve years after its close, suggest that he was born at a later date. It is possible that he and his half-brother, also John, born in 1584, have been confused together (FOSTER, *Penningtoniana*). His name first appears as captain of his own ship, the Star, and vice-admiral under Sir Walter Ralegh [q.v.] in the voyage to the Orinoco in 1617. He remained with Ralegh at the mouth of the river; but putting into Kinsale, on the way home, the ship was seized by order of the lord deputy, and in London he himself was thrown into prison. In a petition to the council he stated that he had lost 2,000*l.*, his whole property, in the voyage; now his ship was taken from him; not having been at St. Thomas's, he could give no information as to what had been done (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. July 1618). He gave evidence, however, that Ralegh had 'proposed the taking of the Mexico fleet if the mine failed' (GARDINER, iii. 147). Ralegh, writing from St. Kitts on 21 March 1617–18, described him as 'one of the sufficientest gentlemen for the sea that England hath' (EDWARDS, *Life of Ralegh*, ii. 353). His imprisonment does not seem to have been long, and during the latter months of 1618 and through 1619 he was applying to the East India Company for employment, with a recommendation from the Duke of Buckingham (*Cal. State Papers*, East Indies). His applications were unsuccessful, and in 1620 he was in the service of the crown as captain of the Zouch Phœnix, in the expedition against Algiers under Sir Robert Mansell [q.v.] In December 1621 he was appointed to command the Victory, in which, in the following May, he carried Count Gondomar to Spain. In 1625 he was in command of the Vanguard, which, with seven hired merchant ships, the king and Buckingham had agreed to place at the disposal of the King of France for eighteen months, 'against whomsoever except the King of Great Britain.' Buckingham had probably persuaded himself that this meant against the Genoese or Spaniards, and was sorely mortified when he found that the king of France meant to use them against the rebellious Huguenots of Rochelle. The ships were ready on 11 April; but when the owners and captains understood that they were to be called on to serve against the French protestants, they showed very clearly that they would not do so, and Sir Ferdinando Gorges [q.v.], the vice-admiral of the fleet, absented himself till compelled to appear by threats of imprisonment. On 8 May Penington, as admiral of the fleet, was ordered to cross the Channel and deliver the ships; but with his orders he received an explanatory letter, directing him not to meddle with the civil war in France, or to take part in any attack on the protestants. But at Dieppe he was plainly told by the French that he was to be employed against Rochelle: the two orders were directly contrary, and he was probably glad to escape from the embarrassment by positively refusing to take on board the ships a large number of French soldiers, which would have been equivalent to giving up the command of the squadron. While the French were arguing the point with him, or writing to England to get Penington's orders altered, Penington discovered that he could not keep the ships lying there in an open roadstead, and returned to Portsmouth. After a delay of more than two months, during which he received many perplexing and contradictory

instructions, affairs took a more peaceful appearance as far as the Huguenots were concerned, and on 28 July he received a formal order to deliver up the Vanguard and the other ships to the French, and at the same time a private note of the king's certain knowledge that peace was made with the Huguenots, and that war would be declared against Spain. On 3 Aug. he arrived at Dieppe; on the 5th he handed over the Vanguard to the French, and the other ships—except that of Gorges—a day or two later; but the men refused to serve, and were sent home. On the impeachment of Buckingham, in the following year, it was stated that Penington, by firing on these other ships, had compelled them to surrender; but of this there is no contemporary evidence, and the fact is improbable (Granville Penn, *Life of Penn*, i. 34–5).

On 3 Dec. 1626 Penington, then admiral of a squadron in the Downs, was ordered to seize French ships. The determination of Richelieu to make France a maritime power was held to be an insult to the supremacy of England; and on the 24th Penington was directed to go to Havre, where eight ships which the French king had lately bought from the Dutch were lying. These he was, if possible, to provoke into firing at him, but in any case to pick a quarrel with them, and so to take, sink, or burn them. Penington put to sea prepared to obey, but, after looking into Havre and finding no ships there, he returned to Falmouth, and wrote to Buckingham complaining that he had been sent out at the bad time of the year, with only three weeks' provisions on board, his ships in bad order, badly supplied and badly manned, 'so that if we come to any service, it is almost impossible we can come off with honour or safety.' In the following spring he put to sea under more favourable circumstances, and captured and sent in some twenty French ships at one time, and swept the sea from Calais to Bordeaux. The prizes were sold, the sailors and soldiers, who had been on the verge of mutiny, were paid, and France, it was said, would provide the means for her own ruin. In 1631 Penington, with his flag in the Convertine, was admiral 'for the guard of the Narrow Seas.' He was employed on the same service through the summer of 1633 and of 1634, with his flag in the Unicorn, on board which ship he was knighted by the king on 14 April. In 1635, in the Swiftsure, he was rear-admiral of the fleet under the Earl of Lindsey, Sir William Monson [q.v.] being the vice-admiral; and on Lindsey and Monson leaving the fleet in October, Penington remained in command of the winter guard (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 6th Rep. App. p. 279, 10th Rep. pt. iv. p. 2). In the following years he was still on the same service, and in September 1639 was lying in the Downs with a strong squadron, when the Spanish fleet for Dunkirk, with a large body of troops on board, was driven in by the Dutch fleet under the command of Tromp, which also came in and anchored in the Downs. Penington insisted that the two enemies should respect the neutrality of the roadstead; but he had a very insufficient force, and the orders he received from the king were confused and contradictory. Oquendo, the Spanish admiral, and Tromp had both, in fact, appealed to King Charles, who, hardly pressed for money by reason of the Scottish war, hoped to make some advantage out of one or the other, but was unable to decide which would pay the better; and before he could make up his mind, Tromp, probably on a hint from Richelieu, took the matter into his own hands, and on 11 Oct., having been joined by large reinforcements from Holland, attacked the Spanish fleet, drove many of their ships on shore, pursued those that fled, and captured or sank the greater part. Penington, meantime, was powerless; he had no instructions to take part with either, and was disinclined to risk the total loss of his fleet by defending the Spaniards. It may, indeed, be doubted if his fleet would have obeyed him had he attempted to do so, for the popular opinion was that the Spanish fleet was there on the invitation of Charles, and that the troops it carried were to be landed to help in crushing English liberties. For the deliverance from this fancied danger the nation was grateful to the Dutch; but that Penington had had no hand in it, and had appeared rather as a supporter of the Spaniards, was probably remembered against him when, in July 1642, the parliament, after vainly protesting against the king's appointment of Penington as lord high admiral, ordered the Earl of Warwick to take command of the fleet and not to allow Penington on board. The hesitation in the fleet when Warwick assumed the command was merely nominal, and, with Penington's rejection, the navy declared itself on the side of the parliament. That the popular feeling mistrusted Penington was evident. Clarendon says that 'he was a very honest gentleman, and of unshaken faithfulness and integrity to the king;' and though the lords 'pretended that they had many things to object against him, the greatest was that he had conveyed the Lord Digby over sea, though they well knew that for that he had

the king's warrant' (*Hist. of the Rebellion*, v. 36-9). But in fact the objection was that throughout his whole career he had shown himself to the people as preferring the will of the king to the welfare of the nation or even his own honour. He remained attached to the king's service apparently with the nominal rank of lord high admiral, but without any fleet to command, or other functions than providing for the bringing over soldiers from Ireland, for which he was ordered an imprest of 40,000*l.* on 17 Feb. 1643–4. This appears to be the last official mention of him. He died at Muncaster in September 1646. He was unmarried, and by his will left legacies to his brother's sons and to divers cousins; among others, his 'Great Heart diamond ring' to his cousin William Pennington of Muncaster, who became ancestor of the earls of Muncaster [see PENNINGTON, JOHN, first BARON MUNCASTER.]

[Calendars of State Papers, Domestic; Gardiner's Hist. of England (cab. edit.), and the references therein, see index; Penington's Journals in Hist. MSS. Comm. 10th Rep. pt. iv. pp. 275 et seq. (Lord Muncaster's MSS.)]

J. K. L.

**PENKETH, THOMAS** (*d.* 1487), was a friar of the Augustinian house at Warrington, near which is the township of Penketh, probably his native place (LELAND, *Comment. de Script. Brit.* p. 470, ed. 1709; GANDOLFUS, *De Script. August.* p. 340). Devoting himself to the study of theology and philosophy, Penketh attained to high distinction in both. Of the work of Duns Scotus he was commonly supposed in his time to have a unique knowledge (*ib.*) In 1469 he was made provincial of his order in England, and in 1473 taught theology at Oxford, of which university he was doctor of divinity (*De Script. August.* p. 341). Penketh's fame spread to Italy, and in 1474 he was called to Padua, where he held a salaried post as teacher of theology (*ib.*; BALE, *Script. Brit. Cat.* cent. VIII. No. xlvii). While there, at the request of his pupils, he began to publish amended editions of the works of his master, Duns Scotus. Returning to England, Penketh resumed his work in Oxford in 1477, and was once more chosen provincial of his order (*De Script. August.* p. 341). In 1483, with Dr. Shaw [see under SHAW, SIR EDMUND], he attached himself to Richard, duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III [q.v.], and preached in his favour against the children of Edward IV (HOLINSHED, *Chronicles*, iii. 386, ed. 1808). Penketh consequently fell into disgrace, and compromised his order. He died in London on 20 May 1487, and was buried in the house of the Austin friars there (*De Script. August.* p. 341).

His extant works are his editions of the writings of Duns Scotus, viz.: 1. 'Quodlibeta,' Venice, 1474. 2. 'Quæstiones super secundo libro Sententiarum,' Venice (?), 1474. 3. 'Super duodecem libros Metaphysice [of Aristotle] quæstiones ... apud Andreæ (Antonii) "Dulciphus,"' ed. Padua, 1475. 4. 'Quæstiones super quatuor libris Sententiarum,' Venice, 1477; another edition, Nuremberg, 1481. 5. 'Quæstiones super libro primo Sententiarum,' Venice, 1481.

Penketh is also said to have written various other works, which are not known to be extant or to have been printed.

[In addition to the authorities quoted in the text, see Pits's De Illustr. Angl. Script. pp. 675–6; Fabricius's Bibl. Lat. Med. æt. vi. 726; Chevalier, Répertoire, i. 1754; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 589; Stevens's Ancient Abbeys, ii. 220; Newcourt's Repert. Eccl. Lond. i. 289.]

A. M. C–E.

**PENKETHMAN, JOHN** (*fl.* 1638), accountant, professed, in addition to his ordinary business, 'to translate old manuscripts or bookes in any kind of Latin (according to the qualitie of the subject) into English, Prose or Verse.' In 1638 he published 'Artachthos; or a new booke declaring the Assise or Weight of Bread,' &c., London, 1638, 4to.; another edition, London, 1748, 4to. A proclamation of 19 Nov. of that year conferred upon him the special privilege of printing and publishing this work for twenty-one years, 'in recompense of his pains and expense,' and ordered that the assize of bread should be observed in accordance with it. Different parts of the work were reprinted separately in 1638 and 1745. Penkethman also published: 1. 'A Handful of Honesty, or Cato in English Verse, &c. By J. P., Lover of Learning,' London, 1623, 8vo. 2. 'The Epigrams of P. Virgilius Maro,' 1624, 8vo. 3. 'Onomatophylacium; or the Christian Names of Men and Women, now used within this Realm of Great Britaine, alphabetically expressed, as well in Latine as in English,' &c., London, 1626, 8vo. 4. 'Additions to Hopton's Concordancy. Conteyning Tables of the Gold Coynes now currant, with their due weights,' &c., London, 1635, 8vo.

[Rymer's Fœdera, xx. 278; Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses, ed. Bliss, ii. 151.] W. A. S. H.

**PENLEY, AARON EDWIN** (1807–1870), watercolour-painter, born in 1807, first appears as a contributor to the Royal Academy exhibition in 1835. He continued to exhibit at intervals till 1857, his contributions being chiefly portraits, though he was after-

wards better known as a landscape-painter. He was elected a member of the New Water Colour Society (now the Royal Institute of Painters in Water Colours) in 1838, when he was living at 26 Percy Street, Rathbone Place, but he resigned in 1856, aggrieved in consequence of some alleged slight in connection with the placing of his pictures. At his own request, however, he was reinstated in 1859. He was watercolour-painter in ordinary to William IV and Queen Adelaide, and professor of drawing at Addiscombe College from 1851 to its dissolution, after which he held a similar post at Woolwich Academy till his death. In 1864 a mysterious advertisement, offering a reward for any information about Penley, 'living or dead,' appeared in several of the London newspapers. He died at Lewisham on 15 Jan. 1870.

An enthusiastic follower of his art, Penley published various elaborate treatises on its principles and practice, some of which are illustrated by chromolithography. Among them are his 'Elements of Perspective' (1851), 'English School of Painting in Water Colours' (1861), 'Sketching from Nature in Water Colours' (1869), 'A System of Water Colour Painting.'

His art was of the showy, artificial kind, which was encouraged by the early popularity of chromolithography, and may be said to have become quite obsolete before his death.

[Redgrave's Dict.; private information.]
W. A.

**PENN**, GRANVILLE (1761–1844), author, was fifth son of Thomas Penn [q. v.], by his wife Lady Juliana Fermor, fourth daughter of Thomas, first earl Pomfret, and was born at 10 New Street, Spring Gardens, on 9 Dec. 1761. He matriculated from Magdalen College, Oxford, on 11 Nov. 1780, but took no degree. Subsequently he became an assistant clerk in the war department, and received a pension on retirement. On 24 June 1791 he married, and settled in London. In 1834 he succeeded his brother, John Penn (1760–1834) [q. v.], in the estates of Stoke Park, Buckinghamshire, and Pennsylvania Castle, Portland. He was a member of the Outinian Society, founded by his brother, John Penn. He was in the commission of the peace for Buckinghamshire. Penn died at Stoke Park on 28 Sept. 1844. By his wife Isabella, eldest daughter of General Gordon Forbes, colonel of the 29th regiment of foot, he had three sons—viz. Granville John (1802–1867); Thomas Gordon (1803–1869), who took holy orders; William, of Lincoln's Inn and Sennowe Hall, Norfolk (*b.* 1811)—and four daughters, of whom Sophia, the eldest, married Colonel Sir William Gomm, K.C.B., and died in 1827. An illegitimate son, Colonel Granville, inherited Pennsylvania Castle, which he sold, with all its historical contents, to J. Merrick Head, esq., in 1887.

A life-size portrait is at Pennsylvania Castle.

Penn published a number of competent translations from the Greek, and many theological and semi-scientific works. 'A comparative Estimate of the Mineral and Mosaical Geologies,' London, 1822, was received with some approval in religious circles, but was severely censured elsewhere as an unscientific attempt to treat the book of Genesis as a manual of geology. A second edition, enlarged, and with answers to critics, appeared in 2 vols. London, 1825. 'The Book of the New Covenant of Our Lord; being a Critical Revision of the Text and Translation of the English Version of the New Testament, with the aid of most ancient Manuscripts, unknown to the Age in which that Version was last put forth by Authority,' appeared at London in 1836. 'Annotations to "The Book of the New Covenant," with an expository Preface, with which is reprinted J. L. Hug's "De Antiquitate Codicis Vaticani Commentatio,"' followed in 1837. These two were republished together, London, 1887, and are still valued. The revision is based on the 'Codex Vaticanus,' marked B by Wetstein. More useful in a different direction is Penn's life of his great-grandfather, Admiral Sir William Penn [q. v.], 2 vols. London, 1833.

His other works were: 1. 'Critical Remarks on Isaiah vii. 18,' 1799. 2. 'Remarks on the Eastern Origination of Mankind and of the Arts of Cultivated Life,' 1799. 3. 'A Greek Version of the Inscription on the Rosetta Stone, containing a decree of the priests in honour of Ptolemy the Fifth,' 1802. 4. 'A Christian's Survey of all the Primary Events and Periods of the World, from the Commencement of History to the Conclusion of Prophecy' (1811); 2nd edit. 1812; 3rd edit., corrected and improved, London, 1814. This work, dealing with the millennium, was attacked in an anonymous 'Dissertation on the Seals and Trumpets of the Apocalypse,' and was defended by Penn in 5. 'The Prophecy of Ezekiel concerning Gogue, the last Tyrant of the Church, his Invasion of Ros, his Discomfiture and final Fall; examined and in part illustrated,' London, 1814. 6. 'The Bioscope, or Dial of Life, explained; to which is added a Translation of St. Paulinus's Epistle to Celantia on the Rule of Christian Life, and an Ele-

mentary View of General Chronology, with a perpetual Solar and Lunar Calendar, by the Author of "The Christian's Survey,"' London, 1812; 2nd edit. 1814. 7. 'The Epistle to Celantia, translated from the Latin,' 1813. This was republished with 8. 'Institutes of Christian Perfection of Macarius the Egyptian, called the Great; translated from the Greek,' London, 1816; 2nd edit. 1828. 9. 'Moral Odes from Horace,' London, 1816. 10. 'An Examination of the Primary Argument of the Iliad,' London, 1821. 11. 'Conversations on Geology, comprising a familiar Explanation of the Huttonian and Wernerian Systems,' &c., London, 1828; reprinted 1840.

[Works; Berry's Genealogies, 'Buckinghamshire,' p. 74; Gent. Mag. 1844, ii. 545; Crabb Robinson's Diary, 1869, i. 486, ii. 273; an autograph letter is Addit. MS. 27952, f. 157.]

C. F. S.

PENN, JAMES (1727–1800), divine, son of John Penn, citizen and stationer, of St. Bride's parish, London, was baptised there on 9 June 1727. He was admitted a scholar of Christ's Hospital from the parish of St. Dunstan's in the West in April 1736, and obtained in 1745 an exhibition at Balliol College, Oxford, where he matriculated on 4 July of that year. He proceeded B.A. in 1749, M.A. in 1752. He was elected under grammar master of Christ's Hospital in 1753, and while there compiled a Latin grammar which was for many years in use in the school. In 1756 he was curate of St. Andrew Undershaft, Leadenhall Street, and the next year was curate of the united parishes of St. Ann, St. Agnes, and St. John Zachary.

Penn was a candidate for the upper grammar or head mastership of Christ's Hospital in 1760, but lost the election by one vote. He was appointed by the governors of the hospital to the vicarage of Clavering-cum-Langley, Essex. Penn continued teaching in the school until 1767. From about 1769 until 1779 he was domestic chaplain to Granville, earl Gower. From March 1781 until his death on 15 Aug. 1800 he resided at Clavering-cum-Langley. He was buried in London.

Penn's writings were chiefly miscellaneous tracts and sermons, but some of them show considerable humour and satirical power. They include four volumes of collected tracts, London, 1756; 1757, containing 'The Fair Sex vindicated from Folly and Extravagance' (republished singly, London, 1769); 1762 and 1777. 'By way of Prevention; a Sleepy Sermon, calculated for the Dog-days, with an Address to the Clergy and another to the Laity of the City of London,' London, 1767, is one of Penn's most characteristic productions. Other works are: 1. 'The Farmer's Daughter of Essex,' London, 1767, 12mo. republished as 'The Life of Miss Davis, the Farmer's Daughter of Essex.' 2. 'The Reasonableness of Repentance, with a Dedication [commencing 'Tremendous Sir'] to the Devil, and an Address to the Candidates for Hell,' London, 1768. 3. 'Seven Sermons,' London, 1769, 8vo. 4. 'The Surrey Cottage,' London, 1779, 12mo.

[Works above mentioned; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Wilson's Hist. of Christ's Hospital, pp. 55, 98; List of Exhibitioners at Christ's Hospital, p. 30; Orme's Bibliotheca Biblica, p. 345; Pink's Hist. of Clerkenwell, p. 237; Register of Clavering-cum-Langley, per the Rev. F. Gifford Nash.]

C. F. S.

PENN, JOHN (1729–1795), colonist, born in London on 14 July 1729, eldest son of Richard Penn (*d.* 1771), and grandson of William Penn (1644–1718) [q. v.], was appointed by the proprietaries, his father and his uncle, Thomas Penn [q.v.], to be lieutenant-governor of the colony of Pennsylvania in November 1763; he retained this post until 16 Oct. 1771, and resumed it 1773–6. The chief event of his administration was the treaty with the Indians at Fort Stanwix in 1768. During the revolutionary contest he attempted to steer a middle course, with the result that in 1775 his council was supplanted by a committee of safety. In 1778 the royal charter was annulled, and the Penns were allowed 130,000*l.* for their unsettled lands in the state. This sum was supplemented in 1786 by an annuity on behalf of the residue of their estates; and of these amounts, besides the annuity of 4,000*l.* granted to the family by the British government, and only recently commuted, John Penn enjoyed a fourth part. He died at Philadelphia on 10 Feb. 1795, and was buried in Christ Church in that city, but his remains were afterwards removed to England. With him ended all administrative connection between Pennsylvania and the family of its great founder. Penn built Lansdowne House, on the Schuylkill river. The place was subsequently converted into the Fairmount public park, which formed part of the exhibition grounds of 1876. He married, on 31 May 1766, Ann, daughter of Chief-justice William Allen of Philadelphia, but had no issue. Portraits of Governor John Penn, his wife, and members of her family were included in a picture by Benjamin West [q. v.] which was in the possession of John Penn Allen, nephew of the governor, in 1867.

[Fuller information about John Penn is to be found in Gordon's, Proud's, and other histories

of Pennsylvania; in Watson's Annals, Colonial Records, Hazard's Archives; in the publications of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, and other works.] C. F. S.

**PENN, JOHN** (1760–1834), miscellaneous writer, born in London on 22 Feb. 1760, and baptised at St. Martin's-in-the-Fields on 21 March, was the eldest son of Thomas Penn [q. v.] and of his wife Juliana, daughter of Thomas Fermor, first earl of Pomfret. William Penn [q. v.], founder of Pennsylvania, was his grandfather. On the death of his father in 1775 John succeeded to his property, which included the moiety of the proprietorship of the province of Pennsylvania, with hereditary governorship, and Stoke Pogis Park in Buckinghamshire, which his father had purchased in 1760. On the outbreak of the American war of independence in 1775, John apparently accompanied his mother to Geneva. He was entered at Clare Hall, Cambridge, as a nobleman (by virtue of his maternal descent), was created M.A. in 1779, and LL.D. on 28 June 1811. In 1782 he went to America to attend to his Pennsylvania property, and, remaining there some years, built the house called Solitude at Schuylkill. He and his cousin John Penn (1729–1795) [q. v.] received from the assembly in 1786 the grant of 15,000*l.* annually as payment for the estate vested in the commonwealth as by law passed 18 Jan. 1786. In 1789 he returned to England, and in the following year received his portion of the annuity granted by parliament in consideration of the losses in Pennsylvania. The house at Stoke Pogis having fallen into decay, he commenced, in 1789, the erection of a new one in the centre of the park, from designs by Nasmith, which were completed by James Wyatt (view in Neale, *Seats*, vol. i.) In 1798 Penn was sheriff of Buckinghamshire, and he represented the borough of Helston, Cornwall, in the parliament of 1802. He was appointed governor of Portland, Dorset, in 1805. Shortly before that date he erected on Portland Island, from designs by Wyatt, a mansion which he styled Pennsylvania Castle. He was lieutenant-colonel of the 1st (Eton) troop of the 1st (South) regiment of the Royal Bucks yeomanry and commandant of the royal Portland legion. The publication of an anonymous poem called 'Marriage,' in the 'Monthly Magazine,' in the summer of 1815, led Penn to organise in 1817 a 'matrimonial society,' which had for its object an improvement in the domestic life of married persons. Extending its aims to other schemes of domestic utility, the society changed its name in May to that of the Outinian Society. During the summer of 1818 meetings of the society took place at Penn's house, 10 New Street, Spring Gardens, and later at Stoke Park. Penn, who acted as president, edited the works of the society for publication. The 'Second Lecture' appeared in 1819, the 'General Address of the Outinian Lecturer' in 1822, 'Records of the Origin and Proceedings of the Outinian Society' in 1822, 'A Proposal of the Outinian Society' in 1823 (written by Penn), and the 'Seventh Outinian Lecture' in 1823. The society was still existing in 1825.

Penn died at Stoke Park on 21 June 1834, and was succeeded in his estates there and at Portland by his brother Granville [q. v.] He was unmarried. A drawing by Tendi, from a bust of him by Deare, was engraved by L. Schiavonetti, and published in 1801. Two portraits of him in oils are at Pennsylvania Castle: one of these, in yeomanry uniform, painted by Sir W. Beechey, R.R.A., was engraved by R. Dunkerton, and published in 1809.

His chief published works are: 1. 'The Battle of Eddington, or British Liberty,' London, 1792, 1796, 1832 (anon.), which was performed at Sadler's Wells Theatre on 11 Oct. 1832, at Windsor on 8 and 13 Jan. 1824, at Covent Garden on 19 July 1824, and at the Haymarket for a night or two privately. 2. 'Poems,' London, 1794 (anon.), printed at the private press at Stoke Park. 3. 'Letters on the Drama,' London, 1796 (anon.) 4. 'Critical, Poetical, and Dramatic Works,' London, 1797. 5. 'A timely Appeal to the Common Sense of the People of Great Britain,' London, 1798. 6. 'Further Thoughts on the Present State of Public Opinion,' London, 1800. 7. 'Poems, consisting of original Works, Imitations, and Translations,' London, 1801, 1802. 8. 'Observations in illustration of Virgil's Fourth Eclogue,' London, 1810. 9. 'Poems, being mostly reprints,' London, 1811. 10. 'Historical Account of Stoke Park,' London, 1813 (anon.) 11. 'Virgil's Fourth Eclogue, with notes' (selected from No. 8 above), Dublin, 1825.

[Gent. Mag. 1811 p. 37, 1834 pt. ii. pp. 650–651; Graduati Cantabr. p. 296; Official Lists of M.P.'s, pt. ii. p. 216; Penn's Account of Stoke Park, passim; Watson's Annals of Philadelphia and Pennsylvania, i. pp. 125–6; Proposal of the Outinian Society, passim; Genest's Account of the English Stage, ix. 260; Hutchins's Hist. of Dorset, ii. 817, 830.] B. P.

**PENN, JOHN** (1805–1878), engineer, son of John Penn (1770–1843), was born at Greenwich in 1805, and was apprenticed to his father.

The father was born near Taunton in 1770,

and was apprenticed to a millwright at Bridgwater. He afterwards found employment at Bristol, and removed to London about 1793. In 1800 he started in business as a millwright at Greenwich, where he soon acquired a reputation for the construction of flour-mills, in which he made many improvements, chief among them being the introduction of cast iron in place of wood as a material for the framing. The first treadmill, designed by William Cubitt, was made at Greenwich by Penn about 1817 [see CUBITT, WILLIAM]. He was employed about 1824 by Jacob Perkins in carrying out his plans for the construction of a steam gun. In 1825 he began to turn his attention to marine engines, for which he and his successors subsequently obtained a high reputation. The first marine engine made by him was that for the Ipswich, a steamer running from London to Norwich. In 1838 he directed his attention to the oscillating engine, patented by Aaron Manby in 1821 [see MANBY, AARON], which he greatly improved. A boat running between London and Richmond was fitted with a pair of oscillating engines in 1821, and a large number of engines of that type have since been employed. He was very fond of horticulture, and was the inventor of many improvements in conservatories and forcing-houses. He died suddenly, at Lewisham, on 6 June 1843.

The son, John Penn, became an excellent workman, and when quite young seems to have taken a leading part in his father's manufactory, so that it is sometimes difficult to determine the share of the father and son in the many improvements introduced by the firm of John Penn & Sons, as it eventually became. When scarcely of age he was entrusted with the construction of Perkins's steam gun, which he exhibited in action to the Duke of Wellington and a number of officers of the ordnance. Penn afterwards took the gun to Paris, where he remained for three months. Prior to the death of his father he had practically assumed charge of the manufactory, and in 1844 he fitted the admiralty yacht Black Eagle with the improved oscillating engines mentioned above, which were afterwards fitted in warships. The introduction of the screw-propeller brought a large increase in business, and up to the time of Penn's death the firm had engined 735 vessels, including many line-of-battle ships. His method of lining the sea-bearings of screw-propellers with lignum-vitæ, patented in 1854 (No. 2114), was of the greatest importance, and is in constant use at the present time.

He was elected associate of the Institution of Civil Engineers in 1826, member in 1845, and he was a member of the council from 1853 to 1856. He was president of the Institution of Mechanical Engineers in 1858–1859, and again in 1867–8. He contributed several papers to the 'Proceedings' of the last-named society. In 1859 he was elected fellow of the Royal Society.

He retired from business in 1875, and died at the Cedars, Lee, Kent, on 23 Sept. 1878. Penn married, in 1847, Ellen, daughter of William English of Enfield. His eldest son John is M.P. for Lewisham.

[Proceedings of the Institution of Civil Engineers, iii. 13, lix. 298; Engineer, 27 Sept. 1878, pp. 229, 242; Engineering, 11 Oct. 1878, p. 300.] R. B. P.

PENN, RICHARD (1736–1811), colonist, second son of Richard Penn (*d.* 1771), by his wife Hannah, daughter of Richard Lardner, M.D., was born in 1736. William Penn, the founder of Pennsylvania, was his grandfather, and John Penn (1729–1795) [q. v.] his elder brother. In 1771 he was appointed by his uncle, Thomas Penn [q. v.], and his father, two of the first proprietaries of Pennsylvania, to be deputy-governor of the province during the absence of his brother John in England. He arrived in Philadelphia on 16 Oct. 1771, and occupied the post until the return of John in August 1773. His care of the commercial interests of the province, and his conciliatory manner with the Indians, made him popular. He returned to England in 1775, carrying with him a petition from congress, which was laid before the House of Lords on 7 Nov. 1775. Penn was also examined before them as to the wish of the colonies for independency (*Mass. Hist. Soc. Coll.* ii. 58). On 9 April 1784 he was elected member of parliament for the borough of Appleby, Westmoreland, and represented it until 20 Dec. 1790, when he was returned for Haslemere, Surrey. From 1796 until 1802 he sat for the city of Lancaster, and in the latter year was again chosen for Haslemere. He died at his house at Richmond on 27 May 1811.

Penn married Mary, daughter of William Masters of Philadelphia, about 1775; by her he had two daughters, and the two sons mentioned below.

His elder son, WILLIAM PENN (1776–1845), entered St. John's College, Cambridge, but left without a degree. He published anonymously, when only seventeen, 'Vindiciæ Britannicæ: being Strictures on' Gilbert Wakefield's 'Spirit of Christianity,' London, 1794, 8vo. Penn issued an 'Appendix to Vindiciæ Britannicæ: in answer to

the Calumnies of the "Analytical Review,"' London, 1794, 8vo. He wrote verse and prose for the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' under the signature of the Rajah of Vaneplysia (an anagram of Pennsylvania), and for the 'Anti-Jacobin.' But extravagance and conviviality ruined his prospects. The Prince of Wales (afterwards George IV) said of him that he was a pen often 'cut' (i.e. drunk) but never mended. After passing much of his time in the debtors' prison, he died in Nelson Square, Southwark, on 17 Sept. 1845. He was buried in the church of St. Mary Redcliffe, Bristol, beside his great-great-grandfather, Admiral Sir William Penn [q. v.]

The younger son, Richard Penn (1784–1863), entered the colonial office. A cipher which he arranged for use in despatches is illustrated in his pamphlet 'On a New Mode of Secret Writing,' 1829. He possessed a quaint humour, and wrote 'Maxims and Hints for an Angler, and Miseries of Fishing,' illustrated by Sir Francis Chantrey [q. v.], London, 1833, to which is added 'Maxims and Hints for a Chess Player,' with portrait-caricatures of the author and Sir Francis, by the latter (*Quarterly Review*, lxxxv. 92 *n.*) An enlarged edition was published in 1839, and another, containing 'Maxims and Hints on Shooting,' appeared in 1855. Penn was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on 18 Nov. 1824. He died, unmarried, at Richmond, Surrey, on 21 April 1863 (*Gent. Mag.* 1863, pt. i. p. 800). A portrait, by E. W. Eddis, was engraved in 1834 by M. Ganci.

[Gent. Mag. 1811 pt. i. p. 675, 1845 pt. ii. p. 535; manuscript note in Brit. Mus. copy of Vindiciæ; Colonial Records, ix. 783, x. 91; Watson's Annals, p. 125; Return of Members of Parliament, ii. 183, 194, 204, 222; Pennsylvania Register, ed. Hazard, ii. 26; Minutes of the Provincial Council, ix. 780; Gordon's Hist. of Pennsylvania, 13, 474; Hist. MSS. Comm. 5th Rep. pp. 220, 225; Coleman's Pedigree of the Penn Family; Pennsylvania Magazine, v. 5, 197, 198.] C. F. S.

**PENN, THOMAS** (1702–1775), second son of William Penn [q. v.], founder of Pennsylvania, by his second wife, Hannah Callowhill of Bristol, was born at Kensington on 8 March 1702, during his parents' visit to England. His elder brother John (who was born in Philadelphia in 1699, and was buried at Jordans, Chalfont St. Giles, 5 Nov. 1746), a younger brother, Richard (*d.* 1771), and himself succeeded their father, in 1718, as hereditary proprietors of the province. Thomas landed at Chester, New Jersey, on 11 Aug. 1732, and on the following day was escorted by the governor, Patrick Gordon, and a large company of the colonists to Philadelphia, where an address of welcome was presented by the recorder (*Minutes of the Provincial Council*, iii. 433). He attended a conference with the Indians shortly after, received their presents, and renewed treaties, and was present at most of the council meetings until 19 Sept. 1734. At that date John Penn, eldest proprietary, arrived from England, and remained until September 1735.

In 1736, 1738, 1739, Thomas presided at councils, and on 1 Aug. 1740 held another conference with the Indians in the quaker meeting-house, Philadelphia. On 9 July 1747 he announced to them his brother John's death in the preceding winter, 1746. About August 1747 Thomas returned to London, but kept up an active correspondence with the council (*Minutes*, vols. iv. v. vi.) At the time of the war with the French, 1755, he contributed a sum of 5,000*l.* to the relief of the province (*ib.* vi. 730, 731). But the proprietary estates had enormously increased in value, and were exempted from taxation. Consequently a prolonged dispute arose between the assembly and the proprietaries. Benjamin Franklin was sent to England as agent for the colony, and presented to Thomas Penn, on 27 Aug. 1757, 'Heads of Complaint' (*ib.* vii. 276), the chief complaint being of the restraint on the governor's powers by non-resident proprietors. Protracted litigation also took place respecting the boundary-line of Maryland in the peninsula between Delaware and Chesapeake bays, which was settled by an agreement, dated 14 July 1760, between Frederick, lord Baltimore, and Thomas and Richard Penn (*Pennsylvania Archives*, iv. 1–36).

Eventually the estates of Thomas, or three-fourths of the whole interest, with the right to nominate the governor, were purchased by the state (Janney, *Life of Penn*, p. 549). In England he secured an estate at Stoke Pogis, Buckinghamshire, and, dying in 1775, was buried in the church there. He married, in 1751, Lady Juliana Fermor, daughter of the Earl of Pomfret, and had issue, besides three sons who died young, John (1760–1834) [q. v.], Granville [q. v.], and three daughters, of whom Sophia Margaret Juliana, the youngest, married William Stuart, D.D., archbishop of Armagh, and died in 1847.

Portraits of Penn and his wife, both by P. Vandyck, are in the possession of the Earl of Ranfurly. 'The General Address of the Outinian Lecturer to his Auditors,' London, 1822, contains portraits of Thomas and Lady Juliana Penn, engraved by C. Turner. The former was also painted by Davis in 1751, engraved by D. Martin 1766; the latter by

Charles Read, 1751, engraved by R. Pranker (cf. BROMLEY). Both these portraits are now at Pennsylvania Castle, Portland Island, Dorset.

[Authorities given; Watson's Annals of Philadelphia, i. 116, 123; Gordon's Hist. of Pennsylvania, pp. 236, 264, 323; Chaloner Smith's Portraits, p. 918; Cornell's Hist. of Pennsylvania, pp. 150, 151.] C. F. S.

**PENN**, SIR WILLIAM (1621–1670), admiral and general at sea, baptised in the church of St. Thomas in Bristol on 23 April 1621, was the second son of Giles Penn, a merchant and sea-captain trading to the Mediterranean, a younger son of a family settled for many generations at Minety in Gloucestershire. In early boyhood he served under his father, and afterwards on board the king's ships, being—it is stated on his monument—a captain at the age of twenty-one. There is, however, no distinct record of his having any command in the navy before 1644, when he was appointed to the Fellowship of 28 guns, one of the Irish fleet in the service of the parliament, under the command of Captain Richard Swanley [q. v.] On 14 April 1648 he was suddenly superseded from his command, and ordered to be 'brought up in safe custody,' on suspicion, it would seem, of his being engaged in the king's interest. The suspicion passed away, and a month later he was in the Assurance as rear-admiral of the Irish fleet, and in 1649 in the Lion as vice-admiral, but always on the same service, which during the civil war was one of extreme importance, involving the defence of the western ports of England and Wales, as well as of the protestant interests in Ireland. Through 1650 he seems to have been at Deptford, superintending the building and fitting out of a new ship, of 250 men and 52 guns, which was launched in the autumn as the Fairfax. In November he received a commission to command the Fairfax, and also a squadron of eight ships on a cruise to the Azores and in the Mediterranean. As, however, the Fairfax was not ready, he sailed in the Centurion, and towards the end of January 1651 was joined by Lawson in the Fairfax, to which he then moved, and after cruising for some weeks between the Azores, Lisbon, and Cadiz, passed through the Straits on 29 March, with instructions to seek out Prince Rupert, and destroy him and his adherents.

In this search he ranged through the western basin of the Mediterranean, along the coast of Spain, touching at Minorca and Iviça, then south to the African coast, north again, along the coasts of Sardinia and Corsica to Leghorn, thence to Trapani and across to Biserta, thence to Algiers and Gibraltar, where, having intelligence that Rupert had gone to the Azores, he anchored on 9 Sept. to await his return. And so, for the next four months, he kept a close watch on the Straits, sometimes at anchor, more commonly under way, his ships covering the whole space, so that nothing could enter or leave the Mediterranean without his knowledge. By the end of the year reports reached him from different quarters that several of Rupert's ships had been lost, and his squadron completely broken up; and in February he sailed for England. On 18 March he landed at Falmouth, when he noted in his journal that he had not put foot on land since his departure from Falmouth 'last December was twelve months.'

On 1 April he anchored in the Downs. The war with the Dutch was on the point of breaking out, and on 19 May 1652 Penn was appointed captain of the Triumph, and vice-admiral of the fleet under General Robert Blake [q. v.] In June he moved into the James of 60 guns, in which he was with Blake during the summer, and in the action near the Kentish Knock on 28 Sept. It is probable that he was afterwards in command of the squadron sent north for the protection of the Newcastle colliers, and that he was thus absent from the unfortunate action near Dungeness on 30 Nov. He seems, however, to have rejoined Blake shortly after; and on 25 Jan. 1653 he was again appointed captain of the Speaker and vice-admiral of the fleet. In that capacity he would, in ordinary course, have had command of the white squadron; but when the fleet was collected, Monck took command of the white squadron, Blake and Deane being together in command of the red. It was thus that, in the battle off Portland on 18 Feb., Penn commanded the blue squadron, and, by tacking to the support of the red squadron, rescued Blake from the effects of his blundering gallantry, and redeemed the fortune of the day.

Penn afterwards moved into the James, and in April was sent north for the protection of the Newcastle trade. By May he was again with the fleet, and this time in command of the white squadron, the generals Monck and Deane being together in command of the red. He had thus a very important share in the victory of 2–3 June, and again in that of 29–31 July, when Tromp was killed. On 6 Aug. Penn was ordered a gold chain of the value of 100*l.*, together with the large medal; on 2 Dec. he was appointed one of the generals of the fleet, jointly with Blake, Monck, and Disbrowe; and on the 8th

one of the 'commissioners for ordering and managing the affairs of the admiralty and navy.'

So long as the war with Holland lasted Penn had acquiesced in Cromwell's usurpation of the supreme power. But when peace was happily concluded, he resolved to address the legitimate sovereign; and in the summer of 1654 wrote to the king, offering the services of the fleet about to be placed under his command, if he could name any port in which it might assemble. Charles could not then dispose of any such port, and directed him to proceed on his voyage and wait for a more favourable opportunity (Penn, ii. 14). On 9 Oct. he was formally appointed general and commander-in-chief of the fleet designed and prepared for America, and was directed, in conjunction with General Robert Venables [q. v.], in command of the troops embarked in the fleet, 'to assault the Spaniard in the West Indies,' either in St. Domingo, Porto Rico, Cartagena, or in such other places as, after consultation with those 'who have a particular knowledge of those parts,' shall be judged more reasonable. The fleet sailed from Spithead on 25 Dec. 1654, and arrived at Barbados on 29 Jan. 1655. There they remained for two months, regulating the affairs of the island, enlisting additional men as soldiers, and forming a regiment of seamen, of which the vice-admiral, William Goodsonn [q. v.], was appointed colonel. The expedition sailed from Barbados on 31 March, and, after touching at Antigua, Montserrat, Nevis, and St. Christopher's, came on 13 April in sight of the city of St. Domingo, and landed about thirty miles to the westward of it. After a delay of ten days the army, numbering in all about seven thousand men, marched against the city, and on the 25th was 'shamefully repulsed.' With that, however, Penn seems to have had nothing to do. He had brought the soldiers to the landing-place, had reinforced them with a regiment of seamen one thousand strong, and had kept them supplied with provisions and military stores. For the delay, the repulse, and the determination to re-embark, Venables and his staff were alone responsible; and though a persistent attempt was afterwards made to throw the blame on Penn, and the want of cordial co-operation, which has led to much misrepresentation (Burchett, *Transactions at Sea*, p. 392), the original letter of Gregory Butler (Penn, ii. 50), one of the commissioners, and the 'Journal of the Swiftsure' (*ib.* ii. 88), conclusively disprove the injurious statements.

On 3 May the fleet sailed from Hispaniola, and on the 10th entered the harbour of Jamaica, Penn leading in the Swiftsure; for after the miscarriage of Hispaniola he was heard to say 'he would not trust the army with the attempt if he could come near with his ships.' The troops landed the same night, and the next day took possession of the town without opposition. On the 17th the whole island surrendered, and Penn, after waiting a month for the establishment of order, sailed for England on 27 June with the principal part of the fleet, leaving the command of the remainder with Goodsonn. On 31 Aug. he arrived at Spithead, on 3 Sept. was ordered to take the ships round to Chatham, and on the 11th to attend the council the next day. He accordingly attended on the 8th, delivered a narrative of the proceedings of the fleet, and was examined touching its state and condition and the natural qualities of Jamaica (Thurloe, iv. 28). On the 20th, having examined Venables, who had also returned to England, the council advised that they should both be committed to the Tower, which was done at once.

The cause of this arrest has never been made clear. On the face of it, it was for returning home without leave. It has been said that they were sent out expressly to capture Hispaniola and had not done so. But their instructions show that this was not the case. It has been said that Cromwell was furious at a comparatively small island being the only result of a costly expedition; but this is improbable, for his proclamation regarding it shows that he was well aware of its value. Granville Penn thinks that the Protector had information of Penn's having written to the king, but the arrest was made on the advice of the council, who certainly had no such information, and it does not appear that Venables had made any overtures. It is, perhaps, most likely that the council gathered from their evidence that the relations between them had not been so cordial as the good of the service demanded, and judged that a short imprisonment would correct the bitterness of their tempers. It was only for a few weeks, and on Penn's making an abject submission (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. p. 396) he was released on 25 Oct., and retired to the estate in Munster, which had been conferred on him in 1653, and there he remained in secret correspondence with the royalists until the eve of the Restoration.

In May 1660 he was with Mountagu in the Naseby at Scheveling (Pepys, 22 May), though in what capacity is not apparent. That he was not a mere passenger, as is supposed by Granville Penn, is clear from

the fact that he received an advance of 100*l.* for his service (PENN, ii. 221); but it is not known what the service was. On 23 May, when the king came on board the Naseby and changed her name to Royal Charles, he knighted Penn, who was afterwards appointed a commissioner of the navy. In this capacity he was closely associated with Pepys, whose 'Diary' overflows with terms of vituperation. According to this, Penn was 'a rogue,' 'a counterfeit rogue,' 'a cunning rogue,' 'a very cowardly rogue,' 'a mean rogue,' 'a hypocritical rogue,' 'a coward,' 'a coxcomb,' 'a very villain,' 'the falsest rascal,' 'as false a fellow as ever was born,' all which, when read by the light of other entries, would seem to mean that Penn, as Pepys's official superior, had sometimes to give him orders, sometimes, perhaps, to find fault with him; sometimes, it may be, to interfere inconveniently with some little scheme for Pepys's pecuniary advantage (cf. PEPYS, 17 March 1666). We must believe that there was no affection between the two; but Pepys kept his expressions of disgust for the 'Diary,' and was always ready to dine with Penn or to enter into a speculation in partnership with him (*ib.* 26, 29 Sept. 1666).

On 10 March 1665 Penn obtained a grant from the king confirming him in the possession of his Irish estates, and on the 24th he accompanied the Duke of York to the fleet, and served with him during the campaign, on board the Royal Charles, with the title of Great Captain Commander, which afterwards became first captain, and, still later, captain of the fleet. There is, however, this difference, that no first captain or captain of the fleet has ever been an officer of the high rank that Penn had held under the Commonwealth. On the other hand, no other commander-in-chief has had the high rank of the Duke of York, at once lord high admiral and next in succession to the crown; and as James was without any knowledge or experience of the sea, it may well have been judged fitting to assign him the most experienced officer of rank as his chief of the staff. In this way there can be little doubt that Penn's share in the conduct of the fleet was exceptionally great, and that the code of instructions then issued, and long known as 'The Duke of York's Sailing and Fighting Instructions,' were virtually, if not absolutely, drawn up by him.

It was in this capacity that Penn was present in the battle off Lowestoft on 3 June. He is said to have been suffering at the time from a severe attack of gout, and to have gone to bed in the evening quite exhausted with the labour and excitement of the day. He was thus ignorant, till afterwards, of the orders to bring to, which were given or brought to Harman by Brouncker, although necessarily he did not escape the lash of public opinion. Officially he was held guiltless; but when the Duke of York was relieved from the command, Penn came on shore with him, and was not again employed afloat, though he continued at the navy office till his death on 16 Sept. 1670. His remains were taken to Bristol and buried there in the church of St. Mary Redcliffe, 'where his flags and trophies are still carefully preserved, and where his monument records briefly and chronologically the dates of his several commissions and appointments, both under the parliament and under the king.' So wrote Granville Penn sixty years ago. The flags are still there, but defaced by time and damp; one of them seems to be charged with Penn's arms (PENN, ii. 567–8).

Penn married, about 1639, Margaret, daughter of John or Hans Jasper of Rotterdam—an 'old Dutchwoman,' Pepys calls her—and by her had two sons, the elder of whom, William, the founder of Pennsylvania, is separately noticed; and a daughter Margaret, who is frequently mentioned by Pepys. It was reported that on her marriage to Anthony Lowther, her father gave her a portion of 15,000*l.* Pepys says that he gave her only 4,000*l.* The marriage was very quiet—'no friends but two or three relations of his and hers; borrowed many things of my kitchen for dressing their dinner . . . no music in the morning to call up our new-married people, which is very mean, methinks' (PEPYS, 15, 16 Feb. 1667). Penn's meanness is the subject of frequent remark in the 'Diary.' But compared with the opportunities he had had both under the Commonwealth and under the corrupt administration of Charles II, Penn was a poor man, and may be supposed to have exercised a rigid, perhaps narrow, economy, anxious to increase his estate in view of a promised peerage, the hope of which was frustrated by his son's becoming a quaker. Notwithstanding his economy, Penn is described by Pepys as a jovial companion, fond of his glass and telling a good story or singing a song, quite unrestrained by any puritanical scruples. According to one of his old shipmates, he was a mild-spoken man, fair-haired, of a comely round visage (PENN, ii. 616). His portrait by Lely is in the Painted Hall at Greenwich.

[The principal authority for the Life of Penn is Granville Penn's Memorials of the professional Life and Times of Sir William Penn—a valuable but crude compilation of materials rather than a Life. Besides this, Hepworth

Dixon's Life of William Penn; Pepys's Diary; Cal. State Papers, Dom. The Penn MSS. (Sloane 3232) have no biographical interest.]

J. K. L.

PENN, WILLIAM (1644–1718), quaker and founder of Pennsylvania, son of Admiral Sir William Penn [q. v.], by his wife Margaret, daughter of John Jasper, merchant, of Rotterdam, was born in the liberty of the Tower, London, on 14 Oct. 1644 (*Notes and Queries*, 3rd ser. ii. 424). He was brought up at Wanstead, Essex, then a stronghold of puritanism, going daily to Harsnet's free school in the neighbouring village of Chigwell. He continued his studies under a private tutor in his father's town house on Tower Hill, and at Christ Church, Oxford, where he matriculated on 26 Oct. 1660 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.*) He had then enough knowledge of the classics to contribute some tolerable elegiacs to the 'Epicedia' published on occasion of the death of Henry, duke of Gloucester (1660).

From early boyhood Penn united a taste for athletic sports with a strong bent towards mystical pietism. At Oxford he corresponded with Dr. John Owen [q. v.], and listened to the discourses of the quaker Thomas Loe. He was sent down for nonconformity in October 1661. On his return home his father, the admiral, finding other methods powerless to reclaim him, sent him abroad to divert his mind. He visited Paris, was presented to Louis XIV, and mixed for a time in the brilliant society of the court. Among the English residents he made friends with Robert Spencer (afterwards second Earl of Sunderland), and Dorothy, sister of Algernon Sidney. While there he gave signal proof of courage, skill in fence, and magnanimity. On his way to his lodgings one night he was attacked by a bravo, who, sword in hand, demanded satisfaction for some imaginary insult. Penn drew, and, after a few passes, disarmed his antagonist and gave him his life.

Tired of court gaieties, Penn left Paris, and, after studying for a while under Moyse Amyraut, an eclectic theologian of the French reformed church at Saumur, crossed the Alps, and was at Turin in 1664, when he was summoned home by his father. He returned quite a 'modish person' (Pepys, *Diary*, 26 Aug. 1664), saw a little service in the Dutch war, and was admitted a student at Lincoln's Inn on 7 Feb. 1664–5 (*Lincoln's Inn Reg.*) In the autumn of this year he went to Dublin, and was presented at the viceregal court. In the following summer he served with distinction under Lord Arran in the suppression of a mutiny at Carrickfergus, and was offered a company of foot by the viceroy [Butler, James, twelfth Earl and first Duke of Ormonde]. He was eager to accept, but his father would not consent; and he became instead victualler of the squadron lying off Kinsale, where, by a curious coincidence, which shows how perilous inferences founded on identity of name, time, and place, even when supported by similarity of occupation, may sometimes be, another William Penn held the office of clerk of the cheque. While thus engaged Penn resided at his father's seat, Shannagarry Castle. He had not entirely lost his interest in the quakers, and during a visit to Cork attended one of their meetings, at which his old friend Thomas Loe preached on the faith which overcomes the world. He was so impressed that he became a regular attendant. On 3 Sept. 1667 he ejected a soldier from the conventicle for causing a disturbance. The soldier returned, attended by officers of justice, who arrested the worshippers on the charge of holding a tumultuous assembly. In deference to his rank, the mayor offered Penn his liberty on giving security for his good behaviour. Penn, however, disputed the magistrate's jurisdiction, and went to gaol with the rest, but soon procured his release by a letter to the president of Munster, Roger Boyle, earl of Orrery [q. v.] The affair got wind, the world laughed, and the admiral recalled Penn to London. On his return he still wore the dress belonging to his rank, but declined to take his hat off in presence of his social superiors. The admiral stipulated that at least he would so far comply with usage as to be uncovered in his own presence and that of the king and the Duke of York. Penn, however, stood firm; in the end the admiral gave way, and Penn became a quaker complete in creed, costume, and conduct.

He expounded the new gospel in a tract entitled 'Truth Exalted,' London, 1668, 4to, began to preach, and became intimate with Isaac Penington (1616–1679) [q. v.], Thomas Ellwood [q. v.], and George Fox [q. v.] A public disputation with the presbyterian Thomas Vincent [q. v.] occasioned the composition of his once celebrated 'Sandy Foundation Shaken,' in which he assailed the Athanasian doctrine of the Trinity, the Anselmian rationale of the atonement, and the Calvinistic theory of justification (London, 1668, 4to). Its publication without license was visited by his committal to the Tower under a warrant dated 12 Dec. 1668. There he wrote 'No Cross no Crown' (London, 1669, 4to), an eloquent and learned dissertation upon the Christian duty of self-sacrifice,

which has been frequently reprinted. His confinement was close, and he was told he must recant or remain a prisoner for life. Stillingfleet was sent to him (January 1668–9) to bring him, if possible, by argument to the required compliance. He remained inflexible. 'The Tower,' he said, 'is to me the worst argument in the world. My prison shall be my grave before I will budge a jot.' In the same strain he wrote, on 19 June 1669, to Lord Arlington, then secretary of state, but besought him to use his intercession with the king (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1668–9, p. 372). He also wrote a defence of the obnoxious work, entitled 'Innocency with her open Face,' in which, without retracting anything, he avowed a belief in the eternal deity of Christ. Towards the end of July 1669 his father obtained his release through the mediation of the Duke of York. The rest of the year and the first half of the next Penn spent in Ireland, holding meetings of quakers, visiting them in gaol, and procuring the release of not a few of them. He returned to London to find the quaker meeting-house in Gracechurch Street closed under the Conventicle Act, and for addressing the congregation in the open air was arrested with William Mead [q. v.], and committed to Newgate (14 Aug. 1670). They were tried at the Old Bailey on 1–5 Sept., the case being laid at common law for conspiring to address and addressing a tumultuous assembly. They pleaded not guilty, disputing the legality of the indictment, and, notwithstanding great pressure put by the bench upon the jury, were ultimately acquitted, but went to gaol for default in payment of a fine imposed upon them for not taking their hats off in court. The jury were also committed to prison [see Vaughan, John, 1603–1674]. The admiral, who had forgiven him his eccentricities, paid Penn's fine, and on his deathbed commended him to the favour of the Duke of York. He renewed his acquaintance with Newgate on 5 Feb. 1670–1, having been arrested on a charge, which broke down, of infringing the Conventicle Act, but was ultimately committed for refusing to take the oath of allegiance. Released after six months' incarceration, Penn travelled in Holland and Germany, and made the acquaintance of De Labadie and Dr. Hasbert of Embden, but was back in England before the end of the year (1671).

Penn was now master of an income of 1,500*l.* a year, and established himself as a country gentleman at Basing House, Rickmansworth, Hertfordshire, whence in 1677 he removed to Warminghurst, Sussex. Of the declaration of indulgence issued on 15 March 1671–2 he gladly availed himself to make preaching tours; on its withdrawal on 7 March 1672–3 he appealed by letter to the king, and by pamphlets to the public, on behalf of the sufferers by the revival of persecution. He also used his influence with the Duke of York to procure the release of George Fox [q. v.] from Worcester Castle. The contemporaneous suffering of the quakers in Germany and Holland drew from him a catholic epistle of consolation and exhortation. About the same time he plunged into theological controversy with the baptist Thomas Hicks, the independent John Faldo [q. v.], the eccentric Lodowicke Muggleton [q. v.], John Reeve, and other gospellers, travelled with George Whitehead in the western counties, and held a public disputation with Richard Baxter [q. v.] at Rickmansworth, 'on order' and the 'light within' (1675). In 1676 he addressed a hortatory epistle to the Princess Elizabeth, daughter of Frederick V, prince palatine of the Rhine, and granddaughter of James I, whom, in the course of an evangelistic tour on the right bank of the Rhine, he visited in the following summer at Herford, Westphalia (cf. *Allg. Deutsche Biogr.* 'Elizabeth Pfalzgräfin bei Rhein'). At this date quakers were confounded with catholics, and harassed by prosecutions under the law (3 Jac. I, c. 4, s. 6) which subjected the latter to fines of 20*l.* a month, or the confiscation of two-thirds of their estates. For redress of this grievance Penn presented petitions to parliament, and on 22 March 1677–8 was heard before a committee of the House of Commons, and procured the insertion of a quaker relief clause in the pending bill to secure the protestant religion; but as that bill lapsed in the House of Lords on the subsequent prorogation, the society remained exposed to the full force of the anti-catholic fanaticism evoked by the fictitious revelations of Titus Oates [q. v.] Penn had probably no belief in the alleged plot, and he sought to recall the public mind to weightier matters by an 'Address to Protestants of all Persuasions upon the Present Conjuncture, more especially to the Magistracy and Clergy, for the Promotion of Virtue and Charity,' 1679, 4to. On the dissolution he worked hard to secure the return of Algernon Sidney [q. v.] to parliament. At the same time he edited some volumes of statistics of the sufferings of the quakers, and began to turn his thoughts seriously towards America, with which country he had for some time had relations.

Penn had taken a principal share in the liquidation of the affairs of Edward Byllinge, joint proprietor with Sir George Carteret [q.v.]

of the province of New Jersey, under a grant from the Duke of York. On the partition of the province in 1676 he became one of the trustees of the western half, and largely settled it with quakers. For this colony of West New Jersey, as it was called, he had framed a constitution on the largest possible basis of civil and religious liberty. He had also formed an association which, in 1680, purchased the neighbouring settlement of East New Jersey from the representatives of Sir George Carteret, and on 14 March 1681–2 he obtained a fresh grant of the colony from the Duke of York. A more important acquisition was a grant by letters patent, dated 4 March 1680–1 (in discharge of a crown debt of nearly 16,000*l.*, due to him as the representative of his father), of an extensive tract of country to the west of the Delaware, which, in honour of the admiral, was named the province of Pensilvania (so the word is spelled in the charter). The land was vested in Penn in fee simple, subject to the quit rent of two beaver-skins and a fifth part of its gold and silver ore. By deeds dated 21 and 24 Aug. 1682 the Duke of York confirmed the letters patent, and added to the province (on somewhat more onerous terms) the contiguous southern territories, which eventually became the state of Delaware. As proprietary and governor of the province and the adjacent 'territories,' Penn was invested by the charter not merely with executive but also with legislative power, subject to the assent of the 'freemen' and the control of the privy council. He lost no time in advertising the advantages of his acquisition (see his *Account of the Province of Pennsilvania*, London, 1681, fol.), formed, May 1682, a 'Free Society of Traders of Pennsylvania,' and framed, in concert with Algernon Sidney, a constitution and code of laws for the colony, of which the following were the salient features: (1) the governor was to exercise his legislative and executive powers with the advice and consent of a provincial council chosen by ballot by the freemen (i.e. persons professing the Christian religion, and holding and cultivating a certain minimum of land or upwards, or paying scot and lot); (2) the provincial council was to be elected in the first instance in thirds of twenty-four members each, one-third for three years, one-third for two years, one-third for one year, and was to be perpetually maintained at the complement of seventy-two members by the annual election of one-third for three years; (3) the governor was to preside in the council with a treble vote; (4) a general assembly, not exceeding two hundred members, chosen by the freemen annually by ballot, was to have the right of approving or rejecting bills passed by the council, but not of initiating or amending legislation; (5) judges, treasurers, and masters of the rolls were to be nominated by the governor in council; sheriffs, justices of the peace, and coroners by the governor in general assembly; (6) the courts were to be open to all without counsel or attorney, pleadings were to be concise and in English, all cases to be tried by jury, fees to be moderate, and oaths to be dispensed with; (7) real property was to be liable for debts, conveyances to be registered, and seven years' possession to give indefeasible title; (8) prisons were to be provided with workshops; (9) all modes of religious worship compatible with monotheism and Christian morality were to be tolerated; (10) the constitution and code were to be unalterable without the consent of the governor and six-sevenths of the provincial council and general assembly.

Preceded by his deputy, William Markham, and several emigrant ships, Penn sailed for America early in September 1682, and landed at Newcastle on the Delaware towards the end of the following month. Having taken formal possession of the province, he marked out, on 8 Nov., at the confluence of the Schuylkill and Delaware rivers, the site of the future city of Philadelphia. In the course of the same month he visited East and West New Jersey and New York, and most probably met the chiefs of the Lenni Lenape Indians, whom he had previously conciliated by letter, under an elm-tree at Shakamaxon (afterwards Kensington), and concluded with them the treaty of amity which Voltaire (*Dict. Phil.* 'Quaker') described as the only league of the kind which was neither sworn to nor broken. Unfortunately, the point of the epigram is blunted by the fact, of which its author was doubtless ignorant, that the Indians with whom Penn negotiated were, at the date of the treaty, subject to the 'Five Nations,' by whom they had been completely disarmed. The official record of this treaty appears to be now lost, and, in consequence, the tradition that it made good by purchase Penn's title to the soil remains no more than a tradition. The first general assembly met at Chester on 4 Dec., and in the course of a few days passed Penn's constitution and code into law, with some slight modifications and the addition of penal clauses against profane swearing, blasphemy, adultery, intemperance, and other forms of vice, playgoing, card-playing, and other 'evil sports and games.' Notwithstanding its puritanic tinge, the 'Great Law,' as the revised code was en-

titled, was on the whole remarkable for its leniency, murder alone being treated as a capital offence. During 1683 the population of the colony was largely increased by a steady influx of immigrants from Germany, Holland, and Scandinavia, as well as the British Isles. Penn was fully occupied with the work of settling the newcomers on the land, surveying its extent and resources, and delimiting its frontier. A dispute with Lord Baltimore about the boundary on the Maryland side compelled him to return to England in 1684 to solicit its adjustment by the committee of trade and plantations. The decision of the committee was eventually in Penn's favour, but was not given until October 1685.

Penn hailed James II's accession to the throne with high hopes. James had been his father's friend, and in a certain sense his own guardian. He believed him to be sincerely averse to religious persecution, and dreamed that under his auspices a golden age of liberty and justice might be inaugurated. The king, from motives of policy, flattered his hopes. He resided first at Holland House, then at Windsor, was frequently closeted for hours with James, was denounced as a catholic or even a jesuit by some, and courted as a royal favourite by others. Though he characterised the proscription which followed the suppression of the western rebellion as a 'run of barbarous cruelty,' he continued to believe in James's clemency, throwing all the blame on Jeffreys and the priests. From this it is evident that, in denying to him 'strong sense,' Macaulay is strictly within the mark. He was, in fact, a sanguine optimist, destitute of the penetration into human nature and capacity for determining the limits of the ideal and the practicable which mark the statesman. On the other hand, Macaulay's statement that he accepted the odious office of extorting from the families of 'the Taunton Maids' the ransom assigned by the queen to her maids of honour rests on no better evidence than a letter from the Earl of Sunderland to a certain 'Mr. Penne,' who is most probably to be identified with one George Penne, a hanger-on at Whitehall, who is known to have been concerned in a similar transaction (cf. Paget's *New Examen* and Roberts's *Life of Monmouth*. The non-identity of 'Mr. Penne' with William Penn was elaborately argued by W. E. Forster in the Preface to his edition of Clarkson's *Life of Penn*. Macaulay, however, refused to alter his original statement for reasons given at length in a note to the sixth edition of his *History*. Forster's Preface was twice separately reprinted, 1849 and 1850, under the title *William Penn and Thomas B. Macaulay*).

In March 1685–6 the king, probably at Penn's instance, made proclamation of pardon to all who were in prison for conscience' sake, whereby some twelve hundred quakers regained their liberty. About the same time, under the title 'A Persuasive to Moderation to Church Dissenters,' 1686, 4to, Penn published an argument for the immediate repeal of the penal laws. During an evangelistic tour in Holland in the summer Penn had several conferences with the Prince of Orange at the Hague, and found him favourable to a policy of toleration. The repeal of the Test Act, however, William declined to discuss, and Penn himself acknowledged its impolicy in the absence of some equivalent guarantee for the maintenance of the protestant religion. On his return to England he spread far and wide among the quaker churches the glad tidings of the new policy. He concurred, however, with them in recognising the inadequacy of the declaration of indulgence, and in accepting it as a mere preliminary to repeal, which he sought to commend to the nation at large in his 'Good Advice to the Church of England, Roman Catholick, and Protestant Dissenter,' London, 1687, 4to (cf. his *Works*, ed. 1726, i. 130–1, ii. 749 et seq., and *Mem. Hist. Soc. of Pennsylvania*, vol. iii. pt. ii. pp. 215 et seq.)

Macaulay's statement that he was employed in the attempted 'seduction' of the baptist minister, William Kiffin [q. v.], is diametrically opposed to the account of the matter given by Kiffin himself, from which it appears that Penn was but one among other courtiers through whom Kiffin voluntarily communicated to the king his desire to be excused the office thrust upon him, and heard in reply of the king's good intentions towards him (*Kiffin's Life*, ed. Orme, 1823, p. 85).

Equally untrustworthy is Macaulay's account of Penn's action in the contest between the fellows of Magdalen College, Oxford, about the headship of the house. According to Macaulay, Penn was employed to terrify, caress, or bribe the fellows into compliance with the royal mandate for the election of Dr. Samuel Parker, bishop of Oxford. The simple facts are as follows: Penn, on one of his evangelistic tours, happened to fall in with James II at Chester on 27 Aug. 1687, and afterwards attended him to Oxford. There he heard the case of the Magdalen men from their own lips on 4–5 Sept., and in their interest wrote to the king, characterising his mandate as 'a force on conscience,' inasmuch as the fellows

could not comply with it without breach of their oaths. He then left the city; nor had he any further dealings with the fellows until the following month. In the meantime it had transpired that a quo warranto was to issue against the college; and Dr. Bailey, one of the fellows, had received an anonymous letter urging compliance with the mandate on the absurd ground that a decision on the quo warranto adverse to the crown was a moral impossibility. Bailey had jumped to the conclusion that Penn was the writer of the letter, and had written to him exposing the badness of its law, but at the same time craving his mediation with the king. Penn disavowed the authorship of the letter; nor is there any reason for doubting his word. He consented to receive a deputation from the college at his house at Windsor, and accordingly Dr. Hough and others waited on him there on 9 Oct. They laid before him a written statement of their case, which he undertook to read to the king. He made no proposal by way of accommodation, but told the fellows frankly that, 'after so long a dispute,' they could not expect to be restored to the king's favour without making some concessions; that the church of England was not entitled to exclusive possession of the universities; that he supposed 'two or three colleges' would 'content the papists;' and that in the event of the death of the bishop of Oxford, Dr. Hough might succeed to his see (*Magdalen College and King James II*, documents edited by Rev. J. R. Bloxam, D.D., Oxf. Hist. Soc. 1886). It is evident that throughout this affair Penn's sympathies were divided. From the church of England he was further removed than from the church of Rome. 'I am a catholic,' he wrote to Tillotson, 'though not a Roman.' 'Our religions are like our hats,' he said to James: 'the only difference lies in the ornaments which have been added to thine.' He knew that Lord Baltimore's catholic colony of Maryland had been founded and administered on the principle of complete toleration of religious differences, while on both sides of the Atlantic the quakers had suffered at the hands of puritans and churchmen alike. He was passionately desirous that the policy of religious equality should at length have a fair trial in England. At the same time, he saw that the case of the fellows was very hard; and he sought to break unpleasant news to them as gently as possible, and even to console Dr. Hough for the certain loss of the headship by an airy vision of lawn sleeves.

Besides interceding for the Magdalen fellows, Penn endeavoured to procure the release of the seven bishops (*Mem. Hist. Soc. of Pennsylvania*, vol. iii. pt. ii.) Nevertheless, on the Revolution he was summoned (10 Dec. 1688) before the council as an adherent of the fugitive king. He had the courage to avow that James 'was always his friend and his father's friend, and that in gratitude he was the king's, and did ever as much as in him lay to influence him to his true interest.' At the same time he protested that 'he loved his country and the protestant religion above his life.' He was then held to bail in 6,000*l.* (discharged at the close of Easter term following). The substance of a letter of 'M. Pen,' containing news favourable to the designs of the Jacobites, is appended to one of D'Avaux's despatches to Louis XIV (see *Negotiations de M. le Comte d'Avaux en Irlande*, 1689–90, pp. 188–419). The style, however, is such as, even when allowance is made for translation and condensation, renders it hard to believe that the original was written by Penn, or, indeed, by any Englishman. In any case, Macaulay's identification of 'M. Pen' with William Penn is precarious.

The interception of a letter from James II to Penn shortly before William III left for Ireland (June 1690) occasioned his citation before the privy council. He appealed to the king, urging the manifest injustice of imputing disloyalty to him merely because James had chosen to write to him, and protesting his entire innocence of treasonable practices. William, who knew him well, was satisfied, and would have discharged him, but the council held him to bail. Macaulay's imputation of 'falsehood' on this occasion is entirely arbitrary. In the panic which followed the battle of Beachy Head Penn's name was included in a proclamation issued on 17 July against supposed adherents of the king's enemies. He at once surrendered himself, and, no evidence appearing against him, was discharged by the court of king's bench on 28 Nov. He was charged by the impostor Fuller with complicity in Preston's plot, and deemed it most prudent to live in retirement until the storm blew over. He remained, however, in London, in constant communication with Lord Sidney and other friends at court, until through their influence he obtained, on 10 Nov. 1693, a formal assurance of the king's goodwill towards him. In view of this fact it is hard to attach any importance to the occurrence of his name in a list of advisers of an invasion of England drawn up at St. Germains in the following month (see Macpherson, *Original Papers*, i. 468, and

Macaulay, *History of England*, iv. 31). On 20 Aug. 1694 the governorship of Pennsylvania, of which he had been temporarily deprived (21 Oct. 1692), was restored to him. He now resumed the practice of itinerant preaching, between which and literary work he divided the next few years. At Deptford in 1697 he had an audience of Peter the Great, whom he induced to attend some quaker meetings. The impression then made on the czar was not fugitive. During the Danish campaign of 1712 he attended a quakers' meeting at Friedrichstadt, Holstein, accompanied by the chiefs of his staff. The spring and summer of 1698 Penn occupied in visiting the principal quaker meetings in Ireland.

In 1699 he returned to Pennsylvania, with the intention of settling there for the rest of his life. He landed at Chester on 1 Dec., proceeded at once to Philadelphia, and met the assembly in the following January. He resided first at the 'Slateroof House,' Philadelphia, afterwards at Pennsbury Manor, below Trenton on the Delaware. The course of events in the colony had been far from smooth. Penn's constitution had proved unworkable from the outset. The provincial council, in which were vested the executive and the legislative initiative, was too numerous for the former, and not numerous enough for the latter function. It had accordingly been superseded by a commission of five, while the general assembly had usurped the legislative power and the control of the judiciary. In this revolution Penn acquiesced with a good grace, and exerted himself to compose a feud which had become chronic between the province and the territories. In this, as also in an attempt to pass bills introducing marriage among the negro slaves now held in large numbers by the settlers, and for the protection of the Indian population, he failed. He passed, however, an act extending the benefit of criminal justice to the slaves. While thus striving to mitigate the evils of slavery he did not scruple to hold slaves himself, though he made provision by his will for their manumission.

Meanwhile supply was hardly to be had from the assembly, and the colonies remained without a defensive force. In this position of affairs intelligence reached Penn, in 1701, that a bill was before parliament for the conversion of the province and territories into crown colonies. He accordingly returned to England, landing at Portsmouth towards the middle of December. The bill lapsed on the death of William III (8 March 1701–2), but Penn remained in England. He was well received by Queen Anne on presenting, after the prorogation of parliament (25 May), an address from the general assembly of quakers in grateful acknowledgment of her declaration for the maintenance of the Toleration Act, and resided for a time in the neighbourhood of Kensington Palace, then at Knightsbridge, afterwards at Brentford (1706–10), and finally at Ruscomb, Berkshire, where he died.

His declining years were embittered by interminable disputes between the province and the territories, the misconduct of his son, William Penn, and the chicanery of his steward, in whom he had placed implicit confidence. His pecuniary embarrassments, which occasioned his residing for nine months within the rules of the Fleet prison (1707), compelled him to mortgage his American proprietary rights, and eventually to make overtures for the sale of them to the crown. The negotiations were arrested by several apoplectic seizures which he had in 1712, and were not resumed. He sank slowly, and died on 30 July 1718. His remains were interred on 5 Aug. in the burial-ground belonging to the meeting-house at Jordans, near Chalfont St. Giles, Buckinghamshire.

Penn married twice. His first wife—born in 1643 or 1644, married at Chorley Wood, Rickmansworth, on 4 April 1672, died at Hoddesdon on 23 Feb. 1693–4, buried at Jordans—a woman of great beauty and saintly character, was Gulielma Maria, daughter of Sir William Springett of Brayle Place, Ringmer, Sussex, a parliamentary officer, who died at the siege of Arundel Castle on 3 Feb. 1643–4. Her mother, Mary, daughter of Sir John Proude, remarried, in 1654, Isaac Penington, a quaker [see under Penington, Isaac, 1616–1679]. By her Penn had issue three sons and four daughters. Of the daughters, three died in infancy; the fourth, Letitia, married William Aubrey, a merchant, died without issue, and was buried at Jordans on 6 April 1746. Of the sons, the eldest, William, died in infancy; the second, Springett, died without issue on 10 April 1696, and was buried at Jordans; the youngest, William, to whom Penn devised his English and Irish estates, married Mary Jones, renounced quakerism, deserted his wife, and died at Liège in 1720, leaving, with one daughter, Gulielma Maria—who married Charles Fell—two sons, Springett (died without issue in 1730) and William. The latter married, first, Christiana, daughter of Alexander Forbes, and, secondly, Ann Vaux, and had issue, by his first wife (*d.* 1733, buried at Jordans 9 Nov.), a daughter, Christiana Gulielma, married in

1761 to Peter Gaskell of Gloucester, through whom the Irish estate passed in 1824 to Thomas Penn Gaskell of Philadelphia; and by his second wife a son, Springett, who died in 1762.

Penn's second wife, married on 5 March 1695-6, was Hannah, daughter of Thomas Callowhill, merchant, of Bristol, who survived him, died on 20 Dec. 1726, and was buried at Jordans. By her he had issue, with two daughters, Hannah (died in infancy) and Margaret (who married Thomas Freame of Philadelphia, was the mother of Philadelphia Hannah, viscountess Cremorne, and was buried at Jordans on 12 Feb. 1750-1), four sons, to whom he devised Pennsylvania and the territories in co-proprietorship, viz. (1) John (*d.* without issue on 25 Oct. 1746, and was buried at Jordans 5 Nov.); (2) Thomas (1702-1775) [q. v.]; (3) Richard (*d.* 1771), who married Hannah, daughter of Richard Lardner, M.D., and had, with other issue, John Penn (1729-1795) [q. v.], governor of Pennsylvania at the outbreak of the war of independence, and Richard Penn (1736-1811) [q. v.]; and (4) Dennis, who died in 1723, and was buried at Jordans 8 Jan. On the eve of the conversion of the province into the state of Pennsylvania, the proprietary rights of Penn's descendants were commuted for an annuity.

Penn was somewhat above the middle height, well built and agile, with a fine forehead, a short protuberant nose, a heavy chin, large lustrous eyes, and luxuriant hair. In 'Notes and Queries' (4th ser. ii. 382) mention is made of a miniature likeness of him done at Paris. A half-length portrait in armour by an unknown hand, painted in Ireland in 1666, and finely engraved by Schoff, is at Pennsylvania Castle, Isle of Portland, the seat of J. Merrick Head, esq.; a copy is in the possession of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania; another belongs to William Dugald Stuart, esq., of Tempsford Hall, Bedfordshire. A half-length at Blackwell Grange, Durham, recently copied for the National Museum, Philadelphia, is really the portrait of the admiral. An alto-relievo of his profile, cut in ivory from memory some years after Penn's death by Sylvanus Bevan, a quaker apothecary, and pronounced by Penn's friend Lord Cobham an excellent likeness, is the property of Alfred Waterhouse, esq., R.A., of Yattendon Court, Berkshire. A marble medallion, recently acquired by the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, appears to have been copied from the Bevan relief in the last century. A print of the same relief done by John Hall in 1773 from a sketch by Du Simitière is in the British Museum. A statue in lead, cast for Lord Cobham (the features copied from the Bevan relief), stands in front of the Pennsylvania Hospital, Philadelphia. A colossal bronze statue has also been placed on the summit of the tower of the new city hall, Philadelphia, at a height of 547 feet. Penn figures among the quaker worthies in Egbert Van Heemskerck's engraving of the Bull and Mouth meeting. The portrait in West's composition of the scene with the Indians under the Shakamaxon elm has no pretensions to accuracy. That in Inman's picture of Penn's landing at Chester appears to be copied from it. An engraving of doubtful authenticity is mentioned in Maria Webb's 'Penns and Peningtons' (see the well informed article on the 'Portraiture of William Penn,' *Scribner's Monthly*, xii. 1).

Penn's manners were courtly, and so good a judge as Swift (*Works*, ed. 1824, xii. 219) testifies that he 'spoke very agreeably and with much spirit.' Though studiously plain, his dress appears to have been well cut and neat. He was an excellent judge of horseflesh, and introduced three brood mares and the celebrated stallion Tamerlane into America. He kept a good table, and furnished his house in a style of substantial and not inelegant comfort. As a stout champion of the right of independent thought and speech, as the apostle of true religion, of justice, gentleness, sobriety, simplicity, and 'sweet reasonableness' in an age of corrupt splendour, morose pietism, and general intolerance, Penn would be secure of a place among the immortals, even though no flourishing state of the American Union revered him as its founder. With curious infelicity Montesquieu (*Esprit des Lois*, l. iv. c. iv.) calls him 'un véritable Lycurgue.' The 'Great Law' has for its most conspicuous merit its very unspartan leniency, while the fate of Penn's constitution only points the moral of the futility of such theoretic devices; nor did the settlement owe much to his administrative guidance. Indeed, he displayed hardly more competence to deal with Pennsylvanian than with English politics. His piety was profound; and though he had little or no interest in humane learning for its own sake, his knowledge of the Christian and prechristian mystics was considerable, and enabled him to give to the doctrine of the 'light within' a certain philosophical breadth (see his *Christian Quaker*, London, 1674, fol., in reply to Thomas Hickes). His style is clear and nervous, and his theological polemics, though for the most part occupied with questions of ephemeral importance, evince no small controversial power. He was a fellow of the

Royal Society (elected November 1681), but seems to have taken no part in its proceedings.

The following are Penn's principal works not mentioned in the text, the place of publication being in all cases London, unless otherwise stated, or uncertain: 1. 'The Guide Mistaken, and Temporizing Rebuked; or, a Brief Reply to Jonathan Clapham's book intituled "A Guide to the True Religion,"' 1668, 4to. 2. 'The People's Ancient and Just Liberties asserted. In the Trial of William Penn and William Mead,' 1670; frequent reprints. 3. 'The Great Case of Liberty of Conscience once more debated and defended by the authority of Reason, Scripture, and Antiquity,' 1670, 4to. 4. 'A Seasonable Caveat against Popery,' 1670, 4to; reprinted in 1852, ed. Robert Macbeth. 5. 'Truth rescued from Imposture; or, a brief reply to a meer rapsodie of lies, folly, and slander, but a pretended answer to the tryal of William Penn, William Mead, &c.,' 1670, 4to. 6. 'A Serious Apology for the Principles and Practices of the People called Quakers' (pt. ii. only, pt. i. being by George Whitehead [q. v.]), 1671, 4to. 7. 'The Spirit of Truth vindicated against that of Error and Envy,' 1672, 8vo. 8. 'The New Witnesses [Reeve and Muggleton] proved Old Hereticks,' 1672, 4to. 9. 'Quakerism a new Nickname for Old Christianity' (a reply to J. Faldo's 'Quakerism no Christianity'), 1672, 8vo. 10. 'Plain Dealing with a Traducing Anabaptist' [i.e. John Mores], 1672, 4to. 11. 'A Winding Sheet for Controversie ended' (by H. Hedwood), 1672, 8vo. 12. 'The Spirit of Alexander the Coppersmith, lately revived, now justly rebuked; or an Answer to a late pamphlet [by William Mucklowe] intituled "The Spirit of the Hat, or the Government of the Quakers,"' 1673, 4to. 13. 'Judas and the Jews combined against Christ and his Followers; being a rejoynder to the late nameless reply called "Tyranny and Hypocrisie detected," made against a book entituled "The Spirit of Alexander the Coppersmith rebuked,"' 1673, 4to. 14. 'Wisdom justified of her Children' (in answer to H. Halliwell's 'Account of Familism, as it is revived and propagated by the Quakers'), 1673, 8vo. 15. 'The Invalidity of John Faldo's Vindication of his Book called "Quakerism no Christianity,"' 1673, 8vo. 16. 'Reason against Railing and Truth against Fiction' (in reply to two pamphlets by Thomas Hicks), 1673, 8vo. 17. 'The Counterfeit Christian detected; or the Real Quaker justified' (a reply to Thomas Hicks's 'Third Dialogue'), 1674, 8vo. 18. 'Return to John Faldo's Reply called "A Curb for William Penn's Confidence,"' 1674, 8vo. 19. 'Urim and Thummin; or the Apostolical Doctrines of Light and Perfection maintained,' a reply to Samuel Grevill's 'Testimony of the Light Within,' 1674, 4to. 20. 'A Just Rebuke to One and Twenty Learned and Reverend Divines,' 1674, 4to. 21. 'The Christian Quaker and his Divine Testimony vindicated by Scripture, Reason, and Authorities,' pt. i. only, pt. ii. being by George Whitehead, 1674, fol.; 1699, 8vo; reprinted, with the 'Sandy Foundation shaken' and other pieces, at Philadelphia in 1824, 8vo. 23. 'A Discourse of the General Rule of Faith and Life and Judge of Controversie,' 1674, fol.; 1699, 8vo. 23. 'A Treatise of Oaths, containing several weighty Reasons why the People call'd Quakers refuse to swear,' 1675, 4to. 25. 'England's Present Interest discover'd with Honour to the Prince and Safety to the People,' 1675, 4to; reprints, with the title 'England's True Interest,' &c., 1698 and 1702, 12mo. 25. 'The continued Cry of the Oppressed for Justice,' 1675, 4to. 26. 'Saul smitten to the Ground; being a brief but faithful Narrative of the dying Remorse of a late living enemy to the People called Quakers, and their faith and worship' (Mathew Hide), 1675, 4to. 27. 'Some Account of the Province of Pennsilvania in America,' 1681, fol. 28. 'A Brief Account of the Province of Pennsilvania,' 1682, 4to. 29. 'The Frame of the Government of the Province of Pennsilvania in America,' 1682, fol. 30. 'A Letter from William Penn, Proprietary and Governor of Pennsilvania in America, to the Committee of the Free Society of Traders of that Province . . . containing a General Description of the said Province. . . . With an Account of the Natives or Aborigines. To which is added An Account of the City of Philadelphia, newly laid out,' 1683, fol. 31. 'A Defence of the Duke of Buckingham's Book of Religion and Worship, from the exceptions of a nameless author,' 1685, 4to. 32. 'Letters on the Penal Laws,' 1687–8, 4to. 33. 'The Great and Popular Objection against the repeal of the Penal Laws and Tests briefly stated and considered,' 1688, 4to. 34. 'Reasonableness of Toleration,' 1689, 4to. 35. 'A Key opening a Way to every common Understanding, How to discern the Difference betwixt the Religion professed by the People called Quakers and the Perversions, Misrepresentations, and Calumnies of their several Adversaries,' 1692, 8vo; numerous reprints, the last in 1817; also translations into French (1701, 8vo), Welsh (1703, 8vo), Danish (1705, 8vo), German (1802, 8vo).

36. 'The New Athenians no Noble Bereans,' 3 pts. 1692, fol. 36. 'Some Fruits of Solitude, in Reflections and Maxims relating to the conduct of Humane Life,' 1693, 12mo; pt. ii., entitled 'More Fruits of Solitude,' 1782, 12mo; 10th edit. (both parts), 1790, 12mo; latest edit. 1857, 24mo; translated into Dutch (1715), German (1803), French (1790; 2nd edit. 1827). 37. 'An Account of W. Penn's Travails in Holland and Germany, Anno MDCLXXVII, for the service of the Gospel of Christ: by way of Journal,' 1694, 8vo; 4th edit. 1835, 8vo. 38. 'A Brief Account of the Rise and Progress of the People called Quakers' (reprint of Penn's preface to George Fox's 'Journal'), 1694, 8vo; 12th edit. 1834, 12mo; also several American reprints, and French (1764), German (1793), Welsh (1794), and Danish (1854) versions. 39. 'Primitive Christianity revived in the Faith and Practice of the People called Quakers,' 1696, 8vo; 6th edit. 1796, Philadelphia, ed. James M. Brown (Memoir of Penn prefixed), 1857, 12mo; Welsh (1790) and German (1802) versions.

The second edition of 'No Cross no Crown' appeared in 1682, 8vo, the 24th in 1857, 8vo; also several American editions, and versions in Dutch by William Sewel (1687), French (1746), and German (1825). Posthumously appeared 'Fruits of a Father's Love; being the Advice of William Penn to his Children,' 1726, 12mo; 11th edit. 1841, 18mo; also a French translation, 1790.

The collections of statistics of quaker sufferings mentioned above as edited by Penn are as follows: 1. 'The Case of the People called Quakers stated in relation to their late and present Sufferings, especially upon old statutes made against Popish Recusants;' (2) 'A Particular Account of the late and present great Sufferings of the same upon Prosecutions in the Bishop's Court;' and (3) 'A Brief Account of some of the late and present Sufferings of the same for meeting together to worship God in spirit and in truth upon the Conventicle Act; with an Account of such as died prisoners from the year 1660 for several causes,' 1680. [For prefaces by or attributed to him see Barclay, Robert, 1648–1690; Marshall, Charles, 1637–1698; Penington, Isaac, 1616-1679; Bulstrode, Whitelocke.]

A collective edition of Penn's Works, with Life by Joseph Besse prefixed, appeared in 1726, 2 vols. fol., and was followed by his 'Select Works,' ed. (probably) John Fothergill, 1771, fol.; reprinted in five volumes in 1782, 8vo, and in three volumes 1825, 8vo.

[The principal authority is the Life by Besse above mentioned. Other contemporary sources are Penn's own Journal of his Travels in Holland and Germany, with his correspondence, memoirs, &c., in Mem. Hist. Soc. of Pennsylvania, vols. i.–xi., and documents preserved at Devonshire House, Bishopsgate Street, London, and at Pennsylvania Castle, Dorset, in the possession of Mr. J. Merrick Head; Philobiblon Society Miscellanies (Historical), No. 4; Reliquiæ Barclaianæ [see Barclay, Robert, 1648–1690]; Letters of Isaac Penington in Maria Webb's Penns and Peningtons, with which cf. Sussex Arch. Coll. v. 67 et seq. xx. 34 et seq.; Penn's Life in Anthony à Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), iv. 645, with the notices in the Histories of the Quakers by Croese, Sewel, and Gough; Oldmixon's British Empire in America, i. 149 et seq.; Sidney Papers, ed. Collins, v. 55; Evelyn's Diary; Henry Sidney's Diary, ed. Blencowe; Cartwright's Diary (Camden Soc.); Reresby's Memoirs, ed. Cartwright; Ellis's Orig. Letters, 2nd ser. iv. 174; Clarendon and Rochester Correspondence; Wood's Life and Times (Oxford Hist. Soc.), iii. 346; Hearne's Collect. (Oxford Hist. Soc.), ii. 277; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1667–9; Hist. MSS. Comm. 4th Rep. App. p. 298, 6th Rep. App. pp. 473, 684, 736, 774, 7th Rep. App. pp. 407, 501, 578, 10th Rep. App. pt. iv. p. 376; Grant's Concessions and Orig. Const. of New Jersey (Philadelphia); Charter to William Penn and Laws of Pennsylvania (Harrisburg); Burnet's Own Time; Campana di Cavelli's Derniers Stuarts à St-Germain-en-Laye, ii. 572. Later authorities are Biogr. Brit.; Chauffepié's Nouv. Dict. Hist.; Burke's European Settlements in America, pt. vii. chap. xi.; Anderson's Hist. of Commerce, ii. 552 et seq.; Douglas's Summary of the First Planting and Present State of the British Settlements in North America, 1750, ii. 297 et seq.; Proud's Hist. of Pennsylvania; Hazard's Annals of Pennsylvania; Watson's Annals of Philadelphia, ed. Hazard, Bancroft's United States of America, ed. 1876, ii. 78 et seq.; Ellis Stephens's Sources of the Constitution of the United States, 1894; Lives by Clarkson (ed. W. E. Forster), Hepworth Dixon, Janney, Stoughton, Lewis (see Friends' Library, vol. v.), Marsiliac, Vincens, Hughes, Post, Barker, Sparks, Draper, and Bridges; Fisher's Discourse on the Private Life of William Penn, in Mem. Hist. Soc. of Pennsylvania, 9th App. 1836; Roberts's Life of the Duke of Monmouth; Mackintosh's Revolution in 1688; Macaulay's Hist. of England; Paget's New Examen; Hepworth Dixon's Her Majesty's Tower; Whitten's Quaker Pictures (Friends' Quarto Series, 1892): Granville Penn's Memorials of the Life of Sir W. Penn; Summers's Memories of Jordans and the Chalfonts, 1895; Edinburgh Review, July 1813 (a review of Clarkson's Life, by Jeffrey); Quakeriana, November 1894 and January 1895; Pedigree of the Penn Family, London, 1871, 8vo; Dallaway's West Sussex, vol. ii. pt. ii. p. 255; Encycl. Brit; Brit.

Mus. Cat.; Etting, on the Portraiture of William Penn, in Scribner's Monthly, xii. 1 et seq.; Catalogue of Paintings, &c., belonging to the Hist. Soc. of Pennsylvania; Notes and Queries, general index; information from R. Pearsall Smith, esq.; Smith's Cat. of Friends' Books.] J. M. R.

PENNANT, RICHARD, Baron Penrhyn (1737?–1808), was the second son of John Pennant, a Liverpool merchant, who was descended from Thomas ap Dafydd, abbot of Basingwerk in the fifteenth century, and was thus of kin to the Pennants of Downing [see under Pennant, Thomas]. John married Bonella Hodges. The estate of Penrhyn, Carnarvonshire, had, after the failure of the male line of the Williams family, passed into the hands of two sisters, Anne, wife of Thomas Warburton, and Gwen, wife of Sir Walter Yonge. The moiety held by the Yonge family was purchased by John Pennant, and on 6 Dec. 1765 his son Richard married Susannah Anne, only child and heiress of Hugh Warburton of Winnington, Cheshire, the holder of the other moiety, and thus reunited the property. Richard's public career began in 1761, when he was returned as M.P. for Petersfield; in 1767, on the death of Sir Ellis Cunliffe, he succeeded him as one of the two members for Liverpool. His wife had influential connections in the borough, being granddaughter of the Dr. Edward Norreys who represented it from 1714 to 1722, and her talents as a canvasser in her husband's interest were renowned. Pennant, who was a whig, was re-elected without opposition in 1768 and 1774. In 1780 he stood third on the poll, Henry Rawlinson, who came second, defeating him by 110 votes. In September 1783 he was created Baron Penrhyn of Penrhyn, co. Louth, in the peerage of Ireland. At the general election of 1784 he stood once more for Liverpool, and this time was second on the poll, defeating Colonel Tarleton by thirteen votes. A petition was lodged against his return, but afterwards withdrawn. In 1790 he was less fortunate. At the close of the third day's polling the tide was so manifestly running against him that he withdrew, having spent, as some allege, 30,000*l.* upon the contest. He did not again seek admittance to the House of Commons.

Lord Penrhyn's most important work was done upon his Carnarvonshire estate. About 1782 he took into his own hands the slate quarry at the entrance to Nant Ffrancon, now well known as the Penrhyn Quarry, and with true business instinct set about its development. A quay was erected at the mouth of the Cegin for the shipping of the slates, and in 1801 this was connected with the quarry by means of a tramroad. In this way a marked impetus was given to the Welsh slate trade, which has since risen to very great proportions. Lord Penrhyn also greatly improved the estate by building and planting on an extensive scale. He was sheriff of Carnarvonshire for 1782. He died at Winnington on 21 Jan. 1808, leaving no issue. The title accordingly became extinct, and the estate passed by his will to his cousin, George Henry Dawkins, who assumed the additional name of Pennant. The latter's daughter and coheiress married, in 1833, Edward Gordon Douglas, who adopted the surname of Pennant in 1841, and was created Baron Penrhyn of Llandegai in 1866.

[Burke's Extinct Peerage, 1883, p. 422; Gent. Mag. for January 1808; Bean's Parl. Representation of the Six Northern Counties of England, Hull, 1890; Roscoe's Memorials of Liverpool, 2nd edit. London, 1875; Yorke's Royal Tribes of Wales, ed. Williams, 1887, pp. 193–4; Cathrall's Hist. of North Wales, 1828, pp. 100–101; Evans's Tour through North Wales, 1802, pp. 232–5; Kalendars of Gwynedd, 1873, p. 62.] J. E. L.

PENNANT, THOMAS (1726–1798), traveller and naturalist, born at Downing in the parish of Whitford (or Whiteford), near Holywell, Flintshire, on 14 June 1726, was the eldest son of David Pennant (*d.* 1763), by his wife Arabella, third daughter of Richard Mytton of Halston, Shropshire. The Pennant family was an ancient one, and had been long resident at Bychton in the parish of Whitford. A direct ancestor was Thomas (son of David Pennant of Bychton), who, after acting as abbot of the Cistercian house of Basingwerk, near Holywell, married Angharad, daughter of Gwilym ap Gruffydd of Penrhyn, and left three sons. To this abbot Gutyn Owain [q. v.] addressed a poem ('Rhys Jones Gorchestion Beirdd Cymru,' p. 198 sq.) The abbot's brother Hugh was a priest, poet, and collector of Welsh manuscripts, and must be distinguished from a later Sir Hugh Pennant who took part in the eisteddfod at Caerwys in 1568 (cf. Pennant, *History of Whiteford*).

Thomas Pennant was sent to the school of the Rev. W. Lewis at Wrexham, and part of his boyhood was spent at Hadley, near Enfield Chase. At the age of twelve he was given by his relative, Richard Salisbury (father of Mrs. Thrale), a copy of Francis Willoughby's 'Ornithology,' and to this present he attributed his early taste for natural history. He matriculated at Queen's College, Oxford, on 7 March 1744 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.*), but took no degree. In 1746 or 1747, while still an undergraduate, he made

a journey to Cornwall, where Dr. Borlase encouraged him in the study of minerals and fossils. His first publication was an account of an earthquake felt at Downing in April 1750. This was printed in vol. x. of the 'Abridgment' of the 'Philosophical Transactions,' p. 511.

In 1754 he made a tour in Ireland, but kept only an imperfect journal, 'such,' he says, 'was the conviviality of the country.' On 21 Nov. 1754 he was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, but resigned in 1760. In 1755 he began a correspondence with Linnæus, and at his instance was elected a member of the Royal Society of Upsala in February 1757. About 1761 he began his 'British Zoology,' the first part of which was published in 1766. He gave the profits of this work, which, when completed, was illustrated by 132 plates, to the Welsh school near Gray's Inn Lane, London. In 1765 he visited the continent, and stayed with Buffon at his seat at Montbard in Burgundy. At Ferney he saw Voltaire, whom he found 'very entertaining' and a master of English oaths. At the Hague he met Pallas the Dutch naturalist, to whom he became much attached. On 26 Feb. 1767 he was elected fellow of the Royal Society, London. He contributed papers to the 'Philosophical Transactions' on geological subjects, and wrote a memoir on the turkey (1781). On 11 May 1771 he received the degree of D.C.L. from the university of Oxford. In the same year he published his 'Synopsis of Quadrupeds.'

In 1771 Pennant published his 'Tour in Scotland' (1 vol. 8vo), describing the journey made by him in 1769. He says he had 'the hardihood to venture on a journey to the remotest part of North Britain,' of which he brought home an account so favourable that 'it has ever since been *inondée* with southern visitors' (on the earlier Scottish tours of Bishop Pococke, see under Pococke, Richard). Starting from Chester on 26 June 1769, Pennant visited the Fern Islands off the Northumbrian coast, and noted many species of sea-fowl that resorted thither. He made nearly the circuit of the mainland of Scotland, observing manners and customs and natural history. On this occasion, as on all subsequent tours, he journeyed on horseback, and kept an elaborate journal. The success of the 'Tour in Scotland' led to his undertaking a second Scottish journey, beginning on 18 May 1772. He visited the English lakes, proceeded to the Hebrides, and was presented with the freedom of Edinburgh. During this tour he was accompanied by the Rev. J. Lightfoot, the botanist, whose 'Flora Scotica' was published in 1777 at his expense. Moses Griffith [q. v.], the Welsh artist, attended him on this journey (as also on his later tours), making sketches and drawings, afterwards reproduced in Pennant's published 'Tours.' Pennant fully appreciated Griffith's talents, though he once describes him as 'a worthy servant, whom I keep for that purpose' (making drawings, &c.) In 1774 Pennant visited the Isle of Man with Francis Grose [q. v.] He kept a journal, but most of the material he collected was lost.

Pennant made tours in various parts of England, including Northamptonshire (1774), Warwickshire (1776), Kent (1777), Cornwall (1787). As the outcome of several journeys in Wales he published his 'Tour in Wales,' the first volume appearing in 1778. In 1781 he published his own favourite work, the 'History of Quadrupeds,' being a new and enlarged edition of his 'Synopsis of Quadrupeds.' In 1782 his 'Journey from Chester to London' appeared. In 1784 he issued his 'Arctic Zoology,' which gave a 'condensed view of the progress of discovery' along the northern coasts of Europe, Asia, and America. For this work he received information from George Low [q. v.] and other Scottish naturalists, and from Sir Joseph Banks, who had visited Newfoundland. In 1790 he published his 'London,' which went through three impressions in two years and a half: he says it was 'composed from the observations of perhaps half my life.'

Pennant declares that from about 1777 he began to lose his taste for wandering, and preferred to make 'imaginary tours.' He projected about 1793 a work in fourteen volumes, to be called 'Outlines of the Globe;' he published two volumes dealing with India and Ceylon, and vols. iii. and iv. (China and Japan) were issued posthumously. In 1793 he published 'The Literary Life of the late Thomas Pennant, Esq. By Himself,' giving biographical and bibliographical details.

Nearly all his life Pennant enjoyed perfect health, which he attributed to temperate living and abundant riding exercise. About 1794 his health and spirits began to fail, though he continued his literary work, and in 1796 published 'The History of the Parishes of Whiteford and Holywell.' He died at Downing on 16 Dec. 1798, in his seventy-third year (*Gent. Mag.* 1798, pt. ii. p. 1090), and was buried in the church of St. Mary at Whitford, where there is a monument to him by Westmacott (Lewis, *Topogr. Dict. of Wales*, 1849, art. 'Whitford').

Pennant married, first, in 1759, Elizabeth (*d.* 1764), daughter of James Falconer of

Chester, lieutenant in the royal navy; secondly, in 1777, Anne (*d.* 1802), daughter of Sir Thomas Mostyn, bart., of Mostyn Hall, Whitford. By his first marriage he had a daughter Arabella, who married Edward Hanmer, son of Sir Walden Hanmer, bart., and a son David (*d.* 1841), who succeeded his father at Downing, and edited his posthumous publications. By the second marriage he had a daughter Sarah, who died when fourteen, and a son Thomas, who became rector of Weston Turville, Buckinghamshire, and died in 1846 without leaving children (on other descendants of Pennant, see Burke's *Landed Gentry*, 1894, vol. ii. under 'Pennant of Bodfari').

Pennant's name stands high among the naturalists of the eighteenth century, and he has been commended for making dry and technical matter interesting. His 'British Zoology' and 'History of Quadrupeds,' arranged according to the classification of John Ray, long remained classical works, though in point of style and method of presentment they are greatly inferior to the works of Buffon. Cuvier in his memoir of Pennant, written about 1823 for the 'Biographie Universelle,' says that Buffon profited by Pennant's 'History of Quadrupeds,' 1781, though in the third edition Pennant himself has drawn on Buffon. He describes the work as 'encore indispensable,' and praises the 'Arctic Zoology' as valuable to naturalists. 'Pennant's works on natural history' (says Sir William Jardine, 1833) 'were much valued at the time of their publication, and contained the greater part of the knowledge of their times.' Gilbert White published his 'Selborne' in the form of letters to Pennant and Daines Barrington.

Pennant's 'Tour in Scotland' was the cause of a violent dispute between Johnson and Bishop Percy, who had disparaged the traveller's accuracy. 'A carrier,' the bishop said, 'who goes along the side of Loch Lomond would describe it better' (Boswell, *Life of Johnson*, 12 April 1778). Johnson defended Pennant: 'He's a whig, sir; a sad dog. But he's the best traveller I ever read; he observes more things than any one else does.' And when in Scotland in 1773 (Boswell, *Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides*, 17 Sept. 1773), Johnson declared that Pennant had 'greater variety of inquiry than almost any man.' Boswell thought the Scotch 'Tour' superficial, but praised the 'London.' Later critics have eulogised the accuracy and acute observation of the Scotch 'Tour.' The 'Tour in Wales' has less the character of a journal than Pennant's other 'Tours,' and his biographer, Mr. W. T. Parkins, considers it his 'best performance.' Horace Walpole, in letters to William Cole (Walpole, *Letters*, ed. P. Cunningham, vi. 86, vii. 464, viii. 2, &c.), sneers at Pennant as a smatterer in history and antiquities who 'picks up his knowledge as he rides.' Walpole found him 'full of corporal spirits, too lively and impetuous,' though 'a very honest, good-natured man.' Pennant's literary industry was immense, and he reckoned that his works contained 802 illustrations prepared under his superintendence. Yet he found time for the duties of a country gentleman. He was high sheriff of Flintshire in 1761, wrote on mail-coaches and the militia laws and headed a 'Loyal Association' (against the French) formed at Holywell in 1792. He describes himself as 'a moderate tory.' On his estate at Downing, to which he succeeded in 1763, he 'enlarged,' he says, 'the fine scenery of the broken grounds, the woods, and the command of water,' and discovered a rich mine of lead. In appearance Pennant was of fair complexion and slightly above the middle height. Two portraits of him are preserved at Downing: (1) a picture of him as a young man painted by Willis, a clergyman, and engraved in the 1810 edition of the 'Tours in Wales;' (2) a portrait of him at the age of fifty, painted by Gainsborough in 1776, and engraved in Pennant's 'Literary Life' and in Rhys's edition of the 'Tours in Wales' (cf. Bromley, *Cat. Engraved Portraits*).

Pennant's principal publications are as follows: 1. 'The British Zoology,' 1766, fol.; 4 vols., London, Chester, 1768–70, 8vo; 4th ed. 4 vols., London, 1776–77, 4to; new ed. 4 vols. London, 1812, 8vo. 2. 'A Tour in Scotland, 1769,' Chester, 1771, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1772, 8vo; 3rd edit. 1774; 4th edit. 1775; 5th edit. 1790; 'Supplement to the Tour in Scotland,' Chester, 1772, 8vo. 3. 'Synopsis of Quadrupeds,' Chester, 1771, 8vo. 4. 'A Tour in Scotland and Voyage to the Hebrides, 1772,' 2 pts., Chester and London, 1774–76, 4to, also 1790; printed in Pinkerton's 'Voyages,' &c., vol. iii. 1808, &c.; German translation, Leipzig, 1779. 5. 'Genera of Birds,' Edinburgh, 1773, 8vo; London, 1781. 6. 'A Tour in Wales, 1770 [1773?],' London, 1778–81, 4to; 'Tours in Wales,' 3 vols., London, 1810, 8vo; Carnarvon, 1883, 8vo, edited by T. Rhys. 7. 'Indian Zoology,' twelve coloured plates with letterpress, by T. P.; the plates were given to Dr. J. Rheinhold Forster, who published them in Germany in 1781, with the letterpress translated: 'Indian Zoology, an Essay on India,' &c.; 2nd edit. London, 1790, 4to. 8. 'History of Quadrupeds' (enlarged from the 'Synopsis of Quadrupeds'), London, 1781,

4to; 3rd edit. 1793, 4to; German translation, Weimar, 1799–1800. 9. 'The Journey from Chester to London,' London, 1782, 4to; Dublin, 1783; also 1798, &c.; 1809, 1811. 10. 'Arctic Zoology,' 2 vols. London, 1784–1787, 4to; German translation, Leipzig, 1787, 4to; French translation, Paris, 1789, 8vo. 11. 'Of the Patagonians. Formed from the Relation of Father Falkener, a Jesuit [whom Pennant visited at Spetchley, near Worcester, in 1771],' forty copies only, printed at the private press of George Allan, esq., Darlington, 1788, 4to; reprinted as an appendix to Pennant's 'Literary Life.' 12. 'Of London,' London, 1790, 4to; 'Additions and Corrections to the First Edition of Mr. Pennant's Account of London,' London, 1791, 4to; 'Some Account of London,' 2nd edit. London, 1791, 4to; Dublin, 1791; London, 1793, 4to; 4th edit. with additions, London, 1805, 4to; 1813; German translation, Nuremberg, 1791. 13. 'The Literary Life of the late Thomas Pennant, esq. By Himself,' London, 1793, 4to (with reprinted tracts as appendices). 14. 'The History of the Parishes of Whiteford and Holywell' [London], 1796, 4to. 15. 'Outlines of the Globe,' 4 vols. London, 1798–1800, 4to. 16. 'A Journey from London to the Isle of Wight,' London, 1801, 4to. 17. 'A Tour from Downing to Alston Moor,' London, 1801, 4to. 18. 'A Tour from Alston Moor to Harrowgate and Brimham Crags,' London, 1804, 4to.

[Pennant's Literary Life; European Mag. May 1793 pp. 323 f., June 1800 pp. 440–1; Memoir by W. T. Parkins in Rhys's ed. of the Tours in Wales, 3 vols. 1883; Memoir by Sir W. Jardine in The Naturalist's Library, vol. xv.; Williams's Dict. of Eminent Welshmen; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. and Lit. Illustr.; Brit. Mus. Cat. and authorities cited.] W. W.

**PENNECUIK, ALEXANDER, M.D.** (1652–1722), physician and poet, born in 1652, was the eldest son of Alexander Pennecuik of Newhall, Edinburgh, who had been a surgeon under General Bannier in the thirty years' war, and afterwards in the army sent from Scotland into England in 1644. In 1646 the elder Pennecuik bought from the Crichtons the estate of Newhall on the North Esk; but the statement that in the following year he sold the barony of Pennecuik to the Clerks seems to be erroneous (Wilson, *Annals of Penicuik*, 1891). To Newhall he added, by his marriage with Margaret Murray, the estate of Romanno, on the other side of West Linton, in Tweeddale. An Alexander Pennecuik took the degree of M.A. at Edinburgh on 18 July 1664 (*Cat. of Edinburgh Graduates*, 1858, p. 88); but we know nothing definite about young Pennecuik's medical education. Allusions in his poems, and his knowledge of modern languages, show that he travelled in Spain and other countries. On his return he devoted himself for some years to the care of his father, 'a gentleman by birth, and more by merit,' who seems to have died soon after 1692, when he was over ninety. One of Pennecuik's poems is an expression of filial affection.

Pennecuik's practice as a physician caused him, as he said, to know every corner of Tweeddale; and at the request of Sir Robert Sibbald [q. v.], who was preparing an account of the counties of Scotland, he wrote a 'Description of Tweeddale,' with the assistance of John Forbes of Newhall, advocate. The manuscript had been perused by Archbishop Nicholson in 1702 (see his *Scottish Historical Library*, pp. 19, 21); but it was not published until 1715, when it appeared in a small quarto volume, 'A Geographical, Historical Description of the Shire of Tweeddale, with a Miscellany and curious Collection of Select Scottish Poems.' In the dedication to William Douglas, earl of March, Pennecuik said that he had lived in Tweeddale over thirty years; he did not consider the English dialect to be preferable to his own, though it had become modish. Any of the poems which had been printed before had appeared surreptitiously. Pennecuik was interested especially in the botany of the county, and one of the friends with whom he corresponded was James Sutherland, superintendent of the first botanic garden in Edinburgh. Some of the verses addressed to his younger brother, James, an advocate, who wished him to come to Edinburgh, bear testimony to his love of a country life. In 1711 he told Sir Alexander Murray of Stanhope that he had once been a great curler (Maidment, *Catalogue of Scottish Writers*, 1833, p. 139).

Pennecuik was a friend of most of the Scottish gentlemen interested in letters to whom Allan Ramsay expresses his obligations. Ramsay visited at Newhall, but not, apparently, until it had passed out of Pennecuik's hands, and there seems no doubt that Newhall was the scene of the 'Gentle Shepherd.' It does not follow, however, that Pennecuik, as has been surmised, suggested to Ramsay the plot of that pastoral poem, which, indeed, did not appear in its complete form until three years after Pennecuik's death; but he not improbably took part in discussions on the subject. Pennecuik died in 1722, and was buried in the churchyard at Newlands, by his father's side (Rogers, *Monuments and Monumental Inscriptions in Scotland*, i. 266). In 1702 his elder daughter

had married the eldest son of Mrs. Oliphant of Lanton, Midlothian, and Pennecuik gave with her the estate of Newhall. Her husband, however, got into debt, and in 1703 Newhall was sold to Sir David Forbes, father to John Forbes, Pennecuik's friend and Ramsay's patron. Pennecuik lived at Romanno until his death, when he left that property to a younger daughter, who had married Mr. Farquharson of Kirktown of Boyne, Aberdeenshire.

Pennecuik's works were reprinted at Edinburgh in 1762 ('A Collection of curious Scots Poems . . . by Alexander Pennecuik'); at Leith in 1815, 'with copious notes;' and again at Edinburgh in 1875. The poems are chiefly occasional, and frequently in the Scottish dialect. The satires and other pieces possess humour, though they are often coarse. His imitations from earlier and foreign writers are of little interest; the value of his verses lies in the picture they give of the rural life of the time. He cared little for scenery apart from mankind, and had no appreciation for nature in her grander aspects.

The following pieces appeared in separate form: 1. 'Caledonia Triumphans,' broadside, 1699, reprinted in Laing's 'Various Pieces of Fugitive Scotch Poetry,' 1823. 2. 'A Panegyric to the King,' broadside, 1699. 3. 'The Tragedy of Graybeard,' 1700, 8vo. 4. 'Lintoun Address to his Highness the Prince of Orange,' broadside, 1714; this piece was first printed in the first part of Watson's 'Choice Collection of Scots Songs,' 1706.

Dr. Pennecuik is often confused with another

Alexander Pennecuik (*d.* 1730), said to be his nephew. The younger Pennecuik was in all probability a relative, for commendatory verses by 'Al. P., Mercator Edinburgensis,' were prefixed to the elder Pennecuik's 'Description of Tweeddale,' 1715, and lines 'To my honoured friend, Dr. P——k, were printed by the younger Pennecuik in 1720 in his best known volume, 'Streams from Helicon, or Poems on Various Subjects, in three parts, by Alexander Pennecuik, Gent.,' Edinburgh; some copies are marked as second edition, and others bear a London imprint. In 1726 he published 'Flowers from Parnassus,' and before his death he appears to have begun a periodical, 'Entertainment for the Curious.' He was buried in the Greyfriars churchyard, Edinburgh, on 28 Nov. 1730, being described in the register as Alexander Pencook, merchant' (Chalmers, 'Life of Ramsay,' prefixed to *Poems*, 1800, vol. i. pp. lvii–lviii). Pennecuik's life was dissipated, and, according to James Wilson ('Claudero'), who seems to have succeeded him as town laureate, he, 'like poor Claud, was short of pence,' though he sang sweetly, and 'starving, died in turnpike neuk' (*Collection of Poems*, 1761?, 'Claudero's Farewell to the Muses and Auld Reikie'). After Pennecuik's death there appeared 'A Collection of Poet Pennecuik's Satires on Kirkmen,' &c., 1744; 'A Compleat Collection of all the Poems wrote by that famous and learned Poet, Alexander Pennecuik,' six parts, no date, but published about 1750; and 'A Collection of Scots Poems on several occasions, by the late Mr. Alexander Pennecuik, Gent., and others,' Glasgow, 1787. Other similar collections were printed in 1756 and 1769. The younger Pennecuik published in separate form: 1. 'A Pastoral Poem sacred to the Memory of Lord Basil Hamilton,' 1701. 2. 'A Pil for Pork-eaters,' 1705, an attack on the English (included in the 'Compleat Collection'). 3. 'Britannia Triumphans, in four parts . . . sacred to 28 May, the Anniversary of the Birth of George I,' 1718. 4. 'An Historical Account of the Blue Blanket, or Craftsmen's Banner,' by 'Alex. Pennecuik, burgess and guild-brother of Edinburgh,' 1722; a prose account, several times reprinted, of the crafts of Edinburgh. 5. 'Corydon and Cochrania: a Pastoral on the Nuptials of the Duke of Hamilton,' 1723. 6. 'Groans from the Grave, or Complaints of the Dead against the Surgeons for raising their Bodies out of the Dust,' anonymous, but stated in a manuscript note in Maidment's copy in the British Museum to have been published at Edinburgh by Pennecuik on 13 March 1725. 7. 'Rome's Legacy to the Kirk of Scotland,' no place or date. It has been suggested that Pennecuik was the author of 'The Flight of Religious Piety from Scotland upon account of Ramsay's Lewd Books,' published about 1736, on the ground that he was a frequent rival or imitator of Ramsay. Pennecuik's own writings are constantly marred by obscenity; but there is wit in some of his satires, which were generally aimed against whigs and presbyterians.

[The principal source of information respecting Dr. Pennecuik is the life prefixed to the 1815 edition of his Works, which is stated (Cat. of the Signet Library) to be by Robert Brown of Newhall; Thomson's Biogr. Dict. of Eminent Scotsmen; Lives of the Scottish Poets, 1822, iii. 36–40, 155; Memoirs of the Life of Sir John Clerk of Penicuik, ed. J. M. Gray, pp. 114, 235–6; The Gentle Shepherd, with illustrations of the scenery, 1808, i. 45–7, ii. 408–13, 640–2; Scots Magazine, 1805 p. 905, 1806 pp. 249, 581, 1807 p. 170; Catalogues of British Museum,

Advocates' and Signet Libraries, Edinburgh, in none of which are the two Pennecuiks distinguished from each other; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. vii. 134, 4th ser. xii. 7, 53, 198; Northern Notes and Queries, iii. 154; Irving's Hist. of Scottish Poetry, 1861, pp. 585–9; Veitch's Hist. and Poetry of the Scottish Border, 1893, ii. 241–243. Mr. David Winter has kindly searched the registers of Pennecuik (Newhall) and Newlands, but they are defective.] G. A. A.

PENNEFATHER, EDWARD (1774?–1847), Irish judge, of Rathsellagh, Dunlavin, Wicklow, born about 1774, was the second son of Major William Pennefather of Knockevan, Tipperary, and Ellen, eldest daughter of Edward Moore, D.D., archdeacon of Emly. The founder of the Irish branch of the family was a cornet in the army named Matthew Pennefather, a younger brother of Abraham Pennefather of Hanbury-on-the-Hill, Staffordshire. In 1666 Matthew acquired by patent estates in Tipperary county, and inherited others from his wife Levina Kingsmill. His eldest son, Kingsmill (*d.* 1735), was M.P. for Cashel and Tipperary in the Irish parliament, and married his cousin, the heiress of John Pennefather, esq., of Campie, Londonderry. The second son, Matthew, was lieutenant-colonel in General Sabine's regiment, and distinguished himself at Oudenarde. After his return to Ireland he was appointed auditor of the Irish revenue, and represented Cashel in the Irish House of Commons from 1716 till his death, 28 Nov. 1733 (*Gent. Mag.*)

Kingsmill Pennefather's eldest son, Richard, had two sons—Kingsmill (*d.* 1771), ancestor of General Sir John Lysaght Pennefather [q. v.], and William (major in the 13th light dragoons), who was father of Richard Pennefather [q. v.] and of Edward, the subject of the present notice.

Edward was educated with his brother at Portarlington and Clonmel, and graduated at Dublin University, B.A. in 1794, and M.A. in 1832. He was called to the Irish bar in 1796, and elected a bencher of King's Inns in 1829.

The 'two Pennefathers' were leading practitioners at the court of chancery when Francis Blackburne (afterwards lord chancellor of Ireland) began to practise (E. Blackburne, *Life*, p. 30). Edward excelled his elder brother, Richard, as an advocate, and was without a rival as an equity lawyer. He was counsel for the plaintiff in the celebrated libel case, Bruce *v.* Grady, tried before Serjeant Johnson at the Limerick summer assizes of 1816, when O'Connell led for the defendant (*Authentic Report of the interesting Trial for a Libel contained in the celebrated Poem called The Nosegay*). The plaintiff, who claimed 20,000*l.*, obtained a verdict for 500*l.*

Pennefather was appointed third serjeant in April 1830, second serjeant in January 1831, and first serjeant in February 1832. In January 1835 he became solicitor-general for Ireland in Sir Robert Peel's administration, and was reappointed (September 1841) on the return of Sir Robert Peel to power. In November he was appointed chief justice of the queen's bench and a privy councillor. In January and February 1844 he presided at the trial of the O'Connells, Gavan Duffy, and their associates for conspiracy. Mitchell says that 'the chief justice in his charge argued the case like one of the counsel for the prosecution' (*Ireland since '98*, p. 103). Pennefather contended that neither secrecy nor treachery formed a necessary part of the legal definition of conspiracy. His charge was learned, lucid, and fair, though it was clear that in the opinion of the court the indictment had been in the main sustained. Sentence was pronounced on 30 May by Mr. Justice Burton.

Pennefather retired from the bench in January 1846, and died at his house in Fitzwilliam Square, Dublin, after a long illness, on 6 Sept. 1847. By his marriage with Susan, eldest daughter of John Darby, esq., of Markly, Sussex, and Leap Castle, King's County, he had four sons and six daughters. The eldest son, Edward (*b.* 1809), was called to the Irish bar in 1834, and became Q.C. in 1858. The fourth, Richard Theodore (*d.* 1865), was auditor of Ceylon. The second daughter, Ellen, married James Thomas O'Brien, bishop of Ossory and Ferns; and Dorothea, the sixth daughter, was wife of James Thomas, fourth earl of Courtown.

[Burke's Landed Gentry, 7th ed.; Cat. Dublin Graduates; Alumni Oxon.; Law Times, 11 Sept. 1847; Ann. Reg. 1847 App. to Chron. pp. 249–250, 1844 pp. 304–39; E. Blackburne's Life of Francis Blackburne, pp. 30, 199, 200 et seq., 216–217; Shaw's Authenticated Reports of Irish State Trials, 1844; authorities cited under Pennefather, Richard.] G. Le G. N.

PENNEFATHER, Sir JOHN LYSAGHT (1800–1872), general, was the third son of the Rev. John Pennefather of co. Tipperary, and nephew of Richard Pennefather [q. v.], baron of the exchequer in Ireland. His mother was daughter of Major Percival. He entered the army on 14 Jan. 1818 as cornet in the 7th dragoon guards, became a lieutenant on 20 Feb. 1823, and a captain on half-pay on 5 Nov. 1825. On 8 April 1826 he was appointed to the 22nd foot (the Cheshire regiment), in which he became

major on 22 March 1831, and lieutenant-colonel on 18 Oct. 1839. Up to this time he had seen no active service, but in 1843 his was the one European regiment in the small force with which Sir Charles Napier won the battle of Miani (Meanee) (17 Feb.), and it bore the brunt of that action, in which two thousand men defeated thirty-five thousand. The battalion was about five hundred strong, nearly all Irishmen, like their colonel and their general. 'The noble soldier, Pennefather' (as Napier described him), fell wounded—mortally, it was thought—on the top of the bank which bordered the river-bed and formed the crest of the Baluchis' position. He was made a C.B., and received the thanks of parliament. In 1848 he gave up the command of the 22nd regiment, and was placed on half-pay, and in the following year he was appointed assistant quarter-master-general in the Cork district. In 1854 he was given command of the first brigade of the second (Sir De Lacy Evans's) division in the army sent to the East, and on 20 June he was made major-general. His brigade consisted of the 30th, 55th, and 95th regiments. He commanded it with credit at the battle of the Alma, and in the affair of 26 Oct., when a sortie in force was made from Sebastopol against the heights held by the second division on the extreme right of the allies. But he had more opportunity of distinguishing himself ten days later, when the attack, for which this sortie was only preparatory, was made by the Russians, and the battle of Inkerman was fought (5 Nov.) Owing to the illness of Evans, Pennefather was in command of the division on that day. He had less than three thousand men under him, while thirty-five thousand Russian infantry were converging upon him. On 26 Oct. Evans had drawn up his force on the ridge immediately in front of the camp of the division, and allowed his pickets to be driven in rather than leave his chosen ground. Pennefather adopted an opposite course. He disputed every inch of ground, kept only a few men in hand on the ridge, but pushed forward all the men he could to support his pickets in resisting the several masses of the enemy. The thickness of the weather favoured these tactics, and the result justified them. As reinforcements, English and French, came up, they were similarly thrown forward by fractions. Lord Raglan was soon on the ground, and Sir De Lacy Evans came up from Balaclava during the course of the morning; but Pennefather was left to direct the fight, so far as any one person could direct it. 'Always undaunted, always kindling with warlike animation, he was a very power in himself.' Even when his radiant countenance could not be seen, there was comfort in the sound of his voice, 'and the "grand old boy's" favourite oaths roaring cheerily down through the smoke' (Kinglake). The battle lasted about six hours—from daybreak to 1 P.M.—then the Russians began their retreat, having lost nearly twelve thousand men.

Pennefather's 'admirable behaviour' was mentioned in Lord Raglan's despatch. A fortnight afterwards he was given the colonelcy of the 46th regiment, and he succeeded to the command of the second division when Evans returned to England in the latter part of November. He was invalided from the Crimea in July 1855, and on 25 Sept. he was appointed to command the troops in Malta, with the local rank of lieutenant-general. He remained there nearly five years, and after a short term of service in the northern district he commanded the troops at Aldershot from 1860 to 1865. He exchanged the colonelcy of the 46th for that of his old regiment, the 22nd, on 13 Feb. 1860. On 12 Nov. of that year he became lieutenant-general on the establishment, and on 9 May 1868 he became general. He had been made a K.C.B. on 5 July 1855, and received the G.C.B. on 13 May 1867. He was also a commander of the Sardinian order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus, a grand officer of the Legion of Honour, and in the second class of the Medjidieh. On 27 Aug. 1870 he was made governor of Chelsea Hospital. He died on 9 May 1872, and was buried in Brompton cemetery. In 1834 he had married Katherine, eldest daughter of John Carr, esq., of Mountrath, Queen's County.

[Napier's Conquest of Scinde; Records of the 22nd Regiment; Kinglake's War in the Crimea; Annual Register, 1854, p. 565; Haydn's Book of Dignities.] E. M. L.

PENNEFATHER, RICHARD (1773–1859), Irish judge, born in 1773, was eldest son of Major William Pennefather of Knockevan, Tipperary. He went to school with his brother Edward [q. v.], and graduated B.A. at Dublin University in 1794, after a distinguished career there. He was called to the Irish bar in the following year. About ten years later he enjoyed a reputation both on the Munster circuit and as a junior in the court of chancery. He was seldom employed as leading counsel, being overshadowed by Plunket and Saurin. In February 1821 he was appointed chief baron of the Irish exchequer court, and sat on the bench for thirty-eight years. He was a sound, able, and upright judge, skilled in the digestion and elucidation of evidence, courteous in his

bearing, and in criminal cases lenient. Though well versed in every department of jurisprudence, he was not a great jurist; and as he seldom wrote his judgments they had no pretensions to style. He died suddenly at his residence near Clonmel on 7 Aug. 1859. By his wife Jane, daughter of Mr. Justice John Bennet of Dublin, he left two surviving sons and three married daughters. Two sons predeceased him. His youngest surviving son, William, is noticed below.

The eldest surviving son, RICHARD PENNEFATHER (1808–1849), matriculated at Balliol College, Oxford, on 24 June 1824, and graduated B.A. in 1828. In 1826 he entered at Lincoln's Inn. On 21 Aug. 1845 he was appointed under-secretary to the lord lieutenant of Ireland. He was high sheriff of Tipperary in 1848, and in that capacity arranged for the state trials of William Smith O'Brien and other prisoners at Clonmel. He died on 26 July 1849, at Newtown-Anner, Tipperary, the seat of Colonel Osborne, M.P. By his wife, Lady Emily Butler, daughter of Richard, first earl of Glengall, he left a son and a daughter; the latter married Arthur, sixth earl Stanhope.

The judge's second son, John Pennefather (1815–1855), a graduate of Balliol College, Oxford, became Q.C. and a bencher of King's Inns, Dublin.

[Burke's Landed Gentry, 7th ed.; Walford's County Families, 1893; Dublin University Mag. November 1859; Law Times, 12 Nov. 1859; Ann. Reg. 1849 App. to Chron. pp. 256–7, 1855 pp. 264–5, 1859 p. 468 (App.); Cat. of Dublin Graduates and Alumni Oxon. 1714–1886.] G. LE G. N.

**PENNEFATHER, WILLIAM** (1816–1873), divine, youngest son of Richard Pennefather [q. v.], baron of the Irish court of exchequer, was born in Merrion Square, Dublin, on 5 Feb. 1816. He was educated first at a preparatory school in Dublin, and then at a private school at Westbury-on-Trym, near Bristol, where he was known as 'the saintly boy.' In 1832 he was removed to the care of the Rev. W. Stephens at Levens, near Kendal, Westmoreland. Pennefather entered at Trinity College, Dublin, in 1834; but, as the result of continued ill-health, he did not graduate B.A. until 1840. In 1841 he was ordained deacon, and priest in the following year. Pennefather was licensed to the curacy of Ballymacagh (Kilmore). He became incumbent of Mellifont, near Drogheda, in 1844. During the famine of 1845 he was conspicuous in ministering to the wants of his people without distinction of creed. In 1847 he married Catherine (see below), eldest daughter of Rear-admiral the Hon. James William King. In 1848 Pennefather accepted the incumbency of Holy Trinity, Walton, Aylesbury, Buckinghamshire. It was a difficult parish to work; there was no house, and the income was small. But Pennefather gained the confidence of his parishioners. The congregation grew, and the church was enlarged; new schools were built; and an active work was carried on among the bargemen on the Grand Junction Canal.

In 1852 he removed to Christ Church, Barnet, Hertfordshire. Here Pennefather's influence speedily extended far beyond the parish; his house became a recognised centre where 'noblemen and farmers, bishops and nonconformist ministers,' met on an equality. He at this period gave time and care to the orphans aided by the Patriotic Fund; and he began (in 1855) those conferences on missionary enterprise with which his name will always be associated. In 1864 Pennefather left Barnet for the incumbency of St. Jude's, Mildmay Park, Islington. The inevitable enlargement of the church and schools ensued; and the conferences begun at Barnet were continued on a new and more extensive scale. The conference hall at Mildmay grew in time to be the centre of many permanent organisations for home and foreign mission work. Early in 1873 Pennefather's health failed, and he died suddenly on 30 April.

Few clergymen have exercised a wider personal influence than Pennefather. As a mission preacher he was known all over England. He was one of the few clergy who have been equally active and equally successful in both evangelistic and pastoral work. Pennefather was the author of several hymns of much beauty, and of many separately issued sermons. He also published: 1. 'The Church of the First-born,' 1865. 2. 'The Bridegroom King,' 1875. 3. 'Hymns, Original and Selected,' 1875, a volume which contains twenty-five compositions by Pennefather. 4. 'Original Hymns and Thoughts in Verse,' 1875.

Pennefather's wife, CATHERINE PENNEFATHER (1818–1893), hymn-writer, after her husband's death, continued to carry on the religious work which found its centre at the conference hall, Mildmay Park. As an organiser, an administrator, and an evangelist, she was scarcely less capable than her husband; and her publications followed very much the lines of his own. She died at Mildmay Park, Islington, on 12 Jan. 1893. In addition to some separately issued addresses and tracts, her works were: 1. 'Follow Thou Me: Discipleship,' 1881. 2. 'Follow Thou Me: Service,' 1881. 3. 'Songs

of the Pilgrim Land,' 1886. 4. 'That Nothing be Lost,' 1892. She is largely represented in 'The Homeward Journey,' a selection of poems by Mrs. Pennefather and others, 1888.

[Braithwaite's Life and Letters of the Rev. W. Pennefather, 1878; Julian's Dict. of Hymnology, 1892, p. 888; Christian Portrait Gallery, p. 287; Record, 13 Jan. 1893.] A. R. B.

**PENNETHORNE, Sir JAMES** (1801–1871), architect, born at Worcester on 4 June 1801, was son of Thomas Pennethorne of that city. His younger brother John is separately noticed. In February 1820 he came to London, and entered the office of John Nash [q. v.], the architect, whose wife was first cousin to his father. In the summer of 1822 he was placed by Nash under the charge of Augustus Pugin [q. v.], with a view to the study of Gothic architecture, and was engaged on the drawings for various of Pugin's works.

In October 1824 he left England for the usual course of foreign travel, visiting France, Italy, and Sicily. At Rome he studied antiquities, and made a design for the restoration of the Forum, which he subsequently exhibited. His merits were recognised by his election as a member of the academy of St. Luke. On his return to London, at the end of 1826, he took a leading position in Nash's office, and, as his principal assistant, directed the West Strand, King William Street, and other important improvements. In 1832 he was directly employed by the commissioners of her majesty's woods to prepare plans for further improvements in the metropolis. One of his aims was to form a great street running from the extreme east to the extreme west of London, but this proved too ambitious in the eyes of the government. Others of his schemes submitted to select committees of the House of Commons in 1836 and 1838 were injuriously modified to meet the views of economical government officials (3 & 4 Vict. cap. 87, and 4 Vict. cap. 12). But four great streets were at once constructed from Pennethorne's mutilated plans, at a cost of 1,000,000*l.*, viz. New Oxford Street (Oxford Street to Holborn), Endell Street (Bow Street to Charlotte Street), Cranbourn Street (Coventry Street to Long Acre), a remnant of Pennethorne's great east to west street, and Commercial Street (London Docks to Spitalfields Church). In 1846 an act was obtained for the extension of Commercial Street from Spitalfields Church to Shoreditch, but this extension was not completed till 1858 (cf. *Westminster Review*, 1841, pp. 404–35). In 1855 the newly formed Metropolitan Board of Works constructed from Pennethorne's earlier designs Garrick Street, Southwark Street, Old Street to Shoreditch, and other thoroughfares.

Before 1840 Pennethorne had engaged in some private practice, and had built the Bazaar, St. James's Street, for W. Crockford, esq.; Southland Hall, Leicestershire, for Butler Danvers, esq.; Dillington House, Ilminster, for John Lee Lee, esq.; St. Julian's, Sevenoaks, for the Right Hon. J. C. Herries; and churches in Albany Street, Gray's Inn Road, and elsewhere. His design for rebuilding the Royal Exchange was one of the five selected in the competition. After 1840 Pennethorne's time was wholly absorbed by his public duties; in that year he was appointed (with Thomas Chawner) joint surveyor of houses in London, in the land revenue department; in 1843 he became sole surveyor and architect of the office of woods, and was appointed a commissioner to inquire into the construction of workhouses in Ireland. In 1845 the treasury desired that he should not engage in further private practice.

Pennethorne was largely employed in laying out open spaces in London. In 1841, under a special act of parliament, the commissioners of her majesty's woods purchased out of the proceeds of the sale of York House the site of Victoria Park and its approaches in the east of London, and Pennethorne skilfully designed the park and laid it out at a cost of 115,000*l.* He dealt similarly with Battersea Park, the site of which was acquired under the powers of an act in 1846; but here again his designs were imperfectly carried out. The formation of the approaches to the park from Chelsea, the acquisition of properties for the Chelsea Embankment, the construction of Kennington Park were also executed by Pennethorne; while in 1852 he elaborated a scheme for a great northern park, to be designated Albert Park. Although this ambitious project was not realised, Finsbury Park now occupies a small portion of the district comprised in the original scheme. From 1851 to 1853 Pennethorne was occupied in clearing away the houses which crowded against the walls of Windsor Castle. At the same time he designed the Museum of Economic Geology between Jermyn Street and Piccadilly. The building is noticeable for the dignity and power of the elevations, the picturesque effects in the interior, and the remarkably commodious arrangements by which large accommodation is provided on a limited site.

He elaborated a fine design in 1847 for the Public Record Office in Fetter Lane. This edifice he had intended to occupy a central

position in the thoroughfare he had projected from the east to the west of London. But a very modified scheme for the Record Office was adopted in 1850, and only portions of that were subsequently executed. In 1848 he removed the colonnade of the Quadrant, Regent Street, and ingeniously contrived a balcony and mezzanine story, to obscure the mean appearance of the small shops previously concealed under the colonnade. Between 1852 and 1856 he completed the west wing of Somerset House, and caused it to harmonise, with conspicuous success, with the beautiful work of the original architect, Sir William Chambers [q. v.] In July 1856 seventy-five of the leading architects signed an address of congratulation on the completion of this great undertaking; and a gold medal was presented to him by Earl de Grey, the president, at a meeting of the Royal Institute of British Architects on 18 May 1857 (*Builder*, 1857, xv. 287–366). In 1852 Buckingham Palace and the neighbouring district of Pimlico between St. James's Park and the Royal Mews were improved from his designs. The works carried out at the palace included the ball-room, supper-room, and connecting galleries, and on the south side of the palace he erected the Duchy of Cornwall office, the district post office, and other buildings. The west wing of the Ordnance Office, Pall Mall, which is only a small portion of a great scheme; extensive alterations, both of the central portion of the National Gallery in 1861 and of Marlborough House; the library of the Patent Office; and the new Stationery Office, were all due to Pennethorne. In 1865 the Royal Institute of British Architects, of which he had been a fellow since 1840, conferred on Pennethorne the high honour of its royal gold medal (*Building News*, 1865, xii. 396).

His last and his most successful work was the University of London in Burlington Gardens. The adjoining Burlington House, Piccadilly, had been acquired by the government under his advice, and had been appropriated for the accommodation of the learned societies removed from Somerset House, and for the Royal Academy, removed from Trafalgar Square. The plans for the University of London were approved in 1866, but underwent some modification. The interior arrangements are convenient and admirable in every way, and the façade exhibits the sister arts of architecture and sculpture in graceful combination. The sculptures commemorate the objects of the institution, and are not merely decorative (*Builder*, 1869, xxvii. 303). Pennethorne was knighted, in recognition of his public services, in November 1870.

Among designs for public buildings elaborated by Pennethorne, but not carried out, were some for the great public offices in Downing Street and Pall Mall. He also suggested many alterations and extensions for the National Gallery, so as to incorporate with its present site that of the adjoining barracks and workhouse. He also prepared drawings for a new public picture gallery, to be erected on a new site.

Pennethorne died suddenly from heart disease, on 1 Sept. 1871, at his residence, Worcester Park, Surrey, and was buried at Highgate. He left a family of four sons and three daughters.

As a servant of the government, Pennethorne was subjected to continual disappointment in his capacity of artist. Few of his numerous designs was he allowed to execute on the scale on which he projected them; and most of the works with which his name is associated represent mere fragments of his original schemes. Under great discouragements he faithfully performed his public duties, and won general respect.

[Cates's Biogr. Dict.; Biographical Notice of the late Sir James Pennethorne, Transactions Royal Institute of British Architects, 1871–2, pp. 53–69, read 18 Dec. 1871; Builder, 1866 pp. 877–98, 1871 p. 77, 1872 p. 22; Dictionary of Architecture of the Architectural Publication Society, vol. vi. s.v.; Pennethorne and Public Improvements, a Retrospect, in the Mechanics' Magazine, vol. xcv. (new ser. vol. xxvi.), 7 and 14 Oct. 1871, pp. 272 and 285; T. M. Rickman on Metropolitan Improvements, Transactions R.I.B.A., 1858–9, pp. 71–4.] A. C.

**PENNETHORNE, JOHN** (1808–1888), architect and mathematician, son of Thomas Pennethorne and younger brother of Sir James Pennethorne [q. v.], was born at Worcester on 4 Jan. 1808. At an early age he entered the office of John Nash [q. v.] in London, and became the favourite pupil of his master. In 1830 he began a five years' tour of professional study in Europe and Egypt, visiting Paris, Milan, Florence, Venice, Rome, Athens, and Thebes. On his first visit to Athens in 1832 he observed the curvature of the horizontal lines of the Parthenon, and other deviations from recognised rules. While spending the winter of 1833 at Thebes he made careful studies of the mouldings and coloured decorations of the temples and tombs, and particularly of the curved lines of the great temple at Medinet Haboo. Returning to Athens in 1834, he renewed his study of the Parthenon, taking wax moulds of the mouldings and ornaments. He returned to England in 1835,

but in 1837 he again visited Athens to make more complete observations and measurements of the curved lines and the inclination of the columns of the Parthenon. He finally came to the conclusion that there was no foundation in fact for the universally received notion that the system of design in Greek architecture was absolutely rectilinear. This discovery was first publicly noticed in 1838 by Joseph Hoffer in C. F. L. Förster's 'Allgemeine Bauzeitung,' 1838, vol. iii. p. 249, plates ccxxxvii–ix; but Hoffer quoted measurements of the Parthenon, which had been made subsequent to Pennethorne's investigations by Schaubert, a Prussian investigator. Schaubert arrived at the same conclusions as Pennethorne, and anticipated Pennethorne's publication of his results.

In 1844 Pennethorne published, for private circulation, a pamphlet of sixty-four pages, 'The Elements and Mathematical Principles of the Greek Architects and Artists, recovered by an Analysis and Study of the remaining works of Architecture designed and erected in the age of Pericles,' in which he showed how passages in Plato, Aristotle, and Vitruvius, hitherto obscure, were explained and illustrated by his discoveries in Athens. He set forth a theory of 'optical corrections.' The Greek architects, he showed, changed the first figure of their design into one which should produce to the eye an apparent symmetry and accuracy of outline, or, in the words of Plato, 'the artists, bidding farewell to truth, change the real symmetry, and accommodate to images such commensurations as are only apparently beautiful.'

His discoveries were in 1846 pursued by Mr. F. C. Penrose, who, in 1851, published his 'Investigations of the Principles of Athenian Architecture.' The elaborate and exact measurements here given supplied Pennethorne with materials to fully work out his theory of optical corrections. Long-continued ill-health interrupted his studies, but in 1878 he published, in a noble folio volume, 'The Geometry and Optics of Ancient Architecture, illustrated by examples from Thebes, Athens, and Rome,' London and Edinburgh, 1878, with fifty-six plates in line and colour, and numerous woodcuts. Pennethorne sets forth in minute detail his theory of the manner in which the actual proportions of the original design were adapted to the optical conditions of correct perspective.

In February 1879 he contributed to the 'Transactions of the Royal Institute of British Architects,' 1878–9, a paper on 'The Connection between Ancient Art and the Ancient Geometry, as illustrated by Works of the Age of Pericles.' Here he again explained how the Greek architects, having first designed a building so that geometrically its proportions were harmonious, afterwards corrected those dimensions with reference to the visual angle under which it would be seen, and by these methods of work produced a building which optically displayed the same harmony of proportion as characterised the merely geometrical projection.

Pennethorne died at his residence, Hamstead, Yarmouth, Isle of Wight, on 20 Jan. 1888.

[F. C. Penrose in the Times, 25 Jan. 1888; Breton's Athènes décrite et dessinée, Paris, 1868, p. 92; Dictionary of Architecture, vol. vi. 'Optical Corrections.'] A. C.

PENNEY, WILLIAM, Lord Kinloch (1801–1872), Scottish judge, son of William Penney, merchant, Glasgow, and Elizabeth, daughter of David Johnston, D.D., North Leith, was born at Glasgow in 1801, and educated at the university there. On completing his education he entered the office of Alexander Morrison, solicitor, and afterwards spent some time in an accountant's office. In 1824 he was called to the bar, and soon gained a large practice, principally in commercial cases. In politics he was a conservative. He was raised to the bench on the recommendation of Lord Derby, in May 1858, on the death of Lord Handyside, taking the courtesy title of Lord Kinloch. When a vacancy occurred in the inner house of the court of session, on Lord Curriehill's death, Penney succeeded to the post in 1868. 'Though not without some faults of judicial demeanour, he was remarkable not only for the elegance of his judgments, but for their generally just practical sense and wisdom.' He died at Hartrigge House, near Jedburgh, on 31 Oct. 1872. Penney was twice married: first, in 1828, to Janet, daughter of Charles Campbell of Lecknary, Argyllshire (*d.* 1839); and, secondly, in 1842, to Louisa, daughter of John Campbell of Kinloch, Perthshire. He left five sons and seven daughters.

Penney was the author of several religious works in prose and verse, which attained some measure of popularity. Their titles are: 1. 'The Circle of Christian Doctrine, a Handbook of Faith, framed out of a Layman's Experience,' Edinburgh, 1861; 2nd ed. 1861; 3rd ed. 1865. 2. 'Time's Treasure, or Devout Thoughts for every Day of the Year, expressed in verse,' Edinburgh, 1863; 2nd ed. 1863; 3rd ed. 1865. A selection entitled 'Devout Moments' appeared in 1866. 3. 'Studies for Sunday Evening,' Edinburgh, 1866. 4. 'Faith's Jewels presented

in Verse, with other Devout Verses,' Edinburgh, 1869. 5. 'Thoughts of Christ for every Day in the Year,' London, 1871. 6. 'Readings in Holy Writ,' Edinburgh, 1871. 7. 'Hymns to Christ,' Edinburgh, 1872.

[Journal of Jurisprudence, xvi. 650, 664; Law Magazine and Review for 1872, new ser. i. 1075.] A. H. M.

PENNIE, JOHN FITZGERALD (1782–1848), writer, was born on 25 March 1782 at the vicarage, East Lulworth, Dorset, where his parents were probably acting in some domestic capacity. Pennie had little or no regular education, and was practically self-taught. At fifteen he wrote a tragedy, called 'The Unhappy Shepherdess,' founded on a tale in Robert Greene's 'History of Dorastus and Fawnia.' A fragment is printed in his 'Tale of a Modern Genius.' An appreciative neighbour, Captain Hay Forbes, advised him to take the work to London, and Pennie obtained an introduction to the manager of Covent Garden Theatre, who advised him to go home and write another tragedy. After brief experiences as a solicitor's clerk in Bristol, and as an usher in a private school at Honiton, he joined a travelling company of actors in the west of England, and remained on the stage in a humble capacity for some years. He diversified the occupation by taking a trip to Malta as companion to a young officer. About 1810 he married Cordelia, orphan daughter of Jerome Whitfield, a London attorney, and engaged the theatre at Shaftesbury in order to present a comedy by himself. His company included the mother and sister of Edmund Kean [q. v.] The venture ruined him, and he suffered extreme poverty. In 1814 a company at Chepstow performed for his benefit a play of his own, 'Gonzanga,' which was published in No. 10 of Coleman's 'British Theatre' (continuation of the 'Rejected Theatre') in October 1814. Some other theatrical engagements followed; but he quarrelled with all his managers. His tragedy 'Ethelwolf, or the Danish Pirates,' published in 1821, after being performed at Weymouth in 1826, was produced at the Coburg Theatre, London, in 1827, and 'The Varangian, or Masonic Honor' (published in pt. ii. of 'Britain's Historical Drama'), was played with success at Southampton. 'Ethelred the Usurper,' a tragedy written in 1817, was considered for production at the Haymarket Theatre, and the 'Eve of St. Bruce,' written in 1832 for Covent Garden; but neither was performed.

Meanwhile he had opened a school at Lulworth, and published in 1817 'The Royal Minstrel,' an epic poem, the copyright of which he sold to a London publisher. The school proved a failure. Early in 1828 he moved to Kesworth Cottage, near Wareham, and commenced to write in the 'Dorset County Chronicle' and in the 'West of England Magazine.' Friends afterwards enabled him to build a cottage on the heath at Stoborough, near Wareham, which he named Rogvald, after his second epic published in 1823. There he resided for the rest of his life. To provide for his son and his son's children he involved himself in debt, from which he had just cleared himself when he died, on 13 July 1848. His wife died two days previously. They were both buried at East Lulworth.

Pennie's undisciplined talents lend some interest to his career and writings. His autobiography, 'The Tale of a Modern Genius,' published in 1827 under the pseudonym 'Sylvaticus,' displays much true æsthetic feeling struggling against a bitter sense of ill-usage and neglect. Pennie left several works in various stages of progress, a prose tale, called 'The Widowed Bride,' being in the printer's hands. Besides the works already mentioned, Pennie published: 1. 'The Garland of Wild Roses,' poems for children, London, 1822. 2. 'The Harp of Parnassus,' London, 1822. 3. 'Scenes in Palestine, or Dramatic Sketches from the Bible,' London and Dorchester, 1825. 4. 'Britain's Historical Drama,' 1st series (British, Roman, and Saxon periods), London, 1832; 2nd series (Saxon, Danish, and Norman periods), London, 1839.

[Gent. Mag. 1849, i. pp. 656–9; Pennie's Tale of a Modern Genius, passim; Dorset County Chronicle, 20 July 1848.] B. P.

PENNINGTON. [See also PENINGTON.]

PENNINGTON, SIR ISAAC, M.D. (1745–1817), physician, son of Paul Pennington, captain of a merchantman, was born at Longmire in Foreness Fell, Lancashire, in 1745, and, after education at Sedbergh grammar school, entered at St. John's College, Cambridge, as a sizar, 12 Aug. 1762. He became a Lupton scholar on 4 Nov. 1766. He went out as thirteenth wrangler in 1767, one of his examiners being Richard Watson, whom he succeeded as professor of chemistry. He was admitted a fellow of St. John's, 22 March 1768, and so continued till his death, having on 18 Oct. 1775 been admitted to the faculty fellowship in medicine which enabled him to retain his fellowship. He graduated M.A. in 1770, and M.D. in 1777. He became professor of chemistry in 1773, and in 1793 resigned, and was appointed regius professor of physic. In 1785 he was elected physician

to Addenbrooke's Hospital, and in 1796 was knighted. In the College of Physicians he was elected a fellow on 29 March 1779, and delivered the Harveian oration in 1783, but did not print his composition. He was unmarried, and by his will, proved 11 March 1817, he appointed the Rev. James Wood (master), Rev. Laurence Palk Baker (fellow), and Rev. Charles Blick (fellow and bursar), his executors. He bequeathed his property in St. Sepulchre's parish, Cambridge, to the master—this included the house (now 69 Bridge Street) in which he lived—and, after a number of small legacies to servants and friends, bequeathed the residue of his estate to the college, upon trust to pay 200*l.* a year to the master if he were also rector of Freshwater in the Isle of Wight, but if he be not rector of Freshwater, then the income to accumulate and be invested until he be rector, when he was to receive 200*l.* a year and the interest on the accumulations. He also founded exhibitions in the college, with a preference to candidates from Hawkshead and Cotton near his birthplace in Lancashire. He died on 3 Feb. 1817, and is commemorated by a tablet in the chapel of St. John's. Traditions of his popularity long remained in the university.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. ii. 320; Cambr. Univ. Calendar; Baker's Hist. of St. John's Coll. ed. Mayor; Extracts from records of St. John's Coll. kindly made by Mr. R. F. Scott.] N. M.

PENNINGTON, JAMES (1777–1862), writer on currency and banking, born at Kendal, Westmoreland, on 23 Feb. 1777, was son of William Pennington, a bookseller, and his wife Agnes Wilson. Educated at first at Kendal grammar school, he afterwards became a pupil of John Dalton (1766–1844) [q. v.] of Manchester. Subsequently Pennington engaged in business in London. At the end of 1831 he was appointed by the president of the India board to investigate the accounts of the East India Company, but the appointment was cancelled on the change of administration. Thrown out of employment, Pennington devoted himself to the study of currency and finance, and attracted the favourable notice of Huskisson, Ricardo, and Tooke. On the recommendation of the last-mentioned, he joined the Political Economy Club in 1828; he also contributed appendices to Tooke's 'Letter to Lord Grenville,' 1829, and to his 'History of Prices' (vol. ii. App. C). When, on the emancipation of the negroes in 1833, it became necessary to regulate the currency of the West Indies, Pennington was engaged for that purpose by the treasury, and framed the measures which were adopted. In 1848 he published 'The Currency of the British Colonies,' 8vo, which was printed for official use, and which contains much that is of permanent value.

As early as 1827 Pennington had urged, in a paper submitted to Huskisson, the desirability of some restriction on the issue of notes by the Bank of England. He had further explained his views in 'A Letter to Kirkman Finlay, Esq., on the Importation of Foreign Corn, and the Value of the Precious Metals in Different Countries. To which are added Observations on Money and the Foreign Exchange,' London, 8vo, 1840. During the preparation of the Bank Act (1844) he was confidentially consulted by Sir Robert Peel. Though he accepted the principle of that measure, he was not in entire agreement with its advocates, and he disapproved of the separation of the banking and issue departments of the Bank of England. From this time until his death he was frequently consulted by the government on currency and finance, on which he was regarded as one of the leading authorities. He died, on 23 March 1862, at Clapham Common. He married, in 1811, Mary Anne, eldest daughter of John Harris of Clapham, by whom he had four sons and three daughters. His son, Arthur Robert, is now canon of Lincoln and rector of Utterby, Louth.

[Annual Reg. 1862, p. 390; Economist, 19 April 1862; Times, 25 March 1862; McCulloch's Lit. of Political Economy, p. 80; Canon Pennington's Recollection of Persons and Events, pp. 109–11; private information.] W. A. S. H.

PENNINGTON, JOHN, first Baron Muncaster in the peerage of Ireland and fifth baronet (1737–1813), born in 1737, was the eldest son of Sir Joseph Pennington, fourth baronet, and Sarah, daughter and sole heiress of John Moore, esq., of Somerset. The family came originally from Penington in Furness, Lancashire, but had resided at Muncaster, on the river Usk, in Cumberland, since the middle of the thirteenth century. They had also acquired property, chiefly by marriage, in Westmoreland and Yorkshire. Closely connected with the Percys, the Penningtons bore the Percy arms with a slight change.

The most distinguished ancestor, Sir John Pennington (*d.* 1470), accompanied Henry Percy, seventh earl of Northumberland (1421–1461), on expeditions into Scotland, and was concerned more than once in 'certain riots and misgovernances in Yorkshire' (cf. Nicholas, *Proc. of Privy Council*, v. 271). He remained faithful to the house of Lancaster during the wars of the Roses, and is said to have

given refuge to Henry VI at Muncaster, probably after the battle of Hexham, in 1464. Henry is said to have presented him with a cup, which became known as the 'luck of Muncaster,' and is still at Muncaster Castle. He died on 6 July 1470 (cf. Foster, *Peerage*; *Transactions of the Hist. Soc. of Lanc. and Cheshire*, 1867–8, p. 65; Jefferson, *Hist. of Allerdale Ward*, p. 330).

Muncaster's great-grandfather, William Pennington (1655–1730), who was cousin to Admiral Sir John Penington [q. v.], was created a baronet on 21 June 1676. Ferguson is wrong in identifying him with William Pennington the 'most munificent Patron and ever-bountiful Friend' of Lilly the astrologer (see Lilly, *Life and Times*, pp. 28 sq.) The latter may have been the baronet's uncle, who died in 1683. Sir William acquired the manor of Warke or Warter in Yorkshire by his marriage with Isabel, daughter of John Stapleton, esq. He died at Muncaster on 1 July 1730. There are two portraits of him at Muncaster Castle.

His son, Sir Joseph Pennington (1678–1744), second baronet and Muncaster's grandfather, educated at Queen's College, Oxford, was appointed comptroller of the excise cash on 3 Dec. 1723, and represented Cumberland in parliament as a supporter of Walpole from 1735 till his death. An inscription to him in Muncaster church calls him 'the most worthy friend and patriot.' There is a portrait of him in the castle. He married Margaret, fourth daughter of John Lowther, first viscount Lonsdale [q.v.] She died on 15 Sept. 1738, and was buried in Bath Abbey (*Gent. Mag.* 1738, p. 49). Besides a daughter Katherine (who married Robert Lowther, esq., governor of Barbados, and was mother of James, first earl of Lonsdale), he had four sons, two of whom predeceased him. The other two succeeded in turn to the baronetcy. The elder of these, Sir John Pennington (*d.* 1768), third baronet, succeeded in April 1731 to his father's place of comptroller of the cash of the excise (*Gent. Mag.* 1731, p. 219), and represented Cumberland from 1744 till his death. He was colonel of the Cumberland militia during the siege of Carlisle by the rebels in 1745 (Mounsey, *Carlisle in 1745*). On 24 April 1756 he was appointed lord-lieutenant of Westmoreland (*ib.* 1756, p. 206). He died unmarried, and the baronetage passed to his younger brother, Sir Joseph Pennington (1718–1793), fourth baronet, and father of the first Lord Muncaster, who was appointed commissioner of the lotteries in 1755 (*ib.* 1755, p. 234), and died at Warter Hall, Yorkshire, on 4 Feb. 1793 (*ib.* 1793, i. 186). There are portraits of him in the dining-room and library at Muncaster Castle. He had three sons and four daughters.

The eldest son, John, first lord Muncaster, entered the army as an ensign in the 3rd footguards on 17 Sept. 1756, and became lieutenant and captain in 1762. In 1765 he exchanged into the 2nd footguards as major, and in 1773 became lieutenant-colonel of the 37th regiment of infantry. He met Dr. Johnson in the same year at Sir Eyre Coote's house at Fort George, Scotland (Boswell, ed. Hill, v. 125–7), and debated with him the comparative merit of discipline in semi-savages such as the Arabs and trained troops. The colonel, who took the side of the Arabs, had the best of the argument. Boswell also records a conversation between Johnson and Pennington on Garrick's acting.

Pennington soon retired from the army and entered upon a political career. In 1780 he came forward as a candidate for Cumberland in opposition to the Lowther candidate, but did not go to the poll. After the election he issued an address 'To the Gentlemen, Clergy, and Freeholders of the county of Cumberland, and of Great Britain in general,' in which he maintained that Sir James Lowther had at first given him his support and then canvassed against him. On 4 Dec. 1781 Pennington was returned for Milbourne Port, one of Lord North's boroughs, and was re-elected in 1784 and 1790. He was an early friend of Pitt, and on 28 May 1796 was returned for Colchester as his supporter. He was elected for Westmoreland on 2 June 1806, and re-elected on 6 Nov. of the same year, 5 June 1807, and 12 Oct. 1812. Meanwhile he had been created (21 Oct. 1783) an Irish peer, with the title of Baron Muncaster. On 20 March 1789 Muncaster seconded a motion by Mr. Beaufoy for leave to bring in a bill providing for an annual commemoration of the revolution of 1688. The motion was carried unanimously (*Parl. Hist.* xxvii. 1336). On 14 Dec. 1790 Muncaster 'pronounced an eulogium on the convention with Spain' (*ib.* xxviii. 981).

Muncaster corresponded on very intimate terms with William Wilberforce both on public and private matters. Wilberforce on one occasion wrote to him: 'I believe you and I are tuned in the same key, as the musicians speak, and that we strike, therefore, in unison' (*Wilberforce Corresp.* i. 68). Muncaster published in 1792 'Historical Sketches of the Slave Trade and its Effects in Africa.' Milner, dean of Carlisle, and Mason the poet were also among his friends and correspondents.

Muncaster nearly rebuilt the castle from

which he took his title, greatly improved the park, and erected a series of memorials of the Pennington family in the chancel of Muncaster church, where there is an inscription to himself. He died at his seat on 8 Oct. 1813. By his wife Penelope, daughter and heiress of James Compton, esq. (she died by an accident while canvassing Westmoreland for her husband on 15 Nov. 1806), he had three children; a daughter, Maria Frances Margaret, who married, in 1811, James Lindsay, twenty-fourth earl of Crawford and Balcarres, and died in 1850, alone survived him. The title of Muncaster and the seat in parliament for Westmoreland passed to his younger brother,

Lowther Pennington, second Baron Muncaster (1745–1818). Lowther entered the army as an ensign in the Coldstream guards on 4 July 1764, became lieutenant and captain in 1772, captain and lieutenant-colonel in 1778, major-general in 1793, lieutenant-general on 26 June 1799, colonel of the 10th royal veteran battalion in 1806, and full general on 25 April 1808. While serving in America in 1777 he killed in a duel at New York Captain Tollemache, 'on a foolish quarrel about humming a tune' (H. Walpole to Countess of Ossory, 13 Nov. 1777). In June 1795 he was colonel of the 131st foot, called 'Penington's regiment,' and was soon after placed on half-pay. He lived for some time in Chelsea, and died at his house in Grosvenor Place on 29 July 1818, being buried in the vaults of St. George's, Hanover Square. By his wife Esther, second daughter of Thomas Barry, esq., of Clapham, and widow of James Morrison, esq., whom he married in 1802, he had an only son, Lowther Augustus John, third lord Muncaster (1802–1838). The latter's son, Gamel Augustus Pennington (1831–1862), was fourth lord Muncaster, and was succeeded by his younger brother, Josslyn Francis Pennington (*b.* 1834).

[Foster's Pedigree of Pennington, Baron Muncaster, privately printed, 1878; Lodge's Peerage of Ireland; Ferguson's Cumberland and Westmoreland M.P.'s, p. 428; Lysons's Magna Brit. iv. p. lxi; Gent. Mag. 1813, ii. 405; Whellan's Cumberland and Westmoreland, p. 490, &c.; Nicolson and Burn's Cumberland, ii. 20; Jefferson's Cumberland, ii. 228; Ret. Memb. Parl.; Hart's Army Lists; Biogr. Dict. of Living Authors, 1816; W. Wilberforce's Correspondence, passim; authorities cited.] G. Le G. N.

**PENNINGTON, MONTAGU** (1762–1849), biographer and editor, born in December 1762, was youngest son of Thomas Pennington, D.D., rector of Tunstall, Kent (*d.* at Deal, 26 Nov. 1802), who married Margaret, youngest child of Nicholas Carter, D.D. (she died 16 Feb. 1798), and sister of the 'learned' Elizabeth Carter [q. v.] He was educated at home by his aunt. His baptismal name was derived from his aunt's friend, Mrs. Elizabeth Montagu [q. v.], who showed him many acts of kindness, and he accompanied her on a four months' visit to Paris in 1776. On 23 Oct. 1777 he matriculated at Trinity College, Oxford, graduating B.A. 1781, M.A. 1784. Having taken holy orders, he was appointed in 1789 to the living of Sutton, near Dover, and to that of Westwell, near Ashford, in December 1803; but for nearly twenty years, beginning about 1788, he resided at Deal with his aunt, in a house which she left to him, and was curate-in-charge of the adjoining parish of Walmer (Elvin, *Records of Walmer*, p. 111). He was fond of travel, and in 1791 was at Lille, whence the revolutionary troubles drove him to Holland. In 1806 he became vicar of Northbourne, near Deal, and in 1814 perpetual curate of St. George's Chapel, Deal; both preferments he held until his death at Deal on 15 April 1849. He married Mary, widow of Captain Watts, R.N. She died at Deal on 24 March 1830, aged 67, without issue by her second husband.

Pennington was the sole literary acquaintance of Sir Egerton Brydges in his own neighbourhood, and was described by him as a good classical scholar, with a 'great memory' and admirable judgment. A manuscript note (probably by Pennington himself, as the copy was that given to him by Brydges) in Brydges's 'Censura Literaria' (cf. vol. viii. pref. and vol. x. pref.) at the British Museum states that Pennington contributed all the articles in the section called 'The Ruminator,' which are marked ‡*‡, and P.M., and one signed 'Londinensis.' Two further essays by him, probably Nos. 77 and 85, which are both signed P.M., are included in Brydges's separate publication, which is also called 'The Ruminator' (cf. i. 202–8 and *Censura Lit.* viii. 82–7).

Pennington was executor and residuary legatee to his aunt, Elizabeth Carter, who left him all her papers. He prepared for press her translation of Epictetus, 4th edit. 1807, 2 vols.; 'Memoirs of Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, with a New Edition of her Poems, miscellaneous Essays in Prose,' 1807, 2nd edit. 1808, 2 vols.; 'A Series of Letters between Elizabeth Carter and Catherine Talbot, 1741–1770, with Letters from Elizabeth Carter to Mrs. Vesey,' 1808 2 vols., 1809 4 vols.; 'Works of Miss Catherine Talbot, 7th edit., first published by Elizabeth Carter, and now republished,' 1809, 8th edit. 1812, 9th edit. 1819; and 'Letters

from Mrs. Elizabeth Carter to Mrs. Montagu, 1755–1800,' 1817, 3 vols. His chief publication on his own account was 'Redemption, or a View of the Rise and Progress of the Christian Religion,' London, 1811, 8vo.

[Gent. Mag. 1830 pt. i. p. 283, 1849 pt. ii. p. 323; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Sir S. E. Brydges's Autobiogr. i. 44, 46; Brydges's Anglo-Genevan, ii. 469; Mrs. Carter's Letters to Mrs. Montagu, iii. 331; Life of Mrs. Carter, i. 5, 153.] W. P. C.

PENNY, EDWARD (1714–1791), portrait and historical painter, one of the twin elder sons of Robert Penny, surgeon, by Clare, daughter of William Trafford, esq., of Swythamley, Staffordshire, was born at Knutsford, Cheshire, on 1 Aug. 1714. Having at an early age shown an inclination for painting, he was sent to London and placed under the tuition of Thomas Hudson. Afterwards he went to Rome and studied under Marco Benefiale. He returned to England about 1748, and began his professional career by painting small whole-lengths, which possessed much force and character. At a later period he painted more important subjects, but they were not equal to his earlier works. His rustic and pastoral scenes, however, have a little of the feeling of Morland. He appears to have joined the Society of Artists in 1762, when he exhibited a small whole-length of a lady and a scene in 'Jane Shore.' In 1763 he sent to the exhibition in Spring Gardens a scene from the 'Aminta' of Tasso, and a small whole-length of George Edwards, the ornithologist; in 1764, 'The Death of General Wolfe,' which was engraved by Richard Houston, and a scene illustrating Swift's 'Description of a City Shower;' in 1765, 'The Marquess of Granby relieving a Sick Soldier,' engraved by Richard Houston, and 'The Return from the Fair;' in 1767, 'The Husbandman's Return from Work;' and in 1768, 'The Generous Behaviour of the Chevalier Bayard,' engraved by William Pether. Penny, together with Benjamin West, Richard Wilson, and others, then withdrew from the Incorporated Society in consequence of dissensions which had arisen within its ranks, and in December 1768 was nominated one of the foundation members of the Royal Academy of Arts, and its first professor of painting. To the first exhibition in 1769 he contributed the smithy scene from Shakespeare's 'King John,' which was engraved by Richard Houston, and to that of 1770 'Imogen discovered in the Cave.' In 1772 he exhibited 'Lord Clive explaining to the Nabob the Situation of the Invalids in India,' and 'Rosamond and Queen Eleanor;' in 1774, 'The Profligate punished by Neglect and Contempt' and 'The Virtuous comforted by Sympathy and Attention,' a pair engraved by Valentine Green; in 1776, 'Jane Shore led to do Penance at St. Paul's;' in 1779, 'The Return from the Chase;' in 1780, 'Apparent Dissolution' and 'Returning Animation,' a pair engraved by William Sedgwick; in 1781, 'Lavinia discovered gleaning;' and in 1782, 'The Benevolent Physician,' 'The Rapacious Quack,' and 'Widow Costard's Cow and Goods, distrained for rent, are redeemed by the generosity of Johnny Pearmain.' He then ceased to exhibit, and was obliged by ill-health to resign the professorship of painting, in which he was succeeded by James Barry. He was the author of a course of lectures upon the art of painting. These lectures, which received a high encomium from his successor Barry, were never published, but were bequeathed by his will (P. C. C. 534 Beevor) to his nephew, the Ven. George Buckley Bower, archdeacon of Richmond.

Penny married, after 1753 and before 1768, Elizabeth, daughter of John Simmons of Millbank, Westminster, and widow of Richard Fortnam, a lady who possessed valuable leasehold property on the Grosvenor estate in London. She died at Chiswick on 30 April 1790. He also died at Chiswick on 16 Nov. 1791, and was buried with his wife at Chessington, Surrey.

Two of Penny's works, 'Imogen in the Cave' and 'Jane Shore doing Penance,' now belong to Mr. H. W. Forsyth Harwood of Kensington. Others are in the possession of the Rev. E. W. Penny of Dersingham, Norfolk, and Mr. T. and the Misses Lowndes of Liverpool.

[Gent. Mag. 1791, ii. 1162; Bryan's Dictionary of Painters and Engravers, ed. Graves and Armstrong, 1886–9, ii. 270; Sandby's History of the Royal Academy of Arts, 1862, i. 83; Seguier's Critical and Commercial Dictionary of the Works of Painters, 1870; Exhibition Catalogues of the Society of Artists, 1762–8; Royal Academy Exhibition Catalogues, 1769–82; information from H. W. Forsyth Harwood, esq.] R. E. G.

PENNY, JOHN (*d.* 1520?), bishop of Carlisle, was educated at Lincoln College, Oxford, and at some unknown time became LL.D. of Cambridge. In 1477 he was a canon at the abbey of St. Mary de Pratis at Leicester; on 25 June 1496 he became abbot there. He was allowed to hold the Austin priory of Bradley, Leicestershire, *in commendam* after 14 Sept. 1503, and in 1504 he became bishop of Bangor. He was translated to the

bishopric of Carlisle by a bull dated 22 Sept. 1508, but did not receive the spiritualities of his see until 29 June 1509. He was a man of active mind, and a letter preserved, which he wrote to Wolsey in 1519, shows that he was ready to support the cardinal in his scheme of reform. But he therein speaks of his illness, and he died at Leicester about 1519 or 1520, and was buried in the abbey. The tomb was afterwards moved into St. Margaret's Church. He had added to the abbey buildings, and gave lands towards a free school in St. Margaret's parish.

[Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Angl. ed. Hardy; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 22, 525; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, ii. 716; Dugdale's Monasticon, vi. i. 493; Nichols's Leicestershire, i. 268, ii. 510; Letters and Papers, Henry VIII, i. 5616, iii. i. 17.] W. A. J. A.

**PENNY**, JOHN (1803–1885), journalist, born on 16 Feb. 1803, was third son of Elias Penny, bookseller and publisher, of Sherborne, Dorset, and was educated at the king's school there. In 1828 he became proprietor and editor of the old 'Sherborne Journal.' In the columns of the paper he championed the cause of reform, and thus earned the gratitude of the whigs. In 1832 he published a pamphlet entitled 'Dorsetshire emancipated from Tory Dominion,' and was rewarded by Lord John Russell with the stamp-distributorship of Dorset. Soon afterwards he was promoted to a similar but more important post at Leeds. While there he wrote a drama, called 'Stephen, King of England,' 8vo, London, 1851, which was subsequently produced at the Leeds Theatre and favourably received. In 1858 he gave up the 'Sherborne Journal,' and subsequently retired from official life. He died at Bath on 7 Feb. 1885, and was buried at Exeter with his wife and only son, who had predeceased him. Penny's eldest brother, William Webb Penny (1799–1888), was proprietor and editor of the 'Sherborne Mercury,' one of the oldest papers in the west of England, from 1829 till 1842. His youngest brother, Charles Penny, D.D. (1809–1875), of Pembroke College, Oxford, was head master of Crewkerne grammar school from 1838 until 1875, and for many years rector of Chaffcombe, Somerset.

[Sherborne Journal, 12 Feb. 1885; Mayo's Bibl. Dorset.; Allibone's Dict. of Authors; Crockford's Clerical Directory, 1874; information from the Rev. E. L. Penny, D.D.] G. G.

**PENNY**, NICHOLAS (1790–1858), brigadier-general, son of Robert Penny of Weymouth, Dorset, the descendant of a family long settled at that place, was born in November 1790, and was appointed to the Bengal army in 1806. He was gazetted ensign in the Bengal native infantry 16 Aug. 1807, lieutenant 19 Dec. 1812, brevet captain 5 March 1822, regimental captain 13 May 1825, brevet major 19 Jan. 1826, regimental major 2 Feb. 1842, brevet lieutenant-colonel 23 Nov. 1841, regimental lieutenant-colonel 29 July 1848, brevet colonel 7 June 1849, regimental colonel 15 Sept. 1851, and major-general 28 Nov. 1854. Penny served with the utmost distinction throughout the siege of Bhurtpore, the first Sikh war, and the Indian mutiny, from 1825 to 1858, and was constantly employed on active service. In November 1825 he attended the commander-in-chief, Lord Amherst, on service to Agra. He was present as deputy assistant quartermaster-general with the second division of infantry at the siege of Bhurtpore 3 Dec. 1825. He was thanked in divisional orders by Major-general Nicholls for his services, and shared in the Bhurtpore prize-money. In 1853 he was granted the India 'Retrospective' medal with the 'Bhurtpore' clasp. Penny was brigade-major on the establishment from 2 Oct. 1826 to 19 May 1828. He was appointed to Muttra and Agra frontier 4 Oct. 1826, deputy assistant adjutant-general on the establishment 19 May 1828, and assistant adjutant-general of a division 9 July 1832. He was granted the brevet rank of major for distinguished services in the field (*London Gazette*, 1 Aug. 1834), and was appointed to command the Nusseree battalion 2 June 1841, and was reported as 'a most zealous officer' (*Inspection Report*, 30 Oct. 1841). He was appointed to the command of the twelfth brigade of the fifth division of infantry of the army of the Sutlej on 1 Jan. 1846, and on the breaking up of this brigade was appointed to the command of the second infantry brigade 16 Feb. 1846. He served at the battle of Aliwal, and was highly commended in despatches (*London Gazette*, 27 March 1846). At the battle of Sobraon, in the first Sikh war, Penny was slightly wounded; his services were highly spoken of in despatches both by Major-general Sir H. Smith and by the governor-general, Sir Henry Hardinge (*ib.* 1 April 1846). He received for this campaign the 'Aliwal' medal with the 'Sobraon' clasp, and was created C.B. 30 June 1846. He was posted to the 69th Bengal native infantry, and ordered to Lahore 27 Sept. 1848. He was appointed to the command of the seventh brigade of the third infantry division of the army of the Punjab, with the rank of brigadier, 13 Oct. 1848. He had ceased to command the Nusseree battalion, on promotion to the rank of

lieutenant-colonel, 7 Oct. 1848. He was removed from the 69th to the 70th Bengal N. I., 12 Jan. 1849, and was present at the action at Chillianwalla in command of the reserve, and also at the action at Goojerat. He was again mentioned in despatches, and received the thanks of the governor-general, lord Dalhousie. Penny was removed to the 2nd European regiment 31 March 1849, and was appointed aide-de-camp to the queen, and granted the brevet rank of colonel for his services in the Punjab (*ib.* 5 June 1849). He also received the 'Punjab' medal with the 'Chillianwallah' and 'Goojerat' clasps. In 1850 he was removed from the 2nd European regiment to the 40th Bengal N. I., was appointed second-class brigadier, and posted to the district of Rohilcund 14 July 1851. He was transferred to the command of the Jullunder field force 2 Feb. 1852, and on 28 Aug. 1852 he was appointed to command the Sirhind division, and subsequently he was again transferred to the command of the Lind-Sangor district 22 Nov. 1853, and to the Sialkot command 19 Jan. 1854. In May 1855 he was appointed to the temporary divisional staff, and posted to the Cawnpore division, and 30 June 1857 he was appointed to the divisional staff of the army as major-general, and posted to the Meerut division. When the mutiny was at its height he was appointed to command the Delhi field force, in conjunction with that of the Meerut division, from 30 Sept. 1857. This was after the capture of Delhi, as Sir Archdale Wilson kept command until the city was taken. Penny was among the recipients of the 'Indian mutiny' medal. He was killed while in command of the Meerut division on 4 May 1858. He had advanced too far from his supports, in order to reconnoitre a village near Budaon. Of the twenty carabineers of his escort, one half fell at the first discharge from a masked battery. The general's bridle-arm being shattered by the grapeshot, his charger ran away with him close to the walls of Budaon, where he was cut down by a party of armed rebels. He was buried at Meerut.

[India Office Records and Medal Roll; Holmes's Indian Mutiny; Allen's Indian Mail; East India Register.] B. H. S.

**PENNY, THOMAS** M.D. (*d.* 1589), prebendary of St. Paul's, botanist and entomologist, the son of John Penny or Penne of Gressingham, near Lancaster, was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he matriculated as a sizar in 1550, and graduated as B.A. in 1551–2, proceeding M.A. in 1559. He took holy orders, and in 1560 was appointed to the prebend of Newington in St. Paul's Cathedral, being elected fellow of his college in the same year. Having been appointed in 1565 to preach one of the spital sermons, he was objected to by Archbishop Parker, who believed him to be ill affected to the established church. Soon afterwards he went abroad, visiting Majorca and the south of France, and residing for some time in Switzerland. He assisted Conrad Gesner, and was probably present at his death in December 1565, and assisted Wolf in arranging the plants and other collections left by Gesner. Letters from Penny to Camerarius, dated 1585, show his knowledge of insects to have been extensive, and it is probable that Gesner's drawings of butterflies passed into his hands, and at his death into those of Thomas Moffett [q. v.], whose acquaintance he had made at Cambridge. Moffett's 'Insectorum Theatrum,' published in 1634, is stated in its title to have been begun by Edward Wotton, Conrad Gesner, and Thomas Penny. While abroad Penny probably graduated M.D., and in January 1571 he was practising physic in London. At that time he failed to satisfy the College of Physicians of his qualifications; but by 1582 he was a fellow of the college. Meanwhile, in 1577, he had been deprived of his prebend for nonconformity. Penny died in 1589; by his will, dated 4 June 1588, he left a legacy to 'the poor of Gressingham and Eskrigge, where I was born.' He married Margaret, daughter of John Lucas of St. John's, near Colchester, master of requests to Edward VI. She died in 1587, and was buried in St. Peter-le-Poer, London.

*Cornus suecica*, discovered by Penny in the Cheviots, and other rare plants from both the north and the south of England, credited to him in L'Obel's 'Adversaria' (1570–1) and in Gerard's 'Herball,' show him to have been a diligent botanist. Gerard styles him 'a second Dioscorides,' and his friend Clusius, besides other plants, named the plant now known as *Hypericum balearicum*, *Myrtocistus Pennæi* in honour of its discoverer. In 1560 he wrote some Latin verses on the restitution of Bucer and Fagius.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. i. 82; Pulteney's Biogr. Sketches of Botany, i. 84–6; Somerset and Dorset Notes and Queries, December 1890; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. ii. 78, and references there given; Will in Somerset House, P.C.C. Leicester 18; L'Obel's Adversaria, pp. 358, 394, 397; Zurich Letters (Parker Soc.), i. 47, 203–4; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 188; Strype's Life of Parker; Brooks's Puritans, ii. 246, iii. 504; see art. MOFFETT, THOMAS.] G. S. B.

PENNYCUICK, JOHN (*d.* 1849), brigadier-general, entered the army on 31 Aug. 1807 as an ensign in the 78th highlanders, and became lieutenant on 15 Jan. 1812. He served in the expedition to Java, and was wounded in the attack on the entrenched camp adjoining the fort of Meester-Cornelis on 26 Aug. 1811. He was promoted captain on 14 June 1821, and took part in the Burmese war in 1825-6. He became major, unattached, on 25 April 1834, and on 8 May 1835 he obtained a majority in the 17th foot. With this regiment he made the campaign of 1839 in Afghanistan, including the capture of Ghuznee, and was afterwards employed in Beloochistan, under General Willshire, to subdue the khan of Khelat. He led the storming party in the capture of Khelat on 13 Nov. 1839, and was made C.B., having already obtained a brevet lieutenant-colonelcy for Ghuznee. He had been made a knight of the Guelphic order in 1837. He became lieutenant-colonel on 12 June 1840, and in 1841 took and destroyed some Arab posts near Aden. In 1848 he exchanged from the 17th to the 24th regiment. At the end of that year he served in the second Sikh war, and commanded a brigade, which consisted of his own and two native regiments, in Thackwell's division (afterwards Sir Colin Campbell's). He was in the force under Thackwell which turned the Sikh position on the Chenab, by crossing at Wazirabad, and he was eager to attack at once; but other councils prevailed, and the Sikhs were allowed to retire. When Lord Gough decided to attack them near Chillianwalla, on the afternoon of 13 Jan. 1849, his brigade led the attack. They were told to advance without firing, as the 10th had done at Sobraon. The 24th carried the Sikh guns with a rush; but that regiment had outstripped the two native regiments, and the men found themselves exposed, with their own arms unloaded, to a very heavy fire from the jungle round them. Pennycuick and Brooks, the other lieutenant-colonel of the 24th—'two officers not surpassed for sound judgment and military daring in this or any other army,' as Lord Gough wrote—were killed, and the brigade was driven back. The 24th lost twenty-two officers and 497 men. Among the officers killed was the youngest son of the brigadier, a boy of seventeen, the junior ensign of the regiment. Seeing his father fall, he ran to his assistance, and was himself shot through the heart as he bent over his father's body. The brigadier's eldest son, John Farrell Pennycuick, is separately noticed.

[Hart's Army List; Records of the 17th Regiment; Kaye's War in Afghanistan; Thackwell's Second Sikh War; Macpherson's Rambling Reminiscences of the Punjab Campaign; Historical Records of the 24th Regiment, by Colonels Paton, Glenfie, and Symons.] E. M. L.

PENNYCUICK, JOHN FARRELL (1829–1888), general, eldest son of Brigadier John Pennycuick [q. v.], was born on 10 Aug. 1829, and, after spending three and a half years at the Royal Military Academy, entered the royal artillery as second lieutenant on 2 May 1847. He became first lieutenant on 30 June 1848, and second captain on 21 Sept. 1854. He served in the Crimea, and took part in the battle of Inkerman, his being one of the two 9-pounder batteries attached to the second division, which were the first to engage the much more powerful artillery of the Russians. He received the brevet rank of major, and the fifth class of the Medjidieh. During the Indian mutiny he was engaged in the second relief of the Lucknow residency, the battle of Cawnpore (6 Dec. 1857), and the siege and capture of Lucknow. He served in the expedition to China in 1860, including the capture of the Taku forts, and was made brevet lieutenant-colonel (15 Feb. 1861) and C.B. He became a regimental lieutenant-colonel on 10 July 1871, regimental colonel on 1 May 1880, and on 8 Nov. of that year major-general. On 1 July 1885 he became lieutenant-general, and on 4 Jan. 1886 general. He died on 6 July 1888. He had married a daughter of W. Rutledge, esq., of Victoria, Australia, and left sons and daughters.

[Times obituary, 12 July 1888; Kane's List of Royal Artillery Officers; Kinglake's War in the Crimea.] E. M. L.

PENNYMAN, JOHN (1628–1706), pseudo-quaker, was fourth son of Sir James Pennyman (*d.* 1655) of Ormesby, Yorkshire, by his second wife, Joan Smith (*d.* 1657) of London. His half-brother, Sir James Pennyman (1609–1679), was knighted by Charles I at Durham in 1642, raised a troop of horse for the king's service at his own expense, and was created a baronet by Charles II on 22 Feb. 1664 (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1663, 1664, pp. 475, 492).

John, born at Ormesby on 14 Aug. 1628, entered the king's service at fifteen as ensign in the foot regiment of which Sir James was colonel. Upon the defeat of the royalist army, John and two brothers took refuge abroad until their father and eldest brother had made their composition with the parliament. John was apprenticed on 8 Feb. 1647 to a Mr. Fabian, a wool-draper in London, also a zealous royalist. In 1651 he attended the fifth-monarchy services of

Christopher Feake [q. v.] at Christ Church, Newgate Street, but about 1658, after Feake's committal to Windsor Castle, he joined the quakers. He was one of the 164 who, in 1659, offered 'to lie body for body' for those in prison. Within some two years he grew dissatisfied with them, and held meetings on his own account in the fields and woods two or three miles from London, although still attending the business meetings of the quakers, and 'standing by them in their sufferings.' He was successful in business, and owned houses and shops 'at the west end of St. Pauls,' which he congratulated himself on having demolished shortly before the great fire. His wife and family resided at Kentish Town. On 1 Sept. 1666 he saw the fire break out, and removed 'almost all his goods and some of his neighbours.'

Pennyman's religious opinions took a very mystical turn, and caused George Fox and his saner followers much anxiety. He claimed a special portion of 'the inner light' which directed the smallest details of his life. He saw visions, fasted for days together, and more than once went to meeting to experience a kind of euthanasia—standing on a form with 'his breath and sences taken from him for about half or quarter of an hour' (*Autobiography*). He printed and distributed protests against the Friends, at Devonshire House, Wheeler Street, Horselydown, Bull and Mouth, Ratcliff, and other meetings. His eccentricities reached a climax on 28 July 1670, when the quaker books which he had collected 'began to be an oppression.' Carrying them to the Royal Exchange, he set them on fire, and a constable thereupon carried him before Sir Thomas Bludworth (lord mayor in 1666). He was committed to Bishopsgate prison, and later to Newgate. The next day, 29 July, George Whitehead [q. v.] wrote to him that 'by his mad and wicked action he had brought a great reproach upon Friends, the devil having instigated him to burn their books.' He defended himself in a letter to his brother, which was printed and given away at the Exchange. On 10 Aug. the quakers issued a paper declaring that they had no longer union or fellowship with Pennyman, whom they considered 'in a measure broken and discomposed in his mind and understanding.' This Pennyman caused to be reprinted in red with a broad black border, and he distributed it widely. Through the influence of his brother and nephew he was soon released.

Pennyman's first wife, Elizabeth, had died, aged 24, at Aldersgate Street, on 24 Feb. 1667–8, of fever, and was buried in the Friends' burial-ground at Chequer Alley. She left five children. His second wife, Dinah, daughter of Nicholas Bond of Pall Mall, St. James's, died on 23 Aug. 1669 at her father's house, and was also buried at Chequer Alley. After her death Pennyman took her sister Mary (*b.* 1631), widow of Henry Boreman, to his house in Aldersgate on 10 Oct. 1671. Boreman was a quaker who had died in Newgate prison, 17 Oct. 1662 (Besse, *Sufferings*, i. 389). Mrs. Boreman, who had been living since at Tottenham with other widows, had dissociated herself from the quakers, and held views resembling those of the Philadelphians [see under Lead, Mrs. Jane]. Immediately after she had taken up her quarters at his house, Pennyman engaged Merchant Taylors' Hall, and, in obedience to a 'command,' invited all sects, and prepared food and drink for 250 persons, not to celebrate, but to announce his so-called marriage with the widow. William Penn protested that such proceedings were not 'plain, public, and orderly, such as are owned and practised by the people called quakers' (*Works*, ed. 1726, ii. 223). A scurrilous ballad, 'Ye Quaker's Wedding,' was sung in the streets (letter from Rebecca Travers to Margaret Fell, 5 Nov. 1671, *Swarthmore MSS.*) Pennyman and his new wife visited Essex and Hertfordshire on foot together during the winter of 1672–3, in obedience 'to special motions.' In January 1691–1692 he and his family went to live with John Barkstead, his son-in-law, at St. Helen's, Bishopsgate; but in October 1695 he was so ill that he gave directions for his burial, and wrote his epitaph (*Inscriptions on Tombs, &c., at Bunhill Fields*, 1717, p. 13). He recovered and moved to the country, where writings of Sir Matthew Hale [q. v.] fell into his hands, from which he had extracts printed, and distributed twenty thousand copies. Mrs. Boreman died, after some years of sickness, on 14 Jan. 1701. Shortly after he published 'Some of the Letters and Papers which were written by Mrs. Mary Pennyman, relating to an Holy and Heavenly Conversation, in which she lived to her Dying-Day,' London, 10 March 1701–2. In August 1703 he finished 'A Short Account of the Life of Mr. John Pennyman, which, with some of his writings (relating to Religious and Divine Matters), are to be made Publik for the Weal and Benefit of all Mankind,' London, 1703. A second edition appeared, with an appendix also by him, dated 31 Oct., and 'More Mementoes,' 8 Dec. 1705. Some more letters and papers, with an account of his death, which took place on 2 July 1706, were added by another hand. He was buried at Bunhill Fields on 9 July 1706.

Pennyman wrote a great number of small tracts, broadsides, and papers against the quakers, which he copiously distributed. The chief are: 'The Quakers challenged [of Solomon Eccles, q.v.] answered by a stripling of the Lamb's Army,' London, 1680–1. 'The Quakers unmasked. Their double dealing and false-heartedness discovered,' 1682, reprinted 1693: 'a General Epistle of Love and Goodwill to all Professors of Christianity.'

With Mary Boreman he wrote: 1. 'The Ark is begun to be opened (the waters being somewhat abated) which, with some Papers and Passages given forth by the Lord's Servants, I am thus to Publish. Who am made a Living Witness of the Spirit's Teaching; which worship is so Pure that I may not endeavour to gather any Proselites thereto,' &c., London, 1671. 2. 'John Pennyman's Instruction to his Children,' London, 1674. 3. 'The Quakers Rejected' [1676].

[Autobiography, London, 1703; Penn's Works, ed. 1825, i. 43; Cal. State Papers, Dom. Ser. 1661–2 pp. 569, 570, 1664–5 p. 120; Foster's Pedigrees, Yorkshire, vol. ii., Pennymans of Ormesby; Registers at Devonshire House; Smith's Cat. ii. 365–72.] C. F. S.

**PENNYMAN**, Sir WILLIAM (1607–1643), royalist, eldest son of William Pennyman of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, who was himself an illegitimate son of James Pennyman of Ormesby, Yorkshire (Foster, *Yorkshire Pedigrees*, 'Pennyman of Ormesby'; Burke, *Extinct Baronetage*, ed. 1844). William Pennyman the elder was one of the six clerks in chancery, and on 28 June 1610 obtained a grant with George Evelyn of the office of comptroller and clerk of the hanaper (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1603–10, p. 620). He died in 1628. William Pennyman the younger matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, on 31 Oct. 1623, aged 16, and was admitted a student of the Inner Temple in the same year. He was created a baronet on 6 May 1628, and became a bencher of Gray's Inn in 1639 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1500–1714, p. 1143). Pennyman succeeded to large estates in Yorkshire, and was recommended by Strafford, in April 1637, for the post of custos rotulorum of the North Riding, on the ground of his integrity and good affection to the king's service 'which he hath given very good testimonies of in all the commissions he is employed on, as Deputy-Lieutenant, one of the Council of those parts, and as Justice of Oyer and Terminer and of the Peace.' In December of the same year he purchased an office in the Star-chamber, worth 2,000*l.* per annum. During the first Scottish war he commanded a regiment of the Yorkshire trained bands, and was employed to garrison Newcastle and Berwick (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 70, 258, 315). In the two parliaments called in 1640 Pennyman represented Richmond.

Pennyman was one of the witnesses called on Strafford's trial to testify to the earl's conduct concerning the Yorkshire petition, to the illegal levy of money to support the Yorkshire trained bands, and to Strafford's boast that he would make the little finger of the king heavier than the loins of the law (Rushworth, *Trial of Strafford*, pp. 151–3, 605, 618, 623; *Notebook of Sir John Northcote*, p. 63). But, showing great reluctance to depose to anything against Strafford, Maynard charged him with prevarication, and 'there arose so great a hissing in the House that the gentleman was confounded and fell a-weeping' (Baillie, *Letters and Journals*, i. 321). Nevertheless he had the courage to record his vote against the bill for Strafford's attainder with fifty-eight other members.

On the outbreak of the civil war, Pennyman, who was disabled from sitting in the House of Commons on 11 Aug. 1642, raised a troop of horse and a regiment of six hundred foot for the king, and joined him at Nottingham (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, ed. Macray, vi. 62 *n.*) He fought at Edgehill, and in April 1643 was appointed governor of Oxford in succession to Sir Jacob Astley (*Life of Anthony Wood*, ed. Clark, i. 96). As governor he filled his post 'to the great satisfaction of all men, being a very brave and generous person, who performed all manner of civilities to all sorts of people, as having had a very good education, and well understanding the manners of the court' (Clarendon, viii. 121). He fell a victim to the epidemic which prevailed in Oxford in the summer of 1643, and was buried in Christ Church Cathedral on 22 Aug. of that year. His epitaph is printed (Wood, *History and Antiquities of the Colleges and Halls of Oxford*, ed. Gutch, p. 467).

Pennyman married Anne, daughter of William Atherton of Atherton, Yorkshire. She died on 13 July 1644, and was buried in the same grave as her husband. Pennyman left no issue. His kinsmen, the Pennymans of Ormesby, were also actively engaged in the king's cause (*Yorkshire Royalist Composition Papers*, 1893, i. 187).

[Authorities given in the article; Clarendon's Hist. of the Rebellion.] C. H. F.

**PENRHYN**, Lord (1737?–1808). [See Pennant, Richard.]

PENROSE, Sir CHARLES VINICOMBE (1759–1830), vice-admiral, youngest son of John Penrose, vicar of Gluvias in Cornwall, by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. John Vinicombe, was born at Gluvias on 20 June 1759. In February 1772 he was appointed to the Royal Academy at Portsmouth, and, after the full course of three years, joined the Levant frigate with Captain the Hon. George Murray (*d.* 1798), and served in her for four years in the Mediterranean. On 5 Aug. 1779 he passed his examination, and on the 17th was promoted to be lieutenant of the Sulphur fireship. This was probably for rank only; in November he was appointed to the Cleopatra, again with George Murray, for service in the North Sea, which was continued during the whole war. In January 1781 the Cleopatra was stationed between Gothenburg and the Shetland Isles to stop the American trade trying the northern route. The weather was intensely cold, the captain was sick, and Penrose, as first lieutenant, suffered greatly from over-fatigue and exposure. On 5 Aug. 1781 he took part in the action on the Doggerbank [see Parker, Sir Hyde, 1714–1782], an account of which, with a severe criticism on Parker's conduct, he afterwards wrote (Ekins, *Naval Battles*, p. 139). In January 1783 the Cleopatra was paid off, and Penrose followed Murray to the Irresistible, guardship in the Medway, till the conclusion of peace. It is said that some of the burgesses of Penryn offered to use their political influence to get him promoted conditional on his taking part in some borough-mongering job, the details of which are not stated. He decidedly refused, and was still a lieutenant in the autumn of 1790, when he was again with Murray in the Defence during the Spanish armament; as afterwards in the Duke in 1793 in the West Indies, and in the Glory in the Channel. On 20 April 1794 he was promoted to command the Lynx on the North American station, under the flag of his friend and patron Murray, at this time a rear-admiral. On 8 Oct. 1794 he was posted to the Cleopatra, and in July 1795 was appointed to the Resolution, Murray's flagship. In June 1796 Murray, having had a stroke of paralysis, moved to the Cleopatra for a passage to England, Penrose accompanying him as flag-captain. From January 1797 the Cleopatra was attached to the western squadron of frigates under Sir Edward Pellew (afterwards Viscount Exmouth) [q. v.], but in July Penrose was obliged to quit her from ill-health. In May 1799 he joined the Sans Pareil, going out to the West Indies with the flag of Lord Hugh Seymour [q. v.] She, however, was detained in the Channel for six months, and arrived in the West Indies only in the following January.

On Seymour's death in November 1801, Penrose was moved to the Carnatic, in which he returned to England in July 1802. He was then suffering from the effects of a sunstroke. In 1804 he was appointed to the command of the sea-fencibles of the Padstow district, which he held till 1810. He was then appointed commodore for port duties at Gibraltar, from which he returned in January 1813, in weak health. In October he was appointed one of a small commission to revise the establishment of stores in Plymouth dockyard, and on 4 Dec. 1813 was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral, and appointed to command a squadron of small craft on the north coast of Spain and the coast of France, co-operating with the army. The service was peculiar and difficult; and the way in which the vessels under Penrose's orders made their way into the Adour, and afterwards forced the passage of the Gironde, destroyed all the French vessels in the river, and reduced the batteries, won for him the warm thanks of Wellington. He continued on this service till September 1814, and on his return to Plymouth was at once appointed to the chief command in the Mediterranean.

In 1815, however, Lord Exmouth resumed the command, Penrose remaining with him as second, and being again left as chief when, in May 1816, Exmouth returned to England. In August 1816 he was at Malta, and was left by the admiralty without notice of the expedition against Algiers, which he casually heard of, but too late to permit him to take any part in the action of the 27th. He naturally felt aggrieved, not only that he should be thus superseded on the station without being told of it, but still more that a junior admiral, a stranger to the station, should be sent out as second in command of the expedition. Lord Exmouth, however, succeeded in soothing his ruffled feelings, and, on his return to England, left Penrose to bring the business to a conclusion. On 3 Jan. 1816 he had been nominated a K.C.B.; he was now made a G.C.M.G., and continued in command of the Mediterranean, for the most part on the coast of Italy and among the Ionian Islands, till 1819. On 19 July 1821 he was advanced to the rank of vice-admiral; but he had no further service. During his retirement he lived at Ethy, near Lostwithiel, a place he had taken on a lifelong lease; and there he

died on 1 Jan. 1830. He married, in 1787, a sister of his friend at the Royal Academy, Captain James Trevenen [q. v.] of the Russian navy, and by her had three daughters; the eldest of whom married, in 1819, Captain John Coode of the navy, and became the mother of Vice-admiral Trevenen Penrose Coode. While in command of the sea-fencibles, Penrose was a frequent contributor to the 'Naval Chronicle,' under the signatures A. F. Y., and E. F. G.; and after his retirement he wrote some pamphlets on naval matters, more especially one 'On Corporal Punishment,' which is even now not without interest. He wrote also a memoir of his brother-in-law, Trevenen, an abridgment of which was published by his nephew, Rev. John Penrose.

[Life by Rev. John Penrose, with portrait; Ralfe's Naval Biogr. iii. 211; Service-book in the Public Record Office.] J. K. L.

PENROSE, Mrs. ELIZABETH (1780–1837), writer for the young under the pseudonym of Mrs. Markham, second daughter of Edmund Cartwright [q. v.], rector of Goadby-Marwood, Leicestershire, and inventor of the power loom, and of his wife, Alice, youngest daughter and coheiress of Richard Whittaker of Doncaster, was born at Goadby-Marwood on 3 Aug. 1780. When Elizabeth was about four years old her mother died; five years later Dr. Cartwright married again, and thenceforth Elizabeth and her sisters lived almost entirely in the houses of their father's relatives. Elizabeth was sent with an elder sister to the Manor school at York, a typical boarding-school, where, according to another pupil, Mrs. Fletcher of Edinburgh, 'nothing useful could be learnt' (*Autobiogr.* p. 17). Whatever the defects of her education, Elizabeth Cartwright was fond of reading and of history. Her uncle, Major Cartwright, writing to one of her sisters in 1796, says: 'Eliza, though a merry girl, devours folios of history with much more appetite than her meals, except when we have bantam eggs; then, indeed, she is like a conjuror swallowing his balls.' In youth she was also a frequent visitor at Markham, near Tuxford in Nottinghamshire, where two maiden aunts lived, and there she met John Penrose, whom she married in 1814 [see Penrose, John].

In 1823 Mrs. Penrose began to publish her series of school histories. She wrote under the pseudonym of 'Mrs. Markham,' taking that name from the village where her aunts resided, and where much of her early life was spent. Her first book, 'A History of England from the first Invasion by the Romans to the end of the Reign of George III, with Conversations at the end of each Chapter. For the use of Young Persons,' appeared in 1823. In the advertisement she states that the work was originally begun for the use of her own children. It was published by Constable of Edinburgh, and at first attracted little attention. On the failure of Messrs. Constable the publication was transferred to John Murray. A new edition, revised, corrected, enlarged, and illustrated, was brought out in 1826. Thereupon the work became very successful, and held its place as almost the only textbook of English history used in schools and families for nearly forty years. The tenth edition appeared in 1843, the sixty-eighth thousand, continued to the fourteenth year of Queen Victoria, in 1853, the eighty-eighth thousand in 1856, and later editions are dated 1857, 1862, 1865, 1871, 1872, and 1873. Some of the later editions were edited and continued to the present day by Mary Howitt. In 1828 'Mrs. Markham' published, also in two volumes, a history of France on the same plan; the forty-eighth thousand appeared in 1856, and another edition in 1857. Numerous volumes of questions relating to both the history of England and that of France have been published. The latter was also continued down to 1871 by Francis Young, and an edition published in that year and in 1873. Histories of Greece and Rome were announced, but never published. Many editions of her books were published in America (Hale, *Woman's Record*, p. 847).

Mrs. Penrose adapted her history to what she considered the needs of the young, and omitted scenes of cruelty and fraud as hurtful to children, and party politics after the 'Revolution' as too complicated for them to understand.

In 1829 Mrs. Fletcher paid a visit to the Penroses at Bracebridge. 'She [Mrs. Penrose] was a happy wife and the mother of three promising sons, a most delightful woman, with a lively, active, accomplished mind, and the most engaging sweetness and simplicity of manners' (*Autobiogr.* p. 162). Mrs. Penrose was fair, slight, and a little above the average height. She was popular in society, and a model housewife. Latterly her health failed, and for the last two years of her life she suffered from cancer. To relieve her sufferings, her husband removed from his vicarage at Bracebridge, near Lincoln, which lies low, to the higher ground of Minster Yard, in the city. There, on 24 Jan. 1837, Mrs. Penrose died. She was buried in the cloisters of Lincoln Cathedral.

Works by Mrs. Penrose not mentioned

above were: 1. 'Amusements of Westernheath, or Moral Stories for Children,' 2 vols. 1824. 2. 'A Visit to the Zoological Gardens,' 1829. 3. 'New Children's Friend,' tales, 2 vols. 1832. 4. 'Historical Conversations for Young People (Malta and Poland),' 1836. 5. 'Sermons for Children,' 1837; 2nd edit. 1846.

[Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. ii. 454, 457–8; Smiles's Memoirs of John Murray, ii. 452; Allibone's Dict. ii. 1555; Gent. Mag. 1837, p. 332; information supplied by Mr. F. C. Penrose.] E. L.

**PENROSE, FRANCIS** (1718–1798), medical writer, born in 1718, was a surgeon who practised for many years at Bicester in Oxfordshire. He purchased a property in the adjoining village of Chesterton, where, at the enclosure of the parish in 1767, he was the owner of a quarter of a yard of land, in lieu of which he received an allotment measuring 2 acres 3 roods 1 perch. He afterwards purchased the house and grounds now called Chesterton Lodge, which he greatly improved. The estate was sold after his death. Mr. Dunkin, the local historian, says of him in 1823 that he is chiefly remembered for his attempt to investigate the ruins of Alchester, the Roman station at the junction of two roads adjoining Chesterton. There, in a wood on the west side of the castrum, he discovered in 1766 the remains of a large building, within which were a tesselated pavement and a hypocaust. This building he described as the Prætorium. He left Bicester about 1782, and went to live in Stonehouse, Plymouth, but he did not practise his profession in Devonshire.

He died at Hatfield 17 Jan. 1798, in the house of his son, James Penrose (1750–1818), who was appointed surgeon-extraordinary to the king in November 1793, in succession to John Hunter (1728–1793)[q.v.] Father and son were buried in the churchyard at Hatfield, though no trace of their tombstone exists.

Penrose was a voluminous writer of pamphlets upon scientific subjects cognate to medicine. His works do not, as a rule, repay perusal. They are: 1. 'A Treatise on Electricity, wherein its various Phenomena are accounted for, and the Cause of Attraction and Gravitation of Solids assigned, by Francis Penrose, Surgeon at Bicester, Oxfordshire,' Oxford, 8vo, 1752. 2. 'An Essay on Magnetism, or an endeavour to explain the various properties and effects of the Loadstone, together with the causes of the same,' Oxford, 8vo, 1753. 3. 'Physical Essay on the Animal Economy, wherein the Circulation of the Blood and its causes are particularly considered with the Diseases which attend a disordered state of the Circulation,' London, 8vo, 1754, and Oxford, 8vo, 1766. This is a poor work, in which old physiological theories are revivified. 4. 'Dissertation on the Inflammatory, Gangrenous, and Putrid Sore Throat, also on the Putrid Fever, together with the diagnostics and method of cure,' Oxford, 8vo, 1766. This is a practical treatise, in which the writer narrates cases he has himself seen in the course of his practice. 5. 'Letters Philosophical and Astronomical, in which the following operations of nature are explained in the most simple and natural manner, according to Sir Isaac Newton's opinion, viz., the creation, the deluge, vegetation, the make and form of this terraqueous globe,' &c., Plymouth, 8vo, 1789. These letters were originally written to John Heaviside, M.D., and were dated from Stonehouse in 1783. They are dedicated to Sir Joseph Banks and to the fellows of the Royal Society. The critical reviews in December 1788 say of them that 'the Mosaic account of the creation is here explained and defended, as well as the deluge, and gravity is accounted for by hot and cold ether.' 6. 'Letters on Philosophical Subjects,' London, 8vo, 1794. This is a second edition of the previous work, with an amended title. It is dated from Stonehouse, Plymouth, 30 June 1788. 7. 'Essays Physiological and Practical, founded on the modern chemistry of Lavoisier, Fourcroy, &c., with a view to the improvement of the practice of medicine,' by Francis Penrose, M.D., London, 8vo, 1794. These essays were severely handled in the first volume of the 'Medico-Chirurgical Review,' the reviewer either believing, or affecting to believe, their author to be a recently qualified practitioner of medicine. In the title-page of this work he styles himself M.D. for the first time; he is supposed to have obtained the degree at some German university.

[Information kindly supplied by the Rev. J. C. Blomfield, M.A., rural dean of Bicester, by William Selby Church, Esq., M.D., and by Lovell Drage, esq., M.D., of Hatfield, who is now a partner in the firm of which James Penrose was originally a member.] D'A. P.

**PENROSE, JOHN** (1778–1859), divine, born at Cardinham, Cornwall, 15 Dec. 1778, was the eldest son of John Penrose (1754–1829), then vicar of that parish, and afterwards rector of Fledborough and vicar of Thorney, both near Newark, Nottinghamshire. His mother was Jane (*d.* 1818), second daughter of the Rev. John Trevenen. After having been trained at home, and for a short time—August 1794 to July 1795—at Tiver-

ton school, he matriculated as commoner from Exeter College, Oxford, on 3 July 1795, in the expectation of obtaining a Cornish fellowship to be vacant in 1797. His stay in that college only lasted to 26 Nov. 1795, when he migrated to Corpus Christi College, where he failed for a scholarship, but won an exhibition. He graduated B.A. 28 June 1799, and M.A. 11 May 1802. After taking his degree Penrose served for a few months as usher and tutor, but in 1801 he was ordained at Exeter, and he officiated at the chapelry of Marazion in Cornwall until he left Penzance in 1802. He was also Bampton lecturer in 1808. He afterwards held the vicarage of Langton-by-Wragby, Lincolnshire, from December 1802 to 1859; that of Poundstock, Cornwall, from November 1803 to 1809; the vicarage of Bracebridge, Lincolnshire, from May 1809 to 1838; and the perpetual curacy of North Hykeham, Lincolnshire, from November 1837 to 1859. Penrose died at Langton on 9 Aug. 1859, and was buried in the churchyard. He was very tall, and, though studious, was fond of outdoor exercise, especially rowing. With a kindly temper he combined a fine judgment, and his sermons, like his books, were models of perspicuity. In the spring of 1804 he married Elizabeth Cartwright, known as 'Mrs. Markham' [see PENROSE, ELIZABETH]. Their issue was three sons: John (*d.* 1888), assistant master at Rugby school 1839–46, who published 'Easy Exercises in Latin Elegiac Verse,' which went through many editions (*Academy*, 30 June 1888, p. 446); Charles Thomas (*d.* 1868), headmaster of Sherborne school 1845–50, author of 'Eight Village Sermons,' and editor of 'Select Private Orations of Demosthenes;' and Mr. Francis Cranmer, architect to St. Paul's chapter.

Penrose was an accomplished and zealous clergyman, and published, with several tracts: 1. 'Attempt to prove the Truth of Christianity from the Wisdom in its original Establishment'; Bampton lectures, 1808. 2. 'Inquiry into the Nature and Discipline of Human Motives,' 1820. 3. 'The Use of Miracles in proving the Truth of a Revelation,' 1824. 4. 'Treatise on the Evidence of the Scripture Miracles,' 1826; reviewed in the 'British Critic' for January 1827 by the Rev. C. W. Le Bas, whose article was published separately. 5. 'Of Christian Sincerity,' 1829. 6. 'Familiar Introduction to the Christian Religion. By a Senior,' 1831. 7. 'Explanatory Lectures on the Gospel of St. Matthew,' 1832. 8. 'The Utilitarian Theory of Morals,' 1836. 9. 'The Moral Principle of the Atonement,' 1843. 10. 'Of God, or of the Divine Mind, and the Doctrine of the Trinity. By a Trinitarian,' 1849. 11. 'Lives of Vice-Admiral Sir Charles Vinicombe Penrose [q.v.] and Captain James Trevenen. By their nephew,' 1850. 12. 'Fifty-four Sermons for Sunday Reading in Families,' 1851. 13. 'Faith and Practice: an Exposition of Natural and Revealed Religion,' 1855. 14. 'Life of [his father] the Rev. J. Penrose, Rector of Fledborough,' privately printed, and edited by Penrose's son John in 1880.

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Foster's Index Eccl.; Boase's Exeter College Commoners, p. 248; Bibl. Cornub. ii. 453–8; Boase's Collect. Cornub. pp. 712, 1084; Gent. Mag. 1859, pt. ii. p. 313; information kindly given by Mr. F. C. Penrose.]

W. P. C.

**PENROSE, THOMAS** (1742–1779), poet, baptised at Newbury, Berkshire, on 9 Sept. 1742, was the eldest son of Thomas Penrose, rector of that parish, who died on 20 April 1769. He matriculated from Wadham College, Oxford, on 30 May 1759 (FOSTER, *Alumni Oxon.*), but, according to his brother-in-law, J. P. Andrews, was also at Christ Church. After 1762 he quitted the university and joined a private expedition, partly English and partly Portuguese, which was formed for the attack of Buenos Ayres, under the command of a bold adventurer named Captain Macnamara. The party left the Tagus on 30 Aug. 1762, and on its way attacked the settlement of Nova Colonia de Sacramento in the River Plate, which had been seized by the Spanish. Operations were at first successful; but the chief ship, the Lord Clive, caught fire, and Macnamara was drowned, with most of the crew. The second vessel, the Ambuscade, of 40 guns, in which Penrose served as a lieutenant of marines, escaped, and ultimately arrived at the Portuguese settlement of Rio Janeiro. He had been wounded in the fight; and, although he recovered from his wounds, the hardships of the next month in a prize sloop undermined his constitution. Very soon afterwards he returned to England, and again settled at Oxford, graduating B.A. from Hertford College on 8 Feb. 1766.

Penrose took holy orders, and became curate to his father at Newbury. About 1777 he was appointed by a friend to the rectory of Beckington-cum-Standerwick, near Frome in Somerset; but his health failed. He died at Bristol on 20 April 1779, and was buried at Clifton, where a monument was erected in his memory. In 1768 he married Mary, eldest daughter of Samuel Slocock of Newbury. She married at Newbury, in February 1786, the Rev. Thomas Best, master of the free grammar school, and died about 1840, at the age of ninety-four. Penrose's

only child, Thomas, was admitted on the foundation of Winchester College, became fellow of New College, Oxford, and vicar of Writtle-cum-Roxwell (*d.* February 1851). He wrote 'Sketch of the Lives and Writings of Dante and Petrarch' (anon.), 1790.

Penrose is described as possessing learning, eloquence, and good social qualities, and as being ready with pencil and pen. His chief productions are mainly imitative of Collins and Gray; but several of his poems deal in a natural vein with his disappointments in life. A poetical essay, 'On the Contrarieties of Public Virtue,' shows powers of irony and satire. Mathias, in the first dialogue of 'The Pursuits of Literature' (1798 edit. p. 54), says:

> Have you not seen neglected Penrose bloom,
> Then sink unhonour'd in a village tomb?
> Content a curate's humble path he trod,
> Now, with the poor in spirit, rests with God.

His chief works were: 1. 'Flights of Fancy,' 1775. 2. 'Address to the Genius of Britain,' 1775, a poem in blank verse, proposing a limit to our 'civil dissensions.' 3. A posthumous volume of poems, 1781, with a biographical introduction by James Pettit Andrews [q. v.], who had married his sister Anne. His productions were included in Anderson's 'Collection of the Poets,' vol. xi.; Park's 'British Poets,' vol. xxxiii.; Pratt's 'Cabinet of Poetry,' vol. v.; in the Chiswick edition of the 'British Poets,' vol. lxiii.; and several of his poems are in Bell's 'Fugitive Poetry,' vols. xii. and xiii. A sprightly poem by Penrose on the 'Newberry Belles,' signed 'P., Newbury, 8 May 1761,' is in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' 1761, pp. 231–2, the characters in which are identified by Godwin; and two more of his poetical pieces are in the same periodical for 1799, pt. ii. pp. 1177–8. Campbell included two of Penrose's pieces—'The Helmets' and 'The Field of Battle'—in his 'Specimens of the British Poets;' and Peter Cunningham, in his edition of that work, adds that Campbell, in '"Adelgitha," and, above all, in "The Wounded Hussar,"' has given a 'vigorous echo' of 'The Field of Battle,' a poem 'which wants little to rank it high among our ballad strains.'

Penrose's portrait, from a drawing by Farrer in the possession of the Rev. Dr. Penrose, was engraved by W. Bromley.

[Godwin's Newbury Worthies, pp. 52–3, 66–7; Boase's Collect. Cornub. p. 715; Life in Anderson's Poets.] W. P. C.

**PENRUDDOCK, JOHN** (1619–1655), royalist, born in 1619, was the eldest son of Sir John Penruddock, knight, of Compton-Chamberlayne, Wiltshire. He was educated at Blandford School, matriculated from Queen's College, Oxford, on 20 Jan. 1636, and became a student of Gray's Inn in 1636 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.*; *Gray's Inn Register*, p. 211). In 1639 he married Arundel, daughter of John Freke of Ewerne's Courtenay and Melcombe, Dorset. Sir John Penruddock was high sheriff of Wiltshire by the king's appointment in 1643–4, and his sons fought on the royalist side throughout the civil war (Black, *Oxford Docquets*, pp. 130, 222). Henry, the second son, was killed in 1643, and another son also lost his life in the king's service (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ed. 1894, i. 83; *Wiltshire Archæological Magazine*, December 1853, p. 397). Sir John Penruddock was fined 890*l.* (afterwards reduced to 490*l.*), and his son 1,000*l.*, while the debts of the latter—contracted during the six years' sequestration of his estate—amounted to 1,500*l.* (*ib.* xiii. 123; *Cal. of Committee for Compounding*, p. 1054). John Penruddock was nevertheless resolved to risk the loss of the remainder of his fortune in the king's cause, and took up arms in the abortive insurrection of March 1655. With about two hundred followers, commanded by himself and Sir Joseph Wagstaffe, he occupied Salisbury on 12 March 1655, seized the judges Rolles and Nicholas who were then on circuit, and proclaimed Charles II. Wagstaffe wished to hang the judges and the sheriff, but was prevented by Penruddock (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, xiv. 132). They then marched into Dorset, proclaimed Charles II at Blandford, and, not finding themselves joined by the country people as they expected, endeavoured to make their way into Cornwall, which was reported to be in arms for the king. At South Molton in North Devon they were surprised in their quarters on the night of 14 March by Captain Unton Croke of Colonel Berry's regiment, and Penruddock, with about sixty of his followers, was taken prisoner. The rest were scattered, but succeeded in escaping. The Protector issued a commission of oyer and terminer for the trial of the prisoners. At Exeter, where Penruddock was tried, Serjeant Glynne presided, and among the commissioners were also Justices Rolle and Nicholas and Serjeant Steele. Penruddock argued, first, that his offence was not legally high treason, and, secondly, that he had surrendered on articles promising him security for life and estate. But his plea was overruled, and Croke denied the engagement he was alleged to have made. Penruddock was condemned to death, and was beheaded at Exeter on 16 May 1655, in company with Colonel Hugh Grove. The

night before his execution he addressed a pathetic letter to his wife, which is still preserved by his descendants at Compton-Chamberlayne, and has frequently been printed. The Protector, on the petition of the children, regranted them a portion of their father's estate (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1656–7, pp. 201, 277). At the Restoration the widow petitioned for the monopoly of making glasses as a compensation for the sufferings of her family, but appears to have received nothing (*ib.* 1660–1, p. 387; cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. p. 110). Two engravings of Penruddock by Vertue are mentioned by Bromley.

[A Pedigree of the family of Penruddock is given in Hoare's Modern Wilts, 'Dunworth,' p. 81; the original documents relating to Penruddock's rising are mostly printed in Thurloe Papers, vol. iii., and are collected, with additions from the newspapers of the period and from family manuscripts, by Mr. W. W. Ravenhill in the Wiltshire Archæological Magazine, vols. xiii., xiv., under the title of 'Records of the Rising in the West, A.D. 1655;' see also 'Cromwell and the Insurrection of 1655' in the English Historical Review for 1888–9, and State Trials, vol. v.] C. H. F.

**PENRY, JOHN** (1559–1593), puritan and chief author of the Martin Mar-Prelate tracts, born in 1559 in Brecknockshire, was son of Meredith Penry of Cefn Brith in Llangamarch, the surname originally being ap-Henry. John matriculated as a pensioner at Peterhouse, Cambridge, on 3 Dec. 1580. At the time he is said by his enemies to have held Roman catholic opinions, but he read, while at the university, the works of Bishop Bale and Cartwright, and soon adopted puritanism in its most extreme calvinistic form. In 1583–4 he graduated B.A. Subsequently he became commoner of St. Alban Hall, Oxford, and proceeded M.A. on 11 July 1586. His principles, he declared in later life, did not permit him to take either deacon's or priest's orders, although both were offered him. None the less he preached both at Oxford and Cambridge, and his sermons were described as edifying (Wood). Travelling in Wales, he preached publicly in Welsh with rousing ardour, mainly in the open air, and was deeply impressed by the spiritual destitution of his native country, which he attributed to the non-residence and incompetency of the clergy. In order to call the attention of the parliament which sat from 28 Oct. till 2 Dec. 1586 to the ecclesiastical condition of the Principality, he hastily wrote out, and published at Oxford (through Joseph Barnes) very early in 1587 'A Treatise addressed to the Queen and Parliament containing the Aequity of an Humble Supplication in the behalfe of the countrey of Wales, that some order may be taken for the preaching of the Gospel among those people. Wherein is also set downe as much of the estate of our people as without offence could be made known, to the end (if it please God) that it may be pitied by them who are not of this assembly, and so they also may be driven to labour on our behalfe,' Oxford, 8vo, 1587. He abbreviated the later portions of the work in the vain hope that it might pass the press before parliament was prorogued in December 1586. Penry, who did not put his name to the volume, although he made no effort to conceal his authorship, drew a forcible picture of the ignorance of his fellow-countrymen—of their idolatrous belief in fairies and magic, their adherence to Roman catholic superstitions, the silence and greed of their pastors. He quoted Welsh freely, recommended the employment of lay preachers, and showed the necessity of a Welsh translation of the Old Testament. The New Testament had been translated in 1567. Edward Dounlee or Downley, M.P. for Carmarthen, presented Penry's petition with the printed treatise to the House of Commons, but neither attracted the attention of the house. The archbishop of Canterbury (Whitgift) was not, however, inclined to overlook so bitter an attack on the church. He issued a warrant, calling in the printed books and directing the author's arrest (*Appellation*, pp. 179–81). Five hundred copies of the 'Treatise' were seized, and Penry was brought before the court of high commission. Archbishop Whitgift presided, and in brutal language pronounced his opinions heretical. He was ordered to recant, but peremptorily refused, and was sent to prison for twelve days. He asked for further information respecting his offence, and was told that he would receive it at a later examination. He was not examined again, and at the end of a month was released. A few days later—apparently in April 1587—he married Eleanor Godley, who lived with her family in the neighbourhood of Northampton.

Penry's 'Treatise' and his action before the high commission court stirred the extreme section of the puritan party throughout the country to activity, and he resolved to pursue his attack on the bishops. It was through the press alone that the war could be effectively waged, but the obstacles imposed by the licensing laws on the publication of writings obnoxious to the authorities rendered it imperative to resort to methods of secrecy in the setting-up and distribution of books which assailed the existing order of

things. Two puritan ministers, John Field and John Udall, offered to help Penry in the composition of a series of anti-clerical pamphlets; but Field died a few months later. The design was communicated to a puritan country gentleman, Job Throckmorton of Haseley, Warwickshire, who promised both literary and pecuniary aid. The bishops' sense of dignity was to be mercilessly outraged by means of coarse sarcasm and homely wit. Such weapons had been habitually used by Knox, Beza, and other protestant controversialists. Beza's 'Epistola . . . Passauantij' (Geneva, 1552) Penry had carefully studied, and his 'Treatise' illustrated how scandalous innuendo might be effectively employed in polemical theology. The joint writings of the confederacy should, it was determined, bear the pseudonymous signature of Martin Mar-Prelate. Martin was doubtless suggested by Luther's christian name.

Before Michaelmas 1588 Penry purchased a printing-press, which he deposited with the utmost secrecy in the house of Mrs. Elizabeth Crane, at East Moulsey, near Kingston-on-Thames. Robert Waldegrave, a London printer, was engaged to superintend the typographic arrangements, and he placed at Penry's disposal two compositors, who worked with great rapidity. Penry corrected the proofs of all the publications, and paid the workmen. Within three weeks the first of the Martin Mar-Prelate tracts was printed and circulated. It was known as 'The Epistle,' and was announced as a preliminary onslaught on the long and elaborate 'Defence of the Church of England' which Dr. John Bridges [q. v.], dean of Salisbury, had published in 1587. It is doubtful if Penry himself did more than revise the manuscript of 'The Epistle.' There followed from the Moulsey press, under Penry's own name and from his pen alone, 'An exhortation unto the governours and people of his Maiesties countrie of Wales, to labour earnestly to have the preaching of the Gospell planted among them.' This was dedicated to the Earl of Pembroke, lord president of Wales, and the rest of the governors. Thereupon Dr. Robert Some [q. v.], a member of Penry's own college at Cambridge, in 'A godly treatise . . . and a confutation of errours broached in M. Penries last treatise,' endeavoured to prove that Penry's account of the incompetence of the clergy was wilfully exaggerated. Penry immediately issued a second edition of his 'Exhortation,' in which he claimed to have answered Some's objections by anticipation. The postscript ran: 'I have read Master D. Some's booke. The reasons he useth in the questions of the dumbe ministrie and communicating with them I had answered (as you may see in this booke) before he had written. The man I reverence as a goodly and a learned man. The weaknes of his reasons shalbe showed at large Godwilling.' This promise he at once fulfilled in 'A Defence of that which hath bin written in the questions of the ignorant ministerie and the communicating with them,' 16mo, 1588. A further defence of Penry against Some's attack was written by John Greenwood [q. v.], and bore the title 'M. Some laid open in his coulers.'

At this juncture Mrs. Crane, from whose house these pamphlets emanated, showed signs of alarm, and Penry found it necessary to secure a new home for his press. Through either his father-in-law, Godley, or his patron Throckmorton he obtained introductions to Sir Richard Knightley [q.v.], a puritan squire, who readily offered him and his press an asylum at his mansion of Fawsley in Northamptonshire. Penry's press was in working order at Fawsley in November, and there were printed in that month a fuller criticism of Dean Bridges's 'Defence,' entitled 'The Epitome.' There followed a broadside, 'Certain minerall and metaphisicall school-points to be defended by the reuerende bishops' (Lambeth Library). Throckmorton shares with Penry the responsibility for these lucubrations, which exasperated the champions of episcopacy, and Penry and his coadjutors found themselves the objects of biting attack by assailants who improved upon their own violence of language. Their antagonists included not only divines, but many men of letters [see Harvey, John, 1563–1592; Lyly, John; Nash or Nashe, Thomas]. Public excitement grew, and the need of concealment on the part of Penry and his friends was greater than before. While at Fawsley, Penry went about disguised like a gallant, wearing a light-coloured hat, a sword at his side, and 'a long skye-coloured cloak,' of which the collar was edged with gold and silver and silk lace. At Christmas the press was removed to another house of Knightley's at Norton. But it was deemed imprudent to make a prolonged stay in one place, and early next year Penry temporarily settled with another sympathiser, John Hales, who lived at a house at Coventry, known as the White Friars. From Coventry he issued, on 9 March 1588–9, in continuation of his earlier appeals on behalf of Wales, 'A viewe of some part of such publike wants and disorders as are in the service of God, within her Maiesties countrie of Wales, togither with an humble Petition unto this high court of Parliament for their speedy

redresse' (without place or printer's name). The running title is 'A Supplication unto the High Court of Parliament.' At Coventry Penry also printed a fortnight later 'Hay any worke for Cooper,' a slashing reply to the 'Admonition' of Thomas Cooper [q. v.], bishop of Winchester. In June he stayed with his friend Throckmorton at Haseley, whence he passed in July to Wolston Priory, the residence of Robert Wigston. A London compositor, John Hodgkins, with two assistants, printed under his superintendence, partly at Haseley and partly at Wolston, the Mar-Prelate tract 'Theses Martinianæ or Martin Junior' (22 July), and 'Iust censure and reproofe of Martin Senior' (29 July). 'More work for Cooper,' a further attack on the bishop of Winchester, was in part set up in type at a press which Penry had sent to Newton Lane, Manchester. In August 1589 this press was seized by the authorities at the instigation of the Earl of Derby. Nothing daunted, Penry procured the publication of 'More Work' from Wolston immediately afterwards. In September the 'Protestatyon of Martin Marprelate' was issued from either Haseley or Wolston. About the same time Penry vehemently attacked the bishop of London in 'A briefe discovery of the untruthes and slanders (against the true government of the church of Christ), contained in a sermon preached the 8 of Februarie 1588 by Dr. Bancroft, and since that time set forth in Print, with addicions by the said Authour. This short answer may serve for the clearing of the truth untill a larger confutation of the sermon be published,' 4to, n.d. Finally, Robert Waldegrave, who had migrated to Rochelle, printed under Penry's auspices 'A Dialogue. Wherein is plainly laide open the tyrannicall dealing of the Lords Bishopps against Gods children; with certain points of doctrine, wherein they approove themselves (according to D. Bridges his judgement) to be truley the Bishops of the Divell,' 12mo.

From the moment that the 'Epistle' had appeared in the winter of 1588, every effort had been made by the officers of the high commission court and the privy council to unravel the mystery of Martin Mar-Prelate and his tracts, and throughout 1589 witnesses were constantly under examination by the archbishop, the bishops, and the council. The capture of the Manchester press was the first reward of their exertions. Suspicion naturally fell on Penry, who had openly attacked the bishops in his 'Treatise.' In 1590 the author of 'The Almond for a Parratt,' a reply to Martin Mar-Prelate (attributed to Thomas Nash), denounced him by name as the protagonist of the controversial drama. On 29 Jan. 1589–90 an officer of the archbishop searched his house at Northampton, ransacked his study, and took away with him some printed books and written papers. Penry stated that all that was seized were a printed copy of 'The Demonstration of Discipline,' attributed to John Udall, and one of his own replies to Dr. Some in manuscript (*Appellation*, pp. 6–46). The mayor was directed to apprehend Penry as a traitor, but he successfully kept in hiding, and, with money supplied by Throckmorton, ultimately managed to escape to Edinburgh. His colleague Udall was less fortunate. He was arrested at the time of Penry's escape. When he and witnesses against him were examined, much information respecting the method of publishing the Mar-Prelate tracts came to light, and Penry was directly incriminated. Before leaving England he succeeded in issuing his defiant 'Th' Appellation of John Penri unto the Highe court of Parliament from the bad and injurious dealing of th' Archb of Canterb. and other of his colleagues of the high commission: wherein the complainant, humbly submitting himselfe and his cause unto the determination of this honourable assembly; craveth nothing els, but either release from trouble and persecution, or just tryall,' 12mo.

In Scotland Penry was well received, and he preached from church pulpits. Queen Elizabeth applied to James VI for his banishment from the kingdom, and James issued an edict ordering him to quit the realm. But the Scottish presbyterian clergy ignored the proclamation, and Penry continued in Scotland under their protection. In December 1590 James told the English ambassador that Penry had left Scotland. As a matter of fact he did not re-enter England till September 1592. Some part of the interval he spent in pursuing his attack on episcopacy. After he had settled in Edinburgh there appeared in London 'A treatise wherein is manifestlie proved that reformation and those that sincerely favour the same are unjustly charged to be enemies unto his majestie and the state. Written both for the clearing of those that stande in that cause, and the stopping of the sclaunderous mouthes of all the enemies thereof' (Edinburgh?), 4to, 1590. A second part was promised. An answer ascribed to Thomas Nash appeared the same year, under the title of 'The First Parte of Pasquils Apologie,' in which Penry was once again denounced by name as Martin Mar-Prelate. 'Who had the ouersight of the libell at Fawslie? John of Wales: who was corrector to the press at Coventrie?

John of Wales!' A further appeal to the English government to reform the church on the lines Penry had suggested followed in 'A humble motion with submission unto the Right Honourable L. L. of hir majesties Privie Counsell. Wherein is laid open to be considered how necessarie it were for the good of this Lande, and the Queenes Majesties safety, that Ecclesiasticall discipline were reformed after the worde of God, and how easily there might be provision for a learned ministery' (Edinburgh?), 4to, 1590.

In September 1592, when the controversy was subsiding, Penry left Edinburgh, with the intention, according to his own account, of renewing his evangelising efforts in Wales, his own 'poor country.' But he went no nearer Wales than London. There he joined a congregation of separatists meeting near Stepney. He declined all offers of office among them in conformity with his theory that Christian churches should have no definitely appointed ministers. At first he was not molested. But next year Anthony Anderson, vicar of Stepney, recognised him, and on 22 March 1592–3 he was arrested at Ratcliff at the vicar's bidding. On the 24th he was committed to the Poultrey Compter. He was examined more than once, and clergymen were admitted to the prison with a view to arguing him into conformity. He restated his objections to episcopacy, and to the discipline of the established church, asserted that his views were sanctioned by Wyclif, Latimer, and Luther, and asked permission to take part in a disputation with his examiners in the presence of the queen and council. A full report of the examination to which Mr. Fanshaw and Mr. Justice Young subjected him on 10 April was published in the Low Countries, and circulated by his friends in England, together with reports of similar examinations of earlier date of Henry Barrow and John Greenwood, who were now Penry's fellow-prisoners. On 16 May Penry drew up a paper declaring that he was 'not in danger of the law for the books published in his name, viz. upon the Statute 23 Eliz., made against seditious words' (Strype, *Whitgift*, p. 412; Waddington, *Penry*, p. 181).

Although the evidence in the possession of the authorities naturally suggested that he would be charged with complicity in the authorship of the Mar-Prelate tracts, no accusation was drawn up against him on that score. On 21 May 1593 he was put on his trial before the court of queen's bench, on a charge of having, while at Edinburgh, feloniously devised and written certain words with intent to excite rebellion and insurrection in England. There were two separate indictments (Coke, *Booke of Entries*, 1614, pp. 353–4). In the first were quoted sentences alleged to be by Penry, in which the queen was described as having turned against Christ, and as preventing her subjects from serving God according to his word. The second indictment collected a number of expressions attributed to Penry, in which the ministers of state and of religion were denounced as conspirators against God—a troop of bloody soul-murderers, and sacrilegious church-robbers, while the council was credited with delighting in persecuting God's true saints and ministers. The quotations were not taken from Penry's published works, but apparently from some manuscript notes found in his house at the time of his arrest. Despite the insufficiency of the evidence as set forth in these indictments, Penry was found guilty of treason and sentenced to death. From the queen's bench prison he sent next day letters to his wife and children, bidding them be steadfast in the faith, and a protest to Burghley against the verdict. In the latter he apparently admitted the papers set out in the indictments to be notes of his composition, but they were 'confused, unfinished, and unpublished.' They contained remarks in opposition to his own views; he had intended to revise them, but had laid them aside for fourteen or fifteen months. He should die the queen's faithful servant; he was no enemy to public order in church or state, he neither sought vainglory nor contention, and had not striven to found any school of religious opinion. If his death could procure quietness for the church of God, and for his prince and kingdom, he was satisfied to die; but he desired the queen to be informed at once of his loyalty (Strype, *Whitgift*, p. 413, App. p. 304; Brook, *Puritans*, ii. 59–63; Waddington, *Penry*, pp. 186–200). Just a week later, on 29 May, he was suddenly ordered, while at dinner, to prepare for execution, and at five o'clock in the afternoon he was hanged at St. Thomas-a-Watering, Surrey. A rhyme expressing the satisfaction of the orthodox at his death was current at the time in the north of England. It ran:

> The Welchman is hanged
> Who at our Kirke flanged,
> And at her state banged;
> And brened are his buks:
> And tho' he be hanged,
> Yet he is not wranged:
> The deu'l has him fanged
> In his kruked kluks.

(Weever, *Funeral Monument*, 1631, p. 56). According to Arthur Hildersam [q. v.], whose

testimony is reported by John Cotton, Penry, while denying the meaning placed on the words quoted in the indictment, and positively asserting that he had no hand in compiling the Martin Mar-Prelate tracts, admitted that he had induced some of his fellow-subjects to absent themselves from the parish churches. But he had reached the conclusion that this course of action was mistaken, and acknowledged that the blood of the souls of those who had followed his advice lay at his door (cf. JOHN COTTON, *Reply to Roger Williams*, 1647, p. 117).

Penry is reckoned by Welsh historians as the pioneer of Welsh nonconformity. He was an honest fanatic who believed himself to be an instrument of God charged with the reformation of the church of England, and with the sowing of the seed of the gospel in the barren mountains of Wales. In his writings he compared himself to St. Paul and the prophet Jeremiah. There is conclusive external evidence in favour of the theory that he was mainly responsible for the authorship and dissemination of the Martin Mar-Prelate tracts. Of the small committee, consisting of himself, Udall, and Throckmorton, which set on foot the Mar-Prelate controversy, Penry was the guiding spirit. In Harl. MS. 7042, in the British Museum, are the transcripts of Thomas Baker from the lost papers of Lord-keeper Puckering, and they contain the depositions of Penry's patrons, Knightley, Hale, and Wigston, as well as of the compositors in his employ, who were examined in the council or the high commission court in 1589 and 1590. All agreed that Penry was superintendent of the secret press, and, although one or two shyly think that he was not Martin, most of them express the belief that he wrote and revised the majority of the pamphlets. It was proved that he admitted the allegation whenever the question was directly put to him by his friends. But it is impossible to assign with certainty to Penry and his associates their respective shares in the Mar-Prelate publications. Matthew Sutcliffe, in his published 'Answer' to Throckmorton's 'Defence' (1595), allots to Penry the bulk of the work. Camden ascribes the authorship of all the tracts to Udall and Penry jointly.

In face of the extant testimony, the arguments against the assertion of Penry's authorship and general superintendence do not merit serious consideration. Dr. Dexter, the historian of congregationalism, who has endeavoured to transfer the responsibility to Henry Barrow [q. v.], argues that Penry's acknowledged works exhibit little of the characteristic violence of the Mar-Prelate tracts. But the former show at times a power of invective and a causticity which few of the Mar-Prelate tracts exceeded. In the 'Protestatyon' the author describes himself as a bachelor; this Barrow was, whereas Penry was married. But that pamphlet may be admitted to be mainly from another hand without disturbing the contention in favour of Penry's general responsibility. That he was not put on his trial for the tracts was doubtless due to lapse of time, and to the belief of the authorities that they could more easily convict him of other offences. Hildersam's report that Penry, before his death, solemnly denied the imputation rests on hearsay, and fails to counterbalance more direct testimony.

After Penry's death was published his 'Profession of Faith, sent by Francis Johnson to Lord Burghley on 12 June 1593,' together with a 'Letter to the distressed faithfull Congregation of Christ in London, and all the Members thereof, whether in Bondes or at Liberty,' 24 April 1593. At a later date appeared the 'History of Corah, Dathan, and Abiram applied to the Prelacy, Ministry, and Church Assemblies of England,' 4to, 1609. The editor states that this tract, which was left incomplete, was copied and freely circulated in the author's lifetime, and was intended for presentation to parliament. Some account of Penry's preaching to his poor Welsh countrymen is given in the preface.

By his wife Eleanor, daughter of Henry Godley of Northampton, he left four daughters, the eldest of whom was four at the time of his death.

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. ii. 154–8; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. i. 591; Thomas Rees's Hist. of Nonconformity in Wales; Waddington's Life of Penry, 1854; Arber's Introduction to the Martin Mar-Prelate Controversy; Maskell's Mar-Prelate Controversy; Examination of Barrow, Greenwood, and Penry, 1593, reprinted in Harleian Miscellany; Dexter's Congregationalism; Cal. State Papers (Dom.), 1590–3; Harl. MS. 7042; Brook's Puritans; Strype's Works; John Hunt's Religious Thought in England, i. 71–86, 100–7; Rowlands's Cambrian Bibliography.] S. L.

**PENTLAND, JOSEPH BARCLAY** (1797–1873), traveller, a native of Ireland, was born in 1797, and was at an early age left an orphan. He was educated at Armagh and at the university of Paris, where his knowledge of comparative anatomy gained him the friendship of Cuvier. He entered the public service as secretary to the consulate-general in Peru in 1827, became consul-general in the republic of Bolivia on 1 Aug. 1836, and held that appointment until 1839. In 1826 and 1827, in company

with Woodbine (afterwards Sir Woodbine) Parish [q. v.], he surveyed a large portion of the Bolivian Andes which had rarely been visited by Europeans. He took extensive observations on the snow-lines and on the heights of the mountains, the majority of which are either extinct volcanos or volcanos of exhausted activity. Gualtieri was found to be 22,000 feet high, Arequipa 18,300 feet, Chirquibamba 21,000 feet, Illimani 21,300 feet, and Sorata 24,800 feet. He was the first to measure these mountains, and succeeding explorers have been of opinion that he somewhat exaggerated their altitudes. The mean elevation of the perpetual snow-line was 16,990 feet, and the elevation of the whole range is so great that the mean height of the practicable passes through them exceeds 14,650 feet. During his journey he found fossils of Silurian age at a height of 17,000 feet, and of carboniferous limestone at 14,000 feet above the sea. Pentland also visited the mountain lake of Titicaca. He saw that its outlet was the river Desaguadero, whereas all maps up to that period had represented the river as running into the lake. In 1838 he made a tour in the southern province of ancient Peru, visiting Cusco, the capital, and the many interesting localities around that city (*Journal of the Royal Geographical Society*, 1835 v. 70–89, with two maps, 1838 viii. 427, and *Proceedings*, 9 March 1874, pp. 215–16; Humboldt, *Kosmos*, Sabine's edit. 1846–58, i. 362, vol. iv. pt. i. p. lxxxv).

From 1845 he made Rome his winter residence. He was so well acquainted with the topography and antiquities of the city that he was selected to act as guide to the Prince of Wales on the two occasions of his visiting Rome. He edited for John Murray 'A Handbook of Rome and its Environs. Ninth edition, carefully revised on the spot,' 1860; also the tenth and eleventh editions of 1871 and 1872; 'A Handbook for Travellers in Southern Italy,' sixth edition, 1868, and 'A Handbook for Travellers in Northern Italy,' eleventh edition, 1869. He aided James Fergusson (1808–1886) [q. v.] in his 'Sketches of the Antiquities of Cusco,' and Mrs. Somerville with information on the geology of South America for her 'Physical Geography,' 1848. He died at 3 Motcomb Street, London, on 12 July 1873, and was buried in Brompton cemetery.

[Foreign Office List, July 1873, p. 154, January 1874, p. 203; Athenæum, 6 Sept. 1873, p. 309.] G. C. B.

**PENTON, STEPHEN** (1639–1706), divine, son of Stephen Penton, was born at Winchester and baptised at St. John's Church on 9 April 1639. He was admitted as scholar of Winchester College in 1653 (Kirby, *Winchester Scholars*, p. 187), and matriculated from New College, Oxford, on 28 June 1659, becoming probationary fellow in that year, and remaining a full fellow from 1661 to 1672. He graduated B.A. 7 May 1663, and M.A. 17 Jan. 1666–7. For some time he remained at Oxford; but from 1670 to 1676 he held the rectory of Tingewick, near Buckingham, a living in the gift of his college (Lipscomb, *Buckinghamshire*, iii. 124), and so early as 1671 he served as chaplain to the Earl of Ailesbury. On 15 Feb. 1675–6 he was appointed principal of St. Edmund Hall, Oxford, by the provost and fellows of Queen's College, subject to the condition that he should resign Tingewick, and that his college should appoint thereto a fellow of Queen's College. While principal he built the chapel, which was consecrated 7 April 1682, and the adjoining library (cf. Wood, *History of the Oxford Colleges*, ed. Gutch, p. 669, and Hearne, *Collections*, Oxford Hist. Soc., ii. 321–3).

Penton resigned the principalship for his health's sake on 15 March 1683–4, and on leaving gave the hall some silver plate (*ib.* i. 263). From 1684 to 1693 he was rector of Glympton, and was also lecturer in the neighbouring church at Churchill. On the nomination of Lord Ailesbury he was instituted, on 27 Sept. 1693, to the rectory of Worth-by-Ripon, and he was collated on 28 May 1701 to the third prebendal stall at Ripon, holding both preferments until his death. In a sermon which he preached at St. Mary's, Oxford, on 23 Sept. 1705, he pronounced, according to Hearne, a great encomium on the Duke of Marlborough (*Collections*, ed. Doble, i. 47–8). He died on 18 Oct. 1706, and was buried on 20 Oct. in the chancel of Worth church, where a quaint inscription on a brass plate commemorates him. The epitaph is printed in Whitaker's 'Richmondshire' (ii. 187). His will, dated 8 Oct. 1706, with a codicil dated 12 Oct., appears in the 'Memorials of Ripon Church.' He left the bulk of his estate for the benefit of the poor of the parish. Many books were given by him to the Bodleian Library in 1702 (Macray, *Annals*, 2nd edit. p. 172).

Wood, in the 'Athenæ Oxonienses,' describes Penton as possessing 'a rambling head;' but Hearne, in the 'Notæ et Spicilegium' appended to his edition of William of Newburgh (iii. 782–3), characterises him as 'an ingenious honest man, a good scholar, a quaint preacher, of a most facetious temper, of extraordinary good nature . . . a despiser of money and preferments' (cf.

Hearne, *Collections*, i. 298). His works are: 1. 'A discourse concerning the worship of God towards the Holy Table or Altar,' 1682, of which Hearne says a copy was in Dr. Charlett's study (*ib.* ii. 11). 2. 'The Guardian's Instructor, or the Gentleman's Romance, written for the diversion and service of the gentry' [anon.], 1688. It deals with the bringing up of children at home, and with the training at the university of Oxford. 3. 'Apparatus ad Theologiam in usum Academiarum. I. Generalis. II. Specialis,' 1688; dedicated to Thomas, earl of Ailesbury, with a preface to the young academics, especially the fellows of New College. 4. 'New Instructions to the Guardian, with a method of institution from Three years of age to Twenty-one,' 1694; dedicated to Charles, lord Bruce, son and heir to the Earl of Ailesbury. Dr. Knight, in his 'Life of Dean Colet' (p. 145), notes the condescension of Penton, 'a very worthy and noted man, who not only publish'd the "Guardian's Instruction for Youth," but (even laterly) a "Hornbook (or A. B. C.) for Children."'

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Wood's Life, pp. lxxxiv–v; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), iii. 1059, iv. 550, Fasti, ii. 265, 394; Wood's Oxford Colleges, ed. Gutch, p. 665; Memorials of Ripon Church, ed. Rev. J. T. Fowler (Surtees Soc.), ii. 299–303; Nichols's Topogr. and Genealogist, iii. 430, 432, 593; Whitaker's Richmondshire, ii. 187.] W. P. C.

**PENTREATH, DOLLY** (1685–1777), last surviving speaker of the Cornish language. [See Jeffery, Dorothy.]

**PEPLOE, SAMUEL** (1668–1752), bishop of Chester, was born at Dawley Parva in Shropshire, and baptised on 3 July 1668. His father, Podmore or Padmore Peploe, seems to have been in humble circumstances. From Penkridge school in Staffordshire Peploe proceeded to Oxford, where he matriculated as a battler of Jesus College 12 May 1687. He graduated B.A. 12 March 1691, and M.A. in 1693. Having taken holy orders, he was presented to the rectory of Kedleston, near Derby, in 1695 (Cox, *Churches of Derbyshire*, iii. 174). A strong whig in politics, and a latitudinarian in religion, Peploe attracted the notice of Sir Charles Hoghton, a strenuous supporter of Revolution principles in Lancashire. Hoghton nominated him to the important vicarage of Preston in 1700.

Preston was then a stronghold of the Jacobites, to whom through life Peploe was uncompromisingly opposed. This, coupled with a somewhat overbearing manner, rendered him obnoxious in the town, although he greatly exerted himself to improve its educational and religious condition. He took a prominent part in building a bluecoat school in 1702, and in founding Cadley School in 1707. After the Jacobite occupation in 1715 he viewed with alarm the large number of Roman catholic residents in the town, and he procured the erection of two new churches. While Preston was in the hands of the Jacobites, tradition says that a party of rebels entered the church while the vicar was reading the prayers, and threatened him with instant death unless he ceased praying for the 'Hanoverian usurper.' With great self-possession Peploe continued the service, only pausing to say, 'Soldier, I am doing my duty; do you do yours.' On this incident being related to George I, he is reported to have said: 'Peep-low, Peep-low is he called?' Then, with an oath, he added: 'But he shall peep high; I will make him a bishop.' Whether this story be authentic or no, Peploe's subsequent advancement was probably rather an acknowledgment of the active assistance rendered by him to the commission for forfeited estates, appointed in 1716, to which he furnished an elaborate report of 'estates granted to superstitious uses in and about Preston' (*Forfeited Estates Papers*, P.R.O. p. 34). On 1 July 1718 Peploe was nominated by the king warden of the collegiate church of Manchester, in succession to Dr. Richard Wroe [q. v.] The statutes requiring the warden to be B.D. or LL.D., he obtained the former degree from Archbishop Wake, and thereby was thought to have cast a slur upon Oxford. On presenting himself for induction the visitor, Francis Gastrell [q. v.], bishop of Chester, hesitated to perform the office, on the plea that a university degree was essential to the dignity. The matter was taken into the court of king's bench, which decided in Peploe's favour, ruling that the legatine power of conferring degrees was established, and that the degrees so conferred were of equal validity with university degrees in qualifying for ecclesiastical preferment.

As warden of Manchester, Peploe was involved in constant disputes with his chapter. On all religious and political questions he found himself alone; and the episcopal visitor, to whom frequent appeals were made, was on the side of his opponents. On the other hand, his tolerant views made him a general favourite with the dissenters.

On the death of Gastrell, Peploe was nominated to succeed him at Chester. He was consecrated on 12 April 1726, when he resigned Preston, retaining Manchester *in com-*

*mendam*. A fresh legal difficulty at once arose. The bishop of Chester was visitor of Manchester College, and the warden of Manchester was one of the persons to be visited. But the two offices were now united in one person, and he could not visit himself. After much unseemly contention between the warden and his tory clergy, the ministry of the day passed a measure appointing the king visitor whenever the wardenship should be held with the bishopric of Chester. But this arrangement failed to put an end to the dissensions in the chapter, and Peploe found it prudent to resign his post of warden in 1738, his son being appointed his successor. He now became legal visitor of the college, and, supported by the new warden, lost no time in reducing the refractory chapter to outward obedience.

With the diocesan clergy the bishop dealt much more successfully. In spite of a hot temper, he was by no means unpopular with them. During his episcopate he consecrated thirty-nine churches. He also erected two new galleries in the choir of his cathedral (Hanshall, *Chester*, p. 99). In 1739 he was involved in a dispute with the mayor of Chester, who, being refused admission into the Abbey Court by the bishop when proclaiming war against Spain, ordered the gates to be broken down (Hemingway, *Chester*, ii. 248). During the Jacobite rebellion of 1745–6 Peploe, staunch to his early principles, preached a sermon in his cathedral (13 Oct. 1745), afterwards published under the title 'Popish Idolatry a strong Reason why Protestants should steadily oppose the present Rebellion.' The bishop died at Chester on 21 Feb. 1752, and was buried on the 28th of the same month in the cathedral. The inscription on his monument shows that he was one of the few English bishops who never took a doctor's degree.

Peploe was a man of great determination, and totally regardless of public opinion in the discharge of his duties. A strong and unflinching partisan in politics, his whole life was passed in an atmosphere of strife. But he was by no means destitute of generous instincts; and his scheme of religious toleration embraced even the Roman catholics.

By his first wife, Ann, daughter of Thomas Browne, esq., of Shredicote, Staffordshire, he had one son and four daughters. She died on 25 Nov. 1705. On 8 Jan. 1712 he married Ann, daughter of his predecessor, Thomas Birch, vicar of Preston, by whom he had no surviving issue. Mrs. Peploe survived her husband. The bishop's only son, Samuel (1699–1781), commonly known as 'Peploe Junior,' was vicar of Preston 1726–43, prebendary of Chester 1727–81, vicar of Northenden 1727–81, archdeacon of Richmond 1729–81, warden of Manchester 1738–1781, vicar of Tattenhall 1743–81, and chancellor of Chester 1748–81. The family is now represented by the Webb-Peploes of Garnstone, Herefordshire (Burke, *Landed Gentry*).

Peploe only published a few sermons and charges. His portrait was painted by Winstanley, and engraved by Faber (Bromley, *Catalogue*).

[Raines's Rectors of Manchester (Chetham Soc. Publ., vol. vi. new ser.); Hibbert-Ware's History of the Collegiate Church, Manchester; Smith's Records of the Parish Church of Preston; Halley's Lancashire: its Puritanism and Nonconformity; Cheshire Sheaf, vols. i. and ii.; Foster's Alumni Oxonienses, 1500–1714; Stubbs's Registrum; Act-books of the Diocese of Chester; information supplied by the Vicar of Dawley.]

F. S.

**PEPPERELL**, Sir WILLIAM (1696–1759), the 'hero of Louisburg,' was born at Kittery Point, Maine, on 27 June 1696. His father was a native of Tavistock, Devonshire, who emigrated to the Isle of Shoals, Massachusetts, in early life, and from a penniless fisherman became a great shipowner and merchant. He died in 1734. His mother was Margery Bray, whose parents emigrated to escape religious persecution. Taking a personal share in his father's timber and warehousing trade, he grew up robust and hardy. Accustomed from his infancy to the alarms of Indian warfare, he was bred to the use of arms and trained to face danger.

Pepperell and his brother rapidly improved their father's business. His earlier years were devoted to building vessels and planning voyages to Europe and the West Indies. But he was an active officer in the Maine militia, of which he was a colonel by 1722. He was by that time a foremost man in the colony, and soon was almost sole proprietor of the towns of Saco (which for a time was called Pepperellboro') and Scarboro', with large properties in Portsmouth, Hampton, and elsewhere. In 1727 he was first elected to the council of Massachusetts, and was annually re-elected till his death.

The New England colonies had been constantly annoyed by the depredations of the French, acting from their base at Louisburg, and in 1745 they decided to make an effort to capture the place. It was a bold enterprise for a force of colonial militia, aided by a few British ships, to attack one of the strongest fortresses in the world—the 'Dunkirk of America.' Pepperell was appointed to command

the expedition, and the choice of the government was approved by the 'united voice of the provinces.' On 29 April 1745 the fleet of one hundred vessels—all, except the men-of-war, quite small—sailed into the harbour of Louisburg right under the guns of the fortress, effected a landing, and commenced a siege which illustrated the resource, pluck, and determination of the colonists. On 16 June the fortress capitulated, and the Maine militia marched into it. Their success created consternation and chagrin in France, and a great expedition was at once planned for the recovery of the place, which was, however, held till the termination of the war in 1748. Pepperell next projected the conquest of Canada; he was made a colonel of the king's army, and commissioned to raise a regular regiment, but was not called upon to carry out any important operation. On 15 Nov. 1746 he was for his great service created a baronet by the style of Pepperell of Massachusetts.

In 1747 he built in his yard one frigate and two other vessels for the British navy. In 1749, having retired from business, he resolved to visit England, and embarked for London, where he was cordially received by George II and presented by the city of London with a service of plate. On the renewal of war with France in 1755 he took the field with a regiment of a thousand men, but saw no active service. He was, however, in February 1759, promoted lieutenant-general in the British army. He died at Kittery on 16 July following.

Pepperell married, on 6 March 1723, Mary, daughter of Grove Hirst of Boston, who survived him thirty years, and by her had two children—a son, who died in his lifetime, in 1751, and a daughter Elizabeth, who married one Sparkway, and had a son, who took the name of Pepperell, and was created a baronet in 1764, in compliment to the grandfather, but died without male issue.

[Life of Sir W. Pepperell, bart., by Usher Parsons, Boston, 1855; Collections of Massachusetts Hist. Soc.; Withrow's History of Canada, p. 188; Bourinot's Cape Breton.] C. A. H.

**PEPUSCH, JOHN CHRISTOPHER** (1667–1752), professor of music and composer, the son of a German protestant clergyman, was born at Berlin in 1667, and studied the organ under Grosse, and musical theory under Klingenberg. At the age of fourteen he played at court, accompanying a singer, and was soon afterwards appointed the teacher of Prince Frederick William. That post he filled for six years, pursuing his own studies in the meanwhile. In 1687 Pepusch was in Holland, where his earlier works were published by Etienne Roger; but at the end of the following year he came to England, tempted probably by the success of Buononcini (Gerber), though a story is told of an act of kingly severity at Berlin, which Hawkins supposed to have been the cause of the musician's anxiety to quit the Prussian service.

In London Pepusch was at first employed as viola-player in the Drury Lane orchestra (Mendel); in 1700 he was given the conductor's place at the harpsichord, with the privilege of fitting operas for the stage, and adding his own music. He, for instance, introduced his song, 'How blest is a soldier,' into 'Thomyris,' 1707. But as early as 1696 one of his sonatas had been performed in Edinburgh (Husk), and in 1704 he wrote concerted music for some musicians brought over to England by his brother, Gottfried (Burney), and set to music some *pièces d'occasion*. His first independent publication consisted of cantatas composed in the Italian manner. Handel, however, was then forming English musical taste, and Pepusch's rather artificial and pedantic productions fell flat. Bowing to circumstances, he recognised somewhat grudgingly the superior genius of Handel, whom he described as 'a good practical musician,' and entered upon his true career as a teacher of the science of music.

Pepusch had thoroughly mastered past and generally obsolete learning on his subject, but he unfortunately had no true appreciation of musical development; for him the most perfect method lay in the ancient system of hexachords; the last word in practical music had been uttered by Corelli. Greater exaggerations followed as Pepusch advanced in years. He appeared through life to cling to a rule of his early years which he impressed upon Burney, 'I was determined not to go to bed at night without knowing something that I did not know in the morning;' and having conquered all existing worlds of musical knowledge, he sought in his last days for worlds supposed to be lost. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on 13 June 1745, and read a paper at a meeting, which was afterwards published (*Transactions*, vol. xliv. pt. i. p. 266). He must, as Burney relates, have bewildered himself and some of his scholars with the 'Greek genera, scales, diagrams, geometrical, arithmetical, and harmonical proportions; quantities, apotomes, lemmas,' and everything concerning ancient harmonies that was dark, unintelligible, and foreign to common and useful practice. . . . Yet, though he fettered the genius of his scholars by anti-

quated rules, he knew the mechanical laws of harmony so well that in glancing over a score he could by a stroke of his pen smooth the wildest and most incoherent notes into melody, and make them submissive to harmony, instantly seeing the superfluous or deficient notes, and suggesting a base from which there was no appeal' (*History*, iv. 638). His eccentricities detracted little from the respect which his peculiar talents commanded, nor did they count for much against his skill in training sound musicians; among his pupils were Doctors Boyce, Nares, Howard, Cooke, Travers, Babell, Keeble, Rawlings, Berg, and J. C. Smith. To encourage the study of seventeenth-century work, he established in 1710 the academy for the practice of ancient vocal and instrumental music. Pepusch was for many years its director. It flourished according to the original scheme until 1734, when it was resolved to withdraw the choir-boys, and the performances languished for want of sopranos; it may be noted that no women were admitted even to the audience. To secure children's voices the managers afterwards determined to offer them instruction on low terms, and, when parents eagerly responded to the invitation, Pepusch generously undertook this additional burden.

Though devoting himself mainly to tuition, Pepusch did not wholly relinquish composition. His fine anthem 'Rejoice in the Lord, O ye righteous,' probably belongs to the period after 1712, when Pepusch was retained by the duke of Chandos as *maestro di cappella* at Cannons, and supplied the chapel services, until he retired in favour of Handel.

On 9 July 1713 Pepusch, with Croft, was admitted from Magdalen College Mus. Doc. Oxford. He rather offended the university by bringing London performers to assist in rendering his acts, and by giving public concerts in the city for his benefit. His exercise celebrating the peace of Utrecht was never published. A copy of the words, printed on both sides of a folio leaf, was in Dr. Bliss's library.

After 1714 he was frequently employed to supply Lincoln's Inn Fields Theatre with music. He produced there, with musical settings, 'Venus and Adonis,' 1715; 'Apollo and Daphne,' 1715; 'Death of Dido,' 1716; 'The Union of the three Sister Arts,' a St. Cecilia's day entertainment, which had a long run, 1723; 'Diocletian,' of which Mrs. Pendarves wrote (1724), 'I was very much disappointed, for instead of Purcell's music, we had Papuch's, and very humdrum it was; indeed, I never was so tired of anything in all my life' (Delany, *Correspondence*). 'The Squire of Alsatia' was more successful, 1726; but the greatest triumph of the series was 'The Beggar's Opera,' 1727–8. Pepusch's overture, accompaniments, and basses were incorporated into this work, the raw material of which consisted of country dances, popular tunes, and the like. The selections were made with judgment, and no lapses into ancient lore marred the happy simplicity of their setting. The less known 'Polly,' 1729, and 'The Wedding,' 1734, were produced afterwards.

In the course of his zeal for diffusing knowledge, Pepusch was drawn into Bishop Berkeley's abortive scheme for founding a college in the Bermudas [see Berkeley, George, 1685–1753]. In 1737 he accepted the post of organist to the Charterhouse, where he took up his abode. For a few years before his death he saw only favourite pupils and old friends in his rooms, and now and then he would play chess. He died 20 July 1752, aged 85, and was buried in the chapel of the Charterhouse. A full choral service was performed at his funeral by the gentlemen and children of the academy and the choristers of St. Paul's. In 1767 a memorial tablet was put up on the south wall of the chapel by the members of the academy, to which he had bequeathed valuable music. Oldys notes that in 1737 Pepusch offered him any assistance that his ancient collections of music would afford for a history of the art and its professors in England. Owing to a series of blunders most of the library was dispersed, but some of his papers came into the hands of Hawkins, and thence to the British Museum.

Pepusch married in 1718 Francesca Margherita de L'Épine [see Epine]; their son died in 1739. A portrait of Pepusch was given by Hayes to the music school at Oxford. Hawkins includes an engraving, after Hudson's painting, in his 'History' (p. 831). Pepusch wrote and spoke English imperfectly, and he had the assistance of James Grassineau and John Immyns as amanuenses and secretaries; it is thought probable that he superintended the translation by the former of Brossard's 'Dictionnaire,' published in 1740 (Grove). His 'Short Treatise on Harmony,' containing the elements of his teaching, was published by him in 1731. The year before a work so entitled and founded on the master's method was given to the world, without guidance or permission from him, by an indiscreet pupil. He dictated, but did not print, 'A short Account of the Twelve Modes of Composition and their Progression in every Octave.'

Among his published works, besides those

already mentioned, are: 1. 'Six Cantatas for Voice and Instruments,' the words by Hughes, 1716? One of these is 'Alexis,' which was sung by Vaughan, with a violoncello obbligato by Lindley, in 1817. 2. 'Six Cantatas for Voice with different Instruments,' the words by various authors, 1717? 3. 'Twenty-four Airs for two Violins.' 4. 'Sonatas for Flute and Bass.' 5. 'Solos for Flute.' 6. 'Solos for Violin.' 7. 'Ode for St. Cecilia's Day,' 1723. 8. An edition of Corelli's sonatas and concertos in score, 1732. In manuscript there exist Songs in 'Myrtillo,' Fitzwilliam Museum; 'Ode in honour of the late Duke of Devonshire' (Brit. Mus. Addit. MS. 5052); Motet, 'Beatus vir,' *a* 4 (*ib.* 5054); 'Myrtillo' (*ib.* 15980); autograph harmony and scale notes (*ib.* 29429); Magnificat (*ib.* 34072); at Royal College of Music, motets, sonatas, songs, and masques (Husk, *Catalogue*).

[Grove's Dict. (twenty-nine references in the four volumes); Hawkins's Hist., 2nd ed. pp. 831, 884, 907; Burney's Hist. iii. 109, 324, iv. 638; Gerber's Tonkünstler-Lexicon, 1792, ii. col. 91; Clark's Registers; Gent. Mag. 1738, p. 767; Annals of the Three Choirs, p. 15; Boyce's Cathedral Harmony, vol. i. pp. iv, vii; Husk's Celebrations of St. Cecilia's Day, pp. 61, 62, 90, 105; Oldys's Diary, p. 15; Ashton's Dawn of the Nineteenth Century, i. 15; Fuller-Maitland's Cat. of Fitzwilliam Museum, pp. 41 232, 241; Anecdotes of J. C. Smith, p. 41.] L. M. M.

**PEPWELL, HENRY** (*d.* 1540), printer and stationer in London, was born at Birmingham, but the first mention of his name occurs in the colophon of the first book he printed, the 'Castell of Pleasure,' which was issued in 1518. His business was carried on at the sign of the Trinity in St. Paul's Churchyard, a house which had belonged to another stationer, Henry Jacobi, whom Pepwell seems to have succeeded, and whose device, with the surname cut out, he used in some of his books. Between 1518 and 1523 Pepwell printed eight books, all of a popular character, and in 1525–6 was appointed warden of the Company of Stationers.

In 1531, at the request of Stokeslaye, bishop of London, he employed the Antwerp printer, Michael Hillenius, to print an edition of Eckius's 'Enchiridion locorum communium adversus Lutheranos,' now known from one surviving copy. In 1534 Pepwell is mentioned in the will of Wynkyn de Worde, who leaves him 4*l.* in printed books. In 1539 he printed some small grammars for the use of St. Paul's school, and on 11 Sept. of the same year made his will, which was proved on 8 Feb. 1540, so that his death probably took place at the beginning of that year. By his will he makes his wife Ursula sole executrix, and William Bonham, the printer, one of the supervisors. Most of his property is bequeathed to his children, none of whom are mentioned by name, though it is probable that the Arthur Pepwell whose name frequently occurs at a later date in the 'Stationers' Registers' was his son.

[Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, i. 310–316; Bibliographica, pt. ii.] E. G. D.

**PEPYS, CHARLES CHRISTOPHER,** first Earl of Cottenham (1781–1851), lord chancellor, born in Wimpole Street, Cavendish Square, London, on 29 April 1781, was the second son of Sir William Weller Pepys, bart., a master in chancery, by his wife Elizabeth, eldest daughter of the Right Hon. William Dowdeswell, sometime chancellor of the exchequer. Henry Pepys [q. v.] was his brother. He was educated at Harrow and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated LL.B. in 1803. He was admitted a member of Lincoln's Inn on 26 Jan. 1801, and was called to the bar on 23 Nov. 1804. He commenced practice at No. 16 Old Square, Lincoln's Inn; but, though esteemed a skilful equity draftsman, his progress at the chancery bar was exceedingly slow. On 24 Aug. 1826 he was made a king's counsel, and on 6 Nov. in the same year he was elected a bencher of Lincoln's Inn. In November 1830 he was appointed solicitor-general to Queen Adelaide, a post which he retained until May 1832. At a by-election in July 1831 he was returned to parliament in the whig interest for Higham Ferrers, but shortly afterwards resigned his seat, and in September following was elected for Malton, which he continued to represent until his elevation to the peerage. Pepys spoke for the first time in the House of Commons on 13 Oct. 1831, during the debate in committee on the bankruptcy bill (*Parl. Debates*, 3rd ser. viii. 729–30). On 22 Feb. 1834 he was appointed solicitor-general in Lord Grey's administration, and was knighted on the 26th of the same month (*London Gazette*, 1834, pt. i. p. 539). On 18 March following he obtained the appointment of a select committee to consider the state of the law of libel (*Parl. Debates*, 3rd ser. xxii. 410–18); and on 12 May moved the second reading of the bill for the establishment of the central criminal court, which became law during the session (4 & 5 Will. IV, c. 36). He succeeded Sir John Leach as master of the rolls on 29 Sept. 1834, and on 1 Oct. following was sworn a member of the privy council. On the formation of Lord Melbourne's second

cabinet in April 1835 the great seal was put into commission, Pepys, Vice-chancellor Shadwell, and Mr. Justice Bosanquet being the lords commissioners. Resigning the mastership of the rolls with considerable reluctance, Pepys was appointed lord chancellor on 16 Jan. 1836, and four days afterwards was created Baron Cottenham of Cottenham in the county of Cambridge. He took his seat in the House of Lords at the opening of parliament on 4 Feb. 1836 (*Journals of the House of Lords*, lxviii. 4), and on 28 April following brought in a bill for the better administration of justice in the high court of chancery, and also an appellate jurisdiction bill (*Parl. Debates*, 3rd ser. xxxiii. 402–24). 'His speech on this occasion,' says Lord Campbell, 'was tame, confused, and dissuasive' (*Life of Lord Chancellor Campbell*, 1881, ii. 82), and both bills were subsequently thrown out on the second reading (*Parl. Debates*, xxxiv. 413–86; *Journals of the House of Lords*, lxviii. 294). In the session of 1837–8 Cottenham carried a bill for amending the laws for the relief of insolvent debtors (1 & 2 Vict. c. 110). Disapproving of an alteration made in his bill, Cottenham obtained the appointment of a commission in November 1839, which recommended the abolition of imprisonment on final process, and the union of bankruptcy and insolvency (*Parl. Debates*, 1840, vol. xvi.) On 27 Aug. 1841 he reintroduced the bill, which had received the sanction of the house in the previous session, for facilitating the administration of justice by transferring the equity jurisdiction of the court of exchequer to the court of chancery, and by establishing two additional vice-chancellors (*ib.* 3rd ser. lix. 339). Before the bill became law (5 Vict. c. 5) the Melbourne ministry was defeated in the House of Commons, and Cottenham resigned office on 3 Sept. 1841. In 1844 Cottenham's bill for carrying out the report of the commission of inquiry into the bankruptcy and insolvency laws was finally rejected in favour of Brougham's alternative measure (7 & 8 Vict. c. 96), which remedied some of the harshest features of the old system, though it was not sufficiently drastic to satisfy Cottenham. On the formation of Lord John Russell's first administration in July 1846 Cottenham was reappointed lord chancellor. On 28 July 1846 he moved the second reading of the small debts bill (*Parl. Debates*, lxxxviii. 109–13), by which the modern county courts were first established (9 & 10 Vict. c. 95). In March 1847 he introduced a bill to facilitate the sale of encumbered estates in Ireland (*Parl. Debates*, 3rd ser. xci. 262). Though it passed the House of Lords, the bill was dropped in the House of Commons; and on 24 Feb. 1848 Cottenham moved the second reading of a more elaborate measure for enabling the embarrassed owners of life estates in Ireland to sell their property (*ib.* 3rd ser. xcvi. 1249–51), which received the royal assent during the session (11 & 12 Vict. c. 48). Cottenham's health had for some time past been giving way, and he was frequently incapacitated from his duties. He spoke for the last time in the House of Lords on 8 March 1850 (*Parl. Debates*, 3rd ser. cix. 532). On 22 April following he issued a series of orders providing a new method of claims in chancery (Macnaghten and Gordon, *Reports*, vol. i. pp. xiv–lv). He was created Viscount Crowhurst and Earl of Cottenham on 11 June, and, having resigned the great seal on the 19th of the same month, he went abroad in search of health. He died at Pietra Santa in the duchy of Lucca on 29 April 1851, the seventieth anniversary of his birth, and was buried at Totteridge in Hertfordshire.

Cottenham was a steady and consistent whig, a sound lawyer, and an exceedingly able judge. His judgments, which were more remarkable for their sound sense than for any subtle reasoning, were clear, businesslike, and free from affectation or display. Brougham declared that his appointment of Pepys to the mastership of the rolls was his 'own best title to the gratitude of the profession' (*Life and Times of Lord Brougham*, 1871, iii. 442). 'His skill in deciding cases,' says Campbell, 'arises from a very vigorous understanding, unwearied industry in professional plodding, and a complete mastery over all the existing practice, and all the existing doctrines of the court of chancery. He considers the system which he has to administer as the perfection of human wisdom. Phlegmatic in everything else, here he shows a considerable degree of enthusiasm' (*Life of Lord Chancellor Campbell*, ii. 207). He was neither an eloquent orator nor a great advocate. As a law reformer he was not very successful, and as a politician he was a decided failure. Absorbed in his legal work, he had no tastes or interest outside his profession. He cared little for society, was cold and reserved in his manners, and extremely tenacious of his opinions. He rarely spoke in the House of Commons, but in the upper house he was compelled by reason of his position to take a more frequent part in the debates. In the cabinet he is said to have remained silent, unless some point of law was expressly put him. His judgments will be found in Clark

and Finelly's 'Reports of Cases heard and decided in the House of Lords,' Cooper's 'Reports of Cases in Chancery decided by Lord Cottenham,' and in the reports of Mylne and Craig, Craig and Phillips, Phillips, Hall and Twells, and Macnaghten and Gordon. Among his most important decisions were those delivered by him in the Auchterarder case (Clark and Finelly, vi. 646–756), O'Connell's case (*ib.* xi. 155–426), and in the cases of Tullett *v.* Armstrong and Scarborough *v.* Borman (Mylne and Craig, iv. 377–407). His scheme for the reform of chancery is printed in Hardy's 'Memoirs of Henry, Lord Langdale,' 1852, ii. 252–6.

He married, on 30 June 1821, Caroline Elizabeth, second daughter of William Wingfield (afterwards Wingfield-Baker), K.C., chief justice of the Brecon circuit, and subsequently a master in chancery, by whom he had fifteen children. He was succeeded in the earldom by his eldest son, Charles Edward, who died unmarried on 18 Feb. 1863, when the family honours devolved upon his next brother, William John, whose eldest son is the fourth and present earl. His widow survived him many years, and died at Sunninghill, Berkshire, on 7 April 1868, aged 65. Cottenham was descended from John Pepys of Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, a great-uncle of Samuel Pepys the diarist. By the death of his elder brother, Sir William Weller Pepys, on 5 Oct. 1845, the baronetcy conferred upon his father (23 June 1801) devolved upon Cottenham, who also inherited, on 9 Dec. 1849, the baronetcy which had been conferred upon his uncle, Sir Lucas Pepys [q. v.] He was appointed a governor of the Charterhouse on 17 Feb. 1836, and served as treasurer of Lincoln's Inn in 1837. The full-length portrait of Cottenham in his chancellor's robes, by H. P. Briggs, R.A., which was exhibited at the loan collection of national portraits at South Kensington in 1868 (Catalogue, No. 377), was engraved by Thomas Lupton in 1850. His portrait was also painted by Sir George Hayter and C. R. Leslie.

[Besides the authorities cited in the text, the following books among others have been consulted: Lord Campbell's Lives of the Lord Chancellors, 1869, vol. viii.; Walpole's Hist. of England, 1880–6, vols. iii. and iv.; Torrens's Memoirs of William, Viscount Melbourne, 1878, i. 47–8, ii. 170–4, 178, 400; Le Marchant's Memoir of Lord Althorp, 1876, pp. 58–68, 391; Foss's Judges of England, 1864, ix. 239–42; Law Mag. xlvi. 280–8; Law Review, xiv. 353–9; Cussans's Hist. of Hertfordshire, Hundred of Broadwater, 1877, pp. 301, 306; Gent. Mag. 1851, pt. ii. pp. 84–5; Pepys's Genealogy of the Pepys Family, 1887; Times for 2 and 3 Sept. 1841, and 8 May 1851; Doyle's Official Baronage, 1886, i. 464; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage, 1889, ii. 383; Grad. Cantabr. 1856, p. 297; Lincoln's Inn Registers; Butler's Harrow Lists, 1849, p. 53; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, pt. ii. pp. 332, 335, 346, 358; Notes and Queries, 6th ser. viii. 513, 7th ser. vii. 389, 436, 474, viii. 58.]

G. F. R. B.

PEPYS, HENRY (1783–1860), bishop of Worcester, younger brother of Charles Christopher Pepys, earl of Cottenham [q. v.], was born in Wimpole Street, London, on 18 April 1783. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he graduated B.A. in 1804, and then, migrating as a fellow to St. John's College, proceeded M.A. 1807, B.D. 1814, D.D. 1840.

He was rector of Aspeden, Hertfordshire, from 12 June 1818 to 28 April 1827, and held with it the college living of Moreton, Essex, from 16 Aug. 1822 until 1840. On 3 Feb. 1826 he was appointed a prebendary of Wells, and on 31 March 1827 rector of Westmill, Hertfordshire. In politics he was a liberal. On 27 Jan. 1840 he was, on Lord Melbourne's recommendation, elevated to the bishopric of Sodor and Man, was consecrated at Whitehall on 1 March, arrived at Douglas, Isle of Man, on 27 April, was installed at St. Mary's, Castleton, on 8 May, and left the island on 4 May 1841, on his translation to the see of Worcester.

In the House of Lords, although he voted in favour of the chief liberal measures, he only spoke twice on ecclesiastical questions of small importance. Personally he was very popular, and was conscientious in the discharge of his diocesan duties. He was a generous patron of the triennial festival of the Three Choirs.

He died at Hartlebury Castle, Stourport, Worcestershire, on 13 Nov. 1860.

He married, on 27 Jan. 1824, Maria, third daughter of the Right Hon. John Sullivan, commissioner of the board of control. She died on 17 June 1885, in her ninetieth year, having had four children: (1) Philip Henry Pepys, registrar of the London court of bankruptcy; (2) Herbert George Pepys, honorary canon of Worcester; (3) Maria Louisa Pepys, who married the Rev. Edward Winnington Ingram; and (4) Emily Pepys, who married the Rev. and Hon. William Henry Lyttelton, and died on 12 Sept. 1877.

Pepys published 'The Remains of the late Lord Viscount Royston, with a Memoir of his Life,' 1838, six charges and two single sermons.

[Berrow's Worcester Journal, 17 Nov. 1860, p. 5, 24 Nov. p. 3; Gent. Mag. December 1860, p. 674; Dod's Peerage, 1860, p. 586; Times, 16 Nov. 1860, p. 12, 22 Nov. p. 12; Guardian, 21 Nov. 1860, p. 1,006; Illustr. London News, 24 Nov. 1860, p. 497.] G. C. B.

PEPYS, Sir LUCAS (1742–1830), bart., physician, son of William Pepys, a banker, and his wife Hannah, daughter of Dr. Richard Russell of Brighton, was born in London on 26 May 1742. He was educated at Eton and at Christ Church, Oxford, whence he graduated B.A. on 9 May 1764. He then studied medicine at Edinburgh, and afterwards graduated at Oxford, M.A. on 13 May 1767, M.B. on 30 April 1770, and M.D. on 14 June 1774. Before his M.B. degree he obtained a license to practice from the university of Oxford, took a house in London, and on 10 Feb. 1769 was elected physician to the Middlesex Hospital, and held office for seven years. In the summer he used to practice at Brighton. He was elected a fellow of the College of Physicians on 30 Sept. 1775, was censor in 1777, 1782, 1786, and 1796, treasurer from 1788 to 1798, and president from 1804 to 1810. In 1777 he was appointed physician-extraordinary to the king, and in 1792 physician-in-ordinary. He was created a baronet on 22 Jan. 1784. He attended George III in his mental disorder of 1788–9, and in that of 1804. He was examined on the subject of the king's health by a committee of the House of Commons on 7 Jan. 1789. He then thought it likely that the king would recover in time, and stated that he had observed signs of improvement. He attended two days a week at Kew, where the king was, from four in the afternoon till eleven the next morning, having a consultation often either with Sir George Baker or Dr. Richard Warren. In 1794 he was made physician-general to the army, and was president of an army medical board, on which it was his duty to nominate all the army physicians. When so many soldiers fell ill of fever at Walcheren, he was ordered to go there and report. He was so ill-advised as to decline, and the board was in consequence abolished; but he was granted a pension. He had a large practice, and after Jenner's discovery he was an active supporter of the National Vaccine Institution. He was punctual and assiduous as president of the College of Physicians, but his only published work was the Latin preface to the 'London Pharmacopœia' of 1809. He married, on 30 Oct. 1772, Jane Elizabeth, countess of Rothes, and had by her two sons and a daughter. He married again, on 29 June 1813, Deborah, daughter of Dr. Anthony Askew [q. v.], who survived him. His house was in Park Street, Grosvenor Square, and he died there on 17 June 1830. He is described by Dr. Munk, who knew several of his contemporaries, as 'a person of great firmness and determination, somewhat dictatorial in his manner.' His portrait was painted by Edridge.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. ii. 304; Picture of the Present State of the Royal College of Physicians, London, 1817; Report from the Committee appointed to examine the Physicians who have attended his Majesty, 1789; Lecky's Hist. of England.] N. M.

PEPYS, Sir RICHARD (1588?–1659), lord chief justice of Ireland, born about 1588 at Cottenham, was second son of John Pepys (*d.* 1604) of the Middle Temple and of Impington, near Cottenham, Cambridge, and of Elizabeth (*d.* 1642), daughter of John Bendish of Bower Hall, Bumpstead, Essex.

Richard joined the Middle Temple, and sat in the Short parliament (16 March 1639–1640) as member for Sudbury, Suffolk. In 1642 he was left heir to the estate of his elder brother John, and in 1643–4 was elected treasurer of the Middle Temple. His shield of arms is in the wainscoting and window of that hall, dated 1644. The only reference to his pleading is in 1640 (*State Papers*, Dom. ccccl xx. 113). In January 1654 he was appointed serjeant-at-law, and was immediately after a member of the commission for the spring circuit through the midland counties. On 30 May in the same year he was appointed baron of the exchequer, in spite of scruples as to the Protector's legal authority. On 21 June he was commanded by the Protector to go on the Essex circuit 'without incurring any penalty' (Council Book I. vol. 75, p. 387, Record Office).

On 17 Aug. of the same year he was, with four others, appointed by Cromwell to be of the counsel to Deputy Fleetwood in Ireland. On 25 Sept. a warrant was issued to prepare a bill for constituting Pepys lord chief justice for holding pleas in the upper bench in Ireland during good behaviour, and at a salary of 500*l.* per annum (*Sloane Ayscough MS.* 4184, fol. 47). From 14 June 1655 till 20 Aug. 1656, when William Steele became chancellor, Pepys was chief commissioner of the great seal in Ireland. He died at Dublin on 2 Jan. 1658–9. His funeral sermon was preached by Dr. Edward Worth; and Sir William Petty [q. v.], in his imprimatur sanctioning the publication of the sermon, speaks in high terms of Pepys. On 30 July 1660 administration of his goods was granted to his son Richard.

Pepys married, first, Judith, a daughter of Sir William Cutte, knt., of Arkesden, Essex; secondly, Mary (*d.* 1660), daughter of Captain Gosnold. He left four sons and two daughters. His eldest son, Richard, married Mary, daughter of John Scott of Belchamp-Walter, Essex, and, with his wife and daughter Mary, migrated to New England in 1634, but returned in 1650 and settled at Ashen Clare, Essex (DRAKE, *Researches among British Archives*; SAVAGE, *Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England*, iii. 393).

[For the pedigree of the Cottenham Pepyses see Addit. MS. 14049, fol. 49 *b*; Lord Braybrooke's edition of Pepys's Diary, v. 456; W. C. Pepys's Genealogy of the Pepys Family; St. George's Visitation of Cambridge, Harl. MS. 1043; Cole MSS. xxi. 28; Foss's Judges of England, v. 467; Dugdale's Origines Juridiciales, p. 220; Godwin's Commonwealth, iv. 26, 179; Whitelocke's Memorials, p. 591; Campbell's Lives of the Chief Justices, i. 444; Dr. Edward Worth's Funeral Sermon, 'The Servant Doing and the Lord Blessing,' Dublin, 1659 (Brit. Mus. E. 974–3); Latin elegy, single sheet folio, No. 170, in the Luttrell collection of broadsides, signed Rob. Kilmorensis, February 1658; Calendar of Clarendon State Papers, ii. 314, iii. 223; Lascelles's Liber Munerum, ii. 31; Smyth's Law Officers of Ireland, p. 291; Pepys's correspondence in the possession of Edmund Pepys, esq., of 20 Portland Place, quoted in W. C. Pepys's Genealogy; Thurloe State Papers, &c.; Return of Members (Parl. Papers, 1878); Ludlow Memoirs, ed. Firth, i. 426.] W. A. S.

**PEPYS, SAMUEL** (1633–1703), diarist, was born 23 Feb. 1632–3. His birthplace was either London or (according to KNIGHT, *Life of Colet*, App.) Brampton, Huntingdonshire. His father, John Pepys, born in 1601, belonged to a family long settled at Cottenham in Cambridgeshire. He was son of Thomas Pepys, whose sister Paulina married Sir Sidney Montagu, and became the mother of Edward Montagu (1625–1672), afterwards first Earl of Sandwich [q. v.] John Pepys became a tailor in London, and was concerned in some trade with Holland. As in August 1661 he had only 45*l.* in money, and debts to about the same amount, he cannot have been very prosperous. In that year he retired to a small property, worth about 80*l.* a year, at Brampton, left to him by his elder brother, Robert. At this time Samuel, Thomas (1634–1669), John (1641–1677), and Paulina (1640–1680) were the only surviving children out of eleven. His wife died in 1667, and he in 1680.

References in the 'Diary' show that Samuel Pepys (26 Aug. 1664) was boarded out as a child at Hackney and Kingsland. He was afterwards at school (15 March 1659–1660) at Huntingdon, and finally a scholar of St. Paul's School in London. On the day of the king's execution he observed that if he preached on the occasion his text should be, 'The memory of the wicked shall rot.' He was much relieved on 1 Nov. 1660 to find that an old schoolfellow, who remembered that Pepys was a 'great roundhead,' had not heard this particular remark. On 21 June 1650 Pepys was admitted at Trinity Hall, Cambridge (*Academy* for 1893, i. 372), and on 5 March 1650–1 Pepys migrated as a sizar to Magdalene College, Cambridge. He probably changed with a view to a scholarship, as he was elected on the Spendluffe foundation on 3 April 1651, and on 4 Oct. 1653 he was elected to a scholarship founded by John Smith. On 21 Oct. 1653 he was 'solemnly admonished' with a companion for having been 'scandalously overserved with drink' on the previous night. Pepys, however, became the friend of several industrious fellow-students, such as Joseph Hill [q. v.], Hezekiah Burton [q. v.], and Richard Cumberland (1631–1718) [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Peterborough. He wished afterwards (18 March 1667) that his sister Paulina would marry Cumberland, as a 'man of reading and parts.' His later history shows that he retained a warm feeling for his college. At college he wrote a romance called 'Love a Cheate,' but tore it up on 31 Jan. 1663–4.

Pepys graduated as B.A. in 1653, and became M.A. on 26 June 1660. On 1 Dec. 1655, according to the register of St. Margaret's, Westminster, he married Elizabeth St. Michel—although both he and his wife afterwards believed their wedding-day to have been 10 Oct.—a pretty girl of fifteen, having been born, according to her epitaph, on 23 Oct. 1640. She was daughter of Alexandre St. Michel, a Huguenot, who came to England with Henrietta Maria on her marriage with Charles I. St. Michel had been disinherited by his father on account of his religion, and was dismissed by the queen for 'striking a friar' in the course of argument. He married a widow who was daughter of Sir Francis Kingsmill, and got into difficulties in the attempt to recover his property in France. His daughter when about twelve was shut up in a convent at Paris, but was afterwards recovered by a 'stratagem.' In later years St. Michel became a 'projector;' he obtained patents for curing smoky chimneys and for cleaning muddy ponds. He had also plans for raising submerged ships, and had discovered 'King Solomon's gold and silver mines.' Naturally, he and his wife had to live upon 4*s.* a week from

the French church (28 March 1667) (Smith, *Life of Pepys*, i. 146–53; Wheatley, *Samuel Pepys*, 241–50).

In 1656 Pepys entered the family of his father's first cousin, Sir Edward Montagu, who, as Mr. Wheatley suggests, may perhaps have enabled him to go to college. Pepys was employed as a kind of factotum in matters of business during Montagu's absences from London. On 26 March 1658 he underwent a successful operation for the stone, and commemorated the day ever afterwards. In June 1659 Sir Edward Montagu took him on the expedition to the Sound, but did not let him into the secret of the negotiations with Charles II. On his return he became clerk in the office of (Sir) George Downing (1623?–1684) [q. v.], one of the tellers of the exchequer; and when he began his 'Diary' (1 Jan. 1659–60) was living in Axe Yard, Westminster, with his wife and one maid. His salary was 50*l.* a year, but he was erroneously 'esteemed rich.' On 19 Jan. Downing obtained his appointment to be a clerk of the council, in order, as Pepys thought, to escape paying his salary himself. In March Pepys was made secretary to Sir Edward Montagu, upon his taking command of the fleet which brought Charles II to England. Pepys was now an ardent loyalist, took part in all the ceremonials with infinite satisfaction, heard Charles tell the story of his escape from Worcester, was civilly treated by the Duke of York, and got a share of the presents. Montagu showed much confidence in him, and on 23 June promised him appointment as 'clerk of the acts.'

The office of 'clerk of the king's ships,' or of the 'acts of the navy' (Wheatley *Samuel Pepys*, p. 279, &c.), is mentioned in the time of Edward IV. The clerk was a member of the 'navy board' constituted by Henry VIII; and in Pepys's patent, dated 13 July 1660, he was entitled to the ancient fee of 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* per annum. Pepys's salary, however, was fixed at 350*l.* (7 July 1660). The board included a treasurer, controller, surveyor, and four commissioners; and Pepys was not merely secretary, but had equal authority with other members of the board. The clerkship of the acts had been abolished under the Commonwealth, and a new set of regulations was issued by the Duke of York, as lord high admiral, in January 1661–2.

Pepys had some difficulty in securing the place. Monck brought forward a candidate of his own; and Thomas Barlow, who had been clerk of the acts under Charles I, was still alive, and claimed the office. Pepys finally agreed to give Barlow 100*l.* a year, having observed that he was an 'old, consumptive man' (17 July 1660). Barlow lived till 1665, when Pepys had some trouble to reconcile his regret for the death of a 'worthy, honest man' with his thankfulness to God for a saving of 100*l.* a year (9 Feb. 1664–5). On 6 Aug. 1660 he had an offer of 1,000*l.* for his place, which 'made his mouth water,' but which he judiciously declined. On 23 July he also became a clerk of the privy seal by Montagu's influence. He did not expect much from this, but considered that it would be a convenient refuge if he lost his other post. On 10 Aug. 1660 he found that he was making about 3*l.* a day by it. As clerk of the acts Pepys had a house in the navy office, between Crutched Friars and Seething Lane (demolished after the removal of the office to Somerset House). He feared that the other officials might 'shuffle him out' of his lodgings, but was soon settled there, and on 17 Sept. got rid of his house in Axe Yard. He was sworn in as justice of the peace on 24 Sept., and 'mightily pleased,' though 'wholly ignorant' of the duties of his new position.

On 15 Feb. 1661–2 Pepys was sworn in as younger brother of the Trinity House. In the following August he was put on the Tangier commission, his colleague (Sir) William Coventry [q. v.] observing at the time that he was 'the life of the navy office' (20 Sept. 1662). On 10 March 1663–4 he was appointed an assistant of the 'corporation of the royal fishing,' of which the Duke of York was governor. The accounts of the Tangier commission having got into disorder, he was appointed, through the favour of the Duke of York, to succeed Pavy as treasurer (20 March 1664–5). No 'harsh words passed,' which was 'a good fortune beyond all imagination.' On the 27th of the following October he was appointed surveyor-general of the victualling office, in accordance with suggestions made by himself. An elaborate letter of 1 Jan. 1665–6, in which he describes his plan for regulating the pursers, is in the Harleian MSS. 'A purser,' he says, 'would not have twice what he got unless he cheated.' Pepys had apparently begun with no more knowledge of the navy or accounts than he had of the duties of a justice of the peace. He had engaged a mathematical tutor in July 1662, when his first business was to learn the multiplication table. This, however, was his only trouble in arithmetic. He applied vigorously to work, and took great trouble to acquire a thorough knowledge of all the details of his office. He was often at his office at four in the morning, looked

into the various abuses, and became a thorough master of his business. He found time to visit the theatres, and to indulge in a good deal of conviviality, not infrequently becoming 'fuddled,' incurring bad headaches, and making vows of abstinence, which were sometimes hard to keep. He allowed himself to drink hippocras on one occasion (29 Oct. 1663) because it was not wine—only a 'compound' including sugar and spice as well as wine. He probably made money by means which would now be considered as corrupt, but which were then part of the recognised perquisites of officials. But, in spite of weaknesses, revealed with singular clearness, Pepys was a very energetic official; and not only a man of integrity himself, but a zealous reformer of abuses. He obtained the confidence of the Duke of York and his colleague, Sir W. Coventry. During the war with Holland (declared 6 Feb. 1665) Pepys worked hard to supply the requirements of the fleet. Monck called him, he says (24 April 1665), the 'right hand of the navy.' He stayed at work during the plague, saying to Coventry: 'You took your turn of the sword; I must not grudge to take mine of the pestilence' (*Diaries*, i. xxviii.) During the fire of London (September 1666) he suggested that Sir W. Penn should fetch workmen from the dockyard to pull down houses, and by their help the fire was stopped before reaching the navy office. He buried his money at the house of Sir W. Rider at Bethnal Green, and his 'wine and Parmesan cheese' in a garden. He afterwards sent the money to his father's house at Brampton, whither he went to dig it up in the following October (1667). Meanwhile the discontent with the naval management, increased by the Dutch fleet in the Medway, led to the appointment of a parliamentary committee (October 1667). Pepys gave evidence before them, but was much worried for some time. The officials finally obtained leave to defend themselves before the House of Commons. Pepys had to get up the evidence. On 5 March 1667–8, after taking half a pint of mulled sack and a dram of brandy, Pepys went to the house and made a speech from twelve till past three. Many members went out to dinner and came back half drunk during the oration. It was, however, signally successful. Coventry told him that he ought to be speaker. The solicitor-general declared that he was the best speaker in England. Mr. G. Montagu kissed him, and called him Cicero; his fellow officers were overjoyed, and the house appears to have been convinced of their innocence. The proposed impeachments were dropped, and Pepys began to think of becoming a member of parliament.

Pepys had previously written (17 Nov. 1666) to the Duke of York upon the abuses in the navy. He now prepared an elaborate document, which was adopted by the duke as his own, and contained 'reflections' upon the several members of the board (28 Aug. 1668). Pepys was naturally suspected by his colleagues, but joined them in sending answers to the 'reflections.' He then drew up a reply, which was adopted by the duke (25 Nov. 1688), and contains a 'stinging reprimand' to the officials (see WHEATLEY, *Samuel Pepys*, pp. 139–42. Both letters are in the British Museum). Pepys was now in high favour with the Duke of York, and expected that his post would be henceforth an office 'of ease, and not slavery, as it hath for so many years been' (6 Dec. 1668). The 'Diary' shows that he had a very low opinion of all his colleagues, except Coventry, 'the man of all the world that he was resolved to preserve an interest in' (27 Nov. 1668).

He had now become the most important of the naval officials. His pecuniary position had been steadily improving. When he first sailed with Montagu he was 'not clearly worth 25*l.*' (3 June 1660); he came back with 100*l.* At the end of 1660 he had 300*l.*, and 900*l.* at the end of 1663. On 13 Aug. 1665 he had 2,164*l.*, besides Brampton; and by the end of that year his gains from prizes and his new employments had raised his estate to 4,400*l.* At the end of 1666 he had 6,200*l.*, after which he ceases to give these details. At the end of 1668, however, he resolved to buy a coach; and in December set it up with a pair of black horses, of which he was 'mighty proud.' He thought himself entitled to it, although he might 'contract envy,' and was, in fact, accused in a contemporary pamphlet of 'presumption in the highest degree.' He was, however, troubled by a failure of eyesight, first mentioned in January 1663–4. At last, after much anxiety, he found that writing was so hurtful that he gave up his 'Diary' on 31 May 1669. To do so, he says, is 'almost as much as to see himself go into his grave.'

He obtained leave of absence, and made a trip to France and Holland, during which he collected information about the foreign navies. On his return his wife sickened of a fever and died, at the age of twenty-nine, on 10 Nov. 1669. She was buried at St. Olave's Church, Hart Street, where Pepys erected a monument to her memory. He had been 'frighted' in the previous year by her confession of a catholic inclination,

though he was 'mightily pleased' by her consenting to go to church with him (29 Nov. and 6 Dec. 1668). Probably she had received some impressions from her life in the convent, although Pepys obtained afterwards a letter from her brother denying that she had 'the least thoughts of popery' (Smith, i. 147). The Duke of York was endeavouring at this time to obtain Pepys's election to a seat vacated at Aldborough, Suffolk, by the death of Sir Robert Brooke. Pepys was prevented by his wife's last illness from attending at the election; and, in spite of the influence of the duke and Lord Henry Howard (afterwards sixth Duke of Norfolk), the choice fell upon John Bruce. In November 1670 Pepys was nearly fighting a duel with the Swedish resident, Leyenbergh, who, in 1671, married the widow of Sir William Batten [q. v.], one of Pepys's colleagues. Batten owed him money, and the quarrel, as Lord Braybrooke suggests, may have arisen in some way out of this. The meeting, however, was stopped by the king's orders.

Pepys's patron, Montagu, who had become first Earl of Sandwich, was killed in action on 28 May 1672. Pepys had been a serviceable client; he had remonstrated very sensibly with Lord Sandwich for neglecting his duties in consequence of a connection with a mistress (9 Sept. and 18 Nov. 1663), and in 1665 he was employed in bringing about the marriage between Sandwich's daughter, Lady Jemima, and Philip, son of the treasurer of the navy, Sir George Carteret [q. v.] Pepys, however, was now independent. In the summer of 1673 the Duke of York resigned his posts upon the passage of the Test Act. The admiralty was thereupon put into commission, and Pepys was appointed, about June 1673, 'secretary for the affairs of the navy.' He obtained the appointment to his old office of his clerk, Thomas Hayter, and his brother, John Pepys. John had been at St. Paul's School, and was scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and in 1670 Pepys had obtained his appointment to be clerk of the Trinity House. He died unmarried in 1677, owing 300*l.* to the Trinity House, which Pepys had to pay. The elevation to the peerage of Sir Robert Paxton caused a vacancy for Castle Rising. The Duke of York had, in 1672, obtained a promise from Howard to support Pepys. As Howard had given other promises to the king and the Duchess of Cleveland there was some difficulty; but Pepys was ultimately elected on 4 Nov. 1673. On a petition from his opponent the election was pronounced to be void by the committee of privileges, but as the house did not come to a vote he was permitted to retain his seat. He was afterwards accused of having an altar with a crucifix in his house, and being 'a papist and popishly inclined.' Pepys appears to have had either a crucifix or a picture of the crucifixion (*Diary*, 20 July, 2 Aug., 3 Nov. 1666), but he entirely denied the charge. It rested upon vague statements by Lord Shaftesbury and Sir John Banks; but as Shaftesbury could remember nothing distinctly, and Banks denied having said anything, the charge was dropped. In 1676 Pepys was master of the Trinity House and in 1677 master of the Clothworkers' Company, to whom he presented a silver cup, still preserved. He appears from a reference in the debates (*Parl. Hist.* iv. 976–6) to have been regarded as assuming dictatorial authority in naval matters. In February 1678–9 Pepys was receiving applications from Portsmouth, the Isle of Wight boroughs, and Harwich to become member. He chose to stand for Harwich, and sat as its representative in the Short parliament of 1679. He was now the object of an attack which was made dangerous by the excitement of the 'popish plot' ('Pepys and the Popish Plots,' *Hist. Rev.* p. 492). His intimacy with the Duke of York was likely to rouse suspicions. His clerk, Samuel Atkins, had been accused of being accessory to the murder of Sir Edmund Berry Godfrey [q. v.], but was acquitted on 8 Feb. 1678–9. Atkins had been employed by the Duke of York to collect evidence against one John Scott, who was proved guilty of a fraud. Scott now accused Pepys and his colleague, Sir Anthony Deane, of sending information about the navy to the French government, and generally of conspiring to extirpate the protestant religion. They were committed to the Tower under the speaker's warrant on 22 May 1679, and Hayter succeeded to Pepys's office at the admiralty. Pepys was put to great expense in preparing a defence. He had to employ his brother-in-law, St. Michel, to collect evidence. A music-master, Morelli, who had lived with him, was supposed to be a priest in disguise, and Pepys had to appeal to him to disprove the report (Smith, i. 192, 198). The trial was postponed several times, though the prisoners were ultimately allowed to find security for 30,000*l.* At length, on 12 Feb. 1679–80, they applied for a discharge, when the attorney-general consented, Scott having refused to support his original deposition. John James, who had been a butler to Pepys, died in March 1680, and, confessed that he had trumped up the charge (*ib.* i. 216, 271). William Harbord, M.P. for Thetford, was an enemy of Pepys, and, according to his belief,

at the bottom of the whole proceeding (*ib.* i. 205); and James, in his confession, said that Harbord had bribed him. Scott killed a coachman in 1682 and had to fly the country, though he returned in 1696. He appears to have been a thorough scoundrel and a supporter of Oates (see Hewer to Pepys, 13 May 1682, and E. Wright to Pepys, 12 Nov. 1696).

Pepys was out of office for a time, but still in communication with the king and the duke. In October 1680 he was at Newmarket with Charles, and took down the story of his escape from Worcester (first published by Lord Hailes in 1766). In 1681 he was invited by his friends to apply for the provostship of King's College, Cambridge. He expresses some diffidence from his want of 'academic knowledge,' but was attracted by the retirement which would give leisure for putting together his collections upon the history of the navy. He said that he would give up the whole of the first year's income and half the income of succeeding years to the college. The scheme, however, dropped. In 1682 he accompanied the Duke of York to Scotland. He 'narrowly escaped' the shipwreck, in which the duke himself and the future Duke of Marlborough were nearly lost, by sailing in a different ship. He was present at two councils in Edinburgh, and visited Glasgow. In August 1683 George Legge, first lord Dartmouth [q. v.], was ordered to sail to Tangier to demolish the works and bring home the garrison. Pepys was appointed to accompany him, and wrote a journal (published in Smith, vol. i.), which is of considerable value. It shows Pepys's shrewdness; though the peculiarities which give interest to his earlier diaries had disappeared, whether because he had become more cautious or because he was really more demure. Charles II now became himself lord high admiral. Pepys was appointed secretary of the admiralty, with a salary of 500*l.* a year (patent dated 10 June 1686). Pepys was now at the height of consideration. He was chosen president of the Royal Society in November 1684 (having been elected a fellow on 15 Feb. 1664–5), and he was again president in the following year. He afterwards received the society at his house in York Buildings on Saturday evenings, and Evelyn regrets the discontinuance of these meetings caused by the infirmity of the host. He had settled in this house, which was upon the site of York House, demolished in 1672, soon after leaving the navy office. Pepys was in the procession at the coronation of James II as one of the barons of the Cinque ports; and was again named first master of the Trinity House in 1685, upon its receipt of a new charter. Evelyn attended a great dinner upon the occasion (20 July). On the election of parliament in May 1685 Pepys was returned for Harwich and for Sandwich, and elected to serve for Harwich. He was in correspondence with Dartmouth, who commanded the fleet intended to meet William's expedition. James II, just before his flight, was sitting to Kneller for a portrait intended for Pepys; and Pepys acted as secretary until 20 Feb. 1688–9. On 9 March following he was directed to hand over his papers to Phineas Bowles, who succeeded him. On 25 June 1689 he was committed to the Gatehouse on a charge of giving information to the French, but allowed to return to his house, on the plea of ill-health, in July. On 15 Oct. 1690 he asked some friends who had bailed him to 'eat a piece of mutton with him to-morrow,' in celebration of his being 'once again a free man in every respect.'

After his retirement Pepys lived chiefly at Clapham with William Hewer, who had been his clerk. He kept up a correspondence with many distinguished people, including Sir Isaac Newton, Sir Christopher Wren, Evelyn, and Sir Hans Sloane. Dryden imitated Chaucer's 'Good Parson' at his request. He took an interest in Christ's Hospital, of which he was a governor. He sent Kneller to Oxford in 1701 to paint a portrait of John Wallis, and presented it to the university in 1702, for which he was elaborately thanked. He died at Clapham on 26 May 1703, when a large stone was found in his kidney. He received the sacrament in his last illness from George Hickes, the nonjuror, who was much edified by his behaviour. He was buried at St. Olave's, Hart Street, by the side of his wife, on 5 June. Rings and mourning were distributed to a large number of persons. He left his fortune to his nephew, John Jackson, son of his sister Paulina. He is at present represented by the family of Pepys Cockerell, one of Jackson's daughters having married John Cockerell of Bishop's Hall, Somerset. At the time of Pepys's death a sum of 28,000*l.* was due to him from the crown, which was never paid. Pepys left his library to Jackson for his life. It was to go upon his death to some college, Magdalene by preference, and to be kept separate, with various restrictions as to its use. Upon Jackson's death in 1726 it was accordingly given to Magdalene, where it is placed in a building to which Pepys had subscribed. Pepys had taken great pains in selecting and arranging his books, and they remain in the old presses mentioned in the 'Diary' of 24 Aug. 1666. The

library contains three thousand volumes. Among the manuscripts are papers collected by Pepys for his naval history, and a collection of Scottish poetry formed by Sir Richard Maitland, lord Lethington [q. v.] Besides some old printed books there is a collection of broadside ballads said to be the largest ever made, and of tracts on the popish plots, of 'news pamphlets' from 1 Jan. 1659–60 to 1 Jan. 1665–6, and one of prints and drawings illustrative of London. Pepys's catalogues and memoranda are especially neat and businesslike. There are also fifty volumes of Pepys's manuscripts in the Rawlinson collection in the Bodleian, and some other of his papers belong to Mr. J. Eliot Hodgkin, F.S.A., of Childwall, Richmond. A portrait of Pepys by John Hayls [q. v.], representing him with his song 'Beauty Retire,' is in the National Portrait Gallery. One by Lely is in the Pepysian Library at Magdalene, and another by Kneller in the college hall; another by Kneller is at the Royal Society, and a third by Kneller was exhibited at the Portrait Exhibition of 1866, by Mr. Andrew Pepys Cockerell. Mrs. Frederick Pepys Cockerell has a small portrait also attributed to Kneller, but more probably is the same as that by Savill, mentioned in his 'Diary' for 1661–2. A picture by Verris at Christ's Hospital of James II receiving the mathematical scholars includes a figure of Pepys.

A monument to Pepys in St. Olave's Church, designed by Sir Alfred Blomfield, was unveiled on 18 March 1884, when an address was delivered by J. R. Lowell, then minister for the United States. A 'contemporary account,' quoted by Lord Braybrooke, declares Pepys to have been the most useful minister who ever filled his position in England. It is, in fact, plain that Pepys was a very able and energetic official and came at a critical period, when an approach to the modern system of organisation was being introduced. His biographers have expressed some surprise that a man so highly respected, and apparently upon such good grounds, by his contemporaries should have made the unique confessions of weaknesses now famous. The explanation is probably very simple. The 'Diary' shows that Pepys was a very keen man of business, careful in money matters, sufficiently honourable in his own conduct, and objecting strongly to corruption in others; a shrewd observer of boundless curiosity, and, though anything but romantic, capable of taking a very lively interest in the art and literature of the day. He was musical at a time when society had not ceased to be musical, and he joined in the pursuits of the 'virtuosoes' who were beginning to collect books and pictures, and amusing themselves with the infant science of the Royal Society. Such qualities are certainly not incompatible with the appetite for scandal, the tastes for enjoyment of a not very refined kind, and the odd personal vanities which are so candidly avowed in the 'Diary.' Its piquancy is not due to its expression of uncommon emotions, but precisely to the frankness which reveals emotions, all but universal, which most people conceal from themselves, and nearly all men from others. Boswell not only felt but avowed similar weaknesses. Pepys avowed them, though only to himself. He was not a hypocrite in cipher, though no doubt as reserved as his neighbours in longhand. The 'unconscious humour' which Lowell attributes to him lies in the coolness of his confession, with which his readers sympathise, though they would not make similar confessions themselves. It seems to be highly improbable that he ever thought of publicity for his diaries, though he may have kept them as materials for an autobiography which was never executed.

Pepys's only acknowledged publication was: 'Memoirs relating to the State of the Royal Navy of England for ten years determined December 1688,' 1690. 'The Portugal History, or a Relation of the Troubles that happened in the Court of Portugal in the years 1667 and 1668 . . . by S. P., esq.,' 1677, has also been attributed to him.

Pepys's 'Diary' remained in the library at Magdalene until 1825, when it was published in 'Memoirs of Samuel Pepys, comprising his Diary from 1659 to 1669, deciphered by the Rev. J. Smith . . . and a Selection of his private Correspondence, edited by Richard, Lord Braybrooke.' The 'Diary' fills six small volumes of closely written shorthand. The Hon. and Rev. George Neville, master of Magdalene College, examined it upon the appearance of Evelyn's 'Diary,' and showed it to Lord Grenville, who deciphered a few pages and gave his results to John Smith, then an undergraduate of St. John's College, who afterwards took holy orders, became rector of Baldock, Hertfordshire, in 1832, and died in 1870. He was employed in deciphering the rest from 1819 to 1822, working, it is said, from twelve to fourteen hours a day. Pepys had left in the library a transcript in longhand of his shorthand account of Charles II's escape, which would have given the key. The system is that of Thomas Shelton, who published his 'Tachygraphy' in 1641 (see paper 'on the Cipher of Pepys's Diary,' communicated to the

Manchester Literary Club, by T. E. Bailey in 1876). Pepys wrote the parts 'unfit for publication' in French, and sometimes in Latin, Greek, or Spanish, and afterwards interpolated 'dummy letters,' as Mr. Mynors Bright discovered. The second edition appeared in 1828; a third, adding a fourth of the whole, in 1848; a fourth, with fresh notes, in 1854; other editions, as that in Bohn's Library (1857), are reprints of this. The edition by Mynors Bright [q.v.], of which a third had never been printed before, appeared in 1875–9, in 6 vols. 8vo. Bright omitted about a fifth of the 'Diary,' but left a transcript of the whole to Magdalene College. The whole, except passages which cannot possibly be printed, has been finally published in 8 vols. 8vo (1893, &c.), edited by Mr. Henry B. Wheatley, F.S.A.

[The main authorities for Pepys's life are the diaries and correspondence published as above; see also Life, Journals, and Correspondence of Samuel Pepys . . . including a narrative of his voyage to Tangier, deciphered from the Shorthand MSS. in the Bodleian Library, by the Rev. John Smith, A.M., 2 vols. 8vo. 1840, and Samuel Pepys and the World he Lived In, by Henry B. Wheatley, F.S.A.; see also Academy, August and September 1893 (letters to Charlett from Ballard MSS. in the Bodleian); Macmillan's Magazine, November 1893 (by C. H. Firth, on his early career); Atlantic Monthly, 1891 (on his wife's family); An Address on the Medical History of Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Pepys, read before the Abernethian Society by D'Arcy Power, F.R.C.S., 1895 (reprinted from the Lancet); Historical Review, April 1892, by J. R. Tanner on 'Pepys and the Popish Plot'; for an account of the proceedings about Atkins, see also State Trials, vi. 1482, &c., and vii. 231, &c.] L. S.

PEPYS, WILLIAM HASLEDINE (1775–1856), man of science, born in London on 23 March 1775, was the son of W. H. Pepys, a cutler and maker of surgical instruments in the Poultry, London; he was descended from Sir Richard Pepys [q.v.] In March 1796 he helped to found the Askesian Society (see *Life of W. Allen*, pp. 26, 45), which eventually led to the foundation of the British Mineralogical and Geological Societies and the London Institution, of which he was one of the original managers, and honorary secretary from 1821 to 1824. His name appears as treasurer, and afterwards as vice-president, of the Geological Society in the first volumes of their 'Transactions' (beginning in 1811). He was also an early member of the Mineralogical Society. He appears to have succeeded to his father's business in the Poultry, and to have extended it to philosophical-instrument making. He was a close friend of William Allen (1770–1843) [q. v.], with whom he did most of his best work, and also was intimate with Luke Howard (1772–1864) [q.v.] Like these men, Pepys was a quaker. In 1798 he worked with Desvignes on soda-water apparatus (Tilloch, *Phil. Mag.* iv. 358). In 1808 he was elected F.R.S. He took an active part in the management of the Royal Institution, of which he was president in 1816. He died at his house in Earl's Terrace, Kensington, on 17 Aug. 1856.

Pepys had remarkable skill and ingenuity in inventing apparatus, and many important devices are due to him. His mercury gasometer (suggested by a piece of apparatus of Watt's) and his water gasholder are still used in practically their original form. He was one of the first, if not the first, to use mercury contacts for electrical apparatus (*ib.* xli. 15) and tubes coated with indiarubber (*ib.* xi. 256) for conveying gases. In 1801 he connected the newly discovered voltaic pile with an electroscope and condenser of his own devising, and showed thus that 'the electric and galvanic fluid possessed identity' (*ib.* x. 38). The experiment had, however, been made previously by Volta (*Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society*, 1800, p. 406). In 1807 he invented an ingenious eudiometer, which he calibrated by a method still used for the purpose (*ib.* 1807, p. 247; and Bunsen's *Gasometry*, translated by Roscoe, p. 29).

Pepys was in general rather occupied with the invention than the use of apparatus. His chemical work does not show originality. His most important researches were carried out with Allen. The experiments on the combustion of diamond, graphite, and charcoal, yielded a valuable confirmation of the results of Smithson Tennant [q.v.], Guyton de Morveau, and Mackenzie (Kopp, *Gesch. der Chemie*, iii. 292); and the very careful and well-reasoned work on respiration, executed with apparatus for the most part invented previously by Pepys, and allowing the experimenters to repeat the investigation of Lavoisier and Séguin more accurately and with some variations, is still quoted in the textbooks. The chief result was to show that the volume of carbonic acid expired from the lungs is almost exactly equal to the volume of oxygen abstracted from the inspired air.

Pepys published the following papers in Tilloch's 'Philosophical Magazine': 1. 'On the Production of Cold,' iii. 76, 1799. 2. '[On] a Mercurial Gasometer,' v. 154, 1799. 3. '[On] a Newly Invented Galvanometer,' x. 38, 1803. 4. 'An Improved Chemical Apparatus . . . .

by which Absorption is completely prevented and Liquids may be strongly impregnated with the different Gases,' xi. 253, 1801. 5. 'Analysis of the Satin Spar,' xii. 365, 1802. 6. '[On] a new Gas-holder,' xiii. 153, 1802. 7. 'On Gems,' xvii. 193, 1803. 8. 'Analysis of Human Teeth,' *ib.* p. 313. 9. 'Analysis of Shetland Iron,' xix. 86, 89, 1804. 10. 'A new Apparatus for the Decomposition of Alkalies,' xxxi. 241, 1808. 11 '[On] the Decomposition of Sulphate of Iron by Animal Matter,' xxxviii. 297, 1808. 12. 'A Mercurial Voltaic Conductor,' xli. 15, 1813. In the 'Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society': 13. 'A new Eudiometer,' p. 247, 1807. 14. 'The Respiration of Leaves,' p. 329, 1843. 15. 'An Apparatus for Performing Electro-Magnetic Experiments,' p. 187, 1823. In the 'Journal of Science and the Arts:' 16. 'A new Construction of the Voltaic Apparatus,' vol. i. pt. ii. p. 193, 1816. 17. 'An Improved Apparatus for the Manufacture of Soda-water,' iv. 358, 1818. 18. 'A New Form of the Voltaic Apparatus,' xv. 143, 1823 (refers to the apparatus described in No. 15). In Horticultural Society's 'Journal': 19. 'Experiments on the Growth of Plants in Pure Earths, and also with Stimulants and Manures, in 1843–4,' iv. 57, 1849.

In collaboration with Allen he published the following papers in the 'Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society': 1. 'On the quantity of Carbon in Carbonic Acid, and on the Nature of the Diamond,' 1807, p. 267. 2. 'On . . . Respiration,' 1808, p. 249. 3. *ib.*, 1809, p. 404. 4. 'On the Respiration of Birds.'

[Besides the sources quoted above, Knight's English Cyclopædia; Gent. Mag. 1856, i. 521; J. C. Poggendorff's Biogr. Lit. Handwörterbuch zur Gesch. der exacten Wissenschaften; Life of William Allen, 3 vols. 1846–7, passim; Transactions of the Geological Society, vol. i. 1811, &c.; Royal Society's Catalogue of Scientific Papers, vol. iv.; Hermann's Physiology Trans., Gamgee, p. 158; Landois and Stirling's Physiology, 1st edit. p. 259; account of the Ornithorhynchus paradoxus (belonging to W. H. P.), Tilloch's Phil. Mag. xiii. 179, 256; and Pepys's own papers and his collection of manuscript papers relating to the Royal Institution in the Brit. Mus. Library.] P. J. H.

**PERBURN, JOHN** (*fl.* 1316–1343), admiral, son of Robert Perburn, was a native of Yarmouth in Norfolk, and for many years collector of the customs at that port. Between 1312 and 1339 he was fourteen times bailiff of Yarmouth. He seems to have taken an active part in the private war which Yarmouth waged against the Cinque ports in the end of the thirteenth and beginning of the fourteenth centuries, and to have received the king's pardon in 1316. In May 1317 he was appointed admiral of the king's fleet north of the Thames, an appointment repeated in 1321, in which year the town of Lynn petitioned against his seizure of some fishing-smacks. In the same year and again in 1324 he was elected to parliament as one of the burgesses of Yarmouth. In 1326 he was ordered to attend the king's council to give information respecting vessels to be provided by Yarmouth. In 1327 he sided with Edward III, and on 2 April received pardon for his acquiescence in Mortimer's rule; in the same month he received a grant of the king's ship La Cristofore, and was confirmed in his post as admiral then and in 1333. In 1335 one of his ships was plundered by the people of Gascony, and at his instigation Edward III demanded restitution. In March 1340 he was one of those summoned to Westminster to advise the king on mercantile affairs. He probably fought at Sluys in the same year. He is last mentioned in 1343 as one of the burgesses for Yarmouth summoned to parliament.

[Rymer's Fœdera, orig. ed. iv. 647, Record ed. II. ii. 1114; Cal. Patent Rolls, 1327–30, passim; Rolls of Parl. i. 306 *b*, 406 *a*, 414 *a*; Palmer's Hist. of Great Yarmouth, i. 297–9, 326, ii. 5, 190, 247, 253, 294–5; Nicolas's Hist. of the Royal Navy, i. 418, 439–40, ii. 2, 6, 524.] J. K. L.

**PERCEVAL, ALEXANDER** (1787–1858), sergeant-at-arms of the House of Lords, second son of the Rev. Philip Perceval of Temple House, Ballymote, co. Sligo, by Anne, daughter of Alexander Carrol of Dublin, was born at Temple House on 10 Feb. 1787, and was educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He was very well read, of courteous manner, and full of Irish humour and anecdote. In early life he resided on his ample Irish estates, served the office of a justice of the peace, and held a commission in the Sligo militia, a regiment which in due time he rose to command. As a conservative he sat for the county of Sligo from 17 May 1831 to September 1841. He brought before the House of Commons the fact that Lord Plunket, the lord chancellor of Ireland, had been charging the county magistrates throughout Ireland certain illegal fees, and so boldly and energetically denounced this abuse that the lord chancellor had to refund every shilling he had received. On the accession to office of Sir Robert Peel in December 1834 he became treasurer of the ordnance, a place which he held till April 1835, when Lord Melbourne came into

power. He also served as a lord of the treasury from 6 to 16 Sept. 1841. He was treasurer of the Orange Association of Ireland; but, finding that the government were anxious for the sake of peace that it should not be continued, he acquiesced in the decision, and aided in dissolving the association. In 1841 he succeeded Admiral Sir George Seymour as sergeant-at-arms of the House of Lords, an appointment which he held till his death. On 13 June 1834 he was created a D.C.L. of the university of Oxford. He died at 28 Chester Street, London, on 9 Dec. 1858. He married, on 11 Feb. 1808, Jane Anne, eldest daughter of Colonel Henry Peisley L'Estrange of Moystown, King's County. She died on 20 Jan. 1847, leaving issue (1) Philip Perceval, formerly a lieutenant in the royal horse-guards; (2) Henry Perceval; (3) Alexander Perceval; (4) Charles George Guy Perceval, and six daughters.

[Portraits of Eminent Conservatives, 2nd ser. 1846, portrait xi; Foster's Peerage, 1883, under Egmont, p. 257; Burke's Landed Gentry, 1886, ii. 1448; Gent. Mag. 1859, pt. i. p. 859; Times, 13 Dec. 1858, p. 6.] G. C. B.

PERCEVAL, ARTHUR PHILIP (1799–1853), divine, born on 22 Nov. 1799, was the fifth and youngest son of Charles George Perceval, second baron Arden, by his wife Margaret Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Sir Thomas Spencer Wilson, bart. He matriculated from Oriel College, Oxford, on 19 March 1817, graduating B.A. in 1820, and B.C.L. in 1824; from 1821 to 1825 he was fellow of All Souls'. On 18 June 1824 he was appointed rector of East Horsley, Surrey. In 1826 he became chaplain to George IV, and continued royal chaplain to William IV and Queen Victoria until his death. He warmly approved of the tractarian movement at Oxford, and in 1841 published a 'Vindication of the Authors of the Tracts for the Times,' principally defending Newman against the attacks made on his 'Tract 90.' On 24 July 1838, when preaching as royal chaplain at the chapel royal, St. James's, he took occasion to advocate high-church principles before the queen; the bishop of London (C. J. Blomfield), who was aware of Perceval's intention, is said to have preached for several Sundays in order to keep Perceval out of the pulpit, but the bishop broke his collarbone, and Perceval found his opportunity (*Greville Memoirs*, ed. Reeve, i. 116). Perceval died on 11 June 1853, having married, on 15 Dec. 1825, Charlotte Anne, eldest daughter of the Rev. and Hon. Augustus George Legge, fifth son of William, second earl of Dartmouth; she died on 21 June 1856, having had, with other issue, three sons and four daughters.

Perceval was a voluminous author, and the list of his works occupies three pages in the British Museum Catalogue, but most of them are letters, single sermons, and pamphlets. The more important are: 1. 'The Roman Schism illustrated from the Records of the Catholic Church,' 1836, 8vo. Lowndes (*Bibl. Man.* p. 1102) describes it as 'of great utility and value.' 2. 'Origin of Church Rates,' 1837, 8vo (cf. *Edinburgh Review*, lxvi. 295). 3. 'Sermons preached chiefly at the Chapel Royal, St. James's,' 1839, 8vo. 4. 'An Apology for the Doctrine of Apostolical Succession,' 1839, 16mo; 2nd edit. 1841. 5. 'A Collection of Papers connected with the Theological Movement of 1833,' 1842; 2nd edit. 1843. 6. 'Results of an Ecclesiastical Tour in Holland and Northern Germany,' 1846, 12mo. 7. 'Plain Lectures on St. Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians,' 1846, 12mo. 8. 'Origines Hibernicæ,' Dublin, 1849; in this he endeavours to prove that Ireland is the Patmos of Revelation, and that the Virgin Mary was buried on Tara Hill.

[Authorities quoted; works in Brit Mus. Libr.; McClintock and Strong's Cyclop.; Darling's Cycl. Bibl.; Allibone's Dict. of Engl. Lit. ii. 1557–8; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1714–1886, Index Ecclesiasticus, and Peerage s.v. Egmont; Liddon's Life of Pusey, i. 247, 264, ii. 178; Greville Memoirs, i. 116; Sheppard's St. James's Palace; Guardian, 1853, p. 414.] A. F. P.

PERCEVAL, JOHN, first Earl of Egmont (1683–1748), born at Burton in the county of Cork on 12 July 1683, was the second son of Sir John Perceval, bart., by his wife Catherine, fourth daughter of Sir Edward Dering, bart., of Surrenden-Dering, Kent. Sir Ralph Perceval [q. v.] was his great-grandfather. While a child he lost both his parents. His father died of gaol-fever, caught while serving as foreman of the grand jury at the Cork assizes on 29 April 1686; while his mother, who, in August 1690, married a second husband, one Colonel Butler, died on 2 Feb. 1692. He succeeded his elder brother Edward as fifth baronet on 9 Nov. 1691, and in 1698 was sent by his guardian, Sir Robert Southwell, to Westminster School. He matriculated at Magdalen College, Oxford, on 18 Nov. 1699, but left the university in June 1701 without taking any degree, and in 1702 was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. At the general election in the following year he was

returned to the Irish House of Commons for the county of Cork, and in October 1704 was sworn a member of the privy council in Ireland. Between July 1705 and October 1707 he made the usual grand tour of Europe, and at the general election in 1713 was again elected one of the members for the county of Cork. On the accession of George I he was sworn a member of the new privy council in Ireland, and on 21 April 1715 was created Baron Perceval of Burton in the county of Cork, with a special remainder to the heirs male of his father. He took his seat in the Irish House of Lords on 12 Nov. 1715 (*Journals of the Irish House of Lords*, ii. 454). In 1719, with other Irish peers, he vainly petitioned the king to refuse his consent to the bill which not only asserted the subjection of the Irish parliament, but also denied all power of appellate jurisdiction to the Irish House of Lords (6 Geo. I, cap. 5). Though he had attached himself to the court of the Prince of Wales, he was created Viscount Perceval of Kanturk in the county of Cork on 25 Feb. 1723, and at the same time an annual fee of twenty marks payable out of the Irish exchequer was granted to him in support of that honour. On the accession of George II Perceval was for the third time sworn a member of the privy council in Ireland. At the general election in August 1727 he was returned to the British House of Commons for the borough of Harwich, which he represented until the dissolution in April 1734, and in June 1728 he was appointed recorder of Harwich, a post which he resigned in April 1734. Perceval served on the select committee appointed by the House of Commons on 25 Feb. 1729 to inquire into the state of the gaols (*Journals of the House of Commons*, xxi. 237–8; see *Parl. Hist.* viii. 706–53, 803–26). He assisted James Edward Oglethorpe [q. v.] in his project of founding a settlement in America for the purpose of providing an asylum for insolvent debtors and for persons fleeing from religious persecution, and was appointed the first president of the trustees incorporated by royal charter dated 9 June 1732 for establishing the colony of Georgia. On 2 Nov. 1733 he presented a memorial to the king from the Irish peers protesting against their exclusion from the ceremonies connected with the then approaching marriage of the Princess Royal with William, prince of Orange, and on the 6th of the same month was created Earl of Egmont in the peerage of Ireland. Though Egmont claimed to be descended from the same stock as the famous Egmonts of Flanders, the title of this earldom was undoubtedly taken from a townland of that name in the parish of Churchtown in the county of Cork, where Burton House, the Irish residence of the Percevals, was also situated. Egmont died in London on 1 May 1748, aged 64, and was buried at Erwarton in Suffolk.

He married, on 20 June 1710, Catherine, elder daughter of Sir Philip Parker à Morley, bart., of Erwarton, Suffolk, by whom he had three sons—viz.: John [q. v.], who succeeded him as the second Earl of Egmont; Philip Clarke, born on 21 June 1714, who died an infant; and George, born on 28 Jan. 1722, who died in July 1726—and four daughters, viz.: Catherine, who was married, on 14 April 1733, to Thomas Hanmer of Fenns, Flintshire, and died on 16 Feb. 1748; Anne, born on 12 May 1713, and Mary, born on 28 Dec. 1716, both of whom died infants; and Helena, who was married, on 10 Nov. 1741, to Sir John Rawdon, bart. (afterwards first Earl of Moira), and died on 12 June 1746. Lady Egmont died on 22 Aug. 1749. Engravings of Egmont and his wife by Faber, after Hysing and Gouge respectively, will be found in vol. ii. of the 'Genealogical History of the House of Yvery,' opposite pp. 403 and 444. A whole-length portrait of Egmont by Kneller has been engraved by Smith.

Egmont was much ridiculed for his pomposity; but he possessed ability and public spirit (see Lodge, *Peerage of Ireland*, 1789, ii. 265 *n.*). He thrice refused the offer of an English peerage (*Genealogical Hist. of the House of Yvery*, ii. 443). He actively superintended the colonisation of Georgia, withholding 'neither money, time, nor influence in his ceaseless efforts to advance what he conceived to be the best interests of the province,' and keeping with his own hand 'A Journal of the Transactions of the Trustees,' &c., the second and third volumes of which have been printed; Wormsloe, 1886, 4to (see Preface to the above, p. viii). He also took a keen interest in antiquarian and genealogical studies, and was esteemed a very high authority on matters of precedence. He collected the materials for the 'Genealogical History of the House of Yvery in its different branches of Yvery, Luvel, Perceval, and Gournay,' London, 1742, 2 vols. 8vo, which was compiled under his superintendence by James Anderson (1680?–1739) [q. v.] and William Whiston. Though Boswell praises Egmont for his 'accuracy and generous zeal,' very little of what is stated in that work 'is to be depended upon from the commencement down to the fourteenth century' (Drummond, *Noble British Families*,

1846, vol. ii.) Egmont appears to have written various letters and essays upon moral subjects in the 'Weekly Miscellany,' and to have left in manuscript several volumes of biographical collections, which were lent by his grandson, Lord Arden, to Dr. Andrew Kippis, who made use of them in the second edition of the 'Biographia Britannica' (*Biogr. Brit.* 1789, vol. iv. p. viii). These volumes, together with much of Egmont's correspondence and several of his diaries, are in the possession of the present Earl of Egmont (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. p. 13, App. pp. 232–49). He was the author of: 1. 'The Controversy in relation to the Test and Corporation Acts clearly disputed in a Dialogue between a Dissenter and a Member of the Establish'd Church,' &c., London, 1733, 8vo; anon. 2. 'An impartial Enquiry into the State and Utility of the Province of Georgia,' London, 1741, 8vo; anon. This is also attributed to Benjamin Martyn, the secretary of the trustees for establishing the colony of Georgia. 3. 'Remarks upon a scandalous piece entitled "A brief Account of the Causes that have retarded the Progress of the Colony of Georgia in America,"' London, 1743, 8vo; anon. The authorship of 'The Great Importance of a Religious Life,' written by William Melmoth the elder [q.v.], was erroneously ascribed to Egmont by Horace Walpole.

[Besides the authorities quoted in the text, the following books among others have been consulted: Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors, 1806, v. 294–300; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, iv. 198, v. 449 *n.*; Brydges's Censura Literaria, 1815, v. 73 *n.*; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage, 1890, iii. 244–5; Foster's Peerage, 1883, p. 258; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714, iii. 1146; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, pt. ii. pp. 63, 645, 649; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. x. 129, 334, 2nd ser. viii. 398, 537, 8th ser. v. 147, 187, 254, 432, 433; Watt's Bibl. Brit. 1824; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anon. and Pseudon. Literature, 1882–8; Brit. Mus. Cat.] G. F. R. B.

**PERCEVAL, JOHN**, second EARL OF EGMONT (1711–1770), born in Westminster on 24 Feb. 1711, was the eldest son of John Perceval, first earl of Egmont [q. v.], by his wife Catherine, elder daughter of Sir Philip Parker à Morley, bart., of Erwarton, Suffolk. He was privately educated, and in 1731, while under age, was returned to the Irish House of Commons for Dingle Icouch in Kerry, which he continued to represent until his accession to the peerage in 1748. When quite young Perceval 'dabbled in writing Craftsmen and party papers' (WALPOLE, *Letters*, 1857, ii. 144). After more than one attempt to obtain a seat in the British House of Commons, he was elected for the city of Westminster in December 1741. He spoke for the first time in the house on 21 Jan. 1742, when he supported Pulteney's motion for a select committee of inquiry into the conduct of the war (*Parl. Hist.* xii. 370–3). In the following March he again insisted upon a strict and searching inquiry into the conduct of Walpole's administration (*ib.* xii. 470–2, 511–13), and in December he both spoke and voted in favour of the payment of the Hanoverian troops (*ib.* xii. 1043–51, 1053). In 1743 he published a masterly pamphlet in defence of Bath's political apostasy, entitled 'Faction detected by the Evidence of Facts' (Dublin, 1743, 8vo, anon.), which passed through a number of editions, and has been pronounced by Coxe as 'one of the best political pamphlets ever written' (*Life of Sir Robert Walpole*, 1798, i. 703 *n.*) In January 1744 he supported the rigorous prosecution of the war (*Parl. Hist.* xiii. 427–62). His unpopularity was so great at Westminster, owing to his desertion of the 'independents,' to whom he had owed his election, that Perceval had to seek another seat at the general election in the summer of 1747. Though defeated at the poll at Weobley, he gained the seat on petition in December 1747 through the influence of Henry Pelham. No sooner had he secured his seat in the house than he openly attached himself to the Prince of Wales, who appointed him a lord of the bed-chamber in March 1748. On 1 May following he succeeded his father as second Earl of Egmont in the peerage of Ireland. In the session of 1748–9 Egmont became the most prominent leader of the opposition in the House of Commons, where he 'made as great a figure as was ever made in so short a time' (WALPOLE, *Letters*, ii. 145). His opposition to the mutiny bill gave rise to Sir Charles Hanbury Williams's epigram:

> Why has Lord Egmont 'gainst this bill
> So much declaratory skill
> So tediously exerted?
> The reason's plain: but t'other day
> He mutinied himself for pay,
> And he has twice deserted.

In May 1749 he effected a coalition between the Jacobites and the prince's party (*ib.* ii. 153–4). He made a violent attack upon the ministry during the debate on the address on 16 Nov. 1749 (*Parl. Hist.* xiv. 578–85), and took a very active part in the opposition to Lord Trentham's re-election for Westminster in the following year. He opposed the address at the opening of the session on

17 Jan. 1751 on account of the approbation given to the subsidy treaties, but his amendment was defeated by 203 votes to 74 (*ib.* xiv. 792–8, 827); and on 22 Feb. following he strongly protested against the grant of a subsidy to the elector of Bavaria (*ib.* xiv. 954–63). On the morning after the death of Frederick, prince of Wales, the principal members of the opposition met at Egmont's house, but the meeting broke up without forming any plans for the future (Walpole, *Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, 1847, i. 80–1). Egmont made 'a very artful speech' in favour of Sir John Cotton's amendment for the reduction of the army in November 1752 (*ib.* i. 213–15; *Parl. Hist.* xiv. 1111–1118). In January 1753 he proposed an amendment to the address, and again urged the necessity of reducing the army (*ib.* xiv. 1276, 1281–5). On 7 Feb. 1754 he opposed the bill for extending the mutiny act to the East Indies 'in a very long and fine speech' (*ib.* xv. 250–60; Walpole, *Letters*, ii. 368). At the general election in April 1754 he was returned for Bridgwater, where he defeated George Bubb Dodington [q. v.]; and at the opening of the new parliament in November 1754 he took part in the debate on the address, but did not 'think it absolutely necessary to offer any amendment' (*ib.* xv. 365–70). He is said to have been offered the treasurership of the household, but was so overpowered by the violence of Charles Townshend's attack during the debate on the mutiny bill in December 1754 that he 'excused himself from accepting the promised employment' (Walpole, *Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 420–2). He was sworn a member of the privy council on 9 Jan. 1755. In October 1756 he refused the Duke of Newcastle's offer of the leadership of the House of Commons with the seals of secretary of state, as the object of his ambition was an English peerage. Towards the close of 1760 Egmont had an interview with Bute and 'begg'd earnestly to go into the House of Lords' (Dodington, *Diary*, 1784, p. 421). At the general election in March 1761 he was returned both for Ilchester and Bridgwater, and elected to sit for Bridgwater. On 7 May 1762 he was created Baron Lovel and Holland of Enmore in the county of Somerset, and took his seat in the House of Lords for the first time on the 10th of the same month (*Journals of the House of Lords*, xxx. 262). He moved the address in the lords at the opening of the session on 25 Nov. 1762 (*Parl. Hist.* xv. 1236–8), and two days afterwards was appointed joint paymaster-general with the Hon. Robert Hampden. He resigned this post on his appointment as first lord of the admiralty on 10 Sept. 1763. In December following he presented a memorial to the king for the grant of the island of St. John, where he proposed to revive the system of feudal tenures. Though Egmont seems to have persuaded the council to suffer him to make the experiment, the folly of the undertaking was subsequently exposed by Conway, and Egmont was obliged to relinquish his cherished scheme. Egmont is said to have been one of the agents in the secret negotiations for the destruction of the Rockingham ministry, which were set on foot almost immediately after the close of the session in June 1766. But he disapproved of Chatham's foreign policy, and, finding that 'one man was to have more weight than six,' resigned his post at the admiralty in August 1766, shortly after Rockingham's downfall (Walpole, *Memoirs of the Reign of George III*, 1845, ii. 360). In the following summer he refused office on the ground that he could not take any part in an administration of which Chatham was a member. In November 1768 Egmont 'made a warm and able speech against riots, and on the licentiousness of the people,' and declared that 'the Lords alone could save the country; their dictatorial power could and had authority to do it' (*ib.* iii. 278–9). He died at Pall Mall on 4 Dec. 1770, aged 59, and was buried at Charlton, Kent, on the 11th of the same month. Egmont was a talented and ambitious man with great powers of application and a large stock of learning. He was a successful pamphleteer, a fluent and plausible debater, and 'a very able though not an agreeable orator' (Walpole, *Royal and Noble Authors*, 1806, v. 323). According to Walpole, he was never known to laugh, though 'he was indeed seen to smile, and that was at chess' (*Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 36). Like his father, whom he assisted in collecting the materials for the 'Genealogical History of the House of Yvery' (London, 1742, 8vo), he was an enthusiastic genealogist, and on points of precedence his authority was unimpeachable (Hardy, *Memoirs of the Earl of Charlemont*, 1810, p. 63). When scarce a man it is said that he had a scheme for assembling the Jews and making himself their king (Walpole, *Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 35 *n.*) He was a strenuous advocate for the revival of feudal tenures, and so great was his affection for bygone times that, when building a residence at Enmore, near Bridgwater, he 'mounted it round and prepared it to defend itself with crossbows and arrows, against the time in which the fabric and use of gunpowder shall be forgotten' (Walpole,

*Memoirs of the Reign of George III*, i. 388). While at the head of the admiralty he is said to have 'wasted between four and five hundred thousand pounds on pompous additions to the dockyards' (*ib.* iv. 204). He was, however, a great favourite with the shipwrights, whose claims he appears to have advocated, and his birthday was usually celebrated at Deptford and Woolwich with great rejoicings. The settlement formed on the West Falkland by Commodore Byron's expedition in 1765 received the name of Port Egmont in his honour.

He married first, on 15 Feb. 1737, Lady Catherine Cecil, second daughter of James, fifth earl of Salisbury, by whom he had five sons—viz.: John James, who succeeded as the third earl; Cecil Parker, born on 19 Oct. 1739, who died at Eton on 4 March 1753; Philip Tufton, born on 10 March 1742, a captain in the royal navy; Edward, born on 19 April 1744, a captain in the royal dragoon guards, who married, on 27 July 1775, Sarah, daughter of John Howarth, and died in 1824; and Frederick Augustus, born on 11 Feb. 1749, who died on 21 Jan. 1757—and two daughters, viz.: Catherine, who was married, on 13 Sept. 1766, to Thomas Wynn (afterwards first Baron Newborough), and died in June 1782; and Margaret, who died an infant on 23 Jan. 1750. His first wife died on 16 Aug. 1752, aged 33; and Egmont married, secondly, on 26 Jan. 1756, Catherine, third daughter of the Hon. Charles Compton, who was created Baroness Arden of Lohort Castle in the county of Cork on 23 May 1770, with remainder to her heirs male. By his second wife Egmont had three sons—viz.: Charles George, born on 1 Oct. 1756, who succeeded his mother as Baron Arden in the peerage of Ireland, and was created a peer of the United Kingdom, with the title of Baron Arden of Arden in the county of Warwick; Spencer [q. v.], who became prime minister; and Henry, who died on 27 July 1772, aged 7—and six daughters, viz.: Mary, who was married, on 2 April 1781, to Andrew Berkeley Drummond of Cadlands, Hampshire, grandson of William, fourth viscount Strathallan, and died on 18 Sept. 1839; Anne, who died on 1 Aug. 1772, aged 12; Charlotte, who died an infant on 19 Feb. 1761; Elizabeth, who died, unmarried, on 4 April 1846, aged 82; Frances, who was married, on 6 June 1803, to John, first baron Redesdale, and died on 22 Aug. 1817; and Margaret, who was married, on 1 Dec. 1803, to Thomas Walpole, sometime ambassador at Munich, a nephew of Horatio, first earl of Orford (created 1806), and died on 12 Dec. 1854. Lady Egmont survived her husband, and died at Langley, Buckinghamshire, on 11 June 1784, aged 53.

Engravings of Egmont and his first wife by Faber after Zinck will be found in the second volume of the 'General History of the House of Yvery' (opp. pp. 455, 457). There are also engravings of Egmont by McArdell after Hudson, and by Faber after Hayman. A portrait of Egmont with his second wife, by Sir Joshua Reynolds, was lent by the seventh earl to the winter exhibition at the Royal Academy in 1875 (Catalogue, No. 90).

The authorship of 'Considerations on the Present Dangerous Crisis' (London, 1763, 8vo), written by Owen Ruffhead, has been erroneously attributed to Egmont (Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* viii. 235), to whom 'Things as they are' (pt. i. London, 1758, 8vo, pt. ii. London, 1761, 8vo) has also been ascribed. According to Walpole, it was generally supposed that Egmont was the author of the 'Constitutional Queries earnestly recommended to the Serious Consideration of every true Briton' which were ordered to be burnt by the common hangman in January 1751 (*Memoirs of the Reign of George II*, i. 9, 427–9). Besides 'Faction Detected,' Egmont also wrote: 1. 'The Question of the Precedency of the Peers of Ireland in England fairly stated. In a Letter to an English Lord by a Nobleman of the other Kingdom,' Dublin, 1739, 8vo (anon.); another edit. 1761, London, 8vo. According to the preface, this pamphlet was published 'without the knowledge or concurrence' of the author. Though generally ascribed to his father, it appears to have been written by the second earl (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. App. x. 16). 2. 'An Examination of the Principles and an Enquiry into the Conduct of the two B——rs [the Duke of Newcastle and Henry Pelham] in regard to the Establishment of their Power and their Prosecution of the War 'till the Signing of the Preliminaries,' &c., London, 1749, 8vo (anon.) 3. 'A Second Series of Facts and Arguments; tending to Prove that the Abilities of the two B——rs are not more extraordinary than their Virtues,' &c., London, 1749, 8vo (anon.) 4. 'An Occasional Letter from a Gentleman in the Country to his Friends in Town concerning the Treaty negotiated at Hanau in the Year 1743,' &c., London, 1749, 8vo. 5. 'A Proposal for selling part of the Forest Land and Chases, and disposing of the Produce towards the discharge of that part of the National Debt due to the Bank of England, and for the Establishment of a National Bank,' London, 1763, 4to. 6. 'The Memorial of John, Earl of Egmont, to the King' [desiring 'from his

Majesty a grant of the whole island of St. John's in the Gulph of St. Lawrence,' &c.], [London, 1763], 8vo; privately printed. He collected materials for the third volume of the 'Genealogical History of the House of Yvery' [see PERCEVAL, JOHN, first EARL OF EGMONT], the manuscript of which is in the possession of the present Earl of Egmont (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 233).

[Besides the authorities quoted in the text, the following books among others have been consulted: Grenville Papers, 1852–3, vols. ii. iii. and iv.; Mahon's Hist. of England, 1858, vols. iv. and v.; Drummond's Hist. of Noble British Families, 1846, vol. ii. art. 'Perceval;' Collinson's Somerset, 1791, i. 94; Hasted's Kent, Blackheath Hundred, 1886, pp. 17 *n.*, 121 *n.*, 140, 166–7 *n.*; Lodge's Peerage of Ireland, 1789, ii. 266–7, vii. 86–7; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage, 1890, iii. 245; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, pt. ii. pp. 89, 101, 115, 129, 658; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. v. 147, 167, 187, 254, 432, 433; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890; Watt's Bibl. Brit. 1824; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anon. and Pseud. Lit. 1882–8; Brit. Mus. Cat.] G. F. R. B.

**PERCEVAL, SIR PHILIP** (1605–1647), politician, was born in 1605. He was the younger of the two sons of Richard Perceval [q. v.] of Tickenham, Somerset, by his second wife Alice, daughter of John Sherman of Ottery St. Mary, Devonshire. Philip's elder brother Walter and himself had been appointed by their father joint successors in his office of registrar of the Irish court of wards. Walter died in 1624, so that Philip obtained the family estates in England and Ireland, and the sole enjoyment of the Irish registrarship.

Perceval now definitely settled in Ireland, and by means of his interest at court gradually obtained a large number of additional offices. In 1625 he was made keeper of the records in Birmingham Tower. In 1628 he was joined with Henry Andrews in the offices of clerk of the crown to the Irish courts of king's bench and common pleas, and keeper of the rolls of those tribunals; and in 1629 he was made joint collector of customs at Dublin with Sir Edward Bagshawe. On 2 June 1636 he received the honour of knighthood from the hands of Lord-deputy Wentworth at Dublin. In 1638 he, with Sir James Ware [q. v.], obtained the monopoly of granting licenses for the sale of ale and brandy; in the same year he was sworn of the privy council; and in March 1641 he was made commissary-general of victuals for the king's army in Ireland.

But Perceval's energy was chiefly shown in the part he played in the prevailing jobbery connected with Irish landed estate. Holding, in this connection, the offices of general feodary of Ireland, escheator of Munster, and (1637) commissioner of survey into land titles in Tipperary and Cork, he took a prominent share in the discovery of technical defects in Irish titles; and obtained enormous transfers of forfeited lands to himself. The importance of these acquisitions, which lay mainly in Cork, Tipperary, and Wexford, may be shown by two instances. In 1630 he obtained the manors of Haggardstown, Herfaston, and Blackrath in Tipperary, and a quarter part of Kilmoyleron in co. Cork, at the quit rent of 1*l.* 7*s.* 5*d.* for all services, and special exemption from any taxes that might be laid thereon by parliament or any other authority. In 1637 he obtained the manor of Annagh, with numerous towns, castles, and lands adjoining it in Cork and Tipperary, the whole being, by special license of the crown, erected into the manor of Burton, with liberty to impark sixteen hundred acres, and right to enjoy numerous exceptional privileges. By 1641 he is described as being possessed of the enormous amount of seventy-eight knights' fees and a half, containing 62,502 Irish acres, making 99,900 English acres, in the finest parts of the country, above 4,000*l.* a year of the best rents, and a stock in woods, houses, &c., worth above 60,000*l.*, with employments for life of the value of above 2,000*l.* a year, besides other employments of equal profit, which he held by an uncertain tenure. This list does not include his patrimonial estate of Burton in Somerset.

Perceval was one of the few who perceived the approach of the Irish rebellion of 1641, an event which his own extortion and chicanery had done much to produce. On its outbreak in October, however, he remained in Dublin, where, as clerk to the king's bench, he took a prominent part in drawing up the notorious list of three thousand indictments for high treason against the rebellious gentlemen. Perceval at length saw that, owing to the vacillation of the government, his own property in Munster would be left exposed to the rebel onslaught. He therefore garrisoned and provisioned his castles in this territory at his own expense. In the summer of 1642 a detachment of the confederate army under Lord Muskerry advanced into Perceval's districts. All his castles were taken, though Annagh and Liscarrol offered a stubborn resistance, the former holding out for eleven days against an attacking force of 7,500 men (20 Aug.–2 Sept. 1642). Perceval now obtained the command of a corps of firelocks

from the Duke of Ormonde. He armed them at his own cost, but does not seem to have taken any active part in the fighting, during the course of which his property in Munster was utterly ruined.

Perceval was one of those who urged and assented to the 'cessation' of hostilities agreed on by the contending factions at Castle Martyn on 15 Sept. 1643. In 1644 conferences were opened at Oxford, with a view to a definitive treaty, between representatives of the Irish confederates and certain royal commissioners. Perceval was appointed one of the latter, at the suggestion of his friend Lord-deputy Ormonde. King Charles, who wished to use the Irish rebels against his English subjects, would have been willing to grant the former all their demands, including the toleration of catholicism. Perceval, however, shrank from so extreme a step, which would have jeopardised his own prospects, and the conferences came to nothing. As a consequence, Perceval incurred the bitterest hostility of the royalist faction. So strong was the feeling against him that he now resolved to go over to the English parliamentarian party. His overtures were favourably answered. He came to London in August 1644, was well received by the parliament, and obtained a seat in the English House of Commons as member for Newport in Cornwall.

From this time to his death Perceval remained in England. His Irish property had by now ceased to return any revenue; his losses by the war amounted on his own computation, probably an exaggeration, to the enormous sum of 248,004*l.* 9*s.* 1*d.*; and he found himself compelled to sell the family estate of Burton in Somerset. His position in the English parliament, moreover, was by no means easy. Perceval had thrown in his lot with the moderate presbyterians. This party was at enmity with the independents; and in July 1647, after many minor attacks, a proposal was brought forward for Perceval's expulsion from the house, on the ground of his having supported the cessation of arms in 1643. He managed to retain his place by a brilliant defence. He subsequently took a share in organising the defence of London against the independent army. But in September 1647 he found himself compelled to retire into the country. Threats of impeachment being made, he returned to meet them in London; but was taken ill soon after his arrival, and died on 10 Nov. 1647. He was buried, at the cost of the parliament, in the church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields. His funeral sermon was preached by Primate Ussher.

Perceval was married, on 26 Oct. 1626, to Catharine, daughter of Arthur Usher. She died on 2 Jan. 1681, having borne her husband five sons and four daughters. The eldest son, John Perceval, regained most of the Irish estates, and was made a baronet on 12 Aug. 1661; Sir John's grandson was John Perceval, first earl of Egmont [q. v.]

[History of the House of Yvery; Lodge's Peerage of Ireland; Metcalfe's Book of Knights; Carte's Life and Letters of the Duke of Ormonde; Wills's Irish Nation: its History and Biography; Dr. Warner's History of Ireland; Cal. State Papers, Irish and Domestic; Gilbert's Contemporary Hist. of Affairs in Ireland, and Hist. of the Confederation; Prendergast's Report on the Carte Papers in Deputy-Keeper's Record Publications, No. xxxii. App. i. 215, and Hist. MSS. Comm. Report on Egmont Papers.]

G. P. M–y.

PERCEVAL, RICHARD (1550–1620), colonist and politician, born in 1550, was eldest son of George Perceval or Percival (1561–1601), a large landed proprietor of Somerset, by his wife Elizabeth, daughter and coheiress of Sir Edward Bampfylde of Poltimore, Devonshire. He was educated at St. Paul's school. Becoming a student at Lincoln's Inn, he offended and alienated his father by his extravagance, and still more by a rash marriage with Joan, seventh daughter of Henry Young of Buckhorn Weston in Dorset, 'with whom he had no fortune.' Having 'ruined himself by his riots, he was now left to recover himself by his wits.' He went into Spain, and lived there four years till his wife's death; he then returned to England, and vainly sought a reconciliation with his father. Through his friend Roger Cave of Stamford, who had married Lord Burghley's sister, he was introduced to the lord treasurer, who employed him in secret affairs of state. In 1586 he was credited with deciphering packets containing the first sure intelligence of the project of the armada. The queen rewarded him with a pension, and later with a place in the duchy of Lancaster; and Burghley, when his son Robert Cecil became master of the court of wards, made him 'secretary' of that court. This success won back for him his father's favour, and he inherited from him real estate of considerable value (1,700*l.* a year, according to Lodge). At the end of the queen's reign he was sent into Ireland to see if the court of wards could be extended there with profit to the crown; but his report was unfavourable. In 1603–4 he sat in parliament for Richmond in Yorkshire, and took some part in 'matters of trade and revenue,' and in the business of the union with Scotland.

In 1610, on Sir William Fleetwood's disgrace as receiver-general of the court of wards, the office was vested in commissioners, of whom Perceval was one. On the death of his patron and 'master,' Robert Cecil, earl of Salisbury, on 24 May 1612, Perceval lost all his employments in England; but on a new settlement of the court of wards being projected in Ireland, he was made registrar or clerk of the court in 1616. He now sold a great part (1,200*l.* a year, according to Lodge) of his ancient patrimony, and invested the sum realised in purchases and mortgages in the county of Cork, thus laying the foundation of the prosperity and property of his family there. In 1618 he returned to England to secure his appointment against the claims of a competitor, and, though obliged to resign part of his salary, he saved his post and obtained a discharge of all his debts to the crown.

In 1609 his name appears in the list of members of the London or Virginian Company, incorporated on 23 May of that year, and in 1610 he appears as the donor of 37*l.* 'towards the supply of the plantation begun in Virginia.'

Perceval died in Dublin on 4 Sept. 1620, in his sixty-ninth year, and was buried in St. Audeon's Church. By his first wife he had three sons and two daughters; by his second, Alice, daughter of John Sherman of Ottery St. Mary, Devonshire, two sons and two daughters. The younger son, Sir Philip, became his heir, and is separately noticed. The earls of Egmont descend from him.

Richard's portrait and that of his wife were engraved by J. Faber for the 'History of the House of Yvery,' 1742 (Bromley).

Richard Perceval was doubtless the author of the well-known Spanish-English dictionary, 'Bibliotheca Hispanica, containing a Grammar with a Dictionarie in Spanish, English, and Latin,' London, 1591, 4to. It is dedicated to Robert Devereux, second earl of Essex [q. v.] The name of the author is spelt Richard Percyvall. A copy is in the British Museum Library. A second edition, edited and enlarged by John Minsheu [q. v.], appeared in 1599 under the title 'A Dictionarie in Spanish and English . . .' fol.; this edition appeared in two parts, one containing the dictionary and the other the grammar. A third edition appeared in 1623.

[Cal. English State Papers, Dom. 1599–1607 (where several official letters from Perceval are noticed); Irish State Papers, 27 Sept. 1608, and 3 May 1611; Lodge's Peerage of Ireland ed. Archdall (which takes its facts from Anderson's History of the House of Yvery), ii. 233–238. The figures of income credited to Perceval's employments are contradicted by the sums assigned in the Issue Books, e.g. of 1610 and 1612. Brown's Genesis of U.S.A., pp. 214, 467, 963–4; Granger's Biogr. Dict. ii. 89.]

C. R. B.

PERCEVAL, ROBERT, M.D. (1756–1839), physician and chemist, youngest son of William Perceval, by his second wife, Elizabeth Ward of Lisbane, co. Down, was born in Dublin on 30 Sept. 1756. He was descended from Sir Philip Perceval [q. v.], and hence related to the earls of Egmont. He entered Trinity College, Dublin, in 1772, and graduated B.A. in 1777. He then proceeded to Edinburgh, where he studied medicine, and graduated M.D. on 24 June 1780, with a thesis on the physiology of the heart. After studying two years on the continent, he returned to Dublin in 1783, when he was appointed lecturer on chemistry in the university. On 24 Nov. of the same year he was elected licentiate of the King's and Queen's College of Physicians; he subsequently became fellow. In 1785 he was appointed first professor of chemistry in the university of Dublin, and remained in this post till 1805. In 1785 he took an active part in founding the Royal Irish Academy, his name appearing in the charter, and he was for a long period secretary of this body. In 1786 he was appointed inspector of apothecaries, and in the exercise of his functions incurred some temporary unpopularity. In 1785 he also helped to found the Dublin General Dispensary. He now gave much time, thought, and money to medical and other charities in Dublin. He was admitted M.B. and M.D. by Dublin University in 1793.

In April 1799 a committee of the Irish House of Lords was appointed to inquire into the application of the funds left by Sir Patrick Dun [q.v.] Perceval was examined, and he declared that he did not think the King's and Queen's College of Physicians had faithfully discharged its trust in this matter. On the report of the committee, the 'School of Physic Act' was passed, the royal assent being given on 1 Aug. 1800. In accordance with this act a hospital, called Sir Patrick Dun's hospital, was built from the surplus funds of Dun's bequest, and it was opened on 25 Oct. 1808. Although Perceval had been censured by the College of Physicians for his share in the promotion of the bill, he was elected president of the college on 4 Nov. 1799. A special clause was, however, inserted in the bill by his own desire, according to which no university or King's professor could remain a fellow of the college. He therefore vacated his presidency

and fellowship, but was elected honorary fellow on 18 Oct. 1800. He subsequently became involved in personal controversy with his colleague, Dr. E. Hill, who was obliged, under the provisions of the act, to resign the professorship of botany, which he had held simultaneously with the regius professorship of physic. Perceval now became an active member of the 'Prison Discipline Society,' subsequently merged with the Howard Society, and was called 'the Irish Howard' (*Proceedings of the Howard Society*, 14 Feb. 1832). On 18 March 1819 he was appointed physician-general to the forces in Ireland. In 1821 he published an essay, in which he sought to show from the texts of the New Testament that Christ, although a divine person, was distinct from the deity, a doctrine similar to that of Adam Clarke [q. v.] After a lingering illness he died on 3 March 1839. He married, in 1786, Anne, daughter of W. Brereton of Rathgilbert.

Perceval was a successful physician; but his claims to fame rest chiefly on his philanthropic efforts. His published contributions to chemistry are unimportant; the notes for a medical treatise he intended to publish were handed to John Mason Good [q. v.], on Perceval's hearing that Good contemplated a similar undertaking.

His published works are: 1 'Tentamen Physiologicum Inaugurale De Corde,' Edinburgh, 1780. 2. 'An Account of the Bequest of Sir P. Dun,' Dublin, 1804. 3. 'An Essay to establish the Divinity of . . . Christ . . . with a Review of the Doctrine of the Trinity,' Dublin, 1821. And the following papers in the science section of the 'Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy': 4. Chemical communications and inquiries ['On the Distillation of Acids'], 1790, iv. 85; 5. 'On a Chamber-lamp Furnace,' 1790, iv. 91; 6. 'On the Solution of Lead by Lime,' 1791, v. 89; 7. 'On some Chalybeate Preparations,' 1810, xi. 3. He left some other treatises in manuscript.

[Taylor's Univ. of Dublin, p. 443; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Dublin University Calendar, 1833; Register of the King's and Queen's Coll. of Phys. Ireland; Parthenon, 11 May 1839; Hill's Address to Students of Physic, September 1803, and Address to the President and Fellows of the King's and Queen's Royal Coll. of Phys. February 1805; Book of Trinity College, Dublin, 1892; Plan and List of Members of the Royal Irish Academy, 1785; Cameron's History . . . of the Irish Schools of Medicine, 1886; Gmelin's Gesch. der Chemie, iii. 567; private information from Dr. G. P. L. Nugent, Fellow and Registrar of the Royal College of Physicians, Ireland, and a manuscript memoir by Perceval's grandson, Major Robert Perceval Maxwell of Finnebrogue, kindly communicated to the writer.] P. J. H.

PERCEVAL, SPENCER (1762–1812), statesman, second son of John Perceval, second earl of Egmont [q. v.], by his second wife, Catherine, third daughter of the Hon. Charles Compton, envoy to the court of Lisbon, and granddaughter of George, fourth earl of Northampton, was born at his father's house in Audley Square, London, on 1 Nov. 1762. His name, Spencer, was a family name on his mother's side, derived originally from Sir John Spencer, owner of Crosby Place, whose daughter Elizabeth married William Compton, first earl of Northampton. Perceval was brought up at Charlton House, near Woolwich; about the age of ten he was sent to Harrow, and thence to Trinity College, Cambridge, where Dr. William Lort (afterwards bishop) Mansel [q. v.] was his tutor. He gained the college declamation prize for English, and on 16 Dec. 1781 graduated M.A. Being a younger son, with only a small income, he went to the bar and joined the midland circuit, where he soon became popular. Romilly, who began on circuit a friendship with him lasting many years, describes him at this time (*Memoirs*, i. 91) 'with very little reading, of a conversation barren of instruction, and with strong and invincible prejudices on many subjects; yet by his excellent temper, his engaging manners, and his sprightly conversation, he was the delight of all who knew him.' Windham (*Diary*, p. 71), meeting him in 1786, noted that his career was likely to be distinguished. In 1790 his grandfather procured him the deputy-recordership of Northamptonshire; next year he obtained a small mint sinecure, the surveyorship of the meltings and clerkship of the irons, just vacated by George Selwyn's death. He seized the occasion of the dissolution of parliament in 1790, while the impeachment of Warren Hastings was proceeding, to publish an anonymous pamphlet on the constitutional question involved, which is said to have brought him favourably to the notice of Pitt. He presently began to obtain crown briefs, in 1792 on Paine's trial, in 1794 on Horne Tooke's. In the latter year Lord Chatham made him counsel to the board of admiralty, and in 1796 he became a king's counsel, an appointment all the more honourable to him because, in bestowing it, Lord Loughborough intimated that he thought there were already king's counsel enough, but was induced to increase the number by his high opinion of Perceval's talents.

Lord Loughborough was not alone in thinking highly of him. Only a few weeks earlier Pitt had offered him the chief secretaryship for Ireland, with the prospect of a pension. Perceval refused the offer on the ground that, with a wife and five children, he could not afford to accept any income that Pitt could fairly grant. His needs were considerable. Though he had lived, when first married, in lodgings in Bedford Row, he had bought about 1793 a good house in Lincoln's Inn Fields with money settled on his wife by her father, and there he kept an expensive establishment. In the course of 1796 a sixth child was born to him, and, for the time being, all his ambition was confined to making money by the law.

In the summer, however, a seat was found for him in parliament. Lord Northampton's death in April, and his son Lord Compton's elevation to the House of Lords, left a vacancy in one of the Northampton seats, and Perceval was returned unopposed. On the dissolution, which shortly followed, he was only elected after a sharp contest. He did not speak, apparently, till May 1797, when he made a favourable impression by his support of Pitt's proposal to make penal any attempt to sow disaffection in the forces. From his first entrance into parliament he declared for uncompromising war with France abroad, and for a strenuous support of Pitt and his repressive policy at home. He spoke after very careful preparation, and not unfrequently. His manner was epigrammatic though artificial, and he seems to have won the esteem not of Pitt only (who is said to have named him as a possible successor to himself as early as the date of his duel with Tierney), but also of Sheridan and of Fox. During 1798 and 1799 he more than once wound up debates on the government side and acted as teller for them in divisions. The growth of his political influence is shown by the fact that Mansel, his old tutor, was appointed master of Trinity in 1798 mainly by his solicitation, and that he himself was in the same year appointed solicitor to the board of ordnance through Lord Cornwallis's intervention, and solicitor-general to the queen by the special favour of the king. Nor had politics interfered with his progress at the bar. His income, which had been 1,012*l.* in his last year as a stuff-gownsman, had risen to 1,504*l.* in 1799, and to 1,807*l.* in 1800. Ultimately his private practice brought him four to five thousand a year.

When Pitt was succeeded by Addington, the new minister found himself ill-supported in debate by the members of his cabinet, and therefore bestowed his law offices where he could get the required assistance. Law became attorney-general, Perceval solicitor-general, and it was intended that they should be regularly instructed as though they were counsel for the new administration (Colchester, *Diary*, i. 307). Perceval, as an earl's son, was permitted to decline the customary knighthood, the only exception made since 1783. From this time he gave up practice in the king's bench, and appeared only in chancery; but if his object was to secure more time for politics, he did not succeed, for he rapidly became the regular opponent of Romilly in the chancery courts. During the sessions of 1801 and 1802 he spoke little in the house, and mainly on Irish questions. In 1802 Law succeeded Lord Kenyon in the chief-justiceship of the king's bench, and Perceval became attorney-general. In that capacity he prosecuted Colonel Despard for high treason, and Peltier for a libel on Bonaparte. Both were convicted early in 1803. On 24 May 1804 he appeared again for the crown on the trial of Cobbett for the libels on Lord Hardwicke and Lord Redesdale, published in Cobbett's 'Political Register,' and signed 'Juverna;' and, when 'Juverna' proved to be Mr. Justice Johnson, one of the Irish judges, Perceval conducted his prosecution on 23 Nov., and again both prosecutions were successful. In the same year he declined the chief-justiceship of the common pleas, with a peerage.

During the career of the Addington administration Perceval, according to Brougham, almost single-handed, defended the ministry in the House of Commons from the assaults of Pitt, Fox, Windham, and their followers (*Statesmen*, i. 248, ii. 58). His future as a champion of debate seemed assured. Hence Pitt, on succeeding Addington, was anxious to secure his assistance. Perceval's first intention was to decline Pitt's advances. But he was approached adroitly through Lord Harrowby, one of his best friends, and, having stipulated for his own entire freedom at all times to oppose catholic emancipation, he accepted office again as attorney-general. Here he displayed a more liberal spirit than might have been looked for. He refused to prosecute the members of the early trade unions at the instance of the employers, on the ground that he was unwilling to commit the government to a uniform support of the employers on trade questions; and to Wilberforce's efforts to remedy the abuses of the Guinea slave trade he lent a warm and steady support. He took up the bill, which Sir William Scott had dropped, for compelling non-resident clergymen to pro-

vide curates, properly paid, to discharge their parish duties, and twice brought it in, though without success. In the debates on the financial irregularities which led to Lord Melville's impeachment, he played a very brilliant part. When Pitt died (23 Jan. 1806), Perceval resigned; but he showed himself fertile in expedient and cautious in counsel. It was he who suggested in debate the device of appointing a trustee for Lord Grenville as auditor of the exchequer, and so set him free to form a ministry; and it was in spite of his remonstrances that Lord Ellenborough became a member of the cabinet while still continuing to be chief justice.

During 1806 he constantly criticised the measures of the 'Talents' administration; and, after the death of Fox on 13 Sept., Lord Grenville, through Lord Ellenborough, unsuccessfully invited him to join the ministry. His attack on the government's Roman catholic policy on 5 March 1807 contributed to its fall. When, a fortnight later, the Duke of Portland came to form his administration, it was obvious that Perceval must find a place in it. The difficulty was to determine what his place should be. He himself desired to continue to be attorney-general, and to increase his income by practising at the bar. Finally, at some pecuniary sacrifice, he accepted the office of chancellor of the exchequer (31 March 1807), with a salary of some 1,300*l.* He was offered at the same time the chancellorship of the duchy of Lancaster for life, so that he might be provided with an adequate income. This arrangement roused some scruples on Perceval's part, but there were two precedents for it, and it had been contemplated on several other occasions. But the plan provoked strenuous opposition in the House of Commons, and a motion for an address against it was carried by 208 to 115. The duchy was consequently bestowed on Perceval during pleasure only. The new ministry shortly dissolved, and returned with a strong majority.

On 25 June Perceval gave the usual ministerial dinner to hear the king's speech read at his house in Lincoln's Inn Fields, which he was about to quit for Downing Street (Colchester, *Diary*, ii. 123). Both on the address and on Whitbread's motion of 6 July, to draw attention to the state of the nation, he and his followers obtained large majorities. He at once provoked the hostility of the opposition by adding supporters of his own to the committee on expenditure originally appointed in February (see Romilly, *Memoirs*, ii. 205), and by so modifying the inquiry on places held in reversion, which was proposed by Lord Cochrane, as to exclude from inquiry his own reversion to his brother Lord Arden's place of registrar of the court of admiralty. Other of his parliamentary performances were unsatisfactory to his friends. He spoke ill, stammered, was nervous in manner and weak in matter. Official business prevented that elaborate preparation for debate upon which he had hitherto depended, and he had not obtained such a mastery of public business as to enable him to debate effectively without preparation. His anxieties only increased after the session of parliament ended, when the necessity arose for the seizure of the Danish fleet at Copenhagen and for the issue of the orders in council. The latter originated with and were drafted by him. In the debates upon them which took place as soon as parliament met in January and February 1808, he took the leading part, and showed a marked improvement in his attitude to the house.

Though untried as a financier, he was successful with his budget, and his scheme for the conversion of three-per-cent. stock into terminable annuities was generally approved. The Stipendiary Curates' Bill, which he had introduced in 1805 and 1806, he this year passed through the commons, but it was rejected in the House of Lords; nor, though subsequently reintroduced by him, did it pass till after his death. His first personal achievement in 1809 was the speech in which he met Wardle's motion for an address praying for the removal of the Duke of York from the chief command of the army, in consequence of the scandals connected with Mrs. Mary Ann Clarke [q. v.] His speech on 8–9 March, described by the speaker as a 'masterly speech of three hours,' was afterwards published; the almost unprecedented adjournment in the middle of his speech was by the general desire of the house (Colchester, *Diary*, ii. 172). His personal popularity was enhanced by the failure of Maddocks' ill-grounded attempt to connect him with parliamentary corruption in connection with the sale of seats at Rye, Queenborough, Hastings, and Cashel. On 11 May the house rejected the motion for hearing these charges by 310 votes to 85. The disclosures, however, of corruption which were made against others, and the general demand for increased purity in public life which had resulted from the Clarke scandals, led to the introduction of a bill for parliamentary reform by preventing the sale of seats, which ultimately passed. Perceval had from the first recognised that such a bill must be accepted, and, while objecting to some of the details, gave it a general support. But by his influence

parts of the bill which would have interfered with the mode in which ministerial patronage was employed were omitted. The effect of his criticism was to give him the appearance of defending and seeking to perpetuate the abuses which had recently been brought to light by the report of the East India patronage committee; but there is no ground for supposing that he was personally concerned in, or a supporter of, any corrupt appointments.

With the earlier part of the strife between Castlereagh and Canning, which took place in the summer of 1809, Perceval does not appear to have been concerned. It was not until after the meeting of the cabinet in June, at which the Walcheren expedition was resolved upon, that he was even informed of Canning's arrangement with the Duke of Portland for Castlereagh's removal from office. He then took Castlereagh's part, intimated that Castlereagh was entitled to have been informed of what it was proposed to do with him, and insisted that till the Walcheren expedition, which Castlereagh had planned, was over, his removal ought not to take place. He did not, however, directly communicate with Castlereagh, and was careful to maintain friendly relations with Canning, in spite of his admission to his friend Lord Harrowby that 'the making a conclusive arrangement with regard to Lord C.'s fate, and pledging ourselves to stand by it previously to his knowing anything about it, is unjust and dishonourable to him.' When the Duke of Portland's illness at the end of August left the government practically leaderless for the moment, and tolerably certain to require a new leader very shortly, Perceval entered into communication upon the subject with Canning. He expressed himself at first as willing to act under any head satisfactory to Canning and the rest of the ministry, provided he would take his fair share of the responsibility of the treasury work. Canning replied that he thought the new minister must be in the commons, and, if so, must be Perceval or himself. The upshot was that Perceval, being either more popular with his colleagues or more adroit in his manœuvres than Canning, succeeded the Duke of Portland as prime minister. The cabinet had, while matters were still unarranged, recommended that Lord Grey and Lord Grenville should be approached with a view to the formation of a coalition ministry; but although the king reluctantly assented to the scheme (Colchester, *Diary*, ii. 211, 217; Twiss, *Life of Eldon*, ii. 97), neither lord entertained the proposal (See the various letters contained in *Life of Spencer Perceval*; Lord Colchester, *Diary*, ii. 205 sqq.; *Courts and Cabinets of George III*, iv. 374; Phipps, *Memoir of Plumer Ward*, i. 229). Perceval's task under these circumstances was one of extreme difficulty. Pitt's old party was broken up, and some of the ablest of the tories were standing aloof with Canning; Castlereagh had been deeply mortified; Lord Sidmouth's assistance would cause a loss of more votes than it would bring; and the whig leaders would not assist, and indeed refused all overtures in a manner which indicated that they considered themselves insulted by the proposal (Romilly, *Memoirs*, ii. 295). Perceval himself was anxious to be rid of the burden of the chancellorship of the exchequer, but nobody could be found to take it. After five persons had refused it, Perceval at last, on 2 Dec. 1809, completed his cabinet by retaining it himself. With a disinterestedness which in his case was especially praiseworthy, he held the office without salary.

The new ministry was generally regarded as a weak one; in debating power it was especially deficient. Perceval's own authority over the rank and file of his party was steadily declining, and he had, almost single-handed, to face an opposition which, with the assistance of Castlereagh and Canning, he had hardly kept in check in 1809. Many doubted if he would meet parliament. The Walcheren expedition and the retreat after the victory of Talavera were not matters easy to commend to a hostile house. In the first week of the session the ministry was four times defeated. Such a beginning was ominous. The ministerial vote of thanks for Talavera and motion for a pension to Wellington were carried only after strong opposition. Lord Chatham's conduct in sending his report to the king direct, and not through Lord Castlereagh, was made the subject of a vote of censure, which was carried. With difficulty the ministry saved themselves by forcing Chatham to resign. The disputes connected with Burdett's arrest on the speaker's warrant for breach of privilege were, though Perceval's own speech on them was sensible enough, equally little to the credit of his administration (see, for the speaker's version, Colchester's *Diary*, ii. 245 sqq.) A successful budget somewhat redeemed his fortunes, but he was beaten on Banke's proposal for the reform of sinecures. Nor were the military and fiscal troubles of the government less formidable than their parliamentary difficulties. England had to pay for the Spanish army in the Peninsular war when she could scarcely pay for her own, and to pay in gold when gold was hardly to

be procured. The expense of the campaign of 1809 had been underestimated, and the poor results of the war raised a strong opposition to its continuance. Perceval doggedly insisted that it must go on. Although his steady debating skill carried the government on in the House of Commons till the prorogation on 21 June 1810, its position remained very critical. They had depended on the followers of Lord Sidmouth and of Canning; but Bathurst had deserted early in the session, and Canning toward its close. Perceval vainly applied to Lord Sidmouth and to Lord Castlereagh to take office under him. In September Canning intimated that no assistance of this sort was to be looked for from him. In October the king went out of his mind again, and, his recovery being uncertain, the ministry found itself face to face with the difficult question of a regency, a question none the less embarrassing in that Perceval's own relations with the Prince of Wales were strained; he had been the princess's counsel and her warm supporter in 1806 (see SURTEES, *Life of Eldon*, p. 117; ROMILLY, *Memoirs*, ii. 165; *Edinburgh Review*, cxxxv. 29). On 20 Dec. Perceval introduced resolutions in the House of Commons identical with those of 1788. Again the whigs contended for the indefeasible right of the Prince of Wales to be regent. Perceval steadily adhered to the former precedent, and proposed to bind the regent by the same restrictions as before. The Prince of Wales and his brothers protested against them in writing. But Perceval was immovable. He introduced his scheme into the House of Commons on 31 Dec., and was immediately involved in a life-and-death struggle with his opponents. Yet, in spite of the opposition of Canning, the first three resolutions were carried, but only by majorities of twenty-four, sixteen, and nineteen in a full house. The fifth resolution, which gave the household and the custody of the king's person to the queen, came on for debate on 1 Jan. 1811. Canning, Castlereagh, Wilberforce, and others supported the opposition's amendment, and the government was defeated by thirteen, in spite of a speech which showed Perceval's personal superiority in debate over all his opponents; nor did he succeed in restoring his own form of the resolution on the report stage. The Regency Bill eventually passed the House of Lords substantially unchanged.

Before the Prince of Wales assumed the regency he had prepared a list of new ministers whom he intended to supplant Perceval and his colleagues. Lord Grey, upon whom he proposed to confer a chief place in the contemplated administration, made it a condition that the prince should cease to consult his friends—Sheridan and Lord Moira in particular—on political affairs. The negotiation consequently proved abortive. It seemed likely, too, that the king might recover, and it was abundantly clear that as soon as he recovered he would dismiss Perceval's supplanters. Accordingly the regent made no change in the ministry. He disingenuously informed Perceval on 4 Feb. that he was only restrained from doing so by his fear of interfering with the king's recovery by anything so agitating as a change of government.

On 12 Feb. 1811 a session of parliament opened. The demands upon the budget were enormous. Perceval proposed a grant of 2,100,000*l.* for Portugal; acceded to the recommendation of the select committee on commercial credit that 6,000,000*l.* should be advanced to the manufacturers who were suffering from the over-speculation of previous years; and, when Horner proposed resolutions in favour of the resumption of cash payments, strenuously and successfully resisted them. In July the bill making bank-notes legal tender was passed, avowedly because gold was so appreciated that for currency purposes it was unprocurable, while bank-notes were worth but eighty per cent. of their face value. It is clear that Perceval, if no worse, was no better a financier than his contemporaries, and knew no difference between financial right and financial wrong.

Perceval's position was now secure. The prince's personal friends were voting for the government, and that by their master's desire. His tenacity and perseverance had carried him through a struggle in which he seemed foredoomed to failure. He had no rivals among his opponents whom he needed to fear. His only foes were in the cabinet. Lord Wellesley and he could not work together. To Wellesley Perceval seemed to be starving the Peninsular war; to Perceval Wellesley appeared prejudiced and extravagant. During the autumn of 1811 communications passed between Wellesley and the regent with a view to a change of policy and of ministry. It was assumed that, when the regency restrictions expired early in 1812, the prince would place Wellesley at the head of the administration. The prince wanted money, and Lord Wellesley was apparently prepared to concede what Perceval would certainly refuse. Wellesley dissented from the cabinet's decision as to the regent's future allowance, and placed his resignation in Perceval's hands. The danger, however, passed away. Wellesley was replaced by Castle-

reagh, and Charles Yorke, who had resigned slightly earlier for different reasons, by Lord Melville. Some other changes were made, and Perceval's power was apparently unshaken. Yet he soon met with rebuffs. He was deserted by his own party on the question of the prince's personal appointment of his friend 'Jack' Macmahon to the indefensible sinecure of the paymastership of widows' pensions, and later saw Banke's bill for the abolition of sinecure offices carried against him on second reading by nine votes. The fact that his brother, Lord Arden, held one of the best of the sinecure posts may perhaps account for the zeal with which Perceval opposed their extinction. His stolid resistance to all reforms was also preparing for him grave difficulties. The wisdom of the orders in council had long been in question, still more so their results. Perceval himself had never defended them in the abstract; he had openly avowed that they were forced on the government by the necessities of war. Complaints were now loud that, without injuring France, the orders were destroying English commerce. Brougham moved for an inquiry. Perceval spoke energetically, rallied his followers, and defeated the motion in March; but so numerous were the petitions against the orders from all the manufacturing districts that he had to concede the appointment of a committee in April.

There was a certain bankrupt named John Bellingham, a man of disordered brain, who had a grievance against the government originating in the refusal of the English ambassador at St. Petersburg to interfere with the regular process of Russian law under which he had been arrested. He had applied to Perceval for redress, and the inevitable refusal inflamed his crazy resentment. On Monday, 11 May, the House of Commons went into committee on the orders in council, and began to examine witnesses. Brougham complained of Perceval's absence, and he was sent for. As he passed through the lobby to reach the house, Bellingham placed a pistol to his breast and fired. Perceval was dead before a doctor could be found (see Jerdan, *Autobiography*, i. 23). He was buried on 16 May in Lord Egmont's family vault at Charlton. His large family was ill provided for; but the House of Commons voted him a monument in Westminster Abbey, and a grant to his family of 50,000*l.*, and a further 2,000*l.* a year to his widow for life, with remainder to the eldest son, on whose succession the pension was to be increased to 3,000*l.*

Bellingham was tried at the Old Bailey on 15 May, and, the plea of insanity being set aside by the court, he was hanged on 18 May.

Perceval's friends had an unbounded admiration for his private character. As a friend and father he seems to have been blameless. He was pious, a student of the prophetical Scriptures, a diligent attendant at divine worship. Publicly, too, he was honest and disinterested, and his ability as a debater and administrator, and the courage and tenacity with which he fought difficult battles, are manifest. When he became prime minister he had practically no one but himself to rely on. Yet he carried on the government single-handed, prosecuted the war, defeated his opponents, and disarmed his critics. His conduct of the Peninsular war has been vehemently attacked by Colonel William Francis Patrick Napier [q. v.], who alleges that Wellington had occasion to complain of the inadequacy of the supplies sent him. The duke, however, informed Perceval's son in 1835 (see Walpole, *Perceval*, ii. 236) that he had made no such complaints, and had received every support the cabinet could give. He also told Charles Greville (*Memoirs*, 1st ser. iii. 271) that Napier was unfair to Perceval, and that although he had been short of money in the Peninsula, that was not the home government's fault. It was on other grounds that the Marquis of Wellesley resigned office in 1812 (cf. *Memoir of J. C. Herries*, i. 27 sqq.) The charge that Perceval during the Peninsular war was 'afraid of throwing good money after bad,' and that he 'always took the money consideration first, and the moral consideration second,' seems unfounded. A man of strong will and decisive character, he can, however, hardly be credited with possessing either 'the information or the genius essential to an English minister at that momentous epoch.' His word 'became a law to his colleagues, and completely overruled the better judgment and more special experience of Lord Liverpool' (Kebbel, *History of Toryism*, pp. 94–8). Many of the measures he advocated have been since discredited, and many of the evils he apprehended have proved illusory. In Alison's eyes (*History of Europe*, viii. 198) his great merit is that he stood forward as the champion of the protestant religion. To most students of history his conduct in that capacity is the part of his life which it best becomes his admirers to forget. His strenuous opposition to the Roman catholic claims seems now as ill-advised as his Jesuit's Bark Bill of 1807, and his fiscal policy was at best a makeshift. None the less, his dogged obstinacy was of great value to his country in the later periods of the Napoleonic struggle, and but for his

tenacity changes of ministry might have taken place which might have compromised England's prestige abroad.

In person he was thin, pale, and short. The medal struck by the government after his murder has a good likeness of him on the obverse; and, though no portrait of him is said to have been painted from life, several pictures of fair authenticity are extant—one by Sir W. Beechey, engraved by W. Skelton, and published in 1813, and two by G. F. Joseph in the National Portrait Gallery and at Hampton Court respectively. A statue by Chantrey was erected in All Saints' Church, Northampton, and was removed in 1866 to the Northampton Museum. The Beechey portrait was also engraved by Picart for Jerdan's memoir of Perceval in Fisher's 'National Portrait Gallery,' vol. i., and by Joseph Brown for Mr. Walpole's 'Life of Perceval.'

Perceval married, on 10 Aug. 1790, Jane, second daughter of Sir Thomas Spencer-Wilson, by whom he had six sons and six daughters. The fourth daughter, Isabella (*d.* 1886), married the Right Hon. Spencer Horatio Walpole, formerly home secretary; their son, Spencer Walpole, now secretary of the Post Office, wrote a full biography of Perceval in 1874. Perceval's widow married, on 12 Jan. 1815, Lieutenant-colonel Sir Henry Carr, K.C.B., and died on 26 Jan. 1844.

[The best life of Perceval is by Mr. Spencer Walpole, and was issued in 1874. There is another in J. C. Earle's English Premiers, 1871, and a third by C. V. Williams, 1856. A contemporary memoir was suppressed by his brother, Lord Arden. See, too, Alison's Europe; Jesse's Memoirs of George III; Romilly's Memoirs; Wilberforce's Life; Duke of Buckingham's Memoirs of the Regency; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. iii. 445, which contains a bibliography of his assassination, and of Bellingham, and also 7th ser. xi. 191; Edinburgh Review, xx. 30; Sydney Smith's Plymley Letters; Napier's Peninsular War; Massey's Hist. of England; State Trials, xxvi. 598 (Binn's trial), xxviii. 363 (Despard's trial), xxviii. 547 (Peltier's trial), xxix. 21, 243 (Cobbett's and Johnson's trials).] J. A. H.

PERCIVAL, JOHN (*fl.* 1550), Carthusian author, studied philosophy at both Oxford and Cambridge, and afterwards entered the Carthusian order. According to Theodore Petreius's 'Bibliotheca Cartusiana' (Cologne, 1609, p. 212), he became prior of the house of his order at Paris in 1550, and was held in much esteem for piety and erudition. He was author of 'Compendium Divini Amoris,' Paris, 1530, 8vo, and wrote a number of letters, which do not appear to have been printed.

Another JOHN PERCIVAL (*d.* 1515?) took the degree of divinity at Oxford about 1501 (WOOD, *Fasti*, i. 6), and became shortly afterwards forty-seventh provincial of the Franciscans in England. He is said to have been buried in Christ Church, Newgate, before 1515, and was succeeded as provincial by Henry Standish [q. v.]

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, i. 6; Bale, De Scriptoribus, viii. 629; Pits, p. 685; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.; Berkenhout's Biogr. Lit. p. 132; Cooper's Athenæ Oxon. i.]

PERCIVAL, ROBERT (1765–1826), traveller and writer, was born in 1765, became a captain in the 18th Irish infantry regiment, and held this position until he embarked in 1795, in the fleet, commanded by Elphinstone, that was despatched for the conquest of the Cape of Good Hope, then held by the Dutch. Percival disembarked at the Cape, in Simon's Bay, and was entrusted by General Sir James Henry Craig [q. v.] with the duty of attacking the Dutch in the defile of Muisenberg, and in the strong post of Wyneberg. He succeeded in both undertakings, and the Dutch fleet sent, under Admiral Lucas (August 1796), to the help of the colony was captured. Following up this victory, Percival was the first to enter Cape Town (16 Sept. 1796), and there he remained till 1797. On his return he published a narrative of his journey and a description of the country, under the title: 'An Account of the Cape of Good Hope, containing an Historical View of its original Settlement by the Dutch, and a Sketch of its Geography, Productions, the Manners and Customs of its Inhabitants,' &c., London, 1804. This was translated into French by J. F. Henry, Paris, 1806. Percival's work, though rather thin, is not uninteresting, and was warmly praised at the time. His criticisms of the Dutch settlers, and especially of their cruelty to the natives, their laziness, inhospitality, and low civilisation, are severe. But he commends the Cape climate as the finest in the world, and advises the home government, who had just restored the province by the treaty of Amiens, to reoccupy it.

In 1797 he also visited Ceylon, where he speaks of residing three years, and of which he wrote and published a description: 'An Account of Ceylon, with the Journal of an Embassy to the Court of Candy,' London, 1803. In this he notices the effects of the Portuguese and Dutch rule, which looked (especially the former) as if it 'tried to counteract as much as possible the natural advantages of the island.' He gives various instances of Dutch cruelty and treachery,

and attempts to characterise three classes of 'natives'—the Cingalese of the coast, the Candians of the interior, and the Malays. The pearl fishery, the town and forts of Columbo, the salt works of the island, the staple commodity of cinnamon, above all, the inland capital of Candy, are noticed in other chapters. Sydney Smith declared the work to 'abound with curious and important information.' Percival died in 1826.

[Percival's Account of Ceylon and of Cape of Good Hope; Notices of his works in the Edinburgh Review and London Annual; Walkenaer's Collection des Voyages, xvii. 56–71.] C. R. B.

PERCIVAL, THOMAS (1719–1762), antiquary, son of Richard Percival of Royton Hall, near Oldham, Lancashire, was born there on 1 Sept. 1719. He was brought up a presbyterian, but joined the church of England; was a whig in politics, and a warm advocate of the Hanoverian succession. In 1748 he wrote two able pamphlets in opposition to the high-church clergy and the nonjurors of Manchester. Their titles are: 'A Letter to the Reverend the Clergy of the Collegiate Church of Manchester,' &c., and 'Manchester Politics: a Dialogue between Mr. Trueblew and Mr. Whiglove,' &c. In 1758 he generously took part with some operative weavers in a dispute with their masters about wages, and in connection with this matter published 'A Letter to a Friend occasioned by the late Dispute betwixt the Check-Makers of Manchester and their Weavers; and the Check-Makers' Ill-usage of the Author,' Halifax, 1759, 8vo. His 'Observations on the Roman Colonies and Stations in Cheshire and Lancashire' were read to the Royal Society on 13 June 1751 (*Phil. Trans.* xlvii. 216), on which occasion Stukeley mentions Percival as 'a learned person who lives in the north, and has taken a good deal of pains by travelling to search out the Roman roads and stations mentioned thereabouts.' Nine years later he sent a shorter paper on the same subject to the Society of Antiquaries (*Archæologia*, i. 62). He discovered that Kinderton was the site of Condate (Watkin, *Roman Cheshire*). In the 'Philosophical Transactions' for 1752 (xlvii. 360) he has a curious 'Account of a Double Child,' a monstrosity born at Hebus (i.e. Hebers), near Middleton in Lancashire. Some of the plans of ancient remains given in Aikin's 'Country round Manchester' were drawn by him. He was elected F.R.S. on 25 Nov. 1756, and F.S.A. on 12 June 1760.

Percival died in December 1762, and was buried in St. Paul's Church, Royton. He married Martha, daughter of Major Benjamin Gregge of Chamber Hall, Oldham. She died in 1760, aged 45. Their only child and heir, Katherine, married Joseph Pickford of Alt Hill, Lancashire, afterwards known as Sir Joseph Radcliffe of Milnesbridge, Yorkshire, into whose possession Percival's collection of manuscript pedigrees and other papers passed.

The antiquary must be carefully distinguished from his namesake, Thomas Percival (1740–1804) [q. v.], the physician, with whom he is often confused.

[Byrom's Remains (Chetham Soc.), ii. 441, 461; Raines's Fellows and Chaplains of Manchester (Chetham Soc.), ii. 255; Gent. Mag. June 1823, p. 505; Butterworth's Oldham, 1817, p. xi; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. xii. 373, 440; Stukeley's Memoirs (Surtees Soc.), ii. 244; Hunter's Fam. Gen. Min. (Harleian Soc.) i. 119; Whitaker's Manchester, 4to, i. 94, 137; Collier's (Tim Bobbin) Works, ed. Fishwick, p. 117; Gough's British Topogr. i. 503; Baines's Lancashire; Sutton's Lancashire Authors; Raines's manuscripts in Chetham Library.] C. W. S.

PERCIVAL, THOMAS (1740–1804), physician and author, born at Warrington, Lancashire, 29 Sept. 1740, was son of Joseph Percival, who was engaged in business in Warrington and married Margaret Orred. His grandfather, Peter Percival, younger son of an old Cheshire yeoman family farming an estate they had long held near Latchford, practised physic in Warrington. Both his parents dying within a few days of one another, when Thomas, their only surviving son, was three, he was left to the care of an elder sister. His education was begun at the grammar school at Warrington, but in 1750, when he was ten, Thomas Percival, M.D., his father's eldest brother, a physician in the town and district round Warrington, died, and left him a valuable library and a moderate competency. Percival resolved to qualify himself for the profession of medicine. He was a dissenter, and was known in later life as a staunch unitarian. In 1757 he is said to have been the first student enrolled at the newly established Warrington academy which was founded to give a collegiate education to those who were debarred by the necessity of subscription to the Thirty-nine articles from entering the English universities. On the completion of his course at Warrington he proceeded to the university of Edinburgh, where he formed lasting friendships with Robertson the historian, David Hume, and other distinguished men. While still a student at Edinburgh he spent a year in London, where he became known to many scientific men, and through the influence of its vice-president, Lord Willoughby

de Parham, he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. It is said that he was the youngest man at that time on whom that honour had been conferred. From Edinburgh he proceeded to Leyden, where he completed his medical studies, and took his degree 6 July 1765. For two years he practised his profession in his native town, and married Elizabeth, the only surviving child of Nathaniel Basnett, merchant, of London. In 1767 he removed to Manchester, where he at once made many friends. Abandoning an original intention of going to London, he resided in that town the remainder of his life. He soon made a reputation by contributing papers to 'Philosophical' transactions, and various periodicals, and his essays, medical and experimental, issued 1767–76, attracted wide attention. In 1775 he published the first of three parts of 'A Father's Instructions;' the concluding part was not issued till 1800. This book for children achieved great popularity. In reply to Dr. Price's 'Treatise on Reversionary Payments,' Percival wrote his 'Proposals for establishing more accurate and comprehensive Bills of Mortality in Manchester.'

Keenly sympathising with the poor and the quickly growing artisan population of the town and district, he helped to form a committee to enforce proper sanitation in Manchester. He advocated the establishment of public baths, and may also be considered as the earliest advocate of factory legislation. On 25 Jan. 1796 he addressed the Manchester committee or board of health on certain evils which had been developed by the growth of the factory system, and recommended legislative interference with the conditions of factory labour. In other directions his energy was no less apparent. At his house the Manchester Literary and Philosophical Society was brought into being in 1781. He was elected a vice-president on its foundation, and from 1782, with one exception, he occupied the presidential chair till his death. In 1785 Percival aided in the removal to Manchester of the Warrington academy, and took a great interest in its management. An endeavour on the part of Percival and his friends to found a college of arts and sciences proved unsuccessful, but the scheme was accomplished half a century later under the will of John Owens [q. v.] Percival's charm of manner and wide learning gained him friends and correspondents among the most distinguished men and women of his time, both in Europe and America. He died at his house in Manchester 30 Aug. 1804, leaving a widow and three surviving sons. He was buried in Warrington church, where there is an epitaph by his friend, Dr. Samuel Parr. Another memorial tablet is placed above the president's chair in the rooms of the Manchester Literary and Philosophical Society. The society possesses a portrait of Percival painted from a miniature in the possession of his grandson. A silhouette portrait is given in Kendrick's 'Warrington Worthies.'

Percival published 'Medical Ethics,' 1803; it was republished in 1827 and edited by Dr. Greenhill in 1849. A series of extracts came out at Philadelphia in 1823. Percival's son, Edward Percival, M.D., wrote 'Practical Observations on Typhus Fever,' 1819, and contributed to vol. ii. of the 'Edinburgh Review' an essay on Dr. William Shepherd's 'Life of Poggio.' He also edited the works of his father, with a prefatory memoir, published at Bath in 1807, in four volumes.

[Memoir by his son; Angus Smith's Centenary of Science in Manchester; Espinasse's Lancashire Worthies, 2nd ser.; Hunter's Familiæ Minorum Gentium (Harleian Soc.), i. 121; British Museum Catalogue; Catalogue of Surgeon-Generals' Library, Washington, x. 683; Kendrick's Warrington Worthies; family notes in the writer's possession.] A. N.

**PERCY, ALAN** (*d.* 1560), master of St. John's College, Cambridge, was third son of Henry Percy, fourth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], by Maud, daughter of William Herbert, first earl of Pembroke of the second creation [q. v.] He apparently was not educated at a university, but on 1 May 1513 he was in holy orders, as he then received the prebend of Dunnington in York Minster, a preferment which he resigned before 1 Nov. 1517. On 6 May 1515 he received the rectory of St. Anne, Aldersgate, London, which he held till 1518. The new and struggling foundation of St. John the Evangelist at Cambridge, influenced doubtless by his Lancastrian connections and wide family influence, chose him as their second master on 29 July 1516. But he seems to have been unsuited to his new position, and resigned the mastership on 1 Nov. 1518; the college granted him a pension of 10*l.* a year for life, with the use of the low parlour, belonging to the master, and two inner chambers there whenever he should come to reside. On 2 April 1520 the king gave him a house and garden at Stepney, Middlesex, and he consequently, on 4 Feb. following, resigned all his interest under the grant of the college. Percy soon received other preferments. On 25 Oct. 1521 he became rector of St. Mary-at-Hill, London. In 1526 the Earl of Roch-

ford presented him to the rectory of Mulbarton-cum-Keningham, Norfolk; about the same time he became master of the college of the Holy Trinity at Arundel, which he joined with the two fellows in surrendering to the king on 12 Dec. 1545. It has been suggested that he was the Percy who proceeded M.A. at Cambridge as a grand compounder in 1528, but it is difficult to know why he should have waited so long to take a degree he might have had in 1516. He is mentioned in June 1527 as one of the trustees of his brother, the Earl of Northumberland, who died in that year. In 1530 it appears that he owed Wolsey's estate 9*l.* for expediting a suit for the union of certain parishes. The Duke of Norfolk gave him the rectory of Earsham, Norfolk, in 1558. Percy died in May 1560, and was buried in the old chapel of St. John's College, where there were a brass and a marble tomb to his memory. One portrait, made in 1549, was at the Norwich Guildhall; he had given a house to the city of Norwich in 1534. Another (a copy), which is in the combination room at St. John's College, shows a refined and ascetic face.

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 206; Baker's Hist. of St. John's Coll. (ed. Mayor), i. 8, &c., ii. 566, &c.; J. Bass Mullinger's Hist. of the University of Cambridge, i. 470; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 307; Letters and Papers of Henry VIII, i. 779, ii. 4183, iv. ii. 3213, iv. iii. 6748.] W. A. J. A.

**PERCY**, ALGERNON, tenth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1602–1668), son of Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], was born in London, and baptised 13 Oct. 1602 (CHAMBERLAIN, *Letters during the Reign of Queen Elizabeth*, p. 157; COLLINS, *Peerage*, ed. Brydges, ii. 346). Percy was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, as family papers prove, and not at Christ Church, Oxford, as stated by Collins and Doyle (FONBLANQUE, *House of Percy*, ii. 367). His father then sent him to travel abroad, providing him with detailed instructions what to observe and how to behave (*Antiquarian Repertory*, iv. 374). On 4 Nov. 1616 he was created a knight of the Bath (DOYLE, *Official Baronage*, ii. 663). In the parliament of 1624 he represented the county of Sussex, and in those called in 1625 and 1626 the city of Chichester. He was summoned to the House of Lords as Baron Percy on 28 March 1627, and succeeded his father as tenth Earl of Northumberland on 5 Nov. 1632.

Charles I was anxious to secure the support of Northumberland, and conferred upon him, on 16 May 1635, the order of the Garter (*Strafford Letters*, i. 363, 427; FONBLANQUE, ii. 630). For the next few years he was continually trusted with the highest naval or military posts. On 23 March 1636 he was appointed admiral of the fleet raised by means of ship-money in order to assert the sovereignty of the seas. It effected nothing beyond obliging a certain number of Dutch fishermen to accept licenses to fish from Northumberland's master. But its ineffectiveness was due rather to the policy of Charles than to his admiral's fault (GARDINER, *History of England*, viii. 156; *Strafford Letters*, i. 524; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1635–6, pp. xx, 357). Northumberland was full of zeal for the king's service, and presented to him in December 1636 a statement of the abuses existing in the management of the navy, with proposals for their reform; but, though supported by ample proof of the evils alleged, the commissioners of the admiralty took no steps to remedy them. 'This proceeding,' wrote Northumberland to Strafford, 'hath brought me to a resolution not to trouble myself any more with endeavouring a reformation, unless I be commanded to it' (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 40, 49; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1636–7, pp. 202, 217, 251; FONBLANQUE, ii. 379). Strafford, who had supported Northumberland with all his might, urged him to be patient and constant in his endeavours, and pressed, through Laud, for his appointment as one of the commissioners of the admiralty, or as lord high admiral (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 54). In April 1637 Northumberland was a second time appointed admiral, but again found himself able to achieve nothing. His disgust was very great. He wrote to Strafford from his anchorage in the Downs complaining bitterly. 'To ride in this place at anchor a whole summer together without hope of action, to see daily disorders in the fleet and not to have means to remedy them, and to be in an employment where a man can neither do service to the state, gain honour to himself, nor do courtesies for his friends, is a condition that I think nobody will be ambitious of' (*ib.* ii. 84; GARDINER, viii. 219; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1637, pp. xxi–xxv). On 30 March 1638 Northumberland was raised to the dignity of lord high admiral of England, which was granted him, however, only during pleasure, and not, as in the cases of Nottingham and Buckingham, for life (*ib.* 1637–8, p. 321; COLLINS, ii. 247). It was intended that he should retain his post until the Duke of York was of age to succeed him (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 154; GARDINER, viii. 338).

The troubles in Scotland brought Northumberland military office also. In July 1638 the king appointed a committee of eight privy councillors for Scottish affairs, of which Northumberland was one. The consideration of the discontent of the people and of the king's unpreparedness for war made him think it safer for the king to grant the Scots the conditions they asked than rashly to enter into a war. 'God send us a good end of this troublesome business,' he wrote to Strafford, 'for, to my apprehension, no foreign enemies could threaten so much danger to this kingdom as doth now this beggarly nation' (*ib.* ii. 186, 266). On 26 March 1639, when the king prepared to proceed to the north to take command of the army, Northumberland was appointed general of all the forces south of the Trent and a member of the council of regency (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1638–9, p. 608). His private letters to his brother-in-law, the Earl of Leicester, show that Northumberland was dissatisfied with the king's policy, and had no confidence in most of his fellow-ministers. Secretary Coke he held incapable, and endeavoured to get his place for Leicester. Secretary Windebanke he regarded not only as incapable, but as treacherous, and was enraged by his interference with the command of the fleet, which allowed Tromp to destroy Oquendo's ships in an English harbour. Northumberland's own views inclined him to an alliance with France rather than Spain, and he was opposed to Hamilton, Cottington, and the Spanish faction in the council. Strafford was his friend, but he thought him too much inclined to Spain, and Laud's religious policy he disliked. The discontent which existed in England and the emptiness of the king's treasury seemed to him to render the success of the war against the Scots almost impossible (Collins, *Sydney Papers*, ii. 608–23; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1639–40, pp. 22, 526; *Strafford Letters*, ii. 276). For these reasons Northumberland hailed with joy the summoning of the Short parliament, and regretted the vehemence with which the commons pressed for the redress of their grievances. 'Had they been well advised,' he wrote to Lord Conway, 'I am persuaded they might in time have gained their desires' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1640, pp. 71, 115; *Sydney Papers*, ii. 623). Backed only by Lord Holland, he opposed the dissolution of the parliament in the committee of eight, and spoke against Strafford's proposal for a vigorous invasion of Scotland. Vane's notes of his speech are: 'If no more money than proposed, how then to make an offensive war? a difficulty whether to do nothing or to let them alone, or go on with a vigorous war (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 3rd Rep. p. 3; Gardiner, *History of England*, ix. 122). 'What will the world judge of us abroad,' he complained to Leicester, 'to see us enter into such an action as this is, not knowing how to maintain it for one month? It grieves my soul to be involved in these counsels, and the sense I have of the miseries that are like to ensue is held by some a disaffection in me. . . . The condition that the king is in is extremely unhappy; I could not believe that wise men would ever have brought us into such a strait as now we are in without being certain of a remedy' (Collins, *Sydney Papers*, ii. 652, 654).

As early as the previous December Charles had announced to Northumberland that he meant to make him general of the forces raised for the second Scottish war (*ib.* ii. 626). According to Clarendon, Strafford was originally designed for the post, but he chose rather to serve as lieutenant-general under the Earl of Northumberland, believing that the conferring of that precedence upon him would more firmly fasten him to the king's interest, and that his power in the northern parts would bring great advantage to the king's services (*Rebellion*, ed. Macray, ii. 80 *n.*) His commission is dated 14 Feb. 1640 (Rushworth, iii. 989). Northumberland, in spite of his doubts and despondency, vigorously exerted himself to organise the army, and contributed 5,000*l.* to the loan raised for the king's service in 1639 (*Sydney Papers*, ii. 629; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1640, pp. 294, 363, 514, 572). But in August 1640 he fell ill, and Strafford took command of the army in his place (*ib.* pp. 588, 603).

In the Long parliament Northumberland gradually drew to the side of the opposition. He was one of the witnesses against Strafford on the twenty-third article of the impeachment; and, though denying that Strafford had intended to use the Irish army against England, his evidence to the lord deputy's recommendation of arbitrary measures was extremely damaging. The king, wrote Northumberland to Leicester, was angry with him because he would not perjure himself for Strafford (Rushworth, *Trial of Strafford*, pp. 533, 543; *Sydney Papers*, ii. 665).

Northumberland himself was vexed because the king declined to promote Leicester (*ib.* ii. 661–6). Clarendon represents Northumberland sending to the House of Commons Henry Percy's letter about the army plot as the first visible sign of his defection (*Rebellion*, iii. 228; *Commons' Journals*, ii. 172–5). It was followed in the second session by an

open alliance with the opposition party in the House of Lords. Northumberland signed the protests against the appointment of Lunsford to the command of the Tower, against the refusal of the House of Lords to join the commons in demanding the militia, and against their similar refusal to punish the Duke of Richmond's dangerous words. The popular party showed their confidence in Northumberland by nominating him lord lieutenant of the four counties of Sussex, Northumberland, Pembroke, and Anglesey (28 Feb. 1642). His possession of the post of lord high admiral secured the parliamentary leaders the control of the navy. When the king refused to appoint the Earl of Warwick to command the fleet, the two houses ordered Northumberland to make him vice-admiral, and Northumberland obeyed. On 28 June 1642 the king dismissed Northumberland from his office, but too late to prevent the sailors from accepting Warwick as their commander (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, iv. 330, v. 376; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 3rd Rep. p. 85; Gardiner, *History of England*, x. 176, 185, 208).

Charles felt Northumberland's defection very severely. He had raised him to office after office, and, as he complained, 'courted him as his mistress, and conversed with him as his friend, without the least interruption or intermission of all possible favour and kindness' (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, iii. 228; *Memoirs of Sir Philip Warwick*, p. 117). In three letters to Sir John Bankes, Northumberland explained his position. 'We believe that those persons who are most powerful with the king do endeavour to bring parliaments to such a condition that they shall only be made instruments to execute the commands of the king, who were established for his greatest and most supreme council. . . . It is far from our thoughts to change the form of government, to invade upon the king's just prerogative, or to leave him unprovided of as plentiful a revenue as either he or any of his predecessors ever enjoyed.' He protested that the armaments of the parliament were purely defensive in their aim. 'Let us but have our laws, liberties, and privileges secured unto us, and let him perish that seeks to deprive the king of any part of his prerogative, or that authority which is due unto him. If our fortunes be to fall into troubles, I am sure few (excepting the king himself) will suffer more than I shall do; therefore for my own private considerations, as well as for the public good, no man shall more earnestly endeavour an agreement between the king and his people' (Bankes, *Story of Corfe Castle*, pp. 122, 129, 139).

True to these professions, Northumberland, though he accepted a place in the parliamentary committee of safety (4 July 1642), was throughout counted among the heads of the peace party (Gardiner, *Great Civil War*, i. 53, 80). On 10 Nov. 1642 he was sent to present a message of peace to the king at Colebrook, and in the following March he was at the head of the parliamentary commissioners sent to treat with the king at Oxford. Whitelocke praises his 'sober and stout carriage to the king,' his civility to his brother commissioners, and the 'state and nobleness' with which he lived while at Oxford (*Memorials*, edit. 1853, i. 195–201; *Old Parliamentary History*, xii. 29, 201). His zeal for peace made him suspected by the violent party. Harry Marten took upon himself to open one of Northumberland's letters to his wife, and, as he refused to apologise, Northumberland struck him with his cane. This took place on 18 April 1643 in the painted chamber, as Marten was returning from a conference between the two houses, and was complained of by the commons as a breach of privilege (*Lords' Journals*, vi. 11; Clarendon, *Rebellion*, vii. 20). In June Northumberland was accused of complicity in Waller's plot, but indignantly repudiated the charge, and Waller's statements against him are too vague to be credited (Sanford, *Studies and Illustrations of the Great Rebellion*, pp. 543, 562). He was one of the originators of the peace propositions agreed to by the House of Lords on 4 Aug. 1643, and appealed to Essex for support against the mob violence which procured their rejection by the commons (*ib.* p. 576; Gardiner, *Great Civil War*, i. 185; Clarendon, *Rebellion*, vii. 166–75). Finding Essex disinclined to support the peace movement, Northumberland retired to Petworth, and for a time absented himself altogether from the parliamentary councils. Clarendon, who held that the king might have won back Northumberland by returning him to his office of lord admiral, asserts that if the other peers who deserted the parliament at the same time had been well received by the king, Northumberland would have followed their example (*Rebellion*, vii. 21, 188, 244, 248).

A few months later Northumberland returned to his place in parliament, and the two houses showed their confidence by appointing him one of the committee of both kingdoms (16 Feb. 1644). In the treaty at Uxbridge in January 1645 Northumberland again acted as one of the parliamentary commissioners, and was their usual spokesman (Whitelocke, i. 377, 385; Clarendon, *Rebellion*, viii. 218). But he was hardly as

ready to make concessions as before. 'The repulse he had formerly received at Oxford upon his addresses thither, and the fair escape he had made afterwards from the jealousy of the parliament, had wrought so far upon him that he resolved no more to depend upon the one or provoke the other, and was willing to see the king's power and authority so much restrained that he might not be able to do him any harm' (*ib.* viii. 244). During 1645 he acted with the leaders of the independents, helping to secure the passage of the self-denying ordinance, and the organisation of the new model army (GARDINER, *Great Civil War*, ii. 189; SANFORD, *Studies and Illustrations*, p. 353). On 18 March he was appointed to the guardianship of the king's two youngest children, with a salary of 3,000*l.* a year; and it was even reported that if the king continued to refuse to come to terms, the Duke of Gloucester would be made king, with Northumberland as lord protector (*ib.*; *Lords' Journals*, vii. 279, 327). After the fall of Oxford the Duke of York also passed into his custody, with an allowance of 7,500*l.* for his maintenance.

With the close of the war Northumberland again took up the part of mediator. His own losses during its continuance had amounted to over 42,000*l.*, towards which, on 19 Jan. 1647, parliament had voted him 10,000*l.* (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 3rd Rep. p. 86; *Commons' Journals*, viii. 651). In January 1647 he united with Manchester and the leading presbyterian peers in drawing up propositions likely to be more acceptable to the king than those previously offered him. They were forwarded through Bellièvre, the French ambassador, who transmitted them to Henrietta Maria (GARDINER, *Great Civil War*, iii. 213). On 26 Nov. 1646 Northumberland had been accused of secretly sending money to the king during the war, and the charge had been investigated at the desire of the commons by a committee of the House of Lords; but the informer himself finally admitted that the charge was false (*Lords' Journals*, viii. 578, 678). That it should have been made at all was probably the effect of his obvious preference for a compromise with Charles.

Northumberland was one of the peers who left their seats in parliament after the riots of July 1647, and signed the engagement of 4 Aug. to stand by the army for the restoration of the freedom of the two houses (*Lords' Journals*, ix. 385). It was at Northumberland's house, Syon, near Brentford, that the conferences of the seceders and the officers of the army were held and an agreement arrived at (WALLER, *Vindication*, p. 191). When the king was in the hands of the army, and during his residence at Hampton Court, he was allowed to see his children with more frequency than before, parliament, however, stipulating that Northumberland should accompany his charges. In one of these interviews it is said that Charles gently reproached Northumberland for his defection, and hinted that, if he would return to his allegiance, the Duke of York should be married to one of his daughters. But Northumberland remained firm against any temptations: while his opposition to the vote of no address proved that fear was equally unable to make him swerve from the policy of moderation and compromise (GREEN, *Lives of the Princesses of England*, vi. 360; GARDINER, *Great Civil War*, iv. 52). On 21 April 1648 the Duke of York escaped from Northumberland's custody, and made his way in disguise to Holland. But as early as 19 Feb. Northumberland had asked to be relieved of his charge, and declined to be responsible if he should escape; so the two houses, on hearing the earl's explanation, acquitted him of all blame in the matter (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1648–9, p. 19; *Lords' Journals*, x. 220; *Life of James II*, i. 29–33). In the following September Northumberland was appointed one of the fifteen commissioners sent to negotiate with Charles at Newport, and appears from his subsequent conduct to have regarded the king's concessions as a sufficient basis for the settlement of the nation. In the House of Lords he headed the opposition to the ordinance for the king's trial. 'Not one in twenty of the people of England,' he declared, 'are yet satisfied whether the king did levy war against the houses first, or the houses first against him; and, besides, if the king did levy war first, we have no law extant that can be produced to make it treason in him to do; and for us to declare treason by an ordinance when the matter of fact is not yet proved, nor any law to bring to judge it by, seems to me very unreasonable' (GARDINER, *Great Civil War*, iv. 289).

Under the Commonwealth and protectorate Northumberland remained rigidly aloof from public affairs. He consented, however, to take the engagement to be faithful to the Commonwealth (SANFORD, *Studies and Illustrations of the Great Rebellion*, p. 292). At his own request parliament relieved him of the expensive and troublesome charge of Prince Henry and the Princess Elizabeth, appointing, at his own suggestion, his sister, the Countess of Leicester, to fill his place (CARY, *Memorials of the Civil War*, ii. 127, 138; *Commons' Journals*,

vi. 216). He took no part in any plots against the government. An attempt to make him out to be a delinquent failed; but the demand that Wressell Castle should be made untenable, and the consequences of a loan raised by the parliament, for which he had become engaged, gave him some vexation (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1649–50, p. 286; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 3rd Rep. pp. 87–8). He refused to sit either in Cromwell's House of Lords or in that summoned by his son in 1659. To Richard's invitation he is said to have replied that, 'till the government was such as his predecessors have served under, he could not in honour do it; but, that granted, he should see his willingness to serve him with his life and fortune' (*Clarendon State Papers*, ii. 432). He looked forward to the restoration of the House of Lords as a necessary part of the settlement of the nation, but deprecated any premature attempt on the part of the lords themselves to reclaim their rights. On 5 March 1660 he wrote to the Earl of Manchester, referring to the recent attempt made by some of the lords to persuade Monck to allow them to sit, and urging its unseasonableness (Manchester, *Court and Society from Elizabeth to Anne*, i. 395). An unconditional restoration he did not desire, and was one of the heads of the little cabal which proposed that merely those peers who had sat in 1648 should be permitted to take their places in the upper house, and that these should impose on Charles II the conditions offered to his father at the Newport treaty (Collins, *Sydney Papers*, ii. 685; *Clarendon State Papers*, iii. 729). In the Convention parliament which met in April 1660 he supported a general act of indemnity, and was heard to say that, 'though he had no part in the death of the king, he was against questioning those who had been concerned in that affair; that the example might be more useful to posterity and profitable to future kings, by deterring them from the like exorbitances' (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, 267, ed. 1894).

Though the policy which Northumberland had pursued must have been extremely distasteful both to the king and to his ministers, he was sworn in as a privy councillor immediately after the king's return (31 May 1660) (Blencowe, *Sydney Papers*, p. 158). He was appointed lord lieutenant of Sussex (11 Aug. 1660) and joint lord lieutenant of Northumberland (7 Sept. 1660), and acted as lord high constable at the coronation of Charles II (18–23 April 1661). But he exercised no influence over the policy of the king, and took henceforth no part in public affairs. He died on 13 Oct. 1668, in the sixty-sixth year of his age, and was buried at Petworth.

Clarendon terms Northumberland 'the proudest man alive,' and adds that 'if he had thought the king as much above him as he thought himself above other considerable men, he would have been a good subject.' 'He was in all his deportment a very great man,' and throughout his political career he behaved with a dignity and independence more characteristic of a feudal potentate than a seventeenth-century nobleman. Without possessing great abilities, he enjoyed as much reputation and influence as if he had done so. 'Though his notions were not large or deep, yet his temper and reservedness in discourse, and his unrashness in speaking, got him the reputation of an able and a wise man; which he made evident in his excellent government of his family, where no man was more absolutely obeyed; and no man had ever fewer idle words to answer for; and in debates of importance he always expressed himself very pertinently' (*Rebellion*, vi. 398, viii. 244). At the commencement of the civil war he had 'the most esteemed and unblemished reputation, in court and country, of any person of his rank throughout the kingdom.' At the close of the struggle he preserved it almost unimpaired. 'In spite of all the partial disadvantages which were brought upon him by living in such a divided age, yet there was no man perhaps of any party but believed, honoured, and would have trusted him. Neither was this due to any chance of his birth, but, as all lasting reputation is, to those qualities which ran through the frame of his mind and the course of his life' (Sir William Temple to Josceline, eleventh earl of Northumberland, 26 Dec. 1668; Fonblanque, ii. 475).

Northumberland married twice: first, in January 1629, Lady Anne Cecil, eldest daughter of William, second earl of Salisbury. This match was strongly disapproved by the bridegroom's father, who attributed his wrongs to the jealousy of the first Earl of Salisbury, and declared that the blood of Percy would not mix with the blood of Cecil if you poured it in a dish' (Fonblanque, ii. 370). She died on 6 Dec. 1637, and was buried at Petworth (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 142). By her Northumberland had issue five daughters, three of whom—Catharine, Dorothy, and Lucy—died in childhood; Lady Anne Percy, born on 12 Aug. 1633, married, on 21 June 1652, Philip, lord Stanhope, and died on 29 Nov. 1654; Lady Elizabeth Percy, born on 1 Dec. 1636, married, on 19 May 1653, Arthur, lord Capel (created Earl of Essex in 1661), and died on

5 Feb. 1718 (*ib.* i. 76, 116, 469; COLLINS, ii. 353; FONBLANQUE, ii. 388, 407).

Northumberland's second wife was Lady Elizabeth Howard, second daughter of Theophilus, second earl of Suffolk. The marriage took place on 1 Oct. 1642. She died on 11 March 1705. By this marriage the great house built by Henry Howard, earl of Northampton, came into Northumberland's possession, and was henceforth known as Northumberland House. It was demolished in 1874 to make room for Northumberland Avenue (WHEATLEY, *London Past and Present*, ii. 603). By his second countess Earl Algernon had issue: (1) Josceline, eleventh earl of Northumberland, born on 4 July 1644, married, on 23 Dec. 1662, Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Thomas Wriothesley, earl of Southampton, and died on 21 May 1670, leaving a son, Henry Percy, who died on 18 Dec. 1669, and a daughter, Elizabeth Percy, born on 26 Jan. 1667, afterwards Duchess of Somerset; (2) Lady Mary Percy, born on 22 July 1647, died on 3 July 1652.

A portrait of Northumberland and his countess by Vandyck was No. 719 in the National Portrait Exhibition of 1866; it is in the possession of the Marquis of Salisbury. Another by the same painter, the property of the Earl of Essex, was No. 760. The latter was No. 57 in the Vandyck exhibition of 1887. Lists of engraved portraits are in Granger's 'Biographical History,' and in the catalogue of the portraits in the Sutherland copy of Clarendon's 'History' in the Bodleian Library. They include engravings by Glover, Hollar, Houbraken, Payne, and Stent (BROMLEY).

[A life of Algernon, earl of Northumberland, based mainly on the family papers, is contained in De Fonblanque's House of Percy, vol. ii. The papers themselves are calendared Hist. MSS. Comm. 3rd Rep. A life is also given in Lodge's Portraits: Doyle's Official Baronage, ii. 663; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, vol. ii.; Collins's Sydney Papers; other authorities cited in the article.] C. H. F.

**PERCY, ALGERNON, fourth DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND** (1792–1865), second son of Hugh Percy, second duke [q. v.], by his second wife, Frances Julia, daughter of Peter Burrell, esq., of Beckenham, Kent, was born at Syon House 15 Dec. 1792. He entered the navy in boyhood (3 May 1805) as a volunteer on board the Tribune frigate, served as midshipman in the Fame and Caledonia in the Mediterranean, receiving the commendation of Lord Collingwood (G. L. N. COLLINGWOOD, *Life*, ii. 155), became lieutenant on 16 Dec. 1811, and was present at the partial action off Toulon and at the capture of Genoa. He obtained his step as commander 8 March 1814, on board the Scout, and was acting captain of the Caledonia, the flagship of Lord Exmouth, and afterwards of the Cossack in 1814, receiving his post rank on the Driver 19 Aug. 1815. At the general peace he went on half-pay, and was never afterwards employed on active service, but attained his ranks on the reserved list as rear-admiral 1850, vice-admiral 1857, admiral 1862. In 1816 Percy was created a peer, with the title of Baron Prudhoe, which became well known in the East, where he travelled for several years in company with Major Felix. In 1826 he was among the select band of early explorers who were then engaged in studying the monuments of Egypt, and the collections in Alnwick Castle testify to the interest he never ceased to take in Egyptian antiquities (S. BIRCH, *Catalogue*, 1880, which describes over two thousand Egyptian objects). His scientific tastes led him to support and accompany Sir John Herschel's expedition to the Cape in 1834, for the purpose of observing the southern constellations [see HERSCHEL, SIR JOHN FREDERICK WILLIAM], and procured him the honorary degree of D.C.L. at Oxford in 1841. His love of learning prompted him to bear the expense of the preparation and printing of the gigantic 'Arabic Lexicon' of Edward William Lane [q. v.], for whom, when they first met at Cairo in 1826, he had conceived a warm friendship and admiration. In 1842 he proposed that, at his cost, Lane should revisit Egypt and collect materials for this monumental work, and from that time forward, for twenty-three years, 'with a kindness and delicacy not to be surpassed' (LANE, *Lexicon*, Pref. p. ii), he bore all the expenses, which became very heavy when the printing began in 1861. The first volume was published in 1863, and was dedicated to him as 'the originator of this work, and its constant and main supporter;' and though death prevented his further participation, his 'princely patronage' was carried on in the same spirit by his widow, the Lady Eleanor Grosvenor, eldest daughter of Hugh Lupus, third marquis and first duke of Westminster, whom he married 25 Aug. 1842. This great work extends to over nine thousand columns, in imperial 4to.

The initiation and support of the 'Arabic Lexicon' belong to a series of munificent acts dictated by a love of learning and a keen sense of public duty. On 11 Feb. 1847 Lord Prudhoe succeeded his brother Hugh as fourth Duke of Northumberland, and thenceforward,

after restoring the estates to order, his object was to administer his princely revenues in a manner worthy of his cultivated tastes and the dignity of his rank. Under his rule Alnwick Castle, which he restored at vast expense, and enriched with rare collections of pictures and antiquities, became the scene of an open hospitality, almost feudal in its stately profusion. At the duke's cost five churches were built on his estates, five more endowed, and six parsonages erected. Nearly half a million was spent on building cottages, and half as much on drainage, new roads, and bridges. His love of his old profession was manifested in a long series of wise foundations and endowments in aid of sailors. In 1851, on the occasion of the Great exhibition, he offered a prize for the best model of a lifeboat, and his influence led to a new activity in the Royal National Lifeboat Institution, brought into practical use the self-righting lifeboat, and promoted the establishment of lifeboat stations all round the coasts of the British Isles. He established lifeboats himself at Hauxley, Tynemouth, Cullercoat, and Newbiggin, endowed schools for the children of sailors and fishermen at Whitby, Tynemouth, Percy Main, and North Shields, and founded the Tyne Sailors' Home. In March 1852 he was appointed first lord of the admiralty in Lord Derby's first administration, and his ten months' tenure of office was marked by a firm maintenance of the best interests of the profession, and a great extension of the application of steam power to the navy. The ministry went out in January 1853, when the duke was made a knight of the Garter. For a short period in 1852 he was a special deputy warden of the Stannaries, and he was constable of Launceston Castle. His scientific interests were shown in his support of learned societies. He was a fellow of the Royal Society, of the Astronomical and Geological Societies, and of the Society of Antiquaries; and was also president of the Royal Institution and the Royal United Service Institute, and a trustee of the British Museum. He died at Alnwick on 12 Feb. 1865, and was buried by Dean Stanley in the Percy chapel in Westminster Abbey on 27 Feb. He left no issue, and the dukedom passed to his cousin George, father of the present duke.

[Personal knowledge; private information; Memoir appended to Funeral Sermon preached by Rev. M. M. Ben-Oliel, chaplain to the Duchess of Northumberland, in Brompton Episcopal Chapel, 26 Feb. 1865; statement of services furnished by the admiralty; information from the secretary Royal National Lifeboat Institution; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, privately printed, 1887; Lane-Poole's Life of E. W. Lane, pp. 108–10; Annual Register, vol. cvii. 1865.] S. L.-P.

PERCY, Lady ELIZABETH. [See under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset, *d.* 1748.]

PERCY, GEORGE (1580–1632), author and colonist, was eighth son of Henry Percy, eighth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], by his wife Catherine, eldest daughter and coheiress of John Neville, lord Latimer. Henry Percy, ninth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], was his brother. Born 4 Sept. 1580, he served for a time in the Low Country wars, and subsequently took part in the first permanent English colonisation of America. He sailed for Virginia in the first expedition of James I's reign (December 1606). On 23 May 1609 his name appeared among the incorporators of the Second Company of Virginia. On 31 Aug. of the same year Gabriel Archer mentions him as one among the 'respected gentlemen of Virginia' who can testify how false are the stories of mutiny in Jamestown at this time. Percy was made deputy-governor on the recall of John Smith in September 1609 to answer some misdemeanours, as Percy and others of Smith's enemies declared. He held office during a critical period until the arrival of Sir Thomas Gates [q. v.] in May 1610. Lord De la Warr became governor a month later, and appointed Percy a member of his new council (12 June 1610) (cf. R. Rich, *Metrical News from Virginia*, London, 1610). On the departure of Lord De la Warr in March 1611, Percy, in recognition of his former services, was reappointed deputy-governor until the arrival of Dale in the following May. According to Spelman's 'Relation of Events,' 1609–11—probably written in the autumn of 1611—Indians at this time came from the 'great Powhatan' with venison for Captain Percy, 'who now was president,' and Sir Thomas Dale wrote to the Virginia Company from Jamestown, 25 May 1611, that he was received by Percy, who, after hearing his commission read, surrendered up his own, 'it being accordingly so to expire.'

On 17 Aug. 1611 Percy excused himself for his large expenditure to his brother Henry, who had paid on his account 432*l.* 1*s.* 6*d.* during the past year. He argued that, as governor of Jamestown, he was 'bound to keep a continual and daily table for gentlemen of fashion.' A Spanish writer (in the Simancas archives) drew the distinction between Percy and his successor Dale, that the former had been 'appointed for himself,' the latter by order of the king.

Percy left Virginia for England on 22 April 1612. Dudley Carleton, in a letter on the exploration of the James River, credits Percy with having named the main settlement James Fort. On 15 May 1620 he transferred to Christopher Martin four of his shares in the Virginia Company, and, after the war broke out again in the Low Countries, returned for a time, probably in 1625, to his old occupation of volunteering against Spain in the service of the United Netherlands. Here, we are told, he distinguished himself, had one of his fingers shot off, and was active in commanding a company, in 1627. He died unmarried in 1632.

Percy played a leading part in the controversy between Captain John Smith and the other original settlers in Virginia. After the appearance of Smith's 'General History,' with its account of affairs during the time of Percy's government, Percy wrote, in answer, about 1625, 'A True Relation of the Proceedings and Occurrents of moment which have happened in Virginia from the time Sir Thomas Gates was shipwrecked upon the Bermudas, 1609, until my departure out of the country, 1612.' This he sent to his brother, the Earl of Northumberland, who fully accepted his statements, and treated him through life with the utmost kindness and confidence. Percy was also the writer of a 'Discourse [or Observations] of the Plantation of the Southern Colony in Virginia,' one of the manuscripts printed by Hakluyt. This manuscript came to Purchas, who printed in his collection illustrative extracts. It is chiefly devoted to accounts of native customs, and describes the famine and diseases from which the colonists suffered.

If the 'True Relation' is to be believed, Smith, who was once known as the 'Saviour of Virginia,' must be treated as a braggart and a slanderer. But Percy, who appears from his letters to have been a needy, extravagant dependent of his brother, wrote this full thirteen years after the events it records; and his evidence hardly carries sufficient weight to warrant the full adoption of his statements. His 'Discourse' (in Purchas) does not contain a word of censure on Smith.

[Percy's Discourse and True Relation; Gardiner's Hist. of England, ii. 61, &c.; Cal. of State Papers, Col. 1574–1660, pp. 8, 67 (4 Oct. 1609, and July 1624); Purchas his Pilgrimes, vol. iv. 1685–1690; Wingfield's Discourse; Allibone's Dictionary of British and American Authors; Brown's Genesis of U.S.A. passim, and esp. pp. 964–5; Harris's Voyages, i. 818–37.]

C. R. B.

**PERCY, HENRY,** first Baron Percy of Alnwick (1272?–1315), was third son of Henry Percy, seventh baron by tenure. Henry Percy (1228?–1272) was eldest son of William Percy, sixth baron [q. v.], by Elena, daughter of Ingelram de Baliol, and had livery of his lands in 1249. He was summoned for service in Wales in 1257, and in Scotland in 1258. During the barons' war he at first sided with the barons, but afterwards joined the king. He fought for Henry at Northampton on 6 April 1264, and at Lewes on 14 May, where he was taken prisoner (Rishanger, *Chron.* pp. 21, 28). He died in 1272, having married, in September 1268, Eleanor, elder daughter of John, earl of Warrenne (*Cont.* Will. Newb. ap. *Chron. Stephen, Henry II,* and *Richard I,* ii. 554, Rolls Ser.), by whom he had three sons, of whom the two elder died soon after their father.

Henry, the third son, and tenth baron by tenure, must have been an infant at his father's death. He was returned in 1287 as a minor, but seven years later, being of full age, was summoned for the war in Gascony, and in 1299, being then over twenty-six years of age, was returned as heir of Ingelram de Baliol (Roberts, *Calendarium Genealogicum,* ii. 567). Percy's first active employment was in March 1296, when he accompanied Edward into Scotland, was knighted by the king before Berwick, and was present at the battle of Dunbar. On 8 Sept. in the same year he was appointed warden of Galloway and of the castles of Ayr, Wigton, Crugleton, and Botel (Stevenson, ii. 100, 110). In 1297 Percy was employed in the marches, having his headquarters at Carlisle (*ib.* ii. 170–3, 186, &c.) In June he and Robert de Clifford (1273–1314) [q. v.] collected their forces in Cumberland and invaded Annandale. They advanced first to Ayr and afterwards to Irvine, where they received the submission early in July of the bishop of Glasgow, Robert de Bruce, earl of Carrick, and James the Steward (*ib.* ii. 192–4; Hemingburgh, ii. 132–3). In September Percy brought up a large force to reinforce Hugh Cressingham [q. v.] at Stirling, but by Cressingham's orders withdrew, and so was not present at the battle (*ib.* ii. 137). He was present at the parliament held at York in January 1298 (*ib.* ii. 156), and in this and the following year served in Scotland. In December 1298 he received 769*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* as pay for three months' service with fifty barbed horse (*Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland,* ii. 1044). In July 1300 he was present with his grandfather at the siege of Carlaverock Castle (Nicolas, *Siege of Car-*

*laverock*, p. 14). On 12 Feb. 1301 he was present at the parliament of Lincoln, and signed the letter of the barons to the pope as 'Dominus de Topclive' (*Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, i. 122). In January 1303 he was summoned to serve in Scotland (*Fœdera*, i. 948). At the close of the year he was with Edward at Dunfermline (Palgrave, i. 263). Early in 1304 he had a grant of the lands of the Earl of Buchan, and in February was with the Prince of Wales at Perth (*Cal. Doc. Scotland*, ii. No. 1487 and p. 393). Later on in the year he served at the siege of Stirling (Palgrave, i. 267). In April 1305 he was present at the parliament at Westminster, but in August was again in Scotland, and in 1306 was employed against Robert Bruce as the king's lieutenant in Galloway. He had charge of Carlaverock Castle in May, and on 19 June was present at the defeat of Bruce near Perth. In September he made a foray in Carrick and Ayr, during which he was surprised and besieged by Bruce at Turnberry Castle in Carrick (*ib.* iv. 389–91; Barbour, *Bruce*, bks. iv. and v.; *Chron. de Melsa*, ii. 277; Hemingburgh, ii. 247). In the early part of 1307 he was still employed in Scotland as one of the three wardens (*ib.* ii. 265), and after the accession of Edward II was again ordered to repair to Scotland on 18 Oct. (*Fœdera*, ii. 9). He was summoned to Edward's coronation in January 1308, and was with the king at Windsor in June (*ib.* ii. 27, 50).

During the next few years he was summoned to various parliaments, and also was employed in Scotland. He joined in the Stamford letter of the barons to the pope on 9 Aug. 1309, and the petition for the ordainers on 17 March 1310 (*Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, i. 162, 170). In March 1311 he had custody of the bishopric of Durham (*Reg. Pal. Dunelm.* iv. 82–4; *Fœdera*, ii. 131). The ordainers had appointed him justice of the forests beyond Trent and warden of Scarborough Castle. In February 1312 he refused to surrender Scarborough to William Latimer, for which offence he was summoned by the king to York on 6 March, and arraigned before the council, but, after a short interval, pardoned (*Parl. Writs*, iv. 1276). On 12 April the king bestowed the justiceship of the forests on Piers Gaveston (*Fœdera*, ii. 163). After this Percy openly joined Thomas of Lancaster, and was appointed to guard the marches against Gaveston and prevent any intrigue with Bruce (*Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, i. 204). Having collected a large force, he occupied Newcastle on 4 May, and then marched south to join the Earls of Warrenne and Pembroke in the siege of Scarborough ten days later (*ib.* i. 204–5, ii. 42–3; *Parl. Writs*, iv. 1276). His lands were taken into the king's hands in June, but restored on 18 Dec. under surety from the Earl of Hereford, and eventually, on 16 Oct. 1313, Percy obtained pardon for his share in the disturbances (*id. ib.*; *Fœdera*, ii. 173, 230). He was summoned to the Scottish war next year, and was present at Bannockburn. He died in 1315, and was buried at Fountains Abbey before the high altar. He had been regularly summoned to parliament from 6 Feb. 1299 to 29 July 1314. In 1309 he had purchased Alnwick and other lands in Northumberland from Antony Bek, bishop of Durham (*ib.* ii. 96, 99, 102; *Scalachronica*, p. 119), and thus became the virtual founder of the historic house of Percy, which had up to this time been chiefly connected with Yorkshire. The chronicle of Alnwick describes him as pre-eminent for skill in tournaments, and more famous and powerful than any of his ancestors (Fonblanque, i. 70–1). Percy married Eleanor, apparently a daughter of John Fitzalan III [see under Fitzalan, John, II], by whom he had two sons, Henry (1299?–1352), his successor, who is noticed separately, and William (*d.* 1355). The arms which he bore at Carlaverock were 'or, a lion rampant azure.'

[Rishanger's Chronicle, Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II, Chron. de Melsa, Reg. Palatinum Dunelmense (all in Rolls Ser.); Hemingburgh's Chronicle (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Trivet's Annals (*ib.*); Barbour's Bruce (Scottish Text Soc.); Stevenson's Documents illustrating the History of Scotland (Chron. and Memorials of Scotland); Bain's Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland; Calendars of Close and Patent Rolls, Edward II; Rymer's Fœdera (Record edit.); Rol's of Parliament; Palgrave's Parliamentary Writs and Documents illustrative of the History of Scotland; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 50–71; Nicolas's Siege of Carlaverock, pp. 136–41; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 272; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, ii. 237–41; Burton's History of Scotland, ii. 286–289, 357, 362.] C. L. K.

PERCY, HENRY, second Baron Percy of Alnwick (1299?–1352), was elder son of Henry Percy, first baron Percy of Alnwick [q. v.], and is said to have been sixteen years old at his father's death, but was apparently still a minor on 28 June 1320 (*Cal. Close Rolls, Edw. II*, 1318–23, p. 201). He had seisin of his lands on 26 Dec. 1321, though he had not yet made proof of his age (*ib.* p. 411). He was with Thomas of Lancaster at Pontefract on 21 May 1321, but was warden of Scarborough Castle for the king on 13 Feb. 1322, and later in the year was employed

against the adherents of Thomas of Lancaster in Yorkshire, and afterwards against the Scots. On 26 Sept. he was censured for letting the Scots escape unharmed. During the reign of Edward II he was summoned to various parliaments, and in 1324–5 for service in Guyenne. After the landing of Queen Isabella in September 1326 he joined her at Gloucester (Murimuth, p. 47), and was one of the council of government appointed in the parliament of January 1327 (Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ii. 385). On 13 Feb. 1328 he was appointed warden of the marches, and shortly afterwards commissioned to treat for peace with Scotland (*Fœdera*, ii. 688–9). In the summer he was besieged by Thomas Randolph, earl of Moray [q. v.], at Alnwick (*Scalachronica*, p. 155). On 5 Sept. he was appointed chief warden of the marches, and on 9 Oct. one of the commissioners to renew the negotiations with Scotland, and assisted in completing the convention at Edinburgh on 17 March 1328, which was ratified by Edward at Northampton on 4 May (*Fœdera*, ii. 715, 719, 734, 740). On 1 March 1328 he obtained a grant of Warkworth from the king (*Cal. Pat. Rolls, Edw. III*, p. 243). He had recovered his Scottish lands under the treaty with Bruce. In May 1329 he went over to France with the king, and was present when Edward did homage at Amiens on 6 June (*Fœdera*, ii. 764–5). During 1331 and 1332 he was employed as a justiciar and warden of the Scottish marches (Bain, iii. 1026, 1032, 1056, 1057). He was with Edward at the siege of Berwick in July 1333, and probably at the battle of Halidon Hill. On 1 Oct. he was appointed to attend Edward Baliol's parliament, and was present at Edinburgh for this purpose in February 1334 (*ib.* iii. 1094; *Fœdera*, ii. 876). He had previously been appointed constable of Berwick, and afterwards held the offices of constable of Berwick and Jedworth as compensation for surrendering his claims on Annandale and Lochmaben. In February 1335 he likewise received all the fees of Patrick, earl of March, in Northumberland.

In January 1335 he defeated the Scots, who were raiding in Redesdale (*Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, ii. 121). In the following July he took part in Edward's invasion of Scotland, advancing from Berwick in company with Baliol (*Chron. Lanercost*, p. 281). In July 1336 he was with Edward III at Perth, and apparently was again in Scotland early in 1337 (Bain, iii. 1209, 1230). In October 1337 he was fighting with the Scots in Allendale, and early in 1338 was sent to besiege Dunbar (*ib.* iii. 1268; *Chron. Lanercost*, p. 295). In February 1339 he was a commissioner of array at York, and in October was again directed to help Baliol (*Fœdera*, ii. 1070, 1093). On 28 April 1340 he was appointed to treat with the Scots, and in June was one of the councillors of the young Duke of Cornwall during Edward's absence abroad (*ib.* ii. 1122, 1125). During 1341 he defeated the Scots at Farmley (*Chron. de Melsa*, iii. 49), and was employed in the abortive attempt to relieve Stirling (Bain, iii. 1378). In 1342 he was present at the siege of Nantes (Froissart, iii. 24), and in 1343 was engaged in keeping order on the Scottish marches (*Fœdera*, ii. 1225, 1230, 1239). In 1345 he took part in defeating the invasion of Cumberland by William Douglas (*Ypodigma Neustriæ*, p. 285). In July 1346 Percy was one of the guardians of the kingdom during Edward's absence; and when in October David Bruce invaded England, he commanded the first division at the battle of Neville's Cross, where his valour contributed to the English victory (Froissart, iii. 129, iv. 20, 22, ed. Luce; *Chron. Lanercost*, pp. 348–50). After the battle Percy fell ill, and so could not share in the advance into Scotland (*ib.* p. 352). On 26 Jan. 1347 he was ordered to serve under Edward Baliol for a year (Bain, iii. 1479), and during this and the following year was engaged in the Scottish marches. He was employed in the negotiations with Scotland in 1349 and 1350, and in 1351 was a commissioner of array in Northumberland. He died on 26 Feb. 1352, and was buried at Alnwick; his will, dated 13 Sept. 1349, is printed in 'Testamenta Eboracensia,' i. 57–61 (Surtees Soc.) Percy had been summoned to parliament from 1322. It was through him and his father that 'the Percies became the hereditary guardians of the north and the scourge of Scotland' (Barton, *Hist. Scotland*, iii. 4). The Lanercost chronicler (p. 350) describes him as 'bonus prœliator, parvus miles et providus.' He married Idonea (in his will she is called Imania), daughter of Robert Clifford, who died in 1365, and founded a chantry for herself and her husband at Meaux (*Chron. de Melsa*, iii. 163). By her he had six sons and four daughters.

The eldest son, Henry Percy, third Baron Percy of Alnwick (1322–1368), took part in the campaign of Crécy in 1346 and the expedition to Gascony in 1349. After his father's death he was on several occasions employed as warden of the Scottish marches, and served in Edward's French expedition in 1355 (Avesbury, p. 427). He died on 17 June 1368, having married (1) Mary (1320–1362), daughter of Henry, earl

of Lancaster [q. v.], by whom he had two sons, Henry, first earl of Northumberland, and Thomas (*d.* 1403), earl of Worcester, both of whom are separately noticed; and (2) Joan (*d.* 1369), daughter of John de Orby, by whom he had a daughter Mary (1367–1395), who married John, lord Ros of Hamlake.

The fifth son, THOMAS (1333–1369), was apparently at Rome when William Bateman [q. v.], bishop of Norwich, died in 1355, and was, at the request of Henry, duke of Lancaster, provided to that see by the pope, though only twenty-two years of age. He was consecrated at Waverley on 3 Jan. 1356. He had some dispute with the monks of his cathedral about the appropriation of certain tithes, and undertook extensive repairs in his church, to the cost of which he contributed four hundred marks. He was trier of petitions from England, Scotland, Wales, and Ireland in the parliaments of 1363, 1364–5, 1366, and 1369, in which year he died on 8 Aug. His will, dated 25 March 1368 and proved 15 Nov. 1369, is preserved at Lambeth (STUBBS, *Reg. Sacr.*; LE NEVE; WHARTON, *Anglia Sacra*, i. 415; RYMER, iii. i. 341; *Rolls of Parl.* ii. 275 et seq.; WALSINGHAM, *Hist. Angl.* i. 309; LELAND, *Collect.* i. 182).

[Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II, Chronicon de Melsa, Murimuth's and Avesbury's Chronicles (all these in Rolls Ser.); Gray's Scalachronica (Maitland Club); Lanercost Chronicle (Bannatyne Club); G. le Baker's Chron. ed. Thompson; Bain's Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland; Rymer's Fœdera (Record edit.); Palgrave's Parliamentary Writs; Rolls of Parliament; Calendars of Close Rolls, Edward II, and Patent Rolls, Edward III; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 273–6; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, ii. 241–9; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 71–96; Longman's Life and Times of Edward III.] C. L. K.

**PERCY**, SIR HENRY, called HOTSPUR (1364–1403), born on 20 May 1364, was eldest son of Henry Percy, first earl of Northumberland [q. v.], by his first wife, Margaret, daughter of Ralph, fourth baron Neville of Raby [q. v.] (G. E. C[OKAYNE], *Complete Peerage*; *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, p. 199; DUGDALE, *Baronage*, i. 276). His active life began early. Knighted by the aged Edward III at Windsor in April 1377, along with the future Richard II and Henry IV, who were almost exactly of his own age, Percy had his first taste of war in the following year, accompanying his father when he recovered Berwick Castle from the Scots after a siege of nine days (WALSINGHAM, i. 388; BELTZ, pp. 12, 314). He was soon employed in border affairs, and in 1384 associated with his father as warden of the marches, becoming in the next year governor of Berwick. The sleepless activity which he showed in repressing the restless hostility of the Scottish borderers won him among them the sobriquet of Hatspore, that is Hotspur (WALSINGHAM, ii. 144).

His military reputation was already beyond his years, and in the summer of 1386 he was sent over to Calais, where an attack was expected. But no attack came, and the fiery Hotspur, weary of inaction, made plundering raids into the enemy's country, and then, learning that the French meditated an invasion of England, returned home to repel it (*ib.*) He and his younger brother Ralph are said by Froissart to have been stationed at Yarmouth for that purpose. In the autumn he gave evidence in the famous Scrope and Grosvenor controversy. Next year the king's favourites entrusted him with a squadron to prevent French retaliation for the Earl of Arundel's recent naval exploits. The chroniclers assert that, being envious of Percy, they sent him to sea ill-found, and even sought to inform the French of his movements (*ib.* ii. 156; MONK OF EVESHAM, p. 79). But he executed his commission in safety, and in the following spring he was given the Garter vacated by the king's favourite, the Duke of Ireland, on his condemnation by the Merciless parliament.

The Scottish truce drawing to a close, Percy was once more sent into the north as warden of the marches. He seems hardly to have been fully prepared for the great Scottish invasion in the summer of 1388, but it was nevertheless the occasion of perhaps his most famous exploit—the battle of Otterburn. There are some discrepancies between the English and Scottish accounts of the battle, while the much more circumstantial narrative of Froissart, which he had, he tells us, from combatants on both sides, is, as usual, not without its difficulties. Both marches were simultaneously invaded, the Earls of Douglas, March, and Moray harrying Northumberland. After penetrating, so, at least, says Froissart (ed. Buchon, xi. 362 sqq.), to the gates of Durham, they offered battle before Newcastle, into which Percy and his brother Ralph had thrown themselves. This he did not feel himself in sufficient strength to accept, but promised to fight them within three days, and they drew off northwards along the road into Scotland through Redesdale (WALSINGHAM, ii. 176). It is rather implied that the Scots on their part had undertaken to wait for the time he mentioned. Froissart says that Douglas had

captured Percy's pennon in a skirmish before Newcastle, and declared he would plant it on the towers of Dalkeith, but would not deny its owner an opportunity of recovering it (cf. Boethius, p. 332). Be this as it may, on the still summer's evening of a Wednesday in August (the 5th according to Hardyng and Knighton; a fortnight later according to Froissart, whose date agrees better with the royal proclamation of 13 Aug.) (*Fœdera*, vii. 594), Hotspur suddenly fell upon their camp at Otterburn in Redesdale, some thirty miles north-west of Newcastle (Hardyng, p. 342; Knighton, col. 2728; *Scotichronicon*, ii. 406). The Scottish leaders were roused from their supper and did not have time to completely arm themselves, but the growing dusk and the general character of the ground served them well, and any advantage their assailants may have had in numbers (the estimates are conflicting) was neutralised by the fatigue of the long forced march from Newcastle (Wyntoun, iii. 35). They fought desperately all night by the light of the moon (Froissart; the moon was full on 20 Aug.), until Douglas fell, whether by unknown hands or, as the English doubtfully boasted, by the sword of Hotspur, and Hotspur himself was surrounded and captured with his brother Ralph.

Both sides claimed the victory, the English, however, very faintly. 'It was,' says Froissart, 'the best fought and severest of all the battles I have related in my history' [see under Douglas, James, second Earl of Douglas]. The popular imagination was kindled by its romantic features, and made it the subject of the well-known ballad which exists in both Scottish and English versions (Percy, *Reliques*, i. 21–34; Child, iii. 302, 315; Scott, *Minstrelsy of the Border*, i. 354). The even more famous ballad of 'Chevy Chase, or the Hunting of the Cheviot,' mingles it with incidents which, if they have any historical basis at all, belong to a later time. Thomas Barry [q. v.] wrote a Latin poem upon it in the sixteenth century. A cross marking the spot where Douglas is supposed to have fallen is locally known as Percy's Cross. Hotspur was captured, according to the English chroniclers, by the Earl of March and taken to his castle of Dunbar; but the Scottish accounts represent his captor as Sir John Montgomerie [q. v.], who is said to have built with his ransom the castle of Polnoon at Eaglesham in Ayrshire.

Percy was free again and in command on the borders before July 1389. In October his term of office as warden of Carlisle and the west march was prospectively prolonged for five years (*Ord. Privy Council*, i. 12 *d*). The east march was afterwards added. But the truce of 1389 made his constant presence there unnecessary. In March 1391 he went to Calais in the train of Henry of Derby to take up the challenge of three French knights who were fighting all comers at Saint Inglevert. The Frenchmen confessed them their most dangerous opponents (Saint-Denys, i. 680). From 1393 to 1395, perhaps longer, Percy was governor of Bordeaux. The citizens at first refused to admit him because he came in the name of John of Gaunt as Duke of Aquitaine. They would only be ruled, they said, by the king or his son, if one was born to him, and Hotspur had to declare that he came by the king's authority (*Annales Ricardi II*, p. 158; Delpit, *Documents Français qui se trouvent en Angleterre*, p. 210).

By the autumn of 1398 he was again acting as warden of the east march against Scotland, and with his father joined Henry of Lancaster at Doncaster immediately after his landing in the following July. The French writer Creton is the only authority for the statement that Hotspur had been accused to Richard of holding treasonable language and his father banished for disobeying a summons to court (*Archæologia*, xx. 157). Percy accompanied Henry into the west, where Richard was taken, beat off the half-hearted attacks of the Cheshiremen, and returned to London with Richard's conqueror (*Annales*, pp. 246, 250–1). Late in the year poison was thought to have been administered to him as well as to the new king (*ib.* p. 323). The subsequent boast of the Percys that they had placed Henry on the throne was not without foundation, and neither Hotspur's nor his father's services went unrewarded. One of Henry's first acts was to confirm him as warden of the east march and governor of Berwick and Roxburgh, Carlisle and the west march being given to his father.

The disaffection of Wales and Cheshire calling for a strong hand, he was appointed, before the first year of the reign was out, justiciary of Cheshire, North Wales, and Flintshire, and constable of the castles of Chester, Flint, Conway, and Carnarvon, with a grant for life of the Isle of Anglesey and the castle of Beaumaris, along with the castle and lordship of Bamborough in Northumberland. He was also sheriff of the latter county and of Flintshire. But these border commands were no beds of roses, and King Henry took little pains to humour his hot-tempered and formidable follower. Conway Castle was betrayed to the Welsh on Good Friday 1401,

and, though Hotspur recovered it after a month's siege, he could only get the half of his expenses out of the king, with a hint that if he had taken proper precautions they need not have been incurred. He complained bitterly, too, that his soldiers in the Scottish marches were left unpaid (Adam of Usk, p. 60; *Chronique de la Traïson*, p. 284; *Ord. Privy Council*, i. 146–53, ii. 57). He was evidently weary of his Welsh charge, and on his appointment on 1 Sept. as one of the commissioners to negotiate a peace with Scotland, Sir Hugh le Despenser succeeded him as justiciar (*ib.* i. 168; Wylie, i. 242). In March 1402 he was called upon to surrender Anglesey to the Prince of Wales, and to accept compensation out of the Mortimer estates (*Ord. Privy Council*, i. 177). Roxburgh Castle was at the same time transferred to Ralph Neville, earl of Westmorland, the great rival of the Percys in the north. This arrangement seems to have been part of a scheme by which Hotspur became lieutenant of North Wales, his uncle, Thomas Percy, earl of Worcester [q. v.], receiving the same position in South Wales (*ib.* i. 146, 173). But the appointment, if made, never took effect.

The state of affairs on the Scottish border imperatively demanded the presence of the warden of the east march. After a preliminary raid in June, the Scots in August repeated the great invasion of 1388. A great force under Murdoch Stewart, earl of Fife, son of the regent Albany, and Archibald, fourth earl of Douglas, harried Northumberland with fire and sword, and, according to one account, penetrated beyond the Wear (Wyntoun). Thirty French knights were with them. But the Percys had now the assistance of the cool-headed George Dunbar, earl of March, Hotspur's old antagonist at Otterburn. They occupied a position at Millfield on the Till, some six miles north of Wooler, completely commanding the line of retreat of the main body of the Scots. The latter coming up on 14 Sept., and finding their progress barred, halted irresolutely on the slope of Humbledon Hill (called by the chroniclers Homildoun Hill), within bowshot of the English. March restrained Hotspur's eagerness to charge, and the English archers riddled the exposed ranks of the Scots. Within an hour the battle was won, the English men-at-arms having never come into action. Five earls, including Douglas and Fife, and many scores of gentlemen of name laid down their arms; five hundred of the fugitives were drowned in the Tweed, thirteen miles from the field (Walsingham, ii. 251; Monk of Evesham, p. 180; Hardyng [a page of Hotspur, who was present], p. 359; Wylie, i. 291).

This brilliant success of the Percys stood in sharp contrast to the miserable failure of the king's own expedition into Wales, and their relations, which for some time had not been very cordial, soon became strained almost to breaking-point. Henry was threatened by a combination of Scots, Welsh, and French, and his position was critical. Yet he gave mortal offence to Hotspur by forbidding the ransom of his brother-in-law, Sir Edmund Mortimer [q. v.], who had been captured by Glendower, and by taking into his own hands the prisoners made at Humbledon. Hotspur refused to send up Douglas to London with the other prisoners, and, in a stormy interview with the king during the October parliament, demanded permission to ransom Mortimer. Henry refused, and high words were exchanged, the king calling him a traitor, and even drawing his dagger upon him. Whereupon Hotspur withdrew, crying, 'Not here, but in the field' (*Cont. Eulog. Hist.* iii. 295). Wavrin's version is that the king had given him 'ung grant soufflet.' Meanwhile, Hotspur's father had been pressing for payment of the arrears of his own and his son's salaries as wardens of the marches, while Henry, on being asked what had become of Richard's treasure, threw the responsibility upon the earl. But an outward reconciliation was effected, Henry appointing commissioners to report on all claims in reference to the Scottish prisoners, and endeavouring to conciliate the earl, and perhaps dissociate him from his son, by a grant (March 1403) of Scotland south of the Tweed, including the county of Douglas.

Hotspur in May besieged the border peels of Cocklaw, near Yetholm, and Ormiston, near Hawick, but, meeting with considerable resistance, departed with the undertaking to surrender if not relieved by 1 Aug., and recrossed the border. The arrangement was communicated to the king, who was on his way northward in the middle of July to assist the Percys on the borders, when he suddenly learnt that Hotspur was on the Welsh border and had thrown off his authority (*Ord. Privy Council*, i. 207; *Fœdera*, viii. 313). He was aware that the Percys were still disaffected, but does not seem to have been prepared for their revolt. They had written to many nobles protesting their loyalty, but criticising Henry's government, more especially his financial administration, and expressing their determination to get those who poisoned his mind against them replaced by better counsellors. A large

number of those addressed are said to have sent assurances of support (HARDYNG, p. 361). The king heard of these letters, and, seeking to remove the impression they had made, denied that he had left the Percys to bear the whole burden of the border warfare, but promised them vaguely further sums (for the state of the account between the Percys and the crown see RAMSAY, i. 57). A demand from the earl for an immediate advance as late as 26 June possibly hastened Henry's departure for the north (*Ord. Privy Council*, i. 204-7).

But this more or less open disaffection concealed a conspiracy against his throne. Secretly encouraged by Archbishop Scrope, the Duke of York, and others, the Percies had come to an understanding with Glendower and Sir Edmund Mortimer, who since the previous November had definitely gone over to Owen and married his daughter. Henry was to be deposed in favour of the young Earl of March, the nephew of Hotspur's wife, and Wales was to be left independent under Owen. Shortly after his father's last letter to the king, Hotspur threw off the mask, and hastened, with 160 horse, through Lancashire to Chester, where he arrived on Monday, 9 July, and took up his residence in the house of one Petronilla Clark (WYLIE, i. 357). He was accompanied by the Earl of Douglas and other Scottish prisoners, whom he had set free. A proclamation that King Richard was with them, and could be seen either in Chester Castle or at Sandiway, between Chester and Northwich, on 17 July, caused the Cheshire adherents of the late king to flock to his standard. Among them were Richard Venables, baron of Kinderton; Richard Vernon, baron of Shipbrook, and a number of the Cheshire clergy. Many mounted Richard's badge of the white hart. But when Hotspur had been joined by his uncle Thomas Percy, earl of Worcester, and was moving southwards with a view to a junction on the Severn with Glendower, the pretence that Richard still lived was dropped, Edmund of March was declared the rightful king, and letters of defiance were sent forth, in which, as 'Protectors of the Commonwealth,' they accused 'Henry of Lancaster' of breaking an oath made to them at Doncaster in 1399 that he came not to claim the kingdom but only his inheritance, of starving King Richard to death, and of tyrannical government (HARDYNG, p. 352). The statement of more than one chronicler that they advanced as far eastwards as Lichfield seems most improbable, if only from the fact that the king was there from 17 July (*Cont. Eulog. Hist.* iii. 396; *Fœdera*, viii. 313).

Early in the morning of Saturday, 21 July, they appeared, by the Oswestry road, at the Castle Foregate of Shrewsbury. But to their astonishment the banner of Henry was displayed from the walls. Henry had learnt of their treason by 16 July, and had been collecting troops; on the advice of the Scottish Earl of March he had made a forced march of forty-five miles to Shrewsbury on the Friday, though his musters were not yet complete, in order to cut off the Percies from Glendower, who was in south Wales. Drawing back along the Whitchurch road for some three and a half miles, Hotspur took up an advantageous position on the slope of the Hayteley field, a little to the left of the road in the parish of Albright Hussey (RAMSAY, i. 60, with map; cf. WYLIE, i. 360). His front was protected by a tangled crop of peas and, according to Sir James Ramsay, three small ponds; but it has been questioned whether these were permanent features of the site. The king, following, drew up his forces at the foot of the slope. Hotspur called for his favourite sword, and on being told that it had been left behind at the village of Berwick, where he had spent the previous night without hearing its name, he turned pale and said, 'Then has my plough reached its last furrow!' He had been warned by a soothsayer that he should die at Berwick, but had never doubted that Berwick-on-Tweed was meant. The omen possibly made him listen more readily to the offer to treat which Henry sent by the abbot of Shrewsbury; and his uncle went down to the royal camp. But nothing came of the negotiations; and shortly after midday the king set forward his banners. 'St. George!' was the cry on one side, 'Espérance Percy!' on the other. The deadly fire of the Cheshire archers broke part of the royal line, but the Prince of Wales carried the slope, and the battle soon resolved itself into a desperate hand-to-hand fight. Hotspur and Douglas, with a chosen band of thirty, cut their way to the royal standard, beat it down, and, as they supposed, slew the king. But the prudent March had removed him to a place of greater safety; and it was only one clad in his armour that had fallen. At last Percy, pressing on ahead of his men, was brought down by an unknown hand. His followers, doubtful whether he had taken the king or had himself perished, falteringly raised the cry 'Henry Percy King.' But the king lifted his voice and shouted to them, 'Henry Percy is dead' (*Annales Henrici IV*, p. 368). After the 'sory bataill,' the forerunner of sorrows for England, was finished, his body, over which the king is said to have shed

tears, was delivered to his kinsman, Thomas Neville, lord Furnival, who buried it in his family chapel at Whitchurch, sixteen miles north of the battlefield. But a day or two later, in order to prevent any rumours that he was still alive, the body was brought back to Shrewsbury, rubbed in salt, and placed erect between two millstones by the side of the pillory in the open street (Wylie, i. 364; cf. *Chronique de la Traïson*, p. 285). After a few days' exposure the head was cut off, and sent to be fixed on one of the gates of York; the quarters were hung above the gates of London, Bristol, Newcastle, and Chester.

His wife Elizabeth Mortimer, daughter of Edmund Mortimer, fourth earl of March, and Philippa, granddaughter of Edward III, was born at Usk on 12 Feb. 1371. She was put under arrest after Hotspur's death (*Fœdera*, viii. 334), but subsequently married Thomas de Camoys, lord Camoys, and was alive in 1417. She may be 'the Isabel Camoyse, wife of Thomas Camoyse, knt.,' who died in 1444, and was buried in Friars Minors. By her Hotspur had one son, Henry (1394–1455) [q. v.], to whom the earldom of Northumberland, forfeited by his grandfather, was restored by Henry V in 1414; and a daughter Elizabeth, married, first, to John, lord Clifford (*d.* 1422), and, secondly, to Ralph Neville, second earl of Westmorland.

Hotspur is the last and not the least in the long roll of chivalrous figures whose prowess fills the pages of Froissart. He had the virtues and the defects of his class and time. A doughty fighter rather than a skilful soldier, he was instinct with stormy energy, passionate and 'intolerant of the shadow of a slight.'

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Proceedings and Ordinances of the Privy Council, ed. Nicolas; Rymer's Fœdera, original ed.; Annales Ricardi II. and Henrici IV (with Trokelowe), Continuatio Eulogii Historiarum, Walsingham's Historia Anglicana, and Wavrin (Waurin), all in Rolls Ser.; Hardyng's Chronicle, ed. Ellis; Monk of Evesham's Chronicle, ed. Thomas Hearne (1729); Adam of Usk, ed. Maunde Thompson; Knighton in Twysden's Decem Scriptores; Chronique de la Traïson de Richart Deux, ed. for English Hist. Soc.; Creton in Archæologia, vol. xx.; Wyntoun's Chronicle and Liber Pluscardensis in the Scottish Historians; Boethius's (Boece) Historia Scotorum, Paris, 1575; Wallon's Richard II; Ramsay's Lancaster and York; Wylie's History of Henry IV; Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry; Child's English and Scottish Ballads; Hodgson's History of Northumberland; R. White's History of the Battle of Otterburn; Dimock-Fletcher's Battlefield Church, Shrewsbury, 1889; G. E. C[okayne]'s Complete Peerage.] J. T-t.

PERCY, HENRY, first Earl of Northumberland (1342–1408), son of Henry, third baron Percy of Alnwick [see under Percy, Henry, second Baron], by his first wife, Mary, daughter of Henry, earl of Lancaster (1381?–1345) [q. v.], was born in 1342. In 1359 he married Margaret, daughter of Ralph Neville, fourth Baron Neville of Raby [q. v.], and widow of William, lord Ros of Hamlake, or Helmsley; in that year and the next he was a leader of troops in the French war, and was knighted before October 1360, in which month he appears as one of the guarantors of the treaty of Bretigny at Calais (*Fœdera*, iii. 518, 531). He was appointed to treat with David Bruce in 1362, being then a warden of the marches towards Scotland (*ib.* pp. 645, 659). In 1366 he was made a knight of the Garter (Beltz), and the next year was a warden of the east marches towards Scotland. On the death of his father in 1368 he succeeded to his barony, and did homage for his lands, was appointed a warden of the east marches towards Scotland, and constable of Jedburgh Castle (Doyle). When the war with France broke out again in 1369 he was ordered to go with others to secure Ponthieu, but the French took possession of the province before the expedition sailed (Froissart, i. ii. c. 262). He crossed with the Duke of Lancaster to Calais in August, and took part in his campaign in France. In 1370 he was appointed a warden of the west, as well as the east, marches towards Scotland (*Fœdera*, iii. 896). He joined the abortive expedition undertaken by Edward III in 1372 in the hope of relieving Thouars. Disputes having arisen between him and William, first earl of Douglas (1327?–1384) [q. v.], in 1373, with reference to Jedburgh Forest, the king appointed commissioners to settle their quarrel (*ib.* pp. 971, 1011). In that year he bought the constableship of Mitford Castle, Northumberland, of the crown, and the wardship of the lands of the heirs of the Earl of Atholl in that county, and in the summer took part in the expedition of Lancaster against France. On the meeting of the 'Good parliament' in April 1376, the commons having requested to be assisted in their deliberations by the lords, Percy was one of the magnates chosen to advise with them; they upheld the commons in their resolve to make supply dependent on redress of grievances. He was held to be specially zealous in his desire for the public good, and brought before parliament an accusation against Lord Latimer [see Latimer,

William, fourth Baron], the king's chamberlain, whom he charged with suppressing a letter sent to the king from Rochelle, and with imprisoning the bearer. At first Latimer tried to avoid producing the prisoner, and the Londoners were highly indignant at seeing Percy confounded through his having taken up the cause of a man whom he could not find (*Chronicon Angliæ*, pp. 81, 82). When the parliament was dissolved, Percy was won over by Lancaster to the court party by the promise of the marshal's office. He was believed to have dissuaded the duke from taking the life of Sir Peter de la Mare [q. v.], the late speaker, but his defection from the popular cause was bitterly resented, and made him as much disliked as he had before been loved (*ib.* pp. 105, 108). He entered on the marshal's office on or about 1 Dec., though his formal appointment is dated later.

In common with Lancaster he took up the cause of Wiclif, and when on 19 Feb. 1377 Wiclif was summoned before the bishops at St. Paul's, Percy walked before him as marshal, and used violence to the people in order to clear the way through the crowd in the church. The bishop of London [see Courtenay, William] declared that he would have no such doings in the church, and an altercation ensued. When the lady-chapel was reached, Percy demanded that Wiclif should be allowed to sit before his judges, saying that the more the charges were that he had to answer, the more need he had of a comfortable seat. On this he and the bishops came to high words. On that day he and Lancaster had advised the king to supersede the mayor by appointing a captain over the city, and to authorise the marshal to execute his office within the city; and this, together with their insults to the bishop, greatly excited the citizens against them. The next day Lord Fitzwalter appeared before the common council, and declared that a prisoner was detained in the marshal's house contrary to law, and warned the citizens that if they let such things pass they would live to repent it. The citizens took arms, broke into the marshalsea, brought the prisoner out, burnt the stocks in which he had been set, and searched every room to find the marshal. Not finding him, they rushed to the duke's palace, the Savoy, thinking to find him there. Percy and the duke were dining together at the house of a certain William Ypres. They were warned of their danger by one of the duke's knights, and escaped by water to Kennington, to the house of the Princess of Wales, who gave them shelter. When a day or two later Percy returned to parliament, he went to Westminster attended by an armed retinue (*ib.* pp. 117–30). On 8 May he received his formal appointment as marshal of England, and was further made captain in the marches of Calais (*Fœdera*, iii. 1078). Shortly before the king's death Sir John Menstreworth, lying in the marshal's prison under sentence of death, entrusted him with a letter to the king, and it was believed that Percy suppressed it.

On 15 July the young king, Richard II, the influence of Lancaster being in the ascendant, created Percy Earl of Northumberland, and he thus became earl-marshal. Nevertheless Margaret, elder daughter of Thomas of Brotherton (1300–1338) [q. v.], second son of Edward I, who had been earl of Norfolk and earl-marshal, asserted her right to the office, and claimed to execute it by deputy at the coronation. It was, however, declared that the office was in the king's gift, and, forasmuch as there was no time to hear and finally decide the case, that Percy should hold the office temporarily, saving the rights of all concerned (*Liber Custumarum*, p. 548). The new earl therefore acted as marshal at the coronation on the 16th, and on that and the preceding day showed so much courtesy and forbearance to the crowd that he regained no small part of his former popularity. He then resigned the marshal's staff, alleging the pressure of his private affairs, and being, it was thought, unwilling to contest the office with the Countess Margaret (*Chron. Angliæ*, p. 165). His presence was needed in the north, for the Scots, under the Earl of Dunbar, pillaged and burnt Roxburgh. Northumberland retaliated by entering Scotland with a large force and wasting the lands of Dunbar, burning everything that he came across in three days' march. On 12 Dec. he was again appointed a warden of the east and west marches, and on 22 Oct. 1378 a joint commissioner to treat with Scotland. Hearing towards the end of November that the Scots had surprised Berwick, he, in company with his eldest son, Sir Henry, called Hotspur [q. v.], attacked the place, and retook it after a fierce struggle. In 1380 he had a dispute with the men of Newcastle and Hull about a Scots ship which they had taken, and which he claimed as a prize, either wholly or in part, on behalf of the crown. The ship was finally taken possession of by a Hull man, and the earl's claim failed (*ib.* p. 267). A serious inroad of the Scots was made across the border in the summer; they wasted parts of Cumberland and Westmorland, pillaged Penrith, threatened Carlisle, and carried off great booty, doing the earl damage to the amount of more than one thousand marks. He was preparing to take

vengeance on them when he was forbidden to proceed by the king. He at once went to the council at London, was received with flattering words, and was bidden to wait and bring his complaint before the next marchers' court (*ib.* p. 270). In June 1381 he was appointed captain against the rebels in Yorkshire (Doyle). On the outbreak of the villeins' insurrection the Duke of Lancaster made a truce with the Scots. This seems to have offended the earl, who probably thus lost the power of forcing them to make him amends; he thwarted the duke, and did him a serious disservice [see under John of Gaunt]. A violent quarrel ensued; it seems probable that the earl, seeing that the duke was unpopular and that his power in England was lessened, was not unwilling to break with him. Lancaster laid his complaints against him before the king, and the earl was summoned to appear before the council at Berkhampstead, which was attended by nearly all the earls in the kingdom. Lancaster kept his temper, and stated his charges quietly; but the earl behaved with the vehemence characteristic of his race ('more gentis suæ'), answered him with abuse, and refused to be silent when the king bade him. His disobedience was punished by arrest, as though he had been guilty of treason; but he was bailed by the Earls of Warwick and Suffolk. He attended parliament in November, accompanied by armed followers, and was received with favour by the Londoners, with whom he was again popular. The duke was also attended by an armed force, and the peace of the kingdom was endangered. Vain efforts were made in parliament for some time to compose their quarrel, and at last the king interfered and compelled them to be reconciled (*Chron. Angliæ*, pp. 327–30).

Writs were again issued appointing the earl a warden of the marches towards Scotland, and in November 1383 he was made admiral of the north, and held that office for fourteen months (Doyle). In that year he made a raid into Scotland in company with the Earl of Nottingham, and wasted the country as far as Edinburgh. The Scots revenged themselves later by ravaging his lands. In December 1384, while he was attending parliament, the Scots, through the treachery of his lieutenant, obtained possession of Berwick Castle, which was in the earl's custody. Lancaster is said to have gladly seized this opportunity of spiting his enemy, and to have procured that the lords should pronounce sentence of forfeiture against him for having thus lost one of the royal castles; but the king remitted him all penalty. He gathered an army and besieged the castle. The garrison soon surrendered on condition of receiving two thousand marks of English gold, and being allowed to march off with their goods. Again, in 1385, the Scots and their French allies invaded England, destroyed the villages round Alnwick, and did much mischief in Northumberland, but retreated on hearing that the earl and other English lords were marching to meet them (Froissart, ii. c. 235). The earl took part in the king's invasion of Scotland which followed. In 1387 the king, who was set upon overthrowing the party of reform then in power, sent Northumberland to arrest one of its leaders, the Earl of Arundel, at Reigate Castle. Northumberland, however, found the earl at the head of a strong force, and did not therefore carry out his commission. He was probably not anxious to do so, for when in November the king contemplated resisting Gloucester and the other lords by war, Northumberland told him plainly that they were loyal, and were acting for his good, but were aggrieved by his evil advisers, and urged him to behave wisely and to invite them to state their grievances (Knighton, col. 2698).

In March 1388 he was appointed to treat with the Scots. In the summer the Scots made a great raid across the border under the Earls of Douglas, Dunbar, and Moray, and ravaged the land to the gates of Durham, intending to return by way of Newcastle. The earl sent his sons, Sir Henry and Sir Ralph, to Newcastle, while he himself remained at Alnwick, thinking that he might thus take them on both sides. His sons met the Scots in battle at Otterburn, near Woolley [see under Percy, Sir Henry, 1364–1403]. In 1389 he was appointed captain of Calais, and in 1390 was a commissioner to treat with Flanders (Doyle). He was recalled from Calais in February 1391, and was again appointed to guard the east Scottish march (Walsingham, ii. 203). The Scots made a raid across the east march in 1393, carried off much booty, and slew some men of note. The earl was much blamed for not keeping stricter ward, for he received seven thousand marks a year from the treasury for his expenses (*Annales Ricardi II*, p. 164). He was present at the interview between the kings of England and France at Guisnes in October 1396, and was one of the four great English lords that acted as the French king's escort. When Richard took vengeance on his enemies and assumed despotic power in 1397, he reckoned on the earl's support. In February 1398 he was appointed by the parliament of Shrewsbury as one of the committee empowered to execute the functions of parliament. He soon became indignant

at Richard's violent proceedings, and both he and his son Henry spoke strongly of the king's misgovernment. Their words were reported to Richard when he was about to set sail for Ireland. The king was wroth, and sent a special summons to the earl to come to him, besides the summons that he had already received to attend him to Ireland. The earl did not obey, and the king sentenced him and his son to banishment. He made arrangements to take refuge in Scotland, but the king's departure caused him to delay (Froissart, iv. c. 70; *Traïson*, p. 34), and on the landing of Henry of Lancaster [see Henry IV] in July 1399 he joined him in Yorkshire with a large force. Richard sent the Duke of Exeter from Conway to Henry, who was then at Chester, requesting him to send the earl to him with a message (*Annales Ricardi*, p. 249). On his way the earl, it is said, left his armed retinue in ambush, and proceeded to Conway with only a few attendants. There he had a conference with Richard, persuaded him to ride with him to meet Henry, and it was asserted received from him a declaration that he was ready to renounce the crown (*ib.*; *Traïson*, pp. 50–2). He brought Richard as a captive to Henry at Flint on 19 Aug., and rode with Henry and the fallen king to London. On 29 Sept. he recited before Henry and a great council of the magnates of the kingdom the promise of abdication which he asserted that he had received from Richard, and Henry was the next day accepted as king by parliament. On the same day the new king made the earl constable of England, and shortly afterwards gave him the Isle of Man to hold by carrying at the coronation the sword that Henry wore on landing. Northumberland also received certain lands and constableships in Wales and the border, before held by Roger, earl of March, the captaincy of Carlisle, and the wardenship of the west march, with an income of 1,500*l.* to maintain it in time of peace (Wylie, *Henry IV*, i. 25–6; Doyle; Dugdale, *Baronage*, i. 278; *Annales Henrici IV*, p. 311).

To Northumberland Henry largely owed the success of his attempt on the crown. For a time the earl was one of the new king's chief supporters, and seems to have been regarded with affection by him. Northumberland was continued in his membership of his privy council, and was, in common with the king, blamed for the leniency shown to the evil counsellors of Richard. He was soon busy with the affairs of the Scottish march, for in August 1400 the king invaded Scotland. On Henry's return the Scots attempted to retaliate, and in December the earl urged the necessity of strengthening Berwick and Carlisle. In February 1401 he was appointed a joint commissioner to treat with the envoys of the king of the Romans, then in London, concerning a proposed marriage between Henry's daughter Blanche and their master's eldest son (*Fœdera*, viii. 176). In March, April, and May he was engaged in negotiations for peace with Scotland (Wylie, i. 191–2), and in October met the Earl of Douglas [see Douglas, Archibald, fourth Earl] at a conference at Yetham, in Roxburghshire (*Royal Letters*, Hen. IV, i. 53). Nothing was effected, and war began again on the border. Douglas in 1402 sent to Henry declaring that the renewal of the war was due to Northumberland; but this Henry, after consulting with the earl, refused to admit; and he gave the earl authority, together with his son and the Earl of Westmorland, to treat with Scotland at a fitting time, and meanwhile to endeavour to win over to the English side any of the Scottish nobles that were inclined to it (*ib.* p. 64; *Fœdera*, viii. 251; Wylie, i. 237). In August a large army of Scots, under Douglas and Murdoch Stewart, ravaged Northumberland and Durham, and on their way home were intercepted by an English army under the earl, his son Henry, and the Earl of March on 14 Sept. The Scots took their station on Homildoun, or Humbledon, Hill, near Wooler, the English being drawn up at Millfield-on-the-Till. The English won a complete victory, utterly routing the enemy, and taking a large number of prisoners of high rank, among whom were Douglas and Murdoch Stewart, the Earls of Angus, Moray, and Orkney, and many barons (*Annales Henr.* p. 344; *Scotichronicon*, ii. 433; Wyntoun, ii. 401; Wylie, i. 292; *Lancaster and York*, i. 47–8). On the 22nd Henry issued an order that the prisoners were not to be ransomed or set free, promising, however, to respect the rights of the captors (*Fœdera*, viii. 278). The earl attended the parliament opened on the 30th; the commons, on 16 Oct., requested the king to show him special favour in consideration of his late victory, and on the 20th he presented some of his principal prisoners to the king in parliament (*Rolls of Parliament*, iii. 485 sq.) When, however, the commons, discontented at the demand for grants, asked what had become of the last king's treasure, Henry replied that the earl and others had had it. The commons asked that an official inquiry should be made into the matter, but the king refused (*Eulogium*, iii. 395). On 2 March 1403 the earl received from the king a grant of all the lands of the Earl of Douglas, which may roughly be described as the

country south of the Tweed, with Galloway. This vast territory, though declared to be annexed to England, was not in Henry's power, and he granted it to the earl that he might conquer it. An attempt to take possession of it was checked by the resistance of two fortresses, and the earl agreed that the sieges should be suspended until 1 Aug., on which date the garrisons, if not relieved, were to surrender. In May he pressed the king for supplies; the Scots were preparing to relieve the fortresses; he must have the money that the king owed to him and his son. Again, on 26 June, he wrote urgently, representing the disgrace that would befall the kingdom if he were not enabled to take the places, and declaring that, though it was reported that he and his son had had 60,000*l.* of the king since his accession, more than 20,000*l.* of that amount was then due to him. He signed this letter 'Your Mathathias,' thus comparing himself and his sons to the patriotic heroes of the Maccabæan house (*Proceedings of the Privy Council*, i. 203–4). It has been calculated that the Percys, the earl, his brother Thomas, Earl of Worcester, and his son Henry, called Hotspur, had received from the king, in money, 41,750*l.*, besides the profits of their lands, and anything that they may have had from Richard's treasure (*Lancaster and York*, i. 57). On the other hand, there seems no reason to doubt that this sum was exhausted in the continual wars that they waged against the national enemies. Early in July the king marched northwards with a force to support them.

The Percys rose in revolt. Henry Percy had special grievances against the king, in which his father had some share. Northumberland was thwarted by the king's inability to supply him with the money that he needed for the war with the Scots, he had been treated somewhat shabbily with respect to the Scottish prisoners, he had good reason to suspect the king of endeavouring to represent him and his family as the cause of the poverty of the realm, and he was probably also jealous of the Earl of Westmorland, the earl's nephew by his first wife and the head of the rival house of the Nevilles of Raby. He made an alliance with Owen Glendower [q.v.], raised a large force, and joined his brother and son in putting out a manifesto declaring that the king had obtained the throne by fraud, demanding that the public ills should be redressed by the employment of wise counsellors, and complaining that the money raised by taxes was not used for the good of the kingdom, and was spent uselessly (*Annales Henr.* p. 361; Hardyng, p. 352). Henry Percy was defeated and slain at the battle of Shrewsbury on the 21st, and his uncle, the Earl of Worcester, was beheaded. The earl, who was marching to join his son a few days after this battle, found his way barred by the Earl of Westmorland, and retreated to Newcastle, where the burgesses at first shut the gates against him, and later would only allow him to enter with his personal attendants, refusing to admit his army. From Newcastle he retired to his castle of Warkworth, where he received a summons from the king to meet him at York, with a promise that he should not be harmed before he had made his defence in parliament. He appeared before the king on 11 Aug., was received coldly, and excused himself by declaring that in the late rising and much else his son had acted without his approval (*Eulogium*, iii. 398). The king took him with him to Pontefract, where he agreed to give up his castles to be commanded by officers appointed by the king; he was deprived of the office of constable, and was sent to Baginton, near Coventry, where he was kept in custody until February 1404, when he was brought before parliament. The lords held that his acts did not amount to treason, but only to a trespass, which might be punished by a fine. At his own request he took an oath of fealty to the king in parliament on the cross of St. Thomas, and the king pardoned him the fine. On the 9th the commons thanked the king for showing him mercy, and he and Westmorland were publicly reconciled (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 524). He was restored to his dignities, though not to the constableship, and to his possessions, with the exception of grants made by the king, as the lordship of the Isle of Man (*Annales Henr.* p. 379). The captains of several of his castles refused to admit the king's officers, and in May Henry went northwards to enforce their submission. After repeated summonses the earl appeared before him at Pontefract about midsummer, bringing with him his three grandsons in order to remove all suspicion; he agreed to give up the castles of Berwick and Jedburgh, an equivalent being promised to him, and departed in peace (*ib.* p. 390; Wylie, i. 450, 452). This arrangement was afterwards cancelled by the king, and the earl retained the castles (*ib.* ii. 56–7).

In profession he was at this time loyal, though he was really discontented and ready for mischief, his uncertain attitude adding in no small degree to the political difficulties of the kingdom. When summoned to the council in January 1405, he wrote a letter to the king excusing himself on the score of

age and health, and signing it 'your humble Matathyas.' On 28 Feb. he made an agreement with Owen Glendower and Sir Edmund Mortimer partitioning England and Wales between them, in the belief that an old prophecy concerning the division of Britain was to be fulfilled; his own share was twelve northern and eastern counties (*Chronicon*, ed. Giles, pp. 39–42). In March he attended the privy council at Westminster. Before the end of April his treaty with Owen Glendower seems to have been known, and the king declared him a traitor. A message from the king was sent to him early in May. and he put the messenger into prison (Wylie, ii. 178). About the same time, finding that his rival Westmorland, whom he was in the habit of accusing of spite and ingratitude, was staying at a castle which Mr. Wylie identifies with that of Wilton-le-Wear, belonging to Sir Ralph Eure [see Neville, Ralph, sixth Baron Neville of Raby and first Earl of Westmorland] (*ib.*), he marched by night with four hundred armed men in the hope of surprising him; but Westmorland was forewarned, and left before he arrived. Northumberland was busy fortifying and victualling his castles when he received a visit from Lord Bardolf, with whom he was already in treasonable communication, joined himself with him and Sir William Clifford, and before the end of the month was in open revolt. The insurrection was crushed while he was bringing his forces to aid the rebels, and he, with Bardolf and a small following, fled to Berwick, where the castle was held by his men. The mayor at first refused to admit him into the town, but did so on the earl's assurance that he was loyal to the king, and was merely at feud with his neighbours. The king advanced northwards, taking some of his castles. At his coming, the earl and Bardolf fled to Scotland, where they were received by Sir David Fleming, and were lodged first at St. Andrews and then at Perth. The earl's possessions were confiscated and his castles taken or surrendered. Early in 1406 the Scots offered to deliver him up to the king; but Fleming informed him of their intention, and he and Bardolf escaped to Wales, where they were received by Owen Glendower (to this date has been referred the partition treaty between the earl, Owen, and Mortimer, *ib.* pp. 375–81; but the only authority that records it dates it, as above, 28 Feb. 1405, and expressly states that it was divulged before the earl's flight to Scotland). Later in the year they went to France, the earl, before entering Scotland, having attempted to open negotiations with the Duke of Orleans; they appeared before the king and his council, and asked for help against King Henry, declaring that they were supporters of the young Earl of March. They were refused, and seem to have gone thence to Holland, and in the summer of 1407 again took refuge in Scotland (Juvenal des Ursins, an. 1406; *Chronique de St. Denys*, iii. 427; Monstrelet, i. c. 27; Hardyng, p. 364; *Lancaster and York*, i. 112). Believing that King Henry was so generally hated, and that popular feeling would be so strong in their favour that adherents would quickly join them, they crossed the border in February 1408, and advanced to Thirsk, where they put out a proclamation that they had come to relieve the people from unjust taxation. Thence they marched to Grimbald Bridge, near Knaresborough, where they found Sir Thomas Rokeby, the sheriff of Yorkshire, at the head of the forces of the shire, holding the passage of the Nidd; they turned aside to Wetherby, and on the 19th were at Tadcaster. They gave Rokeby battle on Monday the 20th on Bramham Moor, in the neighbourhood of Tadcaster; their troops were defeated and the earl was slain in the battle. His head was cut off and stuck upon a stake on London Bridge, where its venerable grey hair excited no small sorrow among the people (Otterbourne, pp. 262–3; Walsingham, ii. 278); his body was quartered, parts being sent for exposure to London, Lincoln, Berwick, and Newcastle; but they were afterwards delivered to his friends for burial (Dugdale).

Northumberland was magnificent in his daily life, gracious in manner, and given to courting popularity. Over a large part of northern England, where the feudal tie was stronger than in the south, he had almost kingly power; he kept great state, and was faithfully served by his knights and retainers. Prompt and fearless in war, he was the hero and champion of the English of the northern marches in their almost ceaseless strife with the Scots (see the ballad of 'Chevy Chase'). He probably desired good and vigorous government, and was not wholly insincere in his profession of anxiety for the public welfare. At the same time his actions were really the results of selfish motives, of ambition, jealousy of the rival house of Neville, anger, pride, or mortification. Though he was exceedingly crafty, his temper was violent, and his policy devoid of wisdom. Proud, passionate, unstable, and faithless, he was never to be relied on except when his own interests were to be served or his feelings gratified by his adherence to the cause he had adopted. His desertion of the popu-

lar cause in 1377 was shameful. For his desertion of Richard II there were valid reasons; but his conduct towards his fallen master was base, and merely dictated by his wish to place the new king under overwhelming obligations, and reap a rich harvest from his gratitude. That he had cause for discontent in 1403 seems certain. But he failed to make allowance for the king's financial difficulties; he was impatient, and perhaps incapable of appreciating the position of affairs. When he was bereft of his sons and others, as his brother Thomas Percy, earl of Worcester [q. v.], that were near to him, when he found that the king had learnt to distrust him, saw his rivals advancing in favour and power, and knew that his greatness was slipping from him, his heart became bitter; and, though he retained his capacity for guile, he lost his judgment, and acted with a lack of wisdom and a recklessness that reached their highest point in his last mad expedition. He gave the hospital of St. Leonard at Alnwick to the abbey there, is said incorrectly, as it seems, to have founded a hospital at Scarborough, to which he was perhaps a benefactor, did good service to St. Alban's Abbey, and gave largely to its cell, the priory of Tynemouth (*Notitia Monastica*, pp. 398, 416, 687; Trokelowe, App. p. 436). By his first wife, Margaret, daughter of Ralph, fourth baron Neville of Raby [q. v.], he had three sons—Sir Henry, called Hotspur [q. v.]; Sir Thomas, married Elizabeth, elder daughter and coheiress of David, earl of Atholl, and died in Spain before 1402, leaving a son Henry; and Sir Ralph, who was taken prisoner at Otterburn in 1388, acted efficiently as warden of west march in 1393, and probably died soon afterwards—and a daughter. In 1384 he married his second wife, Maud, daughter of Thomas de Lucy of Cockermouth, and eventually sole heir of her brother Anthony, last baron Lucy, and widow of Gilbert de Umfraville, earl of Angus, by whom he had no issue, and who died on 24 Dec. 1398. A portrait of the earl is to be found in Harleian MS. 1318, and is given in Doyle's 'Official Baronage.'

[Chron. Angliæ, 1328–88, Liber Custumarum ap. Mun. Gildhallæ Lond., Walsingham's Hist. Angl., Ann. Ric. II et Henr. IV ap. J. de Trokelowe, &c., Royal Letters, Henr. IV, Eulogium Hist. (all Rolls Ser.); Rymer's Fœdera (Record edit. and ed. 1704–35); Rot. Parl., Proc. of Privy Council, ed. Hunter, Rot. Scotiæ (all Record publ.); Traïson et Mort de Ric. II (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Knighton's Chron. ed. Twysden (Decem Scriptt.); Adam of Usk's Chron. ed. Thompson; Otterbourne's Chron. ed. Hearne; Hardyng's Chron. ed Ellis; Stowe's Annales; Chron. anon. ed. Giles; Bower's Scotichron. ed. Goodall; Wyntoun's Chron. ed. 1795; Froissart's Chron. ed. Buchon; J. des Ursins ap. Mémoires, Michaud; Chron. du religieux de St. Denys, ed. Bellaquet; Monstrelet's Chron. ed. Johnes; Wylie's Hist. of England under Henr. IV; Ramsay's Lanc. and York; Stubbs's Const. Hist.; Burton's Hist. of Scotland; Dugdale's Baronage; Doyle's Off. Baronage; Beltz's Hist. of Garter; Tanner's Notitia Monast., ed. 1744; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy.] W. H.

PERCY, HENRY, second Earl of Northumberland (1394–1455), son and heir of Sir Henry Percy [q. v.], called Hotspur, was born on 3 Feb. 1394. His father fell at Shrewsbury on 21 July 1403, and Henry was presented to Henry IV by his grandfather, Henry de Percy, first earl of Northumberland [q. v.], at York in the following August. When the earl fled to Scotland in 1405, young Percy also took shelter there, arriving shortly before his grandfather (*Scotichronicon*, p. 1166), and after the earl's death was detained by the Scots as though a prisoner of war, but was treated with honour by them (*ib.* p. 1184). Henry V pitying him, and being solicited on his behalf by Joan, countess of Westmorland, the king's aunt, whose daughter Eleanor Percy married at Berwick in that year, restored him in blood, and on 11 Nov. 1414 assented to a petition from him, presented in parliament, for the restoration of his dignities and estates (*Rolls of Parliament*, iv. 36–7; Walsingham, ii. 300; Collins, *Peerage*, iii. 273; this marriage is celebrated in Bishop Percy's ballad 'The Hermit of Warkworth'). The king desired that he should be exchanged for Murdoch Stewart, eldest son of the Duke of Albany. Some delay took place, and the Earl of Cambridge, who made a conspiracy against the king, plotted to bring Percy into England with an army of Scots (*Fœdera*, ix. 260). It is evident that Percy had nothing to do with this scheme, and his exchange, which was arranged for on 1 July 1415, took place soon after (*Proceedings of the Privy Council*, ii. 162–4, 188–90). His hereditary possessions were restored, and on 16 March 1416 he did homage in parliament for his earldom, receiving a new patent of creation (*Rot. Parl.* iv. 71–2). In April 1417 he was appointed warden of the east marches towards Scotland, and captain of Berwick. He commanded a contingent of the army mustered in July for the king's second invasion of France, but, if he actually sailed, must have shortly afterwards returned, for the Scots under Archibald, fourth earl of Douglas [q. v.], and the Duke of Albany, having invaded England in October, and made attempts on Berwick and Roxburgh, he, with

other lords and with Henry Bowet [q. v.], archbishop of York, raised a force which mustered on Barmoor, near Wooler in Northumberland. The Scots retreated, and the English ravaged the southern border of Scotland (*Gesta Henrici V*, pp. 121, 272; Otterbourne, p. 279; *Scotichronicon*, p. 1186). The earl did some service in the French war, and on 24 Feb. 1421 officiated as a steward at the coronation of Queen Catherine [see Catherine of Valois]. In June he was reappointed warden of the east marches with a salary of 5,000*l.* in time of war and 2,500*l.* in peace (*Fœdera*, x. 126).

On the death of Henry V Northumberland attended the council that met on 16 Nov. 1422 to decide on Gloucester's claim to be regent, and was appointed a member of the council of regency (*Proceedings of the Privy Council*, iii. 6, 157). He was appointed ambassador to the council of Pavia on 22 Feb. 1423 with a salary of 66*s.* 8*d.* a day (*ib.* pp. 42, 61), and on 6 July was appointed joint ambassador to Scotland, his commission being renewed on 14 Feb. following. He constantly attended the meetings of the council, and on 24 Nov. 1426 assisted in drawing up ordinances for its government (*ib.* p. 213). In 1429 and 1430 he was a joint ambassador to Scotland, and on 18 Feb. 1434 the council decided that he should be paid 50*l.* in consideration of his labour and expenses in attending courts for the settlement of disputes between the English and the Scots. Part of the town of Alnwick having lately been burnt by the Scots, he obtained license in June that he and the burgesses might wall it round. As the five years' truce with Scotland was to expire in May 1436, he made great preparations for war, dubbed many new knights, and probably crossed the border in connection with the raid of Sir Robert Ogle, who was defeated in September at Piperden [see Douglas, William, second Earl of Angus], but did not effect anything. On his return King James [see James I of Scotland] laid siege to Roxburgh in October. The earl promptly advanced to meet him at the head of the local forces, and the king broke up the siege and departed (Hardyng, p. 397; *Chronicle of Henry VI*, p. 16, ed. Giles; *Three Chronicles*, p. 166; Gregory, p. 179). In return for his services he received a grant of 100*l.* a year for life. He was reappointed a member of the council on 12 Nov. 1437, and the next year was a joint commissioner to treat with the Scots. In common with the other lords of the council, he was appointed in 1441 to inquire into all treason and sorcery against the king's person in connection with the accusation brought against the Duchess of Gloucester (*Devon Issues*, p. 444). In 1442–3 he had a quarrel with John Kemp [q. v.], archbishop of York, and his men did injury to the property of the see at Ripon and Bishopthorpe. The dispute was finally settled in the council, the king deciding that the earl was to repair the damage (*Proceedings*, v. 269–70, 309; *Plumpton Correspondence*, Introd. pp. liv–lxxii). He is said to have had a personal share in his son's campaign against the Scots in October 1448, to have been unhorsed at the battle by the river Sark in Annandale, and to have been saved by his son, who remounted him; but this seems untrue (Holinshed, i. 273; comp. *Auchinleck Chronicle*, p. 18). In the summer his two castles of Alnwick and Warkworth had been set on fire by the Earl of Douglas. On 25 May 1450 Northumberland was made constable of England, but resigned on 11 Sept. in favour of the Duke of Somerset [see Beaufort, Edmund].

The old feud between the Percys and the Nevilles again broke out, was heightened by political dissension, and caused serious disorder in the north. In July 1453 the king in council wrote to the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland, charging them to see that the peace was kept (*Proceedings*, vi. 147). A battle was fought between two of Northumberland's sons, Lord Egremont [see Percy, Thomas] and Sir Richard Percy, and Westmorland's son, the Earl of Salisbury [see Neville, Richard, 1400–1460], and on 8 Oct. another letter was sent to Northumberland urging him to do his duty by preserving order (*ib.* pp. 159–64). The north remained disturbed, and on 10 May 1454 both the earls were specially bidden to attend the council on 12 June to provide means for preventing the continuance of disorder (*ib.* p. 178). The Duke of York having taken up arms in May 1455, the earl marched with the royal army against him, and was slain in the battle of St. Albans on the 23rd; his body was buried in the lady-chapel of the abbey. The earl was a benefactor to University College, Oxford (Wood, *Colleges and Halls*, p. 47), and to Eton College. By his wife Eleanor, daughter of Ralph, first earl of Westmorland [q. v.], previously married, or contracted, to Richard le Despenser, son of Thomas, earl of Gloucester, who died in 1414 at the age of fourteen, he had twelve children: Henry (see below), who succeeded him; Thomas, lord Egremont [q. v.]; George, a prebendary of Beverley, born 1424; Sir Ralph [q. v.]; Sir Richard, slain at Towton on 29 March 1461; William, who was born in 1428, graduated D.D. from Cambridge, where he was chancellor 1451–5, was pro-

vided to the see of Carlisle in 1452, called to the privy council (cf. NICHOLAS, *Proceedings*, vi. 185 et seq.), and died in 1462 (three other sons died in infancy). Northumberland's three daughters were: Joan, a nun, buried at Whitby Abbey; Catherine, born in 1423, married Edmund Grey, lord Grey of Ruthin [q. v.], created earl of Kent; and Anne, married (1) Sir Thomas Hungerford, (2) Sir Laurence Rainsford, (3) Sir Hugh Vaughan, and died in 1522 (COLLINS).

PERCY, HENRY, third EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1421–1461), son of Henry, second earl (see above), was born at Leconfield, Yorkshire, on 25 July 1421, and was knighted by Henry VI on 19 May 1426, being the day on which the little king was himself knighted (*Fœdera*, x. 356). In July 1439 he was appointed warden of the east marches and Berwick. By his marriage with Eleanor, granddaughter and heiress of Robert, lord Poynings, he in 1446 acquired the baronies of Poynings, Fitzpaine, and Bryan, with estates in Kent, Sussex, Norfolk, Suffolk, and Somerset, and was in December summoned to parliament as Baron de Poynings. In May 1448 he invaded Scotland in company with Sir Robert Ogle, afterwards first Baron Ogle [q. v.], and burnt Dunbar. The Scots retaliated by setting fire to his father's castles, at Alnwick in June and at Warkworth in July, and doing other damage. Accordingly, in October the king, having advanced into the north, sent him to invade Scotland. He was met by Hugh Douglas, earl of Ormond, forced to retreat, and defeated and taken prisoner near the river Sark (*Auchinleck Chronicle*, p. 18). He regained his freedom, and was recompensed by the king with the grant of half the goods of Sir Robert Ogle, then outlawed. In April 1451 he was a joint commissioner to treat with the ambassadors of James II of Scotland, and was one of the conservators of the truce made at Newcastle in August (*Fœdera*, xi. 299). On the death of his father on 23 May 1455 he succeeded him as Earl of Northumberland, the king allowing him relief of his lands without payment, the new earl having on 3 July foiled by his careful preparations an attack of Scots on Berwick, for which he received the king's thanks. This attack on Berwick was probably connected with the war between King James and James, ninth earl of Douglas [q. v.], in alliance with whom Percy seems to have acted against Scotland about this time. The feud between the Percys and the Nevilles still disturbed the north, and in January 1458 a great council was held at London to pacify that and other quarrels. To this council the earl came up at the head of a large armed force, and the Londoners, who admitted the Yorkists within their city, refused to admit him and the other Lancastrian lords, 'because they came against the peace,' so they lodged outside the walls. After much debate a general reconciliation, in which the earl was included, was effected on 25 March (*Political Poems*, ii. 254). Northumberland attended the parliament at Coventry in November 1459, when the Duke of York was accused of the death of the old earl, and the Yorkist leaders were attainted, and he took the oath to maintain the succession in the king's line. He was appointed chief justice of the forests north of Trent, and constable of Scarborough Castle (DOYLE), and the king is said to have committed the government of the north to him and Lord Clifford as 'his trusty and most faithful friends' (HALL, p. 242). In November 1460 he held a meeting at York with Lords Clifford, Dacres, and others, and plundered the tenants of the Yorkist lords. York went north against them, and on 29 Dec. they defeated him at Wakefield, in which battle Northumberland was engaged (WILL. WORC. *Annals*; GREGORY, p. 210; *Lancaster and York*, ii. 236). After helping to raise an army for the queen, he marched southwards with her and the forces of the north, their army plundering and destroying as it marched, and on 17 Feb. 1461 defeated Warwick at St. Albans. The earl then marched to York with the king and queen, and was, in conjunction with Somerset and Clifford, in command of the royal army which marched to oppose the advance of the new king, Edward IV. At the battle of Towton on 29 March the earl commanded the van of the Lancastrian army. Seeing that his archers, who were blinded by a snowstorm, were unable to stand against the arrows of the Yorkists, he hastened to come to close quarters, and was slain. By his wife Eleanor, who survived him, he left a son Henry, afterwards fourth Earl of Northumberland [q. v.], and three daughters: Eleanor, married Lord De la Warr; Margaret, married Sir William Gascoigne of Gawthorp, Yorkshire; and Elizabeth, married Henry, lord Scrope of Bolton. He was, it is believed, buried in the church of St. Dionys at York, the church of the parish in which stood Percy's Inn, the York town house of his family. In this church there was a painted window presenting several effigies of the Percys; it was taken down in 1590 (DRAKE, *Eboracum*, p. 306, where it is figured).

[Engl. Chron., ed. Davies, Gregory's Chron. (Collections of a Citizen, &c.) ed. Gairdner, Three Fifteenth-Cent. Chron. ed. Gairdner,

Plumpton Corr., Introd. (all four Camden Soc.); Engl. Chron. ed. Giles; Hardyng's Chron., Fabyan's Chron., Hall's Chron. (all ed. Ellis); Holinshed's Chron. ed. Hooker, fo.; Stow's Annals, ed. Howes; Paston Letters, ed. Gairdner; Rolls of Parl., Rymer's Fœdera, Proc. of Privy Council (all three Record publ.); Fordun's Scotichronicon, ed. Hearne; Chron. of Auchinleck, in 'Ane Addicioun, &c.,' ed. Thomson; Ramsay's Lanc. and York; Tytler's Hist. of Scotland; De Fonblanque's Annals of House of Percy; Collins's Engl. Peerage, ed. 1810; Doyle's Official Baronage; Dugdale's Baronage.] W. H.

PERCY, HENRY, fourth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1446–1489), was the only son of Henry Percy, third earl [see under PERCY, HENRY, second EARL]. On his father's attainder, Edward IV committed him to safe keeping, and three years later conferred the forfeited earldom of Northumberland on John Neville, lord Montagu [q. v.] Percy's imprisonment cannot have been very strict, for in 1465 he was confined in the Fleet, where he made the acquaintance of John Paston (1421–1466) [q.v.], a fellow-prisoner (*Paston Letters*, ii. 237, 243). His subsequent transference to the Tower may be attributed to the Nevilles when they held the king in durance after the battle of Edgecott in 1469. One of Edward's first steps on shaking off this constraint was to release Percy (27 Oct.), merely exacting an oath of fealty (*Fœdera*, xi. 648). When the final breach with the Nevilles came in the following spring, and the king drove the Earl of Warwick out of the realm, he took the earldom of Northumberland from Lord Montagu, and restored it (25 March at York) to Percy, who had accompanied him throughout the campaign (*Paston Letters*, ii. 396). The new earl also superseded his disgraced rival in the wardenship of the east march towards Scotland, which had usually been held by the head of his house. This he lost again in the autumn, when the Nevilles restored Henry VI, and though Northumberland made no open resistance to the change of government, and could not very well be deprived of his newly recovered title, the Lancastrian traditions of his family did not blind him to the fact that for him it was a change for the worse.

On landing in Yorkshire in the following spring, Edward is said to have exhibited letters, under Northumberland's seal, inviting him to return; and though he 'sat still' and did not join Edward, his neutrality was afterwards excused, as due to the difficulty of getting his Lancastrian followers to fight for York, and was held to have rendered 'notable good service' to the cause by preventing Montagu from rousing Yorkshire against the small Yorkist force (WARKWORTH, p. 14; *Arrival of Edward IV*, p. 6). Twelve days after the battle of Barnet, Northumberland was created chief justice of the royal forests north of Trent by the triumphant Edward, and, after Tewkesbury, he was made constable of Bamborough Castle (5 June) and warden of the east and middle marches (24 June). In the parliament of August 1472, the first held by Edward since his restoration of the earldom to Percy, the attainder of 1461 was formally abrogated. Shortly after the opening of the session Northumberland was appointed chief commissioner to treat with the Scots. Two years later he entered the order of the Garter, and was made sheriff of Northumberland for life (DOYLE). In 1475 he was given a colleague in his wardenship, in order that he might accompany the king in his expedition to France, and his presence is noted by Commines (i. 374) at the interview between Louis XI and Edward at Pecquigny. He led the van in the Duke of Gloucester's invasion of Scotland in June 1482, and Berwick, then recovered, was entrusted to his keeping.

Richard of Gloucester, when he assumed the protectorship, was careful to conciliate Northumberland by renewing his command as warden of the marches and captain of Berwick. A few weeks later the earl had no scruples in recognising Richard as king, and bore the pointless sword, curtana, the emblem of royal mercy, before him in the coronation procession (*Excerpta Historica*, p. 380; TAYLOR, *Glory of Regality*, pp. 71, 149). The office of great chamberlain of England, which the Duke of Buckingham forfeited by rebellion in October, was bestowed upon Northumberland (30 Nov.), together with the lordship of Holderness, which had long belonged to the Staffords, and formed a desirable addition to the Percy possessions in Yorkshire. Richard gave him many offices of profit, and lands valued at nearly a thousand a year. Parliament restored to him all the lands forfeited by the Percy rebellions under Henry IV and not yet recovered. Next to the Duke of Norfolk's, Richard bid highest for Northumberland's loyalty (*Rot. Parl.* vi. 252; RAMSAY, ii. 534). But he was not more ready to sink or swim with Richard than he had been with Edward. Some months before he landed in England, Henry of Richmond had entertained a suggestion that he should marry a sister-in-law of Northumberland (POLYDORE VERGIL, p. 215). When the crisis arrived the earl obeyed Richard's summons, and was at Bosworth, apparently in command of the right wing, but his troops never came into action; and, if Polydore (p. 225) may be believed, he would have gone

over early in the battle had Richard not placed a close watch upon him (cf. HUTTON, *Bosworth Field*, p. 130).

Northumberland was taken prisoner by the victor, but at once received into favour and soon restored to all his offices in the north, and employed in negotiations with Scotland. In the spring of 1489 he was called upon to deal with the resistance of the Yorkshiremen to the tenth of incomes demanded for the Breton war (*Gent. Mag.* 1851, pt. i. p. 459; BUSCH, i. 329). On 10 April he was appointed commissioner, with the archbishop of York and others, to investigate and punish the disturbances in York at the election of mayor in the previous February (CAMPBELL, ii. 443). Towards the end of the month he was alarmed by the attitude of the people in the vicinity of his manor of Topcliffe, near Thirsk, and on Saturday, 24 April, wrote to Sir Robert Plumpton from Seamer, close to Scarborough, ordering him to secretly bring as many armed men as he could to Thirsk by the following Monday (*Plumpton Correspondence*, p. 61). On Wednesday, 28 April, having gathered a force estimated at eight hundred men, he came into conflict with the commons, whose ringleader was one John a Chamber, near Thirsk, at a place variously called Cockledge or Blackmoor Edge, and was slain at the first onset (LELAND, *Collectanea*, iv. 246; DUGDALE, *Baronage*, i. 282; BROWN, *Venetian Calendar*, i. 533). It was at first reported that he had gone out unarmed to appease the rebels (*Paston Letters*, iii. 359). Some affirmed that over and above the immediate cause of collision the commons had not forgiven him for his conduct to Richard, who had been very popular in Yorkshire (HALL, p. 443). Bernard Andreas [q. v.] wrote a Latin ode of twelve stanzas on his death (*Vita*, p. 48; cf. PERCY, *Reliques*, i. 98, ed. 1767), and Skelton wrote an elegy in English. He was buried in the Percy chantry, on the north side of the lady-chapel of Beverley Minster, where his tomb, from which the effigy has disappeared, may still be seen. His will, dated 17 July 1485, is given in the 'Testamenta Eboracensia' (Surtees Soc.), vol. iii.

By his wife, Maud Herbert, daughter of William Herbert, first earl of Pembroke [q. v.] of the second creation, whom he married about 1476, he left four sons—Henry Algernon (1478–1527) [q. v.], his successor in the earldom; Sir William Percy; Alan [q. v.]; and Josceline, founder of the family of Percy of Beverley—and three daughters: Eleanor, wife of Edward Stafford, duke of Buckingham (beheaded in 1521); Anne, married (1511) to William Fitzalan, earl of Arundel (1483–1544); and Elizabeth, who died young.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original ed.; Historiæ Croylandensis Continuatio, ed. Fulman, 1684; Warkworth's Chronicle, the Arrival of Edward IV, Polydore Vergil (publ. by the Camden Society); Fabyan's Chronicle, ed. Ellis, 1811; Hall's Chronicle, ed. Ellis, 1809; Bernard André in Gairdner's Memorials of Henry VII, Campbell's Materials for the Reign of Henry VII (in Rolls Ser.); Paston Letters, ed. Gairdner; Ramsay's Lancaster and York, 1892; Gairdner's Richard III; Wilhelm Busch's Hist. of England under the Tudors, Engl. transl.; Hutton's Battle of Bosworth Field, 1813; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, 1812; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, 1887.]

J. T–T.

PERCY, HENRY, eighth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1532?–1585), born at Newburn Manor about 1532, was second of the two sons of Sir Thomas Percy who was executed in 1527 as a chief actor in the northern rebellion known as the Pilgrimage of Grace. Brought up with his elder brother Thomas, seventh earl [q. v.], he took part as a youth in border warfare, and on Queen Mary's accession was appointed governor of Tynemouth Castle. He was returned to the House of Commons in 1554 as M.P. for Morpeth, was knighted in 1557, and became deputy warden of the east and middle marches. Many reports of his zeal reached the government, and Queen Elizabeth continued him in his chief offices. He was temporarily transferred from the governorship of Tynemouth to the captaincy of Norham Castle, but was reappointed in February 1561 to Tynemouth. When war broke out with the Scots in 1559, he was given the command of a body of light horse, to be equipped like the 'Schwartze Ritter' with corselets and two pistols each, and at the head of these troops he greatly distinguished himself before Leith (April 1560). The French commander D'Oyzelle, when defeated, asked permission, in compliment to Percy's valour, to surrender his sword to Percy rather than to the commander-in-chief, Lord Grey. Unlike other members of his family, he avowed protestant sympathies, and was directed in 1561 to report on the doctrines adopted by the Scottish congregations. Both John Knox and Sir William Kirkcaldy of Grange, with whom he corresponded, seem to have been convinced of his sympathy with presbyterianism. He had already (24 June 1559) been commissioned, together with Thomas Young, archbishop of York, to administer the oath of supremacy to the clergy of the northern province (RYMER, *Fœdera*, xv. 611–612). His position in the north was improved

at the end of 1561 by his marriage with Catharine Neville, daughter and coheiress of John, last lord Latimer.

During the northern rebellion, in which his elder brother was a chief actor (November–December 1569), Henry Percy remained loyal to the government, joined the royal forces, and vigorously attacked the rebels. Queen Elizabeth promised him favour and employment in return for his valuable services. When his brother was a prisoner in Scotland, Percy wrote urging him to confess his offences and appeal to the queen's mercy. In 1571 he was elected M.P. for Northumberland, and on his brother's execution at York in 1572 he assumed, by Queen Elizabeth's permission, the title of eighth earl of Northumberland, in accordance with the patents of creation. 'Simple Thomas,' it was said among his tenantry, had died to make way for 'cruel Henry.'

But the traditions attaching to his family had meanwhile overcome his loyalty. As soon as he had helped to crush his brother, he was seized by an impulse to follow his brother's example, and strike a blow in behalf of Queen Mary Stuart, who was in confinement at Tutbury. He opened communication with the Scottish queen's agent, the bishop of Ross, at Easter 1571, and offered to become Queen Mary's 'servant.' He would aid her to escape, or at any rate connive at her escape. The wary Sir Ralph Sadler suspected his intentions, and on 15 Nov. 1571 Percy was arrested while in London and sent to the Tower. On 23 Feb. 1571–2 he wrote, begging the queen to release him. After eighteen months' detention he was brought to trial on a charge of treason. Thereupon he flung himself on the queen's mercy, was fined five thousand marks, and was directed to confine himself to his house at Petworth. On 12 July 1573 he was permitted to come to London, and was soon afterwards set at liberty.

On 8 Feb. 1575–6 he first took his seat in the House of Lords, and was one of the royal commissioners appointed to prorogue parliament in November. Just a year later he was nominated a commissioner to promote the breeding of war-horses in Sussex. But he had not abandoned his treacherous courses. In September 1582 he entertained the French agent, M. de Bex, and looked with a friendly eye on Throckmorton's plot to release Queen Mary. With Lord Henry Howard and Throckmorton he was arrested on suspicion of complicity late in the same year, and for a second time was sent to the Tower. He was, however, only detained a few weeks, and no legal proceedings were taken against him. But he was deprived of the governorship of Tynemouth Castle—a step against which he protested hotly. He was still sanguine of compassing the release of Queen Mary. In September 1583 he invited her agent, Charles Paget [q. v.], and Paget's brother, Lord Paget, to Petworth, and there he discussed the matter fully. The Duc de Guise was to aid the enterprise with French troops, and Northumberland offered advice respecting their landing. William Shelley, who was present at the interview, was arrested and racked next year, and related what took place. Northumberland's aim, he said, was not only to secure Queen Mary's liberty, but to extort from Elizabeth full toleration for the Roman catholics. In December 1584 Northumberland was sent to the Tower for a third time. He protested his innocence, and courted inquiry. Six months later, on 21 June 1585, he was found dead in his bed in his cell, having been shot through the heart. A jury was at once summoned, and returned a verdict of suicide. He was buried in the church of St. Peter ad Vincula, within the Tower. Camden expresses the popular regret 'that so great a person, who was of a lively and active spirit, died so miserable and lamentable a death.' It was stated that the day before the earl died the lieutenant of the Tower, Sir Owen Hopton, was ordered by Sir Christopher Hatton, the vice-chamberlain, to place the prisoner under the care of a new warder named Bailiffe. A report consequently spread abroad that Hatton had contrived Northumberland's death, and some years later Sir Walter Raleigh, in writing to Sir Robert Cecil, referred to Hatton's guilt as proved. But there is no authentic ground for disputing the theory that Northumberland died by his own hand. The catholics naturally asserted that he had been murdered. Immediately after his death there was published at Cologne a tract entitled 'Crudelitatis Calvinianæ Exempla duo recentissima ex Anglia,' in which the English government was charged both with Northumberland's murder and with the enforcement of the penal statutes passed in the previous year. The tract was reprinted in French, German, English, Italian, and Spanish. To allay the public excitement, a Star-chamber inquiry was ordered, and it was held on 23 June. Thereupon 'A True and Summarie Reporte' of the proceedings was published, and the verdict of suicide powerfully upheld.

His widow, Catharine Neville, subsequently married Francis Fitton of Binfield, Berkshire, and died on 28 Oct. 1596, being buried in Westminster Abbey. By her Northum-

berland left eight sons and two daughters. Of the latter, Lucy married, first, Sir John Wotton; secondly, Sir Hugh Owen of Anglesey; and Eleanor married Sir William Herbert, baron Powis. The eldest son, Henry, ninth earl; the second, William (1575–1648); and the youngest son, George (1580–1632), are noticed separately. The other sons were Sir Charles (*d.* 1628), who fought in the Low Countries and Ireland, was implicated in Essex's rebellion, and was pardoned; Sir Richard (*d.* 1647), who also fought in Ireland; Sir Alan (*d.* 1611), who was made K.B. in 1604; and Sir Josceline (*d.* 1631), who, like his brother Charles, was concerned in Essex's rebellion.

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 125 seq.; Froude's Hist. of England; Cal. State Papers, Dom.; Camden's Annals; Doyle's Official Baronage; Sharpe's Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569; Collins's Peerage; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage.] S. L.

PERCY, HENRY, ninth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1564–1632), son of Henry Percy, eighth earl [q. v.], born at Tynemouth Castle in 1564, was educated in the protestant faith by one Thompson, vicar of Egremont. In 1582 he set out on a foreign tour, and at Paris he formed an intimacy with Charles Paget [q. v.], agent of Mary Queen of Scots and a staunch Roman catholic —a circumstance which raised suspicions of his loyalty. Both Paget and himself wrote home denying that religion entered into their discussions. He developed literary tastes, read Guicciardini and Holinshed, and purchased works of art. Astrology and alchemy interested him, and among his possessions in early life was a crystal globe. His indulgence in scientific experiments gained for him the sobriquet of 'the Wizard Earl.' He was soon passionately addicted to tobacco-smoking, and lost large sums of money by gaming. In 1585, on his father's death, he succeeded to the earldom of Northumberland, and settled in London at the family residence near St. Andrew's Hill, Blackfriars. In 1590 he removed his London dwelling to Russell House, St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, and in James I's reign to Walsingham House. He made Alnwick Castle his place of residence in the north. Somewhat fanciful in his tastes, he was unpopular in domestic life. With his mother he was perpetually quarrelling, and his numerous tenants found him an unsympathetic and harsh landlord. He was a justice of the peace for Sussex, Cumberland, Westmorland, Northumberland, and the North, East, and West Ridings of Yorkshire, but neglected his duties and declined to take part in repressing border warfare. Meanwhile he took some part in other departments of public affairs. He served as a volunteer under the Earl of Leicester in the Low Countries in 1585-6, and in 1588 in the fleet sent against the Spanish armada. In 1591 he was made governor of Tynemouth. On 23 April 1593 he was installed a knight of the Garter, and George Peele [q. v.] dedicated to him in the same year, in flattering terms, his elaborate poem entitled 'Honour of the Garter,' in which he celebrated the installation ceremony. In 1596 he carried the insignia of the order of the Garter to Henry IV of France, and in 1599 was nominated a general of the army.

Northumberland's name was entitled to stand eighth on the list of presumptive heirs to the crown, and the Roman catholics, who had hopes that he would yet declare for the faith of his fathers, suggested about 1590 that he should strengthen his claim by marrying another heiress, Lady Arabella Stuart (cf. THOMAS WILSON, *State of England*, 1600). In 1595 he disappointed this design by wedding Dorothy, sister of Robert Devereux, second earl of Essex, and widow of Sir John Perrot. He was on good terms with his brother-in-law Essex, although he formed a low opinion of his character; but he found his wife uncongenial, and they frequently lived apart. No permanent breach, however, took place, and she stood by him in his later difficulties. In 1600 he went to the Low Countries, and took part in military operations about Ostend. The English commander-in-chief, Sir Francis Vere, treated him with less respect than he deemed fitting, and, after brooding over his injuries, he sent Vere, in 1602, a challenge, which that general declined to treat as serious. A very angry correspondence followed. A similar quarrel with Lord Southampton was composed by the council.

When, during 1602, it became apparent that James VI of Scotland was certain to succeed to the English throne, Northumberland, following the example of his brother-in-law Essex and of Sir Robert Cecil, opened a correspondence with the Scottish king, and drew from him some pledge respecting his policy. James's conciliatory tone disarmed all Northumberland's scruples, and he became an ardent champion of James's claim. Although not an avowed catholic, Northumberland required of his future sovereign a promise of toleration for English catholics, and sent his kinsman Thomas Percy (1560–1605) [q. v.] to Edinburgh to receive assurances on this point. James forwarded a satisfactory message. Consequently, on Elizabeth's death and James's

accession, Northumberland welcomed the new monarch with apparent enthusiasm. He was at once made a privy councillor and captain of the band of gentleman pensioners, and next year (1604) was nominated joint lord lieutenant for Sussex and, with some inconsistency, a commissioner to expel jesuits and seminary priests. On 30 Aug. 1605 he was created M.A. at Oxford. But the king's methods of government did not satisfy him. He and his wife had vigorously protested against the punishment of their friend Sir Walter Raleigh, and the persecution of the catholics had not been relaxed. The court was overrun by Scotsmen, for whom Northumberland acquired an antipathy. He is said, moreover, to have perceived that Prince Henry was likely to prove a more sagacious ruler than his father, and courted the prince's society more than James approved. In the autumn of 1605 he retired from court to Syon House, with the apparent intention of forsaking politics for the more congenial study of science and literature.

On the discovery of the 'gunpowder plot' of 5 Nov. 1605 some suspicion of complicity fell upon Northumberland. His kinsman Thomas Percy, one of the chief conspirators, had dined on 4 Nov. with Northumberland at Syon House. Lord Salisbury, whose relations with Northumberland were never cordial, deemed it prudent to commit the earl to the care of the archbishop of Canterbury at Croydon, 'there to be honourably used until things be more quiet.' Lord Salisbury informed a correspondent, Sir Charles Cornwallis, that no thought was harboured in the council that the earl was responsible for the plot. His arrest was only 'to satisfy the world that nothing be undone which belongs to policy of state when the whole monarchy was proscribed to dissolution' (Winwood, *Memorials*, ii. 172). On the 11th, in a letter to the council, Northumberland appealed to his habits of life as proof that his interests lay elsewhere than in political conspiracy. 'Examine,' he said, 'but my humours in buildings, gardenings, and private expenses these two years past.' He had few arms, horses, or followers at Syon, and had known none of the conspirators excepting Percy. On 27 Nov., however, he was sent to the Tower.

On 27 June 1606 he was tried in the court of Star-chamber for contempt and misprision of treason. It was stated that he had sought to become chief of the papists in England; that knowing Thomas Percy to be a recusant he had admitted him to be a gentleman pensioner without administering to him the oath of supremacy; that after the discovery of the plot he had written to friends in the north about securing his own moneys, but gave no orders for Percy's apprehension. He pleaded guilty to some of the facts set forth in the indictment, but indignantly repudiated the inferences placed upon them by his prosecutors. He was sentenced to pay a fine of 30,000*l.*, to be removed from all offices and places, to be rendered incapable of holding any of them hereafter, and to be kept a prisoner in the Tower for life.

Northumberland emphatically protested to the king against the severity of this sentence, and his wife appealed to the queen, who had shown much kindly interest in him. But the authorities were obdurate. The king insisted that 11,000*l.* of the fine should be paid at once, and, when the earl declared himself unable to find the money, his estates were seized, and funds were raised by granting leases on them. The leases were ultimately recalled, and the earl managed to pay 11,000*l.* on 13 Nov. 1613; but more than seven years of imprisonment still awaited him.

Northumberland gathered about him in the Tower men of learning, to whom he paid salaries for assisting him in his studies. Thomas Harriot, Walter Warner, and Thomas Hughes, the mathematicians, were regular attendants and pensioners, and were known as the earl's 'three magi.' Nicholas Hill aided him in experiments in astrology and alchemy. He also saw something of his fellow-prisoner, Sir Walter Raleigh. A large library was placed in his cell, consisting mainly of Italian books on fortification, astrology, and medicine. But Tasso and Machiavelli were among them. His only English works were Chapman's Homer, 'The Gardener's Labyrinth,' Daniel's 'History of England,' and Florio's 'Dictionary' (Fonblanque, ii. 626 sq.) A part of his time was occupied in writing his 'Advice to his Son (Algernon) on his Travels,' which was printed from the manuscript at Alnwick in the 'Antiquarian Repertory,' iv. 374. For some years his second daughter, Lucy, was his companion in the Tower. She formed a strong affection for James Hay, afterwards Earl of Carlisle, and resolved to marry him. Northumberland disliked Hay as a Scotsman and a favourite of the king, and declined to sanction the union. The marriage, however, took place in 1617. Thereupon Hay, in order, apparently, to overcome Northumberland's prejudice against him, made every effort to obtain his release. In this he at length proved successful. In 1621 James was induced to celebrate his birthday by setting Northumberland and other political prisoners at liberty. The earl showed

some compunction in accepting a favour which he attributed to Hay's agency. However, on 18 July, he was induced to leave the Tower after an imprisonment of nearly sixteen years. He was advised to recruit his health at Bath. Thither he travelled in a coach drawn by eight horses. The story is told that he insisted on this equipage in order to mark his sense of superiority to the king's favourite, Buckingham, who had lately travelled about the country in a coach-and-six. But Hay was doubtless responsible for the demonstration. Bath worked a speedy cure, and Northumberland retired to his house at Petworth. He took no further part in public affairs, and died at Petworth on 5 Nov. 1632, being buried in the church there. His portrait was painted by Vandyck.

By his wife, who died on 3 Aug. 1619, and was also buried at Petworth, he was father of Algernon Percy, tenth earl [q. v.], and Henry Percy, lord Percy of Alnwick [q.v.], and of two daughters, Dorothy (1598-1677), wife of Robert Sidney, second earl of Leicester, and Lucy Hay, countess of Carlisle [q. v.]

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 179–366; Collins's Peerage, ii. 408–37; Doyle's Official Baronage; Gardiner's Hist.; Jardine's Gunpowder Plot; Cal. State Papers, Dom.]

S. L.

**PERCY, HENRY, Lord Percy of Alnwick** (*d.* 1659), younger son of Henry Percy, ninth earl of Northumberland [q.v.], was educated at a school at Isleworth, under a certain Mr. Willis, and at Christ Church, Oxford (Fonblanque, *House of Percy*, ii. 368; Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1st ser. p. 1146). Percy represented Marlborough in the parliament of 1629. On 21 March 1631 he unsuccessfully applied for the post of secretary to the chancellor of the exchequer (*Report on Lord Cowper's MSS.* i. 428). Strafford designed to appoint him captain of a company in the Irish army, but the influence exerted for Lorenzo Cary frustrated the intention (*Strafford Letters*, i. 128, 138). As a courtier Percy was more fortunate; he obtained great influence with the queen, and employed it to further the interests of his brother, the Earl of Northumberland, and his brother-in-law, the Earl of Leicester (*ib.* i. 363; Collins, *Peerage*; *Sydney Papers*, ii. 506, 527, 642). In March 1633 Percy acted as Lord Weston's friend in the quarrel between him and the Earl of Holland (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1633–4, x. 12). His favour, however, continued to increase; in November 1639 he was appointed master of the horse to the Prince of Wales, and on 6 June 1640 he was appointed captain and governor of Jersey for life (Collins, *Peerage* (Brydges), ii. 344, *Sydney Papers*, ii. 620).

In the Short parliament Percy represented Portsmouth, and in the Long parliament the county of Northumberland. He was one of the originators of what was termed the 'first army plot' in March 1641, but according to his own story simply designed to procure a declaration from the army in support of the king's policy, and was innocent of the plan to bring it up to London in order to put force on the parliament. When the plot was discovered he endeavoured to fly to France, was set upon and wounded by the country people in Sussex, and remained for some time in hiding. To facilitate his own escape, he was induced to write a letter to his brother, giving an account of the conspiracy, which furnished the popular leaders with conclusive proof of the reality of the design, and was held by the royalists to be a treacherous betrayal of his duty to the king (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, iii. 223, 228; Rushworth, iv. 255). The sole punishment inflicted upon him for his share in the plot was his expulsion from the House of Commons, which took place on 9 Dec. 1641 (*Commons' Journals*, ii. 337; Evelyn, *Diary*, ed. Wheatley, iv. 75).

Percy retired to France, but at the outbreak of the war made himself useful to Queen Henrietta Maria, who employed him as an agent to King Charles, and obtained his restoration to favour. 'Truly,' she wrote, 'I think him very faithful, and that we may trust him.' Thanks to her support, he became on 22 May 1643 general of the ordnance in the king's army, and was created on 28 June of the same year Baron Percy of Alnwick (Green, *Letters of Henrietta Maria*, p. 138; Black, *Oxford Docquets*, pp. 40, 52). A volume of Percy's correspondence as general of the ordnance is preserved in the Bodleian Library (Rawlinson MS. D. 395). He fought at the battle of Cropredy Bridge (29 June 1644), and accompanied the king into Cornwall in his pursuit of Essex; but, having taken part in Wilmot's intrigue to force the king to make peace, he fell into disgrace, and was obliged to resign his command (14 Aug. 1644; *Diary of Richard Symonds*, p. 54). 'His removal,' says Clarendon, 'added 'to the ill-humour of the army; for though he was generally unloved as a proud and supercilious person, yet he had always three or four persons of good credit and reputation, who were esteemed by him, with whom he lived very well; and though he did not draw the good fellows to him by drinking, yet he eat well, which in the general scarcity of that time drew many votaries to him, who bore very ill the want of his table, and so

were not without some inclination to murmur even on his behalf' (*Rebellion*, viii. 98). On 11 Jan. 1645 Percy and two other royalist peers were placed under arrest by the king on the charge of holding correspondence with his enemies and uttering disrespectful speeches, but in reality on account of the persistency with which they urged him to open negotiations with the parliament (GARDINER, *Great Civil War*, ii. 114). Percy was released a few weeks later, and, having procured a pass from Essex, sought to take ship for the continent. On his way he was taken prisoner by Waller and Cromwell at Andover. Among Percy's party 'there was a youth of so fair a countenance that Cromwell doubted of his condition, and, to confirm himself, willed him to sing, which he did with such a daintiness that Cromwell scrupled not to say to Lord Percy that being a warrior he did wisely to be accompanied by Amazons, on which that lord in some confusion did acknowledge that she was a damsel; this afterwards gave cause for scoff at the king's party' (*Recollections by Sir William Waller*, 1788, p. 125). Percy arrived at Paris at the end of March 1645, and, though the king had cautioned the queen not to trust him too much, was speedily as great a favourite with Henrietta as before (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1644–5, pp. 372, 390, 483). In March 1648 he was wounded in a duel with Prince Rupert, and in the following October was put under arrest for giving the lie to Lord Colepeper in the presence of the Prince of Wales (*Hamilton Papers*, i. 178; WHITELOCKE, *Memorials*, ii. 423).

As Percy belonged to the queen's party and to the faction of Secretary Long, he is spoken of with great severity in the correspondence of Hyde and Nicholas. They regarded him as an atheist because he favoured Hobbes, and advised Charles II to comply with the demands of the presbyterians or any other party which would undertake to restore his throne. When he was made lord chamberlain and admitted to the privy council, their disgust knew no bounds (*Nicholas Papers*, i. 172, 213, 285, 293, ii. 18, 20, 113). Hyde, however, was subsequently reconciled to Percy, who brought about a meeting between the queen and the chancellor of the exchequer, and is praised in the 'History of the Rebellion' for his economical administration of the king's household (xiv. 89, 93). When Percy thought of making his peace with the Protector, Hyde dissuaded him, and told him that few men were so fit to be about the king's person, or engaged in the counsels likely to carry him home (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, iii. 161, 330). He died in France about March 1659 (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1658–9, pp. 115, 335, 562).

[Authorities cited in the article; De Fonblanque's House of Percy, ii. 368, 430; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges.] C. H. F.

PERCY, HENRY (1785–1825), colonel, aide-de-camp to Sir John Moore and to Wellington, fifth son of Algernon Percy, baron Lovaine, who was created Earl of Beverley in 1780, and brother of Hugh Percy [q. v.], bishop of Carlisle, and of Vice-admiral Josceline Percy, was born on 14 Sept. 1785. He was educated at Eton, and on 16 Aug. 1804 appointed lieutenant in the 7th fusiliers. He became captain unattached 9 Oct. 1806, and captain 7th fusiliers on 6 Nov. following. He was aide-de-camp to Sir John Moore at Coruña. On 21 June 1810 he was transferred as captain to the 14th light dragoons. He was taken prisoner with a party of his regiment during the retreat from Burgos in 1812, and was detained in France until the peace. In 1815 he was appointed aide-de-camp to the Duke of Wellington. He brought home the Waterloo despatches, arriving post in London on the evening of 20 June with the despatches and captured eagles, and was next day made C.B., and a brevet lieutenant-colonel from 18 June 1815. He retired on half-pay in 1821, and was returned to parliament for Beeralston, Devonshire, in 1823. Once a gay, handsome young fellow, he prematurely lost his health. He died at his father's house in Portman Square, London, 15 April 1825, in his fortieth year, and was buried in the cemetery of St. Marylebone.

[Foster's Peerage, under 'Beverley;' Army Lists; Gent. Mag. 1825, pt. i. p. 567.] H. M. C.

PERCY, HENRY ALGERNON fifth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1478–1527), born 13 Jan. 1478, was son of Henry Percy, fourth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], by Maud, daughter of William Herbert, first earl of Pembroke of the second creation [q. v.] Alan Percy [q. v.] was his younger brother. On 28 April 1489 he succeeded his father as fifth Earl of Northumberland. He was well looked after and brought up at the court, while his sisters' marriages were the object of careful negotiation. He was made K.B. 21 Nov. 1481, at the time when Prince Arthur was created Prince of Wales. He attended Henry at the conclusion of the treaty of Etaples in 1492, and took a prominent part in the elaborate ceremony of 1494, when Prince Henry was created K.B. (*Letters, &c., of Richard III and Henry VII*, i. 390, &c.) In 1495 he was made a knight of the Garter. In 1497 he served in the royal

army against the Cornish rebels, and fought at Blackheath; on 14 May 1498 he received livery of his lands, and entered into the management of his various castles and estates. How important his position was can be seen from 'The Northumberland Household Book,' which was edited from the manuscript in possession of the Duke of Northumberland by Thomas Percy [q. v.] in 1770. It was begun in 1512. His income was about 2,300*l.* a year, which probably does not include all that he received by way of gift. But on his various retinues of servants he spent no less than 1,500*l.* a year, and as the margin had to meet all such expenses as his journeys to the court, and as he was extraordinarily magnificent in taste, he was soon in debt. In 1500 Northumberland was at the meeting of Henry and the Archduke Philip. In 1501 he was appointed constable of Knaresborough, steward of the lordship of Knaresborough, and master forester in the forest there. On 1 April 1502 he was a commissioner of oyer and terminer for London; he was also constantly in the commission of the peace for various counties. Northumberland received the important appointment of warden-general of the east marches towards Scotland on 30 June 1503, and one of his first duties was to escort Margaret to Scotland on her way to join James IV of Scotland, and his splendid dress and numerous servants pleased the princess. An account of this progress was written by Somerset herald and printed in Leland's 'Collectanea,' vol. iv.

Northumberland seems to have irritated Henry VII just before the king died. He had disposed of the wardship and marriage of Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of Sir John Hastings. He was fined 10,000*l.*, an amount of money quite as difficult to raise as forty times the sum at the present day; and it is extraordinary that he managed to pay half the money before Henry VIII came to the throne. The new king cancelled the remainder of the debt 21 March 1510. On 4 Feb. 1511–12 he was a trier of petitions from Gascony and beyond the sea.

Northumberland served in the war of 1513 as a grand captain, with a very large retinue. From Calais he went to the siege of Terouenne and in the battle of spurs he commanded the 'showrers and forridors,' Northumberland men on light geldings. The next year he was a chief commissioner of array for various counties. As Wolsey rose, the great nobles had one by one to submit to his tyranny. Northumberland was suspected of being too friendly with Buckingham, and so, on a charge of interfering with the king's prerogative about the wards, he was cast into the Fleet in 1516. Possibly he was only put there so that Wolsey might have the credit of getting him out. He was examined in the Star-chamber, and soon set free. Northumberland was friendly with Shrewsbury, and they arranged to go on a pilgrimage this year together. Shrewsbury had been anxious to marry his daughter to a son of Buckingham, but, having disputed about money matters, the parents broke off the match; it was now arranged, most unfortunately as it turned out, that the lady should marry Northumberland's son, the Lord Percy. In June 1517 Northumberland met Queen Margaret of Scotland at York to conduct her on her way home; he undertook the duty with reluctance, doubtless from want of money, and his wife was excused attendance. In 1518 he was one of those who held lands in Calais. Wolsey in 1519, in a letter to the king, expressed suspicions of his loyalty (*Letters and Papers Henry VIII*, III. i. 1, cf. 1266 and 1293). But he escaped the fate of the Duke of Buckingham [see STAFFORD, EDWARD], and went to the Field of the Cloth of Gold, where he was a judge of the lists. The same year he had a grant of the honour of Holderness. He was present at Henry's meeting with the emperor in May 1522, and attested the ratification of the treaty made. He seems to have been offered, but not to have accepted, the wardenship of all the marches towards Scotland in 1523, and is said to have incurred the contempt of his tenants by his refusal. But he continued active while Surrey was in chief command. In 1523 he made an inroad into Scotland, and was falsely accused by Dacre of going to war with the crosskeys of York, a royal badge, on his banner; he cleared himself easily enough. In 1524 he was again on the border. In 1525 he had some trouble with the council of the north, of which he had been a member since 1522; but he cleared himself, and took part in the ceremony of the creation of Henry Fitzroy, Henry VIII's natural son, Earl of Nottingham. He died at Wressell on 19 May 1527, and was buried at Beverley, where he had built a splendid shrine. Northumberland died poor, and left a legacy of debt to his son. He was magnificent in his tastes, kept a very large establishment, and was fond of building. Leland praised the devices for the library at Wressell, presumably arranged by him (cf. *Letters and Papers of Henry VIII*, III. ii. 3475, IV. ii. 3134, 3379). He encouraged the poet Skelton, who wrote the elegy on his father [see SKELTON, *Works*, ed. Dyce, i. 12, 36, ii. 91, 358). A manuscript formerly in his possession forms Brit. Mus.

Reg. Bib. 18 D ii. It consists of poems, chiefly by Lydgate. He married Lady Catherine (*d.* 1542), daughter of Sir Robert Spencer, by Eleanor, countess of Wiltshire, and by her had three sons—Henry Algernon, who became sixth earl, and is separately noticed; Sir Thomas Percy, and Sir Ingelram Percy—and two daughters: Margaret, who married Henry, lord Clifford, first earl of Cumberland, and Maud, who married William, lord Conyers.

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy; Introduction to Percy's edition of the Northumberland Household Book; Letters and Papers, Henry VIII; State Papers, Henry VIII, i. 146, iv. 45; Chron. of Calais (Camd. Soc.); Hall's Chronicle, ed. 1809, p. 498; Drake's Eboracum, App. xviii. &c.; Leland's Itinerary, i. 47, 54, vii. 50–1; Percy's Reliques, ed. Wheatley, i. 124; Casley's Cat. of Royal MSS. p. 283; Doyle's Official Baronage, ii. 653; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, ii. 304, &c.] W. A. J. A.

PERCY, HENRY ALGERNON, sixth EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1502?–1537), was eldest son of Henry Algernon, fifth earl [q. v.], by Catherine, daughter of Sir Robert Spencer. He was born about 1502, and sent, when quite young, to be a page in Wolsey's household. He was knighted in 1519, and, in spite of the fact that his father had destined him as early as 1516 (*Letters and Papers, Hen. VIII*, II. i. 1935) for the daughter of the Earl of Shrewsbury, he fell in love with Anne Boleyn, then a young lady about the court. The intrigue was soon discovered, and the Earl of Northumberland sent for. Wolsey himself, who knew by this time the king's inclinations, scolded the young man. Lord Percy gave way, but there is little doubt that the attachment lasted through his life. In July 1522 he was made a member of the council of the north; in October he was made deputy warden of the east marches, and Dacre suggested that, young as he was, he should be made warden the same year. On 19 May 1527 he succeeded his father as sixth Earl of Northumberland; he was made steward of the honour of Holderness on 18 June; on 2 Dec. he became lord warden of the east and west marches.

Northumberland had many misfortunes. He was constantly ill from a kind of ague. He was burdened with debt, and yet had to keep up a vast establishment and engage in much fighting on his own account. Wolsey treated him like a boy so long as he was in power. He was not often allowed to go to the court, nor even to his father's funeral. To add to his other distresses, he disagreed with his wife, who soon returned to her father, and hated her husband heartily for the rest of his short life. Many of his troubles are reflected in his letters (cf. SKELTON, *Why come ye not to Court?*). His chief friend was Sir Thomas Arundell [q. v.]

In spite of his anxieties he was very active on the borders. He had leave in 1528 to come to London, Wolsey writing that he hoped he would prove 'conformable to his Hyghness's pleesor in gyvyng better attendaunce, leaving off his prodigality, sulleness, mistrust, disdayne, and making of partys.' In 1530, while he was at Topcliffe, he received a message from the king ordering him to go to Cawood and arrest Wolsey. He seems to have acted as humanely as he could, and sent his prisoner south in the custody of Sir Roger Lascelles, while he remained to make an inventory of the cardinal's goods. He was one of the peers who signed the letter to the pope in July 1530 asking that the divorce might be hurried on, and, from his friendship with Sir Thomas Legh [q. v.], it seems as though he were of the new way of thinking in religious matters. On 23 April 1531 he was created K.G.; on 11 May 1532 he was made sheriff of Northumberland for life; and on the 26th of the same month a privy councillor. In 1532 Northumberland stood in great peril. His wife, drawing, doubtless, upon her recollection of matrimonial squabbles, accused him of a precontract with Anne Boleyn. She confided her alleged grievance to her father, who cautiously mentioned the matter to the Duke of Norfolk. Anne Boleyn ordered a public inquiry. Northumberland denied the accusation, and his accusers were routed.

Northumberland took part in the trial of Lord Dacre in July 1534. In the January following he was accused of 'slackness' on the borders, and also of the graver offence of having a sword of state carried before him when he went as justiciary to York. Illness was doubtless in part responsible for his neglect of duty in the previous year. But Chapuys ranked him, on information which he had from his doctor, among the disaffected early in 1535. Having no children, Northumberland now began to arrange his affairs. In February 1535 he wrote to Cromwell that the king had given him leave to name any of his blood his heir; but, on account of their 'debylytery and unnaturalness,' he had determined to make the king his heir. This decision he confirmed later. In 1536 he was created lord president of the council of the north, and vicegerent of the order of the Garter. In May 1536 he formed one of the court for the trial of Anne Boleyn, but when he saw her he grew ill and left the room. Anne is said to have confessed a pre-

contract with him in the hope of saving her life. In September 1536 he had a grant of 1,000*l.* to come to London in order to make arrangements about his lands. The matter had not been completed when the northern rebellion known as the 'pilgrimage of grace' broke out. Northumberland's brothers and mother were open sympathisers with the rebels, but the earl himself remained loyal. The rebel leader, Aske, and his men came to Wressell, where he was ill in bed. The earl, who is spoken of as 'Crasyside,' was besought to resign his commands of the marches into the hands of his brothers, or at all events go over to the rebels. He refused both requests; and when William Stapleton, in whose depositions we have an account of the affair, went up to see him, 'he fell in weeping, ever wishing himself out of the world.' Aske sent him to York, to protect him from the fury of his followers, who wanted to behead him. Finding himself 'for ever unfeignedly sick,' he made a grant to the king of his estates, on condition that they might pass to his nephew. When, however, his brother, Sir Thomas, was attainted, he made the grant unconditional in June 1537. By this time his mind was fast failing. He removed to Newington Green, where Richard Layton [q. v.] visited him on 29 June 1537. He says that he found him 'languens in extremis, sight and speech failed, his stomach swollen so great as I never see none, and his whole body as yellow as saffron.' He died on 29 June 1537, and was buried in Hackney church. Weever quotes an inscription, but Bishop Percy in 1767 could find no trace of it. He married, in 1524, Mary Talbot, daughter of George, fourth earl of Shrewsbury, but left no issue. The earldom became extinct on his death, but was revived in favour of his nephew Thomas, seventh earl [q. v.] His widow lived until 1572. She had a grant of abbey lands, and was suspected of being a Roman catholic, a favourer of Mary Queen of Scots, and of hearing mass in her house. She was buried in Sheffield church.

Northumberland's two brothers, Sir Thomas and Sir Ingelram Percy, took an active part in the management of his estates. They were both important leaders in the pilgrimage of grace. Both were taken prisoners. Sir Thomas was attainted and executed in 1537. His son Thomas was afterwards seventh Earl of Northumberland. Sir Ingelram Percy was confined in the Beauchamp Tower, where his name is to be seen cut in the stone. But he was soon liberated, went abroad, and died about 1540. He left an illegitimate daughter Isabel, who married, in 1544, Henry Tempest of Broughton.

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy; Letters and Papers, Henry VIII; State Papers, i. 109, &c., ii. 140, iv. 59, v. 16, &c.; Archæol. xxxiii. 4; Bapst's Deux gentilshommes Poètes, 17, 133–4; Froude's Hist. of England, vol. ix.; Friedmann's Anne Boleyn, passim; Doyle's Official Baronage; Nott's Wyatt; Cavendish's Life of Wolsey; Rot. Parl.; Wriothesley's Chron. and Chron. of Calais, in the Camden Society's publications.] W. A. J. A.

PERCY, Sir HENRY HUGH MANVERS (1817–1877), general, third son of George Percy, fifth duke of Northumberland (*d.* 1867), by Louisa Harcourt, third daughter of the Honourable James Archibald Stuart-Wortley Mackenzie, was born at Burwood House, Cobham, Surrey, on 22 Aug. 1817, and educated at Eton. He entered the army as an ensign in the grenadier guards on 1 July 1836, and was present during the insurrection in Canada in 1838. As captain and lieutenant-colonel of his regiment he served during the eastern campaign of 1854–5, including the battles of Alma, where he was wounded, Balaclava, Inkerman, where he was again wounded, and the siege of Sebastopol. At the battle of Inkerman, on 5 Nov. 1854, he found himself, with many men of various regiments who had charged too far, nearly surrounded by the Russians, and without ammunition. By his knowledge of the ground, although wounded, he extricated these men, and, passing under a heavy fire from the Russians then in the sandbag battery, brought them safe to where ammunition was to be obtained. He thereby saved about fifty men and enabled them to renew the combat. For this act of bravery he was, on 5 May 1857, rewarded with the Victoria cross. For a short period he held the local rank of brigadier-general in command of the British-Italian legion in the Crimea. From 29 June 1855 to 10 Feb. 1865 he was an aide-de-camp to the queen. On the occurrence of the Trent misunderstanding with the United States in December 1861, he was sent to New Brunswick in command of the first battalion of the grenadier guards. He had been promoted to be major in 1860, and retired from active service on 3 Oct. 1862. As a conservative he sat in parliament for North Northumberland from 19 July 1865 to 11 Nov. 1868. He was rewarded for his military services by his appointment to the colonelcy of the 89th regiment on 28 May 1874, and was made a general on 1 Oct. 1877. On 24 May 1873 he was gazetted a K.C.B. He was found dead in his bed at his residence, 40 Eaton Square, London, on 3 Dec. 1877, and was buried

in the Northumberland vault in Westminster Abbey on 7 Dec. He was unmarried.

[Times, 5 Dec. 1877, p. 8; Annual Register, 1877, p. 164; O'Byrne's Victoria Cross, 1880, pp. 31, 79; Dodd's Peerage, 1877, p. 537.]

G. C. B.

PERCY, HUGH, whose surname was originally SMITHSON, first DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND of the third creation (1715–1786), born in 1715 at Newby Wiske, Yorkshire, was the only son of Langdale Smithson, esq., and Philadelphia, daughter of W. Reveley, esq., of Newby, Yorkshire. In 1729 he succeeded his grandfather, Sir Hugh Smithson, as fourth baronet of Stanwick, Yorkshire. Eleven years later he inherited property in Middlesex from another relative, Hugh Smithson, esq., of Tottenham. He matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, on 15 Oct. 1730. He became high sheriff of Yorkshire in 1738, and represented Middlesex in parliament from 15 May 1740 till his elevation to the peerage ten years later. In 1740 he proposed marriage to Elizabeth, only daughter of Algernon Seymour, who had been created Baron Percy in 1722. The lady's father was eldest son of Charles Seymour, sixth duke of Somerset [q.v.], by his first wife, Lady Elizabeth, only daughter and heiress of Josceline Percy, eleventh earl of Northumberland (*d.* 1670). The duchess died in 1722, and transmitted to her husband all the estates of the Percy family. The Duke of Somerset disliked the union of his granddaughter with Smithson, but the marriage took place on 10 July 1740. In 1744, on the death of her only brother, George Seymour, lord Beauchamp, Lady Smithson (or Lady Betty, as she was generally called) became eventual heiress of the Percy property. Somerset's endeavours to disinherit her failed because by the family settlements there was no power of alienating the property. On his death in 1748, Lady Betty's father was created Earl of Northumberland on 2 Oct. 1749, with succession to Smithson, and his heirs by Lady Betty. Smithson succeeded to the title in 1750, and on 12 April of the same year assumed, by act of parliament, the name and arms of Percy. For the next thirty years Northumberland and his wife figured prominently in social and political life. On 3 Jan. 1753 he was named a lord of the bedchamber (cf. WALPOLE, *Memoirs of Reign of George II*). On 20 March 1753 he was appointed lord lieutenant of Northumberland, and on 18 Nov. 1756 received the Garter. He was renominated lord of the bedchamber (25 Nov. 1760), and in May 1762 became lord chamberlain to Queen Charlotte. On 22 Nov. he was sworn of the privy council.

In the early years of George III's reign he attached himself to Lord Bute, whose daughter married his son in 1764. Both Northumberland and Bute were members of the king's private junto, which met daily at the house of Andrew Stone [q.v.] in the Privy Gardens. On 29 Dec. 1762 Northumberland became lord lieutenant of Middlesex. On 17 March 1763 Henry Fox [q.v.] suggested to Bute to give him the privy seal (FITZMAURICE, *Shelburne*, i. 198). Next month Bute resigned office; and although Grenville, who succeeded to the post of prime minister, had no liking for Northumberland, the latter was appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland. On 20 April 1763 Christopher Smart [q.v.] celebrated the appointment in an ode. In Ireland he seems to have been fairly popular, and to have displayed a more than viceregal magnificence, to which Horace Walpole makes many scornful allusions (cf. *Grenville Papers*, iii. 112). On a visit to London early in 1765, Northumberland was employed by the king in a political intrigue to overthrow the Grenville ministry, and did all he could to induce Pitt and Temple to join the leading whigs in an effort 'to form a strong and lasting administration.' The king ultimately suggested that a ministry should be formed with Northumberland as first lord of the treasury. But Temple, who still regarded him as Bute's lieutenant, refused to act under him. Pitt told the king that he thought 'certainly Northumberland might be considered,' but did not approve of his being given the treasury. Pitt seems to have received Northumberland's advances favourably, and made some promise that Northumberland should benefit if he himself returned to power. The negotiations for the time dropped, and Northumberland appeared to gain little by them (cf. WALPOLE, *Memoirs of George III*, and his *Letters*). Grenville insisted with success on his dismissal from the viceroyalty in 1765. In July 1766, when Pitt formed a new government, under the nominal leadership of the Duke of Grafton, the king urged that Northumberland should become lord chamberlain. Francis Ingram Seymour, second marquis of Hertford [q.v.], was, however, appointed; and Northumberland, on making complaint to Pitt (just created Lord Chatham), was advised to ask the king for an advancement in the peerage. The king proposed a marquisate; Northumberland demanded a dukedom. Chatham supported his request, and the king somewhat reluctantly assented. On 4 Oct. 1766 the Duke of Grafton wrote to Chatham: 'Lord

Northumberland was yesterday created Duke of Northumberland, Earl Percy, and Viscount Louvaine, the last of which Mr. Conway had the address to persuade [*sic*] him from adding as a second dukedom, as he before had that of getting him to change the title he first had asked, of Duke Brabant.' The title of Viscount Lovaine of Alnwick was not actually conferred till 28 Jan. 1784 (*Grenville Papers*, iv. 208–9; *Chatham Corresp.* iii. 74–6 *n.*)

Although in 1767 Horace Walpole wrote that Northumberland was thought likely to be the head of a ministry to be formed of the 'king's friends,' Northumberland never completely identified himself with that faction. He voted against the Stamp Act, and for its repeal, and in 1770 supported Chatham's resolution condemning Lord North's advice to the king not to receive the 'remonstrance and petition' of the corporation of London on the subject of the Middlesex election. But, as lord lieutenant of Middlesex, he used all his influence against Wilkes and his friends, and incurred a full measure of popular animosity. His eldest son, Hugh, who had sat in parliament for Westminster since 1764, was opposed at the general election in 1768 by a nominee of Wilkes (Walpole, *Letters*, 2nd ser. i. 294). During the riots of 1768, caused by the mob's sympathy with Wilkes, Northumberland was compelled by the populace to publicly drink Wilkes's health at Northumberland House, and he was threatened with a prosecution for murder in consequence of two men having been killed in an election riot at Brentford (*ib.* 20 Dec. 1768). In 1778 he was appointed by Lord North master of the horse. Walpole ridiculed the appointment because Northumberland had the stone and was very lame with gout. His friendship for Lord North's government was doubted: 'within a few weeks of his promotion he had openly talked opposition in all companies' (Walpole, *Last Journals*, ii. 306). He resigned in 1780. During the Gordon riots he experienced further proofs of the hostility of the mob. He was forced from his carriage and robbed of his watch and purse on the cry being raised that a gentleman in black who rode with him was his jesuit confessor (Lord Mahon, *Hist. of England*, vii. 28).

Northumberland interested himself in art, science, and literature. He was elected F.R.S. in 1736, and in 1764 stood unsuccessfully for the presidency against Lord Morton. In 1753 he became a trustee of the British Museum. Alnwick Castle the duke thoroughly repaired and renovated in pseudo-Gothic style. Johnson visited it when on his way to Scotland, and, being treated with great civility by the duke (Boswell, ed. Hill, iii. 272), remarked, 'He is only fit to succeed himself' (*ib.* ii. 132). On 5 July 1764 the duke is said to have celebrated the king's birthday by entertaining fifteen hundred guests. Northumberland House, in London, was enlarged, and Sir Horace Mann [q.v.] was commissioned to buy pictures for its adornment. Walpole thought the gallery 'might have been in better taste' (see letters to Sir H. Mann, *Corresp.* ii. 479, iii. 75). Bishop Percy said that Syon House had been formed into a villa which, for taste and elegance, is scarce to be paralleled in Europe (Aungier, *Hist. of Syon Monastery*, p. 125). The duke formed a fast friendship with Bishop Percy, and through the bishop he came to know Oliver Goldsmith, to whom he showed much courtesy. In the management of his large property he showed much business capacity. Between 1749 and 1778 the rent-roll of the Northumberland estates rose from 8,607*l.* to 50,000*l.* The country was planted, drained, and reclaimed, and the labourers' houses were improved. The result was largely due to the development of the mines.

The duke died on 6 June 1786 at Syon House, and was buried with great pomp in his family vault in St. Nicholas's Chapel, Westminster Abbey.

He was the handsomest man of his day. Walpole grudgingly admitted his advantageous figure and courtesy of address, but declared that 'with the mechanic application to every branch of knowledge, he possessed none beyond the surface;' and that 'the old nobility beheld his pride with envy and anger, and thence were the less disposed to overlook the littleness of his temper.' Walpole also charged him with 'sordid and illiberal conduct at play,' a failing which is glanced at in 'A Tale' published with 'The Rolliad,' where the Duke divides a small unclaimed sum with the waiter at Brooks's; but Walpole concluded that, 'in an age so destitute of intrinsic merit, his foibles ought to have passed almost for virtues' (*Memoirs of George III*, i. 418–20; cf. *Last Journals*, ed. Doran, ii. 306). Dutens, who knew more of the duke than Walpole, and was an equally good judge of character, said that 'he had great talents and more knowledge than is generally found amongst the nobility;' but adds that, 'although his expenditure was unexampled in his time, he was not generous, but passed for being so owing to his judicious manner of bestowing favours' (*Memoirs of a Traveller*, ii. 96–8).

The duchess, long a conspicuous figure in

society, had some literary taste. Walpole applied to her the epithet 'junketaceous,' and credited her with an excess of patrician pride and ostentation. He says that she persisted in following the queen to theatres with a longer retinue than her own, and that she was mischievous under an appearance of frankness. Dutens, on the other hand, who knew the duchess intimately, credits her with magnanimity and a strong attachment to her friends. It was for her amusement that Goldsmith's ballad 'Edwin and Angelina,' written in 1764, and subsequently printed as 'The Hermit' in the 'Vicar of Wakefield,' was originally privately printed in 1765. She contributed to the book of fashionable *bouts-rimés* projected by Sir John and Lady Miller of Batheaston (cf. TATE, *History of Alnwick*). Boswell boasted of a correspondence with her. Her entertainments at Northumberland House, at which the best contemporary musicians, like Niccolini and Mrs. Tofts, performed, were far-famed. The duchess died on 5 Dec. 1776. 'The Teares of Alnwick, a Pastoral Elegy,' by Henry Lucas (*fl.* 1795) [q. v.], and 'A Monody sacred to the memory of Elizabeth, Duchess of Northumberland,' by Thomas Maurice [q. v.], commemorated her.

Northumberland had by his wife two sons and a daughter, Elizabeth, who died unmarried. The elder son, Hugh, his successor, is noticed separately. The second son, Algernon (1750–1830), distinguished himself in the Gordon riots. On the death of his father he became a peer under the title of Viscount Lovaine of Alnwick, and was in 1790 created Earl of Beverley. He married, in June 1775, Isabella Susannah, second daughter of Peter Burrell of Beckenham, by whom he was father of (among other children) George, fifth duke of Northumberland, Hugh, bishop of Carlisle [q. v.], and Admiral Josceline Percy [q. v.] The duke had also two natural daughters, who, as well as his legitimate children, were buried in Westminster Abbey, and an illegitimate son, known as James Smithson [q. v.], who founded the Smithsonian Institution at Washington.

A portrait of the first duke was painted by Reynolds, and De Fonblanque, in his 'Annals of the House of Percy,' gives reproductions of etched portraits of both the duke and duchess, by W. Hole. Bromley mentions paintings of the duke by Hamilton engraved by Finlayson, by Sharples engraved by Hodges (dated 1784), and by D. Pariset, after P. Falconet.

[Lodge's Genealogy of the Peerage; Doyle's Baronage; Gent. Mag. 1786, i. 529, ii. 617; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy (founded on documents among the Alnwick MSS.), ch. xvi. app. pp. xxxiv–vi; Tate's Hist. of Alnwick, i. 325–60; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; Walpole's Mem. George II, ed. Lord Holland, 2nd ed. i. 8, iii. 27, Mem. George III, ed. Le Marchant, i. 88, 205, 308, 418–20*n.*, Letters, ed. Cunningham, 1891. passim, and Last Journals, ed. Doran, ii. 306; Rockingham Memoirs, i. 185–203; Grenville Papers, ed. Smith, ii. 6, 223, 225, iii. 112, 175, 177, 224, 225, 329, 330, 384–5, iv. 208, 209, 213; Chatham Corresp. ii. 240, iii. 74–76*n.*, 81, 88; Memoirs of a Traveller (Dutens), i. 262, ii. 96–8, &c.; Notes and Queries, 6th ser. vii. 71; Almon's Polit. Anecdotes, ii. 51–2; Jesse's Life and Reign of George III, i. 425, 444; Dyson's Tottenham High Cross, pp. 96–7; Thornbury's Old and New London, iii. 137; Lord Auckland's Corresp. i. 378 (letter concerning his legacies); Ret. Memb. Parl.; Forster's Life of Goldsmith, i. 402–7, ii. 257; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, 1891. See also an article in Temple Bar, May 1873; Evans's Cat. Engr. Portraits; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Chester's Reg. Westminster Abbey, pp. 441–453 (where date of birth is probably wrongly entered).] G. LE G. N.

PERCY, HUGH, second DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND of the third creation (1742–1817), eldest son of Hugh Smithson Percy, first duke [q. v.], was born on 28 Aug. 1742. On the death of his mother in 1776 he succeeded to the barony of Percy. Horace Walpole credited him in his youth with a 'miserable constitution.' On 1 May 1759 he was gazetted ensign in the 24th foot, but exchanged into the 85th, with the rank of captain, on 6 Aug. of the same year. On 16 April 1762 he became lieutenant-colonel commanding the 111th regiment. He served under Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick during the seven years' war, and was present at the battles of Bergen and Minden. His 'Pocket-Book of Military Notes, 1760–61,' is among the Alnwick MSS. In 1762 he became captain and lieutenant-colonel in the grenadier guards, and on 26 Oct. 1764 was appointed colonel and aide-de-camp to George III. Meanwhile he had been elected, on 15 March 1763, member for Westminster, which he continued to represent till his elevation to the peerage in 1776. His marriage with Bute's daughter gained him admission to the king's private junto (ALBEMARLE, *Rockingham*, i. 185), and his appointment as colonel of the 5th fusiliers in November 1768 was strongly animadverted upon in Junius's 'Letter to Sir W. Draper,' 7 Feb. 1769. He had then, however, loosened his connection with the court, as he did not approve of the king's American policy.

Though opposed to the policy of the war, Percy embarked for Boston in the spring of 1774, and was placed by General Thomas Gage

[q. v.] in command of the camp there. On 19 April 1775, after the battle of Lexington, he marched out of Boston in command of a brigade, consisting of the Welsh fusiliers and four other regiments; with their aid he covered the retreat to Charlestown of the army which had been hemmed in at Concord without ammunition. He marched thirty miles in ten hours during the day, and was under an incessant fire for fifteen miles (Bancroft, iv. 538–9). Owing probably to a disagreement with William Howe, fifth viscount [q. v.], he did not accompany his regiment to Bunker Hill, where it was, in his own words, 'almost entirely cut to pieces;' but in March 1776, 'though he had no heart for the enterprise,' according to Bancroft, he was given the command of two thousand four hundred men for an attack on Dorchester Heights. The attack was ultimately abandoned, and Boston evacuated. Meanwhile Percy, whose conduct in the retreat from Concord had been highly commended in despatches by General Gage, was appointed on 11 July 1775 major-general in America, and on 29 Sept. advanced to that rank in the army. On 26 March 1776 he became general in America, and attained the rank of lieutenant-general in the army on 29 Aug. 1777. On 16 Nov. 1776 he commanded a division in the attack on Fort Washington, and was the first to enter the enemy's lines. In the following year, however, after many disputes with Howe, he demanded and obtained his recall. On 18 June Walpole writes: 'Lord Percy is come home disgusted with Howe' (*Corresp.* vi. 445, 446 *n.*)

Percy was very popular with his regiment, which obtained permission to call itself the Northumberland fusiliers. He was opposed to corporal punishment, and gave more care to commissariat arrangements than was customary at the time. The widows of men in his regiment who had been killed at Bunker Hill were sent home at his expense, and given a further sum of money on landing. On 2 Nov. 1784 Percy received the command of the second troop of horse grenadier guards, which was transferred in June 1788 to the 2nd lifeguards (Cannon, *Hist. Rec. of Life Guards*, p. 287). When the regiment went to the Netherlands in 1815, Northumberland gave each man a guinea and a blanket. He had attained the rank of general on 12 Oct. 1793, and in 1798 he took command of the Percy yeomanry regiment; on 30 Dec. 1806 he was gazetted to the colonelcy of the horse-guards, which he held for six years.

Percy was at first an admirer of Pitt, but he complained of neglect by the court in receiving no reward for his services in America, and gradually identified himself with the opposition. He succeeded to the dukedom in 1786, and was nominated to the lord-lieutenancy and vice-admiralty of Northumberland. On 9 April 1788 he received the Garter. Next year he formed one of what was called 'the armed neutrality' group, and subsequently joined the Prince of Wales's circle of friends (Auckland, *Corresp.* ii. 301; cf. *Courts and Cabinets of George III*, i. 399, 410, ii. 79). Both king and queen evinced dislike of his proceedings. George III had written (5 Nov. 1780) of 'that peevish temper for which he [Percy] has ever been accused' (*Corresp. with North*, ii. 341). When Fox anticipated taking office in 1789, he offered Northumberland the lord-lieutenancy of Ireland and afterwards the mastership of the ordnance (Russell, *Life of C. J. Fox*, iv. 283).

In 1797 further overtures were made to him through Lord Moira in expectation of Pitt's retirement, but he received them coolly, remarking that no ministry would last a session against both Pitt and Fox. In 1803 he declined joining in an attack on Addington, on the ground that it would make room for Pitt, whose principles he detested. His impracticable temper in politics was well satirised about 1802 in a tory squib called 'Wood and Stone; or a Dialogue between a Wooden Duke and a Stone Lion,' the latter being the figure over the entrance of Northumberland House. The duke is represented as replying to the remonstrances of the lion:

> Tho' to my Sovereign's grace I owe
> My Garter and commission,
> A sneaking kindness still, you know,
> I've shown for opposition.

On 10 June 1803 the prince-regent asked him to nominate 'my young friend Tom Sheridan' for one of his boroughs. The duke replied that he was keeping it for his eldest son.

After the resumption of the war in 1803, Northumberland expressed open dissatisfaction with the military arrangements, and resigned the lord-lieutenancy of Northumberland. But, in view of a threatened French invasion, he raised fifteen hundred men among his tenantry and equipped them at his own expense.

When, in 1806, Fox and Grenville formed the ministry of All the Talents, Northumberland was not consulted. To mark his resentment, he sent a circular on 4 Feb. to all the members for his boroughs, desiring them not

to take part in debate or vote 'until he had been able to judge of the principles upon which this new coalition intend to govern the country.' He refused to accept Fox's explanations, and 'confessed he was totally mistaken in his character.' But the prince-regent sent him a long letter, urging him to take a more amiable view of the situation, and a reconciliation with Fox followed. In June 1807 Northumberland was privately assured by the Portland ministry 'that in the event of his grace having any disposition to confer with ministers upon public business, the Duke of Portland or the lord chancellor will certainly wait upon him to discuss every measure of importance previous to its adoption.' Shortly afterwards he was offered the command of the blues and a peerage for his eldest son. But in February 1812 Thomas Grenville informed the Marquis of Buckingham: 'I suppose we must now reckon Northumberland decidedly adverse to us, because, though he was magnificent enough to refuse the bedchamber for his son, he was shabby enough to ask it for his son-in-law' (*Court and Cabinets of the Regency*, p. 240).

Northumberland was an admirable landlord. He gave large entertainments at Alnwick twice a week, tradesmen and dissenting ministers being sometimes invited. When prices fell after the peace he reduced his rents twenty-five per cent.; and the tenantry, to show their gratitude, erected a memorial column in 1816. But when some gave up their farms in expectation of a further reduction, they were forbidden to compete for them again; this prohibition remained in force till the time of the fourth duke. Northumberland was elected F.S.A. in May 1787, and F.R.S. on 6 March 1788. When Earl Percy, he presented to the king a petition, with twenty thousand signatures, in favour of Dr. Dodd, on which Dr. Johnson wrote 'Observations.' Boswell met him at dinner at Paoli's house on 22 April 1778, and Johnson wrote a letter designed to interest him in Bishop Percy, editor of the 'Reliques.' Frequent and excessive gout made him irritable, and he seems to have had his full share of family pride. He died rather suddenly on 10 July 1817, and was buried in the family vault in Westminster Abbey. Walpole says that he was 'totally devoid of ostentation, most simple and retiring in his habits.'

The duke was twice married: first, on 2 July 1764, to Lady Anne Stuart, daughter of Lord Bute, from whom he was divorced in 1779; and, secondly, on 25 May 1779, to Frances Julia (*d.* 1820), third daughter of Peter Burrell, esq., of Beckenham, Kent. By the latter, whose sister his younger brother Algernon had previously married, he had three daughters and two sons, all of whom were buried in Westminster Abbey (Chester, *Register*, pp. 493, &c.) The eldest son, Hugh Percy, third duke, and Algernon Percy, fourth duke, are separately noticed. Two portraits by Stuart were engraved by Turner and Scriven. Finlayson both drew and engraved a portrait of him as Lord Warkworth, and engraved one by Hamilton of him as duke. A whole length of Northumberland, sitting in his robes, was painted by Phillips and engraved by Ransom (Evans, *Cat. Engr. Portraits*).

[Doyle's Baronage, with portrait after Battoni, 1765; Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ch. xvi., containing many extracts from the Alnwick MSS.; Tate's Hist. of Alnwick, i. 360–3; Walpole's Memoirs of George III, i. 420, Last Journals (Doran), i. 422, ii. 120, 306 *n.*, and Letters (1891), vi. 218, 445–6 *n.*; Grenville Papers, ii. 149, 168, 385, 516, iii. 384; Jesse's Memoirs of George III, ii. 88, 95–6; Rose's Diary and Corresp. i. 51–61; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, iii. 142–3, 276–277; Bancroft's Hist. United States; Ann. Reg. 1817, pp. 145–6; Europ. Mag. p. 84; Official Returns Memb. Parl.; authorities cited.]

G. Le G. N.

PERCY, HUGH, third Duke of Northberland of the third creation (1785–1847), eldest son of Hugh Percy, second duke [q.v.], by his second wife, was born on 20 April 1785. He was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, and was created M.A. in 1805, and LL.D. in 1809. On 1 Aug. 1806 he was elected member of parliament for Buckingham in the tory interest, and on 7 Oct. was returned for Westminster. In May 1807 he successfully contested the county of Northumberland, and was also returned for Launceston. On 17 March he brought forward a bill for the abolition of slavery in the colonies, but the house was counted out. On 12 March 1812 he was summoned to the House of Lords as Baron Percy, and on 10 July 1817 succeeded his father as Duke of Northumberland. On 25 Nov. 1819 he received the Garter, and at the coronation of George IV, in July 1821, he was the bearer of the second sword.

Northumberland went to Paris on 8 Feb. 1825 as ambassador-extraordinary to represent the British crown at the coronation of Charles X. He himself bore the whole cost of the mission, which was conducted with exceptional magnificence, and on his return was presented with a diamond-hilted sword as a national recognition of his services. On

23 March 1825 he was sworn of the privy council.

Unlike his father, Northumberland was a very moderate tory. He offended the king in 1825 by withholding his proxy from the opponents of the Catholic Relief Bill (Colchester, *Diary*, iii. 383). In January 1829 he accepted Wellington's offer of the viceroyalty of Ireland, on the understanding that he would be relieved of it in twelve or eighteen months. He explained at the same time that although he had opposed catholic relief when proposed by irresponsible men, he would rejoice to see a settlement of the question originating with Wellington as prime minister. He proposed that his salary should be reduced by 10,000*l*. The appointment gave general satisfaction. Greville expressed surprise that he consented to go, and attributed his acceptance of the office to an ambition to display his wealth. The premier urged him (16 July) to take strong measures to insure the tranquillity of the country, and thus facilitate the passing of the Catholic Relief Bill.

Much correspondence followed respecting the measures taken for preserving the peace of the country, and Northumberland was always anxious that enactments of parliament should be 'moderate, permanent, and applicable to all parts of Ireland.' George IV, early in 1830, personally appealed to Northumberland to reprieve a gentleman of Clare named Peter Comyn, who was sentenced to death for setting fire to his own house. Northumberland reluctantly yielded, but pointed out to Peel, the home secretary, the impolicy of making distinctions between classes in the administration of the criminal law.

On 25 April 1830 he issued a proclamation for suppressing the Catholic Association. He refused to grant public money in relief of distress, which should, in his opinion, rather be relieved by the local authorities. The Catholic Relief Act gained over many catholics, but the country was not pacified, and he advised the ministry that, should O'Connell move the repeal of the union, he should be 'heard with patience, and even encouragement, in order that he may be clearly and fully refuted by the undeniable evidence of facts.' In November 1830 the tory ministry fell, and Northumberland was recalled. Peel, in a letter to Wellington, which is among the Alnwick MSS., declared him to have been 'the best chief-governor that ever presided over the affairs of Ireland.' Northumberland was strongly opposed to parliamentary reform, but, living chiefly at Alnwick, took only an intermittent part in public affairs. He does not appear to have been popular in Northumberland. He obtained an improvement act for the town of Alnwick, and partially endowed St. Paul's Church, but made continued encroachments on common rights, and by his influence procured the exclusion of Alnwick from the Corporation Act. He showed an interest in literary and educational institutions. In 1831 he became a governor of King's College, London, and in 1834 a trustee of the British Museum. He was appointed high steward of Cambridge University in 1834, and was elected chancellor on 21 Oct. 1840. In 1843 he became constable and high steward of Launceston. He was also vice-president of the Society of Arts. On 12 Feb. 1847 he was found dead in his bed at Alnwick.

Greville calls Northumberland 'a very good sort of man, with a very narrow understanding, an eternal talker, and a prodigious bore.' The further statement that 'he had no political opinions' seems scarcely tenable in view of his early attitude on the slavery question and his later conduct of affairs in Ireland.

He married, on 29 April 1817, Lady Charlotte Florentina Clive, second daughter of Edward, earl of Powys, and granddaughter of Clive. She was for some time governess of Princess (afterwards Queen) Victoria, and was, according to Greville, 'sensible, amiable, and good-humoured, ruling her husband in all things.' She died on 27 July 1866. There being no issue of the marriage, the dukedom of Northumberland passed to the duke's brother Algernon, lord Prudhoe [q. v.]

Portraits of Northumberland as Lord Percy and as duke were painted by Phillips and engraved by Reynolds. Another was executed by Ward and engraved by Holl; and there is also a private plate, with arms, engraved by Graves after a painting by Mrs. Robertson.

[Doyle's Baronage (with engraving by Dean, after Robertson); Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 569–70; Tate's Hist. of Alnwick, i. 363–4; Wellington Corresp. 1873, vols. v–viii., passim; Lord Colchester's Diary, ii. 301, iii. 383, 592; Greville Memoirs, i. 162–4, iii. 408; Grad. Cant.; Ret. Memb. Parl.; Ann. Reg. 1847, Append. Chron. pp. 207–8; Evans's Cat. of Engraved Portraits.] G. Le G. N.

PERCY, HUGH (1784–1856), successively bishop of Rochester and of Carlisle, the third son of Algernon, first earl of Beverley, by Isabella Susannah, second daughter of Peter Burrell, esq., and sister of Lord Gwydyr, was born in London on 29 Jan. 1784. His mother was sister to Frances Julia Burrell, who married Hugh Percy, second duke of Northumberland [q. v.] He

was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. 1805, and D.D. 1825; he was admitted *ad eundem* at Oxford in 1834. He subsequently joined St. John's College. Having taken holy orders, he married, 19 May 1806, Mary, eldest daughter of Manners Sutton [q. v.], archbishop of Canterbury, by whom in 1809 he was collated to the benefices of Bishopsbourne and Ivychurch, Kent. In 1810 he was appointed chancellor and prebendary of Exeter, which appointments he held till 1816. On 21 Dec. 1812 he was installed chancellor of Salisbury Cathedral. In 1816 he was collated by his father-in-law to a prebendal stall at Canterbury Cathedral, and in the same year he received the enormously rich stall of Finsbury at St. Paul's, which he held till his death. In 1822 he was made archdeacon of Canterbury, and in 1825, on the death of Dr. Gerrard Andrewes [q. v.], he was raised to the deanery. Two years later (15 July 1827), on the death of Dr. Walker King, he was consecrated bishop of Rochester, from which see, after a few months' tenure, he was translated, on the death of Dr. Samuel Goodenough [q. v.], to that of Carlisle. This bishopric he held till his death.

While dean of Canterbury he promoted the repair of the interior of the cathedral, 'clearing off the white wash and removing modern incongruities,' personally superintending the work. As a bishop, though not approaching the modern standard of episcopal activity, Percy proved himself able and efficient. 'With him,' writes Chancellor Ferguson, 'a new régime set in,' and a quickened life began to stir in the diocese. In 1838 he established a clergy aid society, and in 1855 a diocesan education society. He found Rose Castle, the episcopal residence, much dilapidated and deformed with incongruous additions. Determined to make it worthy of the see, he called in the quaker architect Thomas Rickman [q. v.], under whose directions the house was entirely remodelled without any detriment to its mediæval character. The main cost was defrayed out of the episcopal revenues, but he is stated to have spent 40,000*l.* of his own money on the gardens, grounds, and outbuildings. A rosary, in which he delighted, was laid out by Sir Joseph Paxton [q. v.], who also formed the terraced gardens. A prelate of the old school, he is described as a genial specimen of a courtly country gentleman. He was fond of farming, in which he showed much practical skill. Few were better judges of a horse. On his long journeys to and from London, to attend the House of Lords, he used to drive his four horses himself. He died at Rose Castle on 5 Feb. 1856, and was buried in the parish churchyard of Dalston. His first wife, by whom he had a large family of three sons and eight daughters, died in September 1831. He married, secondly, in February 1840, Mary, the daughter of Sir William Hope Johnstone, G.C.B. His eldest son, Algernon, married Emily, daughter of Bishop Reginald Heber [q. v.], and heiress of her uncle, Richard Heber [q. v.], and assumed the name of Heber in addition to his own.

[Burke's Peerage, ed. 1895, p. 1074; Gent. Mag. 1856, pt. i. p. 421; Le Neve's Fasti, ed. Hardy; Ferguson's Diocesan Hist. of Carlisle; private information.] E. V.

PERCY, JAMES (1619-1690?), claimant to the earldom of Northumberland, born, it was alleged, at Harrowden in Northamptonshire in 1619, was the only surviving son of Henry Percy, by Lydia, daughter of Robert Cope of Horton in Northamptonshire. His grandfather was generally admitted to be Henry Percy 'of Pavenham' in Bedfordshire. When, upon the death of Jocelyn Percy, eleventh earl of Northumberland, and son of Algernon, tenth earl [q. v.], his only daughter Elizabeth, eventually Duchess of Somerset, succeeded to all the transmissible honours of her ancestry, James Percy, who had hitherto successfully followed the trade of trunkmaker in Dublin, came forward and challenged her great inheritance. The eleventh earl died at Turin on 21 May 1670, and the trunkmaker arrived in London in pursuit of his claims on 11 Oct. in that year. He waited, however, for some months, until the widowed countess, who was pregnant, had given birth to a dead child, and it was not until 3 Feb. 1671 that he entered his claim at the signet office, and presented a petition to the House of Lords praying for recognition in his person of the title, style, honours, and dignity of Baron Percy and Earl of Northumberland, as great-grandson of Sir Richard Percy, the fifth son of Henry Algernon, fifth earl [q. v.] Through Sir Richard, a soldier of repute, who had died at Angers, aged 73, in 1648, he claimed to be next-of-kin in the male line. Shortly afterwards the dowager-countess protested against his claim, and on 28 Feb. 1672 the House of Lords dismissed his petition as baseless. Not only, it was contended against the petitioner, had Sir Richard by general belief died unmarried, but it was impossible that a man born in 1575 should have a great-grandson born in 1619. Undeterred by the failure of his first assault upon the title, which he regarded as 'tentative or merely provocative

of discussion which might throw sufficient light upon the family pedigree to enable him to make out his true descent,' Percy now set to work to collect evidence to the effect that the last four earls had all owned his relationship, and in Trinity term 1674 he brought an action in the king's bench against one John Clarke for calling him an impostor. The case was tried before Sir Matthew Hale, who finally nonsuited the plaintiff, though he expressed a somewhat unguarded belief in the genuineness of his claim. Greatly encouraged, he now set seriously to work to find a more authentic great-grandfather, and, acting upon a hint given him by the old Countess of Dorset, who alleged that some of the Percy children were sent down south to Petworth in hampers at the time of the trouble in the north (1569?) during Queen Elizabeth's reign, he asserted that one of these children was his father, Henry Percy, who was a grandson of Sir Ingelram Percy, the younger brother of Henry Algernon, sixth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] Against the petition which he based upon this assertion it was contested that Sir Ingelram was unmarried, and that his only issue was one illegitimate daughter. It does not appear that Sir Ingelram's will was put in as evidence on either side, but the terms of this document, which is still extant in the prerogative court of Canterbury, dated 7 June 1538, render it extremely improbable that Sir Ingelram left any legitimate children. Percy's resources were well-nigh exhausted by his neglect of business and long residence in London; but upon the revolution of 1688, after a litigation extending over nearly twenty years, he determined to once more carry his claim before the House of Lords. On 11 June 1689 a final judgment was given against him by the peers, by whom he was sentenced to be brought before the four courts in Westminster Hall, bearing upon his breast a paper, with the inscription, 'The False and Impudent Pretender to the Earldom of Northumberland.' He was then seventy years old, and he is supposed to have died shortly after the adverse decision. There is no mention of the execution of the sentence in the contemporary newspapers. Percy seems to have firmly believed in the justice of his claim, which was evidently regarded as plausible by contemporary opinion; and the weight of interest that was arrayed against him insured him a certain measure of popular favour. On the other hand, it must be admitted that he was unable to adduce any documentary proofs, and showed himself completely ignorant of the character and degree of his pretended affinity with the noble house of Percy. The claimant left three sons, who were respectively merchants in London, Dublin, and Norwich, and of whom the second, Anthony, was lord mayor of Dublin in 1689, but the claim upon which he wasted so much energy was not renewed by any member of his family.

[To our Royal King's Sacred Majesty . . . the humble complaint of J. Percy, 1677, fol.; Claim, Pedigree, and Proceedings of James Percy, now claimant to the Earldom of Northumberland, presented to both Houses of Parliament, 1680, fol.; the Case of James Percy, Claymant to the Earldom of Northumberland, 1685; Craik's Romance of the Peerage, iv. 286–321 (containing a very full account of the proceedings in connection with the claim); De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 487; Burke's Peerage and Romance of the Aristocracy, iii. 154; Collins's Peerage, ii. 178; Brydges's Restituta, vol. iii.; Lords' Journals, 11 June 1687; Wheatley and Cunningham's London, iii. 528.]

T. S.

PERCY, JOHN (1569–1641), jesuit. [See FISHER, JOHN.]

PERCY, JOHN (1817–1889), metallurgist, third son of Henry Percy, a solicitor, was born at Nottingham on 23 March 1817. He went to a private school at Southampton, and then returned to Nottingham, where he attended chemical lectures by a Mr. Grisenthwaite at the local school of medicine. He wished to become a chemist, but yielded to his father's desire that he should graduate in medicine, and in April 1834 was taken by his brother Edmund to Paris to begin his medical studies. While in Paris he attended the lectures of Gay-Lussac and Thénard on chemistry, and of A. de Jussieu on botany. In 1836 he went for a tour in Switzerland and the south of France, and made a large collection of mineralogical and botanical specimens. In the same year he proceeded to Edinburgh, where he became a pupil of Sir Charles Bell [q. v.] and a friend of Edward Forbes [q. v.] In 1838 he graduated M.D. in the university, and obtained a gold medal for a thesis on the presence of alcohol in the brain after poisoning by that substance. In 1839 he was elected physician to the Queen's Hospital, Birmingham, but, having private means, did not practise. The metallurgical works in the neighbourhood excited his interest in metallurgy. In 1846 he worked with David Forbes (1828–1876) [q. v.] and William Hallowes Miller [q. v.] on crystallised slags. In 1847 he became a fellow of the Royal Society, and served on the council from 1857 to 1859. In 1848 he contributed a paper to the 'Chemist' (vol. i. p. 248) on a mode of extracting silver from

its ores (depending on the solubility of the chloride in sodium thiosulphate), which has led to the Von Patera process, used at Joachimsthal, and the Russell process, now largely employed in the western states of America (Roberts-Austen, in *Proc. Roy. Soc.*) In 1851 he was elected F.G.S., and was appointed lecturer on metallurgy at the newly founded Metropolitan School of Science (later Royal School of Mines, and now Royal College of Science) in London, under Sir Henry Thomas de la Beche [q. v.]; the post was later made a professorship. The influence exerted by Percy, while holding this position, on English metallurgy was of the utmost importance. As he said in his inaugural address, metallurgy was then looked on as an empirical art, and 'experience without scientific knowledge [was thought] more trustworthy than the like experience with it' (Roberts-Austen in *Nature*, xl. 206). Percy was an excellent lecturer and teacher, and most English metallurgists of his time were his pupils. Although the silver process was the only metallurgical one he actually invented, his work suggested many others; and the exceedingly important Thomas-Gilchrist process for making Bessemer steel from iron ores containing phosphorus was an outcome of his work (Percy, *Iron and Steel*, pp. 815, 818, 819), and was discovered by his pupils. In 1851 he undertook to superintend the analysis of a large number of specimens of iron and steel collected by his friend S. H. Blackwell (and now in the Jermyn Street Museum), and made partly at Blackwell's expense (*ib.* p. 204). His results constitute 'the first serious attempt at a survey of our national resources as regards ores of iron.' They were embodied in the volume on 'Iron and Steel' (published in 1864) of his great treatise on metallurgy, the first work of the kind written in modern times. This treatise (1861–80), which remained uncompleted, contains over 3,500 pages of terse and exact description of metallurgical processes, of minute and scientific discussion of the chemical problems they involve, often based on the author's careful original research, and of suggestions for future investigation. The drawings of plants are remarkably exact. The book, which has been translated into French and German, and has become a classic, involved an immense amount of labour. Percy's work on alloys, his discovery of 'aluminium bronze,' and his view that in many countries the iron age preceded the bronze age, deserve special mention.

Percy was appointed lecturer on metallurgy to the artillery officers at Woolwich in 1864 (*circa*) (*Journal of the Iron and Steel Institute*, 1885, i. 8), and retained this post till his death. He was appointed superintendent of ventilation, &c., of the houses of parliament on 6 Feb. 1865. He was also a member of the secretary for war's commissions on the application of iron for defensive purposes (1861), and on 'Gibraltar' shields (1867), and of the royal commissions on coal (1871), and on the spontaneous combustion of coal in ships (1875). In 1876 he was awarded the Bessemer medal of the Iron and Steel Institute, of which he was president during 1885 and 1886. In December 1879 the government decided to complete the removal of the Royal School of Mines from the Museum of Practical Geology in Jermyn Street to South Kensington. Objecting strongly to this course, Percy twice offered to rebuild the metallurgical laboratory in Jermyn Street; but his offer was refused, and he thereupon, in December 1879, resigned (Percy's letter to the *Times*, 1 Jan. 1880). Percy circulated a pamphlet containing his views on the subject (*Journal of the Iron and Steel Institute*, 1889, i. 210). In 1887 he was awarded the Millar prize of the Institute of Civil Engineers. In 1889 he received the Albert medal of the Society of Arts on his deathbed, with the words, 'My work is done.' He died on 19 June 1889. He had married, in 1839, Grace, daughter of John Piercy of Warley Hall, Birmingham; she died in 1880.

Percy was very tall and spare, and had strongly marked features. Shy in his early years, he became fond of society later, and received many friends at his home, first in Craven Hill, and afterwards in Gloucester Crescent, Bayswater. He frequented the Athenæum and Garrick Clubs, and was of a genial, though at times brusque, temper. He took an interest in social and political questions, on which he wrote many trenchant letters to the 'Times' under the signature 'Y;' and he could not refrain from denouncing the home-rule movement in his presidential address to the Iron and Steel Institute in 1886. A fair artist himself, he made a valuable collection of water-colour drawings and engravings, which were dispersed by sale in 1890. The manuscript catalogue of the water-colour drawings was bought by the British Museum. Percy's collection of metallurgical specimens is now at South Kensington.

Percy's publications are: 1. 'Experiments [on] the Presence of Alcohol in the Ventricles of the Brain after Poisoning by that Liquid' [1839]. 2. 'On the Importance of Special Scientific Knowledge to the Practical Metallurgist' (government publication),

1852. 3. 'On the Metallurgical Treatment and Assaying of Gold Ores,' 1852; 2nd edition, 1853. 4. 'A Treatise on Metallurgy,' including vol. i. 'On Fuel, Copper, Zinc, and Brass;' vol. ii. 'On Iron and Steel,' 1864, 2nd edition 1875; vol. iii. 'On Lead,' 1870; and vol. iv. 'On Silver and Gold,' 1880. 5. 'On the Manufacture of Russian Sheet-Iron,' 1871. The Royal Society's 'Catalogue' (vols. iv. viii. and x.) contains a list of twenty-one papers published by Percy singly, one in conjunction with W. H. Miller, and one with R. Smith. Besides these he published two presidential addresses to the Iron and Steel Institute in their 'Journal' (1885, i. 8, and 1886, i. 29), and an article 'On Steel Wire of High Tenacity' (*ib.* 1886, i. 162).

[Authorities quoted; Men of the Time, 11th edit.; Athenæum, 1889, i. 795; Blandford in Proc. of the Geological Soc. 1890, p. 45; Mrs. Andrew Crosse, 'A Many-sided Man,' in Temple Bar, lxxxix. 354, written from personal knowledge and information supplied by Percy's family; obituary in Journ. of the Iron and Steel Institute, 1889, i. 210; Times, 11 Dec. 1879, 1 Jan. 1880, and 11 and 13 Feb. 1880; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Royal Soc. Cat. of Scientific Papers; Cat. of Metallurgical Specimens formed by J. Percy, 1892.] P. J. H.

PERCY, JOSCELINE (1784–1856), vice-admiral, fourth son of Algernon Percy, second baron Lovaine of Alnwick, and afterwards (1790) first earl of Beverley, and grandson of Hugh Smithson Percy, first duke of Northumberland [q. v.], was born on 29 Jan. 1784. His mother was Isabella Susannah, second daughter of Peter Burrell of Beckenham, and sister of Peter, first lord Gwydyr. His brothers Henry (1785–1825) and Hugh (1784–1856) are noticed separately. He entered the navy in February 1797, on board the Sanspareil, then carrying the flag of Lord Hugh Seymour [q. v.] In 1801 he was moved into the Amphion, in which he went out to the Mediterranean in 1803, when he followed Lord Nelson and Captain Hardy to the Victory; in August he was appointed acting-lieutenant of the Medusa with Captain (afterwards Sir John) Gore. In her he assisted in the capture of the Spanish treasure-ships on 5 Oct. 1804. His commission was confirmed to 30 April 1804. In 1806 he was in the Diadem with Sir Home Riggs Popham [q. v.] at the capture of Cape Town, was promoted on 13 Jan. to command the Espoir brig, and was posted the same day to the Dutch ship Bato, reported to be in Simon's Bay. The Bato, however, was found to have been effectually destroyed, and as the Espoir had meantime sailed for England, Percy was compelled to return to the Diadem as a volunteer. Fortunately, on 4 March the French 46-gun frigate Volontaire came into Table Bay, in ignorance of the capture of the Cape; she was taken possession of, commissioned by Percy as an English ship of war, and sent to St. Helena, whence she took charge of the convoy to England. Percy's two promotions were confirmed, dating respectively from 22 Jan. and 25 Sept. 1806. He was also returned to parliament as member for Beeralston in Devonshire, and continued to represent that place till 1820. In 1807, in command of the Comus, he assisted, under Sir Samuel Hood [q. v.], in the occupation of Madeira; and in 1808, then captain of the Nymphe, he carried Junot from Portugal to Rochelle, according to the stipulations of the convention of Cintra. In November 1810 he was appointed to the Hotspur, a 36-gun frigate, which he commanded on the coast of France, and afterwards at Rio Janeiro and Buenos Ayres, for five years, returning to England in the end of 1815. On 26 Sept. 1831 he was nominated a C.B., and was promoted to be rear-admiral on 23 Nov. 1841. He was at the same time appointed to the chief command at the Cape of Good Hope, which he held till the spring of 1846. He became vice-admiral on 29 April 1851; and from June 1851 to June 1854 was commander-in-chief at Sheerness. He died at his country seat near Rickmansworth on 19 Oct. 1856. He married in 1820 Sophia Elizabeth, daughter of Moreton Walhouse of Hatherton, Staffordshire, and left issue.

Josceline's younger brother, WILLIAM HENRY PERCY (1788–1855), sixth son of the Earl of Beverley, born on 24 March 1788, entered the navy in May 1801 on board the Lion of 64 guns, in which he went to China, and on his return in November 1802 joined the Medusa, of which his elder brother was shortly afterwards appointed acting-lieutenant. He was promoted commander on 2 May 1810, and during 1811 commanded the Mermaid, which was employed in transporting troops to the Peninsula. He was posted on 21 March 1812. In 1814 he commanded the Hermes of 20 guns on the coast of North America; but on 4 April, having lost fifty men killed and wounded in an unsuccessful attack on Fort Bowyer, Mobile, his ship was set on fire to prevent her falling into the enemy's hands. After the peace he had no further service in the navy, but was for many years a commissioner of excise and M.P. for Stamford. He became a rear-admiral on the retired list on 1 Oct. 1846, and died on 5 Oct. 1855.

[Statement of Services in the Public Record Office; Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. v. (suppl. pt. i.) 184; O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict.; Gent. Mag. 1856, ii. 782; Burke's Peerage, s.n. Northumberland.] J. K. L.

PERCY, PETER (*fl.* 1486), alchemist, was a priest and canon of the collegiate church of Maidstone. He wrote a treatise on the philosopher's stone which was twice copied, in 1595 and 1600, and exists in the Ashmolean MSS. 1406, iv. 79, and 1423, iii. 10. It contains sixty-two alchemical recipes and experiments, and begins 'Solidatura ad Y (i.e. ☾) R' ij partes Y,' and ends 'De isto pulvere mitte unam partem super 1000 ☌ (i.e. ☿) ut supra. Finis.'

[Tanner's Bibliotheca; Cat. of Ashmolean MSS.] M. B.

PERCY, SIR RALPH (1425–1464), soldier, was seventh son of Henry Percy, second earl of Northumberland [q. v.], by Eleanor, daughter of Ralph, first earl of Westmorland, and widow of Ralph, lord Spencer. He took the Lancastrian side throughout the wars of the roses, and was the leader of the Percys in their inter-tribal warfare with the Nevilles during the latter part of Henry VI's reign. He was with Queen Margaret in her march south after the battle of Wakefield; and when Edward IV had been proclaimed king, he occupied Bamborough Castle for her, but he surrendered it on 24 Dec. 1462, and swore fealty to Edward. Early in 1463 he changed sides again, and allowed the Scots to retake Bamborough; he held to the Lancastrian cause for the rest of his life, even though the queen sailed that summer to the Low Countries. He very nearly captured Edward as he marched north to Newcastle early in 1464, and was the captain in the battle of Hedgely Moor on 25 April 1464. Here he was killed fighting, and just before his death was heard to say, 'I have saved the bird in my bosom,' meaning his loyalty to Henry (OMAN, *Warwick*, p. 154). A rudely carved column, called 'Percy's Cross,' marks the spot where he fell. He was unmarried.

[Ramsay's Lancaster and York, ii. 302 &c.; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 283–6; Three Fifteenth-Century Chronicles, pp. 156, 158, 176, 178.] W. A. J. A.

PERCY, REUBEN and SHOLTO (pseudonyms). [See BYERLEY, THOMAS, *d.* 1826.]

PERCY, RICHARD DE, fifth BARON PERCY (1170?–1244), born about 1170, was second son of Agnes, heiress of the original Percy family, and Josceline de Louvain, a younger son of Godfrey, duke of Brabant, who took his wife's name on his marriage. Richard is said to have taken a prominent part in the vehement opposition of the northern barons to the proposed sale of Northumberland to William the Lion in 1194. In 1196 Percy's elder brother Henry died, leaving a son William (1183?–1245) [q. v.], in his fifteenth year. Percy assumed administration of his nephew's lands and the baronial rights as fifth baron Percy, though the officially appointed guardian of the minor was William Brewer (*d.* 1226) [q. v.] In the same year his mother Agnes died, and he seized her lands, while he received the lands of his aunt the Countess of Warwick by bequest. After his nephew had attained his majority, Richard retained his property. A long litigation between the two was not concluded till 1234, when it was decided that Richard should hold the moiety of the Percy estates bequeathed to him by the Countess of Warwick, but at his death the whole property was to revert to William.

Percy was one of the northern barons who began the struggle which ended in the signing of Magna Charta by refusing to accompany the king to France in 1213 (STUBBS, i. 580; ROG. WEND. Rolls Ser. ii. 114). On 7 May 1215 he and some others made an attempt to treat with the king (*Patent Rolls*, 17 John, Record Comm. p. 180); he was one of the twenty-five executors of Magna Charta (STUBBS, i. 582), and he was excommunicated by Innocent III by name on 26 Dec. In 1216 he and other northern barons reduced Yorkshire to the obedience of Louis of France (ROG. WEND. ii. 169, 190). On 11 May 1217 Henry III granted Percy's lands to his nephew William. But they were restored by the king on Percy's submission on 2 Nov. (*Close Rolls*, Record Comm. i. 308, 339).

Percy helped to besiege Ralph de Gaugi in Newark Castle in 1218 (*ib.* i. 379 *b*), and he was one of three barons charged with the destruction of Skipton Castle in 1221 (*ib.* p. 474). In 1236 he appears among the witnesses of the confirmation of the charters (*Annals of Tewkesbury*, i. 104). The year after, when in the parliament the barons prepared to deliberate apart on the king's demands, Gilbert Basset suggested to the king that he should send some of his friends to attend the conference. The words caught the ear of Richard de Percy, and he indignantly cried, 'What did you say, friend Gilbert? Are we foreigners then, and not friends of the king?' (MATT. PARIS, *Hist. Maj.* iii. 381–2). He died before 18 Aug. 1244 (*Excerpta e Rotulis Finium*, Record

ed. i. 421). The manor of Ludford was left by him to the priory of Sixhills (*Rot. Cart. Joh.* p. 159 *b*).

On the death of his first wife, a sister of William Brewer, Percy married Agnes de Neville, by whom he had two sons, Henry and Alexander.

[Besides authorities cited in the text, see De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, 1887, i. 36 sq. and 482–7 (appendix); Dugdale's Baronage of England, 1675, i. 271; Banks's Dormant and Extinct Baronetage, ii. 415.]

W. E. R.

PERCY, SIDNEY RICHARD (1821?–1886), landscape-painter and founder of the 'School of Barnes,' was born about 1821. He was the sixth son of Edward Williams, a landscape-painter, whose seven sons followed the same branch of art as their father, and three of whom called themselves respectively Henry John Boddington [q. v.], Arthur Gilbert, and Sidney Richard Percy, in order to avoid confusion with their relatives and other artists of the same name. He began to exhibit landscapes both at the Royal Academy and at the Society of British Artists in 1842, and at the British Institution in 1843. His works consisted chiefly of English and Welsh scenery, and especially of views on the Thames, and, although no picture can be singled out for mention from among others, they were at one time very popular. He contributed in all nearly three hundred pictures to the various London exhibitions.

Percy died at his residence, Woodseat, Sutton, Surrey, on 13 April 1886, aged 64. His remaining pictures and sketches were sold by Messrs. Christie, Manson, & Woods on 27 Nov. 1886.

[Athenæum, 1886, i. 592; Bryan's Dict. of Painters and Engravers, ed. Graves and Armstrong, 1886–9, ii. 769; Royal Academy Exhibition Catalogues, 1842–86; British Institution Exhibition Catalogues (Living Artists), 1843–1863; Exhibition Catalogues of the Society of British Artists, 1842–84.]

R. E. G.

PERCY, THOMAS (1333–1369), bishop of Norwich. [See under Percy, Henry, second Baron Percy of Alnwick.]

PERCY, THOMAS, Earl of Worcester (*d.* 1403), second son of Henry, third baron Percy of Alnwick (1322–1368) [see under Percy, Henry, second Baron Percy of Alnwick], by Mary, youngest daughter of Henry, earl of Lancaster (1281?–1345) [q. v.], was born about 1344. Henry de Percy, earl of Northumberland (1342–1408) [q. v.], was his elder brother, and Blanche, first wife of John of Gaunt, his first cousin. The first mention of him is early in 1369, when he was serving under Sir John Chandos [q. v.] at Montauban and Duravel (Froissart, vii. 140, 143, ed. Luce); in July he was present at the siege of Roche-sur-Yon (*ib.* vii. 160). On both these occasions he is described as seneschal of La Rochelle; and this is perhaps the post which Percy really held, though it has been alleged that in the early months of 1369 he was seneschal of Poitou (*ib.* vol. vii. p. lxxv, *n.*) Certainly, in the latter part of 1369, Chandos was seneschal of Poitou, and Percy, as seneschal of La Rochelle, accompanied him on his attempted night attack on St. Savin on 30 Dec., and was present next day in the engagement at the bridge of Lussac, when Chandos lost his life (*ib.* vii. 196–202). Probably after an interval of a few months—for he is stated to have succeeded Sir Baldwin de Freville (Chandos Herald, *Le Prince Noir*, l. 4233)—Percy became seneschal of Poitou, a post which he was holding in November 1370 (Froissart, vol. vii. pp. lxxv, lxxxvii, ed. Luce). He was present at the relief of Belleperche in February 1370, and at the siege and sack of Limoges later in the same year (*ib.* vii. 215, 244). In February 1371 he served under John of Gaunt at the attack on Montpont, and in August commanded the force which captured Montcontour (*ib.* viii. 19, 20). On the departure of John of Gaunt, in September 1371, Percy was left in charge of Poitou and Saintonge. On 24 June 1372 he came to La Rochelle, where he received the news of the capture of John Hastings, second earl of Pembroke [q. v.] A little later he marched out to Soubise, but was shortly afterwards recalled to Poitiers, which was threatened by Du Guesclin. About the middle of July Percy advanced, with John Devereux and Jean de Grailly, the Captal de Buch, to the relief of St. Sévère. After the failure of this enterprise, and despite the dangerous position of Poitiers, Percy consented to remain with the Captal de Buch. The two commanders defeated a French force before Soubise, but were in their turn surprised and taken prisoners by Owen of Wales (*d.* 1378) [q. v.] under that town on 23 Aug. 1372 (*ib.* viii. 69). Percy, whose captor was a Welsh squire called Honvel [? Howel] Flinc, was still a prisoner at Paris on 10 Jan. 1373 (*ib.* vol. vii. p. xxxviii, *n.* 1). But later in the same year he was ransomed by the surrender of the castle of St. Germain Leuroux (*Archæologia*, xx. 14).

Percy spent the next few years in England. Previously to 4 April 1376 he was made a knight of the Garter, and about the

same time received two annuities of one hundred marks from the king and the Prince of Wales for his services in Guyenne. On 1 Dec. 1376 he was appointed constable of Roxburgh Castle, a post which he held till 1 May 1381 (Doyle, iii. 715; cf. *Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland*, iv. 250, 290), and on 16 July 1377 was joint-warden of the eastern marches. In the previous February he had been employed, together with Geoffrey Chaucer the poet, in a mission to Flanders, receiving fifty marks for his expenses (Nicolas, *Life of Chaucer*, i. 21). At the coronation of Richard II, on 16 July, Percy was in attendance on his brother as marshal. On 22 Oct. 1378 Percy was a guardian of the truce, and one of the commissioners to treat with Scotland (Doyle, iii. 715). On 5 Nov. he was appointed admiral of the fleet north of the Thames, Sir Hugh Calveley [q. v.] being the admiral of the south. When the Earl of Buckingham put to sea, Percy remained behind to fit out his fleet, and so escaped the storm. Afterwards he sailed in December with a great ship, two barks and smaller vessels, and, falling in with a fleet of forty Spanish and Flemish merchantmen, captured two-and-twenty of them (Walsingham, i. 364–5). In the following year Percy and Calveley cruised with success in the Channel. On 4 March they were appointed joint captains of Brest, and on 9 July were commissioners to confirm the alliance with Brittany (*Fœdera*, iv. 58, 67, Record edit.) In the autumn he sailed with his fleet to escort the duke—Jean de Montfort—back to Brittany (Monk of Evesham, pp. 11, 12). While still at sea, in December, he fell in with a Spanish ship, and, though weakened by the effects of his long cruise, captured and brought it into Brest. His fleet escaped the disaster which overtook that under Sir John Arundel of Lanherne (*d.* 1379) [q. v.], perhaps through the good discipline which he and Calveley maintained; for while so many of Arundel's ships were wrecked, they lost no men, and not even any horses (Walsingham, i. 425–6; the Monk of Evesham, p. 17, ascribes their better fortune to their superior piety in paying their debts when in port).

In 1380 Percy took part in the great expedition of Thomas of Woodstock, earl of Buckingham, for which he was retained with two hundred men-at-arms and two hundred archers (Froissart, vol. ix. p. c *n.*, ed. Reynaud). The English landed at Calais in July, and marched through northern France to Brittany. Percy was sent from Rennes with Sir Robert Knolles to bring the Duke of Brittany to the English camp. At the subsequent siege of Nantes he was posted with Knolles at St. Nicholas Gate, and in December was employed on a fresh mission to the duke. He took part in the skirmish before Nantes on 24 Dec., and after the siege was raised, on 2 Jan. 1381, was stationed with William, lord Latimer [q. v.], and Sir Thomas Trivet at Hennebon. When, on 11 April, Buckingham was on the point of sailing from Vannes, Jean de Montfort begged for an interview. Percy was sent to him, and had a three hours' conference; but Buckingham refused to delay, and set sail that same night, Percy no doubt returning with him to England (Froissart, vii. 382–429, ed. Buchon). Percy is mentioned as keeper of Brest Castle on 30 June (Devon, *Issues of Exchequer*, p. 216). But in July he was employed under the Earl of Buckingham to suppress Jack Straw's rebellion in Essex, and was afterwards sent to St. Albans to protect the abbey (Walsingham, *Gesta Abbatum*, iii. 323, 342, and *Hist. Angl.* ii. 18, 28). On 3 Aug. 1383 he is named as joint warden of the eastern marches towards Scotland. On 4 Oct. he was appointed one of the commissioners to treat with Flanders, and on 4 Nov. to treat with France, for which purpose he crossed over to Calais (*Fœdera*, vii. 412, 414, orig. edit.; Froissart, ix. 4, ed. Buchon). On 26 Jan. 1384 he was named one of the conservators of the consequent truce in Brittany, and appointed by the council on 8 Feb. (*Fœdera*, vii. 420–1). On 23 April directions were given that he should be employed in the Scottish marches in support of his brother (*ib.* vii. 425). In the following year it was intended to send Percy with John of Gaunt to Bordeaux; but fears of a French invasion through Scotland prevented the expedition (Froissart, ix. 77, ed. Buchon). Percy was again employed as admiral of the north, but did not repeat the successes of six years previously, and incurred unfavourable comment for letting the French cruise undisturbed (Walsingham, *Hist. Angl.* ii. 127). In 1386 Percy took part in the expedition of John of Gaunt to Spain. Before his departure he gave evidence in the Scrope and Grosvenor controversy at Plymouth, on 16 June, in support of Scrope (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, p. 50). The expedition, of which Percy was admiral, sailed from Plymouth on 7 July, and landed at Corunna on 9 Aug. Percy took part in the reconnaissance and skirmish before Ribadavira, escorted Philippa of Lancaster to Oporto to be married to King John of Portugal, and returned in time to join in the march to Betanços. He fought with Barrois des Barres before Ferrol, and in 1387 was present at the

skirmish before Vilhalpando. After the outbreak of pestilence which cost the life of his nephew, Thomas de Percy the younger, he returned with John Holland to England. On 15 May 1388 he sailed from Southampton in the expedition of Richard Fitzalan, earl of Arundel, to Brittany and La Rochelle, and afterwards rejoined John of Gaunt at Bayonne, in time to take the chief part in the negotiations with Don John of Castile, and in the spring of 1389 was sent to Burgos as the principal ambassador of John of Gaunt (*Chron. Angliæ*, 1328–88, p. 369; Lopez de Ayala, *Crónicas de los Reyes de Castilla*, ii. 284, Madrid, 1780).

On his return to England Percy was appointed vice-chamberlain to the king, and on 14 May 1390 made chief justice of South Wales. On 4 June he gave evidence in the Scrope and Grosvenor case, and on 28 Nov. was one of the judges of the appeal in that suit (*Fœdera*, vii. 677, 686, orig. edit.) Percy was the chief of the embassy that was sent to treat for peace with France on 22 Feb. 1392, and was handsomely entertained by Charles VI for six days at Paris (Froissart, xii. 315–21, ed. Buchon; cf. Beltz, pp. 224–5). He took part in the subsequent negotiations at Amiens and Leulingham in this and the following year. On 20 Jan. 1394 he was appointed seneschal or steward of the royal household (Monk of Evesham, p. 125). In July he was again justice of South Wales, and was with the king when hunting in the Principality (Froissart, ix. 201). Later in the year he went with Richard to Ireland, and on their return, in July 1395, was with the king at Canterbury and Leeds Castle in Kent, where, through his instrumentality, Froissart, who had come to England for this purpose, was introduced to Richard, and presented the king with his 'Livre d'Amours' (*ib.* xii. 207–12, 234). Percy was with Richard at Eltham in 1397, when the Londoners made their complaint against Thomas, duke of Gloucester. Froissart alleges that he resigned his office and withdrew from the court, in disapproval of the intended action against Gloucester (*ib.* xii. 17, 24–5). But this seems to be a misapprehension; for Percy was present in the parliament of September 1397, when by the king's wish he was chosen proctor for the clergy, in which capacity he assented to the banishment of Archbishop Arundel and the condemnation of the Earl of Arundel. On 29 Sept. he was rewarded with the title of Earl of Worcester. He was one of the committee appointed to wind up the business of the parliament in January 1398 (*Rolls of Parliament*, iii. 384 *b*, 351 *b*, 355 *b*, 377 *b*, 368 *b*). On 19 Oct. 1397 Percy had been made constable of Jedburgh Castle; in January 1398 he was captain of Calais; on 5 Feb. was one of the commissioners to treat with Scotland; and on 16 March signed the truce at Hawdenstank (*Fœdera*, viii. 32, 35, orig. edit.) In October 1398 Worcester was one of the attorneys for his cousin, Henry of Lancaster, during his banishment (*ib.* viii. 49; he had held a similar position eight years before, *ib.* vii. 691). On 16 Jan. 1399 Worcester was named admiral of the fleet for Ireland, whither he accompanied the king in May. In the meantime there had been a quarrel between Richard and the Earl of Northumberland and his son Henry (Hotspur). Worcester had gone to his brother and nephew, and perhaps advised their withdrawal to Scotland (Froissart, xiv. 167–8, ed. Buchon). On 4 July Henry of Lancaster landed at Ravenspur, and in August Richard, accompanied by Worcester, crossed over from Ireland to Milford Haven. Creton alleges that Worcester treacherously abandoned Richard at Milford, and was plundered by the Welsh on his way to join Henry (*Archæologia*, xx. 105, 157–8). Similarly, in the 'Traïson et Mort du Roy Richard,' it is stated that Worcester fled from Milford after bidding his followers disperse (p. 46). But other chroniclers give a circumstantial account of how Worcester, at Richard's bidding, dismissed the royal household, and broke his rod of office as steward in the hall of Conway Castle (Walsingham, *Hist. Angl.* ii. 233; Otterbourne, pp. 206–7; *Annales Ricardi II*, pp. 248–9). Both statements may be correct, on the assumption that the dismissal of Richard's household did not take place till after his surrender to Henry. But the author of the 'Annales Ricardi II' represents Worcester as acting with regret, and not with treachery. On the other hand, it is stated in the 'Traïson et Mort' (p. 58) that Worcester was sent by Henry to treat with Richard at Flint. In any case the influence of Northumberland would have secured Worcester a favourable reception from Henry.

Worcester is alleged to have opposed the assumption of the crown by Henry (Hardyng, p. 351). He was, however, present in the parliament which approved the deposition of Richard (*Rolls of Parliament*, iii. 427 *a*), and at the coronation of the new king, on 13 Oct., acted as vice-seneschal for Thomas of Lancaster. On 7 Nov. all his previous grants and emoluments were confirmed to him, and on 15 Nov. he was appointed admiral. He had conducted the examination of Sir William Bagot [q. v.] on 16 Oct., but,

owing to illness, was absent when judgment was pronounced on the accusers of Gloucester (*Annales Henrici IV*, pp. 308, 315). On 29 Nov. he was appointed a commissioner to treat with France, and on 16 Dec. left London to cross over to Calais. The negotiations continued at Leulingham till the spring of 1400 (*Fœdera*, viii. 108, 125, 128, 132; *Proc. Privy Council*, i. 83, 102; *Traison et Mort*, p. 105). In March 1400 Worcester was sent with a fleet to Aquitaine to quell the threatened disaffection, and succeeded in appeasing the communities of Bordeaux and Bayonne (Froissart, xiv. 238-41). On 18 May he was again appointed to treat for the restitution of Richard's child, Queen Isabella (*Fœdera*, viii. 142). He was present in parliament on 22 Jan. 1401, when he answered certain petitions on behalf of the king (*Rolls of Parliament*, iii. 455 *b*). Early in 1401 Worcester was reappointed seneschal (*Annales Henrici IV*, p. 337), and on 20 April resigned his post as admiral of the north. On 18 and 22 May he was present at the councils which settled the ordinances for Wales, and during this and the following month was employed in the negotiations with France (*Fœdera*, viii. 185-6, 199, 203). He was one of the commissioners who escorted Isabella to France in July. Early in 1402 Worcester was made lieutenant of South Wales, and captain of Cardigan and Lampeter Castles; but his formal appointment was only dated 31 March (cf. Wylie, *Hist. Henry IV*, i. 244). About the same time he was appointed tutor to the Prince of Wales. On 3 April he was present at Eltham when Henry was married by proxy to Joanna of Navarre. Worcester was a trier of petitions in the parliament held in October, and on 24 Oct. was appointed one of the escort to bring the new queen from Brittany. With this purpose he left Southampton on 28 Nov., and returned with Joanna in January 1403.

Worcester gave up his position as lieutenant of South Wales on 7 March 1403. He does not again appear in Henry's service, and was perhaps already falling under some suspicion; though the news that he had removed his treasure from London, abandoned his post with the prince, and joined his nephew Hotspur in open rebellion, came as a surprise about the middle of July. He joined with his brother and nephew in the formal defiance of the king (Hardyng, p. 352), and was present with the latter outside Shrewsbury on 21 July. In reply to Henry's overtures, Worcester was sent in the morning to the king. According to the common account, which is followed by Shakespeare in 'The First Part of King Henry IV,' act v. scenes 1 and 2, Henry showed a readiness to compromise; but Worcester made peace impossible by misrepresenting the king's proposals (Walsingham, *Hist. Angl.* ii. 257; Nicolas, *Chron. London*, p. 88). In the subsequent battle of Shrewsbury Worcester was taken prisoner. When he saw his nephew's dead body he burst into tears, declaring that he cared no more what fortune had in store for him (*Annales Henrici IV*, p. 370). He was beheaded two days later, on 23 July, according to one account against the king's own wish (*ib.*) His head was sent to London, where it was displayed on the bridge till 18 Dec., when it was taken down and sent to be buried with the body in the abbey church of St. Peter at Shrewsbury (Wylie, i. 364). In January 1484 the attainder against him was reversed in response to a petition by the then Earl of Northumberland (*Rolls of Parliament*, vi. 252 *b*). In spite of a statement to the contrary (cf. Beltz, p. 227 *n.*), it does not seem that Worcester was ever married. Froissart (xiv. 168, ed. Buchon) speaks of his intention to make his nephew Thomas—probably meaning his great-nephew—his heir. His silver plate was granted to the Prince of Wales, and much of his other property to George, earl of March (Wylie, i. 370; *Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland*, iv. 639; Devon, *Issues of Exchequer*, p. 298).

In his younger days, at all events, Percy was a brave and gallant soldier. Froissart says that he found him in 1395 'gentle, reasonable, and gracious' (xiii. 208). The writer of the 'Annales Henrici Quarti' (p. 365) says that no one would ever have suspected him of treason; for while English perfidy was a byword, he was always trusted, and the kings of France and Spain accepted his word as better than a bond. Yet he played the traitor both to Richard and to Henry. Family affection may account for his first act of treason; but the second is not to be explained so simply. The common accounts represent him as a prime mover in the rebellion (*Annales Henrici IV*, p. 368; *Chron. Lond.* p. 88; *Chron. Religieux de St. Denys*, iii. 112). The Monk of St. Denys (*ib.* iii. 110) speaks of Worcester's uneasy conscience at the memory of his share in Richard's fall. Worcester may also have felt that his family was too powerful to be tolerated permanently by the new king. Shakespeare suggests both views in 'The First Part of King Henry IV' (act i. sc. 3, and act v. scenes 1 and 2), in which play Worcester appears as the cool, wary intriguer, perhaps as a foil to his

nephew Hotspur. He was a benefactor of the university of Cambridge.

[Froissart, vols. vii–ix. ed. Luce and Reynaud, and vols. vii–xiv. ed. Buchon; Walsingham's Historia Anglicana, the Annales Ricardi II and Henrici IV in Trokelowe, Blaneford, &c., Chronicon Angliæ, 1328–88, Eulogium Historiarum (these four in Rolls Ser.); Vita Regis Ricardi Secundi, by the Monk of Evesham, ed. Hearne; Otterbourne's Chronicle; Hardyng's Chronicle; Adam of Usk's Chronicle, ed. Thompson; Chron. des Religieux de St. Denys; Traïson et Mort de Roy Richard (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Creton's poem on the deposition of Richard II in Archæologia, vol. xx.; Rymer's Fœdera; Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland, vol. iv.; Nicolas's Ordinances and Proceedings of the Privy Council; Devon's Issues of the Exchequer; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 285–6; Collins's Peerage, ed. Brydges, ii. 249–53; Doyle's Official Baronage, iii. 715–17; Beltz's Memorials of the Order of the Garter, pp. 221–7; Wylie's History of England under Henry IV; Nicolas's History of the Royal Navy, vol. ii.; Scrope and Grosvenor Controversy, i. 50, ii. 167.] C. L. K.

PERCY, THOMAS, seventh EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND (1528–1572), born in 1528, was elder son of Sir Thomas Percy, by his wife Eleanor, daughter of Guiscard Harbottal of Beamish, Durham. The father, a younger son of Henry Algernon Percy, fifth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], took a prominent part with his brother Ingelram in the Yorkshire rebellion of 1536 (the 'Pilgrimage of Grace'), was attainted, and was executed at Tyburn on 2 June 1537, being buried in the Crutched Friars' Church, London. Thereupon his elder brother, Henry Algernon Percy, sixth earl [q. v.], fearing the effect of the attainder on the fortunes of the family, voluntarily surrendered his estates to the crown, and on his death, on 29 June 1537, the title fell into abeyance. Sir Thomas's widow married Sir Richard Holland of Denton, Lancashire, and died in 1567.

Young Thomas and his brother Henry were entrusted, as boys, to the care of a Yorkshire squire, Sir Thomas Tempest of Tong Hall. They were restored in blood on 14 March 1549. Soon afterwards Thomas was permitted to inherit a little property destined for him by his uncle, the sixth earl. A catholic by conviction, he was favourably noticed by Queen Mary, who made him governor of Prudhoe Castle. In 1557 he displayed much courage in recapturing Scarborough, which had been seized by Sir Thomas Stafford, who was acting in collusion with the French. On 30 April 1557 he was knighted and created Baron Percy, and on the day following was promoted to the earldom of Northumberland, in consideration of 'his noble descent, constancy, virtue, and value in arms, and other strong qualifications.' Failing heirs male of his own, the title was to devolve on his brother Henry. A further portion of the estates attaching to the earldom was made over to him. A few weeks later he was nominated a member of the council of the north and high marshal of the army in the north.

Other honours quickly followed. He was elected a member of Gray's Inn in June, and became bailiff of the liberty of Richmond (June 26), and chief keeper of Richmond forest, and constable of Richmond and Middleham castles (26 July). On 2 Aug. 1557 he was appointed joint lord-warden-general of the east and middle marches towards Scotland, and captain of Berwick, and a week later lord-warden-general of the middle marches (Tynedale and Riddesdale). The general protection of the borders from the raids of the Scots was thus entrusted to his care. He performed his duties with much vigilance, and in August 1558 he anticipated a project of the Scots for surprising Norham and Wark castles. In January 1558–9 he raised a thousand men to garrison Berwick against the threatened invasion of the French.

His avowed catholic sympathies did not, however, commend him to Queen Elizabeth and her advisers. It is true that on her accession he was again nominated lord-warden-general of the east and middle marches, and was made lord-lieutenant of Northumberland, and, as chief commissioner to treat with Scotland respecting the boundaries of the two kingdoms, signed a treaty at Upsettington on 31 May 1559 (RYMER, *Fœdera*, xv. 472–4). But the borderers sent to London complaints of his rule: Ralph Sadler was ordered to inquire into the alleged grievances, and in his despatches expressed doubt of the wisdom or loyalty both of Northumberland and of his brother Henry. In 1560 the earl, smarting under Sadler's comments, resigned his office. Lord Grey, his wife's uncle, was appointed in his place. But Northumberland peremptorily refused to receive his successor at Alnwick Castle, and he raised objections when it was proposed in 1562 that he should invite the Queen of Scots there, so that she might have an interview in the castle with Queen Elizabeth. None the less he was elected K.G. on 22 April 1563. In 1565 Lord Burghley's agents reported that he was 'dangerously obstinate in religion.'

In 1567 he was exasperated by a claim preferred by the crown to a newly discovered copper-mine on his estate of Newland in

Cumberland; the authorities ignored his demand for compensation.

On 16 May 1568 Mary Queen of Scots landed at Workington in Cumberland, and was conducted by the deputy-warden of the marches, Sir Richard Lowther [q. v.], to Carlisle two days later. Northumberland asserted that the custody of the fugitive queen should by right be entrusted to him, as the chief magnate of the district. The council of the north seems to have given some recognition to his claim. Leaving his house at Topcliffe, he arrived at Carlisle, and was admitted to an interview with Mary Stuart. He expressed the fullest sympathy with her in her misfortunes. His friendly bearing was hotly resented by the government. Orders were at once sent from London that he should leave Carlisle forthwith. He obeyed with reluctance, and, meeting Sir Francis Knollys [q. v.], Queen Mary's new keeper, at Boroughbridge, bitterly complained that he had been treated with gross disrespect (Wright, *Queen Elizabeth*, i. 272–275).

Northumberland's dissatisfaction with Elizabeth's government now reached a crisis. Simple-minded by nature, he had no political ambitions, but he was devoted to the religion of his fathers, and had inherited a strong sense of his own and his family's importance in the border country. Had no efforts been made to thwart the peaceful exercise of his family's traditional authority, he would doubtless have spent his life in the sports of hunting and hawking, which he loved, and in exchanging hospitalities with his neighbours. But the imprisonment of Queen Mary—a champion of his faith—in his neighbourhood, and the rejection of his pretensions to hold free communication with her, roused in him a spirit of rebellion which his catholic friends and neighbours, who avowedly hated protestant rule, fanned into flame. Emissaries from Spain were aware of the discontent with the government which was current among the northern catholics, and they entered into communication with Northumberland, and promised him the aid of Spanish troops if any widespread insurrection could be arranged. An army of Spaniards would be sent over by the Duke of Alva. During 1569 Vitelli, marques of Catena, arrived in London under pretence of conducting an embassy, in order to be in readiness to take the command of a Spanish force on its landing. Thus encouraged, Northumberland allied himself with Charles Neville, ninth earl of Westmorland [q. v.], and together they resolved to set Queen Mary free by force, and to restore the catholic religion. A benediction on the enterprise was pronounced by Pius V. The Earl of Sussex, president of the council of the north, was on friendly terms with both the earls, and in September 1569 sumptuously entertained them and their retainers. He soon saw grounds for suspecting their loyalty; but they had formulated no plan of campaign, and there were no open signs of coming trouble. At Sussex's suggestion, the two earls were suddenly summoned to London early in November 1570. Northumberland excused himself in a letter, in which he declared his fidelity to the crown (14 Nov.) But the ruse of the government created a panic among the conspirators, and hurried them prematurely into action. On 15 Nov. some soldiers arrived at Northumberland's house at Topcliffe, bearing orders for his arrest as a precautionary measure. He succeeded in eluding the troops, and joined Westmorland at his house at Brancepeth. There they set up their standard and issued a proclamation announcing their intention to restore the catholic religion, and inviting assistance. Another proclamation followed, promising the release of Queen Mary, who was in confinement at Tutbury. The earls and their retainers were immediately joined by many of the neighbouring gentry, and they soon found themselves at the head of a force of seventeen hundred horse and four thousand foot. The cavalry was a well-trained body; the infantry was an undisciplined rabble. The next day (16 Nov.) the rebels marched to Durham, where they destroyed the service-books and set up the mass in the minster. On the 17th they moved south to Darlington; between the 18th and the 20th Northumberland visited Richmond, Northallerton, and Boroughbridge, appealing to the inhabitants to join him. On the 20th the two earls, with the Countess of Northumberland, celebrated mass at Ripon.

On Tuesday, 22 Nov., the whole body of rebels mustered under the two earls on Clifford Moor. Sir George Bowes, who had thrown himself into Barnard Castle, assembled an army in their rear, while Sir John Forster and Sir Henry Percy, Northumberland's brother, were collecting troops for the queen on the borders. The government published answers to the two earls' proclamation, and Northumberland was, with much ceremony, expelled at Windsor from the order of the Garter. From Clifford Moor the earls at first resolved to march on York, where the Earl of Sussex lay. But they suddenly changed their plans, and determined to besiege Bowes in Barnard Castle. Bowes held the fortress gallantly against them for eleven days, and then marched out with the

honours of war and joined Sussex. In the meantime Sir John Forster and Sir Henry Percy pursued Westmorland, who had retired to Durham and 'did give to the said earle a great skirmish.' Northumberland withdrew to Topcliffe, and on 11 Dec. Sussex marched thither from York. As Sussex advanced to the north the two earls reunited their forces and retreated towards the borders. At Hexham on 16 Dec. they disbanded their followers, who dispersed 'every man to save himself as he could' (Stowe). The rising thus came, after a month, to a very impotent conclusion, and the government treated with the utmost rigour all the actors in it who fell into their hands.

Northumberland and his wife, with Westmorland and his chief followers, arrived in Lidderdale and took refuge with Hector Graham of Harlaw, a robber-chieftain who infested the district. Thence Westmorland escaped to the Low Countries. But the Earl of Moray, the regent of Scotland, obtained from Graham of Harlaw, for a pecuniary consideration, the surrender of Northumberland, and in January 1569 he was carried to Edinburgh with seven of his adherents. At first he was not kept in custody, though a guard of the regent's men was set to watch his movements; but he was subsequently committed to the care of Sir William Douglas at Lochleven Castle. His wife remained on the borders, first at Ferniehurst, but subsequently at Hume Castle. She declined an offer of permission to join her husband at Edinburgh, on the ground that she might thus imperil her liberty and could be of greater assistance to her husband at a distance. She corresponded with sympathisers in the Low Countries, and made every effort to raise money in order to ransom her husband. In August 1570 she arrived at Antwerp. Philip II sent her six thousand marks and the pope four thousand crowns, and she and her friends devised a plan by which Northumberland might be sent into Flanders. But her energetic endeavours to purchase his liberty failed.

The English government negotiated with the Scottish government for his surrender with greater effect. Neither the regent Moray nor his successor, the Earl of Lennox, showed, it is true, any readiness to comply with the English government's demand, and Northumberland's brother recommended him to confess his offence and throw himself upon Queen Elizabeth's mercy. But in August 1572 the Earl of Mar, who had become regent in the previous year, finally decided to hand him over to Queen Elizabeth's officers on payment of 2,000*l*. Northumberland arrived at Berwick on 15 Aug. and was committed to the care of Lord Hunsdon. On 17 Aug. Hunsdon delivered him at Alnwick to Sir John Forster, who brought him to York. He was beheaded there on 22 Aug. on a scaffold erected in 'the Pavement,' or chief market-place. With his last breath he declared his faith in the catholic church, adding 'I am a Percy in life and death.' His head was placed on a pole above Micklegate Bar, but his body was buried in Crux church in the presence of two men and three maid-servants and 'a stranger in disguise, who, causing suspicion, immediately fled.' There is an entry recording his execution in the parish register of St. Margaret's, Walmgate, York. A ballad on his delivery to the English is in Percy's 'Reliques.' In Cotton MS. Calig. B, iv. 243, are pathetic verses by a partisan, 'one Singleton, a gentleman of Lancashire, now prisoner at York for religion.' They are printed by Wright (i. 423) and in 'Notes and Queries' (7th ser. vii. 264). Queen Mary had given him a relic—a thorn of Christ's crown, which was set in a golden cross, This he wore on the day of his death, and bequeathed to his daughter Elizabeth. It is now in Stonyhurst College. A copy by Phillips of an old portrait, representing him in the robes of the Garter, is at Alnwick. Another, dated 1566, is at Petworth, and is engraved in Sharpe's 'Memorials.' A third portrait, painted on panel, belonged to Sir Charles Slingsby of Scriven.

His widow, Anne, third daughter of Henry Somerset, second earl of Worcester, resided for a time at Liège on a small pension from the king of Spain. She seems to have written and circulated there a 'Discours des troubles du Comte de Northumberland.' Of a very managing disposition, she endeavoured to arrange a match between Don John of Austria and Queen Mary Stuart. In 1573 English agents described her as 'one of the principal practitioners at Mechlin;' subsequently she removed to Brussels, and entertained many English catholic exiles. In 1576 the Spanish government agreed, at Queen Elizabeth's request, to expel her from Spanish territory. Her exile was not, however, permanent. She died of smallpox in a convent at Namur in 1591.

Four daughters survived her: Elizabeth, wife of Richard Woodruffe of Woolley, Yorkshire, whose descendant is Mr. Edward Peacock, F.S.A., of Bottisford Manor, Lincolnshire; Mary, prioress of a convent of English Benedictine dames at Brussels, afterwards removed to Winchester; Lucy, wife of Sir Edward Stanley, K.B., of Eynsham, Oxfordshire, whose second daughter, Venetia,

married Sir Kenelm Digby [q. v.]; Jane, wife of Lord Henry Seymour, younger son of Edward, earl of Hertford. A son Thomas had died young in 1560. Northumberland's title passed by virtue of the reversionary clause in his patent of creation, and despite his attainder, to his brother Henry, eighth earl [q. v.]

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy (1887), ii. 3–125; Collins's Peerage; Froude's Hist. of England; Camden's Annals; Sharpe's Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569; Sadler's State Papers; Correspondence of Sir George Bowes; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1569–70; Stow's Chronicle; Wright's Queen Elizabeth; Doyle's Official Baronage; G. E. C[okayne]'s Complete Peerage.] S. L.

**PERCY**, THOMAS (1560–1605), an organiser of the 'Gunpowder Plot,' was younger son of Edward Percy of Beverley, by his wife Elizabeth Waterton. His grandfather, Josceline Percy, was fourth son of Henry Percy, fourth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] (De Fonblanque, *Annals*, ii. 586). Although brought up as a protestant, Percy became in early life an ardent catholic, and, despite an unamiable temper, he attracted the favourable notice of Henry Percy, ninth earl of Northumberland [q. v.], his second cousin. The latter appointed him, in October 1594, constable of Alnwick Castle, and he seems to have acted as agent for the earl's northern property, and to have incurred much unpopularity by a tyrannical exercise of his authority. The Earl of Essex, brother-in-law of the Earl of Northumberland, also befriended him. In February 1596 Essex wrote to Francis Beaumont [q. v.], the judge, asking him 'to favour Thomas Percy, a near kinsman to my brother of Northumberland, who is in trouble for some offence imputed to him. He is a gentleman well descended, and of good parts, and very able to do his country good service.' Two years later he was detained as a recusant in Wood Street compter, London. In 1602 charges of embezzling his master's money were brought against him, on the information of some discontented tenants, but the investigation which followed left the Earl of Northumberland's confidence in him unshaken.

In the same year Percy undertook, at the bidding of Northumberland, a political mission to Scotland. He carried a letter from the earl to James VI, requesting a promise of toleration for the English catholics in the event of James's accession to the English throne. James's reply was interpreted favourably. In 1604 the earl secured for Percy a place at court in London as a gentleman pensioner. Percy shared the discontent of his co-religionists at James's reluctance to repeal the penal legislation against the catholics. His wife was a sister of John Wright, a staunch catholic, and an intimate friend of Robert Catesby [q. v.] Percy is said to have accidentally heard, in 1604, Wright, Catesby, and a third associate, Thomas Winter, discuss the obligation which lay on English catholics of striking a blow for their faith. Percy suggested the murder of the king as the best means of removing catholic disabilities. Catesby thereupon confided to him the general features of a plan, upon which he, Wright, and Winter, had already resolved, of blowing up the houses of parliament. Thenceforth Percy was one of the most active organisers of 'the gunpowder plot.' He hired, in his own name, a house at Westminster adjoining the parliament house (24 May 1604), and installed in it Guy Fawkes [q. v.], whom he represented to be a servant of his, by name John Johnson. Percy added to his property a neighbouring cellar in the following March, and superintended the storage there of gunpowder, with a view to destroying the parliament house as soon as the next session opened. The execution of the desperate design was finally appointed for 5 Nov.

Some weeks before, Catesby met Percy and others of the conspirators at Bath, and they resolved to enlist the services of catholic countrymen in various counties, so as to insure a general rising as soon as the explosion had taken place in London. Percy undertook to supply to a party of rebels, apparently at Doncaster, 'ten galloping horses' from the Earl of Northumberland's stables, and to hand over the Michaelmas rents, to the amount of 4,000*l.*, which he was about to collect for his master. To carry out these objects he arrived at Alnwick in October. Meanwhile, William Parker, fourth baron Monteagle [q. v.], was warned of the conspiracy on 26 Oct., and the information he gave to the authorities led them to arrest Guy Fawkes in the cellar on 4 Nov. Fawkes described himself as Percy's servant. By that date Percy had just arrived in London from the north, and on the 4th he dined with the Earl of Northumberland at Syon House; but a message from Fawkes acquainted him with the turn of events, and he left London with Christopher Wright the next morning. A royal proclamation at once offered 1,000*l.* reward for his capture. He was described as tall, with a broad beard turning grey, stooping shoulders, red-coloured face, long feet, and short legs. Percy and Wright found Catesby at Ashby St. Leger, whence they made their way to Holbeach, on the borders of Staffordshire, on the 7th. On the 8th the government troops attacked the

house in which the conspirators had taken refuge. Catesby and Percy fought desperately, back to back. The former was killed outright; Percy was desperately wounded, and died two days later.

Percy figures in Crispin Pass's engraving *ad vivum* of Guy Fawkes and his seven chief confederates.

Percy's wife is said to have removed from Alnwick during Percy's lifetime and to have settled at the upper end of Holborn, London, where she gained a livelihood by teaching. A son Robert married at Wiveliscombe, Somerset, on 22 Oct. 1615, Emma Mead, and left issue. Of Percy's two daughters, one married Catesby's son Robert.

[Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. ix. 173–5, x. 142–3; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 586–600; Jardine's Gunpowder Plot, 1857; see arts. Catesby, Robert, and Fawkes, Guy.]

S. L.

PERCY, THOMAS (1768–1808), editor of Percy's 'Reliques,' son of Anthony Percy of Southwark and nephew of Bishop Thomas Percy [q. v.], was born on 13 Sept. 1768. After education at Merchant Taylors' School, he matriculated from St. John's College, Oxford, on 27 June 1786, aged 17. Some eight years before he went up to Oxford, Daines Barrington relates that he had written not only 'Ballads,' one of which was set to music by the composer Samuel Wesley, but also an epic poem, consisting of more than six hundred lines, upon the invasion of Britain by Julius Cæsar. In this work, says Barrington, no less than in a tragedy which this infant prodigy founded upon Peruvian annals, 'there are strong marks of an early genius for Poetry, which he likewise recites admirably well upon the first stool you may place him. I asked this wonderful boy how many books he intended to divide his epic poem into, when he answered that he could not well bring all his matter into less than twenty-four.' A pastoral, written by him at the age of eight, is given in the 'Gentleman's Magazine' (1778, p. 183), and some verses, written while he was at Merchant Taylors', 'On the Death of Dr. Samuel Johnson' (1785, 4to), were printed anonymously at the cost of an admirer. He graduated B.C.L. at Oxford in 1792, became a fellow of his college in the same year, and proceeded D.C.L. in 1793, having previously, in 1793, been presented to the vicarage of Grays Thurrock in Essex. His juvenile exploits seem to have exhausted his literary energy, for beyond supervising the publication of 'Poems by a Literary Society, comprehending Original Pieces in the several Walks of Poetry' in 1784, and contributing some verses to the 'Poetical Register,' he published nothing. In 1794, however, he was the ostensible editor of the fourth edition of the 'Reliques of Ancient Poetry,' the advertisement to which states: 'Twenty years have near elapsed since the last edition of this work appeared. But although it was sufficiently a favourite with the publick, and had long been out of print, the original Editor had no desire to revive it. More important pursuits had, as might be expected, engaged his attention [Percy was created bishop of Dromore in 1782]; and the present Edition would have remained unpublished had he not yielded to the importunity of his friends, and accepted the humble offer of an Editor in a nephew.' The editor then proceeds to refute the assertion of Ritson that the original manuscripts were not genuine.

Percy died, unmarried, at Ecton, near Northampton, on 14 May 1808. Nichols describes him, with his wonted generosity, as 'an elegant scholar, a poet, and a very accomplished and amiable man.'

[Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; Gent. Mag. 1808, i. 470; Robinson's Merchant Taylors' Reg. p. 140; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. viii. 147, 148, and Lit. Illustr. vii. 54, 192, viii. 101, 108, 256; Scott's Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border, Introduction; Barrington's Miscellanies, p. 308; Allibone's Dict. of English Literature.] T. S.

PERCY, THOMAS (1729–1811), editor of the 'Reliques of Ancient English Poetry' and bishop of Dromore, was born in Cartway Street, Bridgnorth, Shropshire, on 13 April 1729. His father was a grocer and the son of a grocer, as appears from the 'Bridgnorth Common Council Books;' but, in later life at least, the bishop was anxious to deduce his descent from the Percys of Northumberland, with the living representative of whom he was brought into official and social connection. At Bridgnorth the name was spelt Pearcy and Piercy; in a Battel Book at Christ Church, Oxford, it is spelt Piercy. The first noted occurrence of the spelling Percy is in the register at Easton-Maudit, and was probably due to the aspiration just mentioned. In an entry in that register he states that his family came from Worcester; and it is from Ralph Percy, earl of Worcester, a younger son of Henry Percy, second earl of Northumberland [q. v.], that he seeks to trace his pedigree (see Nash, *Worcestershire*). He was educated at Bridgnorth grammar school; and, obtaining a Careswell exhibition, he proceeded to Christ Church, Oxford, in 1746. His career at the university was not specially distinguished. He graduated B.A. in 1750 and M.A. in 1753.

He proceeded D.D. from Emmanuel College, Cambridge, in 1770.

In 1753 he was presented to a college living—the vicarage of Easton-Maudit, Northamptonshire. This was his home for twenty-nine years, and there his most important and influential works were produced. Among his parishioners were the Marquis of Northampton and the Earl of Sussex. Among the neighbouring clergy was the distinguished Anglo-Saxon scholar Edward Lye [q. v.], at Yardley Hastings. Even at that time Easton-Maudit was not inaccessible from London. The vicar was often to be seen in town; and Dr. Johnson himself, not to speak of lesser folk, sojourned for some weeks at the vicarage in 1764. In 1756 Percy was appointed also rector of Wilby, some half-dozen miles off.

Meanwhile he was busy with various literary undertakings. Of no great originality, he was by nature peculiarly susceptible to the currents and tendencies of his age. It was an age that was wearying of its old and longing for new idols—wearying of 'didactic poetry' and excessive modernness, and longing for pictures of life; not only of present and European life, but of the life of the past and of the distant in place as well as in time. Accordingly Percy began his literary life by translating from a Portuguese manuscript a Chinese novel, viz. 'Hau Kiou Choaun, or the Pleasing History, with an appendix containing the Argument or Story of a Chinese Play, A Collection of Chinese Proverbs, and Fragments of Chinese Poetry, with Notes,' 4 vols. 1761. This he followed with two volumes of 'Miscellaneous Pieces relating to the Chinese,' 1762. An interest in China and in the East generally was 'in the air.' But more noticeable was the growing interest in the older poetry of Europe. Deeply impressed by Macpherson's studies in Gaelic and Erse poetry, Percy in 1763 published 'Five Pieces of Runic Poetry, translated from the Islandic Language.' In this book he gratefully acknowledges the assistance of his neighbour Lye. In 1763 he also edited Surrey's 'Poems,' giving some account of the early use of blank verse in English.

Percy was already engaged upon the work that was to immortalise him. For some time he had possessed an old folio manuscript containing copies, in an early seventeenth-century handwriting, of many old poems of various dates. He had found it one day 'lying dirty on the floor in a bureau in the parlour' of his friend Humphrey Pitt of Shifnall in Shropshire, 'being used by the maids to light the fire,' and had begged it of its careless owner. The suggestion that he should turn this treasure to some account seems to have come from Shenstone—though he did not live to see the ripe fruit of his advice—and was entertained as early as 1761. 'You have heard me speak of Mr. Percy,' runs a letter from Shenstone to Graves, dated 1 March 1761. 'He was in treaty with Mr. James Dodsley for the publication of our best old ballads in three volumes. He has a large folio MS. of ballads which he showed me, and which, with his own natural and acquired talents, would qualify him for the purpose as well as any man in England. I proposed the scheme to him myself, wishing to see an elegant edition and good collection of this kind.' A few months later Shenstone wrote to a Mr. McGowan of Edinburgh to ask if he could send any Scottish ballad for Percy's use. Many others lent their assistance; among them Thomas Warton (the younger), Grainger, Birch, Farmer, Garrick, and Goldsmith. Warton 'ransacked the Oxford libraries' for him; he himself visited Cambridge and explored Pepys's collection, besides receiving help from 'two ingenious and learned friends' there; he secured correspondents in Wales, in Ireland, in 'the wilds of Staffordshire and Derbyshire.' At last, in 1765, appeared Percy's 'Reliques of Ancient English Poetry' (3 vols. sm. 8vo). The book made an epoch in the history of English literature. It promoted with lasting effect the revival of interest in our older poetry. Percy had serious misgivings as to whether he was employing his energies profitably, but expressed the hope that 'the names of so many men of learning and character' among his patrons and subscribers would 'serve as an amulet to guard him from every unfavourable censure for having bestowed any attention on a parcel of Old Ballads.' He occasionally tampered with his texts and inserted at the end of each volume, in conformity with current sentiment, a 'few modern attempts in the same kind of writing to atone for the rudeness of the more obsolete poems.' Dr. Johnson, Warburton, and other contemporary authorities were not sparing in their condemnation and contempt. A second edition of the 'Reliques' was, however, called for in 1767, a third in 1775, and a fourth, revised by his nephew, Thomas Percy (1768–1808) [q. v.], in 1794. In 1867–8 the original folio from which Percy drew his materials was edited by Prof. J. W. Hales and Dr. F. J. Furnivall, and published in three volumes.

His next contribution to antiquarian knowledge was the editing of 'The Household Book of the Earl of Northumberland in 1512

at his Castles of Wressle and Leconfield in Yorkshire,' 1768. This work also made a new departure. It stands chronologically at the head of the long series of household regulations and accounts whose publication has rendered the knowledge of old English life minute and exact.

In 1770 he published another work of great importance on account of its recognition of the high interest of the old Norse life. This was entitled 'Northern Antiquities, with a Translation of the Edda and other pieces from the Ancient Islandic Tongue. Translated from M. Mallet's Introduction to L'Histoire de Dannemarc, &c. With additional Notes by the English Translator and Goranson's Latin Version of the Edda.' Percy's preface is a vigorous and well-informed refutation of a view that had been 'a great source of mistake and confusion to many learned writers of the ancient history of Europe, viz. that of supposing the ancient Gauls and Germans, the Britons and Saxons, to have been originally one and the same people, thus confounding the antiquities of the Gothic and Celtic nations.' In 1771 he published his familiar ballad 'The Hermit of Warkworth,' a composition very characteristic of the eighteenth century.

Meanwhile he had not neglected the studies associated directly with his profession as a clergyman. In 1764 he published 'A New Translation of the Song of Solomon;' and in 1769 'A Key to the New Testament,' which was thrice reissued. He was appointed chaplain to the Duke of Northumberland, and in 1769 chaplain to the king. At last substantial preferment came. In 1778 he was made dean of Carlisle; but he did not resign the livings of Easton-Maudit and Wilby till four years later, when he became bishop of Dromore in Ireland. Dr. Robert Nares [q. v.] succeeded him at Easton.

Twenty-nine years had Percy been connected with Easton, and twenty-nine years was he connected with Dromore. But his only contribution to literature after leaving Easton was 'An Essay on the Origin of the English Stage, particularly on the Historical Plays of Shakespeare.' When the fourth edition of the 'Reliques' appeared in 1794, his nephew, the editor, defended him against the truculence of Joseph Ritson [q. v.], who denied the existence of the famous folio manuscript. Possibly Ritson's insolence did something to dishearten Percy from fresh literary labours. Moreover, the distance of his home from London was not without effect. The county of Down was very much out of the world. 'Letters to him frequently never reached their destination, and he was months in arrear with the last magazine.' But his correspondence shows that interest in literary things never abated. In 1801 he contributed to an edition of Goldsmith's 'Miscellaneous Works' materials 'for an improved account of the author's life.'

Percy resided constantly in his diocese, 'discharging the duties of his sacred office with vigilance and zeal, instructing the ignorant, relieving the necessitous, and comforting the distressed with pastoral affection.' About 1804 his eyesight began to fail; at the end of 1805 he writes that 'it is with difficulty I transcribe my name.' Twelve months later his wife died, a woman of great tact as well as a devoted and affectionate partner. For nearly five years he lingered on, bearing both his blindness and his bereavement with a touching equanimity. He died on 30 Sept. 1811, and was buried by the side of Mrs. Percy in the transept he had added to his cathedral.

Percy married in 1759 Anne, daughter of Barton Gutteridge of Desborough, Northamptonshire, not far from Rothwell, whose name he spells Goodriche on her tombstone. His well-known lines to Nancy were addressed to her before she became his wife; they were printed in 1758 in the sixth volume of Dodsley's 'Collection of Poems.' In 1771 Mrs. Percy was appointed nurse to Prince Edward, afterwards Duke of Kent. Six children were born to him, two of whom died at Easton; a third, said to have been a youth of great promise, died at Marseilles in 1783; and a fourth son, who had been a king's scholar at Westminster, died at Dromore of consumption. Two daughters survived him —viz. Barbara, married to Ambrose Isted of Ecton House, near Northampton; and Elizabeth, wife of Archdeacon the Hon. Pierce Meade.

Percy's portrait was painted by Sir Joshua Reynolds and was engraved by Dickinson.

In 1840 was formed, in commemoration of Bishop Percy, the Percy Society for the Publication of Ballad Poetry, with Lord Braybrooke as its first president. It was dissolved in 1852, after publishing ninety-six volumes.

[Life of Bishop Percy, by the Rev. J. Pickford, in Bishop Percy's Folio MS. ed. Hales and Furnivall, 1867–8; Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry, ed. Wheatley, 1876–7; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. vols. vi. vii.; Letters from Thos. Percy, D.D., &c., to George Paton, Edinburgh, 1830; Notes and Queries, passim; Boswell's Johnson.] J. W. H.

PERCY, WILLIAM DE, first BARON PERCY (1030?–1096), surnamed Algernon or 'als gernons' (with the moustaches), belonged

to a Norman family which traced its descent to Mainfred, a Danish chief who settled in Normandy before the time of Rollo. The family had its chief seat at Perci, near Villedieu in the present department of La Manche, arrondissement of Saint-Lô. It is probable, though scarcely certain, that William was a younger son. His name appears as one of the barons accompanying William I in 1066 in the Dives Roll, in two lists printed in the 'Historiæ Normanniæ Scriptores' of Duchesne (pp. 1023, 1125), and in a sixteenth-century Cotton MS. (Julius B 12, f. 36). But none of these documents are sufficiently authentic, and the register of Whitby Abbey says he came over with William in 1067 (i.e. on William's return with his wife from Normandy). Family tradition makes William de Percy an intimate friend of the Conqueror (*Metrical Chronicle of the Percy Family* by William Peeris [q. v.]) An anonymous paper in the Harleian MSS. speaks of him as 'magnus constabularius' (No. 293, f. 35), but to neither statement can much authority be attached. Mr. E. B. de Fonblanque (*Annals of the House of Percy*, i. 11) infers from very slender evidence that William was one of the Norman settlers in the time of Edward the Confessor who were driven out by King Harold. William de Percy appears in Doomsday as holding eighty lordships in Yorkshire and thirty-two in Lincolnshire, and other lands in Essex and Hampshire (*Doomsday Book*, Record Comm. i. 46 *b*, 321 *b*, 291 *b*, 353 *b*).

On the suppression of the rebellion of Gospatric [q. v.] in 1069, Percy interceded for him with the king, and obtained his pardon and the restoration of a portion of his estates. The greater part of them, including Whitby, were, however, granted to Hugh, earl of Chester, who gave them to William de Percy. William resided on his Yorkshire estates, and built on them the four castles of Topcliffe, Spofforth, Sneaton, and Hackness.

At the request of a monk named Reinfrid, who had previously served under him in the north in 1069, William repaired the monastery of Whitby, which had been destroyed during the Danish invasion, and both he and the Earl of Chester granted lands to the new house. After Reinfrid had ceased to be abbot, and Stephen, who entered the abbey in 1078, had taken his place, William, according to an autobiography of Stephen (now among the Bodleian MSS., and printed in Dugdale's 'Monasticon,' 1846 edit., iii. 544–6), repented of his gifts, and sought to drive away the monks by violence. Percy's hostilities, combined with troubles from pirates, led the monks to complain to the king, who gave them the manor of Lastingham as a refuge from Percy. The persecution of the monks continued in spite of a temporary agreement which Stephen followed Percy to Normandy to secure, and Stephen and his friends by the king's command abandoned Whitby for Lastingham. Thereupon Percy was reconciled to Reinfrid, and on Reinfrid's death Percy's brother Serlo, who assumed the Benedictine habit, succeeded to the office of prior. But the peace was not permanent. Percy soon gave Everley and Staxby, which the monastery claimed, to his armour-bearer, Ralph de Everley, and subsequently deprived the monastery of the other lands which he had given it. Serlo applied to William Rufus, now king (1088), whose familiar companion he had been in youth. Rufus bade both disputants keep the peace, and gave Serlo some lands at Northfield and Hackness. There Serlo and his monks stayed until the quarrel was healed. William ultimately yielded to the monks; Ralph de Everley agreed to hold Everley jointly with the abbey, and surrendered Staxby to Percy, who regranted it to the monks. In 1095 he took the cross, and he died at Montjoie, near Jerusalem, in 1096. His body was interred there and his heart brought to the abbey of Whitby. He married a Saxon lady, Emma de Port, Lady of Semer, near Scarborough, and of other lands ('Ex Registro Monasterii de Whitebye,' *Harl. MS.* No. 692 (26) f. 235). By her he had three sons: Alan (*fl.* 1116), who succeeded him as second Baron Percy; Walter, and William. Alan's son William (*fl.* 1168), third baron, left no male issue, and the line was continued through his daughter and ultimately sole heiress Agnes, who married Josceline de Louvain. The latter was known as fourth Baron Percy.

[De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, i. 6 et seq.; Dugdale's Baronage of England, i. 269; Monasticon, 1655 edit., i. 72 et seq.; Charlton's Hist. of Whitby, i. 6 et seq.]

W. E. R.

PERCY, WILLIAM, sixth Baron Percy (1183?–1245), was son of Henry de Percy, eldest son of Agnes de Percy and Josceline de Louvain. He was in his fifteenth year on his father's death in 1196. His uncle Richard [q. v.], who thereupon assumed the administration of his lands and his baronial rights, refused to relinquish them when William attained his majority. His lawful guardian was William Brewer [q. v.] (*Abbreviatio Placitorum*, p. 86). In

1200 William was appointed one of the two custodes of the county of York under William de Stuteville (*Rot. de Obl. et Finibus*, p. 109). In the same year he appears as sheriff of Northumberland (*Rot. Curiæ Regis*, ii. 178). In 1204 he was one of the justices before whom fines were acknowledged (Hunter, *Fines sive Pedes Finium*, Record Comm., Introd. p. lv). In 1213 he was one of the two commissioners appointed to inquire into the losses inflicted on the church in the bishopric of Carlisle (*Rot. de Obl. et Finibus*, Record Comm., p. 526). In 1214 he was sent in the king's service to Poitou, with horses and arms (*Close Rolls*, Record Comm., i. 207). But he was among the followers of the twenty-five barons who opposed King John in 1215 (Matt. Paris, *Hist. Maj.* ii. 605; Stubbs, i. 583). There are indications of his having left the baronial party before John's death (*Close Rolls*, i. 250). On 11 May 1217 he had certainly joined the royalists, for on that date Henry III granted to him the whole of the lands of his uncle Richard, who was still in rebellion; but these were restored to the latter on his submission on 2 Nov. 1217 (*ib.* pp. 308, 339). William was with the king at the siege of Biham in the early part of 1221 (*ib.* p. 475 *b*). In 1234 he gained possession of a great part of the family estates by judgment of the king's court [see Percy, Richard de]. In 1242 he paid 100 marks to be exempted from service with the king in Gascony. On the death of his uncle Richard in 1244, he succeeded to the whole of the barony (*Excerpta e Rot. Finium*, p. 423). He died before 28 July 1245 (*ib.* p. 440), and was buried at Sawley Abbey. He gave his manor of Gisburn, with the forests, to that abbey, reserving the services of the freeholders and his liberty of hunting. To the master and brethren of the hospital at Sandon in Surrey he gave all his lands in Foston and the twenty marks paid annually by the abbey of Sawley for the manor of Gisburn.

He married, first, Elena, daughter of Ingelram de Balliol, by whom he had seven sons—Henry (1228?–1272), seventh Baron Percy, who was succeeded by his eldest son, Henry Percy, first Baron Percy of Alnwick [q. v.]; Ingelram, William, Walter, Geoffrey, Alan, and Josceline—and one daughter, Elena. His second wife was Joan, daughter and coheiress of William Brewer, the wardship and marriage of whom, along with that of her four sisters, he obtained from Henry III on 12 June 1233 (*ib.* i. 243). By her he had four daughters: Anastasia, Joan, Alice, and Agnes.

His third wife was Nicholaa de Stuteville (1244?) (*ib.* i. 417). He had to pay a hundred marks for marrying her without the royal consent, her hand being in the king's gift.

[Authorities cited; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, 1887, vol. i.; Dugdale's Baronage of England, i. 271; Foss's Lives of the Judges of England, ii. 103.] W. E. R.

PERCY, WILLIAM (1575-1648), poet, probably born at Topcliffe, near Thirsk, Yorkshire, was third son of Henry Percy, eighth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] He matriculated from Gloucester Hall (afterwards Worcester College), Oxford, on 13 June 1589, aged 15. Barnabe Barnes [q. v.], son of the bishop of Durham, was studying at Oxford at the same time, and Barnes and Percy strengthened at the university a friendship doubtless previously begun in the north. 'To the right noble and vertuous gentleman, M. William Percy,' Barnes dedicated his 'Parthenophil' in 1593. Percy was ambitious to emulate his friend's literary example. In 1594 he published a collection of 'Sonnets to the fairest Cœlia' (London, by Adam Islip, for W[illiam] P[onsonby]), and closed the slender volume with a madrigal in praise of Barnes's poetic efforts, entitled 'To Parthenophil upon his Laya and Parthenophe.' Only twenty pieces are included, and none are impressive. The work was reprinted by Sir Egerton Brydges at the Lee Priory Press in 1818; by Dr. Grosart in his 'Occasional Issues' in 1877, and by Mr. Arber in his 'English Garner' (vi. 135–50). Copies of the rare original belong to the Duke of Northumberland and Mr. A. H. Huth.

In an address to the reader prefixed to the sonnets, Percy promised 'ere long to impart unto the world another poeme more fruitful and ponderous.' It is doubtful if this promise were literally fulfilled. His only other acknowledged publication is 'a poor madrigall,' signed 'W. Percy, Musophilus: spes Calamo occidit,' in Barnes's 'Four Bookes of Offices,' 1606. But six plays by him—all amateurish dramatic essays—remain in manuscript in the possession of the Duke of Devonshire. Of these Joseph Haslewood printed two for the first time for the Roxburghe Club in 1824. The one, entitled 'The Cuck-queanes and cuckolds errants, or the bearing down the Inn: a comoedye,' is in prose, and is introduced by a prologue spoken by Tarleton's ghost. The other, 'The Faery Pastorall, or Forest of Elues,' is chiefly in blank verse. The four unpublished plays are: 'Arabia Sitiens, or a Dream of a Dry Year,' 1601; 'The Aphrodisial, or Sea Feast,' 1602; 'A Country's Tragedy in Vacuniam,

or Cupid's Sacrifice,' 1602; and 'Necromantes, or the two supposed Heads,' a comical invention acted by the children of St. Paul's about 1602. In 1619 Thomas Campion [q. v.] included in his 'Epigrammata' a friendly and appreciative address to Percy in Latin verse (bk. ii. No. 40; cf. edit. by Mr. A. H. Bullen, p. 325).

Percy seems to have lived a troubled life. At one time he was in the Tower on a charge of homicide. In 1638 he was residing obscurely in Oxford, 'drinking nothing but ale' (*Strafford Letters*, ii. 166). He died at Oxford in May 1648, 'an aged bachelor in Penny farthing Street, after he had lived a melancholy and retired life many years.' He was buried on 28 May in Christchurch Cathedral.

[Ritson's Bibliographia Anglo-Poetica; Fleay's Biographical Chron. of the English Drama; De Fonblanque's Annals of the House of Percy, ii. 365; W. C. Hazlitt's Bibliographical Collections.] S. L.

# INDEX

TO

## THE FORTY-FOURTH VOLUME.


PAGE

Paston, Clement (1515 ?–1597) . . . 1
Paston, Edward, D.D. (1641–1714) . . . 2
Paston, John (1421–1466) . . . . 2
Paston, Sir John (1442–1479) . . . . 3
Paston, Robert, first Earl of Yarmouth (1631–1683) . . . . . 5
Paston, William (1378–1444) . . . . 5
Paston, Sir William (1479 ?–1554) . . . 7
Paston, Sir William (1528–1610). See under Paston, Sir William (1479 ?–1554).
Paston, William, second Earl of Yarmouth (1652–1732). See under Paston, Robert, first Earl of Yarmouth.
Pastorini, Benedict (Benedetto) (*fl.* 1775–1810) 8
Pastorius, Francis Daniel (1651–1719 ?) . . 8
Patch, Richard (1770 ?–1806) . . . . 9
Patch, Thomas (*d.* 1782) . . . . . 10
Pate or Pates, Richard (*d.* 1565) . . . 10
Pate, Richard (1516–1588) . . . . 12
Pate, William (1666–1746) . . . . 12
Pater, Walter Horatio (1839–1894) . . . 13
Paternus, Saint (*fl.* 550). See Padarn.
Paterson. See also Patterson.
Paterson, Alexander (1766–1831) . . . 15
Paterson, Charles William (1756–1841) . . 16
Paterson, Daniel (1739–1825) . . . . 16
Paterson, Mrs. Emma Anne (1848–1886) . . 17
Paterson, James (1805–1876) . . . . 18
Paterson, John (1632–1708) . . . . 18
Paterson, John (1776–1855) . . . . 20
Paterson, Nathaniel, D.D. (1787–1871) . . 21
Paterson, Robert (1715–1801) . . . . 22
Paterson, Samuel (1728–1802) . . . . 22
Paterson, Thomas (1780–1856) . . . . 23
Paterson, William (1658–1719) . . . . 23
Paterson, William (1755–1810) . . . . 26
Pateshull, Hugh de (*d.* 1241) . . . . 28
Pateshull, John de (1291 ?–1349). See under Pateshull or Pattishall, Sir Simon de.
Pateshull, Martin de (*d.* 1229) . . . . 28
Pateshull, Peter (*fl.* 1387) . . . . . 29
Pateshull or Pattishall, Simon de (*d.* 1217 ?) . 29
Pateshull or Pattishall, Sir Simon de (*d.* 1274) 30
Pateshull, Walter de (*d.* 1232) . . . . 30
Patey, Charles George Edward (1813–1881) . 31
Patey, Janet Monach (1842–1894) . . . 31
Patient or Patience, Thomas (*d.* 1666) . . 31
Patin, William (*fl.* 1548–1580). See Patten.

PAGE

Patmore, Peter George (1786–1855) . . . 33
Paton, Andrew Archibald (1811–1874) . . 33
Paton, David (*fl.* 1650–1700) . . . . 34
Paton, George (1721–1807) . . . . 34
Paton, James (*d.* 1596) . . . . . 35
Paton, James (*d.* 1684) . . . . . 35
Paton, John Stafford (1821–1889) . . . 36
Paton, Mary Ann, afterwards Mrs. Woods (1802–1864) . . . . . 36
Paton, Richard (1716 ?–1791) . . . . 37
Paton, Waller Hugh (1828–1895) . . . 38
Patrick (373–463) . . . . . 38
Patrick (*d.* 1084) . . . . . 43
Patrick, John (1632–1695) . . . . 43
Patrick, Richard (1769–1815) . . . . 44
Patrick, Samuel (1684–1748) . . . . 44
Patrick, Simon (*d.* 1613) . . . . 45
Patrick, Simon (1626–1707) . . . . 45
Patrington, Stephen (*d.* 1417) . . . 47
Patten, George (1801–1865) . . . . 48
Patten, John Wilson-, Baron Winmarleigh (1802–1892). See Wilson-Patten.
Patten, Robert (*fl.* 1715) . . . . . 49
Patten, Thomas (1714–1790) . . . . 49
Patten or Pattyn, William (*d.* 1486). See Waynflete.
Patten, William (*fl.* 1548–1580) . . . 50
Pattenson, Matthew (*fl.* 1623) . . . 50
Patterson. See also Paterson.
Patterson, John Brown (1804–1835) . . 51
Patterson, Robert (1802–1872) . . . 51
Patterson, Robert Hogarth (1821–1886) . . 52
Patterson, William (1755–1810). See Paterson.
Patteson, Sir John (1790–1861) . . . 53
Patteson, John Coleridge (1827–1871) . . 53
Patti, Carlotta (1835–1889) . . . . 56
Pattinson, Hugh Lee (1796–1858) . . . 56
Pattison, Dorothy Wyndlow, known as Sister Dora (1832–1878) . . . . . 57
Pattison, Granville Sharp (1791–1851) . . 58
Pattison, Mark (1813–1884) . . . . 58
Pattison, William (1706–1727) . . . 63
Patton, Charles (1741–1837). See under Patton, Philip.
Patton, George, Lord Glenalmond (1803–1869) 64
Patton, Philip (1739–1815) . . . . 65
Patton, Robert (*fl.* 1803). See under Patton, Philip.

PAGE
Pattrick or Patrick, George (1746–1800) . 66
Patys, Richard (*d.* 1565). See Pate.
Paul or Pol (*d.* 573), saint, also called Aurelian 67
Paul (*d.* 1093) . . . . . 67
Paul, Earl of Orkney (*d.* 1099) . . . 68
Paul the Silent, Earl of Orkney (*fl.* 1130). See under Paul, Earl of Orkney.
Paul Anglicus (*fl.* 1404) . . . . . 70
Paul of St. Magdalen (1599–1643). See Heath, Henry.
Paul, Sir George Onesiphorus (1746–1820) . 70
Paul, Hamilton (1773–1854) . . . . 71
Paul, Isabella Howard (1833?–1879) . . 72
Paul, John (1707–1787) . . . . . 72
Paul, John, D.D. (1777–1848) . . . . 73
Paul, Sir John Dean (1802–1868) . . . 73
Paul, Lewis (*d.* 1759) . . . . . 74
Paul, Sir Onesiphorus (1706–1774). See under Paul, Sir George Onesiphorus.
Paul, Robert Bateman (1798–1877). . . 75
Paul, William de (*d.* 1349) . . . . 76
Paul, William (1599–1665) . . . . 76
Paul, William (1678–1716) . . . . 77
Paulden, Thomas (1626–1710?) . . . 78
Paule, Sir George (1563?–1637) . . . 79
Paulet. See also Powlet.
Paulet or Poulet, Sir Amias or Amyas (*d.* 1538). . . . . 80
Paulet or Poulet, Sir Amias (1536?–1588) . 81
Paulet or Powlett, Charles, first Duke of Bolton, (1625?–1699) . . . . . 83
Paulet or Powlett, Charles, second Duke of Bolton (1661–1722) . . . . . 84
Paulet or Powlett, Charles, third Duke of Bolton (1685–1754) . . . . . 85
Paulet, Sir George (*d.* 1608) . . . . 86
Paulet or Powlett, Harry, sixth Duke of Bolton (1719–1794) . . . . . 87
Paulet, Harry (*d.* 1804) . . . . . 88
Paulet or Poulet, Sir Hugh (*d.* 1572?) . . 89
Paulet, Sir John (*fl.* 1500). See under Paulet or Poulet, Sir Amias or Amyas.
Paulet, John, fifth Marquis of Winchester (1598–1675) . . . . . 90
Paulet, Lavinia, Duchess of Bolton (1708–1760). See Fenton.
Paulet, Pawlet, or Poulet, William, first Marquis of Winchester (1485?–1572) . . 92
Paulet, William, third Marquis of Winchester (1535?–1598) . . . . . 95
Paulet, Lord William (1804–1893) . . . 95
Paulinus (*fl.* 500?) . . . . . 96
Paulinus (*d.* 644) . . . . . 96
Paull, James (1770–1808) . . . . . 98
Paulton, Abraham Walter (1812–1876) . . 100
Pauper, Herbert (*d.* 1217). See Poor.
Pauper, Roger (*fl.* 1135). See Roger.
Paveley, Sir Walter (1319–1375) . . . 100
Paver, William (1802–1871) . . . . 101
Paxton, George (1762–1837) . . . . 102
Paxton, James (1786–1860) . . . . 102
Paxton, John (*d.* 1780) . . . . . 103
Paxton, Sir Joseph (1801–1865) . . . 103
Paxton, Peter (*d.* 1711) . . . . . 104
Paxton, Stephen (1735–1787) . . . . 104
Paxton, William (*fl.* 1780). See under Paxton, Stephen.
Paye, Henry (*fl.* 1405–1415) . . . . 105
Paye, Richard Morton (*d.* 1821) . . . 105
Payne. See also Pain and Paine.
Payne, George (1781–1848) . . . . 106
Payne, George (1803–1878) . . . . 107
PAGE
Payne, Henry Neville (*fl.* 1672–1710) . . 108
Payne, John (*d.* 1506) . . . . . 109
Payne, John (*d.* 1647?) . . . . . 110
Payne, John (*d.* 1787) . . . . . 110
Payne, John (*fl.* 1800). See under Payne, John (*d.* 1787).
Payne, John Willett (1752–1803) . . . 111
Payne, Joseph (1808–1876) . . . . 112
Payne, Peter (*d.* 1455) . . . . . 114
Payne, Sir Peter (1763–1843) . . . . 118
Payne, Sir Ralph, Lord Lavington (1738?–1807) . . . . . 119
Payne, Robert (*fl.* 1589) . . . . . 120
Payne, Roger (1739–1797) . . . . . 121
Payne, Thomas (1719–1799) . . . . . 122
Payne, Thomas, the younger (1752–1831) . 123
Payne, William, D.D. (1650–1696) . . 123
Payne, William (*fl.* 1800) . . . . . 124
Payne, William Henry Schofield (1804–1878) 124
Payne Smith, Robert (1819–1895) . . . 125
Paynell. See also Paganell.
Paynell, Maurice de, Baron of Leeds (1184?–1230). See Gaunt or Gant.
Paynell, Thomas (*fl.* 1528–1567) . . . 127
Paynter, David William (1791–1823) . . 129
Paynter or Cambourne, William (1637–1716) . 129
Peabody, George (1795–1869) . . . . 130
Peach, Charles William (1800–1886) . . 131
Peacham, Edmond (*d.* 1616) . . . . 131
Peacham, Henry (1576?–1643?) . . . 133
Peachell. See also Pechell.
Peachell, John (1630–1690) . . . . 136
Peachi, John (*fl.* 1690). See under Pechey, John.
Peacock, Sir Barnes (1810–1890) . . . 137
Peacock, Dmitri Rudolf (1842–1892) . . 137
Peacock, Frederick Barnes (1836–1894). See under Peacock, Sir Barnes.
Peacock, George (1791–1858) . . . . 138
Peacock, George (1805–1883) . . . . 140
Peacock, James (*d.* 1653) . . . . . 141
Peacock, James (1738?–1814) . . . . 142
Peacock, John Macleav (1817–1877) . . 142
Peacock, Lucy (*fl.* 1815) . . . . . 143
Peacock, Reginald (1395?–1459?). See Pecock.
Peacock, Thomas (1516?–1582?) . . . 143
Peacock, Thomas Bevill, M.D. (1812–1882) . 143
Peacock, Thomas Love (1785–1866) . . 144
Peada (*d.* 656) . . . . . 147
Peak or Peake, James (1730?–1782?) . . 147
Peake, Richard Brinsley (1792–1847) . . 147
Peake, Sir Robert (1592?–1667) . . . 148
Peake, Thomas (1771–1838) . . . . 148
Pearce. See also Pearse and Pierce.
Pearce, Sir Edward Lovet (*d.* 1733). . . 149
Pearce, Nathaniel (1779–1820) . . . 149
Pearce, Samuel (1766–1799) . . . . 150
Pearce, Thomas (*fl.* 1755) . . . . 150
Pearce, Sir William (1833–1888) . . . 150
Pearce, Zachary (1690–1774) . . . . 151
Peard, George (1594?–1644) . . . . 152
Peard, John Whitehead (1811–1880) . . 153
Peard, Shuldham (1761–1832) . . . 154
Pearl, Cora (1842–1886) . . . . . 155
Pearman, William (*fl.* 1810–1824) . . . 155
Pears, Steuart Adolphus (1815–1875) . . 156
Pears, Sir Thomas Townsend (1809–1892) . 156
Pearsall, Richard (1698–1762) . . . 157
Pearsall, Robert Lucas (de) (1795–1856) . 158
Pearse. See also Pearce, Pierce, and Piers.
Pearse, Edward (1633?–1674?) . . . 159

PAGE
Pearse, Edward (1631–1694). See under Pearse, Edward (1633 ?–1674 ?).
Pearse, Thomas Deane (1738 ?–1789) . . 160
Pearse, William (1625–1691). See under Pearse, Edward (1633 ?–1674 ?).
Pearson. See also Peerson, Peirson, and Pierson.
Pearson, Alexander (*d.* 1657), lord of session, under the title of Lord Southall . . . 160
Pearson, Anthony (1628–1670 ?) . . . 161
Pearson, Charles Buchanan (1807–1881). See under Pearson, Hugh Nicholas.
Pearson, Charles Henry (1830–1894) . . 162
Pearson, Edward (1756–1811) . . . . 164
Pearson, Eglington Margaret (*d.* 1823). See under Pearson, James.
Pearson, George (1751–1828) . . . . 165
Pearson, Hugh (1817–1882). See under Pearson, Hugh Nicholas.
Pearson, Hugh Nicholas (1767–1856) . . 166
Pearson, James (*d.* 1805) . . . . 167
Pearson, John (1613–1686) . . . . 168
Pearson, John (1758–1826) . . . . 173
Pearson, Sir John (1819–1886) . . . 174
Pearson, John Norman (1787–1865) . . 174
Pearson, Sir Richard (1731–1806) . . . 174
Pearson, Richard, M.D. (1765–1836) . . 175
Pearson, Thomas Hooke (1806–1892) . . 176
Pearson, William (1767–1847) . . . 176
Pear-on-Jervis, William Henley (1813–1883). See Jervis.
Peart, Charles (*fl.* 1778–1798) . . . 177
Peart, Edward (1756 ?–1824) . . . . 178
Pease, Edward (1767–1858) . . . . 178
Pease, Henry (1807–1881). See under Pease, Edward.
Pease, Joseph (1799–1872). See under Pease, Edward.
Peat, Thomas (1708–1780) . . . . 180
Pebody, Charles (1839–1890) . . . . 180
Peche, Richard (*d.* 1182) . . . . 181
Pechell. See also Peachell.
Pechell, Sir George Richard Brooke (1789–1860) 181
Pechell, Sir Paul (1724–1800) . . . . 182
Pechell, Sir Samuel John Brooke (1785–1849) 183
Pechey, John (1655–1716) . . . . 184
Peck, Francis (1692–1743) . . . . 184
Peck, James (1773–1810 ?) . . . . 187
Peckard, Peter, D.D. (1718 ?–1797) . . 187
Pecke, Thomas (*fl.* 1664) . . . . 188
Peckham, Sir Edmund (1495 ?–1564) . . 189
Peckham, Sir George (*d.* 1608) . . . 189
Peckham, John (*d.* 1292) . . . . 190
Peckitt, William (1731–1795) . . . . 197
Peckwell, Henry (1747–1787) . . . . 198
Peckwell, afterwards Blosset, Sir Robert Henry (1776–1823). See under Peckwell, Henry.
Pecock, Reginald (1395 ?–1460 ?) . . . 198
Pecthelm (*d.* 735) . . . . . 202
Pectwin (*d.* 776) . . . . . 203
Pedder, John (1520 ?–1571) . . . . 203
Peddie, James (1758–1845) . . . . 203
Peddie, John (*d.* 1840) . . . . . 204
Peddie, William (1805–1893). See under Peddie, James.
Peden, Alexander (1626 ?–1686) . . . 205
Pedley, Robert (1760–1841). See Deverell.
Pedrog (*fl.* 550 ?) . . . . . 206
Peebles or Peblis, David (*d.* 1579) . . . 207
Peecke, Richard, of Tavistock (*fl.* 1626). See Pike.
Peel, John (1776–1854) . . . . . 207
Peel, Jonathan (1799–1879) . . . . 207
PAGE
Peel, Sir Lawrence (1799–1884) . . . 209
Peel, Paul (1861–1892) . . . . . 209
Peel, Sir Robert, first Baronet (1750–1830) . 209
Peel, Sir Robert, second Baronet (1788–1850) . 210
Peel, Sir Robert, third Baronet (1822–1895) . 223
Peel, Sir William (1824–1858) . . . 224
Peel, William Yates (1789–1858). See under Peel, Sir Robert, first Baronet (1750–1830).
Peele, George (1558 ?–1597 ?) . . . . 225
Peend or De la Peend, Thomas (*fl.* 1565) . 229
Peer, William (*d.* 1713) . . . . . 230
Peeris, William (*fl.* 1520) . . . . 230
Peers, Richard (1645–1690) . . . . 230
Peers, Richard (1685–1739). See under Peers, Richard (1645–1690).
Peerson or Pierson, Andrew (*d.* 1594) . . 231
Peerson, Pierson, or Pearson, Martin (1590 ?–1651 ?) . . . . . 232
Peeters, Gerard (*fl.* 1582–1592) . . . 233
Peeters or Pieters, John (1667–1727) . . 233
Pegge, Sir Christopher, M.D. (1765–1822) . 233
Pegge, Samuel, the elder (1704–1796) . . 233
Pegge, Samuel, the younger (1733–1800) . 235
Peile, Thomas Williamson (1806–1882) . . 235
Peirce. See also Pearse and Pierce.
Peirce, James (1674 ?–1726) . . . . 236
Peirson. See also Pearson and Pierson.
Peirson, Francis (1757–1781) . . . . 240
Pelagius (*fl.* 400 ?) . . . . . 240
Pelgrim, Joyce (*fl.* 1514) . . . . 242
Pelham, Sir Edmund (*d.* 1606) . . . 243
Pelham, Frederick Thomas (1808–1861). See under Pelham, Thomas, second Earl of Chichester.
Pelham, George, D.D. (1766–1827) . . . 243
Pelham, Henry (1695 ?–1754) . . . . 244
Pelham, Henry (1749–1806). See under Pelham, Peter.
Pelham, Henry Thomas, third Earl of Chichester (1804–1886) . . . . 247
Pelham, Herbert (1600–1673) . . . . 248
Pelham, John de (*d.* 1429) . . . . 248
Pelham, John Thomas, D.D. (1811–1834) . 250
Pelham, Sir Nicholas (1517–1560). See under Pelham, Sir Edmund.
Pelham, Peter (*d.* 1751) . . . . . 250
Pelham, Thomas, fourth Baronet and first Baron Pelham (1650 ?–1712) . . . 251
Pelham, Thomas, first Earl of Chichester (1728–1805) . . . . . 252
Pelham, Thomas, second Earl of Chichester (1756–1826) . . . . . 252
Pelham, Sir William (*d.* 1587) . . . 255
Pelham-Holles, Thomas, Duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and of Newcastle-under-Lyne (1693–1768) . . . . . 257
Pell, John (1611–1685) . . . . . 261
Pell, Sir Watkin Owen (1788–1869) . . 263
Pell, William (1634–1698) . . . . 263
Pellatt, Apsley (1791–1863) . . . . 264
Pellegrini, Carlo (1839–1889) . . . . 265
Pellett, Thomas, M.D. (1671 ?–1744) . . 265
Pellew, Edward, Viscount Exmouth (1757–1833) . . . . . 266
Pellew, Sir Fleetwood Broughton Reynolds (1789–1861) . . . . . 270
Pellew, George (1793–1866) . . . . 271
Pellew, Sir Israel (1758–1832) . . . 272
Pellew or Pellow, Thomas (*fl.* 1738) . . 273
Pelliham, Edward (*fl.* 1630) . . . . 274
Pelling, Edward (*d.* 1718) . . . . 274
Pelly, Sir John Henry (1777–1852) . . 275

PAGE
Pelly, Sir Lewis (1825–1892) . . . . 275
Pelly, Saville Marriott (1819–1895). See under Pelly, Sir Lewis.
Pember, Robert (*d.* 1560) . . . . 277
Pemberton, Charles Reece (1790–1840) . . 278
Pemberton, Christopher Robert, M.D. (1765–1822) . . . . . 279
Pemberton, Sir Francis (1625–1697) . . 279
Pemberton, Henry (1694–1771) . . . 280
Pemberton (afterwards Pemberton Leigh), Thomas, Lord Kingsdown (1793–1867) . 281
Pemble, William (1592 ?–1623) . . . 283
Pembridge, Christopher (*fl.* 1370 ?) . . 283
Pembridge or Pembrugge, Sir Richard de (*d.* 1375) . . . . . 284
Pembroke, Earls of. See Clare, Richard de (*d.* 1176), called Strongbow, second earl of the Clare line; Marshal, William, first earl of the Marshal line (*d.* 1219); Marshal, William, second earl of the Marshal line, (*d.* 1231); Marshal, Richard, third earl of the Marshal line (*d.* 1234); William de Valence (*d.* 1296); Aymer de Valence (*d.* 1324); Hastings, Laurence, first earl of the Hastings line (1318 ?–1348); Hastings, John, second earl of the Hastings line (1347–1375); Herbert, Sir William, first earl of the Herbert line of the first creation (*d.* 1469); Herbert, Sir William, first earl of the Herbert line of the second creation (1501 ?–1570); Herbert, Henry, second earl of the Herbert line of the second creation (1534 ?–1601); Herbert, William, third earl (1580–1630); Herbert, Philip, fourth earl (1584–1650); Herbert, Thomas, eighth earl (1656–1733); Herbert, Henry, ninth earl (1693–1751); Herbert, Henry, tenth earl (1734–1794); Herbert, George Augustus, eleventh earl (1759–1827).
Pembroke, Countesses of. See Herbert, Mary (1555 ?–1621); Clifford, Anne (1590–1676).
Pembrooke, Thomas (1662 ?–1690 ?) . . 285
Pencester, Penchester, or Penshurst, Stephen de (*d.* 1299) . . . . . 286
Penda (577 ?–655) . . . . . 287
Pendarves, John (1622–1656) . . . . 288
Penderel, Richard (*d.* 1672) . . . . 289
Pendergrass, Sir Thomas (*d.* 1709). See Prendergast.
Pendlebury, Henry (1626–1695) . . . 290
Pendlebury, James (*d.* 1758 ?) . . . 291
Pendleton, Frederick Henry Snow (1818–1888) 291
Pendleton, Henry (*d.* 1557) . . . . 292
Pendragon, Uther. See under Arthur.
Pengelly, Sir Thomas (1675–1730) . . . 292
Pengelly, William (1812–1894) . . . 294
Penington. See also Pennington.
Penington, Edward (1667–1711). See under Penington or Pennington, Isaac, the younger.
Penington or Pennington, Sir Isaac (1587 ?–1661) . . . . . 295
Penington or Pennington, Isaac, the younger (1616–1679) . . . . . 297
Penington, Sir John (1568 ?–1646) . . . 300
Penington, John (1655–1710). See under Penington or Pennington, Isaac, the younger.
Penketh, Thomas (*d.* 1487) . . . . 302
Penkethman, John (*fl.* 1638) . . . . 302
Penley, Aaron Edwin (1807–1870) . . . 302
Penn, Granville (1761–1844) . . . . 303
Penn, James (1727–1800) . . . . 304
Penn, John (1729–1795) . . . . . 304
PAGE
Penn, John (1760–1834) . . . . . 305
Penn, John (1770–1843). See under Penn, John (1805–1878).
Penn, John (1805–1878) . . . . . 305
Penn, Richard (1736–1811) . . . . 306
Penn, Richard (1784–1863). See under Penn, Richard (1736–1811).
Penn, Thomas (1702–1775) . . . . 307
Penn, Sir William (1621–1670) . . . 308
Penn, William (1644–1718) . . . . 311
Penn, William (1776–1845). See under Penn, Richard (1736–1811).
Pennant, Richard, Baron Penrhyn (1737 ?–1808) . . . . . 320
Pennant, Thomas (1726–1798) . . . 320
Pennecuik, Alexander, M.D. (1652–1722) . 323
Pennecuik, Alexander (*d.* 1730). See under Pennecuik, Alexander, M.D. (1652–1722).
Pennefather, Catherine (1818–1893). See under Pennefather, William.
Pennefather, Edward (1774 ?–1847) . . 325
Pennefather, Sir John Lysaght (1800–1872) . 325
Pennefather, Richard (1808–1849). See under Pennefather, Richard (1773–1859).
Pennefather, Richard (1773–1859) . . . 326
Pennefather, William (1816–1873) . . . 327
Pennethorne, Sir James (1801–1871) . . 328
Pennethorne, John (1808–1888) . . . 329
Penney, William, Lord Kinloch (1801–1872) . 330
Pennie, John Fitzgerald (1782–1848) . . 331
Pennington. See also Penington.
Pennington, Sir Isaac, M.D. (1745–1817) . 331
Pennington, James (1777–1862) . . . 332
Pennington, Sir John (*d.* 1470). See under Pennington, John, first Baron Muncaster in the peerage of Ireland and fifth Baronet.
Pennington, John, first Baron Muncaster in the peerage of Ireland and fifth Baronet (1737–1813) . . . . . 332
Pennington, Lowther, second Baron Muncaster (1745–1818). See under Pennington, John, first Baron Muncaster in the peerage of Ireland and fifth Baronet.
Pennington, Montagu (1762–1849) . . . 334
Penny, Edward (1714–1791) . . . . 335
Penny, John (*d.* 1520 ?) . . . . 335
Penny, John (1803–1885) . . . . 336
Penny, Nicholas (1790–1858) . . . . 336
Penny, Thomas, M.D. (*d.* 1589) . . . 337
Pennycuick, John (*d.* 1849) . . . 338
Pennycuick, John Farrell (1829–1888) . . 338
Pennyman, John (1628–1706) . . . . 338
Pennyman, Sir William (1607–1643) . . 340
Penrhyn, Lord (1737 ?–1808). See Pennant, Richard.
Penrose, Sir Charles Vinicombe (1759–1830) . 341
Penrose, Mrs. Elizabeth (1780–1837), writer under the pseudonym of Mrs. Markham . 342
Penrose, Francis (1718–1798) . . . . 343
Penrose, John (1778–1859) . . . . 343
Penrose, Thomas (1742–1779) . . . 344
Penruddock, John (1619–1655) . . . 345
Penry, John (1559–1593) . . . . 346
Penshurst, Stephen de. See Pencester.
Pentland, Joseph Barclay (1797–1873) . . 350
Penton, Stephen (1639–1706) . . . . 351
Pentreath, Dolly (1685–1777). See Jeffery, Dorothy.
Peploe, Samuel (1668–1752) . . . . 352
Pepperell, Sir William (1696–1759). . . 353
Pepusch, John Christopher (1667–1752) . 354
Pepwell, Henry (*d.* 1540). . . . . 356

PAGE
Pepys, Charles Christopher, first Earl of Cottenham (1781–1851) . . . . . 356
Pepys, Henry (1783–1860) . . . . . 358
Pepys, Sir Lucas (1742–1830) . . . . 359
Pepys, Sir Richard (1588 ?–1659) . . . 359
Pepys, Samuel (1633–1703) . . . . . 360
Pepys, William Hasledine (1775–1856) . . 366
Perburn, John (*fl.* 1316–1343) . . . . 367
Perceval, Alexander (1787–1858) . . . 367
Perceval, Arthur Philip (1799–1853) . . 368
Perceval, John, first Earl of Egmont (1683–1748) . . . . . 368
Perceval, John, second Earl of Egmont (1711–1770) . . . . . 370
Perceval, Sir Philip (1605–1647) . . . 373
Perceval, Richard (1550–1620) . . . . 374
Perceval, Robert, M.D. (1756–1839) . . 375
Perceval, Spencer (1762–1812) . . . . 376
Percival, John (*d.* 1515 ?). See under Percival, John (*fl.* 1550).
Percival, John (*fl.* 1550) . . . . . 382
Percival, Robert (1765–1826) . . . . 382
Percival, Thomas (1719–1762) . . . . 383
Percival, Thomas (1740–1804) . . . . 385
Percy, Alan (*d.* 1560) . . . . . 384
Percy, Algernon, tenth Earl of Northumberland (1602–1668) . . . . . 385
Percy, Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland (1792–1865) . . . . . 390
Percy, Lady Elizabeth. See under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset (*d.* 1748).
Percy, George (1580–1632) . . . . . 391
Percy, Henry (1228 ?–1272). See under Percy, Henry, first Baron Percy of Alnwick.
Percy, Henry, first Baron Percy of Alnwick (1272 ?–1315) . . . . . 392
Percy, Henry, second Baron Percy of Alnwick (1299 ?–1352) . . . . . 393
Percy, Henry, third Baron Percy of Alnwick (1322–1368). See under Percy, Henry, second Baron Percy of Alnwick.
Percy, Sir Henry, called Hotspur (1364–1403) 395
Percy, Henry, first Earl of Northumberland (1342–1408) . . . . . 399
Percy, Henry, second Earl of Northumberland (1394–1455) . . . . . 405
Percy, Henry, third Earl of Northumberland (1421–1461). See under Percy, Henry, second Earl of Northumberland.
PAGE
Percy, Henry, fourth Earl of Northumberland (1446–1489) . . . . . 408
Percy, Henry, eighth Earl of Northumberland (1532 ?–1585) . . . . . 409
Percy, Henry, ninth Earl of Northumberland (1564–1632) . . . . . 411
Percy, Henry, Lord Percy of Alnwick (*d.* 1659 ?) . . . . . 413
Percy, Henry (1785–1825) . . . . . 414
Percy, Henry Algernon, fifth Earl of Northumberland (1478–1527) . . . . . 414
Percy, Henry Algernon, sixth Earl of Northumberland (1502 ?–1537) . . . . . 416
Percy, Sir Henry Hugh Manvers (1817–1877) 417
Percy, Hugh, whose name originally was Smithson, first Duke of Northumberland of the third creation (1715–1786) . . . . 418
Percy, Hugh, second Duke of Northumberland (1742–1817) . . . . . 420
Percy, Hugh, third Duke of Northumberland (1785–1847) . . . . . 422
Percy, Hugh (1784–1856) . . . . . 423
Percy, James (1619–1690 ?) . . . . . 424
Percy, John (1569–1641). See Fisher, John.
Percy, John (1817–1889) . . . . . 425
Percy, Josceline (1784–1856) . . . . . 427
Percy, Peter (*fl.* 1486) . . . . . 428
Percy, Sir Ralph (1425–1464) . . . . . 428
Percy, Reuben and Sholto (pseudonyms). See Byerley, Thomas (*d.* 1826).
Percy, Richard de, fifth Baron Percy (1170 ?–1244) . . . . . 428
Percy, Sidney Richard (1821 ?–1886) . . . 429
Percy, Thomas (1333–1369). See under Percy, Henry, second Baron Percy of Alnwick.
Percy, Thomas, Earl of Worcester (*d.* 1403) . 429
Percy, Thomas, seventh Earl of Northumberland (1528–1572) . . . . . 433
Percy, Thomas (1560–1605) . . . . . 436
Percy, Thomas (1768–1808) . . . . . 437
Percy, Thomas (1729–1811) . . . . . 437
Percy, William de, first Baron Percy (1030 ?–1096) . . . . . 439
Percy, William de, sixth Baron Percy (1183 ?–1245) . . . . . 440
Percy, William (1575–1648) . . . . . 441
Percy, William Henry (1788–1855). See under Percy, Josceline.

END OF THE FORTY-FOURTH VOLUME.

PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
LONDON

31402

MILLS COLLEGE LIBRARY
3 3086 00183 8275